





GEN

✓



ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01236 0902

Pages 433-448 missing  
*[Signature]*

GENEALOGY  
929.2  
D321F  
v.1







---

---

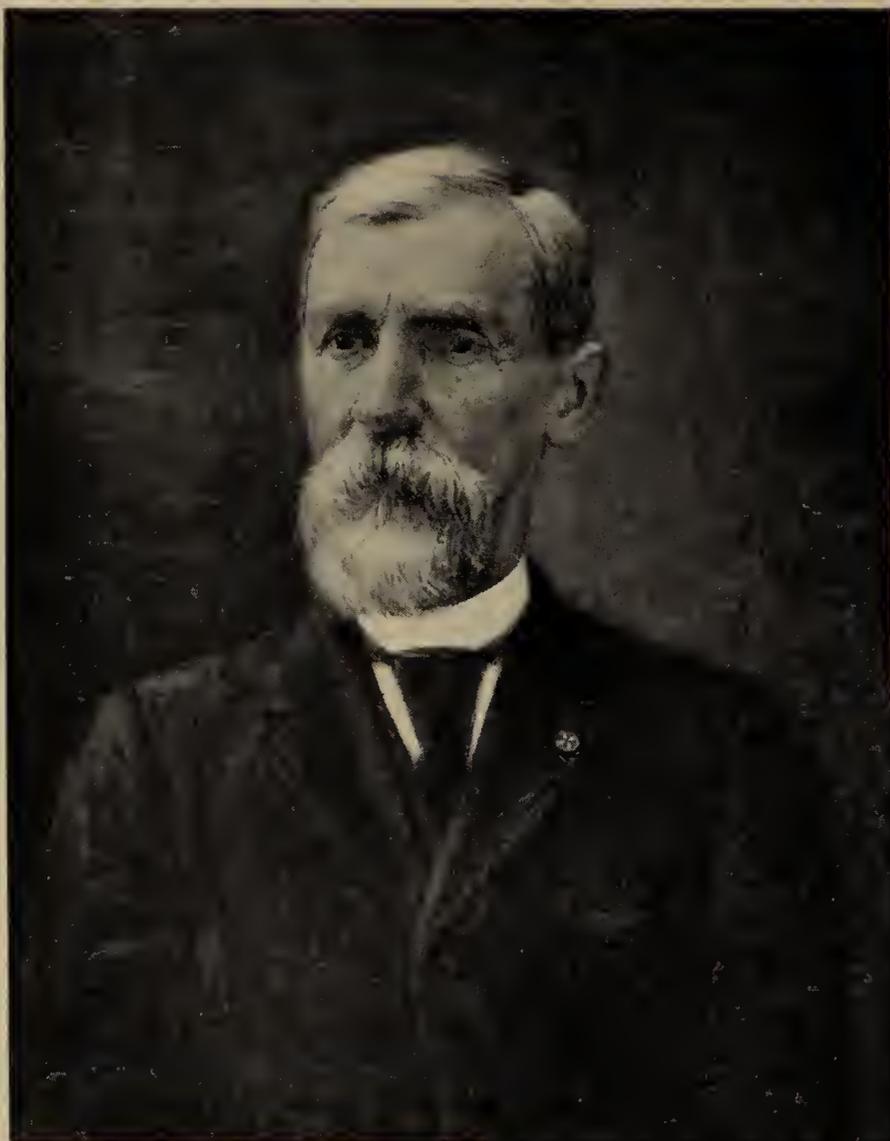
DAWES—GATES  
ANCESTRAL LINES  
VOLUME I

---

---







Brigadier General  
RUFUS R.<sup>s</sup> DAWES



MARY BEMAN (GATES) DAWES



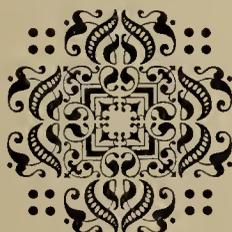
DAWES-GATES  
ANCESTRAL LINES

*A Memorial Volume*  
*Containing the American Ancestry of*  
*Rufus R. Dawes*

VOLUME I

DAWES AND ALLIED FAMILIES

*Compiled by* MARY WALTON FERRIS



*Privately Printed* . 1943

COPYRIGHT, 1943, BY

CHARLES G. DAWES

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

CS71  
.D269  
1931

Goodspeed - \$20.00 (2 vols)

14 D. 42. The Dawes family. E.

---

---

DEDICATED

1134250

TO THE MEMORY OF

RUFUS R. DAWES

AND TO THAT OF THE SON

WHO BORE HIS NAME

RUFUS CUTLER DAWES

---

---

ACC:

*Thomas B. Macaulay said*

“A people which takes no pride in the noble achievements of remote ancestors will never achieve anything worthy to be remembered with pride by remote descendants.”

---

---

## PREFACE

---

**T**HIS volume records almost all of the American ancestry of RUFUS R. DAWES. Only four lines of descent, out of eighty two, are so deeply buried that it has been impossible in the allotted time to trace them to their respective emigrants. In some families much historical detail was at first included but since the book was growing too large and the time too short it has been necessary to delete some of it, even in the full knowledge that some reference to the deleted material may by mistake remain in the text.

The knowledge that the two grandmothers of the present Dawes family, as well as their talented "Aunt Julia" Cutler, shared the interest and effort of gathering data on their forbears, has been a continuing inspiration in the preparation of the present volume. The approbation and support of the late Rufus Cutler Dawes, without whose encouragement it would probably never have been undertaken, has been unfailingly helpful, and his passing before the completion of the task is deeply deplored.

Mr. Dawes, who was always a keen student of history, referred to Volume II when it came out as "a cross section of early American history" and the intention has been that the present volume should deserve the same description. It is regretted that lack of time has necessitated the omission of historical background for a few of the family chapters.

Since in this Volume I, every family (with one exception) was of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, it has seemed desirable to insert an Appendix ("A", p. 687) discussing the causes of the Puritan Emigration. Since this was the first and only Colony coming out from England which brought with them their charter and possessed, from the first, a considerable degree of self government (which was eventually taken from them), it has seemed desirable also to discuss the pride and advantages of the Bay colonists in that unique possession and their long continued fear at the threat of its loss (Appendix "B", p. 694). As a final showing, is given a short discussion of the Currency of Massachusetts Bay and of that Colony's first "Depression" (Appendix "C", p. 702).

One more variation should be mentioned as to this volume. Since the localities referred to and the histories listed as authorities are so completely of Massachusetts, the incessant repetition of that word seemed burdensome, so it is hereby stated that the word will be consistently omitted throughout, and colony or state will be specified only when some other than Massachusetts pertains.

The "Gates and Allied Families," comprising the American *maternal* ancestry of this family, having been compiled first, was published in 1931 as Volume II,

even though the present *paternal* American background, "Dawes and Allied Families", which *must* be called Volume I, has waited until 1943 for publication.

The compiler gratefully acknowledges to Newberry Library the invaluable privilege of using its books and such other courtesies as have been shown, and here expresses gratitude also to Miss E. L. Moffatt of Allston, Massachusetts, to Mrs. Grant Rideout of Cleveland, Ohio, and to Mrs. J. T. Watts of Washington, D. C. for cooperation in research, and to Mrs. Harriet Teter and Mr. Walter Risley for their intelligent and skillful assistance. Gratitude is also voiced toward all who have offered their encouragement or shared their knowledge.

Readers and workers in genealogy are invited to submit addenda or referenced corrections.

MARY WALTON FERRIS

*Chicago, Illinois, 1943*

---

---

## EXPLANATORY NOTE

---

### CAPITALIZATION

THE invariable capitalization, throughout the text, of all ancestral names wherever found, and of them *only*, avoids the necessity, where several ancestors are named in a group, of frequent repetition of such words as "who is also our ancestor."

### USE OF ITALICS

In several family chapters in this volume the evidence submitted is too conclusive to ignore, yet not sufficiently complete to measure up to the general run of proof aimed at, and ordinarily presented. In such cases, as a warning to readers, the presentation of the tentative line of descent will be printed in italics rather than in capitals and small capitals, in text, charts and index. It is the hope of the compiler that some one who has worked extensively on these particular families, or who has access to source material, will be able to prove or disprove the tentative points. These families are Cakebread, Flood, Force, Mudge and the first generation of Thompson.

### SUPERIOR FIGURES

Superior figures are used for two purposes:

(1) To designate the generation, within his family, to which an individual belongs, in which case the figure is *italic* in form and is placed immediately after and slightly above the *given name* of some person [i.e., John<sup>2</sup>], but is never placed otherwise. (The superior fig. <sup>1</sup> being invariably used for the emigrant). Where an English origin of an emigrant has been shown, superior *italic letters* have been used instead of *figures*, employing <sup>a</sup> for the earliest established ancestor, <sup>b</sup> for his children, <sup>c</sup> for his grandchildren, etc. There are certain exceptions to this rule where the emigrant has not been established and italic letters have been used temporarily.

(2) As reference numbers, to inform the reader what authorities (listed and numbered at the end of each chapter) were drawn upon for the portion of the text to which the corresponding number is affixed, in which case superior figures of roman type are used, in contradistinction to the italic [see "References," *infra*].

## CHARTS

Two *general* types of chart are employed:

(1) THE ANCESTRAL CHART, at the back of this volume, which summarizes all names and lines of American descent that have been established and, in *italic*, several tentative but unproved lines. It provides a column for each generation, with RUFUS R. DAWES, the subject of the volume, placed at the left and assigned the personal and identifying number "1". These personal numbers run in sequence, with 2 and 3 assigned to his parents, 4, 5, 6 and 7 assigned to his grandparents, etc. Thus any person's father bears a number just double his own and invariably an even number. These personal numbers are also affixed to each male name (in boxed form) in the various Family Charts [(2) infra] and thus act as a link between this Ancestral Chart and the text itself.

(2) FAMILY CHARTS, of which one precedes the first page of each family chapter and contains a digest of that chapter. They show, in each generation, not only the ancestral names with the pertinent dates but also the place or places of residence, by means of insignia [i.e., \*, †, etc.] placed above each male name. Further services which are rendered by these charts are (a) a portrayal of the blood stream of descent through the various families and generations down to RUFUS R. DAWES; and (b) a correlation of the chapter text with the Ancestral Chart (1) by insertion, in boxed form [i.e., □] of the identifying number of each male ancestor.

(3) Because of certain enormously involved relationships the Clapp and Smith chapters have been illustrated with special charts as an assistance toward clarity.

## REFERENCES

A list of volumes consulted and quoted is assembled at the end of each chapter. These are numbered, and corresponding numbers are sprinkled through the text by (roman) superior figures [i.e., <sup>14,29</sup>] but are never placed immediately following a given name (which placing is reserved for the generation numbers, in *italic* type, *supra*). Any one of these references may, and probably does, bear upon various other parts of the text than that definitely referenced, for constant repetition of superior figures would be cumbersome. The list of volumes given, not only references the statements made in the text but also acts as a bibliography on the respective names and, consequently, includes works of varying degrees of dependability.

## MAPS

Various maps have been prepared from remote sources to illustrate the text, for many of the early place-names are now obsolete. Moreover, a concise knowledge of locations referred to, greatly increases interest in any text.

## NOTE

No genealogical work of this scope can hope to be entirely free from small errors, especially slight discrepancies in dates. The compiler will appreciate any corrections that may be communicated by readers.

# CONTENTS

THE number of generations shown in each of these chapters is indicated in parentheses. In some instances, as will be seen, two or more lines of descent have been proved to a given emigrant. A total of 256 ancestral generations in America are shown.

	PAGE		PAGE
RUFUS R. DAWES, Sketch of . . . . .	3	FORD, THOMAS (2) . . . . .	294
DAWES, WILLIAM (8) . . . . .	II	GARDNER, THOMAS (2) of Cape Ann . . . . .	304
ANTROBUS, Widow JOAN (ARNOLD)		GARDNER, THOMAS (3) of Roxbury . . . . .	308
(3) and (3) . . . . .	64	GOADE and DOWNING (I) . . . . .	315
BAKER, EDWARD (2) . . . . .	67	GORE, JOHN (3) . . . . .	319
BALCH, JOHN (6) . . . . .	70	GREENE, WILLIAM (2) . . . . .	331
BEAMSLEY, WILLIAM (2) . . . . .	84	GROVER, THOMAS (3) . . . . .	337
BENNETT, Widow ELINOR (2) . . . . .	88	GUTTERSON, WILLIAM (2) . . . . .	344
BLODGETT, THOMAS (3) . . . . .	91	HARRADEN, EDWARD (2) . . . . .	347
BOONE, NICHOLAS (3) . . . . .	90	HASKELL, WILLIAM (3) . . . . .	351
BOSWORTH, DORCAS (2) . . . . .	105	HAYWARD, SAMUEL (2) . . . . .	355
BREWER, DANIEL (2) . . . . .	108	HOLDEN, JUSTINIAN (5) . . . . .	360
BRIDGE, EDWARD (3) . . . . .	113	JENNISON, ROBERT (3) . . . . .	369
BROWNE, WILLIAM (2) . . . . .	120	KENDALL, FRANCIS (4) . . . . .	375
BUMSTEAD, THOMAS (2) . . . . .	123	KNIGHT, ALEXANDER (2) . . . . .	397
BURNHAM, THOMAS (2) . . . . .	129	LAWRENCE, Widow JOAN (2) . . . . .	401
<i>Cakebread, Thomas (2)</i> (Addendum to WHALE) . . . . .	663	LEEDS, RICHARD (2) . . . . .	403
CALL, THOMAS (3) . . . . .	132	LINSFORD, THOMAS (2) . . . . .	410
CARTER, THOMAS (2) and (4) . . . . .	142	MAY, JOHN (6) . . . . .	413
CLAPP, ROGER (3) . . . . .	155	MEARS, ROBERT (5) . . . . .	426
CLARK, EDWARD (4) . . . . .	177	MILLS, JOHN (2) . . . . .	441
COGSWELL, JOHN (2) . . . . .	188	MOORE, JOHN (2) and (3) . . . . .	446
COIT, JOHN (3) . . . . .	191	MOULTON, ROBERT (3) . . . . .	452
CUTLER, JAMES (7) . . . . .	198	<i>Mudge, Thomas (2)</i> (Note under GROVER) . . . . .	338
DANE, JOHN (3) . . . . .	239	NEWCOMB, FRANCIS (2) . . . . .	459
DANFORTH, NICHOLAS (2) and (4) . . . . .	250	PARKER, JACOB (2) and (6) . . . . .	464
DAVENPORT, THOMAS (3) . . . . .	271	PERKINS, JOHN (4) . . . . .	483
DAVIS, JOHN (4) . . . . .	280	PLYMPTON and BENT, ELIZABETH (2) . . . . .	493
EGGLETON, Widow JANE (2) . . . . .	285	POULTER, Widow MARIE (2) . . . . .	499
ELLERY, WILLIAM (2) . . . . .	288	PRENTICE, HENRY (3) . . . . .	502
<i>Flood, James (2)</i> (Note under Boone) . . . . .	96	PRINCE, THOMAS (4) of Gloucester . . . . .	510
<i>Force, Matthew (3)</i> (Addendum to VORCE) . . . . .	647	PRINCE, REBECCA (I) of Salem . . . . .	519

PUTNAM, JOHN (3) . . . . .	521	WRIGHT, Widow DOROTHY (3) . . . . .	678
Reade, William, Addendum to KENDALL . . . . .	392		
ROBINSON, WILLIAM (2) . . . . .	528		
RUTTER, JOHN (2) . . . . .	534	APPENDICES	
SHEPARD, WILLIAM (3) . . . . .	541	"A" Causes of the Puritan Emigration . . . . .	687
SHEPARDSON, DANIEL (2) . . . . .	545	"B" The Acquirement, Valuation and Loss of the New England Charter . . . . .	694
SMITH, CAPT. THOMAS (2) . . . . .	548	"C" The Currency of Massachusetts Bay Colony and its Depreciation . . . . .	702
SNOW, RICHARD (3) . . . . .	552	"PURITANS' FAREWELL TO ENGLAND" . . . . .	709
STACY, SIMON (2) . . . . .	558	LIST OF ENGLISH ANCESTRAL	
STEVENS, WILLIAM (2) . . . . .	563	ORIGINS, WITH MAP . . . . .	712
STORY, SARAH (I) . . . . .	570	INDEX OF NAMES . . . . .	715
SUMNER, WILLIAM (4) . . . . .	572	INDEX OF SUBJECTS (GENERAL) . . . . .	742
THOMPSON, JAMES (2) . . . . .	591	INDEX OF PLACES SHOWN ON	
TIDD, JOHN (2) . . . . .	596	CHARTS (GENERAL) . . . . .	744
TUTTLE, JOHN (3) . . . . .	600	ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS FOR	
TYBBOT, WALTER (2) . . . . .	607	DAWES-GATES, VOL. II. . . . .	745
UPHAM, JOHN (5) . . . . .	611	INDEX OF ADDITIONS AND	
UPSON, Widow ELIZABETH (2) . . . . .	639	CORRECTIONS . . . . .	748
VORCE, MARK (2) . . . . .	643	PERSONAL RECORDS . . . . .	751
WARNER, WILLIAM (7) . . . . .	649		
WHALE, PHILEMON (2) and (2) . . . . .	660		
WOODWARD, EZEKIEL (4) . . . . .	667		

---



---

# ILLUSTRATIONS AND MAPS

---

PLATE NUMBERS	FACING PAGE
I. BRIG. GEN. RUFUS R. <sup>8</sup> DAWES AND HIS WIFE MARY BEMAN GATES . . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
II. DAWES HOME, MARIETTA, OHIO . . . . .	6
III. TABLETS TO AMBROSE <sup>2</sup> AND WILLIAM <sup>5</sup> DAWES (See plate xii) . . . . .	7
IV. WILLIAM <sup>5</sup> DAWES WHO RODE WITH REVERE, AND MEHITABLE (MAY) DAWES, WIFE OF THE ABOVE . . . . .	38
V. DAWES FAMILY TOMB AT KING'S CHAPEL BURIAL GROUND . . . . .	39
VI. TITLE PAGE OF THE BIBLE OF WILLIAM MEARS <sup>6</sup> DAWES . . . . .	48
VII. FAMILY RECORD OF WILLIAM M. <sup>6</sup> DAWES IN HIS OWN HANDWRITING . . . . .	49
VIII. FARM HOME OF WILLIAM M. <sup>6</sup> DAWES . . . . .	58
IX. COL. THOMAS <sup>5</sup> DAWES AND JUDGE THOMAS <sup>6</sup> DAWES . . . . .	59
X. REV. THOMAS <sup>5</sup> BALCH (1711-1774). (Courtesy of Norwood Historical Society) . . . . .	80
XI. HOME OF REV. THOMAS <sup>5</sup> BALCH . . . . .	81
XII. GATES OF KING'S CHAPEL BURIAL GROUND, BOSTON . . . . .	156
XIII. ROGER <sup>1</sup> CLAPP HOUSE, 1633 AND 1940 . . . . .	157
XIV. ANGLE TREE STONE OF ROGER <sup>1</sup> CLAPP . . . . .	162
XV. GRAVESTONE OF SAMUEL <sup>2</sup> CLAPP . . . . .	163
XVI. REV. MANASSEH <sup>5</sup> CUTLER . . . . .	210
XVII. MARY (BALCH) CUTLER, AND EMBROIDERY BY MARY (BALCH) CUTLER . . . . .	211
XVIII. HOME OF REV. MANASSEH <sup>5</sup> CUTLER . . . . .	220
XIX. CHURCH AND TOMB OF REV. MANASSEH <sup>5</sup> CUTLER . . . . .	221
XX. JUDGE EPHRAIM <sup>6</sup> CUTLER . . . . .	228
XXI. EPHRAIM <sup>6</sup> CUTLER HOMESTEAD IN WASHINGTON COUNTY, OHIO . . . . .	229
XXII. THE "COONSKIN LIBRARY" BOOKCASE . . . . .	232

PLATE NUMBERS	FACING PAGE
XXIII. EPHRAIM <sup>6</sup> CUTLER BURIAL LOT AND CUTLER MONUMENT . . . . .	233
XXIV. FACSIMILE OF 1750-I MAP BY JOHN NORTH . . . . .	386
XXV. JOHN <sup>2</sup> DAVENPORT, HOME BUILT 1707 . . . . .	387
XXVI. SAMUEL <sup>5</sup> MAY AND CHRIST CHURCH, CAMBRIDGE . . . . .	422
XXVII. BAY PSALM BOOK, PUBLISHED IN 1640 . . . . .	423
XXVIII. FURNITURE BUILT BY WILLIAM <sup>5</sup> PARKER (ABOUT 1790-1800) . . . . .	474
XXIX. SELF-PORTRAIT BY CAPT. THOMAS <sup>1</sup> SMITH . . . . .	598
XXX. PORTRAIT OF MARIA CATHARINA (SMITH) MEARS . . . . .	599

TWENTY MAPS COVERING TERRITORY  
AS FOLLOWS:

	PAGE
COUNTIES OF ENGLAND SHOWING DEFINITE (ALSO TENTATIVE)	
EMIGRANT ORIGINS . . . . .	712
MASSACHUSETTS	
ROXBURY . . . . .	416
DORCHESTER AND MILTON . . . . .	275
EARLY MASSACHUSETTS BAY TERRITORY . . . . .	19
MIDDLESEX COUNTY . . . . .	255
ESSEX COUNTY . . . . .	209
SUDBURY . . . . .	448
SALEM AND VICINITY . . . . .	73
GLOUCESTER . . . . .	673
IPSWICH . . . . .	487
BOSTON . . . . .	30, 31
CAMBRIDGE . . . . .	42
PUNKAPOAG REGION . . . . .	159
DAWES-REVERE RIDES . . . . .	41
MASSACHUSETTS, CONNECTICUT AND RHODE ISLAND . . . . .	618
MAINE, KENNEBEC REGION . . . . .	385
TRAIL TO THE WEST . . . . .	224
SOUTHWEST PENNSYLVANIA AND OHIO COMPANY LANDS . . . . .	475
WISCONSIN LOCALITIES . . . . .	224

---

---

DAWES  
AND ALLIED FAMILIES

---

---



---

---



Brigadier General  
RUFUS R. DAWES

*A BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH*

*BY THE REV. WILLIAM E. ROE*

*WITH ADDITIONS BY TWO OF THE GENERAL'S CHILDREN*

---

RUFUS<sup>s</sup> DAWES, to whom this volume is a memorial, was born at Malta, Morgan County, Ohio, on July 4, 1838. He was one of a family of six children, being the second son and fifth child. He was given the single name "RUFUS" in honor of a remote cousin, the Boston poet, Rufus<sup>7</sup> Dawes, son of Judge Thomas<sup>6</sup> Dawes. The middle initial "R." seems to have come into being for the reasons that he was born on July 4 and so was sometimes called RUFUS Republic, that youth then as now delighted in nicknames and that the intriguing early growth of the railroad industry, during his youth, furnished an excuse to dub him "Rail Road" DAWES. In time he came to regard the middle initial as a part of his legal signature, but merely as an initial. One other rendition has come to pass, but by what process of reasoning is unknown. Since, however, it has been given temporary recognition by the Library of Congress catalogue, and latterly corrected by them, it seems desirable to mention it here that the General's "*History of the Sixth Wisconsin*" has been accorded to a RUFUS Robinson DAWES, but has been willingly altered to RUFUS R.

The youth of RUFUS R. DAWES was spent in Constitution near Marietta on the Ohio River and in Malta on the Muskingum River. He began his collegiate course in the University of Wisconsin which he attended with his brother Ephraim<sup>8</sup> for two years. The two boys maintained marks of 100 in deportment and an average of 95 in their studies. They wrote home that no mark above 96 was given. The faculty took an interest in the hard working boys from Ohio and encouraged them by praise and friendship. Both boys spent the last two years of their college course at Marietta College. In 1859 RUFUS<sup>s</sup> returned with his father to Wisconsin and engaged in business. But not for long. In April 1861 Fort Sumter was fired on. On the day after it fell, April 15, President Lincoln called for seventy-five thousand volunteers to put down the rebellion. RUFUS<sup>s</sup> could not refuse his country's summons and on the 25th, ten days later, he began to gather Volunteers. He was a good type of the splendid young manhood of the nation that rushed to the front in those first months of the war, whose only fear was that they would be too late for actual service in the conflict. A company was quickly gathered and RUFUS<sup>s</sup> was elected its Captain without opposition. It was soon accepted and mustered

in, becoming Company K in the Sixth Wisconsin Volunteers, which in turn was a part of the so-called "Iron Brigade." Both were famous organizations and saw the hardest kind of service. The Iron Brigade suffered a greater proportionate loss in men killed than any other in the Union Army, and the Sixth Wisconsin which General DAWES afterward commanded stood in this respect tenth among the two thousand regiments that were actually under fire. He wrote home soon after reaching the front that his company "was spoiling for a fight" a frame of mind that later, after many battles, seemed to him to be "verdant and idiotic."

In the battle of Gettysburg Colonel DAWES came out with only half his men, and in some other battles the proportion was almost as high. During the first year he and his regiment were spared actual fighting, a time of respite that was well employed in drill, but from August, 1862, until the end of the war there was no lack of actual service. They were in twenty or more pitched battles, in all the great conflicts fought in the East, including, beside others less important, Gainesville, Second Bull Run, South Mountain, Antietam, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, and nearly all of Grant's terrible Virginia campaign.

"At Gettysburg his regiment took a most important part, and one which will ever make it and its commander historic. On the morning of July 1st, Lieutenant-Colonel DAWES commanding the Sixth Wisconsin, arrived on the scene of battle at a critical juncture, when Cutler's brigade was being driven back near the Cashtown turnpike by a Confederate brigade under command of General Joseph R. Davis. Upon the issue of the engagement then in progress with the Confederates under Davis and Archer hung the possession of Cemetery Hill, and upon the holding of Cemetery Hill hung the issue of the battle of Gettysburg itself.

"In his official report, referring to the time when Cutler's regiments were overpowered and driven back, General Abner Doubleday says, 'the moment was a critical one, involving the defeat, perhaps the utter rout, of our forces.' The fire of Colonel DAWES' men checked the headlong advance of the Confederates, who halted in a railroad cut one hundred and seventy-five paces from the turnpike fence where his men were in line.

"Colonel DAWES' horse had been shot from under him and he was unmounted. Climbing the fence under fire with his regiment, the wonderful charge of the Sixth Wisconsin was made under his command. In the face of the awful fire delivered from the railroad cut, the only orders of the young commander were, 'Align on the color! close up on that color! close up on that color!' And by the side of the flag of the Union, as it fell and was lifted, and fell and was lifted once again, with one hundred and eighty men dead or wounded of the four hundred and twenty who started at the fence, Colonel DAWES, with the remnant of his regiment, reached the railroad cut and received the surrender of the Second Mississippi regiment.

"It was an awful, though glorious, day for the 'Iron Brigade.' On that bright morning eighteen hundred men had marched in its ranks. In the evening, of that heroic band, but seven hundred were left. How hard the service was, the muster-roll shows."

It was a magnificent regiment, magnificently led.

In August, 1864, at the close of his term of service, he was honorably discharged. Grant then had Lee securely shut up in Petersburg and the hard fighting was nearly over.

During the period of his service he had from time to time received well-deserved promotion; he was made Major in 1862, Lieutenant-Colonel in 1863, Colonel in 1864, and finally, at the close of the war, Brigadier-General by brevet, and by this well-won title he was henceforth known.

What sort of a man and a soldier he seemed to his comrades may be inferred

from a few extracts from letters written by them at the time of his death. Thus:

“I know that I but voice the sentiments of the entire brigade and all of the officers who had the pleasure of his acquaintance, when I say that he was one of the fairest, coolest, and bravest of commanders.”

Another writes:

“As an officer he was vigilant and painstaking to the extreme, conscientious in the discharge of his duties, untiring in his efforts to perfect himself in the arts of war; a father to his men, but strict in his discipline. In battle he was coolness and bravery personified.”

And this further, still higher praise, from the same source:

“As a young man he was pure, chaste in his language and his conduct. I never heard him utter a word amongst men that could not be repeated before the most refined women.”

Still another:

“I have seen your father so many, many times in positions where it tried the souls of the bravest men, and never saw him quail or flinch. I have seen him bearing the flag of the regiment in more than one desperate fight till some of us would force it from his hands. I have seen him, in the heat of summer and the rain and snows of winter, on the march and in camp, always and everywhere a true soldier and gentleman. He never swore, drank or used coarse language when most of those around him were proficient in these traits.”

Again:

“He was my ideal commander, ever ready, alert, and efficient in every startling emergency, doing the right thing on the spur of the moment, watchful for the safety of his men, while seemingly oblivious of his own danger. His heroic presence, clear, ringing voice and erect figure inspired his men — one and all — to do their whole duty. . . . He was born a leader of men, and we of the rank and file appreciated him as such. He was the manliest man of a manly regiment. His personal character was not only without reproach, but also a shining example of chivalric gentleness. When occasion required he was the stern officer and wise counsellor. Camp life and army surroundings never tainted his gentlemanly instincts, and his speech was always as pure as it would have been had ladies been present. He was a noble man, and his hopeful words, in the darkest days of the rebellion as to the successful outcome of the war, yet linger in my memory.”

Such was his career in the great American Civil War. His interest in military matters continued throughout his life. He became an enthusiastic member of the Loyal Legion of Ohio of which his brother Lieutenant-Colonel Ephraim Cutler<sup>8</sup> Dawes was four times elected Commander. He belonged to and supported the Grand Army of the Republic. He studied with unabated interest the history of the war and himself published in 1890 a history of his own regiment called “*Service With The Sixth Wisconsin Volunteers.*” This was composed largely from the letters and journals which he wrote during his service so that it has the interest and value of a contemporary work.

As soon as his term in the service was over he settled in Marietta, close to the home of his boyhood and went into a business career that continued with little interruption until his death. An important interruption did, however, come, which constituted another chapter in his life. He had served his country on the battle-

field; it was destined that this work should be continued in legislative halls and political life. General DAWES had won a wide reputation as an orator. Clear, eloquent, effective, popular in the best sense of the word, it was inevitable that a political career should open to him. He was a party man, but always in an honorable, open way; and as such, after conspicuous service, he was, in 1880, nominated by the Republicans and elected to Congress. There his career was most honorable. Especially in all the debates of those years on military matters his was an influential voice, and an important piece of legislation, the establishment of diplomatic relations with Persia, was wholly due to his efforts. President McKinley, in 1897, offered to him the position of Minister to Persia. Because of poor health he could not accept it. General DAWES was renominated for Congress in 1882, but failed of election; and in 1889 he was one of the leading candidates for nomination as Governor of Ohio. If less conspicuous, his services to his country have been no less honorable in his civil than in his military career, and but for failing health they doubtless would have gone much further.

He found time in his busy life for other public activity. He was a loyal citizen of Marietta, thoroughly and wisely interested in its welfare and ready for any service. He was deeply interested in temperance reform. Admirable practical work by him on this line was done in the army, and he was subsequently known as a most earnest and effective platform speaker in this good cause.

His eloquent voice was often raised and his powerful influence exerted in behalf of good government and social reform. He was deeply interested in and was a trustee for four years of the Ohio Institution for the Deaf and Dumb. What Marietta College, his Alma Mater, was to him, all friends of the College know well. From 1871 until his death he served on its Board of Trustees and gave to this institution that he loved his best thought and constant sympathy. After he was disabled, to secure his presence, the meetings of the Board were regularly held in his parlor, and his wise counsel and encouragement were felt to be of the greatest value. Marietta College owes an untold debt of gratitude to General DAWES. He was one of the original Board of Trustees of the First Presbyterian Church of Marietta, chosen in 1865, and continued so till the end of his life, being President of the Board during his latter years. To this work he was always ready to give time, thought and interest, as well as generous financial support.

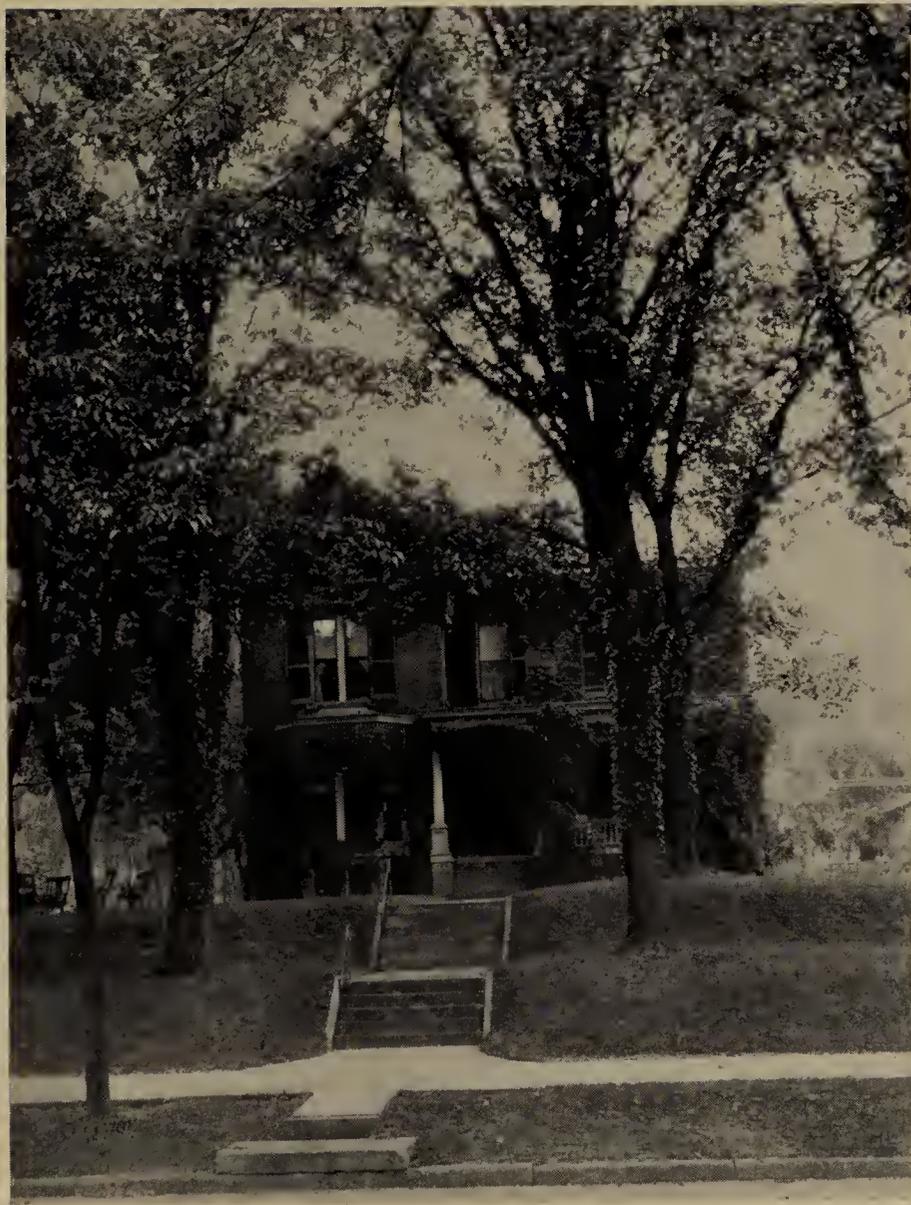
As a man, in all private relations, his character was admirable and lovable. He was a staunch friend, loyal to those he loved through good report and ill, as many a letter received by his sorrowing family testified.

His sympathy and helpfulness to young men struggling for a start in the world was characteristic of the man. An extract or two from letters may be added to illustrate this statement. One narrates this incident:

“After finishing a term of teaching at one time I called at his office and said, ‘General DAWES, I can never repay you for all your kindness to me, but I have some money and can repay you the amount you let me have when I was in college.’ He said: ‘You don’t owe me anything. If I was helpful to you, I am glad. If you feel under any obligation, and are ever able to help a young man get an education, I shall be glad to have you do so.’”

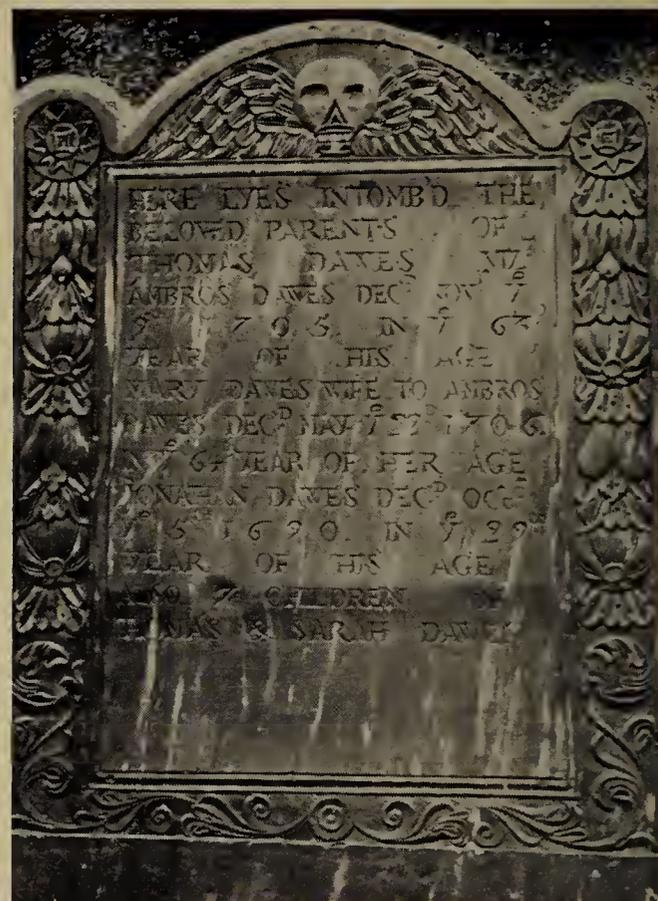
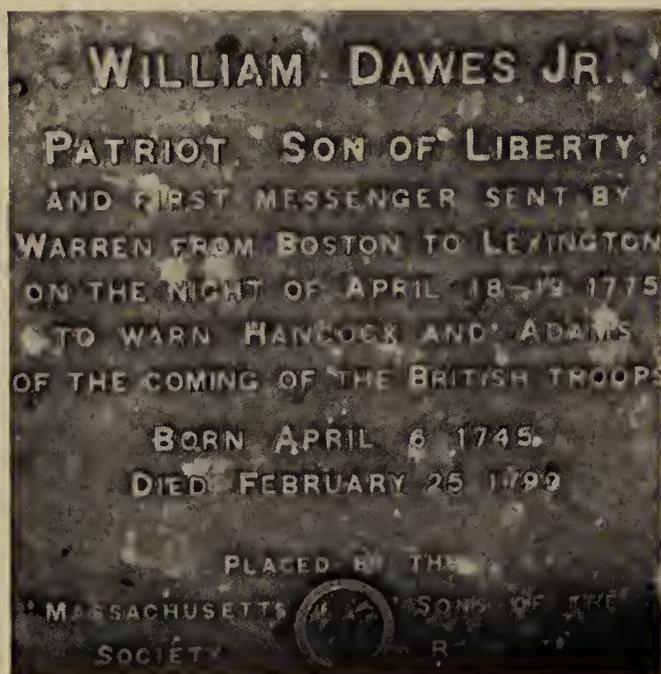
Another writes:

“To me, his death brings back my childhood days and the friend who used to think



Home of RUFUS R.<sup>s</sup> DAWES  
Marietta, Ohio, on Fourth Street  
above Wooster Street.

The slate headstone (see page 27) leaning against the back of the DAWES tomb in Kings Chapel Burial Ground, Boston, which has on its entrance gates the names of ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP and WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES (see xii, p. 156).



Memorial Tablet to WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES, which lies on top of the DAWES family tomb.

---

as much of our joys and pleasures as of those of his own boys. Many times have I thought of his great kindness to us boys and his interest in us. I cannot express how much I feel that I owe to him and his example of strength and vigor and courage, joined with patient and unselfish kindness.”

This suggests his domestic life, and no account of General DAWES' career could omit this. As son, as brother, as husband and father, whatever the relation, it is all most pleasant to remember. His devotion to his aged mother was beautiful, that remarkable old lady so well remembered in Marietta, a mother worthy of all the love and reverence her children gave her. On January 18, 1864, he was married to Miss MARY BEMAN<sup>8</sup> GATES, and from the days when she was the inspiration of the ardent young soldier in battle, down to these last years when the suffering, broken man was so blessed in the unfailing ministry of wifely love, never was there a sweeter, tenderer married life. Father and mother have been richly blessed in their six children, all of whom survived, and were often, with the grandchildren, at the old home. General DAWES was in a pre-eminent degree a domestic, home-loving man, and a beautiful home he had (for its outward appearance see plate II, facing page 6).

At last came the closing years, seemingly darkened and sad. Truly, it was a pathetic thing to see this strong man, in the full maturity of his intellectual powers, at a time of life when he ought to have been in his prime, slowly wheeled about in his invalid's chair, prematurely broken down. Ten years before the end the health of him who up to that time had been an unusually strong and active man began to fail, and illness after illness brought the strong man ever lower, until at barely sixty-one death came. But on his part there was no weak yielding to invalidism. He met sickness as he faced shot and shell on the battle-field. He kept up an active life even when unable to walk to his office, and from his invalid's chair for many years ably supervised his business.

Those who were with him constantly saw a cheerful patience, an uncomplaining endurance and a splendid courage that perhaps were more admirable than any achievement in his career. His one thought seemed to be that his misfortune should not darken the home, that his thwarted life should not lay its burden on the young lives around him and the hearts that suffered with him.

He would even deny himself the poor consolation of sympathy, lest this should be. It was a brave, true man in that invalid's chair and there was a courage greater than that he displayed in the cornfield at Antietam or the Bloody Angle of Spottsylvania.

General DAWES, for reasons that seemed to him sufficient, never made a public profession of the Christian faith by uniting with the Church. He was reticent on religious matters, and it would be his desire that little should be said here in a personal way. Reticent, but certainly he always wished it to be understood that he was not indifferent. He always made it clear on which side his sympathy and interest were. And those who stood closest to him knew that in his own soul the brave soldier had given his allegiance to the great Captain of our salvation, that he who had endured and suffered so much for his country was not unmindful of that better, that heavenly country that is, after all, so near, that in this faith he lived and died.

Such was the man and such his work, though these few pages are a very inade-

quate portrayal of both. A man, richly endowed with talent, successful in winning well-deserved honor, possessing in a high degree those elemental qualities that make a true manhood, he was one who served well his day and generation and left a multitude who not only admired his ability and achievement, but loved him for the man he was.

BY ONE OF HIS SONS — C. G. D.

“In writing these few lines of tribute to the dear father who has passed from us, I am overwhelmed with a flood of recollections of his love and tenderness, of his self-sacrifice and generosity in all his family and social relations. With his family, such recollections will always be predominant, and their recital at this time, when their wounded hearts still ache at the recent bereavement, would only bring unnecessary pain. It is not so much of the loving father, whose hearthstone was his happiest resting place, and whose constant thought was of the comfort and success and education of his dear ones, that I wish now to speak, but of that strong and noble character of his which looked every duty straight in the face and which subjected his every action, public or private, to the dictates of a clear and clean conscience. He was so strong and he was so sincere. He never evaded an issue; and never apologized for his decisions. His constant and consistent teaching to his children was that above all things of the world — above wealth, above fame, above pleasure — must be placed character. By example and by precept he endeavored to encourage them to meet disagreeable issues squarely, and under all circumstances to tell the truth. And the tenderness which characterized his every action in his domestic relations demonstrated his genuineness and sincerity of purpose when he imposed high standards of conduct.

“Among all those I have known in life, I have known no one who would make a greater sacrifice for the sake of a moral principle, or who, in the time of temptation or perplexity, would more courageously tread a painful path of duty.

“Taken all in all, in spite of the rest he found within the peaceful haven of his home, his life was storm-tossed.

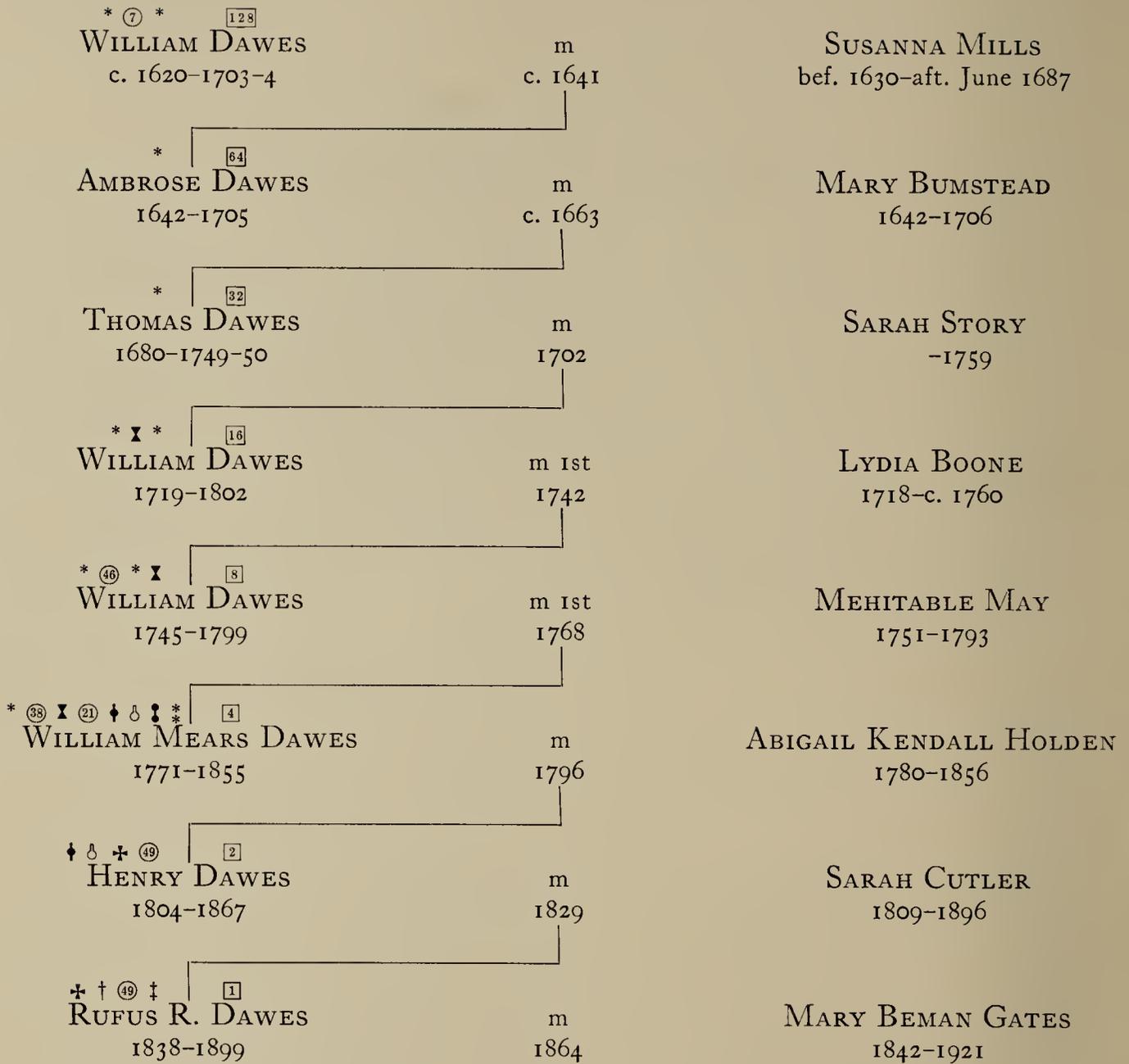
“He had few pleasures as a child, and the awful battle experience of the ‘Iron Brigade’ left him a young man prematurely old. Business adversity did not spare him in his earlier career; and the rewards of his civil and military life so splendidly devoted to his country, were commensurate neither with his abilities nor his ambitions. Yet who of us ever heard this intensely earnest man utter one word of complaint or disappointment? And when, at what should have been the climax of his life, — when in the course of political and commercial events his turn for more marked civil achievement seemed at hand — when he was struck down in his strength and confronted by hopeless invalidism, his words and every action were those of calm and cheerful resignation.

“That day with its darkness and pealing thunder when we gathered for the last time around his body, covered with the flag for which he had fought so well — that day so heavy in our memories — was in itself typical of his life, for as we left him in the evening, the clouds were lifted and the twilight was clear and peaceful and quiet like his strong and steadfast character, always thus amid the tumults of life. The memory of that character is our most precious heritage, and will remain with us always until the Heavenly Father calls us to follow him.”

BATTLE RECORD OF RUFUS R.<sup>s</sup> DAWES

Rappahannock, August 26, 1862, as Major.  
Gainesville, August 28, 1862, as Major.  
Bull Run (2d), August 29, 30 and 31, 1862, as Major.  
South Mountain, September 14, 1862, as Major.  
Antietam, September 16 and 17, 1862, as Major Commanding.  
Fredericksburg, December 13, 14 and 15, 1862, as Major Commanding.  
Fitz Hugh's Crossing, April 29, 1863, as Lieutenant-Colonel.  
Chancellorsville from April 29, to May 3, 1863, as Lieutenant-Colonel.  
Gettysburg, July 1, 2 and 3, 1863, as Lieutenant-Colonel Commanding.  
Mine Run, November 27, 1863, as Lieutenant-Colonel Commanding.  
The Wilderness, May 5 and 6, 1864, as Lieutenant-Colonel.  
Spottsylvania Court House, May 8, 9, and 10, 1864, as Lieutenant-Colonel Commanding.  
The Bloody Angle, May 12 and 13, 1864, as Lieutenant-Colonel Commanding.  
North Anna, May 23 to 25, 1864, as Lieutenant-Colonel Commanding.  
Tolopotomy, May 28 to 31, 1864, as Lieutenant-Colonel Commanding.  
Bethesda Church, May 30, 31, 1864, as Lieutenant-Colonel Commanding.  
Cold Harbor Campaign, May 31 to June 9, 1864, as Lieutenant-Colonel Commanding.  
Petersburg Campaign, June 15 to July 30, 1864, as Lieutenant-Colonel Commanding.  
Mine Explosion, July 30, 1864, as Lieutenant-Colonel Commanding.  
Commissioned Major, June 21, 1862.  
Commissioned Colonel, July 5, 1864, and honorably discharged by reason of expiration  
of term of service, August 10, 1864.  
Appointed Brigadier-General by Brevet, May 22, 1866, for meritorious service rendered  
in the foregoing list of battles.

# DAWES



- \* Boston
- ⑦ Braintree
- X Marlborough
- ④⑥ Worcester
- ③⑧ Sudbury
- ②① Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.

- ♁ Morgan Co., O.
- ♁ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- † Marietta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Malta, O.



---

# DAWES

## AND ALLIED FAMILIES

---

### *DAWES (Daw, Daws)\**

---

**W**ILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES, born 1620 probably at Sudbury, performed the thrilling act of setting out as a youth of fifteen\*\* for the new world. On the English Customs House Register his name,<sup>1</sup> with that of a Francis Dexter only thirteen years old, immediately followed the name of one Daniel Hanbury aged twenty-nine and the copyist<sup>2</sup> deduced that these mere children might have come over in that man's care, though no subsequent connection has been seen between them. They embarked on the "Planter of London," Nicholas Trerice, Master, sailing about April 10, and arriving at Boston on June 7, 1635 after almost two months on the ocean. That voyage in the tiny sailing vessels of that day would no doubt have brought unspeakable nausea to many of the passengers, but that particular passage in that very spring on that identical vessel seems fraught with such far reaching results for us as we look back upon it now,

\*One branch of this family which settled in Maine even rendered<sup>82</sup> their name as Dors and Dor in the fifth and subsequent generations (see p. 28).

\*\*It would be in accordance with tradition that this youth, aged fifteen, was a native of Sudbury in the County of Suffolk. Search reveals no record of his birth there. Tradition claims<sup>3</sup> that his father (assigned the same name as the emigrant) and mother, preceded him to New England "with the first body of Puritans who came over in 1628-9 and founded Boston and Salem,"<sup>3</sup> but soon returned to England. As for those items, the settlement at Salem was started in the fall of 1626. John Endicott came to Salem in September, 1628, with quite a party which might have included this couple, but Boston was not settled until after June of 1630. A number of people who came to New England did quickly return to the mother country, and this couple may have done so, but careful search has failed to show any actual documentary evidence that they ever were here, nor have there been discovered reliable records that would show any justification for the suggestion<sup>3</sup> attempting to furnish for our youthful emigrant a wealthy and armigerous English ancestry. One other claim<sup>3</sup> is that the theorized parents of our emigrant came on a vessel called the "Ambrose," had a son born on the voyage whom they named for the vessel, thus furnishing a theoretical background for the name which our emigrant gave his eldest son. As for a son born on the ocean, no evidence is seen, but there was a vessel called the "Ambrose" which sailed<sup>1</sup> in 1630 as a part of Winthrop's Fleet. Who its passengers were is entirely unknown, and even the name of its master is in controversy, for Drake in his "Antiquities" claims<sup>33</sup> that Capt. Nicholas Hurlstone was master, while Gov. John Winthrop in his Journal<sup>34</sup> makes Hurlstone master of the "Jewel" and Capt. John Lowe master of the "Ambrose." In case an earlier Dawes *did* come on the "Ambrose" and, perchance also returned on that vessel, it would become of interest to note that the above Journal under date of 1631 between February 18 and 22 records that:

"The Ambrose, whereof Capt. Lowe was master being new masted at Charlton [Charlestown], spent [lost?] all her masts near Newfoundland, and had perished, if Mr. Peirce (see Index on Peirce) in the Lyon, who was her consort, had not towed her home to Bristol."<sup>34</sup>

It speaks highly of Capt. Peirce's seamanship that he could tow a vessel across the Atlantic Ocean during winter storms!

that the experiences of the passengers and friendships formed among them become unusually intriguing. For in addition to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES there came on that vessel our JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE and his wife JOAN, with four of her Lawrence children including her little daughter MARY, who eventually became the wife of our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BURNHAM, with four of their Tuttle children, including our SIMON<sup>2</sup>, with JOAN's widowed mother Mrs. JOAN ANTROBUS aged sixty-five and several of their servants. There came also our FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> NEWCOMB with wife RACHEL and their two older children, and Francis<sup>2</sup> Bushnell (son of our FRANCIS<sup>1</sup>, Dawes-Gates, II, 164) with his wife and child. We may safely assume that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was a strong, well built lad or he would hardly have been allowed passage alone lest he should become a liability to the community. After the vessel's arrival the families aboard scattered to various settlements, JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE and his group to Ipswich, Bushnell to Salem, while FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> NEWCOMB and probably also DAWES settled<sup>7</sup> for a time in Boston. There WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> would have acquired quarters with some family and would have performed whatever tasks he found open to him. In those days there would have been no lack of occupation and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> gradually, if not at once, worked into the bricklaying trade. Boston possessed outlying land at Mt. Wollaston farther south (see map, p. 275) and about 1638-40 some of her residents including FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> NEWCOMB and JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS with their families, as well as WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES removed to that section which in May 1640 was given the name of Braintree. There in 1641 when WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> would have been twenty-one he was married to SUSANNA<sup>2</sup> MILLS (see Mills, p. 444) and there their residence continued until 1650 or 1651 when they removed permanently to Boston. In June 1650 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was called<sup>15</sup> "DAWES of Braintree" and in their later lives he and his wife deposed that they had resided in Boston<sup>8,13</sup> from "1652 and before."

WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and SUSANNA became members of the First Church in Boston at an unknown date but his membership antedated 1646 for on May 6, 1646 he took the oath of a freeman.<sup>10</sup> After his return he purchased property in Boston on the east side of Sudbury Street (which was then known as "the lane from Prison Lane to the Mill Pond") at the end toward the pond<sup>3</sup> (see map, p. 30) and though he eventually disposed of a part of this land, to his son AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> and to others, the home he built is said to have remained in possession of the family for five generations<sup>3</sup> until it was torn down by the British during their occupation of Boston<sup>3</sup> in 1775. Since WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was a mason and builder he very likely constructed a more imposing dwelling than might have been planned if he had been under the necessity of paying others for their work and this probability is strengthened by the fact that the family home is sometimes referred to<sup>3,5</sup> as a "mansion house." It was undoubtedly a well built structure and kept in good repair since at least its first three owners, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> and THOMAS<sup>3</sup> followed the trade of masons and builders. In 1656 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> received £3 for work<sup>3,33</sup> on Fort Hill (see map, p. 30).

The span of his life covered many notable events in Boston. As a youth he had been cognizant of the anxiety caused by the Pequot War in 1637; in the middle of the seventeenth century he became a witness of the persecution of the early Quakers<sup>31</sup> wherein both these Friends and the Puritan colonists were equally unreasonable — the Quakers in their insane persistence in returning to the colony

after they had been exiled and warned away; and the colonists in taking so seriously the presence of these religious zealots, which those early New England Quakers were — for together they succeeded in writing permanently upon the pages of New England history one of its most disgraceful records. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> frequently witnessed<sup>1</sup> legal documents<sup>13</sup> and was a witness in November 1662 to a deed whereby John Keane and his wife transferred a house and land to Richard Harris by the old time ceremony of handing over, before witnesses, a bit of turf and a twig from the property concerned,<sup>13</sup> as evidence of its changing ownership.

In 1673-4 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> made a contribution<sup>17</sup> toward the rebuilding of the fort on Castle Island which had been destroyed by fire (see Clapp, p. 165); in October 1674 he paid £10 to Oliver Calloway and his wife Judith for a strip<sup>10</sup> of land one hundred twenty-five feet long which lay between the Calloway and DAWES properties, bounded on its westerly end (of sixteen and one-half feet width) by the street that leads to the mill pond, on its northerly side by DAWES, and its southerly side by Calloway. At its easterly end the strip was twenty-four feet wide<sup>10</sup> and AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> was a witness to the document.<sup>14</sup> In January 1674-5 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was sworn<sup>12</sup> as a grand juryman.

One of the trying experiences which WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES lived through was King Philip's War 1675-6 when no man felt safe personally, or for his family. Being then about fifty-five years old, he apparently took no active part, though his son AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> was in service and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> sent one Joseph Bicknell as a substitute<sup>19</sup> in August 1675 (who was still in service in mid-April 1676) and subsequently sent a second servant into service who was still under arms at the later date, when WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> petitioned<sup>19</sup> the Council for the dismissal of Bicknell the earlier recruit (see p. 22) since war activities had then quieted down. In February 1675-6 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> were numbered<sup>18</sup> among ninety-three men who signed a petition to the General Court relative to protective measures which they desired undertaken as a result of the current war with King Philip (see Upham, p. 622-7). Though compulsory military service was supposed to apply only until men were sixty years old, record is seen<sup>6</sup> of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> both being included in Maj. Thomas Savage's Company in 1681 when, according to all reports, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> would have been sixty-one, and in that same year some William Daues (who might have been his son) was a member of the company<sup>6</sup> of Capt. John Hull.

A series of three deeds in which the name of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> appears suggests that the first two were mortgage deeds and the third was a payment of that mortgage. They also suggest that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was plentifully supplied with ready money, for on April 22, 1675 "WILLIAM DAWES of Boston, bricklayer" paid<sup>13</sup> £200 lawful money of New England to John Nichols (see p. 14) of Boston, joyner, and Susannah his wife, for their messuage and land bounded westerly by the street that leads to the Second Meeting House with all its furniture, which was minutely scheduled. Five months later, on September 23, 1675, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> paid<sup>13</sup> £110 lawful money of New England to the same couple for their messuage "lying near North Meeting House fronting to the great street that leads from the water mill to Winisimett ferry place" (see map, p. 30), which messuage adjoined the first one and these two documents were both acknowledged and recorded on May 10, 1678. And finally on December 25, 1679 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> deeded these two properties<sup>19</sup>

back to John Nichols on the payment of £310, the exact amount earlier paid for them.

Among the experiences of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES in Boston were the early and numerous conflagrations with which that town was cursed, several of which were fairly near the DAWES home (see map, p. 31 and Mears, p. 431). Each one of three early fires was, in its turn, called the "Great Fire" and each of those three exceeded its predecessors in the loss sustained. The earliest one accorded the title of "Great," occurred<sup>22</sup> on March 14, 1652-3, soon after the return of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> to Boston and we are told that little is known of it except that eight or more houses were destroyed and that three young children of the Sheath family lost their lives.<sup>22</sup>

The next "Great Fire" occurred<sup>24</sup> on November 27, 1676 beginning at five in the morning and within four hours the section bounded (see map, p. 30) by present Richmond, Hanover and Clark Streets which then contained forty-six dwellings including that of the Rev. Increase<sup>2</sup> Mather, as well as several warehouses, stores and the North or Second Meeting House, lay in ruins. A strong south-east wind veered to the south when the fire was at its height and a heavy downfall of rain followed, without which it would have doubtless consumed all that section of the town.

Early in 1679, however, the terrible work of incendiaries began to show itself plainly with several fires which were promptly discovered and controlled, but on August 8, 1679 there occurred a second incendiary firing, about midnight, of the ale-house of Clement Gross, "The Three Mariners," near the Dock which resulted in the most disastrous conflagration Boston had yet endured. The territory laid in ruins extended from the Mill Creek (which occupied the same place Blackstone Street now does—see map, p. 30) westerly to Dock Square and southerly to Oliver's Dock (near the place now called Liberty Square). In this territory not a single building was left complete. The fire burned for twelve hours, destroying eighty dwellings, seventy warehouses with their contents and all the vessels lying at the Town Dock with an estimated loss of not less than £200,000. The conduit, being in this immediate vicinity, is acknowledged to have justified its existence as during a twelve hour fire the tide would have failed them, perhaps when most needed.<sup>24</sup>

Another cause of anxiety for WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and all other residents would have been the frequently repeated small-pox epidemics which raged in Boston. One historian<sup>27</sup> lists those which occurred during the life of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> as prevailing in 1640, 1660, 1677-8, 1680, 1690 and 1702. And the horrible witchcraft delusion<sup>28</sup> reached its height in 1692 and happily waned during the life of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES.

The ability of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> as a chimney builder was recognized in his appointment<sup>6</sup> as inspector of chimneys from 1667 to 1673 and in 1691-2 in which service he was sometimes associated with Richard Knight, a bricklayer, and at other times with his own son AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES. In one case they two reported seventeen faulty chimneys on which repairs were ordinarily required within eight days if a fine was to be avoided. In one case report was made in mid-January on an especially unfit chimney and the authorities ordered the residents to make no fire until repairs were completed but allowed them to use charcoal on the hearth.<sup>6</sup>

Two sons of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> became masons and builders and were frequently recorded in close association with their father and other men in that business.

In 1681 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> and James<sup>2</sup> Hawkins (nephew to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) were evidently building a house for Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>), then deputy governor,<sup>11</sup> and having failed to get accurate lot lines, they excavated his cellar "9 inches throughout fronting toward y<sup>e</sup> Docke, vpon the towne lands, & still stands vpon the Towne propertie" for which carelessness they were fined twenty shillings.<sup>6</sup> In 1684-5 and 1689-90 the public service of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was extended to cover inspection also of the making of bricks. Extant Boston tax lists show<sup>6</sup> the name of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> in 1676, 1681, 1686, 1687 and 1688. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> experienced, in common with all other early emigrants, the years of increasing concern<sup>33</sup> at the continued threat that their charter would be voided, the accomplishment of that threat by 1685-6; the three year rule of the intolerant royal governor Andros who laid exorbitant taxes and nullified all land titles, demanding that new titles be acquired from him and at his price (see appendix "B" p. 694). And finally in 1689 when word came that the Prince of Orange had been proclaimed King, there arose the rebellion or revolution of the colonists and the seizing and imprisoning of Andros and all of his officials<sup>33</sup> — many of them in the Castle Island Fort of which ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP had for so long a time been commander.

But it was in connection with their church life that the names of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and of his wife SUSANNA have come down most significantly and more constructively than they could then have realized, for they were among the notable pioneers who founded<sup>23</sup> the Old South Church, toward the liberalizing of the requirements for baptismal rights and for the franchise. To summarize,<sup>16</sup> we would refer (1) to the early and narrow ruling of the extreme Puritans which permitted the franchise and the holding of office only to full church members, creating thus a theocracy of a sort and a definite overlapping of state and church; (2) to the evidence of discontent over the restrictions resulting from the above rulings, which appeared when the General Court was petitioned for relief from the same, in 1646; (3) to the cumulative public opinion which caused the Bay Court in 1657 to advise and invite a general Council of the colonies to weigh the desirability of granting all privileges of baptism and the franchise (withholding only that of the Lord's Supper) to such as had been baptized and lived decent lives. To this Council, Connecticut sent delegates and considerable favor was shown in some quarters for this latter plan, but on the whole each succeeding move seemed only to inflame some of the churches more completely. Then the Bay Court appointed a Synod of all the ministers of that colony which met in Boston in September 1662, to weigh only two crucial points of the controversy, of which the chief one pertained to baptism and eligibility to that function. Unanimity of opinion did not result, but a majority at this Synod favored the liberalizing (commonly called the "Half-way Covenant") which had been sponsored by the 1657 council. The Rev. John Wilson of Boston First Church as well as his assistant the Rev. John Norton were of that ministerial majority and kept their church in line with the Synod's findings while they lived, but after the death of Norton in 1663 and that of Wilson in 1667 the controversy within their church on this point flared high and the anti-Synod group (earlier a minority) became a majority and insisted upon calling to their pastorate one of the strongest anti-Synodists in all of New England, the Rev.

John Davenport who was otherwise in high repute and who had long served most acceptably at New Haven, Connecticut.

Ecclesiastical historians point out carefully that this war of words in the new world, which probably had its hottest battlefield in Boston First Church was not a "mere sectarian schism, but an important political movement. . . . The political rights of a considerable part of the community were at stake,"<sup>19</sup> for during the earlier days of the colony, only full church members had been eligible to vote, hold office or have their families baptized. Any considerable change, then or now, no matter how just and desirable, could be depended upon to raise a storm of disagreement and especially so when it pertained to the religious life of a community. There were twenty-eight male members of the Boston First Church, including WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES who had firmly agreed with the views of Pastor Wilson and the Synod of 1662 as to the desirability of the adoption of the Half-way Covenant whereby those who had once been baptized, in their parents' right, and who were living decent lives might have their children baptized and might become freemen, enjoy the franchise and hold office, lacking only the privilege of partaking of communion. This was definitely a forward-looking and constructive view of the possible usefulness of the church in the community. This group of twenty-eight members, which had by 1668 become a minority in the First Church strongly objected to the threatened reversal of church policy and the calling of the Rev. Mr. Davenport and asked to be dismissed so that they might form another church body, but their request was vehemently denied. Several church councils were called, the first one in August, 1668, when the First Church itself asked for a decision against the seceders and a disciplining of them for their audacity. That body must have been irked at the failure of the\* council to accede to its request, for the council refused to criticize and advised the dismissal (see Clapp, p. 162). Another council called by the dissenters themselves, met in April 1669 and when it learned that the First Church refused to give way one jot or tittle, it assumed the authority and responsibility of granting permission to the dissenting minority to withdraw and form a new church. This new organization took place at Charlestown\*\* on May 12 and 16, 1669 and their body was named the Third or South Church. Thus after much of conflict WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> became one of the founders of historic "Old South" within whose walls so many important events have taken place. The Third Church engaged as its pastor the Rev. Thomas Thacher, earlier a member at Charlestown who was installed on February 16, 1669-70 and served them until his death in October 1678. He was followed in the pulpit by Rev. Samuel<sup>2</sup> Willard who served until after the death of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>.

We are assured that the dissenters who withdrew included "some of the most respectable persons in the colony" and their identity proves that statement. They are shown to have included in their new church covenant, "besides what is usual in such instruments, . . . the following clause, which the subsequent history of the church has rendered worthy of particular notice.

'And for the furtherance of this blessed fellowship with God in Christ and one with another — we do likewise promise to endeavor to establish among ourselves, and convey

\*ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP was a member<sup>21</sup> on both of these councils, being associated on the first one with Thomas<sup>2</sup> and Rev. Samuel<sup>2</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>) and on the second one with Rev. Francis<sup>2</sup> Dane (JOHN<sup>2</sup>) and others.<sup>21</sup>

\*\*Crossing the county line to Charlestown, avoided legal difficulties as to organization without civic permission.

down to our posterity, all the holy truths and ordinances of the Gospel, committed to the churches, in faith and observance, opposing to the utmost of our church power whatsoever is diverse therefrom or contrary thereunto.' ”

Mrs. Mary Norton\* widow of the Rev. John Norton was, as her husband had been, a pro-synodist and completely in sympathy with the dissenters, to whom after their withdrawal from the First Church and forming of the Third Church, she made a gift of a portion of her home lot on which to build.<sup>40</sup> The tract she gave by deed of April 1, 1669 conveyed nearly half an acre bounded on the south and west by what we know as Milk and Washington Streets (see map, p. 303). The site offered had been first the garden and home of Gov. John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop and here he had died in 1649; next the home of Rev. John Norton\*\* who died in 1663 and of his widow Mary after him. In June and July 1669 construction was begun under the oversight of three of the members including Joseph Rock, by the digging of a trench for the foundation of the structure. On this work AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES was employed. A warrant was obtained by some First Church members who were resentful at the withdrawal, to stop the work and Rock and AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> with others were committed to prison and bound over to the county court. The meeting house was built of cedar, had a steeple, galleries, square pews and a bell which cost £18. It was first occupied on December 19, 1669 and served its members until 1730 when the brick building, still standing (1940) was erected in its place.

The records show that many peaceful overtures were made by this Third Church toward the older body, but in spite of every effort fourteen long years of bitter enmity were endured by the seceders before peace was brought about. In the meantime the other New England churches had taken sides and had become most unhappily embroiled and even the General Court had had its turn at partisanship. Casual records show that in some instances retaliation was carried so far that imprisonment was resorted to — presumably against some of the dissenters who formed the new church since a claim against them of failure to conform to their covenant once made is the only conceivable grounds for such action.

The wives of the men who withdrew from the mother church had also much injustice to suffer. Among them was SUSANNA, sometimes called “goody DAWES”. They patiently and repeatedly asked for dismissal from the First Church in order that they might go with their husbands into the Third. It was denied them and for a period of over five years there was conflict and unhappiness between “the sisters” and the First Church in which the women were patient and self controlled showing themselves to be superior to their persecutors. The reconciliation between the First and Third Churches occurred during the lives of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and his wife SUSANNA, and in 1682 the two churches concluded the healing of the breach. In this matter SUSANNA appears as a woman of understanding and fine Christian character and like her husband one who had great influence among her associates.

The date of the death of wife SUSANNA has not been found but it was subsequent<sup>19</sup> to June 1687 when WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> conveyed the title of his home to his son Jonathan<sup>2</sup>, subject to the life occupancy of a part of it by his wife and himself,

\*She was also one of the twenty-six “sisters” who in hopeless despair of peaceful dismissal withdrew from the mother church and applied to Old South for admission in August 1674.

\*\*Rev. John Norton, then serving the Ipswich Church, was “chosen by the Rev. John Cotton on his death-bed, as his successor, and [was] called<sup>3</sup> by Cotton Mather ‘the chief of our burning and shining lights.’ ”<sup>47</sup> In Norton’s home “was bred Increase<sup>2</sup> Mather, to whom New England and Harvard College owe so much.”<sup>47</sup>

but Jonathan<sup>2</sup> died in 1690,\* and on January 1, 1694, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> conveyed his property on similar conditions, for £160, to Stephen<sup>3</sup> Minot (John<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>) who lived as neighbor on Sudbury Street "but this conveyance also seems to have been rescinded."<sup>19</sup> As late as 1695 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was still more or less active for Judge Sewall in his Diary recorded<sup>20</sup> as of April 9, 1695 "... This day father DAWES makes my little Bridge" and added as of December 23, 1695 that "WILLIAM DAWES *pater*" was one of the bearers at the burial of\*\* Dame Walker.<sup>20</sup> WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> seems to have left no will and Judge Samuel Sewall recorded of him on March 24, 1703-4 that "WILLIAM DAWES, Mason, dyes about 2 p. m. A good old man, full of days, is got well to the end of his weary Race."<sup>20</sup>

The known children of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and SUSANNA (MILLS) DAWES, the first two born at Braintree and the others at Boston, were<sup>4,15,19</sup>

- i. AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- ii. Joanna<sup>2</sup>, bap. June 2, 1650, as dau. of "(—) DAWES of Braintree;" she must have d. before 1657.
- iii. Susan<sup>2</sup>, bap. Oct. 17, 1652, at Boston as dau. "of WILLIAM DAWES;" d. doubtless after 1695 when a child was born to John Nichols; m. before Apr., 1675, John<sup>2</sup> Nichols† [Mordecai<sup>1</sup> and Alice (Hallett) Nichols] whom AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES called "brother" in his will.
- iv. William<sup>2</sup>, b. Mar. 8, bap. 11, 1654-5 called "son of WILLIAM and SUSANNAH", evidently d. before his father though it might have been he, called "William Daves" who was a member<sup>6</sup> of Capt. John Hull's Company in 1681. Reference to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> as "pater" when he was a bearer at the funeral<sup>20</sup> of Dame Walker on Dec. 23, 1695, argues that this son was still living.
- v. Johanna<sup>2</sup>, bap. Aug. 2, 1657, as dau. "of WILLIAM DAWES; perhaps she who as "Hannah of (—) and SUSANNA DAWES", who died Jan. 14, 1659, or
- vi. perhaps a Hannah Dawes, erroneously called "of John and Susanna" who was born on Jan. 7, 1659, was the Hannah who died on Jan. 14, 1659.
- vii. Jonathan<sup>2</sup>, b. Nov. 3, bap. 10, 1661; d. Oct. 5, 1690; m. by 1682 Hannah<sup>4</sup> Morse (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Samuel<sup>1</sup>).<sup>38</sup> Extant tax lists of Boston show his name<sup>6</sup> in 1686, 1687 and 1688.

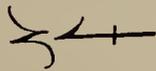
AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES (*William*<sup>1</sup>) was born<sup>4,19</sup> at Braintree on July 24, 1642, died<sup>39</sup> at Boston on November 9, and was<sup>20</sup> buried there on the tenth, 1705 in his sixty-third year, having married at Boston not later than December, 1663 MARY<sup>2</sup> BUMSTEAD (see Bumstead, p. 126). His home was next to his father's on the east side of Sudbury Street, very probably as the gift of a portion of the father's property, and each of them paid a tax on a house<sup>6</sup> there in 1676. AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> is recorded in extant Boston tax lists as having been taxed<sup>6</sup> also in 1681, 1686-8, 1691, 1695 and 1700-1. He followed in his father's footsteps as to occupation, becoming a brick mason, and being appointed in January, 1669-70 to serve<sup>6,36</sup> with his father in surveying "chimnys." He was appointed to serve<sup>6</sup> as hog-reeve in 1678 and

\*At his death Jonathan<sup>2</sup> owed £90 to his father.<sup>19</sup>

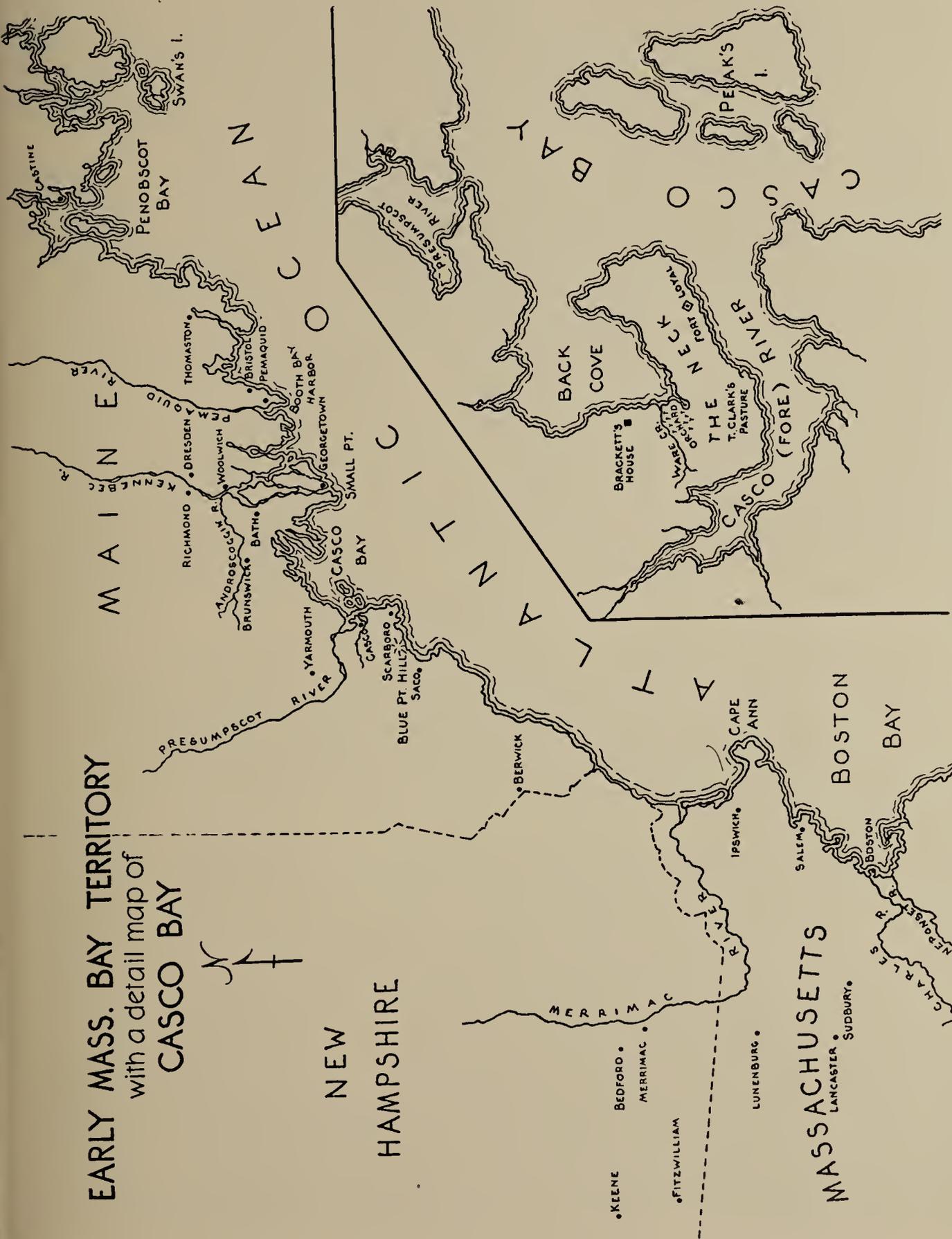
\*\*This was<sup>5</sup> Sarah Walker, widow of Robert<sup>1</sup> who had died in 1687.

†Mordecai<sup>1</sup> Nichols died<sup>41</sup> about 1663 and his widow Alice (daughter of Richard<sup>1</sup> Hallet) was appointed administratrix of his estate. ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP helped to take the inventory and was appointed with widow Alice as a guardian of the minor son John<sup>2</sup> Nichols (born at Boston on August 18, 1653, though a Randall Nichols of Charlestown also had a son John born in the latter town on January 16, 1653). Widow Alice married secondly, between 1665 and 1671, as his second wife Thomas<sup>1</sup> Clarke of Boston, having made a premarital contract with him whereby the house and land left by Mordecai should belong to his son John<sup>2</sup>; if she died first she should have the power to dispose of such estate as she brought with her; but if Clarke died first Alice was to have her own estate plus £200 from his. Legal difficulty resulted and ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT in October, 1671, testified that he had seen a new room built by Clarke onto the original Mordecai Nichols home. Clarke also built a second house on the Nichols land and these are undoubtedly the two "messauges" which John<sup>2</sup> Nichols "sold"<sup>13</sup> to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES in April and September, 1675, and redeemed<sup>19</sup> on December 25, 1679 (see p. 13).

EARLY MASS. BAY TERRITORY  
with a detail map of  
CASCO BAY



NEW  
HAMPSHIRE



EARLY NEW ENGLAND SETTLEMENTS

1683, as tithing man<sup>6,36</sup> in 1680, 1686, 1690-1 and 1697, as a constable<sup>6,20</sup> of Boston in 1688 and as an inspector of the making of brick<sup>6</sup> in 1691. In May, 1681 AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> with his father WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and his cousin James<sup>2</sup> Hawkins, all builders, having a contract to build a house for Deputy Governor Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>), were fined<sup>6</sup> twenty shillings by the town for making the wall of the cellar nine inches over onto the town land. This house was<sup>6</sup> "frontinge toward y<sup>e</sup> Docke."

AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>, as has been stated,<sup>56</sup> was occupied with the construction of the foundation of the Third Church in June 1669 and was involved in one phase of the persecution practised by the disapproving First Church. Being called "AM. DAWES one of the workmen," he was committed to prison<sup>56</sup> in June-July 1669 with Joseph Rock and others who were bound over to the County Court on the claim that they had failed to get permission from the magistrates to erect the meeting house for the newly formed church. The governor called a meeting of his council to consider the offence on July 14 but that body side-stepped by merely advising the Third Church to obey the law. At the County Court held July 27 Joseph Rock and Benjamin Gibs, overseers, were both fined £5 and costs of court but they appealed and at the September Court they were acquitted by Jury and Bench and their fines were nullified. Popular opinion was favoring the Third Church more and more, however, and in late July they were granted permission by the selectmen to erect their meeting house as planned but a petition signed by twenty-six of the dissenters including<sup>56</sup> WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES, and addressed to the governor and magistrates was read in open court on September 16, 1669 with the only evident result being advice from the governor that they should delay construction until the General Court met to pass on their plans. But in the meantime<sup>56</sup>

" . . . the love of many Brethren in Neighbouring Townes is not to be forgotten who then (September 13) freely brought in 27 Carte loads of the meeting house timber, and upon the 27.(7) ber [September] brought in 43 Cartes laden with the same timber, from the place where it was framed, being 14 miles distant from the Towne, besides 13 Cartes from Muddy river with timber all layed in place. . . ." "The frame being in place on the 1: of October helpe came in to raise it, and soe the worke was carried along gradually to the Compleating thereof, without the least dammage of any one person that was there employed. . . ."

On December 19, 1669 the "Church met publicquely in the new meeting house,"<sup>56</sup> and on September 7, 1670 AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES joined<sup>5</sup> this Third Church, following that with the acquirement of freemanship<sup>10</sup> on May 31, 1671. In 1674 AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> became a proud\* member<sup>36</sup> of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Boston (see Gore, pp. 320-1) of which three of his descendants became members<sup>36</sup> later, namely Thomas<sup>5</sup> (Thomas<sup>4</sup>, THOMAS<sup>3</sup>, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>) in 1754; WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> (THOMAS<sup>3</sup>, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>) in 1760 and his son WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>, who rode with Revere, in 1768.

AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES definitely rendered his greatest public service in a military line for, briefly stated, he served<sup>18</sup> through most if not all of King Philip's War<sup>47</sup> in 1675-6; was a member<sup>6,10,36</sup> of Capt. Thomas<sup>3</sup> Savage's company of Boston militia from 1680 to 1686, and perhaps continuously until<sup>6</sup> 1691; and when King William's War began, "to the eastward," he served as a lieutenant under Capt. Nathaniel

\*It has been stated<sup>19</sup> that AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> soon became a lieutenant in this organization but the history<sup>36</sup> of the Artillery Company fails to verify that claim. He did acquire a lieutenantcy, in the colonial army,<sup>77</sup> however, in 1689 during his active service in Maine in King William's War.

Hall in the first of the five expeditions led by Maj. Benjamin Church against the Indians of Maine and New Hampshire, may have served in the second expedition and certainly did so in the third of these expeditions when he acted both as soldier and mason at the building of Fort Pemaquid, and lost one of his eyes there, in 1692. EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT also served in King William's War.

A brief comparison of the two Indian wars named for the Indian Philip and for King William seems fitting just here. Philip's War of 1675-6 (see Upham, pp. 622-7) was waged almost entirely in Massachusetts and the parties to it were Indians and the colonists. The Indians desired to exterminate the whites from New England, but though they utterly destroyed ten or twelve towns, partially destroyed and depopulated two score other towns, took five hundred to six hundred English lives and caused an expense of over £100,000, their objective was not attained for the Narragansetts and other tribes who became parties to the conflict found their strength and unity utterly broken by the "army of one thousand men" which was fighting for the existence of the white race in New England. There is no use trying to excuse or justify the frequent atrocities practiced by both whites and Indians in these wars. That phase is quite outside the scope of this work, which attempts merely to relate what occurred. In Philip's War the settlements in Massachusetts were so much more numerous than were those in Maine during King William's, that help could frequently be sent in haste from one village to another, though often not soon enough; but at least there would be in the minds of the people a consciousness of companionship, a unity of interest and an intent to help in time of need.

On the other hand, King William's War was fought mainly in what is now<sup>58</sup> Maine with some battles over the line into present New Hampshire. A few preliminary conflicts occurred as early as 1676 — during the closing days of Philip's War because the Indians "to the eastward," being Tarratines and Abenequis, nursed certain grudges against the whites; and they distrusted, too, the increasing number of colonists settling along the Maine coast. But presently they subsided into a sullen tolerance which lasted until 1688 when certain criminally foolish acts on the part of Gov. Andros of the Bay Colony fanned the natives' smouldering displeasure into activity. The French, wishing to hold the territory against the English, urged the natives on, exaggerating every cause for complaint, furnishing them with munitions and in 1689 the English King William put on the finishing touch by declaring war against the French, after which the French influence over the natives was exerted to the fullest, and atrocities which stagger description were practiced on the small and scattered English settlements along the Maine coast. This war ran<sup>64</sup> for ten years — until 1698, and every northern settlement except three (York, Wells and Kittery) was wiped<sup>64</sup> out by January 1692.

As to the DAWES' families' assistance or action in Philip's War, as will be shown, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> had two servants or substitutes in active service and, leaving his family to his father's care, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> must have been among the first to respond for duty, for on December 10, 1675, nine days prior to the Swamp Fight, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>, credited under Capt. Samuel Appleton already had three pounds fourteen shillings due him. Then he took part in the trek from Dedham Plain to Wickford (see map, p. 618) and on to the Narragansett Swamp Fight of December 19, 1675, with its battle against the storm and bitter cold which must have been fully as exhausting

as had been the preceding battle against the Indians. Since no record is found of his receiving wounds, it doubtless fell to his lot to help carry the injured and dying through the long night march back to Wickford (see Upham, pp. 622-7) and he probably took part in the subsequent "Hungry March" northward, (see Woodward, p. 670). In February 1675-6 he and his father were both included among ninety-three signers<sup>18</sup> who petitioned the General Court, suggesting constructive plans for combatting the enemy and for the planting and care of sufficient crops for the colonists' needs, in spite of the man power required by the military emergency.<sup>18</sup> The following petition<sup>19</sup> is self-explanatory:

"To y<sup>e</sup> honoured Councill now sitting in Boston, this 14th Aprill, Anno 1676.

"The humble petition of WILLIAM DAWES and AMBROSE DAWES sheweth, whereas that the said WM. DAWES hath had a man impressed to y<sup>e</sup> service ever since August last, and doth yet continue out by a man which he hired, yet Joseph Bicknell, in whose roome y<sup>e</sup> man is, he returning home went out again a volunteere under Capt. Reynolds, and now is under y<sup>e</sup> command of Cap<sup>ne</sup> Sill, and so y<sup>e</sup> said DAWES hath two servants out at this time; now y<sup>e</sup> said WM. DAWES doth desire that y<sup>e</sup> said Bicknell, which went out volunteere, might be dismissed & returne home.

"And y<sup>e</sup> said AMBROSE DAWES sent another man out volunteere, & now under y<sup>e</sup> command of Capt<sup>ne</sup> Sill, the said AMBROSE DAWES having ben out him-selfe most part of y winter, he having great occasion for him doth desire y he might have an order for his release and returne home. Your poor petitionr's desire being granted will much oblige them for ever to pray for your Honours prosperity & ever rest.

WILLIAM DAWES.  
AMBROS DAWES."<sup>19</sup>

The service of AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> apparently continued, for on June 24, 1676 he had due him £3.6.6.

The government had promised to those in the Narragansett Campaign of Philip's War a bonus of land, but legal action to make that promise good was not taken until nearly sixty years later when most of the participants would have died. The estate of AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> was accorded land in Narragansett Township No. 5, then called Souhegan East but now Bedford, New Hampshire<sup>18</sup> and in 1733 his son THOMAS<sup>3</sup> made claim,<sup>18</sup> as heir of AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>, to his father's share. On October 30, 1734 in Boston when lots in this grant were drawn, THOMAS<sup>3</sup> drew lot number twelve, numbers eight and nine in the ninth range and number sixty-seven of meadow.<sup>18</sup>

But to return to the *action* of AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>, having survived Philip's War, he was ready for the next call and when the northern and eastern Indians, urged on by the French, were increasing the massacres of the settlers of Maine and taking many of them captive, he offered his life again.

With the repeated Indian attacks on the various Maine settlements it became increasingly necessary for the Bay Colony to send them help. In July,<sup>67</sup> 1688 occurred<sup>62</sup> the first serious Indian attack of King William's War, at North Yarmouth, of which it has been said: "Thus was the Vein of New-England first opened, that afterwards Bled for Ten years together." At this time England and France were still at peace<sup>67</sup> but King William declared war against France within three months which automatically<sup>64</sup> augmented the bad feeling between their colonies. So Andros gathered about a thousand men in November 1688 and marched<sup>68</sup> east with them to establish forts at convenient distances for the safety of these outlying English

settlements. Eleven in all were established and garrisoned through the winter of 1688-9 by nearly six hundred men (see map, p. 19). This winter expedition suffered greatly from the heavy marches, construction work in the extreme cold, etc. Andros faithfully stayed on with his men until late March 1689 and when he arrived at Boston the Revolution against him was about to break, being the result of the popular displeasure against his rule, taken in conjunction with the rumor that King William was on the English throne. With this break in authority, many of the soldiers recently left in the Maine garrisons departed for their homes; the colonial office-holders of 1686 who were temporarily returned to power were not quick nor severe enough in their taking over protection of the Maine settlements and the Indians took immediate advantage of that fact. To combat the increased Indian activity the Bay government on August 21, 1689 gave an order<sup>58,64</sup> that a body<sup>59</sup> of six hundred men (seven or eight companies) should be raised by detachments from the militia or by voluntary enlistments, the command of which was given to Maj. Jeremiah Swaine who appointed as his headquarters and the place of rendezvous Newichawannock (Berwick, now Maine). One week later, on August 28, 1689, his forces began their march eastward. One of the companies under Swaine was made up of ninety friendly ("Praying") Indians from Natick (see Clapp, p. 160) commanded<sup>58</sup> by Capt. Lightfoot (see p. 24); and another company<sup>58,59</sup> in Swaine's group captained by Nathaniel Hall had as a member of the unit our AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES.

In the meantime the commissioners of the United Colonies, including\* Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>) who was their president, being in session at Boston addressed<sup>60</sup> a letter of instruction<sup>78</sup> under date of September 18, 1689, to Maj. Benjamin Church (who had been ordered to assemble troops) to make all speed with his forces to Casco, also called Falmouth (now Portland) and there to cooperate with Maj. Swaine and to take over from him the command of the companies captained by Nathaniel Hall and Simon<sup>2</sup> Willard who had marched east<sup>59</sup> under Swaine. Another letter was addressed to Hall and Willard "now in or about Casco Bay" putting them under Church's orders. On Swaine's arrival at "the east" he had distributed many of his men at the various garrisons and Hall and his company, apparently working westward again, (see map, p. 19) arrived at Casco (Falmouth) on September 20-1, almost simultaneously with the arrival by boat of Church and his soldiers who reached Casco Friday afternoon September 20, 1689 to learn that for one or more days<sup>60</sup> eighty canoes with about two hundred or more Indians<sup>59</sup> and some French had been seen on Palmer's (now Peak's, see map, p. 19) Island, presumably awaiting reinforcements, and they were expected to attack Casco at any moment. Church promptly contacted the officers at Fort Loyal and also Capt. Hall† and his company (including AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>) "who had just arrived."<sup>62</sup> Church landed his own men at the fort after dark, and before daylight

\*Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth also held the office of President of the Province of Maine.<sup>59,60</sup>

†Other renditions are:<sup>62,66</sup> that Capt. Hall "with his *vigorous* Lieutenant DAWES, just then arriving with his Company, the English hotly Engaged them for several Hours, and after a deal of true English Valour discovered in this Engagement, and the loss of Ten or a Dozen men, the Indians Ran for it . . ." <sup>62</sup> And: "But Capt. Hall who had been a valiant commander in the former as well as in this war, with *courageous* Lieutenant<sup>59</sup> DAWES, coming with his company at that instant, engaged the Indians; upon which ensued a very sharp conflict, which lasted several hours. But at last the Indians, not able longer to stand the encounter, ran off and left the field, with a dozen Englishmen slain . . . the army was broken up in the month of November; only a sufficient number of soldiers to defend the forts and garrisons, and the people in them, in the most exposed settlements."<sup>45</sup>

came he had secreted them<sup>58</sup> in nearby woods “not far from the head of Back Cove . . . about half a mile north westerly from the\* garrison” (see map, p. 19); while the Indians during that night had landed “upon the other or westerly side of the Cove,” having moved to the upper part of the neck either<sup>59</sup> by way of Fore River or of Back Cove; and in the morning of September 21, 1689, the Indians made a prisoner of Anthony<sup>2</sup> Brackett (Anthony<sup>1</sup>) who lived near at hand and presently they killed him. The alarm was immediately given by Brackett’s sons, and Hall’s Company, with AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES “who were in advance\*\* hastened to the spot. The enemy were in Brackett’s orchard, and here the action commenced”<sup>59</sup> and most of the battle occurred.

Hall’s men being in advance, had hurriedly forded some bit of water while the tide was low or out, in order to make a frontal attack upon the enemy and they “were very hotly ingaged.”<sup>60</sup> But others of the English, presently finding that the tide was already coming in, failed to get across so they occupied an elevation<sup>63</sup> and fired at the enemy over the heads of Hall’s men.<sup>58,59</sup> Maj. Church hurried up with reinforcements and ammunition but could not get across to deliver them, so he called encouragement across to Hall and his men and explained that the full tide hindered his crossing<sup>61</sup> but immediately Capt. Lightfoot “laid down his gun, and came over the river, [toward the fort where their supplies were] taking the powder upon his head, and a kettle of bullets in each hand, and got safe to his fellow Soldiers.”<sup>60,61</sup> Learning that there was a bridge about three-quarters of a mile up, Church decided upon a flanking attack against the enemy Indians using the several companies on his side of the water, but the enemy sensing his intention, first advanced to attack him and prevent his junction with Hall<sup>58</sup> but being unable to do that, they began to run<sup>67</sup> from the river side, where they had built barricades of logs and brush, and into the woods; and though Church did not know it until later, the natives were then in retreat.<sup>61</sup> He thought they were attempting some other passage into the settlement but as he hunted for them, crossing the Neck to Capt. Clark’s field on the south side, he found Clark’s cattle feeding quietly, proving that the Indians had not passed that way. He was soon informed by his scouts that the Indians had completely disappeared into the protection of the woods. He then ordered that all the dead and wounded should be “brought over” which was done by means of canoes. The records state repeatedly that “Capt. Hall and his men being first engaged did great service and suffered the greatest loss in his men . . .”<sup>59,61</sup> but that the English and [friendly] Indians “coming suddenly to his relief prevented him and his whole company from being cut off.”<sup>59</sup> “By this time the day was far spent, and marching into Town about sunset, carrying in all of their wounded and dead men. . . .” The enemy was judged to be three or four hundred strong and the fight continued about six hours before the enemy retreated. Had Church arrived a day later, his only possible action would have been to bury the dead. The loss by the English was eleven dead and ten

\*Whether this implies the fort or some garrisoned house is uncertain for the claim is made that several houses at Falmouth were garrisoned. Another description of their placing<sup>59</sup> is that they were secreted about half a mile from town.

\*\*Among the instructions<sup>59</sup> given at Boston to Benjamin Church under date of September 18, 1689, before he embarked for Casco Bay, was one which required him to keep out “Scouts and a *forlorn* before your main body . . .”<sup>58,60</sup> of which the “forlorn” is defined (Century Dictionary) as being “an advanced body of troops, a vanguard” which in this case proves to have been the company of Nathaniel Hall and undoubtedly AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES. This seems to imply that the unit was made up of especially good Indian fighters — and circumstances prove that to have been true.

wounded of which Capt. Hall had six slain. Church's letter of report to the Boston officials<sup>60</sup> was dated September 21, 1689 the very day of the fight and immediately after that he ranged all the countryside, visiting all garrisons and hoping to come upon the Indians, but they were dispersed and they troubled the settlements no more until spring.<sup>60</sup> Massachusetts authorities ordered Church to settle all the garrisons and put in suitable officers for the winter and to send all other volunteers home. He held a council of war at Scarboro on November 11, 1689, which was attended by various commissioned officers of Saco, Falmouth and Scarboro and decided that twenty men each should be garrisoned at Saco and Scarboro. Then a council of war under Church was held on November 13 at Falmouth, attended by the above officers and by Capt. Nathaniel Hall, Lt. AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES\* et al, at which it was decided that sixty soldiers should be garrisoned there besides fifteen at Fort Loyal (see map, p. 19) and Capt. Hall was made commander-in-chief of the three towns named.<sup>60</sup> This is not *proof* but it seems to imply that AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> was listed for service during the winter of 1689-90 under Hall, and probably at Falmouth.<sup>60</sup> We have proof,<sup>60,77</sup> however, that prior to November 13, 1689, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> had been commissioned<sup>19,36</sup> a lieutenant but the date of his return to his home is not recorded. As a result of this unprecedented victory at Casco over the eastern Indians, the inhabitants there felt certain that the pride of the natives as well as the French would drive them to an even more vicious attack when spring opened up and so it came to pass,<sup>75</sup> for on May 16, 1690, Casco (Falmouth) was attacked about dawn by between four and five hundred Frenchmen and Tarratine Indians<sup>78</sup> and after being besieged for five days and four nights the fort was forced<sup>62</sup> to capitulate about three o'clock the afternoon of the twentieth. They had gradually assembled in the fort, abandoning the fortified houses which were then burned, and most of their men had been killed or wounded during the battle. Castine, the French commander,<sup>78</sup> swore with uplifted hand to furnish the survivors in the fort a safe conduct to another English settlement, which promise he promptly broke, allowing the Indian allies to murder or retain as captive the wounded men as well as the women and children.<sup>75</sup> The survivors<sup>78</sup> suffered "insult, abuse and the most fiendish atrocities," but beautiful Portland eventually rose from Falmouth's ashes.

The next known service recorded of AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES occurred at Pemaquid<sup>64,65,67</sup> (see map, p. 19) during the third expedition of Maj. Benjamin Church to the east in 1692. A stockade, built there by Andros in 1688-9, had soon been destroyed by the French and Indians and when Phipps came over from England<sup>62</sup> as the new governor of New England in May, 1692, he brought orders from the English government to build a real fort at Pemaquid. He raised a force of about four hundred and fifty men, including our AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES, and in company with Maj. Benjamin Church and some of his men, embarked<sup>62</sup> early<sup>19</sup> in August, 1692. On their way north they stopped at what had once been Fort Loyal at Casco where Capt. Hall and AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> had served so valiantly on September 21, 1689, and buried the bones of the hundred or so of Falmouth's settlers who had been massacred there in May 1690 under Castine, and loaded onto their vessels the cannon which lay useless, for installation at Pemaquid. Church and his men began to

\*In various published reports the name "DAWES" has been carelessly read and appears<sup>77</sup> as AMBROSE DAVIS.

scour the country for Indians while Phipps laid out the new fort<sup>67</sup> which was described as the finest fort yet built "in these parts of America," being intended as security against the Indians and a demonstration against the French. After planning the structure,<sup>60,62,67</sup> Gov. Phipps hurried back to Boston where the witchcraft trials were being held (see p. 370) and left the earlier part of the construction in the hands of Captains Wing and Bancroft though the later part of the construction was under Capt. March. It was given the name<sup>62</sup> of "Fort William Henry" and though ordered by the English government, its cost amounting to about £20,000 was paid, reluctantly, by the Bay Colony.<sup>76</sup> On this structure and at this place AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES served both as workman and as soldier, being repeatedly recorded<sup>19,36</sup> as "in his Majesty's army at Pemaquid." The following petition is self-explanatory:<sup>19,128</sup>

"The Petition of AMBROSE DAWES

"Humble sheweth that, wheareas yo'r petitioner was imploid in theare magesties sarvis at Pemiqitt in the yeare 1692, for the space of five months, wheare he did nott only attend as a soldier and as a workeman implid by Exelensie, and in said sarvis lost one of his eyes, beside the greate miserie and paine he underwent thearby, [and] he hath beene made unncapble of dooing labor six months or seven, and alsoe more unable to gitt a liveliehood then formerly, together w<sup>th</sup> the expensis of the chirurgion for the saving the sight of itt. The premisis being considered, your poore sarvent humblie requests your honers to allowe him oute of the treshury so much, aither annewally or together, as your hon'rs shall in preudence thinke best; hoping you will not doe otherwise with your sarvent than in such casis of los of lims hath beene dun with others [so that] the redines of your sarvent, wch he hath alwais shewen for to attend their magestie sarvis at your comand, may be still incoridg, whoe for your honrs shall think it an honer to doe any firther sarvis wch he is capable to doe.

"And shall still praye for your Honers prosperitt as in deutie bound.

"For Answer to the Petition of AMBROS DAWES:

"*Voted*, That he be allowed ten pounds out of the Publick Treasury, in consideration of damage sustained in their Ma'ties service by the loss of one of his eyes, and that he come not for any further satisfaction."<sup>\*</sup>

This was passed in the affirmative by the House of Representatives June 18 and by the Council on June 19, 1694.<sup>19</sup>

And thus ended all active participation against the Indians for AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES, but as has been shown and will be seen, ill health was his portion henceforth.

As to the private affairs<sup>84</sup> of AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES, we learn but little. His membership in Old South Church began in 1670 which means that most of the period of trial which that organization endured at the hands of the First Church was a part of his experience as well as of his parents'. His wife MARY appears not to have acquired<sup>19</sup> membership. In September 1670, he is shown<sup>70</sup> to have owned land in Roxbury, being then called "AMMJ DAWE" (the "j" being used in place of an "i" to furnish him an odd nickname!) After the death of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD in June, 1677, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> and MARY his wife joined the other heirs<sup>19</sup> in disposing of her father's property; in August, 1685, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> mortgaged<sup>19</sup> his home on Sudbury Street for £43 to his cousin James<sup>2</sup> Hawkins and to a neighbor James Barnes. This

<sup>\*</sup>Of course ten pounds meant much more in 1694 than it would now, but the insulting suggestion incorporated in the last phrase seems entirely uncalled for in connection with a man who had rendered double service in King Philip's War of both self and a servant; who had been a member of the "forlorn" at Casco in 1689 and had served again for months together at Pemaquid, as both soldier and builder, ultimately losing an eye as well as his health.

mortgage ran for nearly twenty years until on February 21, 1704, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> conveyed a part of the property (doubtless then including the portion earlier held by his father WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, lately deceased) to his son THOMAS<sup>3</sup>, and at that time the old mortgage was discharged, but a new one for £33 was given to Susanna Jacobs, which ran for fifteen years — until long after the death of AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>.

Of the ten or more children of AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> only four survived him, William<sup>3</sup> his eldest son having died as a mariner at London<sup>42</sup> in 1699; and Ambrose<sup>3</sup> having removed to Plymouth Colony from whence some branches of his descendants removed about 1769, to the Upper Kennebec (see map, p. 385) where their name became corrupted<sup>82</sup> to "Dor" or "Dors." That left only our THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and his descendants as the main group bearing the name of Dawes and resident at or near Boston.

On October 17, 1705, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> made and signed his will, with Elisha<sup>1</sup> Story, brother of our SARAH<sup>1</sup> as one of the witnesses. He referred to himself as a "mason, being very often sick and ill in body." After a deeply religious preface, and a direction that all debts be paid, he bequeathed to his wife MARY his whole estate during her life. After her death the moveables were to be divided equally between his four living children, Ambrose<sup>3</sup> the eldest son (resident at Nantucket), THOMAS<sup>3</sup>, and their sisters Mary Webster and Rebecca Morton<sup>71</sup> (but carelessly rendered<sup>19</sup> as Moulton).

His home property was bequeathed to THOMAS<sup>3</sup> after the decease of the mother and legacies totaling £30 were to be paid by THOMAS<sup>3</sup> to the three other heirs within three years time. The testator appointed Deacon John Marion and "my brother Mr. John Nicholls" to see that the will was carried out as directed<sup>19</sup> and these two men filed an inventory of the estate on February 7, 1705, to the accuracy of which widow\* MARY made oath on February 27. It showed evidence of very simple living and totaled a little over £90, of which the housing and lands represented £60 and debts due amounted<sup>19</sup> to about £30.

Following the death of AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> on November 5, 1705, widow MARY lived less than a year, dying at Boston on May 22, 1706, aged 64 and another inventory was then filed of the household goods<sup>19</sup> showing only the addition of a few cooking utensils and of "a suit of printed curtains" for which she had paid thirty-five shillings. It appears that during the life of AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>, or perhaps at his death, there had been purchased a burial lot in King's Chapel Burial Ground where he and his wife MARY with undoubtedly other members of the family had been laid, for at a meeting of the Selectmen of Boston held on February 29, 1719-20, the following action was taken:<sup>73</sup>

"Liberty is granted to m<sup>r</sup> THOMAS DAWES to Erect a Toomb in the Spot of ground where his Relations w<sup>t</sup> buried in ye Old burying place."

This tomb was soon built and stands intact now (1940) bearing no inscription itself, but having<sup>17,74</sup> leaned against it, a slate headstone (see plate III, p. 7) announcing that within lie the remains of AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> and his wife MARY, parents of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and of seven children of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and SARAH DAWES. There is also affixed upon the top of the tomb, a bronze tablet commemorating the service of

\*It is claimed<sup>19</sup> that she signed some of the documents but apparently only<sup>113</sup> by her initials, "M. D."

WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES (1745–1799) who rode with Revere. This tablet\* (see plate III, p. 7) was placed in 1899 by the Sons of the American Revolution.<sup>17</sup> On the adjoining lot is a monument dedicated to the other Boston branch of the Dawes family, namely to Col. Thomas<sup>5</sup> Dawes, (Thomas<sup>4</sup>, THOMAS<sup>3</sup>, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>).

The children<sup>19</sup> of AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> and MARY (BUMSTEAD) DAWES, all born in Boston, were<sup>19,43</sup>

- I. Mary<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 24, 1664, bap. at Boston First Church on Dec. 23, 1666; d. after Oct. 17, 1705; called "Mary Webster" by her father's will; entered into a baptismal covenant<sup>5,71</sup> at Old South Church on April 30, 1680, as did also her sister Rebecca<sup>3</sup> and their uncle Jonathan<sup>2</sup>. She and Rebecca<sup>3</sup> became church members there on Jan. 29, 1688–9; she married prob. by 1680 James<sup>2</sup> Webster (James<sup>1</sup> of Boston, brewer).<sup>4</sup>
- II. Rebecca<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 25, 1665; d. after Oct. 17, 1705, when her father's will appears to have called her Rebecca "Moulton"; with her sister Mary<sup>3</sup> she entered into a baptismal covenant<sup>5,71</sup> at Old South Church on April 30, 1680, "became reconciled" to that church on Oct. 19, 1684 and had a son Benjamin Marshall bap. a week later; was a communicant there in 1688–9; m. 1st about 1682–3 Benjamin Marshall who d. after 1688; m. 2nd in 1693, Eliezer<sup>3</sup> Morton (Ephraim<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>) of Plymouth;<sup>71</sup> was still a member of Boston 3rd Church in April 1694 when a child was bap. at Plymouth; was dismissed to Plymouth Church by or before March, 1703; she or another of the same name was called<sup>44</sup> "widow Rebecca Morton"<sup>71</sup> in November, 1727 and in December, 1732.
- III. Susan<sup>3</sup>, said to have been bap. at Boston First Church on Dec. 23, 1666, also said to have been bap. Dec. 30, 1666; must have d. yng.
- IV. Anna<sup>3</sup>, said to have been bap. Dec. 30, 1666; prob. d. yng.
- V. Susanna<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 19, 1668; perhaps she who was bap. Mar. 21, 1669; must have d. before 1673.
- VI. William<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 19, 1671; a mariner called "of Boston, New England, mariner, at present belonging to the ship Jeremy, Capt. Gilbert Bant, Commander, "when he made his will in London, Eng., on Mar. 8, 1698–9, naming as his residuary legatees his brother, THOMAS DAWES of Boston, bricklayer, and friend Hannah Pen of Boston, late of Charlestown, New England.<sup>42</sup>
- VII. Susanna<sup>3</sup>, b. Jan. 11, 1673, and bap. the same day; prob. d.s.p. and before her father.
- VIII. Ambrose<sup>3</sup>, bap. Mar. 5, 1675; called "eldest son" by his father's will; resident at Duxbury and Nantucket; m. 1st at Nantucket Apr. 14, 1704, Mehitable<sup>3</sup> Gardner (John<sup>2</sup>, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> of Cape Anne and Salem); m. 2nd, there, July 8, 1714, Mary Chandler who died at Nantucket Feb. 1, 1768, being called "second wife of Ambrose, jr." The known children of Ambrose<sup>3</sup> were:  
Joseph<sup>4</sup>, Priscilla<sup>4</sup>, Ebenezer<sup>4</sup>, Thankful<sup>4</sup> and Gideon<sup>4</sup> of whom some of the descendants of Ebenezer<sup>4</sup> removed to Maine and were recorded as "Dors" and "Dor."
- IX. Joseph<sup>3</sup>, b. Oct. 21, 1677; prob. d.s.p. before his father.
- X. THOMAS<sup>3</sup>, see following.

THOMAS<sup>3</sup> DAWES (*Ambrose<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*) born in Boston<sup>25</sup> on<sup>127</sup> November 1, and baptized\*\* November 7, 1680, died there of apoplexy on March 17 or 18, 1749–50, having been married in that town on August 20, 1702 by Rev. Mr. Samuel Willard of Old South Church to<sup>89</sup> SARAH<sup>1</sup> STORY (see Story, p. 570) who survived her husband nine years. He was by trade a mason<sup>25</sup> and builder as his father and grandfather had been before him. As has been shown, after his mother's death in 1706 THOMAS<sup>3</sup> received one-fourth of the small movable estate which his father left, as well as the family home on Sudbury Street (which had first been appraised<sup>19</sup> at £60 and later<sup>113</sup> at £70) and he assumed legacies totaling £30. On October 31,

\*See also map, p. 42.

\*\*The published record<sup>43</sup> claims that THOMAS<sup>3</sup> was baptized at the First Church but that cannot be true since his father's membership was at the Third Church.

1703, wife SARAH had joined<sup>25</sup> Old South Church, and on April 18, 1705 her husband THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and her brother Elisha<sup>1</sup> Story did so.<sup>72</sup> Among the things<sup>64</sup> which THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and his wife experienced was a terrible fire in Boston not far from their home in October 1711, which consumed\* about a hundred houses including the town house\*\* and First Church Meeting House, most of the buildings in Corn Hill and many in King and Queen streets and contiguous lanes.<sup>95</sup> In April 1712, he was one of a committee of three<sup>73</sup> appointed to view and evaluate a party wall of brick; in July of that year he was a member of another committee to view and report on some defective chimneys in Ann Street; was clerk of the market in 1715-6; he belonged to the militia and in 1718 held the office of constable.<sup>25,101,125</sup> In February, 1719-20, as has been stated, fifteen years after the death of his parents, liberty was granted to him "to erect a Toomb in the Spot of ground where his Relations w<sup>r</sup> buried in ye Old burying place"<sup>73</sup> (see p. 27 and plate v, p. 39).

In March 1723, Boston streets were flooded nearly two feet higher than ever known before as "We could sail in Boston in the street from South Battery to the Rise of the Ground in King Street and from thence to the Rise . . . toward North Meeting House. . . ."<sup>51</sup>

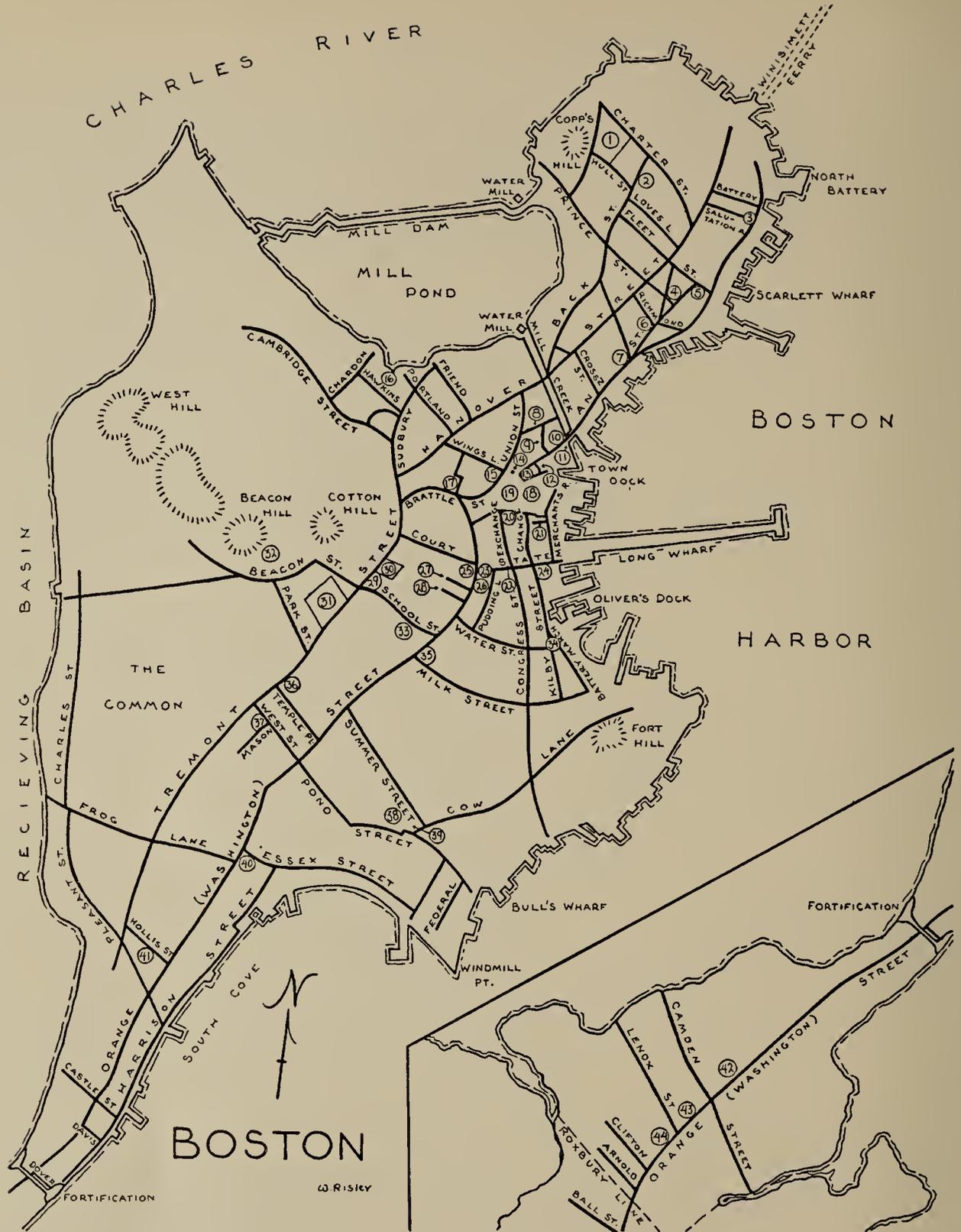
The will of Elisha<sup>1</sup> Story made in 1723 and probated in 1725 made THOMAS<sup>3</sup> DAWES, his brother-in-law one of the executors of that man's estate.<sup>100</sup> In the fall of 1726 "Cuzen DAWES" (THOMAS<sup>3</sup>) did whitewashing of the front chamber, lower room and stairway for his first cousin Jeremiah<sup>3</sup> Bumstead (Jeremiah<sup>2</sup>, THOMAS<sup>1</sup>) the Diarist. In the evening of October 29, 1727 there occurred an earthquake which alarmed people greatly and the next day lengthy services of prayer and preaching were held in Old South and the other churches.<sup>92</sup>

THOMAS<sup>3</sup> DAWES "living in Sudbury Street" filed a petition on July 15, 1730, and a similar one again on July 20, 1731, that he might be granted a License "to Sell Strong Drink as a Retailer without Doors," which implied the privilege to sell to all comers and not merely to the residents of an inn or hotel, but in each case for some unstated reason, his petitions along with various other such requests were "disallowed."<sup>73</sup> On February 8, 1735, three children<sup>72</sup> in the family of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> DAWES, Rebecca<sup>4</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> and Abigail<sup>4</sup> became members<sup>92</sup> of Old South Church and on March 26, 1736, Story<sup>4</sup> took the baptismal covenant there, but became a member of the West Church<sup>87</sup> while Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> was admitted as a member<sup>87</sup> of Old South<sup>88</sup> on December 4, 1740. In 1733-4, as has been stated, THOMAS<sup>3</sup> acquired land in New Hampshire at Bedford and Merrimack as a result of his father's service in King Philip's War.<sup>18</sup>

THOMAS<sup>3</sup> DAWES, living throughout the period when colonial finances were in a deplorable state from the issuance in 1690 of the bills of credit (see Appendix "C" p. 702) succeeded nevertheless in piling up a very considerable estate of over £147 in personal possessions and £613 in real estate. His inventory suggests that he and his family lived simply and his own life was spent in the Sudbury Street property earlier owned in sequence by WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and by AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> but as time went on THOMAS<sup>3</sup> had acquired several other properties including three houses on

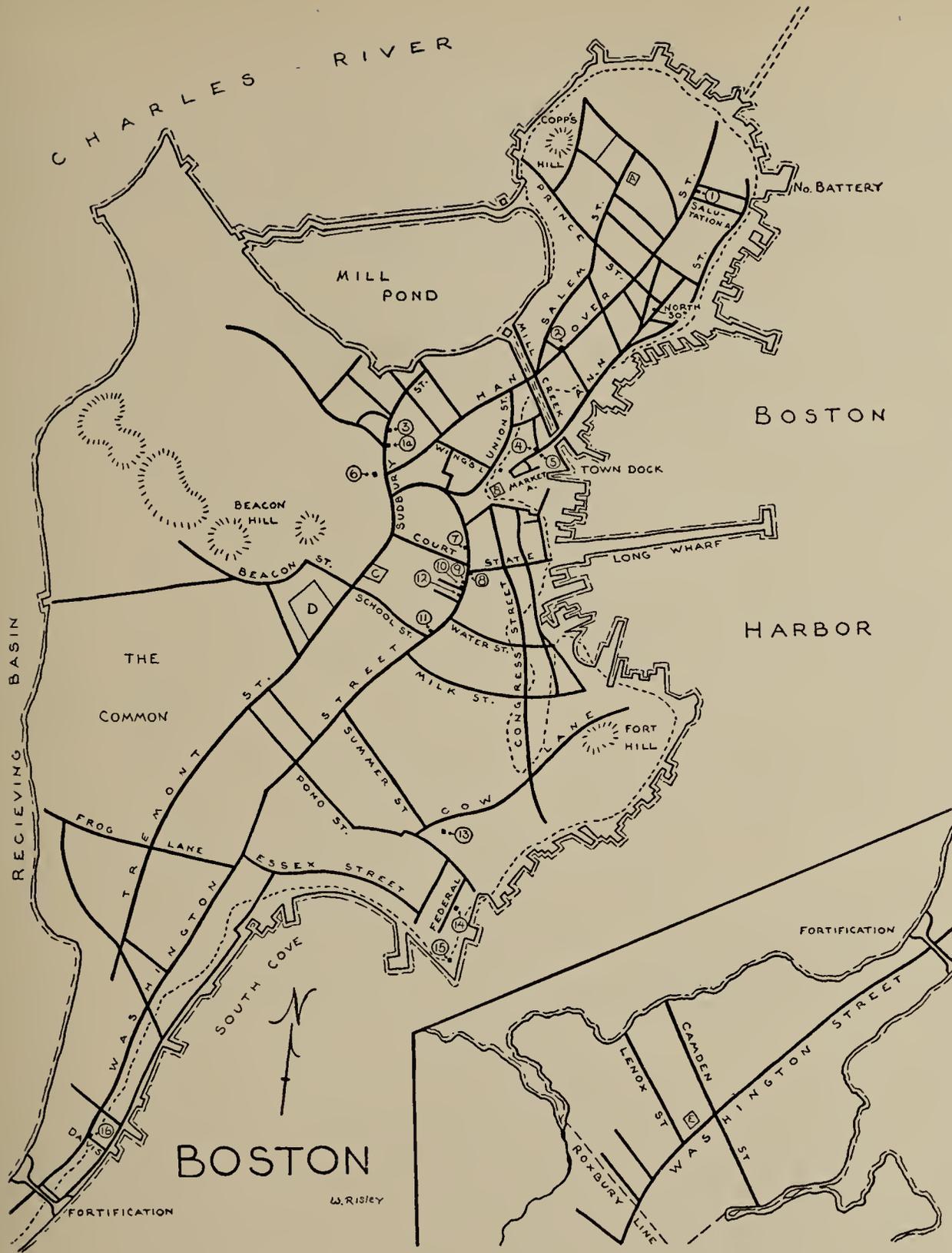
\*Our NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE lost his book shop and coffee house with their contents<sup>99</sup> in this conflagration. It was his daughter LYDIA<sup>3</sup> who later married our WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES.

\*\*This first Town House was the structure to which THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY had each subscribed £1 in 1657-8 and was replaced in 1712 by the building which came to be known<sup>92</sup> as the "Old State House."



MAP GIVING EARLY HISTORICAL PLACEMENTS

- |                              |                            |  |                          |
|------------------------------|----------------------------|--|--------------------------|
| 1. Copp's Hill Burial Ground | 13. Feather Store          | 25. Old Church (Old North Meeting House) | 35. Old South Church     |
| 2. Baptist Church            | 14. Conduit                | 26. Blue Anchor Tavern                   | 36. Masonic Temple       |
| 3. Salutation Inn            | 15. Castle Tavern          | 27. Court Avenue                         | 37. Gun House            |
| 4. North Church              | 16. Distillhouse Square    | 28. William's Court                      | 38. New South Church     |
| 5. King's Head Tavern        | 17. Brattle Street Church  | 29. King's Chapel                        | 39. Church Green         |
| 6. Revere's House            | 18. Faneuil Hall           | 30. King's Chapel Burial Ground          | 40. Liberty Tree         |
| 7. Red Lion Inn              | 19. Dock Square            | 31. Granary Burial Ground                | 41. Hollis Street Church |
| 8. Salt Lane                 | 20. Sun Tavern             | 32. The State House                      | 42. Brown's House        |
| 9. Scottow's Alley           | 21. Corn Court             | 33. Huguenot Church                      | 43. George Tavern        |
| 10. Oak Hall                 | 22. Royal Exchange Tavern  | 34. Liberty Square                       | 44. Washington Market    |
| 11. Old Drawbridge           | 23. Town House             |  |                          |
| 12. Swing Bridge Lane        | 24. Bunch of Grapes Tavern |  |                          |



MAP SHOWING LOCATIONS OF ANCESTRAL HOMES

- 1. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY
- 1a. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY  
(owned land)
- 2. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> LINSFORD
- 3. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES
- 4. WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES
- 5. WILLIAM<sup>6</sup> DAWES
- 6. ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MEARS

- 7. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD
- 8. NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE  
(1st location)
- 9. Susanna Campbell's shop  
(BOONE's in 1704-5)
- 10. Davis Apothecary
- 11. BOONE in 1706
- 12. BOONE in 1712

- 13. John Flood  
(approximately)
- 14. ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP
- 15. JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS  
(approximately)
- 16. SAMUEL<sup>6</sup> MAY
- A. Baptist Church
- B. Dock Square

- C. King's Chapel Burial Ground
- D. Granary Burial Ground
- E. George Tavern, run by  
SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> MEARS (inset)
- Boston's original shore  
line

nearby Hawkins Street. Of the fifteen children born to THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and SARAH it appears<sup>25</sup> that six died young, four who lived to marry predeceased their father, and though eight were living when he made his will, only five survived him, namely Story<sup>4</sup>, Rebecca<sup>4</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>4</sup>, Abigail<sup>4</sup>, and Elizabeth<sup>4</sup>. His will dated February 2, 1746, and probated March 23, 1750, mentioned two negro slaves,<sup>9</sup> one a man valued at £53 10s and the other a woman valued at £4. It gave a life estate in all his property, real and personal, to his wife while she remained his widow, or if she married again, it gave one-third outright and the rest to be divided among his children. It gave to sons Thomas<sup>4</sup>, Story<sup>4</sup> and WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> £40 each, old tenor, after the wife's death because daughters Mary<sup>4</sup> and Sarah<sup>4</sup> had each £40 at their marriage, but these two daughters received an added £20 each by the will because their dowry at marriage had not been as great as those received by daughters Rebecca<sup>4</sup>, Abigail<sup>4</sup> and Elizabeth<sup>4</sup>. The testator gave £5 to the yearly quarterly meeting for the poor, specified that rings should be given to his bearers, to the bearers of his wife and to the surviving ministers of Old South Church; that the Tomb in the Old Burial Place should be open equally to all his heirs; that after his wife's death and the payment of the above legacies, the whole estate should be appraised and divided equally among his eight children, save that the pew in Old South Church was to be only for those who attended constantly and "upheld the ministry."<sup>113</sup> Widow SARAH who was named executrix did not marry again but in her capacity as administratrix of the estate of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> DAWES brought in an odd petition to the General Court in 1757, seven years after his death, "shewing that on the 23d of this Instant, she found in a Closet of the Deceased, and in the Bottom of a Leather Chair there, two Pocket-Books belonging to the said Deceased, which had in them two Hundred and thirty-six Pounds old Tenor, in Bills of this Province: that the said THOMAS dyed the 18th of March 1749 [50], very suddenly; that the Petitioner apprehends he had laid by the said Bills in order to exchange the same, but was prevented by his sudden Death; she therefore prays the Province Treasurer may be directed to exchange the said Bills upon satisfactory Evidence of the Facts aforementioned." Three men offered similar requests and on April 22 an order was passed in accordance with these petitions but because of the inflation this only netted her about thirteen percent of the face value (see Appendix "C", p. 702).<sup>127</sup>

After the death of widow SARAH in 1759, the remaining estate of her deceased husband THOMAS<sup>3</sup> was, according to his will, divided among his eight children or their heirs and a document<sup>127</sup> filed in 1760 proves that Jacob Thayer had married into this family and his children received £12 each; the son Story<sup>4</sup> took the ancestral home on Sudbury Street,\* which was valued at £213, as his portion; daughter Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> by deed of January 1, 1760, from her brothers and sisters,<sup>88</sup> acquired one of the houses on Hawkins Street. The other two houses<sup>25</sup> on that street, as well as land<sup>18</sup> in Merrimack and Bedford, New Hampshire (which THOMAS<sup>3</sup> had gotten as a result of the service of AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> in King Philip's War) were acquired<sup>25</sup> by Rebecca<sup>4</sup> and her husband William Homes, partly by purchase from the other heirs, while Thomas<sup>2</sup> Moore, son of William and Mary (Dawes) Moore (see p. 33)

\*This "mansion house" on Sudbury Street built by WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES probably soon after his return to Boston in 1651-2 (or possibly a second structure which had been built for AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>) was occupied as the family home throughout the life of Story<sup>4</sup> and beyond, was burned by the British during the siege of Boston<sup>25</sup> and the property was sold by his heirs in 1780.

on December 31, 1759, "then being over fourteen years of age, appointed his father . . . his guardian, in the estate of his grandfather, THOMAS DAWES, late of Boston, gentleman."<sup>86</sup> Unquestionably THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and SARAH lie in the tomb with his parents and their own seven children.

The children of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and SARAH (STORY) DAWES, all born in Boston were<sup>25, 94</sup>

- I. William<sup>4</sup>, b. Dec. 4, bap. 5, 1703; d. yng.
- II. Thomas<sup>4</sup>, b. July 19, bap. 22, 1705; d. yng.
- III. Thomas<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 25, 1706; d. abt. 1747-50; m. at Boston<sup>25</sup> Jan. or <sup>89</sup> June 5, 1729, by Mr. Joshua Gee to Elizabeth Underwood [Anthony and Jane (Plaice)].<sup>25, 91</sup>
- IV. Ambrose<sup>4</sup>, b. Sept. 30, 1708; d. yng.
- V. Mary<sup>4</sup>, b. Dec. 10, 1709; d. before her father; m. at Boston<sup>89</sup> by Mr. Joseph Sewall on Mar. 28, 1728, to William<sup>1</sup> Moor (Moore) by whom she had at least three children.<sup>86</sup>
- VI. Sarah<sup>4</sup>, b. July 24, 1711; d. —; m. 1st at Boston<sup>89</sup> by Mr. Joseph Sewall, on Oct. 24, 1728, to Samuel Hasham; m. 2nd June 29, 1738, Andrew Brugher<sup>25</sup> (Burgar).<sup>89</sup>
- VII. †Story<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 9, 1712; d. 1769, after<sup>25</sup> Mar. 24; m. at Boston by the Rev. William Cooper, on July 31, 1735, to Sarah Paine.
- VIII. William<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 15, 1713; d. yng.
- IX. Susanna<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 14, 1715; d. yng.
- X. Hannah<sup>4</sup>, b. Dec. 19, 1716; d. yng.
- XI. Rebecca<sup>4</sup>, b. Mar. 9, bap. 23, 1717-8; d.<sup>85</sup> in Boston in July or Aug. 1788; m. there<sup>89</sup> by the Rev. Joseph Sewall on Apr. 24, 1740, to William<sup>3</sup> Homes (Capt. Robert<sup>2</sup>, Rev. William<sup>1</sup>) who was honored by the name of "the honest silversmith." His mother was Mary Franklin sister of Benjamin Franklin.<sup>85</sup>
- XII. WILLIAM<sup>4</sup>, see following.
- XIII. Abigail<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 14, bap. 15, 1720-1; d. at Boston<sup>92</sup> Nov. 22, 1816 in her 96th yr.; m. there Aug. 25, 1743, by the Rev. Joseph Sewall<sup>89</sup> to Josiah<sup>4</sup> Waters (Josiah<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Lawrence<sup>1</sup>),<sup>25</sup> artist, of Boston.
- XIV. Elizabeth<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 28, 1722-3; d. at Marlborough,<sup>93</sup> Jan. 18, 1776, in 53rd yr.; m. at Boston<sup>89</sup> by Rev. Thomas Prince on July 26, 1744, to Joshua<sup>5</sup> Loring, undoubtedly the son of Nehemiah<sup>4</sup>, (Joseph<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>88</sup>
- XV. Hannah<sup>4</sup>, b. July 7, bap. 12, 1724; d. before her father; m.<sup>25, 127</sup> Jacob Thayer, who in 1759-60, acted as guardian for his two children, Mary and Jacob Thayer, heirs of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> DAWES.<sup>127</sup>

WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES (*Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Ambrose<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*) was born in Boston<sup>94</sup> on October 2 and baptized<sup>25</sup> October 4, 1719, died there at the age of eighty-three on November 14, 1802, having been married first at that place<sup>89</sup> in 1742 (intention May 6) on July 1 in the New South Church\* to LYDIA<sup>3</sup> BOONE (see Boone, p. 102) who was mother of all but three of his twelve children.<sup>25</sup> He was married secondly by the Rev. Andrew Elliot<sup>89</sup> on August 27, 1764 to Hannah (Jackson)\*\* Gair who survived him. Soon after his marriage to LYDIA she and her husband joined the other heirs in the sale of her father's dwelling house<sup>25</sup> on Cornhill for £1,800. WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES was physically handicapped by a club foot which of course in-

†One of his name, who must have been he, was married at Boston<sup>90</sup> on March 2, 1733, to an Ann Keays.

\*The New South Church was organized and built 1715-7 on the Church Green near Summer Street. Although WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES had joined the Third Church with his sisters in 1735, the facts that no further evidence of his name is seen in their records and that he was married in 1742 at the New South Church of which NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE, his father-in-law, was a founding member argues that he probably associated himself with that church for his wife's sake. But that he was a sincerely religious man is evidenced by the facts that among Saturday's tasks in his home he required that shoes and clothing should be brushed carefully and food cooked for use on the Sabbath so that it might be a real day of rest for all members of the family. His extremity of strictness in requiring<sup>25</sup> that his children should neither laugh nor look out of the windows on Sunday seems severe indeed.

\*\*She was daughter of Samuel and Ruth (Chapin) Jackson, a very wealthy blacksmith, resident on Sudbury Street near the property descending from WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES. After Jackson's death John<sup>5</sup> Coolidge, son-in-law of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES, bought this home on Sudbury Street.<sup>25</sup>

interfered with many forms of activity both in military lines and in business and he adopted the trade of tailor, having his shop on\* Salt Lane,<sup>25</sup> "running down to Mill Creek by the Proprietor's Wharf, with some wharf privileges." Their home place was on Ann Street at the corner of Scottow's Alley (see map, p. 303).

In June, 1744, on the Sabbath Boston experienced an earthquake and in November, 1755, another "Remarkable great Earthquake" during which many buildings are said to have been "thrown down and 1500 chimneys shattered or overturned."<sup>101</sup>

In March of 1747 WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> petitioned the townsmen for the privilege of building a shop on town land at the head of the dock, but after consideration he was forbidden because some of the nearby residents objected.<sup>101,102</sup> The year of 1760 was a memorable one for WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> for in that year, following his mother's death, he joined in deeds dividing<sup>113</sup> his father's estate from which he received £40; then he acquired membership\*\* in the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company (see Gore, pp. 320-1) and that year lost his wife LYDIA soon after the birth of her ninth child.

In 1758-60 WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> sold a number of pieces of his property and after the death of wife LYDIA in 1760 he bought and moved onto a farm<sup>25</sup> near Marlboro and gave up his trade, at least temporarily, but did not remain there long. In 1764 his second marriage occurred in Boston and for a time he carried on a grocery business there but presently joined his nephew William Homes, Jr. in that man's business as goldsmith, having a shop on Ann Street "where Oak Hall now stands", with his family living temporarily above the shop. In 1764 there occurred a great depression<sup>102</sup> in Boston accompanied by the prevalence of smallpox which caused many merchants to move their goods and families into the country. This removal applied to fifteen hundred and thirty-seven individuals. The pox afflicted fourteen families on Fish (later called Ann) Street (see map, p. 30) including<sup>122</sup> those of Capt. Paul Revere and of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES but no record is seen as to which members of his family suffered.

In 1766 WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> was chosen† first sergeant of the Artillery Company and in September 1770 served as a jurymen of the Inferior Court.

A most interesting item relative to WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES (or possibly to his son WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>) in the year 1772 has come to light,<sup>108</sup> but in order to tell it we must

\*Salt Lane ran "from Bowes' corner in Union Street, east to Mill Creek."<sup>102</sup>

\*\*The list of relatives of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES who also became members of the Artillery Company is surprising for it included:

- (1) WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES (1768), his son.
- (2) William Homes (1747), his brother-in-law.
- (3) William Homes, Jr. (1766), a nephew.
- (4) Josiah Waters (1747), a brother-in-law.
- (5) Josiah Waters, Jr. (1769), a nephew.
- (6) William Moor (1749), a brother-in-law.
- (7) John Lucas (1786), a son-in-law.
- (8) Thomas Dawes (1754), a nephew.
- (9) Benjamin Goldthwait (1740) married a niece.
- (10) Benjamin Goldthwait, Jr. (1793) married a granddaughter.
- (11) James Lanman (1786) married a niece.
- (12) Capt. Joseph Pierce (1769) married a grand-niece.

This list in itself is an impersonal but notable commentary on the general character of the Dawes and allied families, for membership was not easily acquired. While WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES served the organization as clerk he was instructed to purchase black and white balls for use in voting on the admission of members.<sup>103</sup>

†He has been casually called a lieutenant but not officially so listed, as his sergeancy was, and his physical handicap causes one to question the accuracy of the higher rank.

first hark back to the early times in Chebacco (Ipswich) when \*Rev. John Wise (1652-1725) became pastor there in 1680 and served until his death. The man was an outstanding patriot and has been styled "The Founder of American Democracy;" "the most powerful and brilliant prose writer in this country during the Colonial time, and who in his day enjoyed a sovereign reputation in New England. . . ." <sup>180</sup> In 1705 certain new theories of church government were broached whereby self-rule for such bodies would be largely done away with in favor of a Council of ministers, something like the bureaucratic tendency in political and civil life of our present 1940. To combat that tendency the Rev. Mr. Wise published in 1710 the first edition of a pamphlet "The Churches Quarrel Espoused" which was a reply to the suggested plan, in satire and irony so keen that it "simply annihilated the scheme it assailed" while purporting by title to favor it. In 1715 a second edition of this pamphlet was published and sold by NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE (see Boone, p. 99). In 1717 Rev. Mr. Wise wrote another and milder pamphlet entitled "A Vindication of the Government of New England Churches" which has been most highly praised. In 1772 when our country was in such great turmoil "And when the Revolution was impending, and some simple, convincing statement of the rights and liberties of the colonists was needed, these two pamphlets were put to press again in Boston . . . being published by subscription."<sup>108</sup> Among the subscribers were the following names:

- 4 copies John Scollay of Boston, later a leader of the Boston Tea Party.
- 3 " Ebenezer Dorr who carried the Alarm to Cambridge April 18, 1775.
- 1 " Col. James Barret of Concord.
- 6 " Hon. Artemas Ward first Commander-in-chief of Massachusetts forces.
- 6 " Capt. Timothy Pickering of Salem.
- 24 " Rev. Edward Emerson of Concord.
- 100 " WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> Dawes (or his son WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>).
- 100 " Ephraim<sup>5</sup> Fairbanks of Bolton, a Minute Man.
- 100 " Peter Jayne, school teacher and patriot of Marblehead.<sup>108</sup>

1134250

These were, of course, for distribution for the furthering of the cause of the colonies toward the right to self-government as free British-born men. The possession or distribution of them would have boded ill for any one so caught, but if John Wise in his other world could have known the use to which his words and principles were being put, it must have pleased him greatly, and all honor is due the subscribers named above that they had the courage to use them.

WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> and his family,\*\* as vitally interested patriots and frequently as participants, lived through some of the most stirring and significant times America has ever experienced, including the Stamp Act of 1765-6, the Boston Massacre of 1770, the Boston Tea Party of 1773, the enactment of the Boston Port Bill in 1774 as well as the siege of 1775-6 and evacuation of Boston by the British on

\*Rev. John<sup>2</sup> Wise (Joseph<sup>1</sup>) was married in 1678 to Abigail<sup>3</sup> Gardner, granddaughter of our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER of Roxbury. Rev. Mr. Wise was a man of great muscular strength and in his early years had a high reputation as a wrestler, the claim being made that he had never been thrown. During his pastorate one Ens. John<sup>4</sup> Chandler (1680-1741) of Andover came to try conclusions with him, but the minister hesitated to accommodate, probably from a sense of the dignity due to his position. At insistence on Chandler's part, Rev. Wise acquiesced and Chandler "in a trice . . . found himself flat on his back" outside of the fence in the highway. He picked himself up and is *said* to have asked the minister "to kindly throw his horse over and he would ride his way forthwith."<sup>108</sup>

\*\*Such evidence as deeds may furnish assigns the places of residence of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES as of Boston in 1774, both in October and December, of Marlborough in October 1775 (as above) of Boston in 1779, of Marlborough in 1785 and in Boston again by 1788.

March 18, 1776. It is stated<sup>25,102</sup> that his apprentices were among the men who threw the tea overboard in Boston Harbor, that the daughters of the family sat up for them; and when they came in, the rims of their hats, which were turned up a little, were loaded with tea, which the young women vigorously shook into the fire while they listened to the tale of the escape.

During the Siege of Boston 1775-6 the various members of the family of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES, who had earlier been so active in proscribed activities, and continued so to be, found that safety demanded a removal to outlying towns, so WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> with his family and his sister Lydia<sup>5</sup> with her husband John<sup>5</sup> Coolidge settled in Worcester while Abigail<sup>5</sup> with her husband, William Cogswell\* as well as the second wife of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> and their two young children settled in Marlborough but we are told<sup>25</sup> that during the major part of the siege WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> himself remained in Boston with two unmarried sisters of his deceased first wife LYDIA, Betty<sup>3</sup> and Molly<sup>3</sup> Boone, to keep house for him; that his silver and valuables were buried in his cellar and remained there until after the evacuation,<sup>25</sup> and that a patrol of British soldiers went through the streets at nine o'clock at night requiring that householders' lights be put out;<sup>25</sup> but that the evening before the evacuation the soldiers caused no small concern by making their demand an hour earlier than usual. What relief the inhabitants surely felt when next morning they found the British gone!

During the life of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES, a conduit and reservoir were planned and built to bring and retain water from various springs and wells to serve household needs of subscribers and especially to aid in fighting fire in Boston. During the later life of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES, a more pretentious effort was undertaken by the Boston Aqueduct Corporation<sup>109</sup> organized in 1795 which piped water from Jamaica Pond in Roxbury (see map, p. 416) to Fort Hill using all told about forty-five miles of pipes made of white pine logs nearly one and one-half feet in diameter with a bore of five and three-quarters inches, laid three to three and a half feet deep. Jamaica Pond was of about seventy acres extent and sixty to seventy feet deep and the water flowed to Boston by gravity. Later, pipes were built of two-inch pine plank, bound with iron hoops. This system served the city until the Cochituate System<sup>109</sup> came into being about 1848. By his will WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> owned a half share in one of these conduit systems for service of his Ann Street home.<sup>113</sup>

\*An unnamed granddaughter of William and Abigail (Dawes) Cogswell is the authority<sup>25,98</sup> for the following description of the state of affairs in Boston and the hegira of this particular family from Boston to Marlborough in 1775 before the siege began: ". . . The crowds of people who were eager to leave the town made it extremely difficult to get a vehicle for their goods, or conveyance for themselves. After a good deal of trouble, however, they [the Cogswells] succeeded in getting a one-horse wagon, with a colored man, who was servant in the family of a relative, for a driver, and into this wagon they put all the goods they could take with them. Another vehicle on two wheels, a sort of chaise without a top, was to convey the women and children. The second wife of Grandfather [WILLIAM<sup>4</sup>] DAWES, Mrs. Hannah (Jackson) Dawes, had her two children, afterwards Mrs. Tidd and Mrs. Hammond, then nine and ten years of age. These children had shawls tied round their waists, attached to Grandmother Dawes arms, to hold them in. The good lady was also to hold Grandmother [Abigail (Dawes)] Cogswell's baby [born March 1774] while grandmother [Abigail] drove. This was very likely her first attempt at driving, and she was not very skillful, as subsequent events proved:

"Starting out in this queer fashion, they must have presented a spectacle both ludicrous and touching, for they carried heavy hearts with them, leaving dear ones behind of whose fate they were uncertain, and feeling anxious for their own. They were obliged to ask leave to pass the gates (on the Neck), grandfather, [Cogswell] with hat in hand, waiting while an official examined his goods to see that no arms or ammunition were concealed in them. After due search they were allowed to pass on. They proceeded very well for a time, but came to grief before night, for, going down a hill in Weston, the horse in the gig, or whatever it might be called, fell down, throwing out the entire load. The baby's face was badly cut upon the sharp stones and bled profusely, but a brook was near by (Stony Brook), at which they bathed the child's face and rested . . . In due time they reached Marlboro! They lived for a time in a few hired rooms, and afterwards rented a house . . ." <sup>25,99</sup>

Of the twelve children of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup>, three probably died in infancy, but he endured the sorrow of having one son who grew to manhood, embrace principles so remote from the convictions of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> himself, that the only record found of him is the one word "Tory" inscribed in the church books following his baptismal record.<sup>25</sup> The rending of family ties is one of the sad things in any war, and to have it occur in a family as outstandingly patriotic as this one must have been bitter indeed for all the other members. Of the children of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> by LYDIA his first wife the only other son, WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>, "the patriot", predeceased his father by three years. WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> the father was survived by six married daughters and for the last two years of life was totally blind.<sup>25</sup>

The will of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES dated December 1, 1800, and proved November 29, 1802, calling himself "trader" "of Boston" referred to an agreement entered into on August 25, 1764, being two days before his second marriage, whereby his wife Hannah was to have £100, the household furniture and plate which she brought with her as well as the Ann Street house "which I now occupy," during her life, which property was to be divided between her two daughters by WILLIAM<sup>4</sup>, after her death. These daughters, Ruth Tidd and Sarah Hammond, were to have one-half share in the conduit and two-sevenths of their father's tomb. He left £100 in the hands of son-in-law Asa Hammond for the use of daughter Rebecca Ring who also was provided with one-seventh of the tomb and her husband Moses Ring was discharged from all demands against him. It gave £10 to his sister Abigail (Dawes) Waters, the only surviving member of his father's family. He gave all his lands in the district of Maine to the four children which his late son WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> had by his first wife (MEHITABLE<sup>6</sup> MAY) namely, Hannah Newcomb, WILLIAM MEARS<sup>6</sup>, Charles<sup>6</sup> and Lucretia<sup>6</sup> "as tenants in common and not joint tenants." To his grandchildren Charles<sup>6</sup>, Lucretia<sup>6</sup> and their half-sister Mehitable May<sup>6</sup> Dawes he left £20 each, and like amounts to Hannah<sup>6</sup> and WILLIAM MEARS<sup>6</sup>, "they deducting what share be due on their note given to me May 25, 1799, said WILLIAM MEARS also deducting any other sums he may owe me." Of the residue, one-third each should go to daughters Hannah Lucas, Lydia Coolidge and Abigail Cogswell; with the statement that Hannah's share should go to her sisters if the testator outlived her, but in that case her husband John Lucas should have £100. He named the said Lucas and Jacob Tidd (both sons-in-law) as his executors.<sup>113</sup> Exclusive of the Ann Street home, valued at £6,000 and a house and land on Milk Street, his personal estate which was divided among his four surviving children by his first wife LYDIA, was estimated<sup>25</sup> at £5317.

The children of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> and LYDIA (BOONE) DAWES all born in Boston were<sup>25,96,106</sup>

- i. Hannah<sup>5</sup>, b. Sept. 18 or 19, 1743, bap. Jan. 25, 1744; d.s.p. Apr. 11, 1803; m. at Boston Nov. 3, 1765, John Lucas.
- ii. WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>, see following.
- iii. Lydia<sup>5</sup>, b. Feb. 7 or 10, bap. 15, 1746-7; d. July 22, 1815; m. at Boston May 20, 1772, Lt. John<sup>5</sup> Coolidge (Joseph<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Jonathan<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>97</sup> Lt. John<sup>5</sup> Coolidge, a tailor by trade, was associated with his father, brothers and the DAWES family in patriotic effort to such an extent that they were forced to leave Boston. Lt. John<sup>5</sup> joined his brother-in-law WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES in establishing a grocery business in Worcester for a time and at least one of his sisters and his mother removed to Lancaster.<sup>97</sup>
- iv. Mary<sup>5</sup>, b. Feb. 7, bap. 12, 1749; prob. d. yng.

- v. Elizabeth<sup>6</sup>, b. Nov. 17, bap. 18, 1750; prob. d. yng.  
 vi. Abigail<sup>6</sup>, b. Dec. 27, bap. 31, 1752, d. Nov. 19 or 20, 1833; m. at Boston, May 24, 1773, William<sup>6</sup> Cogswell (Francis<sup>4</sup>, Jonathan<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).<sup>98</sup> Their eldest child was born in Boston<sup>98</sup> in March 1774 where William<sup>6</sup> Cogswell had a store and had built a new home on Milk Street. Just before the siege in 1775 he felt compelled for the safety of himself and family to abandon both business and home and he chose Marlboro' as a place of residence. There he became established in business and the rest of their family were born.  
 vii. Elisha<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 15, bap. 17, 1755; "nothing is known of him, except<sup>25</sup> the word 'Tory' written against his name in the Old South Church\* reg. of bap."  
 viii. Rebecca<sup>6</sup>, b. & bap. Sept. 26, 1756; d. Oct. 24, 1836; m. Aug. 26, 1778, Moses Ring of Boston.  
 ix. Ruth<sup>6</sup>, b. Mar. 1, bap. 4, 1760; d. yng.

The children of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> by his second wife, Hannah, were

- x. A child who died at birth.  
 xi. Ruth<sup>6</sup>, b. July 10, bap. 13, 1766; m. July 18, 1786, Jacob Tidd.  
 xii. Sarah<sup>6</sup>, b. Apr. 23, 1768; d.<sup>107</sup> Apr. 2, 1859; m. at Boston June 9, 1794, Asa<sup>6</sup> Hammond (Samuel<sup>6</sup>, John<sup>4</sup>, Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>25,107</sup> This man was given the name Asa but after the death of his brother Samuel<sup>6</sup>, he was legally given that brother's name.<sup>107</sup>

WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES (*William<sup>4</sup>, Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Ambrose<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>96</sup> at Boston on April 6, 1745; died at Marlborough on February 25, 1799, but was buried at Boston in King's Chapel Burial Ground. He married<sup>106</sup> there on<sup>26</sup> May 3, 1768 (intention April 7) as his first wife MEHITABLE<sup>6</sup> MAY (see May, p. 423) when she was but seventeen. She died on October 28, 1793, and he was married there secondly<sup>117</sup> on November 18, 1795, by the Rev. Peter Thacher\*\* to Lydia Gendell who survived him, living until August 11, 1809. On February 5, 1769 WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> and his wife MEHITABLE became members of the Old South Church. His early business, that of tanner,<sup>97</sup> was located at the corner<sup>98</sup> of Sudbury and Friend Streets while their residence for at least seven or eight years was at 64 Ann Street almost across the street from the home of his father WILLIAM<sup>4</sup>.

To generalize, when Boston became unsafe because of the presence of the British he removed<sup>26</sup> his family to Worcester where he visited them weekly, retaining the Ann Street house where the family silver, etc. was hidden in an old cistern. Every Saturday his sister Hannah<sup>5</sup> would cover gold pieces with cloth and sew them onto his coats for buttons and at Worcester his wife would remove the gold and replace it with button molds. He disguised himself in various ways, sometimes as a farmer selling produce. Once he was "kept all day in surveillance trying to 'pass the lines'". He finally succeeded after feigning drunkenness and following the officers on guard wherever they went, even passing his father's house, from the windows of which a young sister recognized him and annoyed him by her loud cries of 'Brother BILLY'." Presently he took up his residence in Worcester and became associated with his brother-in-law John<sup>5</sup> Coolidge in groceries, which occupation he continued after his return to Boston at the end of the war. There his grocery business was located in Dock Square and his residence in Distillhouse Square. In his later life, as his health failed, he removed with his family, about 1796-7, to Marlborough where he died.<sup>26</sup>

\*Since no record is seen of the baptism of any of the children of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES in Old South Church and since he was married at the New South Church where his wife's family belonged, the above reproachful word will doubtless be found in their records.

\*\*This second marriage<sup>117</sup> was performed by the pastor of the Brattle Square Church where Lydia had held membership since 1785 and WILLIAM<sup>6</sup> is recorded as paying the Rev. Peter Thacher a fee of thirty shillings for performing the ceremony.<sup>117</sup>



WILLIAM<sup>d</sup> DAWES  
“who rode with Revere.”

MEHITABLE (MAY) DAWES  
his wife.





Before the DAWES family tomb, King's Chapel Burial Ground, April 19, 1925, 150th Anniversary of the Battle of Concord and Lexington.

Left to right: James H. Phelan, member of Patriots' Day Committee; William C. Hill, member of Patriots' Day Committee; Honorable Beman G. Dawes; Lieut. Valdequet; Genl. John J. Pershing; flag escort, from Ancient & Honorable Artillery Co.; Hon. James M. Curley, Mayor of Boston; Col. E. H. Cooper, U.S.A., Reserve (color bearer); Genl. Charles G. Dawes, Vice-President of the United States; flag escort, from Ancient & Honorable Artillery Co.; Brig. Genl. William E. Horton, aide to Genl. Dawes; Genl. Andre J. Brewster, U.S.A.

Those Worcester days must have been terribly hard for poor MEHITABLE, with the consciousness of constant danger to her husband as he traveled over the country to aid in organizing the scattered communities for revolt; to carry dispatches<sup>26</sup> and to bring money for his family's support and spend the week ends with them in Worcester, as he did for a while. Then the cold heartless dates show that her son Charles<sup>6</sup> was born in February 1776 in Worcester when she may have been alone and that two of her children aged about two and three died in April and May of 1776. An injury to his knee and a resulting permanent lameness of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> as well as the removal of active warfare from Boston vicinity justified him in remaining with his family in Worcester during the latter part of the war, which must have been gratifying indeed to MEHITABLE.

WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> joined the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company on April 8, 1768, less than a month before his marriage, became its second sergeant\* in 1770, and though what follows is ahead of our story, was made clerk of the organization at its revival in 1786 and as such he recorded on August 4, 1786 that the uniform to be worn by members was "a plain Hatt & Cockade\*\*, Blue Coat, white Waistcoat, & Breeches & White Stockings." On September 1, 1786 WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> was one of a committee to arrange for a "Band of Musick" to play at their military muster on the fourth of that month. On October 30, 1786 he was appointed Commissary of the company and as Clerk was directed to procure black and white balls for use in voting on the admission of members. In January 1787 the company adopted a new uniform, as follows.<sup>103</sup>

"1st. The Coats be made of deep blue cloth, & faced with buff, lappelled, & straps on the shoulders to secure the belts, with hooks & eyes at the skirts; the Buttons plain yellow, double-washed. 2d. Buff Vest & Breeches. buttons uniform with the Coats. 3d. A plain black hatt, with a black button loop & cockade, cocked soldier like & uniform as possible. 4th. White linen spatterdashes, to fasten under the foot & come part up the thigh, with black buttons & black Garters to buckle below the knee. 5th. White Stocks. 6th. Bayonett & Pouch Belts — white — two & half inches wide, to be worn over the Shoulders. 7th. The pouches to be uniform. 8th. The Hair to be Clubbed. 9th. The Guns to be as nigh uniform as possible. 10th. White Ruffled Shirts, at Wrist & Bosom. 11th. Your Committee recommend that our Standard have a device and motto, & that a Committee be appointed for that purpose. 12th. That the drums & fifes uniform be the same as the Company Coats reversed.

WILLIAM DAWES, Jun. Clerk".<sup>103</sup>

On Friday, May 11, 1787, as "Maj." WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES, he was one of a committee of five named to provide a dinner for the entire organization at Faneuil Hall on June 4 next, for which the company set aside £30 and those attending were to have the balance pro-rated among them. At the meeting on June 11, 1787, at the end of his term as clerk it was "Voted [that] The Thanks of the Company be given to Maj. WILLIAM DAWES Jun. (1768) for his faithful services as Clerk." See his portrait, plate IV, p. 38 painted by an unknown artist.

But outside of the Artillery Company membership<sup>103</sup> and duties WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> carried certain civic responsibilities being<sup>125</sup> an "informer about deer" in 1770-3

\*He has been said<sup>26</sup> to have become a major in the Artillery Company but his majority came to him by vote of the General Assembly in reference to Col. Bromfield's regiment of militia from which he resigned (see p.41) though the Artillery Company applied the courtesy title to him in 1786.

\*\*Marigolds were used as cockades.<sup>103</sup>

inclusive, a warden\* in 1774 and held other minor town offices prior to the Revolution.<sup>103</sup> In 1775 he was in correspondence with the Salem Committee of Safety in an effort to obtain powder for the Boston patriots. It has been said of him that "he was an ardent supporter of the colonial cause, was annoyed by the presence of the British soldiers in Boston with whom on sundry occasions he had collisions" and was often in great danger because of his patriotic activities. We are told<sup>26</sup> that WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> and his wife who was a very small woman were returning to their home through Cornhill about dusk one evening when WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> moved a few steps aside with an acquaintance; just then a British soldier caught MEHITABLE up in his arms to carry her off bodily, but WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> "turned upon him and gave him a beating as sound as it was well deserved."<sup>26</sup> In another instance MEHITABLE was roused from sleep by the opening of a window in their bedroom by a British soldier. She sat up in bed and said, "Take care! You'll wake my husband."<sup>26</sup>

It is said<sup>97</sup> that the British were seeking to capture both WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES and his brother-in-law John<sup>5</sup> Coolidge as the result of their dangerous activities and that on the head of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> "there was certainly a price, figuratively speaking," which caused him to remove his family, and presently himself, to Worcester. That reaction of the British is not surprising when one reads of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> scouring the country in the pre-revolutionary years to organize and aid the nascent Revolution, placing in many homes the (reprinted) pamphlets written sixty years earlier by Rev. John Wise of Ipswich, of which either WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> or his father subscribed for one hundred copies in 1772 (see page 35). During the trips<sup>26</sup> WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> made over the country he sometimes borrowed a friendly miller's hat and clothing or a farmer's outfit and carried a bag of meal behind him on the horse. At one such time a British soldier tried to take away the meal which was intended for his family, but WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> quickly presented arms and rushed on.

We are told<sup>103</sup> that WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES and Samuel<sup>5</sup> Gore\*\* were the leading spirits in the purloining of the two cannon owned by the colony, to keep them from being appropriated by the English in the fall of 1774. These guns, three-pounders, had earlier been sent to England by the colony for melting and recasting and after their return had been first used to celebrate the King's birthday on June 4, 1768. They were assigned to the use of the Artillery Company and were kept in the gun house<sup>26</sup> at the corner of West Street (see map, p. 30) which was separated from the free school house (on what is now Mason near West Street) only by an open yard. Maj. Paddock in charge of these guns had felt it his duty to turn them over to Gov. Gage, but some of the men under him, including WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> and young Gore had a different idea. So one day late in 1774 several of these men met in the school room and when the attention of the British sentinel stationed at the front door of the gun house was held by roll-call, they crossed the yard, entered the building by a back door and removing the guns from their carriages, carried them silently to the school room and quickly concealed them in the bottom of the wood box under the master's desk. Their absence was soon discovered and

\*Though he was appointed one of twelve wardens, he was excused from service and not required to pay the customary fine<sup>125</sup> for failure to serve.

\*\*This was<sup>114</sup> Samuel<sup>5</sup> Gore (John<sup>4</sup>, Obadiah<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) born 1751, a Son of Liberty, a member of the "Boston Tea-party" and a brother of Christopher Gore who became Governor of Massachusetts in 1809-10. Their father John<sup>4</sup> Gore was a Loyalist, was proscribed and banished in 1778 but was pardoned by the Legislature in 1787. His son Samuel<sup>5</sup> must have been trying to offset that record.

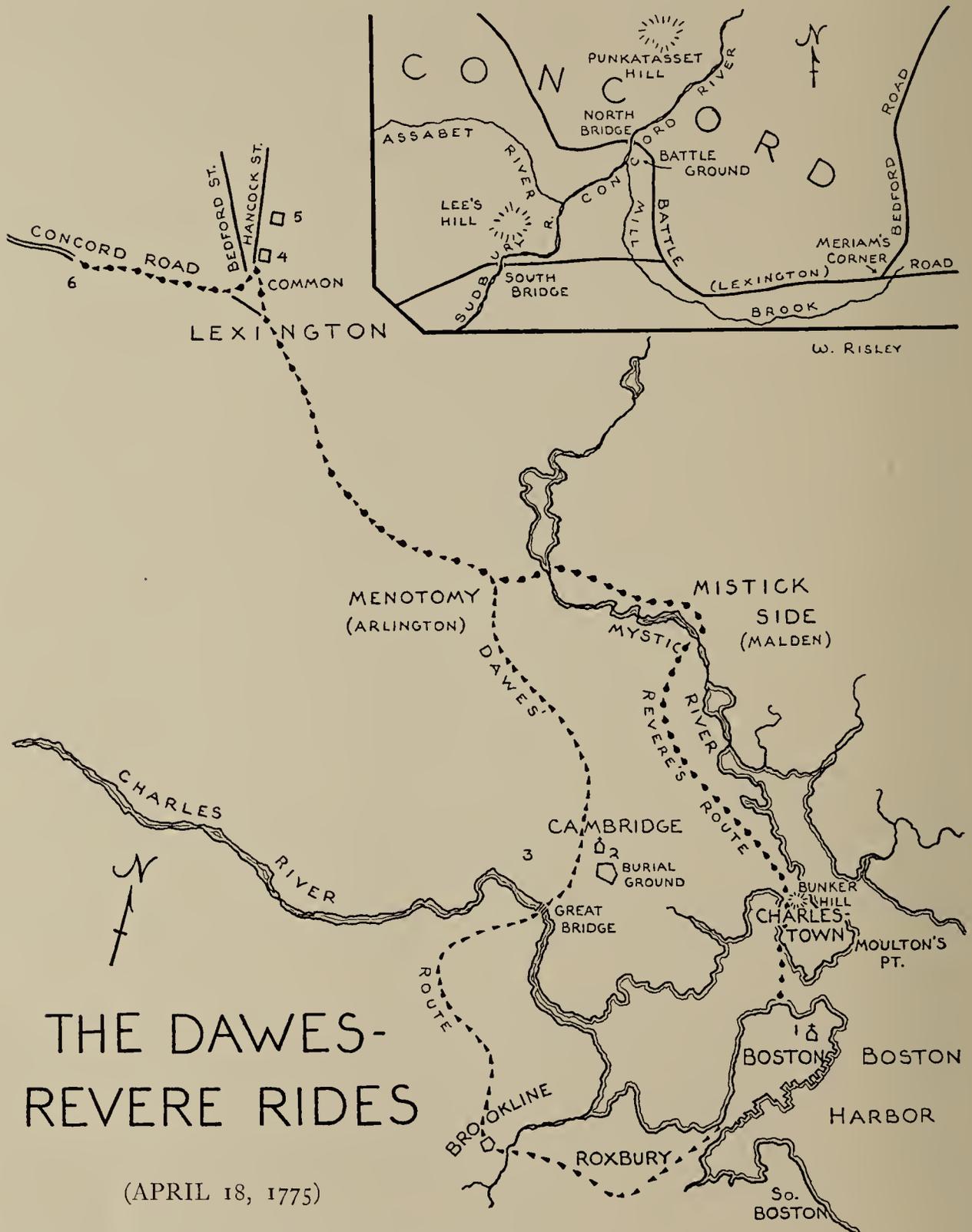
search was made in the school house as elsewhere, but the master rested his lame foot on the box and it was not disturbed. They remained there for a fortnight and then were removed at night, by wheelbarrow to Whiston's blacksmith shop at the south end of town and deposited under his coal pile, from whence, by order of the Committee of Safety issued to WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>, they were delivered to Deacon Cheever on January 5, 1775. They were taken to Waltham<sup>26</sup> by boat and were in actual service during the entire war, being used in seventeen engagements. One of them was taken by the enemy and retaken several times. They were called the "Hancock" and the "Adams" and after the war was over, Boston applied to Congress in 1788 for their restoration, which was granted and by order of Gen. Henry Knox\*, Secretary of War, an inscription was placed on each one commemorating their service. During their removal from the gun house WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> suffered an injury to his wrist whereby a sleeve button was forced into the flesh, necessitating the surgical attention of Dr. Warren.

As for membership, during the war itself, in organized units (other than the Artillery Company) WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> being called "junior," was acting as Adjutant<sup>118</sup> with Gen. Heath's regiment by a return dated May 20, 1775. In 1776 a number of the inhabitants of Boston made certain recommendations to the General Assembly which that body affirmed by vote on September 7, 1776, and the Council concurred in the vote on that same date, after which on September 9, the town clerk notified the said inhabitants of the appointment and commission<sup>118</sup> of Henry Bromfield as colonel, Thomas<sup>5</sup> Dawes (cousin of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>) as lieutenant colonel, Ephraim<sup>5</sup> May (EBENEZER<sup>4</sup>, JOHN<sup>3</sup>, JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) as major and WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES as second major of a regiment of militia in Boston. The odd thing about it is that in the cases of the three last named incumbents, each is "reported resigned," but without date, though WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>, himself, was henceforth frequently referred to, by courtesy, as "Major."

Late in 1776 the General Court ordered a draft as a reinforcement of the Continental Army at or near New York and on December 18 and 19, 1776, two hundred and sixty-nine persons were drafted for three months' service and the fine for non-service was placed at £10. Maj. WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES jr. and several of his relatives were in this draft and while three of these relatives are shown<sup>103</sup> to have paid the fine, he is not recorded as having paid, so presumably he served, though as a private, having been drafted.

After the removal of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> to Worcester, he received<sup>26,118</sup> an appointment from Congress as an Assistant Commissary of Issues at the Magazine there, serving probably from<sup>124</sup> 1777 at least through<sup>118</sup> 1779. It is told that after the surrender of Burgoyne at Saratoga in October, 1777 many colonists were incensed at the easy terms granted the British forces and deeply angered at the looting of private properties carried on by the soldiers,<sup>121</sup> especially the Hessians, as they made their way to the coast. Since they had supplied themselves so freely, and illegally, WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> conceived the idea of adjusting his scales so that when he weighed out their supplies to these offenders a partial adjustment of their excesses was automatically accomplished, and incidentally, supplies were conserved which would serve our own army most acceptably. He did not profit personally by this action.

\*After the Revolution, Gen. Knox became an honored fellow townsman of our WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> DAWES at Thomaston, Maine.



# THE DAWES-REVERE RIDES

(APRIL 18, 1775)

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1. Old North Church, Boston                                     | 5. Fisk house (approximately)  |
| 2. Christ Church, Cambridge<br>built by SAMUEL <sup>s</sup> MAY | 6. Point where WILLIAM <sup>s</sup><br>Dawes and Revere were<br>stopped by British |
| 3. Washington's headquarters                                    |  |
| 4. Hancock-Clark House  |  |

To revert to the messenger services (see map, p. 42) performed by DAWES and Revere in the night of April 18, 1775 of which so much has been written, there is surely nothing new to be told, but a brief recapitulation may be tolerated.

WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> was started by Dr. Warren on the longer land trip<sup>120</sup> (see map, p. 42) during the early evening<sup>26</sup> without even going home to tell his wife of the errand and Revere was called to Dr. Warren directly after, "about ten o'clock." WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> on his "slow-jogging horse, with saddle-bags behind him, and a large flapped hat on his head to resemble a countryman on a journey" "was followed on foot on the sidewalk at a short distance<sup>133</sup> by his uncle Capt. Josiah Waters, until he saw DAWES safely past all the sentinels.<sup>103,115</sup> It has been stated<sup>120</sup> that WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> passed the guard on the Neck with a group of soldiers and so avoided especial notice, while others believe that he had made friends with some of the guards who permitted his easy passage over the Neck. WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> rode deliberately southward, over Boston Neck past the location of the George Tavern which had for eighteen early years been the home of SAMUEL<sup>9</sup> MEARS and his family, on over what is now Washington Street in Roxbury, passing on the east of what was once the home of EDWARD<sup>8</sup> SUMNER. He rode up the hill to the meeting house and when he reached the old "Parting Stone"\* he turned to the right, or northward, passing through Brookline, past the "Punch-bowl", across the Charles River by use<sup>123</sup> of the "Great Bridge", into Cambridge and past Harvard Square. After leaving behind the British sentries on "the Neck" WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> would have hastened his pace and would have called out warnings of the movement of the enemy at every village or farm home which he passed. After being warned by WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES, the inhabitants of Cambridge decided to be prepared for eventualities and removed the planks from the "Great Bridge" but left them piled at the Cambridge end. When Lord Percy with reinforcements started out about nine o'clock on the morning of April 19, following exactly the route used by WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> the night before, his troops were delayed while his engineers crossed on the stringers and replaced enough plank to let the body of men pass over, but the baggage train was delayed so long as to be quite separated<sup>120</sup> from Percy's men and was captured by some elderly colonists at Menotomy (Arlington).

WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> met Revere on Lexington Common about midnight and approximately a half hour after Revere had warned Hancock and Adams. DAWES and Revere, after taking light refreshment started for Concord, being joined by Dr. Samuel Prescott who was returning to his home at Concord after a call on his lady love. A little more than two and a half miles from Lexington Green<sup>120</sup> with Revere somewhat ahead and Prescott and DAWES arousing a household, Revere encountered a group of British officers and was captured; DAWES wheeled his horse back toward Lexington, was followed by several British but turned into a farm yard and cried out loudly for help, saying "I have two of them" and though it developed that the house was empty, his pursuers feared a trap and rode away. Dr. Prescott who knew the locality well, succeeded in jumping his horse over a stone wall into a field and he alone carried the warning to Concord. DAWES was thrown by the sudden stopping of his horse in the farm yard and lost his watch

\*The "Parting Stone" as one of many milestones which were set up<sup>122</sup> in Roxbury by Chief Justice Paul<sup>8</sup> Dudley, bore his name and the date 1744 and by an inscription on its northerly side, it directed travelers to Cambridge and Watertown while another on its southerly side directed to Dedham and Rhode Island. It was still standing<sup>120</sup> in 1912.

from his pocket but returned some days later and recovered it. It has been stated,<sup>103</sup> and seems highly probable, that at once after his escape from the British soldiers in the unoccupied farm yard WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> joined the Continental troops in Cambridge to help establish the siege of Boston; and though no record proves it, he is said<sup>103</sup> to have fought at Bunker Hill on June 17, 1775.

The final advanced line<sup>115</sup> of the American works in Roxbury, which were erected immediately after the Bunker Hill battle, crossed the highway (now Washington Street, which WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> traveled on his famous ride) a little south of Northampton Street (see map, p. 416) and not far from George Tavern. A part of the defensive works of Roxbury, at the west side of the highway and at the corner of Sumner Place and Cabot Streets incorporated the placement of trees cut from the orchard once owned by EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER (and during the Revolution by his grandson of the same name) sharpened to points and so placed, points outward, as to protect exposed locations. The defensive works from Dorchester, through Roxbury to Brookline were planned and built<sup>115</sup> under the direction of Col. Josiah Waters, cousin of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>, Henry Knox and Col. Rufus<sup>5</sup> Putnam, who after the Revolution led the party that founded Marietta, Ohio.

The will<sup>113</sup> of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> DAWES dated in February 1746 had stated that his pew in the Old South Church was to be "only for those who attended constantly and upheld the ministry." Though it appears that his son WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> had attended at the New South where his wife belonged, the grandson WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> with his wife joined Old South in 1769 and in 1786 after his return to Boston he, with his sister Lydia (Dawes) Coolidge, held pew number sixty-four which may have been an inheritance from their grandfather.

WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> had returned to Boston by (probably much before) 1788 when his daughter Lucretia<sup>6</sup> was born there; in August, 1790, he sold a property at the northeast corner of Hanover and Cross Streets for £175; on October 28, 1793, his wife MEHITABLE died at the age of forty-two years, two months and twenty-two days, and in March, 1794, he sold to his brother-in-law Jacob Tidd, his land and wharf on Distillhouse Square for £550. At the age of fifty, in 1795, he married his second wife and shortly after the birth<sup>26</sup> of their only child in September, 1796, his health having failed, he bought property in Marlborough and removed there with wife Lydia and his two younger children. In June, 1798, he sold his Boston "mansion", which was contiguous to Mill Creek, to his first wife's brother, Joseph<sup>6</sup> May for \$2000. Stories of his life, incorporated herein, were told in 1875 by his youngest daughter and by one of his older granddaughters. Though he had been raised in such an austere, super-religious atmosphere, his more modern mind evidently modified such views comfortably and he is shown to have been a home-loving, gracious person. He had an artist\* paint a portrait of wife MEHITABLE (see plate IV, p. 38) and two letters of his are extant. They were both written<sup>26</sup> to his eldest daughter Hannah<sup>6</sup> — the first one in July, 1785, when she would have been but sixteen and was visiting her father's sister, Abigail (Dawes) Cogswell in Marlborough. It read in part:

"My dear Girl, —

Ever am I happy to hear of the welfare of part of my self. I thank you for your duty

\*This portrait was for long believed<sup>26</sup> to have been by Copley but is now<sup>126</sup> accredited to John Johnston.

and your love, as mentioned in your letter to your honor'd mother. May this find you in health & pleasure. A generall account of our welfare I trust you have in a more particular manner than time will allow me to write in the enclosed. I hope you b'have as becometh. You will present my kind love to brother ' sister Cogswell, as also their children.

From your affectionate father,  
WM. DAWES, Jun'r."

and this was endorsed in her childish hand "My Par." The second letter was written several years later while she was visiting her maternal aunt Martha (May) Frothingham at Portland, Maine. It bears no date but was endorsed "My honor'd papa" and read:

"My dear Child, —

A favorable opportunity presenting itself, I cannot lett slip of writeing to my daughter Hannah. Your favor by Capt. Jones came safe to hand. Note every particular . . . It's realy comforting to your father to have a line from his Hannah. I read it & read; put it away, hunt it up again & again, & always find new pleasure. Please write me anew, for the last is almost wore out by handling. Nothing very particular to acquaint . . . Adieu. Your loving father,

WM. DAWES."

After his death in Marlborough on February 25, 1799 WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES was carried on men's shoulders a distance of a quarter of a mile to the old meeting-house, where there were services, previous to his being taken to Boston for interment in the King's Chapel Burial Ground. On the right gate to King's Chapel Burial Ground (see plate XII, p. 156) the tablet names, in sequence, four Governors and two Lieut. Governors of Massachusetts, two Governors of Connecticut, four Judges of Massachusetts and four ministers of Boston. Below these names one may read the tribute

"WILLIAM DAWES JR.  
Patriot and Son of Liberty  
April 6, 1745—February 25, 1799.  
This Tablet Placed by the City, 1901"

On the left gate of this Burial Ground are inscribed ten names prominent in Boston including that of

"Captain ROGER CLAPP, 1690."

WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> left no will but a considerable property which, since he pre-deceased his father, he must have mainly earned, himself<sup>26</sup> and on April 3, 1799, his widow Lydia was appointed the administratrix<sup>113</sup> of his estate with Ephraim Prescott\* and Jacob Tidd,\*\* both merchants of Boston, as sureties. A general inventory of the estate showing a total of over \$12,900 was taken by Edward Barns, Moses Wood and Dr. Nathaniel Shepard Prentiss who were sworn on April 16, 1799, and it included real estate as follows:

One parcel of land on Ann Street Boston with three tenements and the other buildings thereon . . . . .	\$10,000
Homestead in Marlboro' consisting of a house, barn and about one acre of land; a five acre orchard; a twelve acre wood lot and ten acres of pasture . . . . .	\$ 1,690

\*An Ephraim Prescott had married<sup>117</sup> a sister of widow Lydia in 1796.

\*\*Jacob Tidd had married Ruth<sup>6</sup> Dawes, sister of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>.

Widow Lydia exhibited four different accounts<sup>113</sup> or reports and the total personal estate was \$2624.66 from which debts of about \$1028 were to be paid while other debts of \$1400 were to be paid from the real estate. A citation to the heirs shows that on November 9, 1799, she notified<sup>113</sup> Mrs. Hannah (Dawes) Goldthwait "visiting in Keene, N. H. at the home of Dr. Daniel Adams\*, Mr. WILLIAM M. DAWES, [at] Fitzwilliam, Mr. Charles Dawes at or near Bristol, County of Lincoln" Maine. It develops<sup>26</sup> that in May 1800 widow Lydia sold for over \$8000 an Ann Street "mansion" (probably 64 Ann Street where the family had lived before the war, being one of the three houses inventoried). On October 8, 1800, advances of money<sup>113</sup> were made to WILLIAM MEARS<sup>6</sup> DAWES and to his brother Charles<sup>6</sup> of \$333.33 each while their sister Hannah<sup>6</sup> received about \$419 and on October 14, 1800, WILLIAM MEARS<sup>6</sup> receipted for \$1342.77, "being in full of his share of his father's real estate."<sup>113</sup>

On April 16, 1805, widow Lydia, then of Woburn, having submitted her fourth account as administratrix, was cited to appear at Probate Court at Cambridge on May 14 and to notify the other heirs living within one hundred and twenty miles of said court, and a distribution of the personal estate was ordered. It was shown on May 16, 1805, that the debts owed by the estate of "WILLIAM DAWES Jr. Esq. of Marlborough" were all paid and that the residue of the personal estate should be distributed,<sup>113</sup> the widow Lydia receiving \$286.06, while Hannah<sup>6</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>6</sup>, Charles<sup>6</sup>, Mehitable<sup>6</sup> and Lucretia<sup>6</sup> should each receive \$114.42.

The known children\*\* of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> and MEHITABLE (MAY) DAWES were<sup>26,106,110</sup>

- I. Hannah<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 12, bap. 17, 1769, at Boston;<sup>110</sup> d. at Keene, N. H. Sept. 2, 1851; m. 1st at Boston Oct. 8, 1793, her second cousin Benjamin<sup>6</sup> Goldthwait (Benjamin<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>)<sup>111</sup> and grandson of Story<sup>4</sup> Dawes (THOMAS<sup>3</sup>, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>). She m. 2nd at Boston on Feb. 2, or 27, 1800, as his second wife, Judge Daniel<sup>5</sup> Newcomb (Jonathan<sup>4</sup>, Jonathan<sup>3</sup>, Peter<sup>2</sup>, FRANCIS<sup>1</sup>), of Keene, N. H.<sup>111</sup> This, her second husband died at Keene on July 14, 1818.
- II. WILLIAM MEARS<sup>6</sup>, see following.
- III. Samuel May<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 26, bap. 28, 1773; d. May 12, 1776.
- IV. Mehitable<sup>6</sup>, b. Nov. 4, bap. 6, 1774; d. Apr. 20, 1776.
- V. Charles May<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 22 or 23, 1776, recorded at Worcester and bap. at Worcester 1st Church;<sup>112</sup> d. prob. in New Brunswick June 18, 1853; m. Nov. 13, 1796, Sarah McFarland. They went to Maine about the end of the century and afterward to New Brunswick.
- VI. Lucretia<sup>6</sup>, b. May 23, 1788 at Boston; d. unm. prob. at Keene, N. H.<sup>111</sup> Oct. 20, 1855.

The child of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> by his second wife, Lydia, was

- VII. †Mehitable May<sup>6</sup>, b. Sept. 1, 1796, at Boston; d. Sept. 27, 1882; m. Sept. 30 1818, Samuel<sup>6</sup> Goddard (John<sup>5</sup>, John<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>26,119</sup>

\*Dr. Daniel Adams had married Sarah<sup>6</sup> Goldthwaite, a sister of Benjamin<sup>6</sup> Goldthwaite, Jr., Hannah's deceased husband. The parents of these two were: Benjamin<sup>6</sup> Goldthwaite (Joseph<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>) and Sarah<sup>6</sup> Dawes (Story<sup>4</sup>, THOMAS<sup>3</sup>, etc.)<sup>111</sup>

\*\*The sketch<sup>116</sup> of WILLIAM<sup>6</sup> DAWES, JR., in Old South Church History erroneously incorporates the item that "during the dispersion of the congregation" he had an infant son baptized as "Israel Putnam" Dawes on May 18, 1777, "at Dr. Cooper's Meeting-House by the Rev. William Gordon." The official birth records, however, assign that son to a William and Mary Dawes and it was probably, that Israel P. who was married on May 5, 1805, to a Miss Mary Green.<sup>116</sup> The will of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES (see p. 37) precludes the inclusion of an Israel P. in the family of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>.

†The second wife of WILLIAM<sup>6</sup> was a gracious lady to name her only child for the deceased first wife.

WILLIAM MEARS<sup>6</sup> DAWES (*William<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Ambrose<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*) was born at 64 Ann Street, Boston on December 26, 1771 — almost a Christmas gift! He died in Wisconsin undoubtedly at the Ripon home of his son George<sup>7</sup>, on September 21, 1855, having married at Sudbury on September 26, 1796, ABIGAIL (“NABBY”) KENDALL<sup>4</sup> HOLDEN (see Holden, p. 366). A number of occurrences operated to break up the settled locations and habits of all New England families during and subsequent to the Revolution and this family was no exception to that rule, but doubtless had a few extra reasons for disintegration, such as the removal in 1796–7 of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> with at least the younger part of his family from the long-time Boston home to Marlborough, followed by his intestate death there in 1799 and with a division of his estate running from 1799 to 1805. Then the death of WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES, grandfather of our subject, occurred in 1802 and thereby our ancestral placing in Boston was completely ended and the will of said WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> which gave “all my lands in the District of Maine to the four children which my son WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES had by his first wife . . . as tenants in common and not joint tenants” automatically furnished a new placing to which at least WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> and his brother removed. Moreover, land to the northward, in the vicinity of Manchester, Merrimack and Bedford, New Hampshire, had come into the hands of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> DAWES because of the 1676 service of AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> in King Philip’s War and the rights to some of this land were being sold by WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> and other heirs as late as 1760 when Rebecca<sup>4</sup> and her husband William Homes paid £48 for the shares of certain heirs. Some of this may have been incorporated in the holdings of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> and have been included in the division of his estate. All of these facts had a profound influence on the lives of the latter man’s children for Hannah<sup>6</sup> settled in Keene, New Hampshire as did also her younger sister Lucretia<sup>6</sup> while WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> was found briefly at Sudbury where he married, at Marlborough where his father died, at Fitzwilliam, New Hampshire in 1799 and at Thomaston, then Massachusetts but now Maine, from about 1800 until 1817 when he removed to Ohio with his wife, seven sons and two daughters. His brother Charles<sup>6</sup> also went to Maine and later to New Brunswick.

WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> was married at Sudbury on September 26, 1796, their first child was born there on August 15, 1797. On December 22, 1797, still called “of Sudbury” WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> gave a mortgage deed to Cyprian How on two tracts of land in Marlborough, one of forty acres and the other of five acres with the condition that the transfer should be null and void if WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> repaid the \$1,000 involved on or before May 1, 1798. He did not entirely live up to that, but by May 29, 1799, he had paid both principal and interest and acquired a release. By November 1, 1798, WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> had removed to Marlborough (perhaps to help care for his father, long ill, who died in February, 1799) and on the former date, calling himself “yeoman” “of Marlborough” he accepted \$500 from John Shirley of Sudbury for two tracts of land lying in Fitzwilliam, being Lot 12 in Range 11 and one-half of Lot 19 in Range 4. On that same day, November 1, 1798, WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> as of Marlborough, purchased from Benoni Shurtleff, Innholder of Fitzwilliam, and Nancy his wife, their farm, buildings etc. at that town. WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> evidently soon removed to his new property for being called “of Fitzwilliam” two months after his father’s death, he purchased from his brother Charles<sup>6</sup> on April 6, 1799, that man’s share of the real estate (one-fifth) which was “descended to

him by his father Maj<sup>r</sup> WILLIAM DAWES Jun<sup>r</sup>. Deceas'd Intestate & all Right title and Intrest he held in & to the Same — undivided and in Common." Another record bearing probably on the same transfer says that WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> paid to Charles<sup>6</sup> \$1342.77 for parental property which passed between them. On March 20, 1800, WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> paid \$50 to Sally Dawes of Bristol, Maine, wife of the said Charles<sup>6</sup> for a release of her dower right in the above.

In the meantime Lydia (Gendall) Dawes, widow of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>, who had been appointed administratrix of his estate, had reported to the Suffolk court on November 9, 1799, showing that she had notified her stepchildren Hannah<sup>6</sup> (Dawes) Goldthwaite then visiting (but afterward resident) at Keene, New Hampshire, WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> DAWES at Fitzwilliam and Charles<sup>6</sup> Dawes at or near Bristol, Lincoln County, Maine (probably Lucretia<sup>6</sup> was still in Boston). On October 8, 1800, WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> and Charles<sup>6</sup> received monetary advances of \$333.33 each from their father's estate while Hannah<sup>6</sup> drew \$419.38. Presumably the individual shares of the sons, at least, totaled \$1342.77 since Charles<sup>6</sup> had made over just that amount to WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> (as above) who, himself, on October 14, 1800 receipted to Lemuel Cravath\* for that identical amount "it being in full of his share of his father's real estate received at sundry times" from said Cravath. In the final distribution of the personal estate of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> his son WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> received over \$114. At an unknown date WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> recorded by his own hand in his family Bible the records of his parents and their family as well as his own family (plate VII, p. 49) and dutifully noted after his mother's name the words "whose children arise up and call her blessed, her Husband also and he praises her."

We are assured that in<sup>25</sup> 1800, WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> removed his wife and two older sons to Thomaston, Maine and there their other children were born. He was appointed<sup>25</sup> by President Jefferson on February 8, 1809, to be a surveyor and inspector of the port at Thomaston\*\* though one document dated March 11, 1809 appointed him as of Thomaston to "Receive the Entries of Coasting Vessels, Grant Clearances, Grant Permits to lade, take bonds as required by the Embargo laws and give Certificates to cancel such bonds given in other districts." This may have been an additional service. On July 6, 1811, WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> was commissioned deputy inspector of Stone Lime\*\*\* in Thomaston. On April 4, 1812, Congress laid a general embargo for ninety days on all vessels within the harbors of the United States and on June 18 "declared war to exist between Great Britain and the United States." On June 21, 1812, a Committee of Safety consisting of fourteen members was chosen in Thomaston of which WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> was one. A town meeting was called for September 22, 1812, to formulate a plan for a general meeting of Republican delegates from the several towns in the Fourth Congressional District to unite on a candidate to represent the District in Congress. WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> was one of three Republican delegates from Thomaston on this occasion, during a period of "unusual intensity and bitterness of party spirit."

\*Lemuel Cravath had married a half sister of MEHITABLE (MAY) DAWES, mother of WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> (see p. 423).

\*\*His son HENRY<sup>7</sup> in 1858 repeatedly referred to his father's service as "Surveyor of the Port of Kennebeck" in "1812" and to his duties in that position as having included the sale of vessels seized as prizes after the Declaration of war with England in 1812.

\*\*\*Underlying Thomaston there is "an inexhaustible bed of Lime-rock, which has been burnt into the best of lime from year to year since 1734; perhaps annually for the last 10 years [1822-32] 50,000 Casks." Marble also abounds and in 1809 the industry was begun of sawing it into slabs and polishing it for mantles, chimney pieces, gravestones, etc.

THE NEW  
**TESTAMENT**

OF OUR  
LORD and SAVIOUR  
**JESUS CHRIST,**

TRANSLATED OUT OF THE  
*ORIGINAL GREEK;*  
AND WITH THE  
FORMER TRANSLATIONS

DILIGENTLY COMPARED AND REVISED,  
*By His MAJESTY'S Special Comtand.*

---

Appointed to be Read in CHURCHES.

---



---

EDINBURGH:

PRINTED by MARK and CHARLES KERR, His MAJESTY'S Printers,  
MDCCLXXXIX.

Title page of the Bible of  
WILLIAM MEARS<sup>6</sup> DAWES

My Father W<sup>m</sup> Dawes just born April 6. 1745 Died Feb. 25. 1814  
 My Mother Mabel Dawes born Aug. 6. 1751 Married May 1764  
 Sister Hannah Dawes born at Boston 12 Feb. 1767 Died Sept. 20. 1851. Keene N. H.  
 W<sup>m</sup> Mead Dawes born - d. - 28 Dec. 1770 Died Sept. 21. 1851  
 Mrs May Dawes born - d. - 26 Feb. 1773 } died 12 May 1776  
 Sister Mabel born - d. - 4 Nov. 1774 } died April 30. 1776  
 Charles Dawes born at Worcester 23 July 1776  
 Sister Lucelia Dawes born Boston 23 May 1780  
 Sister Hannah Dawes married to David Goldthwait Oct. 8. 1793  
 My Mother Mabel Dawes died at Boston Oct. 22. 1793 } when children were  
 my sister again married to Lydia Gondall Nov. 18. 1795 } and her blessed her Husband  
 my sister Mabel May Dawes born Sept. 1. 1796 } also and he praised her  
 my self William M Dawes married toabby Kendal Boston Sept. 26. 1796  
 abby my wife born March 1. 1780  
 son Charles May born Aug. 15. 1797  
 William born Aug. 2. 1799  
 Hannah Goldthwait married with Dan Newcomb Feb. 27. 1800  
 George born Oct. 25. 1801  
 Mary born Nov. 7. 1804  
 Edward born June 16. 1807  
 John born June 18. 1810  
 Maria born Oct. 16. 1811

James T. Dawes married to Ann Fitch  
 Apr. 22. 1808 - died Apr. 21. 1880  
 John Dawes born Dec. 7. 1815  
 Jane Dawes born Nov. 28. 1816  
 John Dawes born Aug. 15. 1832  
 B. Ellsworth - Hazen - 69 years  
 951830

His family record in his own hand.

To his Excellency, James Monroe Esq,<sup>99</sup>  
 President of the United States

Sir,

As I contemplate a speedy removal from the District of Maine, it will be incompatible with my views & arrangements to hold the Office of Attorney of the port of Thomaston longer than to the close of the present month - you will therefore please to accept of my resignation of said Office -

with sentiments of high  
 regard & esteem, I am at Excellency  
 most obedient' Servant

William M Dawes

FACSIMILE OF LETTER BY WILLIAM MEARS<sup>6</sup> DAWES IN 1817

The year 1816 is said to have furnished the coldest summer season ever experienced in New England. Raindrops froze on apple blossoms as late as May 24 and frozen ground with squalls of wind, snow and hail were experienced through the early part of June; "not a month without a frost" in the summer of 1816 and the following winter was the severest for many years. Unquestionably this extremity of unseasonable temperatures helped WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> as well as ten or fifteen thousand others to decide to emigrate with his family to the Ohio country for the

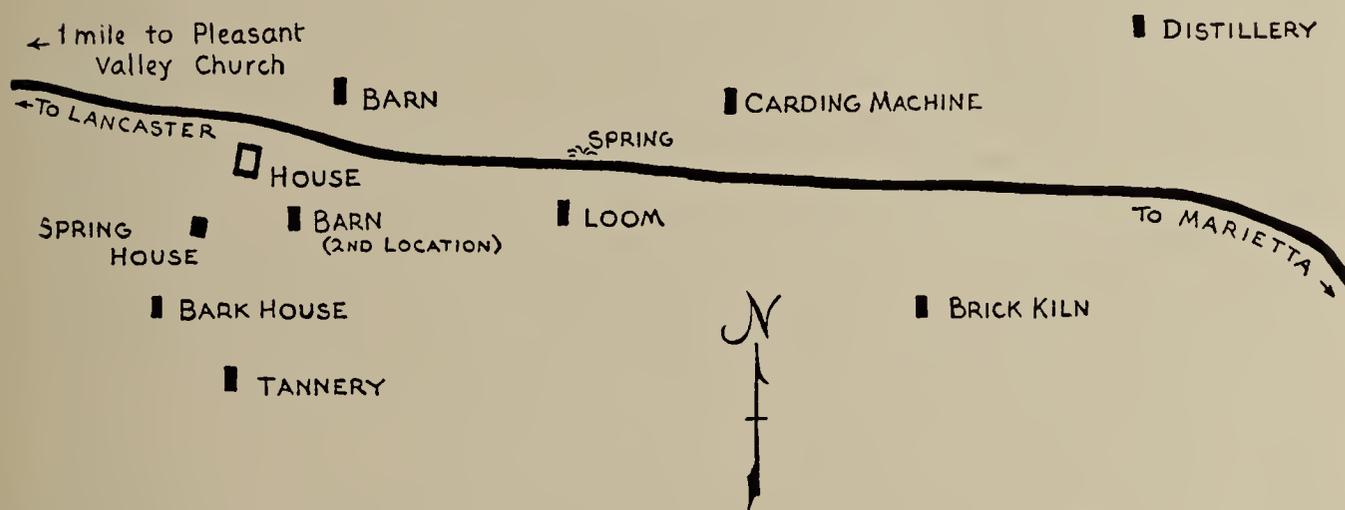
"Ohio-fever" became almost epidemic. On May 1, 1817, he loaned \$600 to James Morse of Thomaston and took a mortgage deed to a forty-seven acre tract in that town with all buildings, lime kilns, etc. which sum was to be repaid in \$200 amounts, with interest, on May 1, 1819, 1820 and 1821. And in 1817 at an unstated date WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> prepared a rough draft of his resignation as Surveyor of the Port of Thomaston (see letter on p. 49) for presentation to the President — then James Monroe — preliminary to his cross country trip to the middle west at the age of forty-six, a journey fully seven hundred miles as the crow flies and of course *much* farther in that day of but few roads and fewer bridges. Five of their nine children were but ten years old or less and the eldest only twenty. No record of that wearisome trek, undertaken doubtless after May 1, 1817, and the loan referred to above, has been left to us, but it was probably made by covered wagon to the vicinity of Pittsburgh and then down the Ohio and up the Muskingum by poling or towing a flat boat as was the earlier habit of pilgrims to the Northwest Territory. It must have been especially hard on wife "NABBY" with a child less than two years of age to care for. They settled<sup>129</sup> up the Muskingum River in Morgan County in what was then Morgan Township but is now Malta Township (see map, p. 475). There WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> acquired under date of November 25, 1818 a federal grant of one hundred sixty acres in the United States Military Tract as assignee of Nathan Sidwell of Belmont County, Ohio. This farm was located on the Marietta-Lancaster State road which was opened for travel in or before 1817 and WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> DAWES conceived a far-reaching plan whereby he visualized this high and dry location as a suitable place for the county seat, rather than the settlement at McConnellsville in the fever-infested valley of the Muskingum River.

With that end in view and with the rather considerable estate which he had brought from his New England home, he built on his land a commodious house (see plate VIII, p. 58) with many suitable outhouses and established no less than seven different industries, besides that of agriculture (see illustration on p. 51). These included a carding machine (the first in the county) run by horse power from a treadwheel, and a loom to fashion the wool into fabric; a tannery (such as his father had early run in Massachusetts) with a shoemaker and saddle maker as accessories; a brick kiln which made the brick for part of his house and for the needs of neighbors; a store which permitted barter for produce and a distillery to make corn whiskey. This distillery, which is said to have been the first one in the county, was located on a hillside near the east line of the farm, was constructed of hewn stone and was built over a spring which was described (1934) by Mr. James Rusk of Zanesville and his sister, Mrs. Mary (Rusk) Taylor of McConnellsville (who were born and reared on this farm which their grandfather bought of WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> DAWES in 1834) as an "enormous spring." They say that within their recollection the walls of this distillery were standing but the roof had disappeared earlier and now (1934) only a few scattered stones remain in and near a gully which once carried off the overflow from the spring.

The making and use of whiskey (which then sold for eighteen and two-thirds cents per gallon) was at that time looked upon very differently than at present. In going through old letters of the Northwest Territory dating from 1800 to 1850 the incessant repetition of report to relatives, of both old and young suffering from "fever and ague", "chills and fever", proves the great necessity for some

agency to combat these ills, and in that day the consensus of opinion agreed that whiskey was that agent. Yet in spite of its quite universal use report says that there was less of drunkenness then than in later days. Probably the fact that it was pure, not drugged, and that those pioneers worked so unspeakably hard, would account for this result.

## INDUSTRIES ESTABLISHED ON THE MORGAN COUNTY, OHIO FARM OF WILLIAM MEARS<sup>6</sup> DAWES



APPROXIMATE PLACING OF VARIOUS EARLY INDUSTRIES

In every field of this farm springs were and still are found, making the care of stock simpler than in many places. Over one of these springs near the house a stone springhouse was built, with a trough wide enough to hold three rows of milk crocks which were kept cool by the water which flowed through. This spring, farther on in its course, also served the tannery.

The back part of the house was built of brick and the front part was frame. The brick portion (some of which has since been torn down) for which his own kiln would have furnished the material, was of two-story height and was sunk back in a hill so that the embedded part of its first floor became the cellar which was thus on a level with the large kitchen. The brick portion also contained a wood room. Even as late as the childhood days of James Rusk and his sister (probably 1860-70), cooking was done in the huge fireplace in this kitchen; and when the parents would go to McConnellsville to church, the children would have to watch the dinner which was cooking in a kettle hanging on the crane.

The frame or front part of the house was and is two full stories with an attic.

That WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> DAWES built well is evidenced by the fact that the same frame, plaster and split, hand-made lathe, used when the house was built (as disclosed by a change in location of windows) are still (1934) in good condition. The porch then ran the full length of the front of the house and at its south end a portion was enclosed for a "saddle room." Here a "tree" was constructed on which saddles would be hung as soon as riders had dismounted on the horse block at the edge of the porch.

Under date of April 30, 1819, WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> wrote east to his brother Charles<sup>6</sup> that he was well pleased with the country and climate; that "we went into the woods last spring (1818), cleared the land, raised three hundred bushels of corn, one hundred thirty bushels of turnips, some hay, oats, &c and with the produce of our farm wintered a span of horses, four oxen, six cow kind and upwards of thirty hogs;" that he had taken the Post Office, and to direct to him at "Morgan, County of Morgan, State of Ohio (via Marietta)."

The farm had upon it in the early days many big poplars and white oaks which were felled to clear the land and were sawed on the farm. WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> DAWES planted many fruit trees which gave bountiful crops to him as well as to those who lived there after him — cherries, mulberries and apples are mentioned especially, and the apples were so bountiful that a cider mill was built with six-foot wooden screws to press the fruit. The grade of wool raised in Morgan County was and is second to none. And in 1828 in a single day four hundred dozen bundles of oats were stacked from his fields. He allowed the young man who stacked all these oats a credit of two gallons of whiskey on his father's whiskey bill for his "big day's work."

During the residence of WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> DAWES in Morgan County, his public service<sup>130</sup> included foremanship of the county's first grand jury in July, 1819, which was convened in a cabin in McConnellsville; representation of the counties of both Morgan and Washington in the legislature in 1821-2 and the position of Associate Judge of the Court of Common Pleas from 1823 to 1830 inclusive. In 1820 WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> DAWES received two votes for Governor and that year ran against EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER for a seat in the legislature, CUTLER receiving but fifteen votes and DAWES twenty-eight but even he was beaten by a third candidate. In 1821 EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER was a candidate for the State Senate and WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> for the House of Representatives which he won, running as a Whig. But as to his hope for the placing of the county seat on his farm, great bitterness and strife arose and undoubtedly crooked politics played a part. Briefly stated, three locations in the county were fighting for it; certain residents of Bristol Township, called the eastern party, desired its location there; others, more centrally placed favored McConnellsville in the Muskingum Valley; while DAWES and one Shepard, called the western group, favored the higher land located on the Marietta-Lancaster road running through the DAWES farm. This last named was a State road which had been established and traveled for some years, though a map drawn in 1819 by a clerk of the Land Office at Zanesville, (while this controversy raged) entirely omitted<sup>130</sup> this State road but showed the two other roads bisecting the county and serving the two other locations.

At first the legislature in January, 1818, named three commissioners from other counties to advise in a general way as to the contending locations and one of the

three was EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER who with a second member favored McConnellsville because it was more central. This was of course highly unsatisfactory to both the eastern and western parties. By or before this time the strife had become so keen that local political parties had been formed — the pro-McConnellsville group were nicknamed the “Juntos”, and generally identified themselves with the democrats; while the leader of the Juntos, an eccentric named Jonathan Williams christened his opponents (both east and west) as the “Brimstone party” which of course included WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup>. The reason assigned for his choice of a name is that some of the opposing party made medical use of that article, which supposedly implies the consumption of the spring-time concoction of early days “molasses and sulphur” — which seems far-fetched indeed for a political cognomen.

October, 1819, was the time for the first annual county election (county organization having taken place the preceding April) of commissioners who would erect county buildings and three “Juntos” won, but by so narrow a margin that the Brimstones took heart and at the subsequent session of the legislature presented a petition asking the appointment of another board to review the proceedings. At Columbus this resolution was passed designating other commissioners to review and relocate. This petition was evidently kept under cover and the fact that Morgan County then had but one mail a week, arriving Saturday evening, by which newspapers could bring report of legislative doings, bade fair to “put over” the plan of the Brimstones. But by some means the Juntos learned that this resolution had been introduced, had passed the house and was pending in the senate. Prompt measures were a necessity. Immediately a remonstrance was drawn up and signed by residents in and near McConnellsville, but one regrets to report the addition to these signatures, of the names on the militia rolls in possession of the captains of the neighborhood. “With this remonstrance, Mr. Jacob Adams started by way of Lancaster and arrived at Columbus on the afternoon of the second day and unfolded his ‘ponderous roll’ . . .” with the result that a friendly senator had the house resolution called up and “indefinitely postponed.”<sup>130</sup> So the Juntos won and the hopes and plans of WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> and his associates fell through. These rabid local parties died out by about 1826. In 1827 the store which he had maintained on the farm was removed to Malta by his sons William<sup>7</sup> and HENRY<sup>7</sup> and became the especial care of HENRY<sup>7</sup> for thirty or more years, carrying a general stock of merchandise. WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> himself remained on his farm until 1834 when at the age of sixty-three he sold it to Humphrey Rusk and soon removed to Alexandria, Licking County.

WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> was the commanding officer of a troop<sup>130</sup> of light horse which was organized by or before 1830 in Malta vicinity. In 1833 a squadron was formed from the cavalry companies and DAWES was elected Lt. Col. with James Hunter, Major. This troop, which met to muster three times a year, must have been similar to the National Guard of later days for though they furnished their own horses and uniforms, the state outfitted the unit with forty broad-swords and eighty horse pistols and tradition says they “made quite a fine sight when they swung into line accoutred with their swords and pistols.” “On these muster days the stores in Malta and McConnellsville would each have a barrel of whiskey with one head knocked out and set before the store door, nails driven in the sides of the barrel, with tin cups on the nails, and the troopers were welcome to drink.”<sup>130</sup>

It seems probable that WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> had at some time become assignee for a second quarter section in this military grant for in 1836, after his removal to Alexandria and being called "of Licking County," he deeded one hundred sixty acres which cornered south-east from his Malta home farm to his son George<sup>7</sup> Dawes. This son subsequently followed his father to Alexandria.

It is evident that WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> DAWES contemplated removal from Morgan County to Licking County as early as 1833 for at the September, 1833, term of Court an order was executed upon John Gaffield, executor of the estate of Alexander Devilbiss, of Alexandria, deceased, to transfer certain lots to DAWES and on February 20, 1834, lots 6, 27, 28, 31 and 32 in the town site were so transferred.

On February 28, 1835, WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> DAWES bought his 100-acre farm across Raccoon Creek and just beyond Pet Run west of Alexandria.

One may infer, therefore, that he either lived in town for a year or rented a farm until this purchase was made. They resided on this farm from 1835 until 1852 and the house, a part of which burned down in 1929, had black walnut siding, red oak timbers and homemade nails, so it seems reasonably certain that it was built during the ownership of WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> DAWES. Two spruce stumps are to be seen (1934), one on each side of the front walk, in the usual New England style, and on one of these, 99 rings are discernible which makes the life of the tree coincide approximately with the hundred year period since WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> DAWES settled there.

In Malta vicinity, the form of address "Hon. WILLIAM M. DAWES" had frequently been used as a result of his service as a member of the Legislature from Morgan County but oftener, even then, he was called "Judge DAWES" which title was uniformly applied to him at Alexandria. According to aged Reuben Tyler who has spent his entire life within a mile of the DAWES farm "Judge DAWES was an all-round man, outstanding, above the ordinary, of prominence in the community." Mr. Tyler also remembers that Alexandria had no bank, that John<sup>7</sup> Dawes (youngest son of WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> DAWES) storekeeper there, had sufficient capital to frequently accommodate his neighbors with small loans of \$5 to \$25 and that his father Foster Tyler who came to Alexandria in 1840, was often so accommodated. This John<sup>7</sup> Dawes was for years associated with his brother James T.<sup>7</sup> in this store on Main Street and an old resident tells of buying six dozen eggs there for ten cents. He tells also that eggs brought to the store for barter brought the producers only one cent per dozen, *in trade*.

It is an interesting commentary on WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> DAWES and his business ability that in regard to four pieces of property which he owned in Alexandria and held from two to four years, he sold each one at an increase of from 33 per cent to 300 per cent; and in regard to his farm where construction would be an item, he bought it for \$350 and sold seventeen years later for \$3,000.

A letter written by WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> from Alexandria in July, 1845, to his sister Hannah<sup>6</sup> tells that their family on the farm then consisted of himself and wife NABBY (who was still doing her own work from choice), eldest son Charles<sup>7</sup> and a chore boy.

After the sale of his farm west of Alexandria in March, 1852, WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> bought, in June, 1852, a tract of three-quarters of an acre with a smaller house at the eastern edge of town and adjoining the farm of their son George<sup>7</sup> where he

and wife "NABBY" lived for about two years but sold in August, 1854, when their ages would have been about eighty-three and seventy-four — evidently too old to live alone any longer. They then both removed to Hudson, Ohio (see map, p. 224) to the home of their daughter, Mary Ellsworth. After a visit there WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> left on October 5, 1854, probably with some member of his family for the new home of his son George<sup>7</sup> at Ripon, Wisconsin, where the last year of his life was spent. This separation of WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> from wife "NABBY" after a life of fifty-eight years together must have been very hard for both of them but they were patient as is proved by such excerpts as the following from the extant letters of WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup>.

(1) To daughter Mary<sup>7</sup> on October 29, 1854:

"My love to dear MOTHER, God bless her. 'Tis uncertain when we meet. That she is far better off with you than she would be at this time in Wis. I fully acknowledge, & pray that she may be able to accompany you out in the spring. Kind regards to Mr. Ellsworth to whom I shall ever feel indebted. . . . Your father WILLIAM M. DAWES."

(2) To son John<sup>7</sup> on July 17, 1855:

"I recd a letter from Wm Jason a day or two since. He had been to Hudson says dear MOTHER was in all respects better than he expected to find her. Mr. Ellsworth & family will move here soon. . . . WM. M. DAWES."

On September 21, 1855, being only three months short of eighty-five years old, WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> died in Ripon, Wisconsin without seeing "dear MOTHER" again.

He left a will, dividing his estate among his children, which was probated but was later destroyed when the County Court House burned. A copy of the distribution which has been preserved among the descendants of his youngest son John<sup>7</sup> has (with other family papers) been kindly loaned for use in this compilation.<sup>138</sup>

The trip of the Ellsworths to Wisconsin was delayed indefinitely and on August 25, 1856, HENRY<sup>7</sup> reported to brother John<sup>7</sup> in Alexandria that he had just returned from Hudson and "MA cannot live over 2 or 3 weeks. She is a mere skeleton." NABBY died probably by September 21, 1856, to which date HENRY<sup>7</sup> who was her guardian paid for her board and care to Mr. Ellsworth.

After his father's death HENRY<sup>7</sup> was made the guardian of his mother "NABBY" and served in that capacity until her death. There is no reason to doubt that "dear MOTHER" was buried in the new cemetery in Alexandria on the Rose lot, beside her daughter Jane<sup>7</sup>, though there is no marker to prove it. Evidence is apparent of other graves on that lot than are recorded.

The children of WILLIAM MEARS<sup>6</sup> and ABIGAIL KENDALL (HOLDEN) DAWES, all but the two eldest born in Thomaston, Maine, were

- i. Charles May<sup>7</sup>, b. Aug. 15, 1797 at Sudbury; d. after 1855, unm.
- ii. William<sup>7</sup>, b. Aug. 2, 1799, doubtless at Fitzwilliam; living 1880 at Fox Lake, Wis.; m. 1st, Nov. 18, 1820 [by Genealogy, or Nov. 19, 1821 by Athens Co., O. records] Sally Rice; m. 2nd, Dec. 1, 1851, Lucy Ann Birchard.
- iii. George<sup>7</sup>, b. Oct. 25, 1801; d. Oct. 10, 1869, at Ripon, Wis.; m. Mar. 6, 1825, Elizabeth Ames (Judge Sylvanus, Rev. Sylvanus, Capt. Thomas, Thomas, John, William). Their residence was in Alexandria, Licking Co., O. and by 1854 in Ripon, Wis.
- iv. HENRY<sup>7</sup>, see following.

- v. Edward<sup>7</sup>, b. June 16, 1807; d. April 5, 1865; m. June 22, 1837, Caroline<sup>6</sup> Dana (Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, John Winchester<sup>4</sup>, Isaac<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>). He was a physician in McConnellsville, O. and father of James William<sup>8</sup> Dawes who became Governor of Nebraska. The family removed to Wis.
- vi. James Thomson<sup>7</sup>, b. June 13, 1809; d. Sept. 21, 1840, buried in Maple Grove Cem., Granville, O.; m. Sept. 26, 1838, Nancy Fitch (William, Timothy, Gov. Thomas of Conn.)
- vii. Mary Holden<sup>7</sup>, b. Oct. 18, 1811; d. May 7, 1894; m. May 8, 1845, Edgar Birge Ellsworth of Hudson, O. son of Elisha and Betsy (Oviatt) Ellsworth, parents of Lincoln, the noted explorer.
- viii. Jane<sup>7</sup>, b. Nov. 20, 1813; d. Aug. 15, 1852, bur. in the newer cemetery at Alexandria; m. May 20, 1840, Lyman Wolcott Rose, son of Helon of Alexandria, Licking Co., O. (Lemuel, Justus, Jonathan).
- ix. John<sup>7</sup>, b. Dec. 7, 1815; d. June or July 19, 1876, bur. in pioneer burying grd. at Alexandria, O.; m. Sept. 10, 1845, Mary M. Van Dorn.

HENRY<sup>7</sup> DAWES (*William M.<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Ambrose<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*) was born at Thomaston, Maine, on May 4, 1804, and died at Mauston, Wisconsin, on November 4, 1867, having been married in the "Old Stone House" at Constitution, Washington County, Ohio, on January 20, 1829 to SARAH<sup>7</sup> CUTLER (see Cutler, p. 233).

He was about fourteen years old when his father removed from Maine to the farm in Malta township, Morgan County, Ohio (see map, p. 475). He assisted his father on the farm until about 1827 when the general store which had been maintained there was removed to the town of Malta, became the especial care of HENRY<sup>7</sup>, and was continued through the major part of 1859. The business interests of HENRY<sup>7</sup>, in addition to the store, covered action as purchasing agent for men who bought grain and wool in large quantities. With two partners he maintained a warehouse on the bank of the Muskingum River where wool was stored and packed in sacks for markets either up or down the river. His three sons "tended store," and packed wool and the eldest, Henry Manasseh<sup>8</sup>, wrote in 1851 that their father and his partners had bought 38,000 pounds of wool at a cost of \$12,000 on which they expected to realize a profit of \$2,500.

HENRY<sup>7</sup> made annual trips to the east to buy merchandise for his store. On February 10, 1836, he wrote to EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER, his father-in-law, who then lived near Point Harmar:

"You will recollect when here last I was purchasing wheat for Miles Woodford of Point Harmar have purchased between 4 and 5 thousand bushels; in so doing have advanced of my own funds 1500\$ or upward. M. Woodford left this [vicinity] with flour the last rise of water. Said he would return in 2 or 3 weeks — would then meet all engagements etc. Have not heard from him since he left this. As the time is drawing near that I should go for goods I of course am quite anxious to have my funds in hand. If convenient you will much oblige by making inquiry with a view to ascertain where Woodford now is, what he has done with his flour, when he will probably visit this place and communicate any information obtained. If I am not disappointed in this money I expect to start for goods about 1st of March."

HENRY<sup>7</sup> mentioned in this letter his intention of visiting Philadelphia, New York, Keene, New Hampshire (where some of his Dawes relatives lived) Waltham, Salem, Winchester and other places before his return home.

In 1836 HENRY<sup>7</sup> signed himself as Post Master at Malta and franked mail, but by 1841 he paid postage. In 1839 his wife secured a legal separation and with

the younger children returned to Warren Township. On his trip in 1848 he was ill for twelve days at Baltimore with "arecypolis."

After the death of his father WILLIAM M.<sup>6</sup> in 1855 HENRY<sup>7</sup> was made the guardian of his mother of whom he was very fond, and after her death had her body removed from Hudson in Summit County to Alexandria, Licking County.

In May of 1856 HENRY<sup>7</sup> made an extended trip to the west and south to buy land warrants. He went first to Wisconsin where he visited the State University expecting to send his two younger sons there. From Madison he went for a few days to the home of his brother Edward<sup>7</sup> and wrote that he found "the doctor's family all in good health and spirits." On reaching Mauston he bought warrants for land "lying near our route to LaCrosse, Stopped at Town and Tavern two days, selected some fine land, mostly prairie with Timber enough and lots of Springs." "Land warrants were selling at LaCrosse at \$95 for eighty acres. The lands we bought lie east ten miles from LaCrosse." HENRY<sup>7</sup> wrote to his son RUFUS<sup>8</sup> who was at home in Malta, probably "tending store," that it was "doubtful whether I am home for four weeks" and added "I wish you to be careful of fire and see that ashes are not thrown out near wood. Be a good boy. Don't go out nights."

The two boys RUFUS<sup>8</sup> and Ephraim<sup>8</sup> went to the University at Madison in the fall of 1856 and their father wrote to them in November of that year:

"My dear boys

RUF's letter of 16th Inst came duly to hand. . . . I now enclose you \$6 which use only for necessaries for both of you. Try to do with as little as you can until I sell some Wisconsin land which I shall probably be able to do next summer. If Chancellor wants you to join any society in College do so and pay your part. If this enclosure dont meet present needs let me know. . . . You should be careful to tallow your shoes."

The next year after his western trip on January 3, 1857, Governor Salmon P. Chase commissioned HENRY<sup>7</sup> DAWES, then of Malta as a Notary Public for Morgan County for a period of three years. In August HENRY<sup>7</sup> was nominated for the Ohio Legislature, was elected and served for one term.

In 1859 HENRY<sup>7</sup>, accompanied by his son RUFUS<sup>8</sup> removed from Malta, Ohio to Mauston, Wisconsin, to clear and live on some of the land he had bought in Juneau County. Nine months after arriving at Mauston RUFUS<sup>8</sup> wrote his sister Catharine<sup>8</sup> in Ohio

"This is a tremendous job of 'log rolling' or to use the dialect of the country 'bush whacking' FATHER is prosecuting his improvements rapidly . . . devoting his whole time, energy and business talents to the sole object of making a productive and profitable estate, to which he looks forward for a home and sustenance. He pilots the enterprise with skill and safety, and that it will be eminently successful I do not doubt."

Ten years later HENRY<sup>7</sup> DAWES died leaving property to the sum of \$50,000 or \$60,000 so that his success in his improvements in Wisconsin was considerable. The Mauston paper comments in the death notice as follows:

"Mr. DAWES formerly resided in Southern Ohio whence he removed to this state about ten years ago. He was always a prominent and active man in the community in which he lived. He took a warm interest in politics and always for the right. He was equally zealous in church matters. During forty years of an active business life no one ever doubted his entire honesty and integrity in business matters. He was once a member of Assembly in Ohio. His last illness was short and his death unexpected."

He died on the fourth of November 1867 of "dropsy." RUFUS<sup>8</sup> was appointed administrator of the estate since HENRY<sup>7</sup> left no will and the property was divided among his widow and the four children who survived him, Lucy<sup>8</sup>, Jane<sup>8</sup> (Mrs. Shedd), RUFUS<sup>8</sup>, and Ephraim<sup>8</sup>.

The children of HENRY<sup>7</sup> and SARAH (CUTLER) DAWES, born at Malta, Ohio, were

- i. Lucretia Catherine<sup>8</sup>, b. Mar. 13, 1830; d. at Warren Township Sept. 23, 1866; m. there Feb. 16, 1864, Rev. Samuel Agnew McLean. Their only child d. yng.
- ii. Henry Manasseh<sup>8</sup>, b. Mar. 11, 1832; d. unm. Aug. 13, 1860, having graduated at Marietta College in 1855; was admitted to the bar in 1858.
- iii. Lucy<sup>8</sup>, b. Dec. 5, 1833; d. unm. Dec. 10, 1898.
- iv. Sarah Jane<sup>8</sup>, b. Jan. 9, 1836; d. at Eagle Rock, Calif. Mar. 19, 1921 at the age of 85, buried at Marietta, O.; m. July 28, 1859, Rev. John Haskell Shedd (Rev. Henry, John Haskell, Abel). They were missionaries in Persia for thirty-one years. They had eight children.\*
- v. RUFUS R.<sup>8</sup>, see following.
- vi. Ephraim Cutler<sup>8</sup>, b. May 27, 1840; d.s.p. at Cincinnati, Ohio Apr. 23, 1895; m. at Marietta June 20, 1866 M. Frances<sup>8</sup> Bosworth (Sala<sup>7</sup> jr, Salah<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>6</sup>, Ichabod<sup>4</sup>, Jonathan<sup>3</sup>, Jonathan<sup>2</sup>, Edward<sup>1</sup>).

RUFUS R.<sup>8</sup> DAWES (*Henry<sup>7</sup>, William M.<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Ambrose<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*) was born at Malta, Ohio on July 4, 1838, and died at Marietta, Ohio, August 1, 1899, having married there on January 18, 1864, MARY BEMAN<sup>8</sup> GATES (see Frontispiece and Vol. II, 3-6, 29). Except for the three years and more of his military service and his term in Congress his adult life was spent in Marietta. It is remarkable that during his extended war service he received not the slightest wound nor was he hospitalized on account of sickness though in May and June of 1864 the Sixth Wisconsin Regiment under his command lost sixty percent of its personnel in killed and wounded. In May 1864 he experienced great anxiety because of the serious injury of his brother Maj. Ephraim C.<sup>8</sup> Dawes who received two wounds, one in the head and a much more severe one in the lower jaw. But the indomitable courage and endurance of the Major, coupled with reconstructive surgery years ahead of its time, made the patient whole.

The home of the RUFUS R.<sup>8</sup> DAWES family (see plate II, p. 6) was outstanding for the spirit it maintained — of well balanced wisdom and courageous gayety. Fortunate, indeed, are they who were reared in it.

The children of RUFUS R.<sup>8</sup> and MARY BEMAN (GATES) DAWES, all born in Marietta, Ohio, were

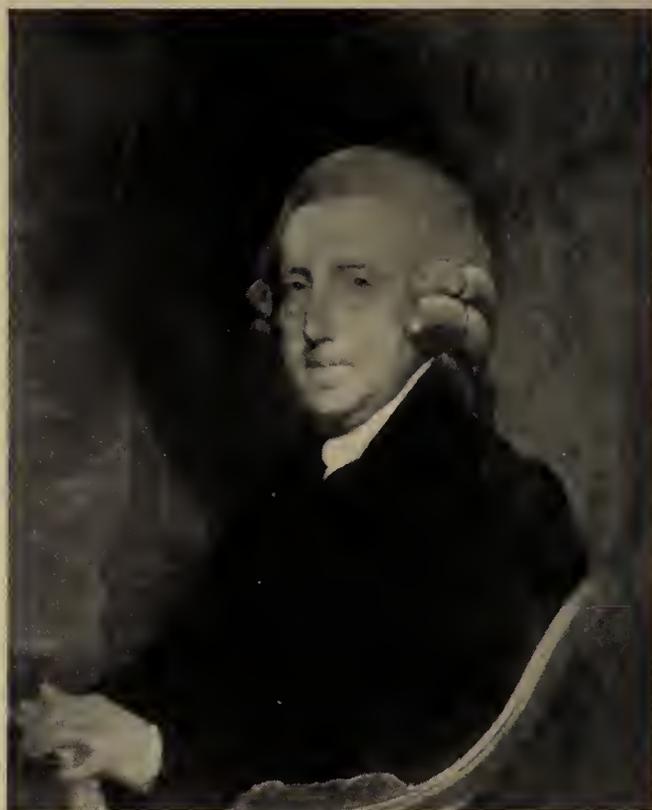
- i. Charles Gates<sup>9</sup>, Brig. Gen'l., b. Aug. 27, 1865; m. at Cincinnati, O. on Jan. 24, 1889, to Caro Dana Blymyer (William Henry, Benjamin Blymyer of Schellsburg, Pa. and Mansfield, O.). They had (Dawes)
  - a. Rufus Fearing<sup>10</sup>, b. Dec. 14, 1890; d. Sept. 5, 1912.
  - b. Carolyn<sup>10</sup>, b. July 12, 1892; m. at Evanston June 15, 1915, Melvin Ericson. They had (Ericson)
    - (1) Charles, b. Aug. 4, 1918 and
    - (2) (adopted) Caroline, b. Oct. 27, 1922.
 They adopted (Dawes)
  - c. Dana McCutcheon, b. Feb. 15, 1912; m. Apr. 11, 1931, Eleanor Dillingham.

\*Their second son, Rev. William Ambrose Shedd, D.D., became a missionary in Urumia, Persia as successor to his parents; became dean of the American Presbyterian Mission there and during the World War acted for a time as unofficial representative of not only the American Government but of every other allied government during the siege of that hapless locality by the Turks and the Kurds. Later he was made our official representative. Toward the last, as he led the women and children over the mountains toward safety, with the old men and boys acting as rear guard, he died of cholera.



Farm home of WILLIAM MEARS<sup>6</sup> DAWES  
near Malta, Ohio.

Col. Thomas<sup>5</sup> Dawes  
first cousin of  
William<sup>5</sup> "who rode".



Judge Thomas<sup>6</sup> Dawes  
son of Col. Thomas<sup>5</sup>  
(above).

- They had (Dawes)
- (1) Elizabeth Dillingham. Dec. 4, 1932.
  - (2) Charles Gates, b. May 19, 1935.
- They also adopted (Dawes)
- d. Virginia, b. Feb. 20, 1914; m. at Evanston, Sept. 12, 1936, Richard Cragg. They adopted (Cragg)
    - (1) Caro Blymyer, b. Jan. 30, 1939.
- ii. Rufus Cutler<sup>9</sup>, b. July 30, 1867; d. at Chicago Jan. 8, 1940; m. at Washington Court House, Fayette Co., Ohio on June 3, 1893, to Helen Virginia Palmer (Charles Anthony, William, Martin of Hanover County, Va., who served in the Revolution). They had
- a. William Mills<sup>10</sup>, b. Dec. 27, 1894, at Marietta, O.; m. Nov. 19, 1929, at Chicago Grace Baxter Fredericks.
  - b. Robert Rufus<sup>10</sup>, b. June 21, 1896; d. at Marietta, O. Apr. 19, 1897.
  - c. Charles Cutler<sup>10</sup>, b. Mar. 30, 1899, at Evanston, Ill.; m. 1st Jan. 3, 1921, Emily McCormick. They had (Dawes)
    - (1) Harriet McCormick<sup>11</sup>, b. Jan. 17, 1923.
    - (2) Rufus Cutler<sup>11</sup>, b. May 5, 1930.
  - d. Jean Palmer<sup>10</sup>, b. June 7, 1901 at Evanston; m. there Oct. 31, 1928, Robert Trowbridge Sherman. They had (Sherman).
    - (1) Alida White, b. Sept. 4, 1929 at Evanston.
    - (2) Helen Dawes, b. July 4, 1932 at Evanston.
    - (3) Robert Trowbridge, Jr., b. Aug. 19, 1937.
  - e. Palmer<sup>10</sup>, b. Feb. 20, 1906 at Evanston; m. at Portland, Ore. June 18, 1938, Mildred Roberts of Salem, Ore.
  - f. Margaret Gates<sup>10</sup>, b. Sept. 10, 1908, at Evanston; m. there Apr. 28, 1933, Beverly Jefferson. They had (Jefferson)
    - (1) Jean, b. Apr. 25, 1937, at Evanston.
  - g. Helen Buckner<sup>10</sup>, b. Apr. 5, 1911, at Evanston; m. there May 23, 1936, Louis F. Watermulder.
- iii. Beman Gates<sup>9</sup>, b. Jan. 14, 1870; was m. at Lincoln, Neb. on Oct. 3, 1894, to Bertie O.<sup>9</sup> Burr (Carlos Calvin<sup>8</sup>, Benjamin Franklin<sup>7</sup>, Atwell<sup>6</sup>, Ozias<sup>5</sup>, Gideon<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup> of Hartford, Conn.).<sup>135</sup> They had (Dawes)
- a. Beman Gates<sup>10</sup>, b. Sept. 21, 1895; m. at Marietta, O. Jan. 28, 1919, Janet Newton. They had (Dawes)
    - (1) Janet Eaton<sup>11</sup>, b. Nov. 16, 1919.
    - (2) Mary Burr<sup>11</sup>, b. Apr. 6, 1921.
    - (3) Dana<sup>11</sup>, (a daughter) b. Oct. 30, 1926.
  - b. Dorothy<sup>10</sup>, b. July 3, 1897; m. Aug. 16, 1919, David Harold Young. They had (Young)
    - (1) David, b. July 1, 1922.
    - (2) Dorothy, b. June 9, 1924.
    - (3) Beman, b. June 19, 1927.
  - c. Carlos Burr<sup>10</sup>, b. Apr. 17, 1902; m. at Columbus, O. June 16, 1933, Esther Pinney Johnson. They had (Dawes)
    - (1) Sarah Pinney<sup>11</sup>, b. June 24, 1934, at Columbus.
    - (2) Mary Jane<sup>11</sup>, b. Nov. 27, 1936, at Columbus.
    - (3) Deborah Burr Dawes<sup>11</sup>, b. Sept. 3, 1941, at Madison, Wis.
  - d. Ephraim Cutler<sup>10</sup>, b. Jan. 23, 1904; m. at Columbus, O. June 20, 1927, Mary Josephine Cooke. They had (Dawes)
    - (1) Mary Josephine<sup>11</sup>, b. Apr. 14, 1928.
    - (2) Bertie Burr<sup>11</sup>, b. Jan. 16, 1931.
    - (3) Diana Cooke<sup>11</sup>, b. May 18, 1934.
  - e. Henry<sup>10</sup>, b. Jan. 3, 1906; m. in Cincinnati, O., Nov. 6, 1937, Milenda Mary Blanche Gray. They had (Dawes)
    - (1) Beman Gates<sup>11</sup>, b. Feb. 15, 1941.
- iv. Mary Frances<sup>9</sup>, b. Mar. 3, 1872; m. at Marietta on June 8, 1896, to the Rev. Arthur Granville<sup>8</sup> Beach (Rev. David Edwards<sup>7</sup>, Edward Abbott<sup>6</sup>, David<sup>5</sup>, Edmund<sup>4</sup>, David<sup>3</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), who was b. at Marietta Nov. 29, 1870, d. there Jan. 27, 1934. They had (Beach)

- a. Alice Mary, b. June 1, 1898; m. on Dec. 29, 1921, Marshall W. Murray. They had (Murray)  
 (1) David Cowan, b. Mar. 20, 1924.  
 (2) Arthur Beach, b. May 14, 1927.
- b. David Edwards, b. Mar. 9, 1901; m. 1st Apr. 26, 1924, Mary Canham. They had (Beach)  
 (1) Robert Granville, b. Feb. 7, 1925.  
 m. 2nd Dec. 31, 1937, Elda Anderson. They had (Beach)  
 (2) Betsey Elda, b. Sept. 14, 1938.
- c. Rufus Dawes, b. July 31, 1903; unm.
- d. Betsey Mills, b. Feb. 14, 1910; m. at Marietta, O. June 13, 1936, Edward Wheeler Dempsey. They had (Dempsey)  
 (1) Charles Gates, b. Mar. 11, 1937.
- v. Henry May<sup>9</sup>, b. Apr. 22, 1877; m. Apr. 5, 1905, Helen Moore<sup>10</sup> Curtis (Harry Norvell<sup>9</sup>, Augustus Stephen<sup>8</sup>, Walter<sup>7</sup>, Eleazer<sup>6</sup>, Eleazer<sup>5</sup>, Eleazer<sup>4</sup>, Solomon<sup>3</sup>, Solomon<sup>2</sup>, Deodatus<sup>1</sup> of Braintree). They had (Dawes)  
 a. Harry Curtis<sup>10</sup>, b. Sept. 22, 1906; m. June 17, 1935, Dorothy Potter. They had (Dawes)  
 (1) Sue Potter<sup>11</sup>, b. June 28, 1936.  
 (2) Betsey Gates<sup>11</sup>, b. Jan. 6, 1938.  
 b. Mary Gates<sup>10</sup>, b. Aug. 30, 1908; m. Sept. 23, 1933, George Henry Schulz. They had (Schulz)  
 (1) Helen Dawes, b. July 30, 1936.  
 (2) Rosemary, b. May 4, 1939.
- vi. Betsey Gates<sup>9</sup>, b. Oct. 5, 1880; m. at Marietta on Nov. 26, 1902, to Harry Barzillia<sup>10</sup> Hoyt (Barzillia Hosmer<sup>9</sup>, Joseph<sup>8</sup>, Joseph<sup>7</sup>, John<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>5</sup>, John<sup>4</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup> of Salisbury, Mass.)<sup>136</sup> from Ravenswood, W. Va., but then of Marietta; now resident in Jacksonville, Fla. They had (Hoyt)  
 a. Mary Dawes, b. May 5, 1904.  
 b. Nancy Elizabeth, b. Feb. 2, 1906; m. Nov. 12, 1932, Thomas Palmer Caldwell.  
 c. Betsey Sibyl, b. May 29, 1909.  
 d. Henry Dawes, b. Apr. 7, 1914; m. May 31, 1940, Mary Judith Wigginton.

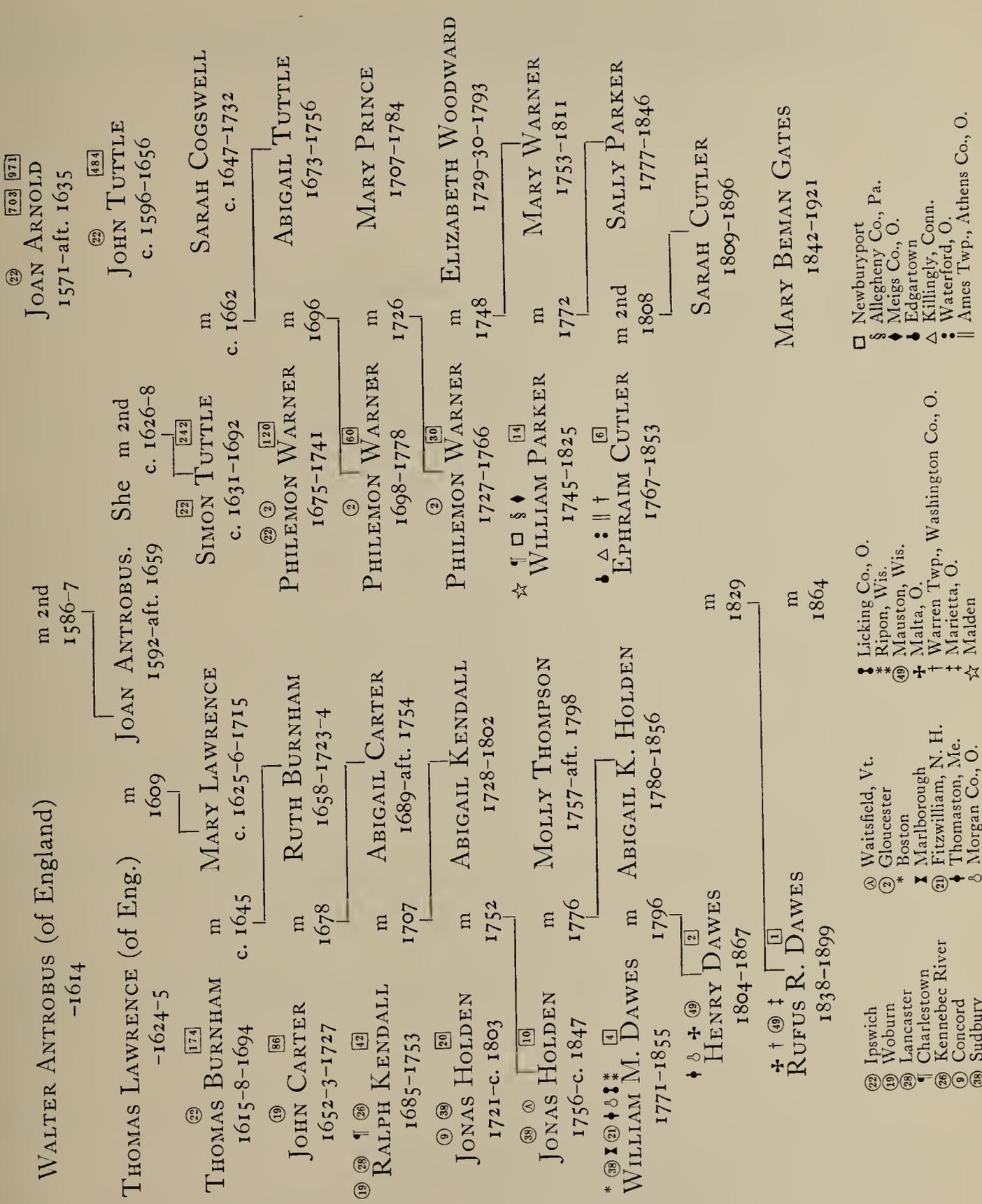
## REFERENCES

1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 65, 140-3.
2. Personal letter from Col. C. E. Banks of May 4, 1931.
3. Dawes Genealogy, H. W. Holland, 1876, pp. 21, 41-2.
4. Savage, II, 24-5; IV, 448; Pope's Pioneers, p. 134.
5. Historical Catalogue of the Old South Church, 1883, pp. ix, 6-7, 10, 14-5, 22-4, 32-3, 104, 106, 226, 287.
6. Boston Record Commissioners Report, I, 63, 71, 75, 83, 106, 109, 139, 152, 161; VII, 37, 40, 51, 80, 101, 116, 131, 138, 146, 159, 173, 184-5, 195-6, 200, 206-7, 211, 226.
7. Newcomb Family, J. B. Newcomb, 1874, pp. 445-6.
8. Vinton Memorial, J. A. Vinton, 1858, p. 341.
9. Lineage of the Bowens, E. A. Bowen, 1897, pp. 213-4.
10. Records of Massachusetts Bay, II, 294; IV, pt. 2, 585.
11. Danforth Genealogy, J. J. May, 1902, p. 18.
12. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXIX, 276, 305-6, 344, 527; XXX, 837-41, 1128-9.
13. Suffolk Deeds (pub.), V, 377, 484; VII, 105; VIII, 423; IX, 68-9; X, 342-4, 348-52; XII, 364.
14. Ibid., VI, 219, 293; IX, 69-70; XII, 42.
15. B. R. C. R., IX, 31, 39, 50, 53, 63, 69, 71, 78, 83.
16. American Antiquarian Society, Transactions and Collections, 1857, III, 228, 307-12; History of the Old South Church in Boston, B. B. Wisner, 1830, pp. 3-14, 82-4; First Church in Boston, W. Emerson, 1812, pp. 107-117; Annals of the American Pulpit, W. B. Sprague 1859, I, 96.
17. Research performed by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Mass. Archives, LXX, 154.
18. History of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 155, 431; New England Register XVI, 61-2, 143-7, 199-205; XXXVIII, 442; History of Bedford, N. H., 1903, pp. 102, 120, 124, 130, 197.
19. Dawes Genealogy, pp. 22, 42-55.
20. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 5, I, 28-9, 214, 401, 417; II, 96, 142.
21. History of the Old South Church (Third Church) Boston, H. A. Hill, 1890, I, 27, 62, 67.
22. Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880, I, 233-4, 509, 546-7; IV, 465-6; American Antiquarian Society Transactions and Collections, III, 174; Mass. Hist. Soc. Col., Ser. 4, VI, 155.
23. Winsor's Boston, I, 573.
24. History of the Boston Fire Department, A. W. Brayley, 1889, pp. 2-24.
25. Dawes Genealogy, pp. 55-9, 72-82.
26. Ibid., 9-15, 21, 23-38, 82-95.
27. Notation on map of Boston by John Bonner, 1722.
28. Winsor's Boston, 1881, II, 131 et seq.
29. Hill's Old South Church, I, 53, 56-7, 163-73, 175-7.

- 192-3, 196-8, 201-4; History of the Old South Church, B. B. Wisner, 1830, pp. 11, 76, 83-4.
30. Hill's Old South, I, 242-50; Wisner's Old South, pp. 17, 91-3; History of Milton, A. K. Teele, 1887, p. 649.
31. Topographical and Historical Description of Boston, N. B. Shurtleff, 1890, pp. 113-4; Winsor's Boston, I, 185-6.
32. "The New England Tragedies, John Endicott," H. W. Longfellow, 1868.
33. History and Antiquities of Boston, S. G. Drake, 1856, pp. 184-5, 320-1, 331, 334, 344-5, 347, 350, 444-9, 458, 467-86; Topographical and Historical Description of Boston, N. B. Shurtleff, 1890, pp. 86, 88.
34. Original Narratives of Early American History, Amer. Hist. Assn., VII, being Winthrop's Journal I, 24, 29, 50, 58-9.
35. Winsor's Boston, II, xiv, xviii, xix.
36. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, O. A. Roberts, 1895, I, 19, 229.
37. B. R. C. R., X, 4-5; Boston Notions, N. Dearborn, 1848, p. 53.
38. Memorial of the Morses, Rev. A. Morse, 1850, p. 3; Morse Genealogy, J. H. Morse and E. W. Leavitt, 1903, pp. 12-3.
39. Historical Sketch and Matters Appertaining to King's Chapel Burying Ground, Cemetery Dept. of Boston, 1903, pp. 43-5.
40. Hill's Old South Church, I, 132-3, 135, 139-41, 202; Sprague's Annals of the American Pulpit, I, 54-9; Winsor's Boston, I, 182, 193-4, 565.
41. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXIX, 5-9, 98-9; XXX, 569-70, 908; Clarke Genealogy, W. W. Johnson, 1884, pp. 11, 13; New England Register, IX, 252; XII, 344-5.
42. Notes from English Records at Essex Institute, Salem, copied by Miss Eva L. Moffatt.
43. B. R. C. R., IX, 92, 96, 103, 107, 112, 118, 127, 141, 151, 153.
44. Publications of Colonial Society of Mass., XXII, 193, 198, 227, 229, 234, 280, 431; XXIII, 431, 522; Memoranda Relating to the Ancestry and Family of Levi Parsons Morton, 1894, J. G. Leach, p. 29; Hill's Old South Church I, 236.
45. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, VI, 209-10.
46. New England Register, III, 25.
47. Hill's Old South Church, I, 265-72, 278-9, II, 14; Pamphlet on "The Old South Meeting House Boston," by Wm. Everett in 1876, pp. 1-3.
48. *Ibid.*, p. 4; Hill's Old South, I, 284-6, 290-3, 297; Memorial History of Boston, II, 131; Sewall's Diary, I, 358-9, 363-5, 445-6; II, 217; III, 252; Salem Witchcraft, with an Account of Salem Village, C. W. Upham, II, 250-1.
49. The Crooked and Narrow Streets of Boston, A. H. Thwing, 1920, pp. 87-8.
50. Records of Massachusetts Bay, IV, pt. 1, 99-100.
51. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 5, V, 31, VII, 324; American Antiquarian Society Transactions and Collections, III, 242.
52. Upham's Salem Witchcraft, II, 441-2, 474-5; Hill's Old South Church, I, 290-3; Sewall's Diary, I, 445; III, 252; Palfrey's New England, IV, 116.
53. Upham's Salem Witchcraft, II, 443-4; Hill's Old South, I, 291.
54. Upham's Salem Witchcraft, II, 474-5; John Perkins of Ipswich, G. A. Perkins, 1889, pt. 2, pp. 10-1; Batchelder Genealogy, F. C. Pierce, 1898, p. 349; Putnam Family, E. Putnam, 1891-5, p. 74.
55. The Complete Poetical Works of John Greenleaf Whittier, Cambridge Ed., 1894, Narrative and Legendary Poems, "The Prophecy of Samuel Sewall," p. 67; Hill's Old South Church, I, 291.
56. Hill's Old South, I, 140-6, 153.
57. *Ibid.*, I, 243-8.
58. History of Maine, W. D. Williamson, 1832, I, 451, 604-50, especially pp. 616-7, 635-6, and 650.
59. History of Portland, W. Willis, 1865, pp. 273-90; Massachusetts Historical Society, Ser. 3, VI, 209-10.
60. "Entertaining Passages . . .", B. Church, 1716, pp. 10-30, 36-7, 82-6.
61. Portland in the Past . . ., W. Gould, 1886, pp. 134-44.
62. Original Narratives of Early History, XV, being " . . . Indian Wars," ed. C. H. Lincoln, pp. 187-249, especially 191-2, 201-3, 240-1 (use secondary pagination).
63. Brackett Genealogy, H. I. Brackett, 1907, pp. 63-9.
64. History of New England, J. G. Palfrey, 1885, III, 532-3, 570-7, 590; IV, 35-6, 44, 93, 143-4, 332; Sparks' American Biography, VII, 6-7.
65. History of New Hampshire, J. Belknap, 1813, I, 187-214.
66. Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, C. T. Libby, p. 550; Magnalia Christi Americana, C. Mather, 1853, Bk. VII, 580-644, especially 593-4, 619-25.
67. France and England in North America, F. Parkman, 1884, pt. 5, pp. 222-6, 229-33, 346, 353-6, 378-81.
68. History of Pemaquid . . ., A. D. Parker, 1925, pp. 156-81 et. seq.
69. B. R. C. R., X, 102, 139-40.
70. Suffolk Deeds, (pub.) VI, 219, 293; IX, 70; X, 348-50; XI, 4; XII, 42.
71. Hill's Old South Church, p. 277; Historical Catalogue of the Old South Church, pp. 15, 104, 106, 287; Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXII and XXIII being Plymouth Church Records, XXII, 193, 198, 227, 229, 234, 280; Memoranda Relating to the Ancestry . . . of Levi Parsons Morton, J. G. Leach, 1894, p. 29.
72. Historical Catalogue of Old South Church, pp. 22-3, 28, 126, 321, 324.
73. B. R. C. R., XI, 160, 167; XIII, 65, 197, 209.
74. . . . Inscriptions . . . in . . . King's Chapel Burial Ground, T. Bridgman, 1853, map as frontispiece, pp. 36, 124-5, 168, 293.
75. Smith's and Deane's Journals with Notes of Portland, W. Willis, 1849, pp. 430-6; Extracts from Smith's Journals, 1821, Appendix, pp. 75-8.
76. Parker's Pemaquid, pp. 147-51, 154-5, 175-6, 378-81.
77. New England Register, III, 25; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, VI, 209-10; "Entertaining Passages", Benjamin Church, 1867, pp. 27-30; Original Narratives . . ., XV, 201-2; Baylies' Historical Memoir of Plymouth Colony, 1866, II, pt. 5, 84-6, Gould's Portland in the Past, p. 144.
78. Church's "Entertaining Passages," pp. xxxi-xxxii, 14, 30-6; Original Narratives, pp. 97-9.
79. Library of American Biography, J. Sparks, 1837, VII, 6-7.
80. Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, C. T. Libby, 1928-39, p. 183.
81. Savage, I, 298; Historical Catalogue of Old South Church, 1883, pp. 13, 274; Original Narratives . . ., VIII, being Winthrop's Journal, II, 209-10.
82. History of Embden, Me., E. G. Walker, 1929, p. 372 et seq.
83. Sparks' American Biography, VII, 39-45, 54-70; History of Bristol and Bremen, J. Johnston, 1873, pp. 186-7.
84. New England Register, XVI, 83-7; Drake's Antiquities, p. 503.

85. Glover Memorials . . . , Anna Glover, 1867, pp. 326-7 (including error).
86. William Henry Moore and His Ancestry, L. E. and A. L. deForest, 1934, p. 451; Suffolk Co. Probate Records, LVI, 19.
87. Historical Catalogue of Old South, pp. 38, 40, 126, 324.
88. Loring Genealogy, C. H. Pope and K. P. Loring, 1917, pp. 76-7.
89. B. R. C. R., XXVIII, 3, 144-5, 149, 190, 215, 229, 266, 272, 345; XXX, 47.
90. *Ibid.*, XXX, 153, 190, 221.
91. Underwood Families . . . , L. M. Underwood and H. J. Banker, 1913, I, 386-7, 392-3.
92. Hill's Old South Church, I, 319, 422-3; II, 394-7.
93. Vital Records of Marlboro', p. 375.
94. B. R. C. R., XXIV, 24, 34, 41, 55, 61, 74, 82, 90, 113, 126, 140, 143, 155, 164.
95. American Antiquarian Society Transactions and Collections, V, 91-2.
96. B. R. C. R., XXIV, 248, 256, 259, 279, 312, 316.
97. Descendants of John and Mary Coolidge . . . , E. D. Coolidge, 1930, pp. 335, 357-8, 370.
98. The Cogswells in America, E. O. Jameson, 1884, pp. 78-86.
99. The Club of Odd Volumes, 1900, "Early Boston Booksellers," G. E. Littlefield, pp. 131-6, 150-61, 192-200, 218.
100. Essex Institute Historical Collection, L, 298.
101. Clapp Memorial . . . , E. Clapp, 1876, pp. 329, 377-8; B. R. C. R., VIII, 135, 140; XIV, 137, 139; XVI, 110, 133.
102. Roberts' Ancient and Honorable, I, 229, 487; II, 100-1, 121, 138, 179, 191.
103. *Ibid.*, I, 229; II, 148-50, 171, 173, 179, 226.
104. Dawes Genealogy, p. 76; Dartmouth Alumni Magazine of December, 1935, pp. 7-9; A letter from its editor Sidney C. Hayward to Gen. C. G. Dawes; Dartmouth College General Catalogue, 1910-1, pp. 187-8.
105. New England Register, XXXIV, 288-93; Brayley's Boston Fire Department, pp. 60-6.
106. B. R. C. R., XXX, 47, 53, 107, 116, 129, 136, 173, 180, 427, 432-3, 441.
107. Hammond Families, F. S. Hammond, 1904, II, 115-6.
108. Publications of the Ipswich Historical Society, 1927, XXVI, 6-23, being "Two Ipswich Patriots," "John Wise of Chebacco," T. F. Waters, especially pp. 20-3; Annals of the American Pulpit, W. B. Sprague, 1859, I, 188-9; Chandler Family, G. Chandler, 1883, p. 61; Fairbanks Genealogy, L. S. Fairbanks, 1897, p. 107; History of Marblehead, S. Roads, 1880, pp. 134, 355.
109. Plymouth, Norfolk and Barnstable Counties, E. S. Thompson, 1928, II, 978; Annals and Reminiscences of Jamaica Plain, H. M. Whitcomb, 1897, pp. 6-7; Medford Historical Register, XLII, 41-51; History of Roxbury, F. S. Drake, 1905, pp. 405-6; Shurtleff's Topographical Description, pp. 396-7.
110. B. R. C. R., XXIV, 318, 322; XXX, 116, 427; Vital Records of Sudbury, p. 189.
111. Goldthwaite Genealogy, C. Goldthwaite, 1899, pp. 83, 133-4, 190-4, 353; History of Keene, N. H., S. G. Griffin, 1904, pp. 406, 409, 555, 625-6; Newcomb Family, J. B. Newcomb, 1874, pp. 462-5.
112. Vital Records of Worcester, p. 71.
113. Research by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Middlesex Probates, Files No. 6107, 6108, 6109; Suffolk Probates 9484, Vol. XLIII, 456-7.
114. Loyalists of Massachusetts, E. A. Jones, 1930, p. 150; Loyalists of Massachusetts, J. H. Stark, 1907, pp. 392-3; Gore Genealogy, W. H. Whitmore, 1875, pp. 5-6.
115. History of Roxbury, F. S. Drake, 1905, pp. 74-80, 84, 278.
116. Hill's History of Old South Church, II, 174; B. R. C. R., XXIV, 324, 327, 329; XXX, 180; Records of the Church of Brattle Square, 1902, pp. 189-90, 269.
117. Records of the Church of Brattle Square, 1902, pp. 114, 263; B. R. C. R., XXX, 116, 143.
118. Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors in the Revolution, II, 562; IV, 559; 561; X, 375.
119. History of Watertown, H. Bond, 1860, pp. 237-41.
120. The Battle of April 19, 1775 . . . , F. W. Coburn, 1912, pp. 18, 20-1, 25-7, 44, 94, 114-21, 151.
121. History of Saratoga Co., N. Y., N. B. Sylvester, 1878, p. 69.
122. Drake's Roxbury, pp. 251, 315, 379; History of the Dudley Family, D. Dudley, 1886, I, 521, 525.
123. Historical Brighton, J. P. C. Winship, 1899, I, 9-13.
124. New England Register, LV, 389; LXXXIV, 358.
125. The Town Officials of Colonial Boston, F. R. Seybolt, 1939, pp. ix, 142, 149, 336, 341, 345, 350, 355.
126. American Portraits 1620-1825 Found in Massachusetts by the Historical Records Survey, 1939, p. 113.
127. Acts and Resolves of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, XV (being Appendix X), 766-7; XVI (being Appendix XI) 523-4.
128. *Ibid.*, IV, 000; V, 274, 350-2; VII (being Appendix II) 50, 429.
129. Historical Magazine, 1860, IV, 68; History of Summit County, Ohio, L. V. Bierce, 1854, p. 74.
130. History of Morgan County, Ohio, Charles Robertson, 1886, pp. 110-3, 121-2, 127, 169, 235-7, 253, 294, 301, 334-6, 338, 346, 368, 370, 376; Biographical Annals of Ohio, pp. 272, 719, 722; Reminiscences of A. A. Porter in the McConnellsville "Weekly Herald" of November 28, 1929; Word of James Rusk of Zanesville and of his sister Mrs. Elmer Taylor of McConnellsville in 1934.
131. Information and records furnished by Mr. Robert Price, Chairman of the Local Historical Committee, Alexandria, Ohio, Centennial.
132. From the (unpub. 1935) History of Oberlin College, Prof. R. S. Fletcher, chapter IV; Oberlin Colony, W. H. Phillips, 1933, p. 53.
133. Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, II, 47, 149, 161; History of Roxbury, F. S. Drake, 1905, pp. 74, 77; Dawes Genealogy, p. 19.
134. The Islands of Boston Harbor, E. R. Snow, 1935, pp. 112, 346.
135. Burr Family, C. B. Todd, 4th ed., 1902, pp. 278-366.
136. Hoyt . . . Families, David W. Hoyt, 1871, pp. 15-23, 26-7, 31, 41-2, 60, 88; Salisbury and Amesbury Families, D. W. Hoyt, 1897-9, I, 205-6, 208.
137. Family Records.
138. Records loaned by the Misses Carrie and Mabel Wilson of Sunbury, Ohio.

# ANTROBUS



- Newburyport
- § Allegheny Co., Pa.
- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

- Licking Co., O.
- \*\* Ripon, Wis.
- ④ Mauston, Wis.
- ④ Malta, O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- † Marietta, O.
- ☆ Malden

- ① Waitsfield, Vt.
- ② Gloucester
- \* Boston
- ✕ Marlborough
- ② Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.

- ② Ipswich
- ① Woburn
- ② Lancaster
- † Charlestown
- ② Kennebec River
- ② Concord
- ② Sudbury



## ANTROBUS

**J**OAN (ARNOLD) ANTROBUS\* embarked<sup>1</sup> in the "Planter" of London, Nicholas Trerice, Master, in the early part of April, 1635, at the age of sixty-five with her daughter JOAN (ANTROBUS) LAWRENCE TUTTLE aged forty-two with that daughter's children by her deceased first husband THOMAS LAWRENCE, namely (1) Jane Lawrence who had lately married in England George<sup>1</sup> Giddings; (2) John Lawrence aged seventeen; (3) William Lawrence aged twelve; and MARIE LAWRENCE aged nine who in course of time became ancestral to us by her marriage to THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BURNHAM. With widow JOAN, Sr., there came also our JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE, mercer of St. Albans, Herts, aged thirty-nine, second husband of JOAN, Jr. and their four Tuttle children, viz., Abigail<sup>2</sup> aged six, SIMON<sup>2</sup> TUTTLE aged four, Sarah<sup>2</sup> aged two and John<sup>2</sup> aged one. Some servants accompanied them and in this vessel came also our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES and FRANCIS NEWCOMB with wife RACHEL and their two older children.<sup>1</sup>

No record of the later life of widow JOAN ANTROBUS has been found. She undoubtedly lived with the TUTTLES at Ipswich but probably did not live long for the hardships of early colonial life were severe enough to try the endurance of younger people and must have been doubly trying for older ones. We must pay her homage that she had the courage to leave her English home and life-long friends.

Thus JOAN, Jr. came on the Planter with eight children, four by her first husband THOMAS LAWRENCE, who died in England and four by JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE who accompanied her.

About 1650-1 JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE crossed the ocean again and in 1654 his wife JOAN followed him. They settled in Carrickfergus, Ireland, where JOHN<sup>1</sup> died on December 30, 1656, but JOAN, widow TUTTLE was still living in 1659.<sup>3</sup>

The known daughter of WALTER<sup>a</sup> and JOAN (ARNOLD) ANTROBUS was<sup>2</sup>

- I. JOAN<sup>2</sup>, christened at St. Albans in 1592; d., after 1659; m. 1st at St. Albans in 1609, THOMAS LAWRENCE who d. there 1624-5; m. there 2ndly about 1626-8 JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE (see Tuttle, p. 602).

The children of THOMAS and JOAN (ANTROBUS) LAWRENCE, all born and baptized at St Albans were<sup>1,2,3</sup>

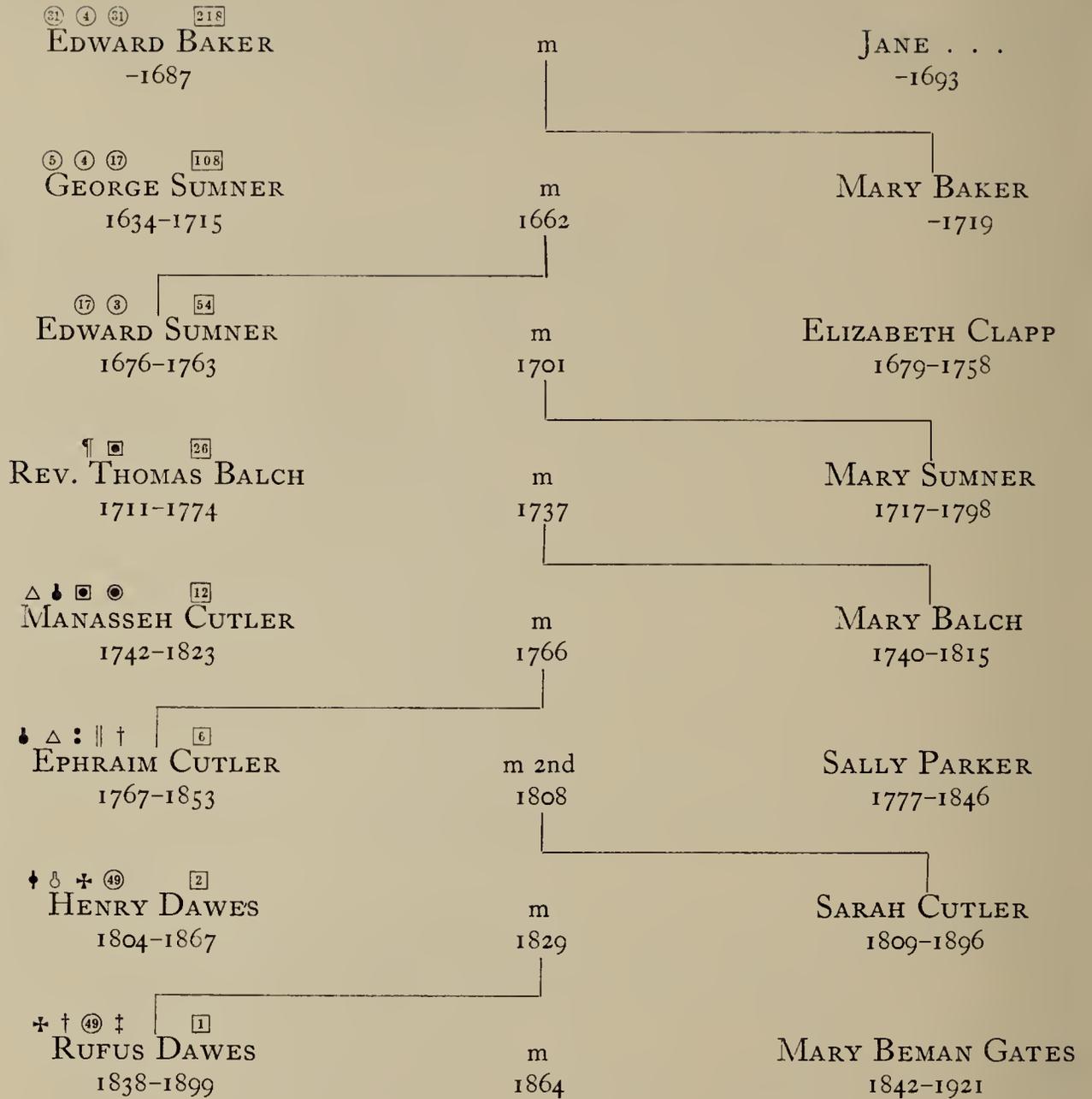
- I. Jane<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1615; d. at Ipswich<sup>5</sup> in March, 1680; m. in England by April, 1635, George<sup>1</sup> Giddings.
- II. John<sup>2</sup>, bap. 1619-20; d. 1699 on Long Island; m. etc.<sup>6</sup>
- III. William<sup>2</sup>, bap. 1622; d. 1680 on Long Island; m. twice.<sup>6</sup>
- IV. MARIE<sup>2</sup>, bap. 1625; d. at Ipswich, Mar. 27, 1715, ae 92; m. there about 1645 Lt. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BURNHAM (see Burnham, p. 129).<sup>4,5</sup>

\*JOAN ARNOLD was baptized<sup>2</sup> at St. Albans, Hertfordshire, in 1571, married in 1586-7 as his second wife WALTER<sup>a</sup> ANTROBUS of St. Albans, Warden of the Shoemaker's Company in 1588, who was buried at St. Albans in 1614.

## REFERENCES

1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 140-3.
2. Antrobus Pedigrees, "The Story of a Cheshire Family", Sir Reginald L. Antrobus, K. C. M. G., C. B., M. A., 1929, pp. 12-3, 96.
3. Tuttle Genealogy, G. F. Tuttle, 1883, pp. xxv-xxvi, xxxiv-xxxvi.
4. Burnham Family, R. H. Burnham, 1869, p. 309.
5. Vital Records of Ipswich, II, 511-2, 565.
6. Savage, III, 62-3.

# BAKER



- (31) Lynn
- (4) Northampton
- (5) Dorchester
- (17) Milton
- (3) Roxbury
- ¶ Charlestown

- Dedham
- Δ Killingly, Conn.
- ♀ Edgartown
- Hamilton
- Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ‡ Malta, O.
- (49) Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.

---



---

## BAKER

---

EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BAKER, supposed<sup>7</sup> to have been born about 1610, was resident at Lynn<sup>1</sup> by 1630. He had as wife<sup>5</sup> JOAN sometimes called<sup>1</sup> JANE, whose identity has not been learned but who was the mother of all of his children. EDWARD<sup>1</sup> was evidently an early church member for he became a freeman<sup>1,6</sup> on March 14, 1638-9 and is called<sup>2</sup> a farmer. In 1643-4 EDWARD<sup>1</sup> and thirty-four others signed a petition<sup>9</sup> to the General Court that Goody Jane Armitage might be allowed to keep an ordinary (tavern) at Lynn, and that was granted, though the license did not permit her to draw wine.

A document<sup>1,10</sup> pertaining to 1654-5 furnishes a rather puzzling situation showing that EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BAKER with Daniel Salmon was a creditor of the Braintree Iron Works, though his residence was in Lynn which also had an early Iron Works more or less in competition, friendly or otherwise, with the Braintree Works (see Newcomb, p. 459 and Ford, p. 299). An English company had been formed by the efforts of John<sup>2</sup> Winthrop to utilize<sup>11</sup> bog-iron in the colony, for the manufacture of iron utensils, and a furnace and forge was established at both Lynn and Braintree — each town claiming precedence. It would seem logical under those circumstances for a resident of Lynn to invest in the Lynn plant rather than in the remote Braintree works. This document, however, shows that these two Lynn men had started two actions at Salem Court against the Iron Works on November 28, 1654, and had gotten judgments of £27-6-5 for BAKER and £28-0-10 for Salmon of which only £10 had been paid, leaving a balance, plus charges of execution and serving, of £49-19-3 and that certain land had been seized to satisfy the judgments "(FRANCIS NUCOMS lott only excepted)."<sup>10</sup>

About 1658 EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BAKER removed with his family to help form a settlement at remote Northampton (see map, p. 618) and there received various grants of land including twenty-two acres of meadow and a four acre home lot on what became Elm Street very near to the present location of Smith College,<sup>7</sup> but in neither town is he recorded as partaking of public life. After many years residence at Northampton EDWARD<sup>1</sup> returned to Lynn accompanied by his wife JOAN and sons Edward<sup>2</sup> and Thomas<sup>2</sup> but leaving Joseph<sup>2</sup> and Timothy<sup>2</sup> at Northampton.

About the time of the BAKER migration to the west, young GEORGE<sup>2</sup> SUMNER (probably in company with HENRY<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD and others, see Sumner, p. 579) also appeared there and presently was married to the only known daughter of EDWARD<sup>1</sup>. The young people soon returned to the Dorchester-Milton vicinity, home of the SUMNER family. EDWARD<sup>1</sup> had apparently<sup>9</sup> left Northampton before January 1668-9 when his two sons who remained there and over one hundred others signed a petition\* to the General Court against imposts.

\*Among those signing were<sup>9</sup> Joseph<sup>2</sup> Leeds (RICHARD<sup>1</sup>), Preserved<sup>2</sup> Clapp (ROGER<sup>1</sup>), Joseph<sup>2</sup> and Timothy<sup>2</sup> Baker (EDWARD<sup>1</sup>) (erroneously recorded<sup>9</sup> as Batter) and JOSEPH<sup>1</sup> PARSONS, HENRY<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD, JOHN<sup>2</sup> TAYLOR (see Dawes-Gates, II).

After the return of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> to Lynn no special notice is found of his actions. He made his will<sup>2</sup> on October 16, 1685, exhorting his family to live peaceable and pious lives, and desiring "for himself a decent funeral, suitable to his rank and quality while living."<sup>2</sup> He had undoubtedly given his Northampton holdings to his sons who remained there, so his will gave his estate<sup>1</sup> to son John<sup>2</sup> of Dedham and to Edward<sup>2</sup> and Thomas<sup>2</sup> of Lynn. He was buried at Lynn<sup>2,5</sup> March 16 or 17, 1687, and his wife JOAN survived him until<sup>5</sup> April 9, 1693.

The known† children of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> and JOAN (—) BAKER, born in uncertain order, probably all at Lynn, were<sup>1,2,5</sup>

- I. MARY<sup>2</sup>, d. at Milton Apr. 1, 1719; m. at Northampton Nov. 7, 1662, GEORGE<sup>2</sup> SUMNER (see Sumner, p. 579).<sup>1,3</sup>
- II. Joseph<sup>2</sup>, residence at Northampton; killed by the Indians<sup>1</sup> Oct. 29, 1675; m. Feb. 5, 1663, Ruth Holton (William).<sup>1</sup>
- III. \*Timothy<sup>2</sup>, residence Northampton; d. Aug. 30, 1729; m. 1st. there Jan. 16, 1672, Grace<sup>2</sup> Marsh (John<sup>1</sup> of Hadley);<sup>4</sup> m. 2nd abt. 1678 Sarah (Hollister) Atherton dau.<sup>1</sup> of John and widow of Rev. Hope.
- IV. \*\*John<sup>2</sup>, prob. he of Dedham; living 1678.
- V. Edward<sup>2</sup>, residence at Lynn; m. there<sup>5</sup> Apr. 7, 1685, Mary Marshall (called<sup>1</sup> dau. of Capt. John but also called<sup>15</sup> dau. of Thomas of Reading).
- VI. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1653; was aged 77 in June 1730; m. at Lynn<sup>5</sup> July 10, 1689, Mary Lewis (perh. dau. of John).<sup>1</sup> *Edmond*

†Each of the five sons are recorded<sup>5</sup> as being born "[bef. 1658?]" which merely implies "before the removal to Northampton." Pope<sup>1</sup> adds a son Jonathan<sup>2</sup>, born Feb. 20, 1657, who may have died young.

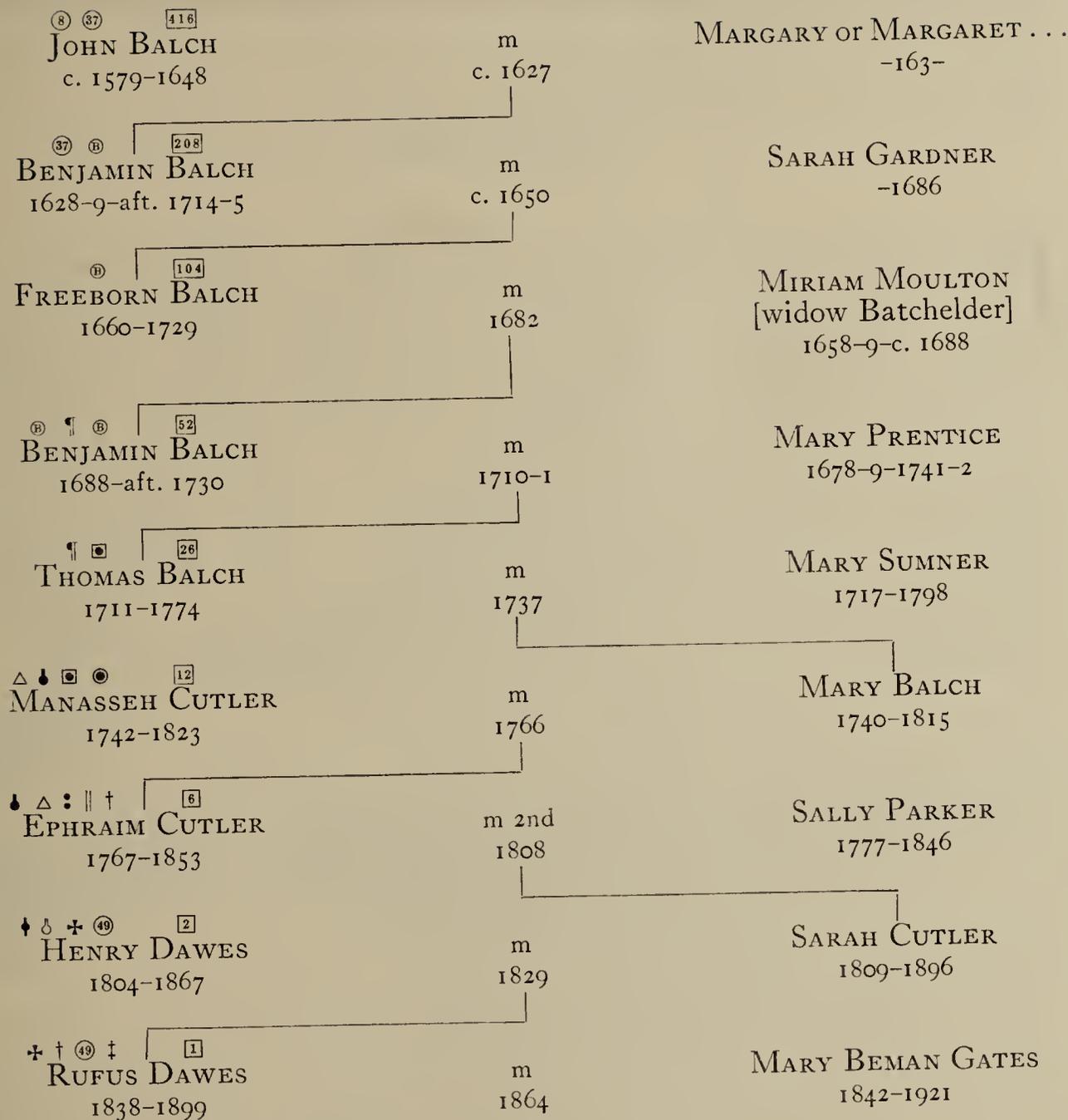
\*The third son<sup>1,8</sup> of Timothy<sup>2</sup> was Thomas<sup>2</sup> Baker, born<sup>8</sup> May 14, 1682, who was taken a captive by the Indians about 1704; who married as her second husband in 1715 Christine (or Marguerite) Otis (Richard<sup>1</sup>) who had also been made a captive at the age of three months. One of their descendants was "Long John Wentworth," mayor of Chicago. Thomas<sup>2</sup> Baker, the one-time captive, was visiting his cousin EDWARD<sup>2</sup> SUMNER of Roxbury when he suddenly died in 1753.

\*\*Perhaps it was this John<sup>2</sup> who married<sup>13</sup> at Dedham December 17, 1668, Abigail Fisher.

## REFERENCES

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Savage, I, 95, 97, 100; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, pp. 27-8.</li> <li>2. History of Lynn, A. Lewis and J. R. Newhall, 1868, pp. 116-8.</li> <li>3. Descendants of WILLIAM SUMNER, W. S. Appleton, 1879, p. 3.</li> <li>4. History and Genealogies of Hadley, L. M. Boltwood, 1863, p. 533; Marsh Genealogy . . . , D. W. Marsh, 1895, pp. 13-4.</li> <li>5. Vital Records of Lynn, I, 37-8; II, 31-2, 421.</li> <li>6. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 375.</li> <li>7. History of Northampton, J. R. Trumbull, 1898, I, 38, 145, 271, 580 and map.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>8. Ibid., I, 482-91; . . . Otis Family . . . , W. A. Otis, 1924, pp. 66-70.</li> <li>9. New England Register, IX, 88-9; XXXIII, 60-1.</li> <li>10. Suffolk Deeds (pub.), II, 266-70.</li> <li>11. Vinton Memorial, J. A. Vinton, 1858, pp. 463-73, especially 470.</li> <li>12. History of Dover, N. H., J. Scales, 1923, I, 227-32, especially 231.</li> <li>13. Vital Records of Dedham, I, 11.</li> <li>14. Vital Records of Milton, p. 244.</li> <li>15. Savage, III, 158.</li> </ol> |
|---|--|

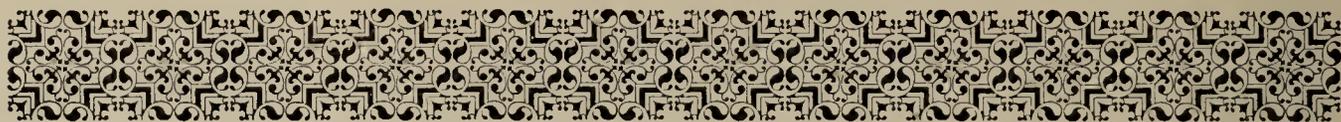
# BALCH



- (8) Cape Ann
- (37) Salem
- (8) Beverly
- (1) Charlestown
- (1) Dedham
- (1) Killingly, Conn.

- (1) Edgartown
- (1) Hamilton
- (1) Waterford, O.
- (1) Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- (1) Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

- (1) Thomaston, Me.
- (1) Morgan Co., O.
- (1) Malta, O.
- (49) Mauston, Wis.
- (1) Marietta, O.



## BALCH

**J**OHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH was definitely one of the earliest settlers of Massachusetts Bay Colony. He is *said*<sup>5</sup> to have been born about 1579 in or near Bridgewater, Somersetshire, England and to have come to America<sup>3</sup> in August or September, 1623, with Capt. Robert Gorges,<sup>5</sup> settling either with<sup>5</sup> the "Dorchester Company" sent out by the Rev. John White or,<sup>3</sup> perhaps temporarily, at Wessagusset (Weymouth) as did<sup>3</sup> Gorges. Another theory<sup>3</sup> is that JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH came in company with our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER on the "Zouch Phenix" under the supervision of the Dorchester Company and settled immediately at Cape Ann in the spring of 1624. These earliest moves must be rated more or less as guess-work, but it is a fact that JOHN<sup>1</sup> was at Cape Ann among the earliest. When discouragement came to both the settlers themselves and to the English Company backers because of the barren soil at Cape Ann and also the poor results of the fishermen that year, ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT was urged by the English Company to come from Nantasket and take over the management of the colony (see Dawes-Gates, II, p. 221). CONANT soon decided that a better location was their only salvation, searched out one and recommended to the English "Adventurers" or investors the removal of the colony to this more fertile location — Naumkeag. The Rev. John White, foremost promoter of the Cape Ann colony, wrote<sup>10</sup> to CONANT not to desert his business; faithfully promising that if himself with three others (whom he knew to be honest and prudent men) viz. JOHN WOODBURY, JOHN BALCH and Peter Palfreys, employed by the adventurers, would stay at Naumkeag [the place selected by CONANT] and give timely notice thereof, he [White] would provide a patent for them, and likewise send them whatever they should write for either men or provisions, or goods wherewith to trade with the Indians."<sup>10</sup>

So the home of JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH in 1626 changed from Cape Ann to Naumkeag which presently was re-named Salem "city of peace," and in January 1635-6 he with four other "Old Planters" \*received the grant of a farm of two hundred acres each at the head of Bass River (see map, p. 209) within what became Beverly. They soon settled on these farms at what was often called Bass River Side or Cape Ann Side and here the rest of the life of JOHN<sup>1</sup> was spent.

He had married first, perhaps in Salem, but at an unrecorded date, MARGARY or MARGARET who was the mother of his children. She joined the Salem Church<sup>4</sup> before 1636 as JOHN<sup>1</sup> had evidently done earlier for he had asked for freeman-ship<sup>4</sup> on October 19, 1630 and took the freeman's oath<sup>4,14</sup> on May 18, 1631, in company with<sup>5</sup> ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MOULTON (p. 453), ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT, HENRY<sup>1</sup> HERRICK and JOHN<sup>1</sup> WOODBURY (Dawes-Gates, II, 221, 421, and 823).

\*These five included<sup>11</sup> also our ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT and JOHN<sup>1</sup> WOODBURY (Dawes-Gates, II, 221 and 823).

MARGARET, wife of JOHN<sup>1</sup>, died in 163- and he married secondly Agnes (Annis)\* who lived until 1657.

The civil service recorded<sup>11,12</sup> of JOHN<sup>1</sup> covered acting as a trial juror in October and December 1637, September and December 1638 and July 1647; as grand juror in December 1642 and 1644; as a selectman of Salem from 1636 to 1642.

In these positions he was associated continually with our CONANT, GARDNER, MOULTON, SCRUGGS and WOODBURY ancestors.<sup>11,12</sup>



JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH HOME AT BEVERLY

On March 27, 1643, a report was made<sup>14</sup> to the General Court as to the bounds between Salem and Ipswich by a committee of eight men chosen from those towns including JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH, JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE (see p. 600) and ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT. In August 1644 JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH with WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DODGE (Dawes-Gates, II, 319) and

\*Annis is sometimes called<sup>1</sup> "Patch."

three others<sup>12</sup> witnessed against HUGH<sup>1</sup> LASKIN and his wife (Ibid., II, 527) "for hard usage of their late servant in victuals and clothes." BALCH admitted that he had "dealt with" LASKIN about clothing, "and purposed to deal further," but he also admitted that he had "not dealt brotherly with him." He claimed the boy was growing thin.<sup>12</sup>

The house JOHN<sup>1</sup> built<sup>11</sup> on his farm at the head of Bass River was at first twenty-three by sixteen with nine foot posts (see illustration on p. 71 and note p. 74). It faced southeast, had a steep roof, probably thatched and its "frame was of white oak. . . . The first change in it was made about 1645, when the posts were lengthened about four feet and new rafters were placed above the original ones, to make two stories. . . . Several subsequent additions to the structure (about 1760 and 1800) finally made it very large. . . . This is the only house of an old planter in Salem in existence, (1924) and is probably the oldest house in New England."<sup>11</sup> JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH made his will<sup>13</sup> on May 15, 1648 and it was proved on June 28 following. It specified that wife Annis should have\* "the Roome newlie built" with land, furnishings, supplies, etc. approximating one-fourth of the estate, while each of the testator's three sons should have one-fourth of household goods, crops, etc. BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> was to have one-half of the farm and was made executor of the estate with the widow. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> WOODBURY was one of the witnesses. The estate totaled over £220 but for some strange reason BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> as executor, on April 22, 1679, thirty-one years after the death of JOHN<sup>1</sup>, added five acres of meadow to the inventory<sup>13</sup> of his father's estate!

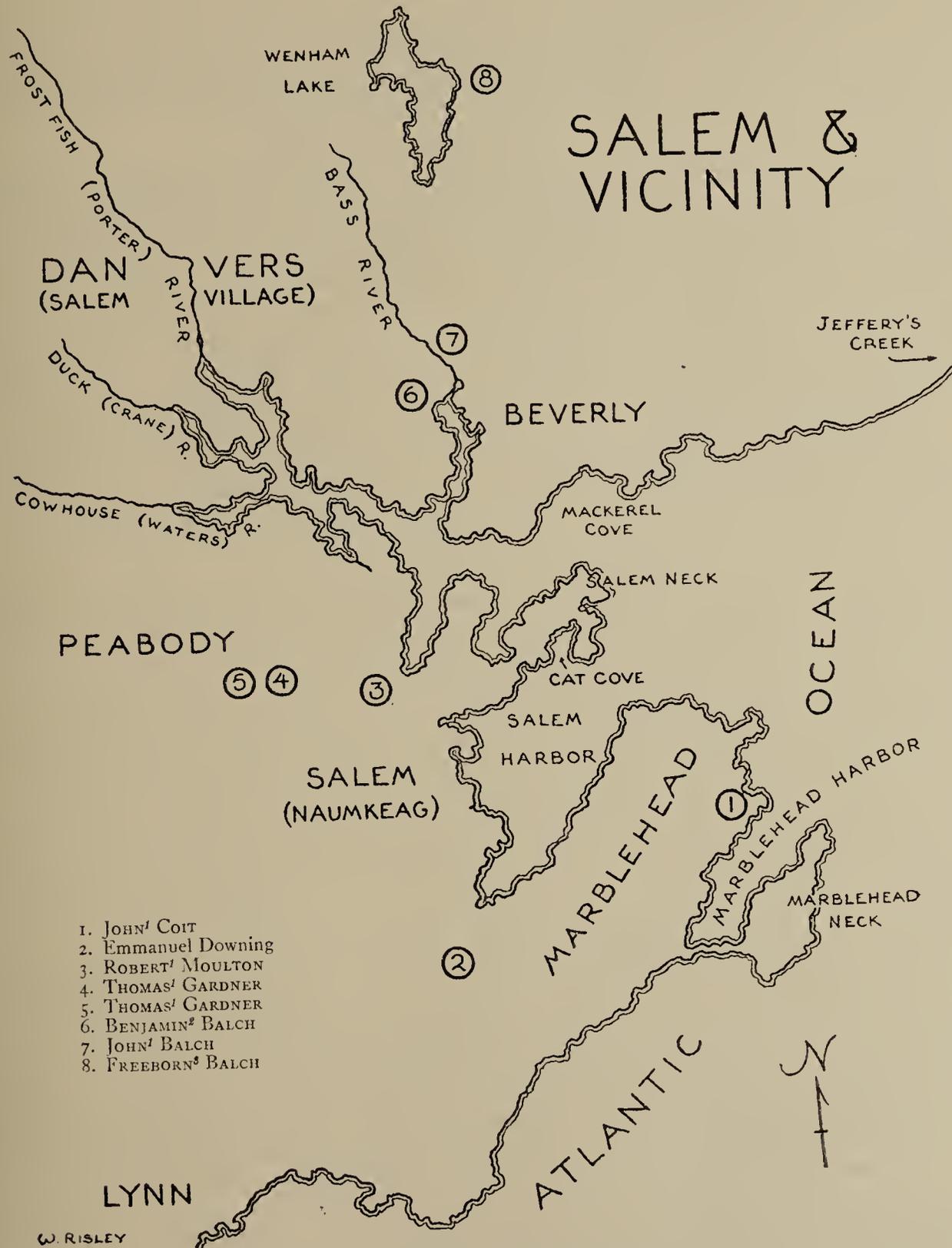
The children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and MARGARY (—) BALCH born at Salem were<sup>1,2</sup>

- i. BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup>, see following<sup>1,2,5</sup>
- ii. John<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1630; d. intestate<sup>13</sup> Jan. 16, 1662, being drowned<sup>1</sup> during a storm when ferrying between Salem and Beverly; m. MARY<sup>2</sup> CONANT (ROGER<sup>1</sup>).<sup>1</sup> She m. 2ndly<sup>7</sup> as his first wife about 1663 WILLIAM<sup>2</sup> DODGE (WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>). See Dawes-Gates, II, 228, 323.
- iii. Freeborn<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1632-4; d. abt. 1658 perhaps at sea<sup>1</sup>.

†BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> BALCH (*John<sup>1</sup>*) was born during the very severe winter of 1628-9 at Salem, and died after<sup>1</sup> January 1714-5 when he signed a deed, having then completed<sup>1</sup> his eighty-sixth year. He married first<sup>7</sup> about 1650 at Salem SARAH<sup>2</sup> GARDNER (see Gardner, p. 306) who died at Beverly<sup>7</sup> on<sup>8</sup> April 5, 1686; he married secondly there, on February 5, 1689, Abigail (Maverick)<sup>15</sup> Clarke widow of Matthew of Marblehead.<sup>2</sup> She died<sup>8</sup> at Beverly on January 1, 1690, and BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> married there thirdly<sup>3</sup> on March 15, 1691-2, Grace Mallet, by whom he had two daughters.<sup>9</sup> He lived<sup>1</sup> on the homestead at Beverly which he had inherited from his father. His father's will had provided that for seven years his three sons should share somewhat in the support of their stepmother but that subsequently BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> "shall doe all himselfe." It developed that Annis was sick for a couple of years before her death in 1657 and was a great care and expense<sup>13</sup> to BENJAMIN and his wife SARAH. She left a will which for some reason was called "illegal" by the Probate Court, which body appointed BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> as her administrator and gave him her entire estate which only amounted to a little over £18 to apply on her

\*The will provided bountifully for wife Annis and gave her two cows named <sup>13</sup> "Reddie" and "Cherie."

†It is both claimed<sup>1</sup> and disclaimed that BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> BALCH was the first male child born in Salem or in the Bay Colony indeed. Other claimants for this distinction were Roger<sup>2</sup> Conant (ROGER<sup>1</sup>) and perhaps also John Massey<sup>1</sup> though such a claim for Massey is negligible.



W. RISLEY

ANCESTRAL LOCATIONS

debts and expenses. The inventory of her estate was taken by HENRY<sup>1</sup> HERRICK and JOHN<sup>1</sup> RAYMOND. BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> submitted a bill for £15-12 for attendance upon her for two years, and seven neighbors testified that they had known Annis for more than the two years of her sickness and that all she left would not pay BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> and SARAH "for their trouble, labor and charge."<sup>13</sup>

As has been stated, JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH had planned that BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> should possess, in addition to his own one-fourth, the quarter part of the homestead left to widow Annis who died in 1657; the death in 1658 of Freeborn<sup>2</sup> opened the way<sup>1</sup> for BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> to acquire the one-fourth share he had held, and the death in 1661-2 of John<sup>2</sup>, brought court action which eventually enabled BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> to acquire his share also and, thereby, the undivided<sup>1</sup> two hundred acre BALCH farm at the head of Bass River. When John<sup>2</sup> died intestate his widow †MARY was named his administratrix, in her own behalf and for her infant daughter. That daughter soon died and the court then ruled that for seven years the widow should hold the estate, after which the lands should pass to BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup>, especially since she had married secondly about 1663 WILLIAM<sup>2</sup> DODGE. These two men BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> BALCH and WILLIAM<sup>2</sup> DODGE went to court<sup>12</sup> in 1680 about this property but came to an agreement in March, 1682, as to the division of the property left by John<sup>2</sup> Balch and of the payment of his debts.

The independence of BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> from the rigid puritanical conduct of his time appears in several instances, for he once gave a night's lodging and entertainment to a stranger on foot, and was arrested and fined for it.<sup>1</sup> And he left the baptism of his children until April 10, 1670, when most of them were old enough to speak their own choice.<sup>1</sup> The church record then shows, by her son's testimony, that wife SARAH (GARDNER) BALCH was a member of the church, but not until January 7, 1693-4 was BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> admitted to full communion.<sup>22</sup> The record of the mass baptism of their ten oldest children adds: "The eldest of these viz Samuell, did not only claime a covenant interest by his mother's late Covenant engagement w<sup>th</sup> God & before his Church in her admission to it; But did desier to be owned as under ye covenant of grace, under ye watch of ye Church & to be baptized upon his personall profession of faith & repentance . . . Benjamin allso & John & Joseph . . ." <sup>22</sup> expressed a similar desire.

BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> served as constable<sup>12</sup> in 1661, frequently served on trial juries and was a witness to the will of ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT in 1677. He made a deposition<sup>5</sup> in April, 1706, that he was then about seventy-seven. Before his third marriage BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> had deeded a part of his farm to his three living sons, Samuel<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>3</sup> and FREEBORN<sup>3</sup>. It is \*claimed<sup>1</sup> that his third wife probably died about 1703-4 for in the latter year he \*\*deeded<sup>2,5</sup> his home property (the remaining part of the family homestead) to his grandson Benjamin<sup>4</sup> (Samuel<sup>3</sup>) under the consideration<sup>1</sup> of personal maintenance. Having disposed of most of his property during his life, he left no will and indeed the exact date of his death is unknown, but it was

†Born CONANT, she married secondly our WILLIAM<sup>2</sup> DODGE.

\*There is evidence<sup>22</sup> to the contrary for on August 3, 1707, the Record of the First Church of Beverly contains an item that on that date the wife of "BENJAMIN BALCH senior" was admitted into full communion.<sup>22</sup>

\*\*It is most interesting to know<sup>28</sup> that the home built by JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH, though altered greatly, is still standing. The successive ownerships from Benjamin<sup>4</sup> above are recorded through various generations of descendants, to Addie F. Dodge (Mrs. Charles H. Herrick) who on June 8, 1916, transferred the title to a group of six trustees (all Balch descendants) "for the preservation of the ancient house."<sup>28</sup> There must, however, have been other houses built on the original farm since BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> shared the farm with three sons.

subsequent to January 31, 1714-5, when his last known deed was signed and when he would have completed<sup>1</sup> his eighty-sixth year.

The children of †BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> and SARAH (GARDNER) BALCH, all born in Salem and the first ten baptized on April 10, 1670, were<sup>1,2,5,7,9,22</sup>

- I. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, b. May, 1651; d. at Beverly as Deacon Oct. 14, 1723, ae<sup>8</sup> abt. 72y. 5m.; m. there Oct. 27, 1675\*, Martha Newmarch [John and Martha (Gould) of Ipswich].<sup>1</sup> He probably m.<sup>2</sup> 2ndly<sup>8</sup> at Beverly Nov. 23, 1721, Mrs. Martha Butman.
- II. Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1653; d. at Beverly in the spring of 1698; m. Oct. 11, 1674, Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> Woodbury (John<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).
- III. John<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1654; d. at Beverly Nov. 19, 1738 ae<sup>8</sup> abt. 84; m. there Dec. 23, 1674, Hannah<sup>3</sup> Veren (Philip<sup>2</sup>, Philip<sup>1</sup>).<sup>1</sup>
- IV. Joseph<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1658; slain Sept. 18, 1675, in King Philip's War at Bloody Brook.<sup>1</sup>
- V. FREEBORN<sup>3</sup>, see following.
- VI. Sarah<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1661; d. bef. 1717; m. at Beverly Dec. 20 or<sup>8</sup> 29, 1680, to James Patch (James).
- VII. Abigail<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1663; d. at Beverly Apr. 30, 1706, ae<sup>8</sup> abt. 43; m. there<sup>8</sup> Feb. 8, 1680-1, Cornelius Larcum.
- VIII. Ruth<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1665; d. aft. Oct. 1731; m. Mar. 31, 1653, Joseph<sup>2</sup> Drinker (Philip<sup>1</sup>).<sup>1</sup>
- IX. Mary<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1667; d. at Beverly<sup>8</sup> Mar. 12, 1737; m. there Mar. 26, 1689, Nathaniel Stone (Nathaniel).
- X. Jonathan<sup>3</sup>, bap. Apr. 10, 1670; prob. d. yng.<sup>1</sup>
- XI. David<sup>3</sup>, b. July 9, 1671; d.<sup>1,8</sup> unm. at Beverly<sup>8</sup> Apr. 7 or 17, 1690.

FREEBORN<sup>3</sup> BALCH (*Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>*) was born at Beverly on August 9, 1660, and died near Wenham<sup>17</sup> on June 11 or<sup>1</sup> 12 or<sup>8</sup> 13, 1729, in his seventieth year. He married first\*\* in the late autumn of 1682 MIRIAM (MOULTON) Batchelder (see Moulton, p. 456) who probably<sup>1</sup> died in 1688. FREEBORN<sup>3</sup> married secondly<sup>8</sup> on February 20, 1688-9, Mallis (—) who evidently soon died and he married thirdly at Beverly on April 30, 1690, Elizabeth Fairfield (Walter) who bore him seven children<sup>1</sup> and survived him. It has been stated that BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup>, before his third marriage, deeded portions of the Bass River farm to FREEBORN<sup>3</sup> and his two living brothers. The portion acquired by FREEBORN<sup>3</sup> was in North Beverly on the east shore of Wenham Lake (see map, p. 73) and there he farmed successfully and raised the finest apple orchard in the county.<sup>1</sup>

Before 1710 FREEBORN<sup>3</sup> had added to his holdings certain land in Wenham which had earlier belonged to THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SCRUGGS (Dawes-Gates, II, 721). On March 6, 1709-10 the selectmen of Wenham laid out<sup>24</sup> a road eighteen feet wide to the land of BALCH. Something seems to have been unsatisfactory to FREEBORN<sup>3</sup> for on March 4, 1711-2, at a town meeting a vote was taken that a committee be appointed "to divide the land of FREEBORN BALCH and the circumstances conserving a highway to said BALCHES land in our town and make a report to the town at their next meeting." At a selectmen's meeting on September 5, 1712, a report was made of the laying out of this highway twenty feet wide. It would seem that FREEBORN<sup>3</sup> was certainly hard to please for by a selectman's record of December 16, 1713, a committee was appointed once again with the notation "said BALCH not being contented with the highway allready laid out." On Decem-

†The daughters by his third wife, Grace, were<sup>8</sup> Deborah<sup>3</sup> born June 6, 1693, and Lydia<sup>3</sup> born August 28, 1695.

\*She was sometimes called<sup>9</sup> Mary and sometimes<sup>16</sup> Sarah Newmarch but at the recorded baptism of their ten children she was uniformly recorded<sup>22</sup> as Martha.

\*\*Their marriage must have been subsequent to November 13, 1682, when she signed as a witness using<sup>1</sup> the name "MIRIAM Bachelder," but it must have followed that date closely for their first child was born on August 2, 1683.

ber 28 this last committee made its report suggesting somewhat of impatience with FREEBORN<sup>s</sup> and concluding with the following injunction:

“. . . which highway is for said BALCH and those that shall succeed him in that living or parcell of land which the way leadeth to . . . and at all times forever allways provided that said BALCH do make due recompense and satisfaction for said way unto the propritors of the land over which highway layeth so that he discharge the town of Wenham from any further care cost or trouble or charge in what nature soever said BALCH having the liberty of mending said way as occasion may be to make it convenient and hath liberty of passing through gates or bars.”

As has been stated FREEBORN<sup>s</sup> BALCH was baptized at the Beverly First Church with nine brothers and sisters on April 10, 1670, when he would have been nearly ten years old. He evidently joined the church subsequently and December 21, 1684, his wife MIRIAM was baptized<sup>22</sup> and became\* a member in full communion. On May 17, 1685, she had her two Batchelder children by her first husband baptized and she and FREEBORN<sup>s</sup> had their eldest child baptized.<sup>22</sup> Subsequently their two younger children were baptized there.

The death of FREEBORN<sup>s</sup> is believed to have been quite sudden “for his long will was drawn up and signed the day that he died” and his “grave stone stands on a hill in the cemetery near Wenham Lake with those of his mother-in-law, Sarah Fairfield and his two children [by his third wife] Skipper and Sarah.”<sup>1</sup> He is said<sup>1</sup> to have willed his six acre orchard, cider mill and cider house to his youngest son William<sup>4</sup> [by his third wife] yet he must have given a share thereof to his older sons Freeborn<sup>4</sup> and BENJAMIN<sup>4</sup> for on March 3, 1730-1, BENJAMIN<sup>4</sup>, with MARY his wife, deeded to John Conant “his part of the house, barn, cyder mill, &c., ‘according to y<sup>e</sup> division made with my brother, Freeborn Balch, of the estate of our father, FREEBORN, deceased.’ ”<sup>1</sup>

The children of \*\*FREEBORN<sup>s</sup> and MIRIAM (MOULTON) BALCH, all born<sup>1,2,8</sup> in Beverly and baptized in the first church there<sup>22</sup> were

- i. Miriam<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 2, 1683, bap. May 17, 1685; d. at Wenham<sup>17</sup> July 24, 1743; m. 1st there<sup>17</sup> Feb. 22, 1704-5, Richard<sup>4</sup> Fowler (Joseph<sup>s</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, Philip<sup>1</sup>);<sup>20</sup> m. 2nd there<sup>17</sup> (int. Nov. 1719) Ezekiel Day of Nutfield.
- ii. Freeborn<sup>4</sup>, b. Nov. 25, 1685, bap. June 27, 1686; d. at Beverly<sup>17</sup> Mar. 1770 aged 85; m. 1st in Boston June 19, 1712, Susanna Woliston; m. 2nd at Ipswich Jan. 23 or Mar. 4, 1736-7, Mary Hubbard; m. 3rd at Beverly Nov. 5, 1753, Mrs. Sarah Dodge.
- iii. BENJAMIN<sup>4</sup>, see following.

BENHAMIN<sup>4</sup> BALCH (*Freeborn<sup>s</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>*) was born in Beverly<sup>8</sup> on April 17 and baptized July 29, 1688; he died after March, 1730-1 having married in Cambridge<sup>17,19</sup> January 4, 1710-1, MARY<sup>s</sup> PRENTICE (see Prentice, p. 508). BENJAMIN<sup>4</sup> was a blacksmith and lived at Charlestown† until after his father's death when he returned to the northern part of Beverly and occupied the house

\*The record inconsistently says<sup>22</sup> she was baptized on December 21, 1684, and was admitted to full communion on December 4, which seems unlikely.

\*\*FREEBORN<sup>s</sup> had seven children by his third wife between July, 1692, and June, 1707, of whom five married — four of them daughters (see Balch Genealogy).<sup>1</sup>

†It is suggested<sup>2</sup> that he may have lived temporarily at Cambridge, the home of his wife's family. There is a slight justification for such a thought in the fact that following his marriage at Cambridge in 1710-1 and the baptism of his daughter there in June 1714, an item is found<sup>21</sup> that his wife MARY (PRENTICE BALCH) “was notified when she came to town January 3, 1714-5” which suggests that MARY was then newly arrived and her husband, BENJAMIN, newly returned to Charlestown. That theory is not consistent, however, for our THOMAS<sup>s</sup> is recorded as having been born there in 1711. The above “notification” or “warning out” was in many cases entirely a form (see Kendall, p. 383-4).

built by his father near the Wenham line, "with his brother"<sup>21</sup> Freeborn<sup>4</sup> who was at that time a widower. This was evidently only a temporary plan for a deed was made on March 3, 1730-1, whereby BENJAMIN<sup>4</sup> BALCH and MARY his wife sold to John Conant for £143, his part of the house, barn, cyder mill, &c "according to y<sup>e</sup> division made with my brother, Freeborn Balch, of the estate of our father, FREEBORN, deceased."<sup>21</sup>

Neither a will nor a death date of BENJAMIN<sup>4</sup> has been found though some times<sup>1</sup> he has erroneously been assigned the exact death date of his own wife. It seems probable that he survived her from the wording on her gravestone for she was buried in the old Cambridge Cemetery opposite the College and her gravestone is inscribed<sup>1</sup>

"Here lyes Buried y<sup>e</sup> Body of Mrs. MARY BALCH, wife to Mr. BENJAMIN BALCH, who Departed this life Jan. 28, Anno Dom., 1741-2 in the 64th year of her age."

The only known children of BENJAMIN<sup>4</sup> and MARY (PRENTICE) BALCH, both supposedly born in Charlestown, were<sup>1,21</sup>

- I. THOMAS<sup>5</sup>, see following.
- II. Mary<sup>5</sup>, b. June 4, bap. at Cambridge<sup>17</sup> Dec. 5, 1714; d. in New Ipswich, N. H. Apr. 29, 1782; m. in Cambridge Apr. 19, 1738, Isaac Brown called of Waltham.

\*THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH (*Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Freeborn<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>*) was born in Charlestown<sup>21</sup> October 17, baptized 21, 1711, and died at South Dedham, now Norwood, January 8, 1774, having married<sup>31</sup> at Roxbury October 11, 1737, MARY<sup>4</sup> SUMNER who survived him until March 31, 1798, having been twenty-four years his widow<sup>18</sup> (see Sumner, p. 588). He graduated at Harvard in 1733 then\*\* studied theology and was ordained at South Dedham June 3, 1736, one week after the church there was organized.

The South Precinct had voted in January, 1735, to build a Meeting House on a tract of about one-half acre donated<sup>34</sup> by Ebenezer Dean (see illustration, p. 81)<sup>41</sup> and after its completion asked the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> to become their first pastor. He accepted the call which offered him<sup>34</sup> an annual salary of £120 and sixteen cords of wood as long as he served them. June 3 or 23, 1736, was set aside as a day of fasting and prayer preparatory to his ordination on June 30. The Rev. Samuel<sup>4</sup> Dexter, son-in-law of our SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> MEARS (see Mears, p. 435) pastor at Dedham then, assisted at the ordination of the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH in this outlying section. The church had voted £20 to meet the expense of the ordination.<sup>32</sup> The Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> had bought of Ebenezer Dean, for his own home, the remaining portion of a five acre tract,<sup>41</sup> adjoining and partially surrounding the meeting house site (see illustration, p. 81). In 1741 he received<sup>35</sup> the degree of Master of Arts from Yale.

During the pending war between England and France the General Court under

\*THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH would appear to have been an excellent scholar for as early<sup>43</sup> as March 1726-7 he was one of five youths chosen "to be Instructed for the current year gratis in Grammar Learning in Cambridge School by M<sup>r</sup> Samuel Danforth [this was Samuel<sup>4</sup> Danforth (John<sup>3</sup>, Rev. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>)<sup>43</sup>] Schoolmaster of sd Town." This was on the nomination of the Harvard Corporation at the request of the Trustees of Mr. Hopkins' Legacy, and financed by the latter. After his matriculation at Harvard that college granted to him<sup>43</sup> on April 11, 1732, the six pound yearly income from Mrs. Mills Donation for that year, and on May 11, 1732, "BAULCH" won a prize of £3 at Harvard.

\*\*In 1734, the year following his graduation, THOMAS<sup>5</sup> taught a term<sup>40</sup> at the famous "Roxbury Free School" as did also his son Benjamin<sup>6</sup> after his graduation from Harvard (see Sumner, p. 587).

Gov. Shirley's influence approved<sup>32</sup> of an expedition against Louisburg on the Island of Cape Breton under command of Col. William Pepperell of Kittery (now Maine). In 1744 Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> was appointed by the Committee of War to accompany this expedition as Chaplain as he recorded on the fly leaf of the first volume of Church Records of the South Parish (see illustration below).<sup>41</sup> His son\* the Rev.

Having an Inclination and being desired by the Committee of War to attend the Army as one of the Chaplains, in the Expedition against Cape Breton, accordingly obtained the Consent of my People on March 11. 1744. and on the 13.<sup>th</sup> took my leave of my Family and People, Arrived in Safety & Health at Canoe on the 2.<sup>d</sup> of April - Sailed from Canoe to Cape Breton on April 29.<sup>th</sup> entered into Chapscaurouze Bay the next morning, and soon after went on Shoar. The Siege of Louisbourg continued until June 17.<sup>th</sup> On which Day we ventured and took possession of that Strong & important place, upon Terms of Capitulation. Sailed from Louisbourg for New-England July 11.<sup>th</sup> arrived in Safety at Boston on the 27.<sup>th</sup> of 12 Months 1745 - Saus Beo.

RECORD OF REV. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH IN HIS OWN HAND

Benjamin<sup>6</sup> Balch later of Barrington, New Hampshire, acted as a chaplain in Paul Jones' squadron<sup>35</sup> of our small navy during the Revolution. Ebenezer<sup>4</sup> Sumner, brother-in-law<sup>18</sup> of the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> was a lieutenant at Louisburg and died at Dedham<sup>32</sup> in November, 1745, for though the expedition was a military success and Louisburg capitulated, the victory was at a fearful cost of life. The Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> had bade farewell to his parish and family<sup>32</sup> on March 13, 1744-5, and the body of troops reached Boston on their return from the north on July 27, 1745, covering about a four month absence. In 1747 the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> preached the ordination sermon at Edgartown for the Rev. John Newman who had married Hannah<sup>4</sup> Sumner, his sister-in-law (see Sumner, p. 588).

\*The military service of this family was one hundred percent complete, for it is recorded above for Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> and for his son Benjamin<sup>6</sup>; while his eldest son Thomas<sup>9</sup> died at the age of eighteen in 1756 at Albany following service at Crown Point and his only other, and youngest son, also Thomas<sup>9</sup>, died at Halifax of disease at the age of nineteen while a prisoner of war during the Revolution.<sup>32</sup>

In April, 1763, the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company invited<sup>35</sup> the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH to preach their annual Artillery Election Sermon on June 6, 1763. He accepted, and the description of this annual event shows that the Company "appeared under arms." The sermon was preached "at the Old Brick Meeting House, where his Excellency the Governor, the members of his Majesty's Council and House of Representatives, with a number of other gentlemen attended; after which they proceeded to Faneuil Hall, where an elegant dinner\* was provided"; in the afternoon the officers for the ensuing year were chosen\*\* and a vote of thanks taken for the sermon preached by the Rev. Mr. BALCH. The Company had three hundred copies of the sermon† printed.<sup>35</sup>

During the pastorate of the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> the town voted in 1762 to<sup>32</sup> build a new meeting house and a committee of twelve was named to decide on a suitable place. As so often happened in such cases, agreement seemed impossible, until in 1768 "a union of sentiment was secured" and the following significant summary was recorded:

"It is not only a disgrace to this Parish, but a reproach to the Christian Religion, to suffer the house of public worship to lie in so ruinous a condition; besides, unless we come into measures soon to build one, public worship must soon be laid aside amongst us for want of a place to meet in, as the old meeting-house cannot stand long in its present ruinous condition. We all readily grant that a better meeting-house is wanted, and efforts have been made to come into peaceable methods so as to build one; but they have proved ineffectual on account of differing sentiments as to the place on which to build it. However, we would not altogether give over the matter, being persuaded that a little moderation, candor, and condescension would so compromise things as that so good and necessary a work might go on. We, therefore, the subscribers, inhabitants on the northerly side of Neponset River, will, and do, hereby agree that a meeting-house should be erected on the land of the heirs of Benjamin Fuller, deceased, at the head of Penniman's Lane, so called, as near the corner of his orchard as the land will allow, if our brethren and friends on the southerly side of said river will meet us there; and we can go on united in love and peace, and we desire that a meeting may be called to see if such a union may be effected." This invitation was signed by thirty members of the parish, and received the following response from fifteen members: "We who live on the southerly side of said river agree thereto."

In June, 1769, they were ready to raise the frame and the committee was directed to "provide a dinner, and sufficient drink for the men that did the work." In January, 1770, they voted to sell<sup>32</sup> the old meeting house at auction reserving the right to use it until October 1. On March, 12 (1771?) at a disposal of the pews of the new church a very reasonable plan was made "to set the highest pew at five pounds, lawful money, and then to abate one shilling and four pence on every several choice, falling one shilling and four pence upon every pew till the whole were sold; and that he that was highest on the rate should have his first choice, and

\*The Company had previously voted<sup>35</sup> £24 toward the cost of this banquet and had voted that cheese be added to what had been the bill of fare of the previous year. The habit was for each person attending to pay a per capita of the excess cost, beyond the sum set aside by the Company.<sup>35</sup>

\*\*At this election Josiah Waters (1721-1784) was chosen lieutenant. In 1743 he had married<sup>35</sup> Abigail<sup>4</sup> Dawes (THOMAS<sup>5</sup>) sister of our WILLIAM<sup>4</sup>.

†Some excerpts<sup>32</sup> from his Artillery Sermon seem amazingly prophetic nearly a hundred and sixty years later. "War must be managed with a view to peace. So a time of peace must be improved to prepare for war." "Have we not seen the importance of well disciplined troops in the late war?" "Well-accomplished and skillful soldiers will be more than ever necessary for us in the future." "The time may come even in our days, such is the instability of human affairs, when those who envy our growing greatness may form deep plots against us, and endeavor to put them in execution by the point of the sword." "Is it not wisdom to cherish a martial spirit, and in time of peace prepare for war?"<sup>32</sup>

that every one should have his choice according to the tax he paid."<sup>32</sup> This plan would avoid the hurt feelings that often had attended the "seating of the meeting house".

In 1771 the deacons still read the hymns line by line and in the call for a precinct meeting one of the matters to be considered was "To see if the Precinct will cause the practice of reading the Psalms in the Public Worship by the Deacons to be discontinued, and will vote to provide books for themselves that so that part of Divine service may be performed in a more manly and rational manner for the future. Dismissed from the warrant by vote!" And "To see if the Parish would have Bangor sung as it hath hitherto been" "by continuing the bass." "Passed in the affirmative."

During the ministry of the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH "many collections were made for persons on account of losses by fire and for their sufferings from poverty and sickness. A considerable amount was contributed for the poor Acadians,\* who were forced from their homes by royal mandate"<sup>34</sup> "procured through the influence of Governor Shirley. Some, over one thousand, were brought to Boston, and the other seven thousand or more scattered from Massachusetts to Georgia."<sup>32</sup> One collection was made in the South Dedham Church to assist in the completion of an unfinished Congregational Meeting House<sup>32</sup> on Tower Hill in South Kingston (Rhode Island).

The Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> took a deep interest<sup>32</sup> in the young people of his parish and gave a series of lectures especially for them. These were so well accepted that by request he repeated them in Roxbury and in Charlestown.<sup>32</sup> For some unknown reason the second parish of Dedham was called<sup>34</sup> "Tiot" presumably a name of Indian origin though students of the Indian dialects are unable to give its source. Other odd local names were<sup>32</sup> "Purgatory Hole" and the "Clapboard-tree" neighborhood. As did many of the ministers of the early days, the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> taught privately a number of young men who came to him either in preparation for a college course or to specialize in theology. In the case of his son-in-law, our MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER, the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> taught an intensive course in theology during a period of almost two years, 1769-71, with the CUTLER family making their home in the commodious BALCH residence\*\* (see plate XI, p. 81).

It has been written of the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> (see plate X, p. 80)<sup>42</sup> that he was "one of the principal literati of New England"; that he was "high in the affection and confidence of his Church and Society;" that "He was a man of more than ordinary talents and intellectual attainment and of thoroughly orthodox faith. As a minister, he was wise to win souls to Christ and ranked high as a preacher."†

We have testimony<sup>32</sup> as to his character from the Rev. Jason Haven of the First

\*We are told <sup>36,37,38,39</sup> that in order to vacate the territory for the use of English colonists, as early as 1747 the deportation of the entire body of Acadians from Nova Scotia had been decided upon by King George II; that Colonial Governor William Shirley of Massachusetts was one of the main instigators of the infamous scheme and that Charles Laurence, Lt. Gov. of Nova Scotia, was one of the chief instruments. That without warning, beginning in June, 1755, two thousand of Shirley's troops acting with one thousand British troops caused the enforced embarkation of perhaps sixteen thousand Acadians for exile. They were loaded onto boats as though they were prisoners and were dumped unceremoniously at the various settlements along the Atlantic coast (except where they were refused, as in Virginia). Many of them died of exposure, disease, poverty or grief, and praise be to the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH that he led his church to befriend them.

\*\*This house, standing on the tract purchased of Ebenezer Dean in 1735-6 was built probably before 1740 and was continuously occupied until the beginning of the twentieth century when it was removed to another part of town.

†A note book containing nearly two hundred pages of sermons in the hand of the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup>, is in the possession of his great, great, great grandson Gen. C. G. Dawes. Each page has been protected by transparent silk, the book itself has been exquisitely bound and it is placed with the MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER Collection of Manuscript (see Cutler, p. 218).



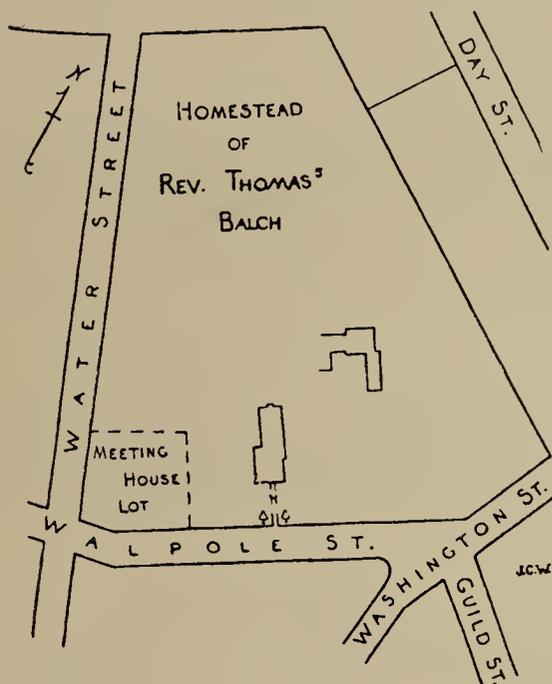
Reverend THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH

*Courtesy of Norwood Historical Society*



Home of Reverend THOMAS<sup>s</sup> BALCH in the second Parish of Dedham  
(now Norwood), built probably before 1740.

Parish in Dedham (see chart under Smith, p. 550) who succeeded<sup>33</sup> the Rev. Samuel<sup>4</sup> Dexter there (see Mears, p. 435). At the Haven ordination ceremony in 1756 the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> gave to him the "right hand of fellowship"; and in 1796, forty



PLACEMENT OF THE HOME OCCUPIED AND  
THE CHURCH SERVED IN SOUTH DEDHAM BY  
THE REV. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH

years later (and twenty-two years after the death of Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup>) the Rev. Haven commented on his vivid recollection of the "profusion of Christian friendship and brotherly love" expressed toward himself at his ordination and "towards his brethren in the gospel ministry in general" which the Rev. BALCH "continued to exemplify while his valuable life was spared."<sup>32</sup> He preached the sermon at the ordination of his son-in-law the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER.

The Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH died in his home in what is now Norwood on Saturday forenoon January 8, 1774, at the age of sixty-two years, two months and eleven days in the thirty-eighth year of his ministry, leaving a widow and seven children. "The parish buried him in a very honorable manner."<sup>33</sup> For his funeral eight ministers were appointed as pall-bearers with four underbearers or porters. He was carried from his own house to the meeting house. Moreover they voted<sup>32</sup> the sum of £73-8-6 toward paying his funeral expenses. His widow MARY who survived him twenty-four years was spoken of as "an amiable, accomplished and pious woman, highly esteemed by all of her acquaintances."

In April, 1776, the church voted to extend a call to the Rev. Jabez Chickering\* who accepted it and a year later became the husband of Hannah<sup>6</sup> of this Balch

\*The church offered the Rev. Jabez Chickering £200 for his settlement, a salary of £66-13-4 in addition to fifteen cords of wood and the use of the church meadow.<sup>32</sup> On his acceptance they voted £40 to pay the expense of his ordination.

family and in their home the widow MARY (SUMNER) BALCH resided until her death in 1798.

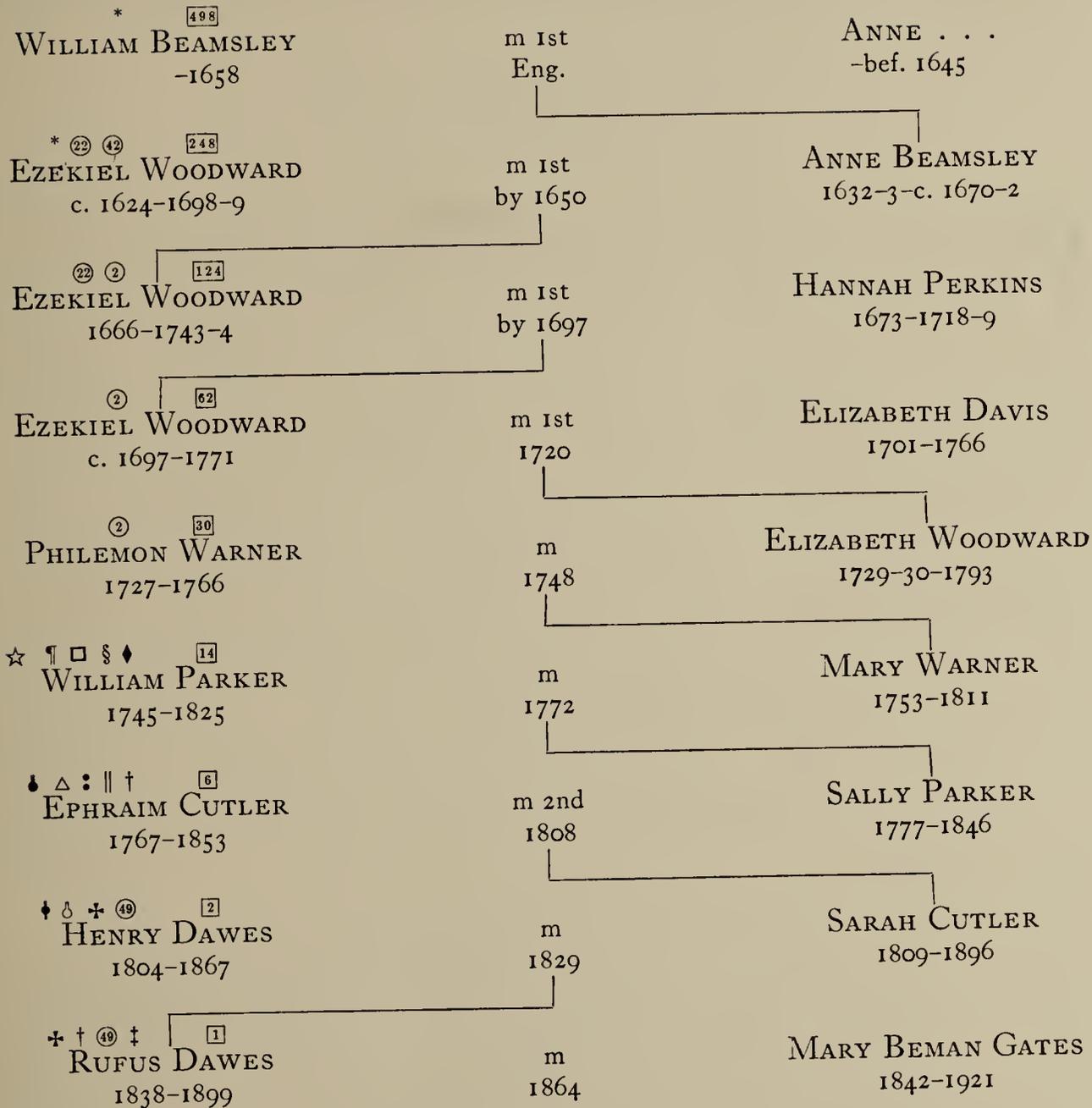
The children of Rev. THOMAS<sup>6</sup> and MARY (SUMNER) BALCH, all born in South Dedham, were<sup>1,2,15,30</sup>

- i. Thomas<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 31, 1738; d. unm. Sept. 1 or 29, 1756, aged 18 at Albany, N. Y. from service at Crown Point.
- ii. MARY<sup>6</sup>, b. Nov. 16, 1740; d. at Hamilton Nov. 3, 1815, ae 75; she was married by her father at South Dedham<sup>1,25</sup> on Oct. 8, 1766, to the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>6</sup> CUTLER (see Cutler, p. 211).
- iii. Benjamin<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 12, 1743; at Barrington, N. H. May 4, 1815 or 1816, ae 73; m. 1764 Joanna O'Brien. He graduated at Harvard in 1763 and became a minister but served also in the Revolution.
- iv. Elizabeth<sup>6</sup>, b. Sept. 2, 1746; d. at South Dedham Sept. 15, 1820 ae 74; m. there May 8, 1766, Jonathan Dean.
- v. Lucy<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 10, 1748-9; d. Mar. 17, 1776, ae 28; m. Nov. 24, 1774, Rev. Moses Everett of Dorchester.
- vi. Irene<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 6, 1753; d. July, 1815, ae 62; m. Dec. 10, 1797, Dr. Elijah Hewins of Sharon.
- vii. Hannah<sup>6</sup>, b. Dec. 16, 1755; d. at Dedham Apr. 17, 1839, ae 83; m. there Apr. 22, 1777 Rev. Jabez<sup>7</sup> Chickering (Joseph<sup>6</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>6</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>4</sup>, Simon<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Stephen<sup>1</sup>).<sup>27</sup>
- viii. Thomas<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 21, 1761; was a soldier in the Revolution and d. unm. in 1781 in Halifax, N. S. as a prisoner of war.

#### REFERENCES

1. Genealogy of the Balch Families, G. B. Balch, 1897, pp. 1-19, 32, 51-2, 85-90; New England Register, IX, 234-8.
2. Essex Antiquarian, VI, 1-5, 8, 12.
3. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 56-8; The Massachusetts Bay Company and its Predecessors, F. Rose-Troup, 1930, pp. 13, 46, 48-9.
4. Savage, I, p. 101; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 29.
5. History of Salem, S. Perley, 1924, I, 83-4; 254, 339.
6. The Massachusetts Bay Company and its Predecessors, Frances Rose-Troup, 1930, pp. 13, 46, 48-9; John White . . . The Founder of Massachusetts . . . Frances Rose-Troup, 1930, pp. 91-2, 96, 103, 119; Chronicles of the First Planters . . . A. Young, 1846, pp. 26, 144; History of Beverly, E. M. Stone, 1843, pp. 23-4; Genealogical Register of the First Settlers of New England, J. Farmer, 1829, p. 23.
7. THOMAS GARDNER and his Descendants, F. A. Gardner, 1907, p. 20; Dodge Genealogy, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 18.
8. Vital Records of Beverly, I, 33-4; II, 27-8, 371-2, 567.
9. New England Register, IX, 233-8.
10. John White . . . Founder of Massachusetts . . . Frances Rose-Troup, 1930, pp. 91-2, 96, 103, 119; History of New England, Rev. William Hubbard, 1848, pp. 106-8; History of Beverly, E. M. Stone, 1843, pp. 14-5; Perley's Salem, I, 83-8.
11. Ibid., I, 6-7, 10, 12-3, 44, 69, 74, 114, 170, 183; II, 325; VII, 321-2, 382.
12. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, I, 317-8, 326, 337-9, 419, 424, 428.
13. Essex Probates, I, 96-7, 263-4, 365-6; Records and Files, VII, 382, 388-91.
14. Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony, I, 366; II, 35-6.
15. Savage, I, 399; III, 180.
16. Stone's Beverly, pp. 23-4.
17. Vital Records of Cambridge, I, 50; II, 29, 458; of Wenham, pp. 9, 88-9, 124, 184, 189; of Beverly, II, 371.
18. Descendants of WILLIAM SUMNER, W. S. Appleton, 1879, p. 6.
19. Prentice Family, C. J. F. Binney, 1883, p. 4.
20. Fowler Family, M. A. Stickney, 1883, p. 53.
21. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, p. 49.
22. Records of the First Church of Beverly, W. P. Upham, 1905, pp. 24, 31, 46, 87-8, 100, 102, 104.
23. Ibid., pp. 93-109.
24. Wenham Town Records, 1707-1731, 1938, pp. 49, 67, 78-9, 86, 92.
25. Vital Records of Dedham, pp. 66, 79, 84, 88, 90, 96, 103-4, 106, 121, 124-5, 202, 207, 247.
26. Cutler Memorial, N. S. Cutler, 1889, pp. 65-7.
27. Genealogical History of Dover, F. Smith, 1917, p. 76.
28. Perley's Salem, I, 339; Balch Family, pp. 41-3.
29. Wyman's Charlestown, p. 49.
30. Family Records.
31. Vital Records of Dedham, pp. 66, 90, 96, 104, 121, 247.
32. History of Norfolk County, D. H. Hurd, 1884, pp. 498-501, 506.
33. Life, Journals and Correspondence of Rev. MANASSEH CUTLER, W. P. and J. P. Cutler, 1888, I, 17-8, 44-5.
34. History of Dedham, F. Smith, 1936, pp. 106-7.
35. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, O. A. Roberts, 1897, II, 47, 118-20.
36. "The True Story of the Acadians," D. J. LeBlanc, 1932, p. 18 et seq.
37. History of Massachusetts Bay, T. Hutchinson, ed. by L. S. Mayo, 1936, III, 28-31.
38. Dexter Genealogy, O. P. Dexter, 1904, pp. 36-7, 60.
39. History of Massachusetts, The Provincial Period, J. S. Barry, 1857, II, 200-4.
40. History of the (Roxbury) Grammar School, C. K. Dillaway, 1860, pp. 56, 61-2, 142, 195.
41. Furnished by Mr. F. H. Day of Norwood, deceased.
42. Furnished by the courtesy of the Norwood Historical Society.
43. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XVI, 547-8, 598; XXXI, 485; Danforth Genealogy, J. J. May, 1902, pp. 40-1.

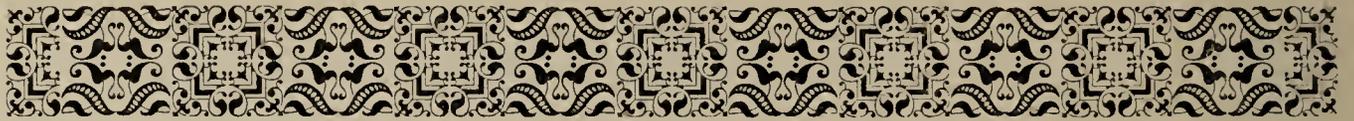
# BEAMSLEY



- \* Boston
- ② Ipswich
- ④② Wenham
- ② Gloucester
- ☆ Malden
- Newburyport
- ¶ Charlestown

- § Allegheny Co., Pa.
- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Thomaston, Me.
- ♁ Morgan Co., O.
- ✦ Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## BEAMSLEY

**W**ILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY\* with his wife ANNE crossed the ocean<sup>1</sup> in 1630 in one of the eleven vessels of the Winthrop Fleet\*\* and settled in Boston. He called himself a yeoman, a term which, in England from whence he came, implied a class of home owners, farmers, or mechanics, but a class definitely above<sup>4</sup> the peasantry. The term "yeoman" was invariably applied to him when he transferred land<sup>5</sup> whether he appeared as grantor or grantee, but when he became a member of the First Church of Boston<sup>1,6,11</sup> on August 2, 1635, he was listed as "Labourer." However, his land holdings, the offices he held<sup>7,8</sup> and the estate he left<sup>12</sup> indicate that this word was not used in a literal sense. Since the vote was then granted, in Massachusetts Bay Colony, only to church members, and since time had to elapse after application for freemanship before the privilege was granted, it is significant of the intention of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY to meet his full responsibility and exercise his full privilege that he was made a freeman<sup>1,6,7</sup> May 25, 1636, one year and a month after he acquired church membership.

His home lot contained<sup>8</sup> about one-half acre near Merry's Point, later North Battery, and ran from Hanover Street through to the Bay. It lay between<sup>9</sup> Salutation Alley (adjoining the widow Ann Tuttle's famous Salutation Inn) and what became Methodist Alley or Hanover Avenue. This Salutation Alley or Street was originally only five and one-half feet wide and was created as a passage way between the BEAMSLEY home and a piece of land sold<sup>9</sup> by WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> to Henry Kemble (see map p. 30). WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and his family appear to have lived here<sup>10</sup> at least until 1645 and very probably until his death.

In 1637 he was granted<sup>7</sup> sixteen acres at Muddy River and in January, 1638, it was surveyed or bounded.<sup>8</sup> In 1641 he was paid by the town for about ten rods of causeway<sup>7</sup> built by him at Rumney Marsh, now Chelsea; in 1644 he bought a shore lot near Merry's Point, probably an addition to his home lot, and in 1650 built a wharf out from it.<sup>7</sup> He was elected<sup>7,8</sup> one of four constables in March 1648-9, was honored in March, 1650-1, by making a third on a committee with Adam Winthrop and William Phillips to join with the selectmen in laying out highways to the new meeting house.<sup>8</sup> In his later life he was made Ensign and was so referred to after his death.<sup>12</sup> He held certain other minor positions and offices,<sup>7,8</sup> frequently witnessed documents, was many times referred to as an abettor, made various purchases of land including some on Hog Island<sup>5</sup> in 1651 which he sold in 1657; and he confirmed by deed on September 14, 1658, (the date of his will) the land, house and orchard adjoining his own on which his daughter

\*The origin of this emigrant has not been determined, but search in England disclosed the name only in Lincoln, Lincolnshire.<sup>1</sup>

\*\*Others of our ancestors who crossed in this company in 1630 include JOHN<sup>1</sup> DEVEREAUX (Dawes-Gates, II, 285), JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS (see Mills, p. 441).

ANNE and her husband EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD had lived about seven years.<sup>5</sup>

In March 1656-7 a committee was selected<sup>7</sup> to plan a "towne house" as suggested in the will of Robert<sup>1</sup> Keayne who gave £300 for the project. Other citizens who subscribed a total of over £367 included WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD who each gave £1. It stood on the site of what was later called "The Old State House" (see map, p. 30) and was destroyed by fire on October 7, 1711.

But an especial gratification to him must have been the acquirement in 1656 of membership<sup>7</sup> in the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company. We must record, however, certain slight misdemeanors on his part which brought him official criticism for in August, 1650, he was ordered<sup>7,8</sup> "to remove away his oyster shells from the Towne's hye way before his dore" by the first of the eleventh month or pay twenty shillings. And in May, 1656, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was fined ten shillings for receiving into his home some person who had not received from the town permission\* to become an inhabitant.<sup>7,8</sup>

His wife ANNE who had ventured across the sea with WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> died at an unknown date and he married secondly by 1645 Martha (Hallor) Bushnell\*\* a widow with three children, one posthumous. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> evidently became a good father to these stepchildren for his will<sup>12</sup> dated September 14, 1658, during his last illness and only a fortnight before his death on the 29th of that month,<sup>7</sup> made his wife Martha his executrix and sole beneficiary during her life, directed that at her death the entire estate should be sold and the proceeds "equally distributed amongst all my children" — naming then his own four and her three children without any differentiation. The fact that at the time of his will his wife's two daughters, Elizabeth and Mary Bushnell both bore married names has caused many people to believe that they really were daughters of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> himself. His estate was inventoried at over £251 with the house and land at Boston making up £140 of the amount.<sup>12</sup> From 1659 until 1668 a number of deeds were made by the various heirs in order to clear title to the land he had owned.<sup>13</sup>

The known children of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and ANNE (—) BEAMSLEY all born in Boston were<sup>2,6,12,15</sup>

- I. ANNE<sup>2</sup>, b. Feb. 13, 1632-3; d. between 1670 and 1672; m. by 1650 as his first wife EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD (see Woodward, p. 667).
- II. Grace<sup>2</sup>, b. Sept. 10, bp. 20, 1635; d. Nov. 26, 1730, ae 95 or "in her 99th year"; m. about 1657 Samuel<sup>1</sup> Graves of Ipswich.
- III. Mercy<sup>2</sup>, b. Dec. 9, bp. 10, 1637; d. Nov. 5, 1726; m. 1st Oct. 17, 1656, by the Deputy Governor, to Michael Wilborne who d. soon; m. 2nd between Sept. 14, 1658, (date of her father's will) and Nov. 18, 1659, Andrew<sup>1</sup> Peters.
- IV. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, (twin) b. Dec. 31, 1640; bp. Feb. 7, 1640-1; d. Apr. 1641.
- V. Habbakuk<sup>2</sup>, (twin), b. and bap. and d. as above.

\*This infringement may pertain to one Elizabeth Blesdate who had earlier been "warned out" but of whom it was recorded on January 25, 1657, that she "hath liberty to reside in the towne, and WILLIAM BEAMSLEY is bound in a bond of twenty pounds to save the towne from any charge that may arise by her during her said residence."<sup>17</sup> WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> signed this document.

\*\*Edmund<sup>2</sup> Bushnell (FRANCIS<sup>1</sup>, see Dawes-Gates, II, 163), was baptized at Horsham, co. Sussex, England, on June 27, 1606, and married, probably there, Oct. 2, 1627, Martha Hallor. They emigrated to Boston before 1636 and there he was employed on their farm at "Ten Hills" by the Winthrop family. Letters between members of that family show that Bushnell died March 28, 1636, and that his widow Martha bore a posthumous child about the middle of June, 1636. It was this widow Martha who joined the First Church of Boston on February 3, 1638, had her daughter Mary baptized there on February 17 and who married as his second wife before 1645 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY. The will of the latter man after naming his eldest daughter ANNE<sup>2</sup> and her three sisters, according to their age, continued directly with mention of his step-children Edward<sup>2</sup> Bushnell, Elizabeth Page (married 1652-3 to Edward Page of Boston) and Mary Robinson (married 1st Oct. 3, 1657, to George Robinson and married 2nd between March 1665 and November 1668 to Thomas Dennis).<sup>6,12,16</sup> These three were living in November 1668.

- vi. Hannah<sup>2</sup>, b. Dec. 13, bp. 17, 1643; d. Oct. 16, 1732, ae 91 at Ipswich;<sup>3</sup> m. there Oct. 16, 1661, Abraham<sup>2</sup> Perkins (JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).<sup>14</sup>

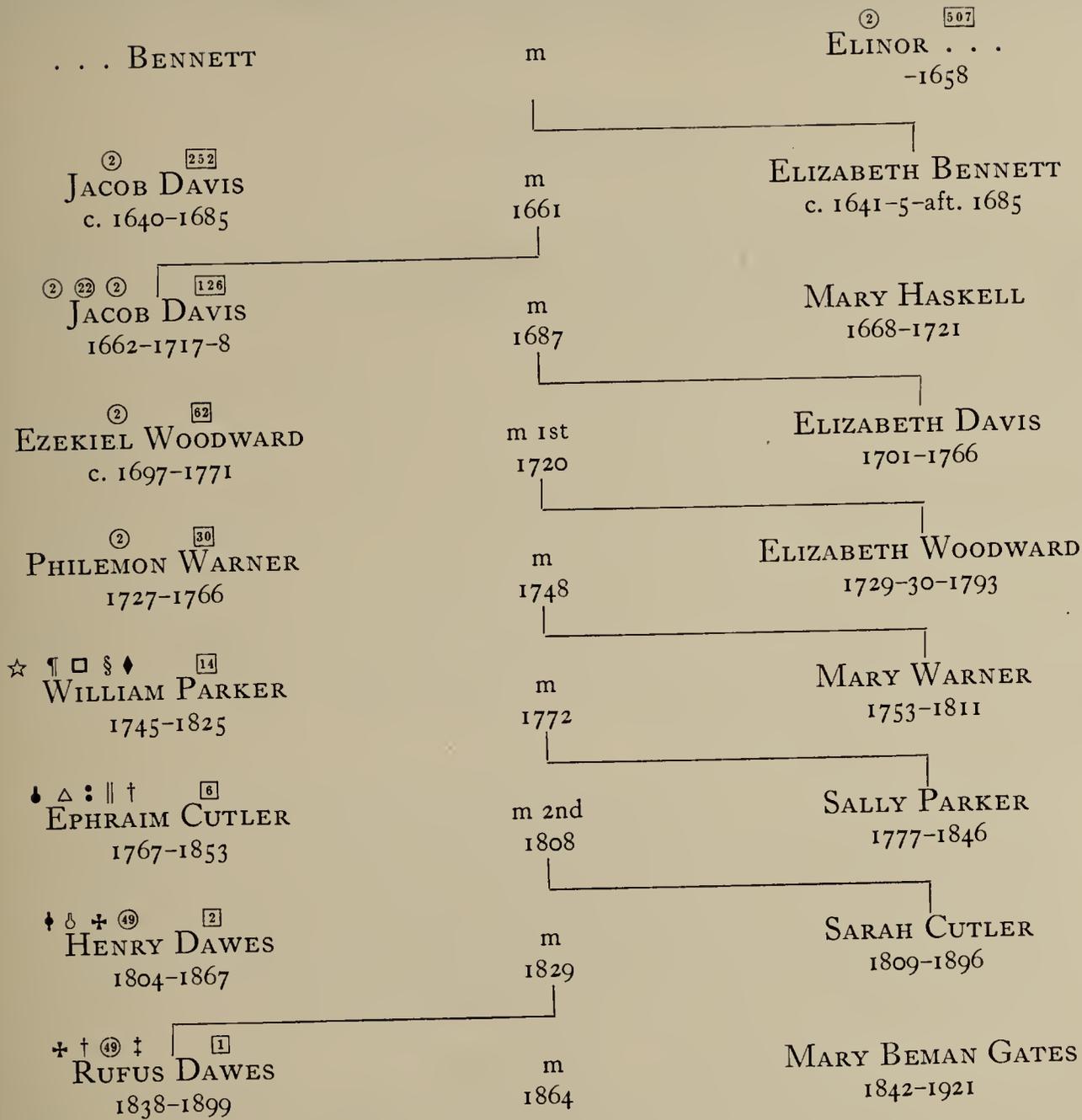
The child of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY and his second wife Martha (Hallor) Bushnell was

- vii. Abigail<sup>2</sup>, b. and bp. Feb. 8, 1645-6; not named in her father's will.

#### REFERENCES

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. The Winthrop Fleet of 1630, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 59; The Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 65-6.</li> <li>2. Pope's Pioneers, pp. 41-2, 513; Savage, I, 147-8.</li> <li>3. Vital Records of Ipswich, II, 41, 573, 645.</li> <li>4. Murray's Dictionary.</li> <li>5. Suffolk Co., Mass. Deeds, II, 242-4; III, 20-1, 153-4, 305-6.</li> <li>6. Peters Genealogy, E. F., and E. B. Peters, 1903, pp. 1-31, 357-60.</li> <li>7. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, O. A. Roberts, 1895, I, 19-20, 179; The Bostonian Society Publications, III, 108, 144, 146.</li> <li>8. History and Antiquities of Boston, S. G. Drake, 1856, pp. 235, 311-2, 319-20, 347-8, 787.</li> <li>9. The Crooked and Narrow Streets of Boston, A. H. Thwing, 1920, pp. 36, 46, map facing p. 26 and pp. 35, 46.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>10. Series of Plans of Boston, 1630-1645, Geo. Lamb, 1905</li> <li>11. Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880-8, I 559, 570; II, iv, ix, xlii, xlvii.</li> <li>12. New England Register, II, 76-7; VIII, 37, 349; IX, 37; X, 214; XI, 202.</li> <li>13. Suffolk Co. Mass. Deeds, III, 358-9; V, 518-21.</li> <li>14. Perkins Genealogy, G. A. Perkins, 1889, pt. 2, p. 22-4.</li> <li>15. Boston Record Commissioners Report, IX, 1, 3, 5, 9-10, 17, 21, 23, 57, 66.</li> <li>16. Ibid., IX, 7, 62, 97; Suffolk Co., Mass., Deeds, V, 519-21; Data furnished by the C. A. Hanna family; History of New England, John Winthrop, Savage's Edition, 1853, I, 465-7, 471; Dawes-Gates Ancestral Lines, II, 170-1.</li> <li>17. Warning Out in New England, J. H. Benton, 1911, p. 25.</li> </ol> |
|--|--|

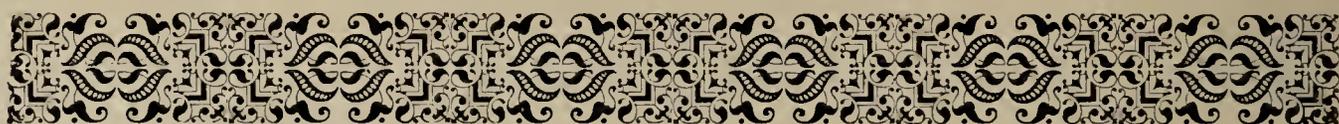
# BENNETT



- ② Gloucester
- ②② Ipswich
- ☆ Malden
- ¶ Charlestown
- Newburyport
- § Allegheny Co., Pa.

- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- ♠ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♠ Morgan Co., O.
- ✚ Malta, O.
- (49) Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## BENNETT

ELINOR (—) BENNETT\* came to New England probably as a widow bringing with her a daughter ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> and doubtless her son Anthony<sup>2</sup>, arriving as early as 1650-2. She came to Gloucester and married there as his second wife not later than the early part of 1653 Richard<sup>1</sup> Window. In December, 1647, Window had been presented<sup>1</sup> to the court for living apart from his wife. He evidently promised to send for her and was excused; was again called before the court in February, 1648-9 on the same complaint, but on his explanation that he had sent to England for her and learned she was dead, he was discharged.<sup>1</sup>

The birth<sup>2</sup> of "Ane" to Richard and ELEN Window is recorded as occurring on the nineteenth "of the Last mo." (February) 1653-4 and nothing more is heard of ELINOR until she testified<sup>4</sup> in court in March, 1657, that MARGARET the wife of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE had hired her daughter (who must have been our ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup>) for a fortnight "to help her when she did lie in." But one other item is found on ELINOR, namely her death at Gloucester on May 16, 1658.

But the will<sup>5</sup> of Richard<sup>1</sup> Window dated on May 2, 1665, is quite helpful for it incorporated<sup>5</sup> the following items:

"I macke my dafter Ann my tru and laful aire: and Soule Exsectetreckes and by this presenc do giue unto her my housses and lands . . . And to Antany Bennet my Suninlaw do I giue one grat bibel which was his fathears with al my working towls: and al my waring cloaths and three yards of new Cersi in my Chest and one musket: and one heafer Cauef: I giue unto ELESSEBETH BENNET my dafterinlaw one Cheast with a frog lock: and to JACOB DAUES do I give my fouling pece and Shot moulds . . . And Antany Bennit do I leue and Commit into the hands of his unkel benit if he pleas to except of him: and if not I Commit him to the Cair of my ouerseers" who were named as WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> HASKELL, James<sup>2</sup> Stevens (WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) and JACOB<sup>2</sup> DAVIS.

The document was witnessed by JACOB<sup>2</sup> DAVIS and the mark of his wife ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> (BENNETT) and was proved on June 27, 1665. Evidently the "unkel benit," who was unquestionably the Richard<sup>1</sup> Bennett of Boston, did not "except" the responsibility of Anthony<sup>2</sup> for on March 27, 1666, the court ordered that Anthony<sup>2</sup> should remain under the care of the aforementioned overseers "until he chose a guardian"<sup>5</sup> which argues that he was then fourteen years old or over.

The known children of . . . . . and ELINOR (—) BENNETT both born, probably, in England were

1. ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup>, b. prob. abt. 1641-5; d. after 1685; m. at Gloucester<sup>6</sup> Jan. 20, 1661, JACOB<sup>2</sup> DAVIS (see Davis, p. 281).

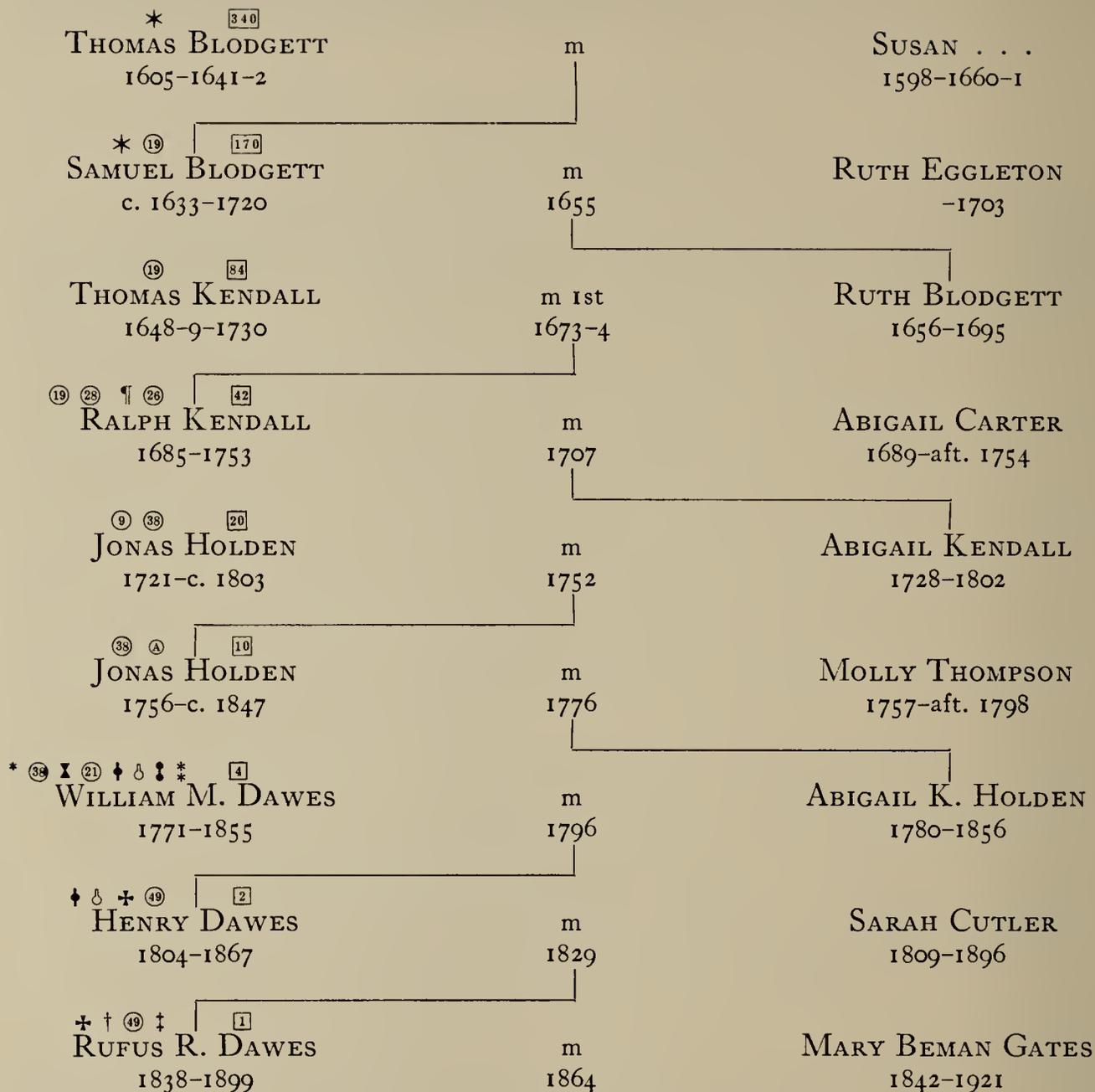
\*Her brother-in-law Richard<sup>1</sup> Bennett had come to Salem<sup>8</sup> in 1636, and soon removed to Boston where he died in 1677 mentioning his "cousin" (nephew) Anthony Bennett of Bass River (Beverly) in his will.<sup>8</sup> This document was dated January 21 with a codicil July 6, 1677.

- 
11. Anthony<sup>2</sup>, b. bef. 1652; died by some accident Dec. 13, 1690; m.<sup>6</sup> by 1678-9 Abigail who as administratrix of his estate referred to the expense for "getting a Jory to view the body, he coming to an untimely end."<sup>7</sup> She bore him five children, Anthony<sup>3</sup> Jr., John<sup>3</sup>, Abigail<sup>3</sup>, Peter<sup>3</sup>, and Andrew<sup>3</sup> and died 1733-4.
- 

## REFERENCES

- 
- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, I, 133, 157. | 5. Essex Probates, II, 14-6.   |
| 2. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 768; II, 160, 581; III, 326.           | 6. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 89; II, 84.   |
| 3. Savage, IV, 593; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, pp. 505-6.                     | 7. Research of Essex Probate Records by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass. Vol. 304, 424-5. |
| 4. Records and Files, II, 38.   | 8. Savage, I, 166-8; Pope, p. 46; New England Register, XXXVIII, 323-4.                      |

# BLODGETT



- \* Cambridge
- <sup>19</sup> Woburn
- <sup>28</sup> Lancaster
- <sup>†</sup> Charlestown
- <sup>26</sup> Kennebec River
- <sup>9</sup> Concord
- <sup>38</sup> Sudbury

- <sup>A</sup> Waitsfield, Vt.
- \* Boston
- <sup>X</sup> Marlborough
- <sup>21</sup> Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- <sup>♂</sup> Thomaston, Me.
- <sup>♂</sup> Morgan Co., O.

- <sup>♂</sup> Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- <sup>49</sup> Mauston, Wis.
- <sup>+</sup> Malta, O.
- <sup>†</sup> Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- <sup>†</sup> Marietta, O.

---



---

## BLODGETT\*

---

**T**HOMAS<sup>1</sup> BLODGETT, a glover aged thirty, from<sup>1</sup> co. Suffolk, England, emigrated on the "Increase" of London, Robert Lea, Master, sailing late in April and arriving at Boston<sup>1</sup> "at the end of July," 1635, which seems an unusually slow voyage. With him were his wife SUSAN, called thirty-seven years old, their sons Daniel<sup>2</sup> aged four, and SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> aged a year and a half. On the same vessel<sup>1</sup> came our\*\* THOMAS<sup>1</sup> KILBOURNE and MATTHEW<sup>1</sup> MARVIN with their respective families (see Dawes-Gates, II, 509 and 589).

THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BLODGETT settled at Cambridge where he had the grant<sup>2</sup> of a two acre house lot on February 6, 1636-7, and various other tracts at different times.<sup>2</sup> Record is found of several real estate transfers to and by him as he bought property in addition to what the town allotted to him and as he sold several different plots, including two lots with dwellings which went to Edmund Frost and to Robert Daniel. Yet after his death, widow SUSAN still retained a home adjacent to the common as well as land in the west field which was needing three rods of fence.<sup>2</sup>

THOMAS<sup>1</sup> had evidently joined the church for on March 3, 1635-6, he became a freeman<sup>3</sup> his name being rendered,<sup>2</sup> however, as BLOYETT. No evidence is seen of any public activity on his part — perhaps partly on account of his early death, for his will,<sup>10,11</sup> dated August 10, 1641, was proved \*\*\*July 8, 1642, leaving him only six years of residence in this country and placing his death† between August 10, 1641, and July 8 following. It also left SUSAN with the care henceforth of three children ranging in age from five to eleven. His will read:

"I THOMAS BLODGETT being at this time in my right mind, give to wife SUSAN my whole estate after my decease, as well within doors as without. She to bring vp my children in such learning & other things as is meete for them, & pay my oldest son Daniel £15 when one & twenty or in one month after her decease. To my 2<sup>d</sup> son SAMUEL £15, as above. To daughter Susanna £15. Should they have a father-in-law [step-father] who does not treat them well my will is that the Deacons & our brother Fessington & our brother Edward Winchship,†† they or either of them should have power to see unto it & reforme it by one means or other. —"<sup>11</sup>

And, in the manner of the time, widow SUSAN did marry again, on February 15, 1643-4, becoming the second wife of James<sup>1</sup> Thompson, and a dozen years later her only daughter and namesake married that man's son by the first wife.

\*There were an unusual number of variants in the recorded spelling of this name, Blodged, Blogget, Bloghead and even Blockhead.

\*\*Another passenger on this vessel was one Stephen Upson, Sawyer, aged twenty-three, who may have been the father of our HANNAH (UPSON) WRIGHT though no proof has been found by careful search in Boston.<sup>19</sup>

\*\*\*The date of July 24, 1643, is also found on the margin of the document.<sup>11</sup>

†Various compilers have stated that the death of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> occurred on August 7, 1639, but the impossibility of making a will two years after death, forces the conclusion that the death on that date pertained to an infant son of the same name.<sup>3</sup>

††John<sup>1</sup> Fessenden and Edward<sup>1</sup> Winship were both members<sup>16</sup> of the First Church in Cambridge, and the use of the term "brother" gives further evidence of the membership therein of THOMAS<sup>1</sup>.

It seems that SUSAN chose wisely for James<sup>1</sup> Thompson was one of the outstanding men of Charlestown and Woburn. In 1640 he had signed<sup>13</sup> the Woburn "Town Orders" with our JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER, FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL, JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE and in 1653 he had signed the momentous "Memorial for Christian Liberty" with our FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL, RICHARD<sup>1</sup> SNOW and JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD.<sup>13</sup> SUSAN or SUSANNA spent seventeen years with this second husband and died at Woburn<sup>6,12</sup> February 10, 1660-1. There is every reason to believe that Thompson was a kind stepfather to the three Blodgett children for not only did his youngest son Jonathan<sup>2</sup> Thompson marry the youngest Blodgett child, but when James<sup>1</sup> Thompson made his will<sup>12</sup> in 1681 he referred to his stepson as his "well beloved friend SAMUEL BLODGETT sen<sup>r</sup>," making him one of two trustees and overseers and making a bequest to him of "Mr. Rogers his book". SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> also witnessed the will<sup>12</sup> of his stepfather and helped to take the inventory of his estate.<sup>5</sup>

The children of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and SUSAN (—) BLODGETT, the first two born in England, were<sup>1,2,3</sup>

- i. Daniel<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1631; d. at Chelmsford<sup>3</sup> Jan. 28, 1671-2; m. there Sept. 15, 1653, Mary<sup>2</sup> Butterfield (a dau. of Benjamin<sup>1</sup> of Charlestown, Woburn and Chelmsford).<sup>14</sup>
- ii. SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- iii. Susanna<sup>2</sup>, b. at Cambridge<sup>3</sup> in June, 1637; d.<sup>5</sup> at<sup>12</sup> Woburn, Feb. 6, 1697-8; m. there<sup>4</sup> Nov. 28, 1655, Jonathan<sup>2</sup> Thompson (James<sup>1</sup>).<sup>12</sup>
- iv. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, d. at Cambridge,<sup>3</sup> Aug. 7, 1639.

SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> BLODGETT (*Thomas<sup>1</sup>*) was born in England about 1633, was brought to Cambridge in infancy, and at the age of about eleven, after his father's death, was taken to the Thompson home in Woburn where he grew to manhood, and in this town he lived until his death,<sup>\*2,4,5</sup> on May 21, 1720, when he was recorded as SAMUEL "senior" and was nearly eighty-seven. He married there<sup>4,9,15</sup> on December 13, 1655, RUTH EGGLETON (see Eggleton, p. 285),<sup>5</sup> who died at Woburn<sup>4</sup> on October 14, 1703.

SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> must have acquired church membership and freemanship since he held various official positions<sup>8</sup> culminating in that of deputy to the General Court in 1693. He had served<sup>8</sup> the town locally as selectman in 1681, 1690-1, 1693, 1695-7 and 1703 and as commissioner "on the rate" [tax] in 1692. After the Indians killed John<sup>1</sup> Nutting, husband of Sarah (Eggleton) sister of RUTH, Sarah came to Woburn to live with RUTH and SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> BLODGETT.<sup>21</sup>

During the life of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, and for many years beyond, Woburn and other early towns experienced much of discontent and controversy over the various bridges in the colony. As early as 1648 the General Court had passed an order laying the expense of building and of repairing bridges, on the township within whose limits they stood. This was highly unsatisfactory for frequently the need and use of a given bridge would be greater by the residents of a more remote town (which was not on a water course, and consequently had no such expense) than by the near-by town which built and maintained it, so in 1655 that order was repealed and for a period of years bridge repairs were assessed not on one town alone, or indeed in a given county, but were apportioned among a number of towns,†

\*Various compilers<sup>18</sup> have given earlier dates for the death of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> but they are erroneous. The Samuel who died in 1687 was son of Samuel<sup>1</sup> and born in 1683.

†In this particular case the upkeep of Medford Bridge was divided<sup>8</sup> between Charlestown, Woburn, Reading, Malden and Medford (see map, p. 618).

which might at times use the bridge, or whose businesses might profit because settlers from outlying sections used it.<sup>8</sup> The bridge over which Woburn had become so irritated crossed the Mystic River at Medford and in October, 1672, at a Woburn town meeting the selectmen were directed to ask the General Court to grant<sup>8</sup> them "some ease of their burden at Mistick Bridge." No such relief was obtained and subsequently repairs were neglected to such an extent that in 1675 Woburn was "presented" to the Court for the inattention and thereafter the town submitted to the inevitable until 1690. In October of that year the selectmen of Woburn, Reading and Malden joined in another petition to the Court and continued their pleas and protests through 1693. However, Woburn voters had demanded as early as 1691 that their selectmen "withstand [refrain from] — allowing anything more to the repairing of Mistick Bridge" assuring them that if it became necessary to go to law about it, the town would pay the costs; and seemingly the officials refrained from making repairs until in December, 1693, the selectmen were ordered to send representatives to court on the 26th of that month to answer for this neglect. As a consequence, SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> BLODGETT, one of the selectmen, and Maj. James<sup>3</sup> Converse\* appeared before the court and according to the instructions of their townsmen airily made answer "that Woburne was not concerned in the presentment of Mistick Bridge; neither would they do anything in order to the repairing thereof, except by Law they were forced thereto; and that they referred themselves to the law in that case; and so left the case for that time".<sup>8</sup> If this move was intended to make a definite issue of the case it was successful, for the bold defiance only brought the command that representatives of the town should appear before an adjourned meeting of the court less than a month hence on January 23, 1693-4, reporting that the repairs had been made, or the town would be fined £5. This caused a ferment in the town and though SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> BLODGETT seems to have had no further official connection with the case, his personal feelings probably were disturbed for the rest of his life, for this conflict was carried on intermittently until 1761 when Medford agreed to accept a payment of £200 from Woburn to free her, permanently, from further obligation.

In 1671 SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> had land laid out<sup>17</sup> to him near Rag Rock by a neighbor William<sup>1</sup> Locke, in 1672 they two joined in buying thirty-seven acres in Woburn from William<sup>2</sup> Johnson and in 1671 SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> was a witness to the will of the venerable and beloved Edward<sup>1</sup> Johnson.<sup>20</sup> SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> on October 6, 1674, joined his mother-in-law, JANE COLE, and his brother-in-law, John Nutton (Nutting) in petitioning the court that JANE might have for her support a portion of the estate of Isaac<sup>1</sup> Cole, her lately deceased third husband, and this was granted.<sup>15</sup> As has been stated SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> was a witness to the will of his stepfather James<sup>1</sup> Thompson in 1681, was made a trustee, overseer and beneficiary by it, and helped to take an inventory of the estate.<sup>5,12</sup> In 1689-90, SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> was a witness also to the signing of the will of Mabel (Kendall) Reade Somers, sister<sup>17,19</sup> of our FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL.

The life of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> would have been affected also by the terrors of King Philip's War in 1675-6; by the long drawn out fear of loss of the colony's charter, which crystallized into fact in 1684; and by the injustices of the régime of Andros "a fit servant of a Popish and arbitrary master". Of Andros as governor of the American

\*James<sup>3</sup> Converse was a son-in-law of Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER.

Colonies, it has been said "Nero concealed his tyrannical disposition more years than Sir Edmund and his creatures did months."<sup>8</sup>

About 1709 the Woburn church was repaired and enlarged so that it became necessary to resear the congregation, a process requiring diplomacy and, even with the most delicate handling, liable to cause discontent or worse. The town ruled that in this case three elements should be considered in the decisions of placement "viz.: as to age; as to what men had done toward building the meeting house at the first; and finally, as to their proportion in the public charges" [taxes].<sup>8</sup> A committee was chosen of which Sergt. John<sup>2</sup> Tidd (JOHN<sup>1</sup>) was a member but he knew it for so thankless and irksome a task that he immediately declined. Then Ens. Samuel<sup>3</sup> Blodgett (SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>) was chosen but he too felt unwilling to serve in such a capacity so others performed the duty without them.<sup>8</sup>

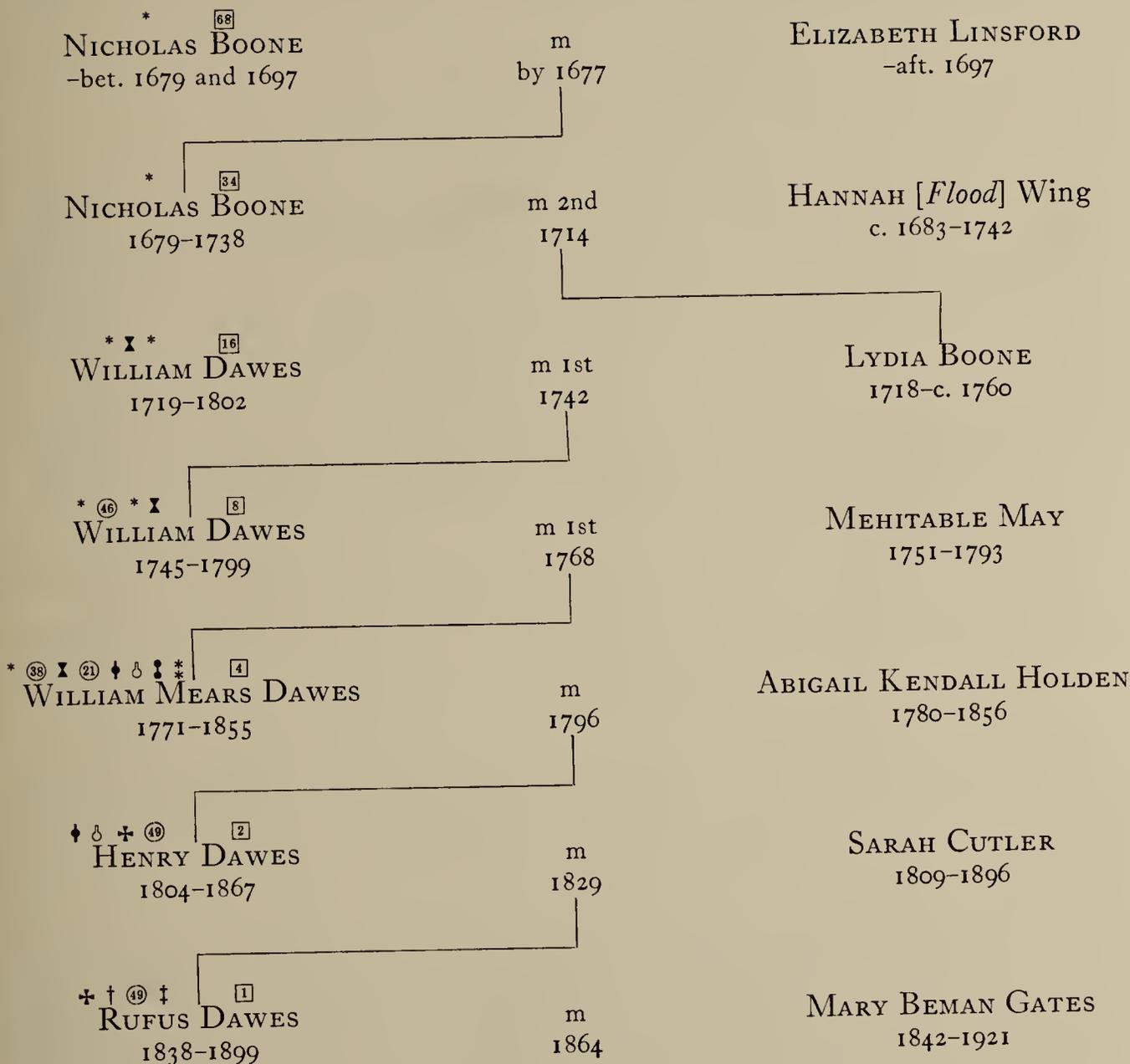
The children of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and RUTH (EGGLETON) BLODGETT all born in Woburn, were<sup>2,3,4,7</sup>

- I. RUTH<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 28, 1656; d. at Woburn Dec. 18, 1695, at the birth<sup>4</sup> (and death) of her tenth child; m. there<sup>9</sup> in 1673-4 as his first wife THOMAS<sup>2</sup> KENDALL (see Kendall, p. 380).
- II. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 10, 1658; d.<sup>4,7</sup> at Woburn Nov. 5, 1743, aged 84, called "Ensign"; m. there Apr. 30, 1683, Hulda<sup>2</sup> Simonds (William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>7,10</sup>
- III. Thomas<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 26, 1661; d. at Lexington<sup>5</sup> Sept. 29, 1740; m. at Woburn Nov. 11, 1685, Rebecca<sup>3</sup> Tidd (John<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).
- IV. Susanna<sup>3</sup>, d. at Woburn<sup>4</sup> Feb. 9, 1715; m. there<sup>4,7</sup> Dec. 29, 1685, James<sup>2</sup> Simonds (William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>7</sup>
- V. Sarah<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 17, 1668; d. at Concord,<sup>3</sup> Sept. 19, 1692; m. at Woburn<sup>4</sup> Jan. 7, 1687, John Hayward.
- VI. Martha<sup>3</sup>, twin, b. Sept. 15, 1673; d. aft. Feb. 1710;<sup>4</sup> m. at Woburn Apr. 7, 1696, Joseph<sup>3</sup> Winn (Joseph<sup>2</sup>, Edward<sup>1</sup>).<sup>7</sup>
- VII. Mary<sup>3</sup>, twin, b. Sept. 15, 1673; d. at Woburn<sup>4,7</sup> Mar. 11, 1752; m. at Charlestown Oct. 24, 1693, Joseph<sup>3</sup> Richardson (Joseph<sup>2</sup>, Samuel<sup>1</sup>).<sup>6</sup>

#### REFERENCES

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 149; New England Register, XIV, 310.</li> <li>2. History of Cambridge, L. R. Paige, 1877, pp. 35, 489; Town Records of Cambridge, I, 48, 59, 61, 100, 331, 333, 338; II, 26; Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, I, 371.</li> <li>3. Pope's Pioneers, 1900 pp. 55, 451; Savage, I, 202-3; Vital Records of Chelmsford, pp. 188, 367; Vital Records of Concord, p. 56; Vital Records of Cambridge, Mass., I, 69; II, 473.</li> <li>4. Vital Records of Woburn, I, 22, 277; II, 15, 104, 158-9, 176, 190; III, 26-7.</li> <li>5. Winchester, Record, 1886, II, 31, 34-6; History of Lexington, Mass., C. Hudson, 1913, II, 35.</li> <li>6. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, pp. 93-4, 811, 940.</li> <li>7. History of Middlesex Co., D. H. Hurd, 1890, I, 387; History of Woburn, S. Sewall, 1868, pp. 593-4, 620, 634, 637, 650.</li> <li>8. Ibid., 127-32, 184-6, 579-80, 584.</li> <li>9. Genealogical and Personal Memoirs of Worcester Co.,</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>E. B. Crane, 1907, p. 424; Nebraska and Midwest Genealogical Record, Apr. 1924, p. 120.</li> <li>10. Seth Blodgett, His Ancestors &amp; Descendants, G. Limeburner, 1933, pp. 5-7.</li> <li>11. New England Register, II, 185-6.</li> <li>12. James Thompson Memorial, Rev. L. Thompson, 1887, pp. 12, 17, 19-20.</li> <li>13. Hurd's Middlesex Co., I, 346, 348.</li> <li>14. Savage, I, 322; New England Register, XLIV, 33-4.</li> <li>15. Ibid., LIX, 417-8.</li> <li>16. Records of the First Church of Christ at Cambridge, S. D. Sharples, 1906, pp. v, 9, 22.</li> <li>17. Book of Lockes, J. G. Locke, 1853, pp. 12, 14, 21; Reade Family Record, V, 2-3; XIII, 11.</li> <li>18. Savage, I, 203; Sewall's Woburn, p. 594.</li> <li>19. Search of unpublished early Massachusetts records by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass.</li> <li>20. Wonder - Working Providence, E. Johnson with an Introduction by W. F. Poole, 1867, p. cxxxvi.</li> <li>21. Genealogical and Personal Memoirs . . . Boston and Eastern Mass., W. R. Cutter, 1908, II, 608-9.</li> </ol> |
|--|--|

# BOONE



- \* Boston
- X Marlborough
- 46 Worcester
- 38 Sudbury
- 21 Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.

- ♂ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- † Marietta, O.
- † Malta, O.
- 49 Mauston, Wis.



## BOONE (*Boon*)

NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> BOONE\* a resident of Boston, perhaps at a much earlier date, was taxed<sup>6</sup> there in October, 1674, in the amount of two shillings for the town and a like amount for the "Country." It was undoubtedly he who delivered<sup>6</sup> to Robert Orchard on January 31, 1676, a barrel, a bundle and a box on which Orchard failed to pay the Customs duty. NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> married at Boston by 1677 (and perhaps a dozen years earlier) ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> LINSFORD (see Linsford, p. 411) and died between 1679 when his son and namesake was born and 1697-8 when ELIZABETH, called<sup>3</sup> his widow, brought suit in the Inferior Court of Common Pleas in Boston to establish her claim to a small piece of ground in Boston on which her father had helped to build a house in 1652, forty-odd years earlier<sup>3</sup> (see Linsford, p. 410).

The known children of NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH (LINSFORD) BOONE all born in Boston were<sup>1,2,3</sup>

- I. Perhaps<sup>4</sup> Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1665; d. Oct. 13, 1667, ae 2 yrs. Buried at Copp's Hill Burial Ground.<sup>4</sup>
- II. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>2</sup> June 19, 1678; no further record.
- III. NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup>, see following.

NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE\*\* (*Nicholas*<sup>1</sup>) was born<sup>2</sup> at Boston on August 10, 1679, and died there<sup>15</sup> in November, 1738. He was married first in Boston by the Rev. Ebenezer<sup>2</sup> Pemberton of the Third or Old South Church on August 26, 1703, to Mary Barns\*\*\* and married there secondly by the same man on April 15, 1714, to HANNAH called Wing.†

\*Men who may have been relatives were a James Boone taxed in 1681 and a Samuel Boone taxed in 1691-2 and in 1695. An S. Boone joined<sup>13</sup> the Second Church on April 15, 1683.

\*\*By the kind permission of the "Club of Odd Volumes" of Boston through its Librarian, Mr. M. B. Jones, the compiler has been granted the privilege of quoting extensively from "Early Boston Booksellers" by Mr. G. E. Littlefield, deceased, in the compilation on NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE. This is done under the reference number<sup>15</sup> and the kindness is deeply appreciated.

\*\*\*The death<sup>16</sup> of a "Mrs. Boon" in November, 1713, after only two or three hours of sickness is recorded by Samuel Sewall and very likely pertains to Mary (Barns) Boone, first wife of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup>. No other suggestion as to her death has been found.

†Most diligent search<sup>11</sup> has failed to show any HANNAH *born* Wing who can qualify for this position, but a theory has been evolved (which is all *but* proved) that she was born *Flood*, daughter to *James*<sup>1</sup> and *Hannah* (—) *Flood* of Boston and was the presumed widow of John<sup>2</sup> Wing (Capt. John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>) a mariner. The birth of this *Hannah*<sup>2</sup> is not recorded but she was baptized July 15, 1683, was named in the will of her father signed February 10, 1698-9 and proved March 16 following. She was married at Boston on October 2, 1703, to John<sup>2</sup> Wing who was born in 1678, was living on April 19, 1708 but was dead before May 21, 1717. This *Hannah* was further identified on May 24, 1712, by a land transfer from her sister-in-law Susanna (Inglesby) Flood, widow of John<sup>2</sup> Flood wherein she was called *Hannah* Wing, one of the surviving children of *James*<sup>1</sup> *Flood*.

Extensive study<sup>11</sup> causes a *belief* that John<sup>2</sup> Wing was dead before April 15, 1714, in time for this *Hannah* to have married, secondly, our NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE. This belief is based, among other things on (1) the unusual intimacy over a period of years between our NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> and HANNAH (—) BOONE and Cord<sup>2</sup> Wing, surviving brother of John<sup>2</sup> Wing. (2) A deed dated January 21, 1712-3 from said John<sup>2</sup> Wing wherein the ambiguous use of the words "his death" could just as well have pertained to him as to the grantee. (3) The use of four given names among the descendants of HANNAH (—) BOONE which had not previously been found in that family but had repeatedly occurred in the first three generations of the Flood family, etc.<sup>11</sup>

It is claimed<sup>15</sup> that NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> received his early training for his life work as bookseller, in the shop of Duncan<sup>1</sup> Campbell.\* As early as 1700 when NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> would have been twenty-one years old he had become a proprietor in the location which had been held by Campbell in 1697 and the earliest book\*\* bearing the imprint of BOONE reads “. . . Boston in N. E. Printed for NICHOLAS BOONE, at his Shop over against the old Meeting-House, 1700.”<sup>15</sup> There he carried on until the early part of 1704 when he removed only a short distance to Washington Street opposite the “Blew Anchor Tavern” where Benjamin Harris, an earlier bookseller than he, had run a shop and had been followed by the widow Susanna Campbell and her coffee-house or tavern (vide p. 30). Here NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> took over not only such books as the widow had on hand but also the good will of her establishment “and that he found the union of the two kinds of business profitable is evident from the following petition to the General Court:<sup>14,22</sup>

“Oct. 26, 1704. The Humble Petition† of NICHOLAS BOONE of Boston, Bookseller, sheweth

“That whereas your petitioner now dwelleth next door to the Post Office, in which house the widow Susannah Campbell kept a coffee house and had a license for selling of Coffee, Tea, Chocolate, Beer, Ale, Mead, Mum, and other such drinks as are usually sold in such houses: and several gentlemen, merchants, finding such a house needful near the Post Office for the convenience to stay in till the mail of letters are opened and sorted, and in regard the Law of this Province has barred your petitioner to obtain such a license as the Widow Campbell had for accomplishing the same, the Sessions of Court for granting licenses for the present year being over. Your petitioner therefore humbly pray that your Excellency and the Great and General Assembly will be pleased to take the premises into your most mature and wise consideration and allow the Justices of the Court of General Sessions of the Peace for this time grant your petitioner the said license for the remainder of the year, and your petitioner in duty bound shall ever pray being always Your Excellency's and Honours most humble and obedient servant, NICHOLAS BOONE.”

The petition was granted, and during the following twenty-five years BOONE

\*Duncan<sup>1</sup> Campbell came to Boston<sup>15</sup> by or before 1684 and was called “Bookseller at the Dock-Head over against the Conduit.” In and after 1693 he was also the proprietor of a tavern on the south corner of Elm and Union Streets, called sometimes the “Castle Tavern,” but by him called the “George Tavern” where a portion of the lower floor was occupied by his bookshop. In 1693 he was appointed by Andrew Hamilton (who held the postal rights, from England under Thomas Neale's monopoly) to be postmaster for the colony and between them they started a mail service from Portsmouth, New Hampshire to James City, Virginia. Campbell was<sup>15</sup> presently “forced to give up the tavern, and moved his bookshop into smaller quarters on the south corner of State and Washington Streets where, by May 1697, an Election Day Sermon printed for him described his new location<sup>15</sup> as being “over against the Old Meeting House, 1697” but no later imprint of his has been found. It was doubtless here that NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE served under him, for he succeeded Duncan<sup>1</sup> Campbell as bookseller at this address in 1700. Campbell died early in 1702 and perhaps even before his death his wife Susanna had established a coffee-house (see map, p. 30) “on Washington Street, opposite the ‘Blew Anchor Tavern,’ next to Davis's apothecary store which stood on the corner of Court Avenue . . .” After Duncan's death she petitioned the selectmen<sup>15</sup> for a license “to sell by retail as well beer, ale, mum, and cider as chocolate, tea, and coffee.” This was granted her on July 26, 1703, and her coffee-house became a tavern which she continued to run for about a year when it, too, passed into the hands of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE. After the death of Duncan<sup>1</sup> he was succeeded as postmaster by John<sup>1</sup> Campbell who may have been his brother, and with John<sup>1</sup>, NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE also had business dealings. (vide p. 98).

\*\*This earliest publication sponsored by NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> had a most egregious title, namely<sup>15</sup>: “A Token for Children. Being an Exact Account of the Conversion Holy and Exemplary Lives and Joyful Deaths of several Young Children. By James Janeway, minister of the Gospel. To which is added, A Token for the Children of New England, in whom the Fear of God was Remarkably Budding before they dyed: In several Parts of New England, Preserved and Published for the encouragement of Piety in other children. Boston in N. E. Printed for NICHOLAS BOONE, at his Shop over against the old Meeting-House. 1700.”

†The misspelling at the recording<sup>22</sup> of this petition of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> is “rare” for it reads “That Whereas you Petitioner now dweleth next door to the Post office, in the which House the Widdow Susanah Campbell Kept a Coffe house, and had a Licence for selling of Coffe, Tea, Cachcalate, Bear, Ale, Cyder, Mead, Mum, and other such drinks . . .”

(or his wife) kept a coffee-house, although it is not advertised in the imprints of his books.

To revert to his major interest, the imprint of publications sponsored by NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> while doing business at this new location bore the words "*near the Old Meeting House*" and while here he achieved one of his most historic affiliations by becoming associated, even briefly, under John<sup>1</sup> Duncan owner, with the earliest newspaper to be published in any British colony, "The Boston News-Letter." Its first issue came out on April 24, 1704, and it continued without interruption until 1776. "It was printed on a half sheet of paper, in size about twelve inches by eight, with a small-pica type, made up in two pages folio, with two columns on each page<sup>15</sup> . . ." The first four issues were "Sold by NICHOLAS BOONE . . ." but the fifth omitted his name and stated that the paper was for sale at the Post Office, where John<sup>1</sup> Duncan its owner was postmaster. Subsequently the name of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> frequently appeared in its columns in advertisements of books he had for sale and occasionally advertisements of other properties.\* After two years "next door to the Post Office" the business of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> had increased so greatly that he removed\*\* in 1706 to larger quarters "next to the northerly corner of School and Washington Streets,"<sup>15</sup> (see map, p. 30) otherwise described as "near the corner of School-House Lane" or "near the Corner of School-Street."<sup>15</sup> Here in 1708 the imprint of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> changed slightly<sup>15</sup> for he adopted the sign formerly used by Benjamin Harris,† namely "The Sign of the Bible" adding "in Cornhill, near the Corner of School-Street." He continued the use of "the Sign of the Bible" throughout his career as a bookseller.

On October 2, 1711, about seven o'clock in the evening a most disastrous fire broke out<sup>25</sup> in a back yard in Cornhill, near the First Meeting House which was not under control until two o'clock in the morning of October 3, during which time it destroyed about a hundred houses including the Meeting House, Town House and the property of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE. He and Thomas Creese† with other sufferers petitioned†† the selectmen<sup>25</sup> for permission to erect temporary wooden buildings so that business might be carried on but for the common good that was refused.<sup>25</sup> Another petition was filed asking abatement<sup>25</sup> of taxes and bore, among others, the name of the postmaster John<sup>1</sup> Campbell. After the fire NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> rented a brick building put up by Zechariah Trescott at the same location he had been using and on April 22, 1715 he purchased the property and there he spent the rest of his life. The lot measured nineteen feet two inches at its front or east end on Washington Street (then Cornhill) and was a hundred and

\*A suggestion of the variety of interests in addition to books, which entered into the life of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE is seen in three of his advertisements<sup>17</sup> in the News-Letter: In the issue of November 1, 1704 we read

"A Negro Woman Slave about 22 years of Age, to be Sold by Mr. NICHOLAS BOONE Book seller, and to be seen at the London Coffee-House, next door to the Post-Office, in Boston."

This was repeated in the next issue of November 13 while in the issue of April 29, 1706, may be seen

"A set of Halberts for a foot Company to be Sold on reasonable Terms, by NICHOLAS BOONE Bookseller, to be seen at his House near School-House Lane in Boston."<sup>17</sup>

\*\*This location in itself was historic<sup>15</sup> for "in this very building in 1634 Samuel Cole had set up the first house for common entertainment in the town of Boston."<sup>15</sup>

†Bookseller who had returned to England<sup>15</sup> in 1694-5.

††It is notable that the Thomas Creese House<sup>26</sup> on the northwest corner of Washington and School Streets, built in 1712 immediately after this fire on the lot next to the one occupied by NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE is still (1940) standing and has lately been restored and photographed.<sup>26</sup>

†††The signature<sup>29</sup> of "NICH<sup>0</sup>, BOONE" on this petition shows beautifully formed letters — a hundred percent better than any other facsimile signature of the dozen or more reproduced.

twenty feet deep. NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> paid £855 (probably old tenor) for it<sup>15</sup> and there, for twenty-three years, he continued as a bookseller, his imprint reading "at the Sign of the Bible in Cornhill" while wife HANNAH carried on the coffee shop for an even longer period.

The career of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> as a bookseller over a period of thirty-eight years was a notable one.<sup>15</sup> As a publisher it was rather extensive for that early day when the term more frequently than not implied the financing of the publication. Search has shown well over sixty separate publications which specify<sup>17,18,19</sup> that they were "Printed for NICHOLAS BOONE" and a dozen additional ones which were merely "Sold by" and may or may not have been sponsored by him. It is interesting to note that fully fifty of the books he published were of a religious nature, ranging all the way from sermons of thirty to eighty pages each, to the Old Testament of two hundred and seventy pages, and a religious book of two hundred and thirty-four pages. Other subjects covered were Almanacs for a number of different years, medical matters such as inoculation for small pox, the London Pharmacopoeia of over three hundred pages, essays, military matters, calamities, the sad end to which pirates came, "Navigation Spiritualized," governmental and legal matters, a history of two hundred and forty-eight pages and his brief association with the "Boston News-Letter."

One unique book of which he published a second edition<sup>15</sup> in 1715 had been written by the Rev. \*John Wise (1652-1725) of Ipswich, a martyr under Andros (see Appendix "B", p. 694) and was first published in 1710. It was entitled "The Churches Quarrel Espoused: or A Reply in Satyre, to certain Proposals made, in Answer to this Question, What further steps are to be taken, that the Councils may have due Constitution and Efficacy in Supporting, Preserving, and Well-Ordering the Interest of the Churches in the Country?" It has been called<sup>15</sup> "a book that by its learning, logic, sarcasm, humor, invective, its consuming earnestness, its vision of great truths, its flashes of triumphant eloquence, simply annihilated the scheme it assailed." Mr. Henry Stevens, the distinguished antiquary, reviewed this book as follows:<sup>15</sup>

"This is perhaps the pertest, keenest, wittiest, stingiest little literary production that New England ever produced, and we venture further to say, that no American document of the kind, the Declaration of Independence alone excepted (and we guess that Jefferson had studied Wise) so completely covers its field and engrapes its foe. The occasion was a grand one. Certain New England ministers, looking out with eyes too single upon their own line of business, met in Boston as self elected delegates in an association, on the 5th of November 1705, and issued sundry proposals for amending the New England Platform, so as to give more efficiency to the Sacred Order of Men as well as to improve the supplies of loaves and fishes, but all put into plausible and proper ecclesiastical phrase. These proposals were printed and well circulated throughout the country, and were well-nigh swallowed whole by the hungry fishers-of-men. The poor fish were not consulted. But the wise old men [man?] of Ipswich kept the watch-tower and fell not asleep, so that the camp was not surprised . . . The book is very little known but must ever stand out as a beacon of warning to aspiring ministers."

In addition to his selling and publishing of books NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> also dabbled in authorship and served as a printer, though not as acceptably<sup>21</sup> as some. NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> undoubtedly had a definite interest in the military, and especially along the line

\*The Rev. John Wise married in 1678 Abigail<sup>9</sup> Gardner (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, THOMAS<sup>1</sup>) of Roxbury (see Gardner, p. 309).

of Artillery for as early as 1701 when he would have been only twenty-two years old he wrote,<sup>15</sup> published and sold the first book written by an American author on Military Science. It was entitled "Military Discipline. The Compleat Souldier, or Expert Artilleryman. Compiled from Elton, Bariff, &c. To which is added the Military Laws of the Province of Massachusetts Bay. . . ." It consisted<sup>19</sup> of ninety-six pages "and states the circumstances which induced him to write his small treatise, and in quaint terms at once deprecates, invites and defies criticism. He closes with a poem of three pages on the 'Art Military,' which is an extraordinary production and should be included in a compilation of the curiosities of American literature."<sup>15</sup> NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> followed his literary effort of military sort by consistent action in joining the futile expedition<sup>20,22</sup> to Port Royal.\* On May 3, 1707, he received a warrant or commission<sup>15</sup> as bombardier in the Second Regiment sailing from Boston May 13, arriving at Port Royal, Nova Scotia<sup>22</sup> on May 26 and returning to Boston<sup>20</sup> in August.

The only other recorded authorship by NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> occurred as a result of his experience as constable of Boston<sup>9</sup> in March, 1708-9, for in 1710 he published<sup>15,19</sup> "The Constable's Pocketbook: Or a Dialogue between an old constable and a new, being a guide in their keeping the peace &c" a booklet of seventy pages with a second edition in 1727. A number of other books or pamphlets of which he was publisher may easily have come from his pen, but lacking proof, no claim is made.

His recorded career as a printer occurred chiefly as official printer<sup>21</sup> from 1719-22, both inclusive, to the House of Representatives of Massachusetts when his various bills for services totaled over £240. In this position he printed not only Journals, reports, votes, &c but a mass of mortgage blanks<sup>22</sup> for a loan<sup>21</sup> of £100,000 by Suffolk County. In May, 1723, a contract between himself and the House was under consideration whereby, if it were closed, he would reprint the Laws of the Province and on the delivery of two hundred and fifty copies "well bound in Leather, to the office of the Secretary" (one for each town in the Province and one for each member of the Court) he should have from the Treasury £150 and the sole privilege of printing them for twenty years to come. This motion was "sent up for concurrence."<sup>21</sup> Other smaller tasks of printing are recorded to him.<sup>21</sup>

The religious life of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> and his family was quite evident for his first marriage in 1703 was performed by the pastor of the Third or Old South Church, the baptisms of his two children by that wife in 1704 and 1706 were performed at the Second or Old North Church. His second marriage in 1714 was performed as had been the first one by Rev. Ebenezer<sup>2</sup> Pemberton of the Old South Church and in 1718 his daughter LYDIA<sup>3</sup> was baptized there in spite of the fact that intermediately, on September 20, 1715, a petition<sup>14,27</sup> signed by NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE, Samuel Adams\*\* and twelve others for a piece of land on which to erect a new meeting house, brought them the grant of a small tract "Comonly Called Church Green Nigh Summer Street in Boston (see map, p. 30) of Sixty-five in Length and forty-five feet in Breadth" provided that it be built upon and used within

\*This expedition (because of the continuing Indian menace)<sup>28</sup> ordered by Gov. Dudley consisted of one thousand men raised<sup>20</sup> in Massachusetts, New Hampshire and Rhode Island, and placed under the command of Col. March. There appears to have been disagreement among some of the officers as to the conduct of the forces for a letter written<sup>22</sup> "at Sea 13th June 1707" assures us that ". . . Mr. Barnsdale, Boon, James &c came up to us & offered their service to play o' artillery in case Rednap refused it."<sup>22</sup>

\*\*This Samuel Adams was the father<sup>27</sup> of the man of that name who signed the Declaration of Independence.

the next three years. On October 15, 1715, a more specific permit authorized these founders "to Erect a timber Edifice & Cover it w<sup>th</sup> shingle" using a flat roof and Battlements round the same. . . ."<sup>14</sup> This was the ninth church organized in Boston and from its southern location it came to be called the New South Church after which the Third or South Church was uniformly called the *Old South*. There were forty-four subscribers to the new project and a little over £1,100 was raised for its construction.<sup>14</sup> It bore "a seemly spire" "finished after the Ionic order" and was dedicated on January 8, 1716. Its first pastor, the Rev. Samuel Checkley, was ordained on April 5, 1719, and "after the Ordination the first and last Staves of 122: Psalm were sung. Mr. BOON set Windsor Tune, and read it well."<sup>15,16</sup> The Rev. Checkley served this church until his death<sup>14</sup> in 1769 and by him, in this church, our LYDIA<sup>3</sup> BOONE was married<sup>8</sup> in 1742. The church itself was torn down<sup>11</sup> in 1868.

The public positions held by NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> included<sup>9</sup> that of tithing man in 1706-7, and 1724-8 inclusive; of clerk of the market<sup>9</sup> in 1707-8; constable in 1708-9; surveyor of highways in 1723-4 being then one of eight serving thus.<sup>9</sup> In May, 1717, in answer to a request<sup>10</sup> for the laying of new pavement "from m<sup>r</sup> BOONS corner\* to y<sup>e</sup> Gutter Leading down to Spring Street in Cornhill" it was voted that if the abutters on each side of the street would undertake the usual expense of paving on each side, the town would repave their portion in the middle. In September, 1717, liberty was granted<sup>10</sup> to Nathaniel Goodwin, William Webster and NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE "to Set a Row of Posts before their Lands in Cornhill to Stand eight feet distant from their respective Buildings." These may have been for hitching posts or to preserve a space for pedestrians.

It would seem quite possible that the last few years of the life of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> found him somewhat impaired in health, for after 1727-9 his name is but infrequently seen in bookish ways; in 1737 he asked the selectmen for permission<sup>10</sup> to sell "Strong Drink," as a retailer, in his Coffee-house. His request was not allowed then, but a similar request made in 1738 was granted him, and after his death late that year a similar petition made by his widow HANNAH under date of September, 1739, was approved.<sup>10</sup>

The will<sup>11</sup> of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE dated May 20, 1730, but not proved until December 4, 1738, left an estate inventoried on February 27, 1738-9, at £1,918 of which the house and land in Cornhill stood for £1,400 and £350 was in "sundry books bound and unbound." It left to his "wife HANNAH, my whole estate, real and personal, for the bringing up of my children and at her marriage or death to be equally divided among my *six* children."<sup>15</sup>

It named<sup>11</sup> wife HANNAH and "my well beloved friend" Cord<sup>3</sup> Wing (who was also a witness to the document) as executors. When the will was proved Cord<sup>3</sup> renounced his executorship<sup>11</sup> and HANNAH served alone until her death in 1742, before March 30. Then the court appointed Cord<sup>3</sup> to complete the administration of the estate, with the will of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> annexed; to exhibit an inventory before June 30 following, and to render an accounting before March 30, 1743. He gave bond for £4,000 on March 30, 1742. The inventory which he exhibited on September 7, 1742, then showed a valuation of only £1,792 in spite of the fact that the

\*The south corner<sup>27</sup> of State and Washington.

appraised valuation of the property in Cornhill had risen to £1,600 (though that was probably due to inflation).

On December 2, 1742, Cord<sup>s</sup> Wing filed an administrator's account showing that he had divided among the heirs, moveables to the amount of £192-12-6; that he had paid four pounds four shillings "for Pall, Grave, Bells & for Mrs. BOONE"; had paid for gloves for the funeral three pounds four shillings and for gravestones three pounds ten shillings.<sup>11</sup> On the very next day<sup>11,28</sup> December 3, 1742, Nicholas<sup>s</sup> Boone, called stationer, with his wife Mary, Paul Farmer "perri-wiggmaker" with wife Hannah, Elizabeth Boone, single woman, WILLIAM DAWES, Taylor with wife LYDIA and Mary Boone, single woman, all of Boston, who were children and heirs of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE late of Boston, bookseller, deceased, deeded for £1,800 old tenour to John Comrin of Boston, mariner, all that brick messuage and lands . . . bounded on the east by Cornhill Street, north by Jeremiah Allen, Esq., and Dr. Thomas Creese, on the south by Nathaniel Goodwin, with a free egress for said Comrin upon a nine foot passage between the lands of William Webster, deceased, and of the heirs of Capt. Thomas Clark deceased from Cornhill Street aforesaid.<sup>11</sup>

Cord<sup>s</sup> Wing gave a further accounting on July 4, 1745, showing that the home on Cornhill had sold for £200 more than its appraised value had been; that he had paid £8 for a coffin for widow HANNAH; £48-13 for medicine and attendance by Dr. Thomas Bullfinch; £5 for advice (legal?); twenty shillings for writing and that he had paid portions of £150 each to *five* children (James<sup>s</sup> having evidently died since 1730) namely, Nicholas<sup>s</sup>, Hannah<sup>s</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>s</sup>, LYDIA<sup>s</sup> and Mary<sup>s</sup>. An added item reads "To cash paid each of the heirs in full as per their receipts, Total £360-8-9." Among the debts owing was one "To the Corporation for Propagating the Gospel, £109" which was offset by the item: "Paid to Andrew Oliver, Esq. Trustee for the Indian Proprietors of Natick on Bond with Interest £117-10-00." An odd item included in his will read:

"As to my interest in the Land, House, and Pew in the New Meeting-House in Boston on Church Green I give to my wife HANNAH and her children forever, allowing my son Nicholas no right thereunto whatsoever."<sup>15</sup>

The children of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE by his first wife Mary Barnes, both born in Boston were<sup>7,8</sup>

- i. Elizabeth<sup>s</sup>, b.<sup>7</sup> July 5, bap. 16, 1704, at the Second or Old North Church.<sup>13</sup> Evidently d. yng.
- ii. Nicholas<sup>s</sup>, b.<sup>7</sup> Feb. 8, bap. 10, 1705-6, at the Second or Old North Church;<sup>13</sup> m. in Boston<sup>7</sup> by Rev. Thomas Prince of the Old South Church on Mar. 19, 1741, to Mary Todd.

The children of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> and HANNAH (?*Flood*) BOONE all born in Boston were<sup>7,8</sup>

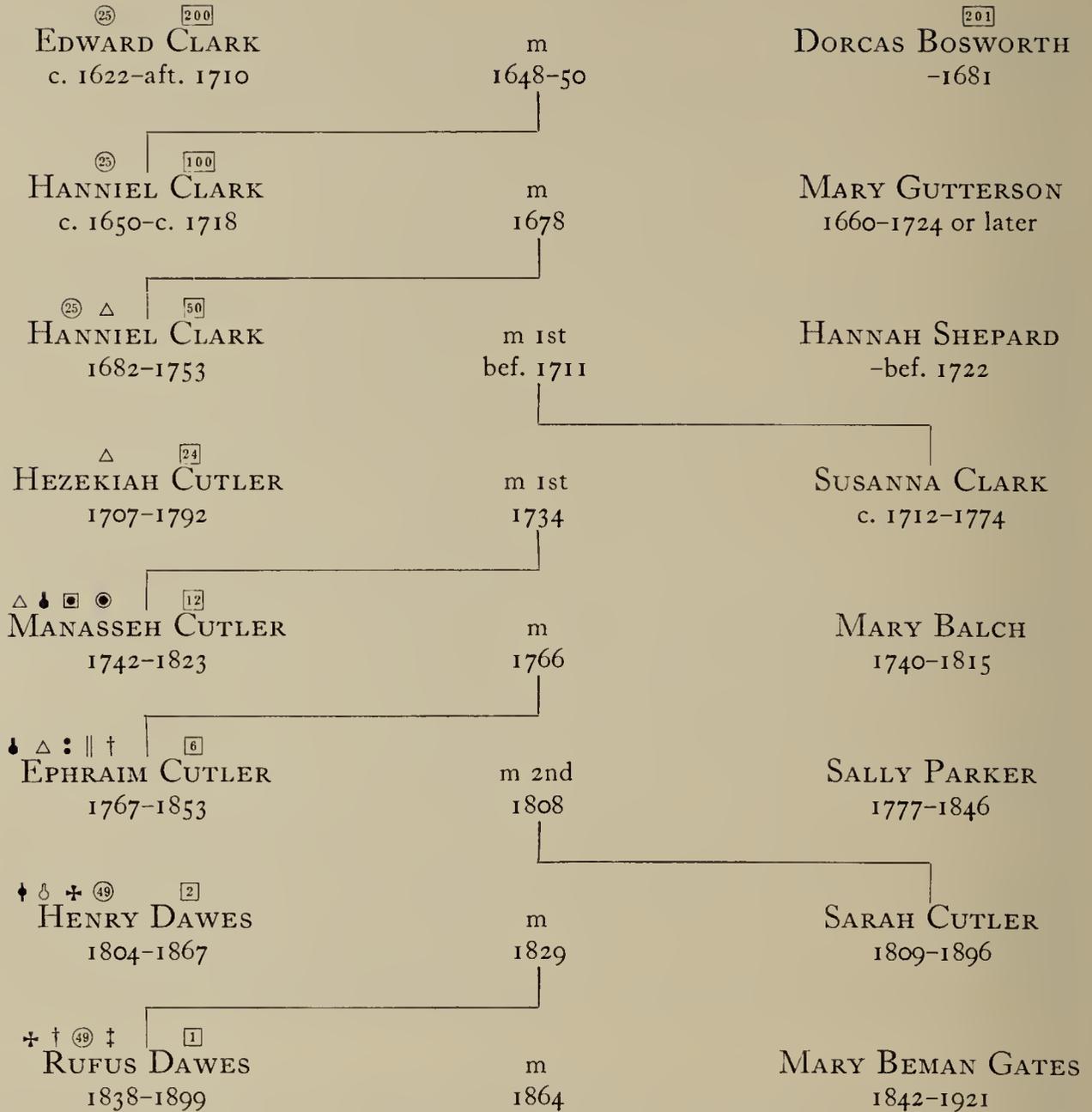
- iii. Hannah<sup>s</sup>, b. Feb. 10, 1714-5; m. by Rev. Samuel Checkley<sup>7</sup> of the New South Church on Oct. 19, 1738, to Paul Farmer.
- iv. Elizabeth<sup>s</sup>, ("Betty") b. Sept. 11, 1716; with her sister "Molly" she kept house in Boston for her brother-in-law WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES during the siege and is said<sup>8</sup> to have d. in Marlboro.
- v. LYDIA<sup>s</sup>, b. Mar. 27, bap.<sup>11</sup> Mar. 30, 1718, at Old South Church; d. after Mar., 1760, and before Aug. 1764;<sup>8</sup> m.<sup>7</sup> (int. May 6) July 1, 1742, at the New South Church WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES (see Dawes, p. 33).

- vi. Mary<sup>s</sup> ("Molly"), b. July 7, bap.<sup>11</sup> at the New South Church July 12, 1719; with her sister "Betty" she kept house in Boston for her brother-in-law WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES during the siege and is said to have d. in Marlboro.<sup>8</sup>
- vii. John<sup>s</sup>, b. June 24, 1721; d. Sept. 8, 1722, ae. 13 mo. Buried in King's Chapel Burial Ground.<sup>12</sup>
- viii. Abigail<sup>s</sup>, b. Mar. 18, bap.<sup>11</sup> 24, 1722; d. Aug. 20, 1724, ae. 1 yr. 5 mo. Buried in King's Chapel Burial Ground.<sup>12</sup>
- ix. James<sup>s</sup>, b. June 21, bap.<sup>11</sup> 27, 1725; must have been one of the six children living when father's will was made in 1730, but dead before Dec. 1742.

## REFERENCES

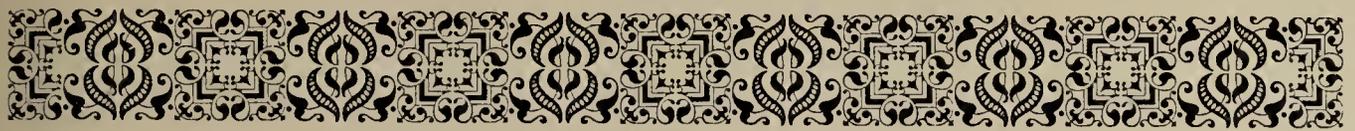
1. Boone Family, H. A. Spraker, 1922, pp. 612, 622.
2. Boston Record Commissioners Report, IX, 144, 147.
3. New England Register, LXXI, 91-3.
4. *Ibid.*, XXXVII, 45.
5. B. R. C. R., XXVIII, 7, 17, 49.
6. *Ibid.*, I, 28; VII, 122.
7. *Ibid.*, XXIV, 26, 33, 96, 111, 127, 134, 149, 154, 169; XXVIII, 206, 236, 272, 345.
8. Dawes Genealogy, H. W. Holland, 1878, pp. 73-5, 79.
9. The Town Officials of Colonial Boston, R. F. Saybolt, 1939, pp. 116, 118, 121-2, 163, 166, 169, 172, 175; B. R. C. R., VIII, 42, 45, 60, 114, 181, 188, 194, 204, 216; XXIX, 215.
10. *Ibid.*, II, 102 of App.; VIII, 127; XI, 118; XIII, 27; XV, 67, 130, 202.
11. Research in Suffolk County Records by Mrs. J. T. Watts, Washington, D. C., Probates File No. 7240, Book XXXIV, 168-9, 246; XXXV, 85, 256-7, 627; XXXVI, 148, 222; XXXVIII, 6; New Ser. XX, 206, 208; Deeds, XXIII, 218; XXVII, 56; LXIV, 254; Boston First Church Records, part 2, pp. 7, 32.
12. Inscriptions . . . in King's Chapel Burial Ground, T. Bridgman, 1853, pp. 105, 160.
13. History of the Second, or Old North, Church, C. Robbins, 1852, p. 231.
14. B. R. C. R., VIII, 114; XXIX, 215; Commemorative Discourse Delivered in the New South Church, Church Green Boston, Dec. 25, 1864, G. E. Ellis, 1865, pp. 6-7, 19-20.
15. The Club of Odd Volumes, 1900, being "Early Boston Booksellers," G. E. Littlefield, pp. 131-6, 150-61, 192-200, 218.
16. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 2, VIII, 242; Ser. 5, VI, 92, 100, 169, 409; VII, 218.
17. An Historical Digest of the Provincial Press, Massachusetts Series, 1689-1783, L. H. Weeks and E. M. Bacon, 1911, Massachusetts Series I, 60, 101, 141, 146, 316, 319, 344, 444.
18. Early Massachusetts Press 1638-1711, G. E. Littlefield, 1907, I, 209-69; II, 61-2, 66.
19. American Bibliography 1639-1729, Charles Evans, 1903, I, No. 1445, No. 2842 and p. 443.
20. History of New England, J. G. Palfrey, 1885, IV, 271-4; History of the Colony and Province of Massachusetts Bay, T. Hutchinson, ed. by L. S. Mayo, 1936, II, 123-7.
21. Journals of the House of Representatives of Massachusetts, II, Introduction p. [vii], 226, 289, 295, 377; III, 115, 121, 144, 197; IV, 35, 40, 45; V, 96-7.
22. Acts and Resolves of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, VII, (App. 2), 327, 362, 742; VIII, (App. 3), 87, 414-5, 668, 691-2, 695, 725; X, (App. 5), 38, 71, 113, 128, 140, 179.
23. B. R. C. R., IX, XXIV, see indices.
24. Research in Suffolk County Records by Mrs. J. T. Watts, Deeds, XVIII, 403; XXIII, 218; XXXV, 256; LXIV, 254.
25. Complete History of the Boston Fire Department . . . , A. W. Brayley, 1889, pp. 29-31; Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1881, II, xxv, xxxv.
26. The Thomas Creese House, J. P. Brown and E. Ransom, 1940, pp. 5-9 and photos at back.
27. History and Antiquities of Boston, S. G. Drake, 1856, pp. 528, 552, 556; Topographical and Historical Description of Boston, N. B. Shurtleff, 1896, pp. 380-1.
28. Acts and Resolves of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, VIII (Appendix 3), 725-50.
29. Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1881, II, xxxv.

# BOSWORTH



- ②⁵ Haverhill
- Δ Killingly, Conn.
- ♂ Edgartown
- ◻ Dedham
- Hamilton
- ⋮ Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♂ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- + Malta, O.
- ④⁹ Mauston, Wis.
- † Marietta, O.



## BOSWORTH

**D**ORCAS<sup>1</sup> BOSWORTH who became the wife of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK by 1648-50 was undoubtedly an emigrant, for no evidence is found that her parents were here. Her sister, Susannah<sup>1</sup>, came to New England and married probably at Haverhill before 1651, and perhaps as early as 1648, Theophilus<sup>1</sup> Shatswell. It has been stated by some that Hanniel<sup>1</sup> Bosworth of Ipswich and Haverhill, was their father, but a close study<sup>1</sup> of obtainable facts proves this relationship impossible. He was undoubtedly a close kinsman, probably a brother. In view of these disclosures and in the absence of facts about the early history of DORCAS, herself, the origin of Hanniel<sup>1</sup> and his association<sup>1</sup> with her family are of importance to us.

\*Hanniel<sup>1</sup> Bosworth, born about 1615, came to New England in 1638 from the vicinity of Boston, co. Lincoln, England, with various other youths, all of whom were to be servants to John Whittingham of Southerton, co. Lincoln and of Ipswich in New England. The age of Hanniel<sup>1</sup> is shown by a deposition in 1681 when he said he was about sixty-six. During a law suit, tried in Ipswich in 1645 and again in 1655, between Richard Coy and William Hubbard, several interesting facts were disclosed regarding the emigrant Hanniel<sup>1</sup>. Mr. John Whittingham, contemplating a removal, with his mother, to New England, bargained with a number of youths and young men of that neighborhood to come as apprentices to him and to serve for a term of ten years in return for his payment of their expenses. Among those was Hanniel<sup>1</sup> Bosworth, then aged twenty-three years, Matthew Coy, about fifteen, Richard Coy about thirteen, and others. Hanniel<sup>1</sup> deposed in this trial "that while we was in London and all the way we came to New England I never heard any other time mentioned . . . but ten years and it was generally so understood by us that was fellow servants together." Another of the group testified about these two Coys who, in 1638, with other servants, "first came from Boston in Lincolnshire to London. There Mr. Whittingham kept them on his own charges from May 1st to June 24th so that his bringing up to London and charges of his staying there could not be less than 40sh . . . his passage to New England, £5 making £7," and extra provisions on the passage £1 "all of which could be no less than £8 disbursed in England . . . which could not be here worth less than £15 or for a boy thirteen years old to be laid here for ten years service cannot seem injurious to the servant or of much advantage to the master."

After arrival here, the apprenticeship of the Coy brothers was rebargained to relatives of John<sup>1</sup> Whittingham, but Hanniel<sup>1</sup> apparently remained in Whittingham's service and was surely a witness to his will dated in 1648 and probated the next year, and, as one of the four persons outside of the family to be left small

\*This unusual name was frequently misspelled Hamell or even Daniel.

legacies, received twenty shillings. In 1648 Hanniel<sup>1</sup> would have fulfilled his ten year contract, and it seems that he was then called a commoner. This long indenture probably accounts at least in part for his delayed marriage which occurred sometime before October, 1663, to Abigail, daughter of Thomas<sup>1</sup> and Elizabeth Scott of Ipswich, for at that time Hanniel<sup>1</sup> certified to the receipt of a £25 legacy to his wife by her father's will of 1653-4. In the will of his wife's uncle, Richard<sup>1</sup> Kimball, Hanniel<sup>1</sup> was called "cozen," was given £4 and was made an overseer of the estate. He became an administrator of the estate of Theophilus<sup>1</sup> Shatswell after the death of his presumed sister, Susannah (Bosworth) Shatswell, for a number of years was the guardian of her grandson, Abial<sup>2</sup> Mercer (Richard<sup>1</sup>) and as such was the administrator in 1683 of the estate that came to the child from his grandfather Shatswell.

It seems highly probable that the father of DORCAS (BOSWORTH) CLARK had been named "Hanniel" for her eldest son and, in turn, his eldest son were so named, as was also the only son of Hanniel<sup>1</sup> Bosworth, her presumed brother. In many minor ways, such as the witnessing of documents, signing of bonds, and acting as attorney, Hanniel<sup>1</sup> Bosworth was associated with the Shatswell and Clark families. Only a close relative could be expected to have so many points of contact.<sup>1</sup>

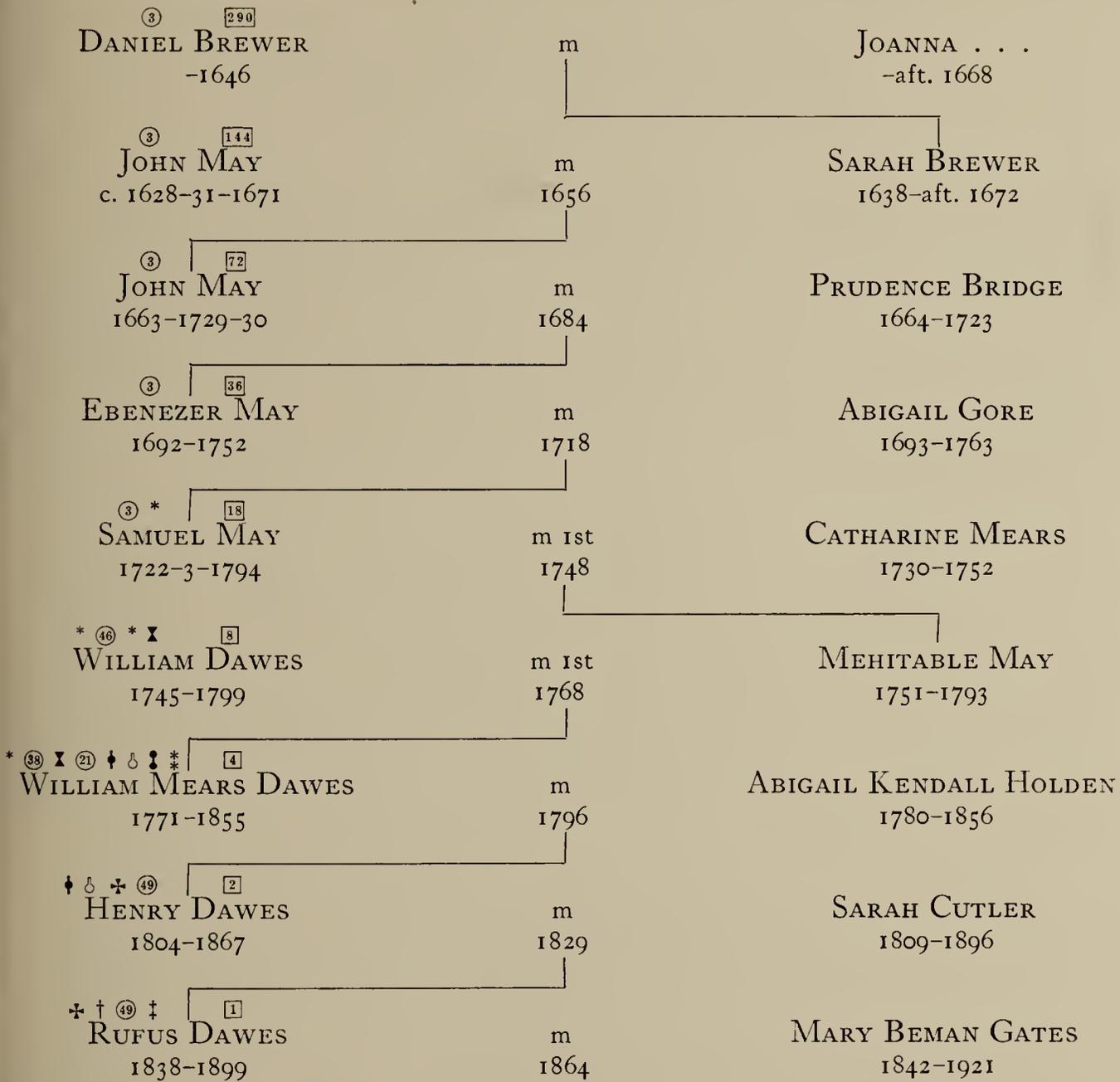
---

#### REFERENCES

1. Essex Probates, I, 103-5, 168-70, 424-8; II, 298; III, 17; Pope's Pioneers, p. 59; Hammatt Papers, I, 31, 327-8, 330-1, 412; Vital Records of Haverhill, II, 283; Putnam's Monthly Historical Magazine, II, 1893-4, 170, 175, 177-8; Records and Files of Essex Quarterly

Court, I, 381-2; II, 144; IV, 433; V, 103; VI, 72-3, 219-20, 267, 339; VII, 270, 371; VIII, 35; Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, 1633-1700; T. F. Waters, 1905, see index; Essex Institute Historical Collections, XII, 300-1.

# BREWER



- ③ Roxbury
- \* Boston
- X Marlborough
- ④⑥ Worcester
- ③⑧ Sudbury
- ②① Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.

- ♁ Morgan Co., O.
- ♁ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- † Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- † Marietta, O.



## BREWER (*Bruer*)

**D**ANIEL<sup>1</sup> BREWER with his wife, JOANNA, and three older children emigrated<sup>1</sup> on the "Lyon," William Peirce\*, Master, in 1632. On the same vessel came JAMES<sup>1</sup> OLMSTEAD with his family (Dawes-Gates, II, 611), John<sup>1</sup> Watson and the Isaac<sup>1</sup> Morrill\*\* family, both of whom settled in Roxbury as did also DANIEL<sup>1</sup>. Before sailing, these men had taken the oath of allegiance to the English king as was certified<sup>1</sup> by one Capt. Mason. The "Lyon" was quite a noted<sup>2</sup> vessel and its Master was even more noted. He made many trips between Old England and New, and was especially serviceable by making four voyages to New England during the years 1630-2 of which this was the fourth. He made his first trip during this period early in 1630, as did also the "Mary and John" (see Clapp, p. 155) not actually with Winthrop and his Fleet, but approved by them. The "Lyon" arrived shortly before the flag ship "Arabella." When Gov. Winthrop landed, finding much of sickness and lack of food, he ordered Master Peirce to head the "Lyon" eastward to Ireland with all speed to mend that difficulty. Peirce made his return trip during the stormy winter months, bringing two hundred tons of provisions and anti-scorbutics to fight the scrofula from which so many early voyagers suffered as a result of the limited fare. On this crossing, lasting sixty-seven days, Master Peirce also brought about twenty passengers, including<sup>11</sup> our JOHN<sup>1</sup> PERKINS with his wife and five children. Contrasted with their very stormy passage, the later voyage of DANIEL<sup>1</sup> and his family was an exceptionally pleasant one. Gov. John Winthrop recorded of its ending:<sup>3</sup>

1632 Sept. 16 "being the Lord's day. In the evening Mr. Peirce, in the ship Lyon, arrived, and came to an anchor before Boston. He brought one hundred and twenty-three passengers whereof fifty children, all in health; and lost not one person by the way, save his carpenter, who fell over board as he was caulking a port. They had been twelve weeks aboard, and eight weeks from Land's End. He had five days east wind and thick fog, so as he was forced to come, all that time, by the lead; and the first land he made was Cape Ann."

Remembering how frequently passengers died at sea or were ill when they arrived, we may feel congratulations for both DANIEL<sup>1</sup> and for Master Peirce in their good fortune.

Soon after the arrival of the family at Roxbury, "two miles from Boston", where they had chosen to make their home, DANIEL<sup>1</sup> and his wife JOANNA became

\*William Peirce<sup>10</sup> had been Master in 1623 of the "Anne" which brought over<sup>2</sup> the last of the Pilgrim group, including STEPHEN<sup>1</sup> TRACY, PATIENCE<sup>2</sup> BREWSTER and EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BANGS and his family (see Dawes-Gates, II). Peirce was for a time the master of a vessel<sup>2</sup> called the "Mayflower" (not the noted one) which came to Salem in 1629; he became a resident of Boston and was killed in 1641 by Spaniards while on a voyage to the Bahamas, carrying passengers for settlement.<sup>1</sup>

\*\*The suggestion has been made,<sup>14</sup> though without proof, that wife JOANNA may have been a sister of Isaac<sup>1</sup> Morrill. This tradition probably started because DANIEL<sup>1</sup> in his will<sup>12</sup> asked his "brethern in Christ" (church members) "Isaac Morrell and EDWARD BRIDG to be Ouerseers." In the second generation Morrill's daughter married Daniel<sup>2</sup> Brewster.

members<sup>4,5</sup> of the church, and by May 14, 1634, DANIEL<sup>1</sup> had acquired<sup>8</sup> freeman-ship. He had, beside his home lot and orchard, eight other pieces of land<sup>6</sup> totaling about ninety-five acres. The burning of the records of Roxbury in 1645 (see Gardner, p. 308) obliterated detailed knowledge of the earlier years in Roxbury but about 1638 DANIEL<sup>1</sup> had a family which would have included either five or six of his children and at least one outsider for it is recorded that "John Greene dying in the house of DANIELL BREWAR, administration was granted to said BREWAR."<sup>8</sup> Greene is otherwise referred to as "lately dwelling with DANILL BRVER of roxbery,"<sup>8</sup> and his inventory taken February 14, 1638-9, showed a valuation of between £5 and £6. The only land transaction found pertaining to DANIEL<sup>1</sup> was dated May 5, 1640, and covered about three acres of meadow lying on Stony River which Joseph Weld bought for £6-10. DANIEL<sup>1</sup> signed by his mark<sup>6</sup> which consisted of his initials.

In the early days Roxbury territory spread eight miles<sup>20</sup> from east to west and two miles north and south. On the east was Boston partly separated by a shallow bay; Muddy River (Brookline) and Newton lay on the north, Dedham on the west and Dorchester to the south (see map, p. 416).<sup>20</sup> Many of the early settlers perhaps including DANIEL<sup>1</sup> located at first in the easterly part of the town, near Boston, but he is said<sup>25</sup> to have resided at Jamaica Plain (see map, p. 416) as did our MAY family. Its uneven, rocky surface gave the name to Roxbury and the "conglomerate" or "puddingstone" with which the soil abounded gave rise<sup>20</sup> to a fairy-like poem by Oliver Wendell Holmes called the "Dorchester Giant."

One description of the early town was that a mile from Dorchester "lieth Roxberry which is a faire and handsome countrey town, the inhabitants of it being all very rich." A later description states that Roxbury was "filled with a very laborious people, whose labors the Lord hath blessed, that in room of dismall swampes and tearing bushes they have goodly fruit trees, fruitful fields and gardens, their heard of cows, oxen and other young cattell . . . Their streets are large and some fayre houses yet they have built their house for church assembly destitute and unbeautiful. . . ." <sup>20</sup>

In December, 1640, DANIEL<sup>1</sup> was on a jury<sup>8</sup> which tried one Hugh Buets who was found "guilty of heresy, & that his person & errors are dangerous for infection of others" so he was ordered to "bee gone out of o<sup>r</sup> iurisdiction by 24<sup>th</sup> psent, upon paine of death & not to returne, upon paine of being hanged." The jury received a shilling apiece<sup>8</sup> for their verdict.

DANIEL<sup>1</sup> was one of the subscribers\* on August 1, 1645, to the Free Schoole<sup>9</sup> in Roxbury (see Bridge, p. 113) and bound his home for the payment of five shillings annually toward its support. This was recognized as a perpetual obligation and was being collected one hundred years later, though about 1674 the subscriptions were cut in half so that while his son Daniel<sup>2</sup> was paying, the amount due became 2 shillings 6 pence.

DANIEL<sup>1</sup> BREWER lived only about fifteen years in the new world. Calling himself "husbandman", he signed his will<sup>12</sup> with his mark "D B" on January 12, 1645-6, asking EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE to be one of the overseers of it, as he was also a witness, making his mark and proving the document on May 20, 1646. DANIEL<sup>1</sup> named his five living children but gave much of his estate to his eldest son who

\*Among the sixty-odd others were our JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE, EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE, JOHN<sup>1</sup> MAY and PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER.<sup>9</sup>

was to pay various legacies, including £5 to SARAH<sup>2</sup> who was also to receive at her marriage "a flock bed furnished, my new kettle & a pewter dish." He made careful provision for JOANNA, his wife, whom he named as executrix. She was to have during her life the use of the house, half of the barn and other outhouses, timber for repairs, firewood, a red steer, all the swine, three Cows, "sufficient hey, fresh & salt, for the keeping of three Cows, and the plowing & sowing of the said home lott . . ." etc.<sup>12</sup> His estate amounted to over £166 and we are told that on March 28, 1646, "Bro. BREWER dyed of an Ulcer in his longes w<sup>h</sup> pced through into his bowels & emptyed thith<sup>r</sup> to his great swelling & torment,"<sup>5</sup> though another record<sup>7</sup> makes the above date the day of his burial. Widow JOANNA seems to deserve the prize for an extended widowhood of over forty years for she lived<sup>7</sup> unmarried until February 7, 1688-9, being then eighty-seven years old. Only one small item has been found in print, bearing on her later life, but it may be significant of her character. On January 25, 1668, a covenant was made<sup>9</sup> between the seven "ffeofs" then in charge of Roxbury Free School and John Prudden whereby he was to teach for the coming year. This document was also agreed to by fifty-eight inhabitants and the clerk or amanuensis who wrote the document evidently signed all these names to it. One name was written "Daniell Bruer" (meaning Daniel<sup>2</sup>), then a line was drawn through the given name and "widow" was interlined so that it read "widow BRUER". Perhaps she was a positive lady and insisted that records be exactly right<sup>8</sup>!

The children\* of DANIEL<sup>1</sup> and JOANNA (—) BREWER, the first three born in England<sup>1</sup> and the others at Roxbury were<sup>1,4,5,7,9,15</sup>

- I. \*\*Daniel<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1624; d. at Roxbury Jan. 8, 1708, ae. 84; m. there Nov. 5, 1652, Hannah<sup>2</sup> Morrill (Isaac<sup>1</sup>).<sup>14</sup> He became a member of the Artillery Company.<sup>16</sup>
- II. Anne<sup>2</sup>, she became a member<sup>4,5</sup> of Roxbury Church about 1644-7. Perhaps she who d. Mar. 15, 1658. She was named in her father's will.
- III. Joanna<sup>2</sup>, on Apr. 24, 1681-2, she "took hold of the covenant" at Roxbury Church,<sup>5</sup> unless it be her niece Joanna<sup>2</sup> (Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>) who did so. Named in her father's will.
- IV. Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, b. May 1, 1635; d. at Roxbury Feb. 26, 1692-3, ae. 57; m. 1st by 1660 Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Kingsbury (Joseph<sup>1</sup> of Dedham); m. 2nd Dec. 6, 1661, Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Rand (Robert<sup>1</sup>).<sup>15</sup>
- V. SARAH<sup>2</sup>, † b. March 8 or 10, 1638; m. at Roxbury Nov. 19, 1656, JOHN<sup>2</sup> MAY (see May, p. 414).<sup>13</sup>
- VI. George<sup>2</sup>, no record of birth, but his death in 1646 is claimed<sup>9,15</sup> but he is not mentioned in will of DANIEL<sup>1</sup>.

\*A quite definite relationship in this family is seen<sup>19,21</sup> in the will of Robert<sup>1</sup> Porteous (Portise) of Boston who died in July, 1681, at the home of his "daughter Weld", meaning Hannah<sup>2</sup> Porteous who married in 1678 John<sup>2</sup> Weld (John<sup>2</sup>, Joseph<sup>1</sup>). This will referred to Daniel<sup>2</sup> Brewer and Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> Brewer as his "friends" and also called them his "brothers" and his "relatives". The first wife of the testator had been an Alice Greenwood but he might have married secondly one of the unattached daughters of DANIEL<sup>1</sup> BREWER.

A statement is made<sup>18</sup> that Hannah (considered a variant of Joanna) a claimed daughter in this family married about 1651-2 Thomas<sup>2</sup> Chandler (William<sup>1</sup>) and died at Andover Oct. 25, 1717, ae 87-8. It seems somewhat doubtful that "Joanna" would be changed thus and more likely that the Hannah concerned was not attached to this family.

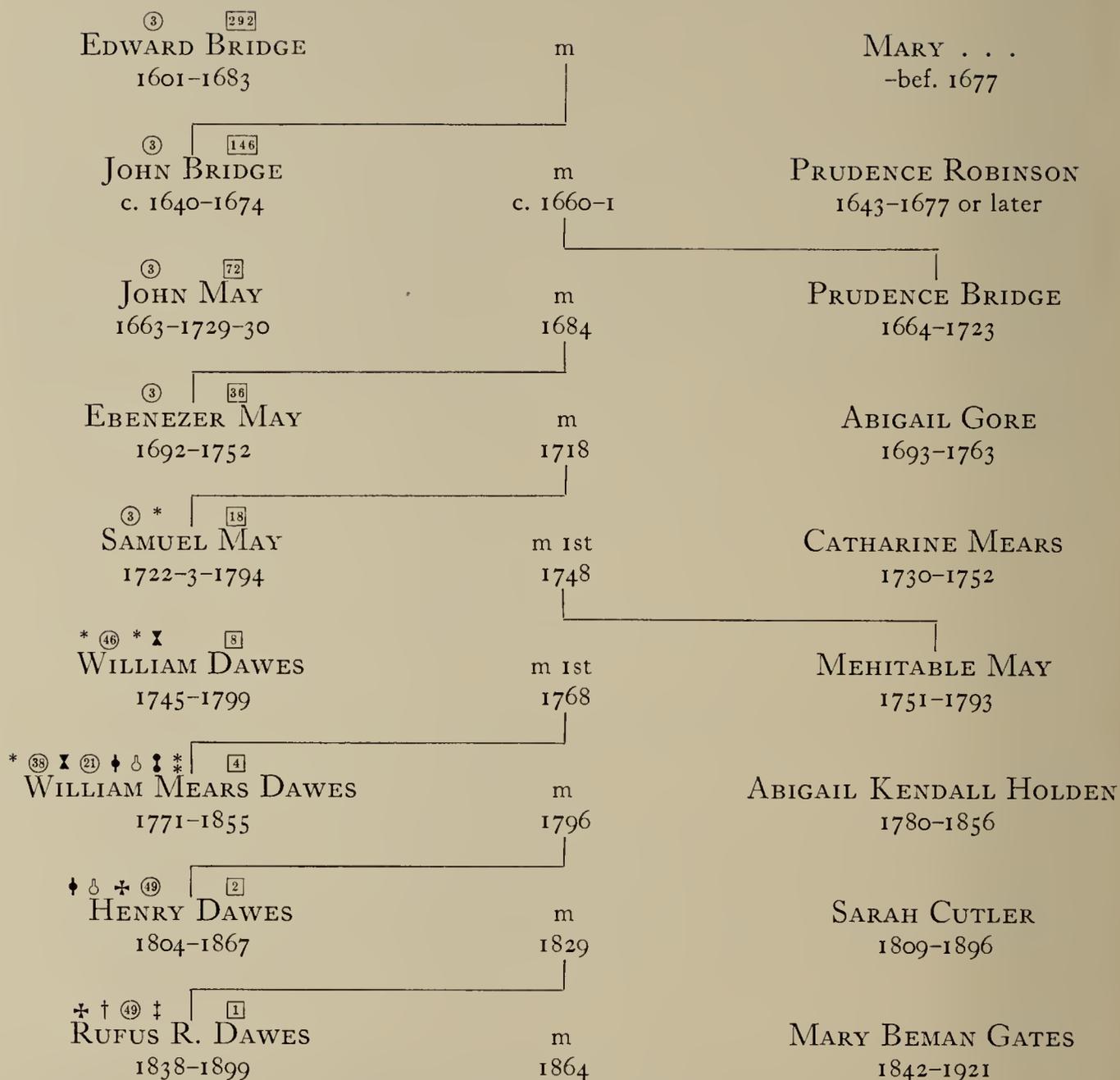
\*\*In October, 1646, Daniel<sup>2</sup> was called "of full age" yet in 1677 he claimed to be forty years old,<sup>22</sup> thus furnishing a greater discrepancy in age than is ordinarily seen. In 1672 he joined EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE in signing<sup>9,23</sup> the "Censure of Harvard" (see Bridge, p. 115).

†Another published claim<sup>13,17</sup> would give our SARAH<sup>2</sup> a first husband "Bruce". No record is found<sup>19</sup> to justify the theory and a better one seems to be that the spelling "BRUER", her maiden name, has been distorted into "Bruce" and thus into an extra husband.

## REFERENCES

1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 86-7, 99-101.
2. The Winthrop Fleet of 1630, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 106-7; Hotten's Emigrants, p. 150; New England Register, XIV, 300-1.
3. Original Narratives of Early American History, VII being John Winthrop's Journal, I, 92.
4. History of the First Church of Roxbury, W. E. Thwing, 1908, pp. 48, 58.
5. Savage, I, 243-4; Pope's Pioneers, p. 67; Boston Record Commissioner's Report, VI, 75, 86, 95, 173, 176.
6. Ibid., 2, 5, 11, 25, 55.
7. Vital Records of Roxbury, I, 44; II, 44, 51, 472-3, 476; New England Register, V, 334.
8. Ibid., III, 92; Massachusetts Bay Records, I, 248, 312, 368; New England Register, VII, 30.
9. History of Roxbury, C. M. Ellis, 1847, pp. 38, 56, 92; History of the Grammar School, C. K. Dillaway, 1860, frontispiece and pp. 11-2, 30-2, 181.
10. Banks' Planters, pp. 52-5, 85-6.
11. Ibid., 92-3; John Perkins Genealogy, G. A. Perkins, 1889, pp. 1-2.
12. New England Register, VII, 170-1.
13. May Genealogy, Samuel May, 1878, pp. 1-2.
14. Morrill Kindred, A. M. Smith, 1914, I, 17-8, 21.
15. Fallas Genealogy, L. F. Alexander, 1929, pp. 236-7; "My Ancestors", L. M. Paine, 1914, p. 102; Rand Genealogy, F. O. Rand, 1898, p. 10.
16. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Co., O. A. Roberts, 1895, I, 205.
17. Thwing's History of the First Church, p. 118.
18. Chandler Genealogy, G. Chandler, 1883, pp. 3, 9; Booth and Allied Families, C. E. Booth, 1910, p. 157.
19. Research by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass.
20. Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880, I, 401-3.
21. — Parker — Ruggles — Ancestors & Descendants, J. W. Linzee, 1913, pp. 358-9.
22. Suffolk Deeds (pub.) I, 78; X, 186.
23. New England Register, XXXV, 122-3; Magnalia Christi Americana, C. Mather, 1852, I, 539-40.
24. The Poetical Works of Oliver Wendell Holmes, 1879, pp. 7-8.
25. Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880, I, 420-2.

# BRIDGE



- ③ Roxbury
- \* Boston
- ④⑥ Worcester
- ✕ Marlborough
- ③⑧ Sudbury
- ②① Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- ♂ Thomaston, Me.

- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ♀ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- ✕ Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## BRIDGE (*Bridges*)

**E**DWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE, born<sup>13</sup> about 1601 in England, emigrated<sup>1</sup> by or before 1637. He either brought wife MARY with him or married her soon after his arrival for they had<sup>1</sup> a child recorded at Roxbury as having been born<sup>13</sup> on November 18, 1637. EDWARD<sup>1</sup> and his wife joined<sup>2,3</sup> the Roxbury Church at an early date after which he became a freeman<sup>5</sup> on May 22, 1639. His home was on Dorchester road, being an eight acre tract<sup>6</sup> north of Thomas Bell's and west of George Holmes', and he had seven other tracts recorded<sup>4</sup> to him, one of which adjoined the land of DANIEL<sup>1</sup> BREWER.

EDWARD<sup>1</sup> is not recorded as having held any public office but he had the courage of his convictions where principle was at stake as will be seen. One point of pride bears upon his support<sup>18,19</sup> of the Roxbury "Free Schoole" which came into existence in the following way: The will of Samuel Hagborne signed in 1642 (following the establishment of a free school in Dorchester) made the provision that "When Roxbury shall set up a free schoole in y<sup>e</sup> towne, there shall ten shilling per annum out of ye necke of land and ten shilling per annum out of the [his] house and house lot be paid unto it forever."<sup>19</sup> Sometime between 1642 and 1645, the inhabitants had decided to follow Hagborne's lead and entered into an agreement for the support of a free school. The original document sometimes referred to as a charter is said<sup>6,18</sup> to have been lost with the town records in the gun powder explosion of late March, 1645, (see Gardner, p. 308) but if so it was replaced<sup>18,19</sup> by the full text of a similar agreement, with the sixty-odd signatures, under date of August 31, 1645, which writing is still extant and treasured carefully. It consists of a small parchment covered book, tied up like a scroll, and following the signatures contains a history of the early existence of the school. The opening phrases<sup>18,19</sup> of the document showing how seriously and hopefully they planned this development in education were:

"Whereas, the inhabitants of Roxburie, out of their religious care of posteritie, have taken into consideration how necusarie the education of their children in literature will be to fitt them for publicke service both in Church and Commonwealthe in succeeding ages, They, therefore, unanimously have consented and agreed to erect a free schoole in the said Towne of Roxbury . . ."<sup>19</sup>

It went on to bind their homes for the payment of their subscriptions which ranged in amount from two shillings to one pound four shillings annually. They elected seven "Feoffees" or trustees to handle the business of the school and among the signers were EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE, JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE, DANIEL<sup>1</sup> BREWER, JOHN<sup>1</sup> MAY and PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER. In December, 1646, a part of these sponsors signed<sup>18</sup> an even broader statement that "not only their homes, but also their yardes, orchards, gardenings, outhouses and homsteads" were liable for the payment of the sums

they had promised. At first they planned to pay a teacher about £20 for a year's service, but eventually that amount was increased.

In November, 1652, the trustees agreed<sup>19</sup> with Daniel Weld, then teaching, "that he provide convenient benches, with forms with tables, for the scholars to sit on and write at, with a convenient seate for the schoolemaster, a Deske to put the Dictionary on and shelves to lay up bookes . . ." for which he was to receive £4 from the rental of school lands, in addition to his salary. In February, 1668, the Feoffees bargained with John Prudden to teach for a year and he promised to "use his best skill and endeavours, both by precept and example, to instruct in all scholasticall, morall, and theologicall discipline, the children (so far as they are or shall be capable) of those persons whose names are here underwritten, all ABCDarians excepted."<sup>18,19</sup> There followed then the names of fifty-eight signers including those of widow BRUER, JOHN<sup>1</sup> MAYS, Sr., EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE and PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER.

The school was planned primarily to serve the children or descendants of its donors, but the will of Thomas Bell, one of its most generous benefactors, dated in 1671 and proved the following year, specified that his gift was "with special regard to the children of the poor." By this man's extensive bounty, and gifts [especially of land] from many other citizens, Roxbury Latin School as it came to be known, acquired a very rich endowment. It admitted boys only, and served the eastern\* part of Roxbury where most of the early families had settled. An amusing item relative to a salary payment made in 1773 to one John Eliot then a teacher of Roxbury Latin School is shown by his receipt<sup>18</sup> to the Feoffees for "a Bag of Coppers, weight, thirty-four pounds, in part of my salary for the year current, the same being by estimation £4-13-4 lawful money . . ."

In the course of time (about 1674) the amounts first subscribed to the Roxbury School for which the citizens' homes were bound were reduced by half but for about a hundred years collections of these obligations were made, being legally recognized<sup>18,19</sup> as late as 1722. One historian has said:

"I do not know where one can find earlier, more constant, more generous, or more consecrated efforts in the interests of education, and in the list of subscribers it is remarkable how few made their 'marks,' for their pledges. . . ."

That "was the heroic age of New England." Down through the years it chose highly educated men<sup>18,19</sup> as its teachers.\*\*

Before 1651 EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE, JOHN<sup>1</sup> MAY and six other men had bought a quantity of marsh land from Hugh Pritchard. This marsh presently became an island<sup>8</sup> at the mouth<sup>6</sup> of Stony River because of a "creeke that hath been digged."

\*For mention of a school endowed by Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Eliot in the western part of Roxbury, at Jamaica Plains' see Gore, p. 322. He had also been most generous and influential in the earlier establishment and maintenance of the Latin School.

\*\*It is interesting to note that

In 1731-5 our EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER was one of its trustees.<sup>18</sup>

In 1734, the year after his graduation<sup>28</sup> from Harvard our THOMAS<sup>6</sup> BALCH taught the school.

In 1740 Nathaniel<sup>4</sup> Sumner (following graduation<sup>28</sup> from Harvard) son of our EDWARD<sup>3</sup> taught it.

In 1741 John Newman (who became son-in-law of our EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER) taught it.

In 1763 following graduation<sup>28</sup> at Harvard Benjamin<sup>6</sup> Balch (Rev. THOMAS<sup>6</sup>) taught it as did also some other<sup>18</sup> Benjamin Balch in 1774.

In 1768 Increase<sup>6</sup> Sumner grandson of EDWARD<sup>3</sup>, having graduated at Harvard<sup>28</sup> in 1767 taught it. He became Governor of Massachusetts in 1797.

In 1793 after graduation<sup>28</sup> at Harvard Charles<sup>6</sup> Cutler son of our Rev. MANASSEH<sup>6</sup> was its teacher.

For some reason a second deed and distribution of this marsh was made<sup>8</sup> on January 30, 1651.

With the threatened loss of their cherished charter (see Appendix "B", p. 694) many colonists in many towns memorialized<sup>10</sup> the General Court to do all in their power to protect it. The petition from Roxbury dated October 25, 1664, was signed by the mark<sup>7,10</sup> of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE, by his son JOHN<sup>2</sup> as well as by JOHN<sup>1</sup> MAY and PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER and thirty-six others who "request the honored Court, both magistrates and Deputyes to stand fast in or [our] prsnt libertye" and the petitioners promised to pray the Lord "to assist them to stere right in these shaking times."<sup>10</sup>

Another item which may seem ridiculous to modern minds but which was deeply serious to the Puritans of Roxbury is entitled<sup>10</sup> "Censures on Harvard". It appears that about 1671-2 the Magistrates sent letters to the Roxbury Church, and probably also to the other churches in the Bay Colony, asking for liberal contributions for Harvard and asking also "if any of the good people have any obiecsions" (objections, complaints) against the school; that if they did they were invited to announce them and the officials promised to do what they could to remove the cause of complaint. Having recapitulated these facts, the Roxbury Church-men went on to say:

"We take the boldnesse to propose an obiecsion — our only scope is, to indevor the removal of an evyl (as it appeareth to us) in the educasion of youth at the Colledg . . ."

They explained that they believed that these young persons were being established in ways of pride "— and in perticular in their long haire which last first took head (culminated?) and broke out at the Colledg — and now it is got into our pulpets, to the great grief and ffeare of many godly hearts in the Country. —"<sup>10</sup> This unique document was signed by twenty-four Roxbury men, including EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE, Daniel<sup>2</sup> Brewer (DANIEL<sup>1</sup>) and by Rev. John Eliot, their pastor, who was bitterly opposed to the use of wigs, considering it a "luxurious feminine prolixity for men to wear the hair long."<sup>22\*</sup>

EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE was thoroughly trusted by his friends and neighbors as is evidenced<sup>11</sup> by the fact that he was frequently called upon to witness wills, take inventories, appraise estates and act as an overseer with executors. Two of these cases pertained<sup>11</sup> to the wills and estates of JOHN<sup>1</sup> MAY and of DANIEL<sup>1</sup> BREWER. EDWARD<sup>1</sup> sometimes signed with his mark<sup>25</sup> but at times by autograph.<sup>10,14</sup> Strangely enough, it was not a uniform mark. In July, 1673, he served on the grand jury<sup>15</sup> at Boston.

The date of the death of wife MARY is not recorded but it antedated the will of her husband<sup>14</sup> which was signed on December 5, 1677. This ducument\*\* referred to the property he had given to his deceased son JOHN<sup>2</sup> and divided his remaining estate between daughter Mary (Bridge) Gay who was to receive one-third and grandson Edward<sup>3</sup> Bridge who with the other children of JOHN<sup>2</sup>, deceased, was to receive two-thirds. He made Daniel<sup>2</sup> Brewer (DANIEL<sup>1</sup>) and JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE his overseers and executors.<sup>14</sup> EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE died at Roxbury<sup>13</sup> on December 20

\*Cotton Mather<sup>22</sup> says of Eliot that "long hair was always very loathsome to him; — much more for men thus to disfigure themselves with hair that is none of their own; and most of all for ministers of the gospel to ruffle it in excesses of this kind. . . ." Then Mather adds, "The hair of them that professed religion, long before his (Eliot's) death, grew too long for him to swallow — until at last he gave over, with some regret complaining, 'The lust is become insuperable'."<sup>22</sup>

\*\*Either the estate of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> acquired rights in the New Roxbury (Woodstock, Connecticut) settlement or land there was acquired by Edward<sup>2</sup> Bridge (JOHN<sup>2</sup>), his heir.<sup>4</sup> A total of over seventy-nine acres are recorded to one of that name.

or 23, 1683, "aged about eighty-two years" and was recorded<sup>3</sup> as "an aged broth<sup>r</sup>." He left an estate of £320 which was probated December 27, 1683.

The known children of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> and MARY (—) BRIDGE, two and probably all three of them born in Roxbury, were<sup>1,2,3,13</sup>

- i. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. Nov. 18, 1637, recorded at Roxbury; d. at Dedham<sup>20</sup> Apr. 13, 1718; m. at Roxbury Nov. 23, 1661, Samuel<sup>2</sup> Gay (John<sup>1</sup> of Watertown). He died just two days after his wife.<sup>12</sup>
- ii. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, b. May 31, 1638; not named in father's will and no further record.
- iii. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, see following.

JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE (*Edward*<sup>1</sup>) was born, doubtless at Roxbury, and probably about 1640. He died<sup>13</sup> there on August 20, 1674, probably in his early thirties, and nine years prior to his father's death. He married<sup>13,16</sup> about 1660–1 PRUDENCE<sup>2</sup> ROBINSON (see Robinson, p. 532) who survived him.

One land transaction<sup>24</sup> entered into by JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE concerned an eighteen acre tract which had belonged to John Ruggles, Jr. (Thomas<sup>1</sup>) of Roxbury and was sold by him to George Brand and JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE. This transfer was not dated but must have occurred before September, 1658, and the death of John<sup>2</sup> Ruggles (called junior to differentiate him from his uncle John<sup>1</sup> of Roxbury). At the settlement of Ruggles' estate<sup>24</sup> in April, 1660, JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE owed it an account, which might have been for his share of the above land.

In June, 1661, JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE, in company with JOHN<sup>2</sup> MAY, John<sup>2</sup> Watson, William Lyon and William Gary, purchased<sup>8</sup> the property left by Philip Eliot, deceased brother of the Rev. John<sup>1</sup>, and in September, 1661, the first four of these men sold to the fifth,<sup>8</sup> fifteen acres, perhaps a part of the same land. This deed was not acknowledged<sup>8</sup> until 1672, after the death of JOHN<sup>2</sup> MAY, so his widow SARAH (BREWER) MAY acknowledged the truth of his signature.<sup>8</sup>

On March 22, 1662–3, JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE became a member of the church, as did his wife, PRUDENCE, on April 5 following.<sup>2,3</sup> In 1664 JOHN<sup>2</sup> joined his father, EDWARD<sup>1</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup> MAY, PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER and thirty-six other Roxbury men in a petition pleading that the General Court should safe-guard the colony's charter<sup>10</sup> (see Appendix B, p. 694).

Before the tragic death on July 6, 1668, of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON of Dorchester, father of PRUDENCE, he wrote<sup>16</sup> a lengthy will "with his owne hand" but left it uncompleted and unsigned. On July 31 his widow, two sons and two sons-in-law endorsed it and agreed that it should be recorded. JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE signed with the others and was appointed one of three administrators.<sup>16</sup> This document specified that PRUDENCE, wife of JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE should receive twenty pounds and that each grandchild of ROBINSON (which would include PRUDENCE<sup>3</sup> BRIDGE) should receive ten shillings.<sup>16</sup> JOHN<sup>2</sup> witnessed<sup>24</sup> the will of Edward Bugby of Roxbury in November, 1668, by which he was made an overseer. In February, 1669, he bought<sup>8</sup> from John Curtis a dwelling house bounded on the southeast by the highway of Dedham. The price was £75 and it was to be paid<sup>8</sup> within six months. He witnessed deeds<sup>8</sup> in 1669 and 1671. But JOHN<sup>2</sup> died<sup>13</sup>, perhaps suddenly since he left no will, on August 20, 1674. He must have suffered intensely for the church record states<sup>3</sup> that:

"JOHN BRIDGE, died of y<sup>e</sup> Winde Collick and was buried the day following. His body was opened, he had sundry small holes in his stomak & bowels & one hole in his stomak

y<sup>t</sup> a man's fist might passe through, w<sup>ch</sup> is thought was rent w<sup>th</sup> vyolent straining to vomit, the night before he dyed, for the watchers observed y<sup>t</sup> something seemed to rend w<sup>th</sup>in him, and he saide of it I am a dead man."

So JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE became famous in the medical annals of New England as being the subject of one of the earliest autopsies.<sup>15</sup> This is thought to have been<sup>15</sup> the third one performed in New England. The earliest recorded post mortem occurred on March 11, 1663, when Bray Rossiter was allowed £20 "for openinge Kellies child" and for two calls in Connecticut; the next one in March, 1667, was on the body of "Mr. John Alcock, Physician", of Roxbury and then came the one on JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE in 1674.

In 1668 "a poor planter" had died and it is recorded that "some Chirurgeons proffered to open him but his wife would not assent to it and so his disease was hidden in the Grave." When one reads of the "toolles" carried by these "Chirurgeons" in their "chists" one can easily realize just how crude these autopsies must have been. One medical authority states<sup>23</sup> that they were performed "more out of curiosity than from any real interest in pathology." If the wife of the "poor planter" mentioned above had given her consent, the probability is the disease would have been "hidden in the grave", nevertheless.

Widow PRUDENCE, left with either four or five children, the youngest but a year and a half old, was made administratrix<sup>16</sup> of her husband's estate, giving bond of £500, with Isaac<sup>2</sup> Johnson (John<sup>1</sup>) and her father-in-law EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE acting as sureties in the amount of £250 each. On July 31, 1677, a settlement of this estate was made in Suffolk County Court<sup>15</sup> whereby the movable property was wholly given to widow PRUDENCE and her heirs, and she was allowed "the improvem<sup>t</sup> of all the lands for her maintenance and Education of the Children left by s<sup>d</sup> BRIDGE till the eldest come of age, and that then one third onely of the lands shalbee to the use of the widdow during her life and the other two thirds proportioned to the Children, the eldest Son to have a double portion & at her decease the other third injoied by her during life to bee alike proportioned among the children."<sup>15</sup>

Some obligation of debt had arisen against the family by 1681 — perhaps only the matter of support — for Samuel<sup>2</sup> Ruggles, Sr. (Thomas<sup>1</sup>) petitioned the General Court that certain land from the estate of JOHN<sup>2</sup> might be sold to pay the debt. The court ordered that three other leading men of the town be a committee to view the land and to empower the petitioner to "passe deeds for the same, so as the guardians for the children of JN<sup>o</sup> BRIDGE be joined to the sajd committee, to see that the debt be justly due, & no more sold than is necessary for y<sup>e</sup> payment abouesd."<sup>17</sup>

And so ends our knowledge of widow PRUDENCE, for the time or place of her death has not been found. One and perhaps two of her six children died young and the four others married. If she married again, evidence of it has not been found for our latest record\* of her is in July, 1677, as shown.

The children of JOHN<sup>2</sup> and PRUDENCE (ROBINSON) BRIDGE, all born in Roxbury were<sup>1,3,13,16</sup>

1. Mary<sup>s</sup>, b. Apr. 21, 1662, bp. Mar. 29, 1663; d. 1701 or later;<sup>20</sup> m. at Roxbury Mar. 23, 1680-1 Joseph<sup>2</sup> Lyons (Wm.<sup>1</sup>).<sup>20</sup>

\*It may be evidence that she was still living on August 21, 1681, that when her daughter PRUDENCE<sup>s</sup> BRIDGE became a church member<sup>3</sup> on that date she was specifically designated as a "maid."

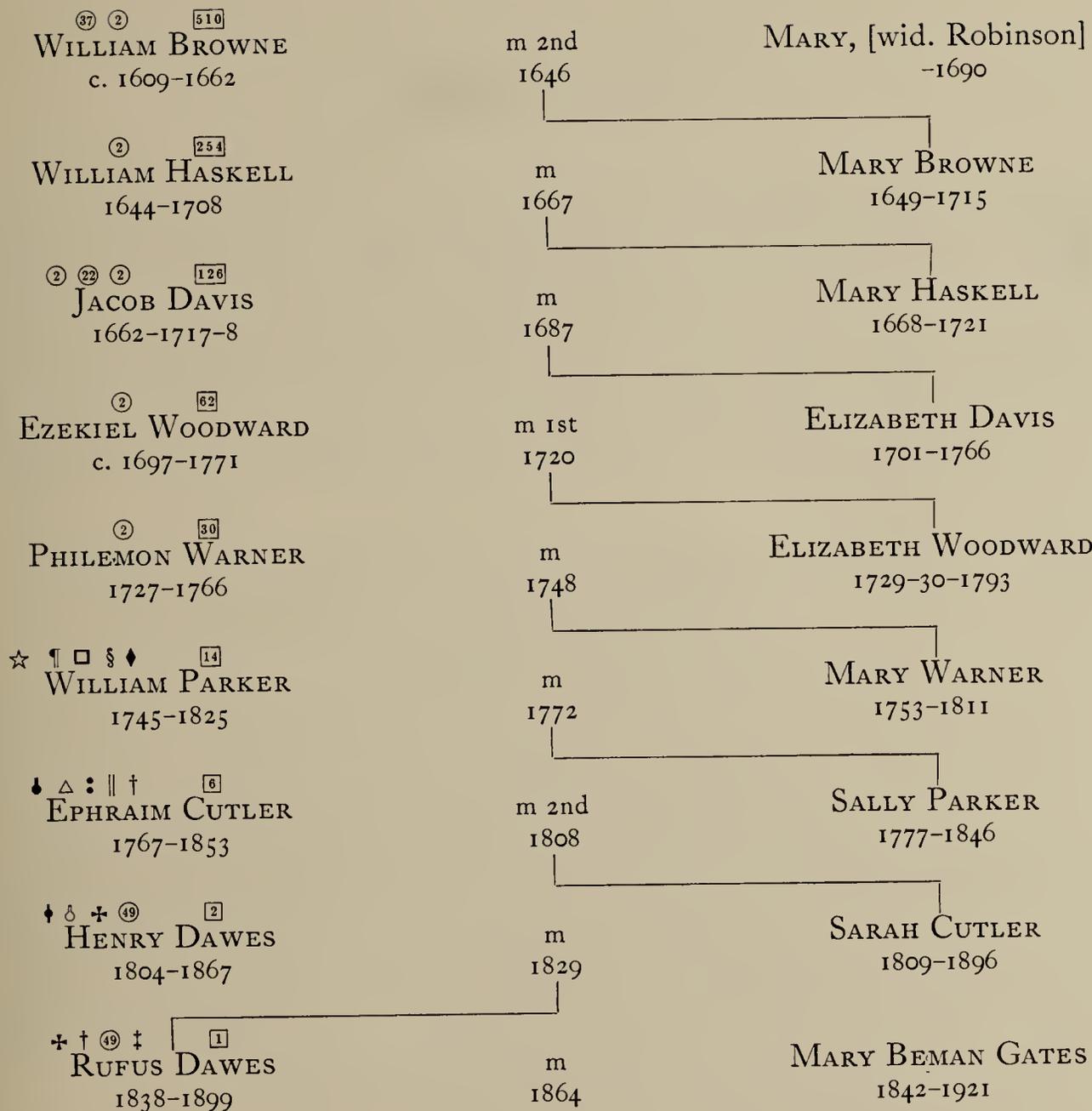
- II. PRUDENCE<sup>s</sup>, b. June 11, bp. 12, 1664; d. at Roxbury Sept. 26, 1723; m. there June 2, 1684, JOHN<sup>s</sup> MAY (see May, p. 415).<sup>20</sup>
- III. Margaret<sup>s</sup>, b. July 18, bp. 22, 1666; d. Mar. 19, bur. 22, 1670-1, ae. 4.
- IV. Edward<sup>s</sup>, b. Sept. 9, bp. 13, 1668; named in will of his grandfather EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE. It was undoubtedly he who m.<sup>13</sup> at Roxbury May 27, 1690, Mary Brooks<sup>20</sup> and died<sup>13</sup> after July, 1724. They had a dau. Prudence and others.
- v. John<sup>s</sup>, b. Jan. 11, bp. 15, 1670-1; no further record seen.
- VI. \*Margaret<sup>s</sup> b. Mar. 11, bp. 23, 1672-3; d. at Brookline,<sup>21</sup> Dec. 28, 1701, ae. 28; m. by 1699 as his first wife, Joshua<sup>2</sup> Stedman (Thomas<sup>1</sup>). They had a daughter<sup>21</sup> born Jan. 20, 1699-1700.

\*By a deed dated, acknowledged and entered on March 31, 1698, Margaret Bridge of Roxbury, spinster, daughter of JOHN BRIDGE, late of Roxbury, yeoman, deceased intestate, sold to her brother, Edward<sup>s</sup> Bridge of Roxbury, land in that town.<sup>21</sup>

## REFERENCES

1. Savage's Gene. Dict. I, 247-8; Pope's Pioneers of Mass., 1900, p. 67.
2. History of the First Church of Roxbury, W. E. Thwing, 1908, pp. 54, 61, 122; New England Register, XXXV, 247.
3. Boston Record Commissioners Report, VI, 73, 82, 84, 88, 95, 124-7, 129, 131, 179, 181, 185.
4. Ibid., VI, 4, 11, 25, 30, 44, 46, 51-2, 63-5.
5. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 376; New England Register, III, 187.
6. Ibid., II, 53; History of Roxbury, C. M. Ellis, 1847, pp. 17-8, 34, 37-9, 57, 88, 92.
7. History of Roxbury, F. S. Drake, 1878, pp. 17-8, 49, 428.
8. Suffolk Deeds, (published) I, 144; III, 219; VI, 142, 284; VII, 310, 322-3, 330.
9. Savage, III, 586; New England Register, XII, 344; Thwing's First Church, p. 47; B. R. C. R., VI, 75.
10. New England Register, V, 394; XXXV, 121-3; "Index of Subjects" of same, p. 34.
11. Ibid., VII, 171; XV, 126, 248; XLVIII, 460; — Parker — Ruggles — Ances. and Desc., J. W. Linzee, 1913, pp. 425, 453, 467.
12. New England Register, XXXIII, 45; History of Woodstock, Conn., C. W. Bowen, 1933, V, 297.
13. Vital Records of Roxbury, I, 40-1; II, 45-6, 473.
14. Research by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Suffolk Co. Probates, IX, 183, miscellaneous docket; New Series, Administrations, II, 323; Suffolk Co. Court Files, No. 1174.
15. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XIX, 276; XXIX, 270; XXX, 836-7.
16. William — Robinson — Genealogy, E. D. Harris, 1890, pp. 3-8.
17. Records of Massachusetts Bay, V, 316.
18. History of the Grammar School (Roxbury), C. K. Dillaway, 1860, pp. 7-27, 31, 39-43, 61-2, 66, 175, 185-6, 194 et seq.
19. Ellis' Roxbury, pp. 34-58; Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880, I, 419-20.
20. Bowen's Woodstock, 1930, III, 477; Lyon Memorial, A. B. & G. W. A. Lyons, 1905, I, 33; May Genealogy, Samuel May, 1878, pp. 1-2; "My Ancestors", Lyman May Paine, 1914, p. 103; New England Register, XXXIV, 299; Vital Records of Dedham, I, 44; — Parker — Ruggles — Ances. & Desc., pp. 456-7.
21. Ibid., p. 163; Vita. Records of Brookline, pp. 64, 156, 229; Suffolk Deeds (unpub.) XVIII, 104.
22. Dillaway's Grammar School, p. 181; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, VIII, 27; Magnalia Christi Americana, Cotton Mather, 1852, I, 539-40.
23. Dr. Hubert C. King, Cleveland, Ohio.
24. B. R. C. R., VI, 44, 46; New England Register, IX, 139-40.
25. Suffolk Deeds, (published) III, 219; New England Register, V, 394; VII, 171.
26. Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880, I, 429.
27. History of the First Church in Roxbury, Thwing, p. xiv.
28. Balch Families, G. B. Balch, 1897, pp. 51, 87; Cutler — Genealogical History, N. S. Cutler, 1889, p. 67; Descendants of WILLIAM SUMNER — W. S. Appleton, 1879, p. 33.

# B R O W N E



- (37) Salem
- (2) Gloucester
- (22) Ipswich
- ☆ Malden
- † Charlestown
- Newburyport

- § Allegheny Co., Pa.
- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- ♣ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- : Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♣ Thomaston, Me.
- ♣ Morgan Co., O.
- † Malta, O.
- (49) Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## BROWNE

**W**ILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BROWNE, a fisherman aged 26, with his wife Mary of the same age emigrated in the "Love," Joseph Young, master, in 1635 arriving<sup>1</sup> in New England about July. We are told<sup>1</sup> that he, or they, were admitted to Salem Church on December 27, 1641, but definitely they were among the earliest settlers at Gloucester (Cape Ann) where "their residence was in the harbor"<sup>2</sup> (see map, p. 673). In 1641 in company with Abraham<sup>1</sup> Robinson and Thomas Ashley, both fishermen of Cape Ann, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> hired a shallop of about three "tunnes" capacity with the tackles and appurtenances, from Joseph Armitage of Lynn, agreeing to pay him\* £3 in money or good and merchantable dry fish.<sup>4</sup>

At an unknown date Mary, first wife of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BROWNE died and on February 23, 1645, Abraham<sup>1</sup> Robinson died<sup>3</sup> leaving a widow MARY and a son named for himself. On July 15, 1646, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BROWNE married<sup>3</sup> secondly at Gloucester the widow MARY (—) Robinson and in February, 1648-9 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was appointed<sup>6</sup> executor of the small estate left by Robinson.

WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BROWNE was a selectman in 1644 and 1647. In 1654 he had liberty to "draw strong waters" during the pleasure of the court.<sup>2</sup> While in the main, the life of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> seems quite commendable, he made a misstep on one occasion in connection with our PRINCE family. It seems that MARGARET PRINCE had "put her name to some writing" which angered BROWNE and he called her offensive names and prophesied evil<sup>9</sup> for her in her pending confinement. She brooded over his prophecy and at her time of trial lost her child's life and almost lost her own, as was testified to by many witnesses.<sup>9</sup> In January, 1656-7, BROWNE was bound over to appear at the next court in £40 bonds and to show good behavior toward MARGARET and to her husband. At the time of trial he was finally sentenced to lie in prison for a week, to pay a fine of twenty marks and to pay costs of the suit to THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE. But apparently no permanent enmity resulted for in 1660 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE were co-witnesses in a law suit.

In 1657 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BROWNE subscribed five shillings toward the salary for a minister.<sup>10</sup> In March, 1662, he was serving as constable of Gloucester and temporarily handled the estates of three men who were lost at sea,<sup>6</sup> but on April 29, 1662, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> "being Cast upon my Bed of Sicknesse," made his will.<sup>5</sup> It provided for his wife MARY, gave most of his real estate\*\* as well as part of his stock and household goods to his "Sonne-in-Law" (step-son) Abraham<sup>2</sup> Robinson; made his

\*The use of it under this contract<sup>4</sup> was to run "till 29.7.ϣx" (viz. "the twenty-ninth day of the seventh month *approximately*"<sup>8</sup>) after which it was to be returned to Lynn.

\*\*The will of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> specified ownership of two acres of Meadow on the north side of little good Harbor; two acres next the burying place, on the southwest side thereof; three acres at Annisquam "butting upon the mayne Creeke or River;" upland lying in the Fishermans Field and land at "Eastern Poynt" (see map, p. 673).

daughter MARY<sup>2</sup> his "Heire & Executresse" to inherit one-half of his estate, and after her mother's death to inherit the mother's share also.<sup>5</sup>

WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BROWNE died<sup>3</sup> on May 3 and his inventory, taken May 13, 1662, totaled over £223 and showed a very well stocked establishment whereof the home stood for £90 and a Bible was valued at ten shillings. The will was proved on June 25, 1662, and on September 16 or 26, 1662, widow MARY (—) BROWNE was married a third time<sup>3</sup> at Gloucester to Henry<sup>1</sup> Walker.\* His residence<sup>2</sup> was on the west side of Annisquam River where a creek bore his name. He had owned land in Gloucester before 1650, and may have been previously married but left no children of his own. He served as selectman in 1667 and for several subsequent years.<sup>2</sup> After spending twenty-eight years with him, his wife MARY died<sup>2,3</sup> on April 17, 1690, and Henry himself died<sup>3</sup> on August 29, 1693. His will was dated four months after his wife's death, August 29, 1690, and covered an estate<sup>14</sup> which totaled over £922, being the largest accumulated in Gloucester at that time. It left legacies to the children\*\* of his wife MARY by both of her previous husbands and gave the remainder of his property to Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> Coit (JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) who was making his home with Walker (see Coit, p. 195) or was making a home for him.

The known children of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and MARY (—) BROWNE born in Gloucester were<sup>1,2,3</sup>

- I. MARY<sup>2</sup>, b. July 28, 1649, bap. Jan. 28, 1656-7; d. at Gloucester<sup>3,7</sup> as a widow on Nov. 12, 1715; m. there on July 3, 1667, WILLIAM<sup>2</sup> HASKELL (see Haskell, p. 352). She was frequently called MARY Walker, using the name of her step-father.
- II. James<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>1</sup> Jan. 2, 1658; not named in his father's will.<sup>5</sup>

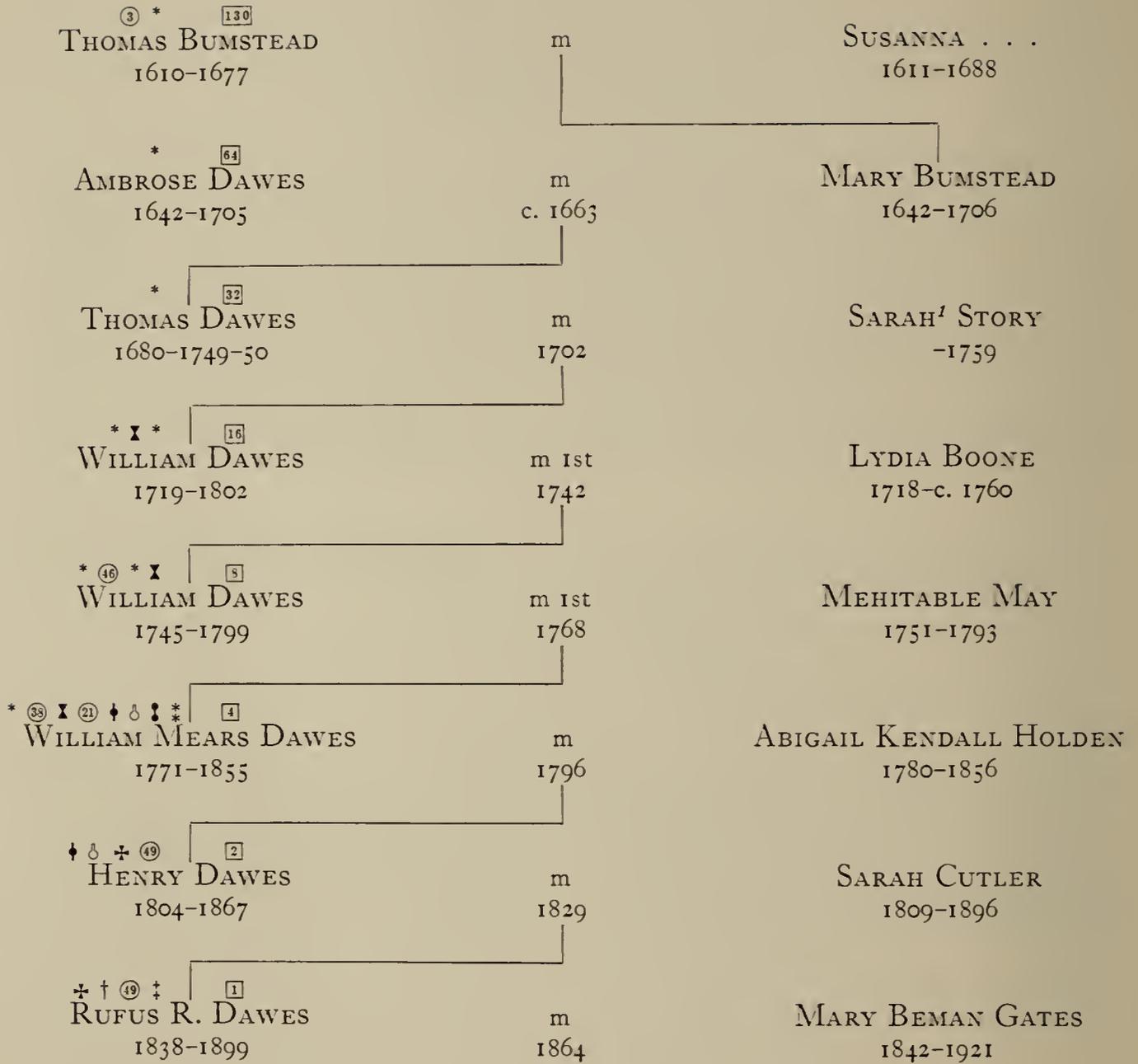
\*Henry Walker had been a resident<sup>1</sup> of Ipswich in 1644 before removing to Gloucester.

\*\*That is, to Abraham<sup>2</sup> Robinson and to MARY (BROWNE) HASKELL.

## REFERENCES

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Pope's Pioneers, 1900, pp. 75, 387, 474; Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 130.</li> <li>2. History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, pp. 65, 134-5, 175.</li> <li>3. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 124; II, 109; III, 82, 166, 261-2, 315.</li> <li>4. Note-Book kept by Thomas Lechford, 1638-41, 1885, 406-7.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>5. Essex Probates, I, 386-8.</li> <li>6. Ibid., I, 102, 359, 361, 380.</li> <li>7. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXII, 137-8.</li> <li>8. Lexicon Abbreviaturarum, J. J. Weber, 1901, p. 274.</li> <li>9. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex Co., II, 36-8.</li> <li>10. Essex Antiquarian, XII, 117.</li> <li>11. Pope, p. 474.</li> </ol> |
|--|--|

# BUMSTEAD



- ③ Roxbury
- \* Boston
- X Marlborough
- 46 Worcester
- 35 Sudbury
- 21 Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- ♂ Thomaston, Me.

- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ♀ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- \* Malta, O.
- 49 Mauston, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## BUMSTEAD

THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD born<sup>9</sup> about 1610 may have come from the vicinity<sup>1</sup> of Rattlesden, co. Suffolk, England, as did several early colonists, for there at that same period were recorded a Thomas and an Edward Bumstead\* and by 1640 men of these two names appeared in New England.<sup>8</sup> It is recorded<sup>4,30</sup> that THOMAS<sup>1</sup> "came to this Land in the 5<sup>t</sup> month of the yeare 1640" bringing with him<sup>8</sup> two small sons, Thomas<sup>2</sup> and Jeremiah<sup>2</sup> and undoubtedly his wife SUSANNA, born about 1611, though no passenger list has shown their names. They settled at Roxbury<sup>4,5,6,7</sup> and promptly joined the church\*\* there, had a daughter<sup>8</sup> Hannah<sup>2</sup> born January 25, 1641, and on April 24, 1642, had their daughter MARY<sup>2</sup> baptized.<sup>4</sup> THOMAS<sup>1</sup> was a brazier<sup>10</sup> or "peuterer" and likely pursued that trade in Roxbury where he early acquired<sup>11</sup> eighteen acres of land adjoining that of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE. Being an artisan rather than an agriculturist, he probably never possessed more than this amount in Roxbury, and it likely was this same eighteen acre tract<sup>4</sup> which he presently sold to JOHN<sup>1</sup> MAY, for by 1644 THOMAS<sup>1</sup> with his family had removed to Boston where he maintained his residence for thirty-three years, during which time his name frequently appeared in the records of Suffolk County as a witness to deeds and wills, executor or administrator of estates and in other capacities showing his interest and activity in town affairs. On August 13, 1644, he purchased property in Boston from Arthur Perry which he presumably lived in for a time† but by August, 1658, he was renting a home†† on the west side of Washington Street next north of the corner of Court Street<sup>5,30</sup> (see map, p. 30), and on December 30, 1658, he sold<sup>12</sup> the Perry property (or a part of it) consisting of a "house, outhouses, garden and orchard conteyning by estimation one quarter acre of land being in boston, to John Blowar, cooper of Boston, being the land bought from Arthur Perry bearing the date 13 August, 1644." THOMAS<sup>1</sup> signed this document by autograph but SUSANNA signed by her mark. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> owned property<sup>27</sup> also from 1665-8.

In the fall of 1644, soon after their arrival in Boston, an alarming accident befell

\*An Edward Bumstead of Boston<sup>8,10,32</sup> became a freeman on May 13, 1640, and had a son Joseph born in 1653.

\*\*The church membership of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and SUSANNA remained in Roxbury for at least five years after their removal to Boston and perhaps much longer for in January 1649-50, at the baptism in Boston of their daughter Mercy<sup>2</sup>, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> was called<sup>15</sup> a "member of the Church at Roxbury" and the statement is made<sup>10</sup> that he and SUSANNA did not change their membership to the Boston Church until December 30, 1660.

†One of the homes of THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, perhaps this one, lay opposite the Granary Burial Ground (see map, p. 30) where he and his widow were eventually laid to rest. This had once been a part of the Common.<sup>30</sup> A valuable portion of his estate (on Tremont Street and Temple Place) remained in the family until 1842 or later,<sup>30</sup> and on it stand the Masonic Temple and the blocks named Hamilton Place and Bumstead Place.

††In the will of John Coggan of Boston,<sup>14</sup> whose inventory was taken by THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and others, and was returned August 3, 1658, a bequest was made "to my son Caleb, my mansion house, and house adjoining thereto wherein Goodman BOMSTED doth live. . . ." This was at State and Washington.<sup>30</sup> John Coggan's home was opposite to that of Capt. Robert Keayne who was a party to the "suit about a sow" (see NOTE p. 126).

an unnamed child in this family who, being then about eight years old, must have been one of the sons brought from England. The report, after recording the remarkable recovery of another injured child, continued:<sup>20</sup>

“ . . . one BUMSTEAD, a member of the church, had a child about the same age [eight] that fell from a gallery in the [First] meeting house about eighteen feet high, and brake the arm and shoulder (and was also committed to the Lord in prayers of the church, with earnest desires, that the place where his people assembled to his worship might not be defiled with blood) and it pleased the Lord also that this child was soon perfectly recovered.”<sup>20</sup>

In 1647 THOMAS<sup>1</sup> became a member<sup>8,13,30</sup> of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company\* of Boston whose records say that he had become a freeman<sup>30</sup> in 1640, though other evidence of freemanship has not been found. In 1657-8 THOMAS<sup>1</sup> subscribed £1 toward the building of the First Town House\*\* and of a conduit (see p. 30) which was planned,<sup>5,30</sup> signing his name to the list.<sup>5</sup> On August 7, 1658, Lydia, wife of the Rev. John Miller of Yarmouth died in Boston<sup>15,16</sup> at the home of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD. If they were related, no evidence of the fact has been found.

New England had been disturbed for a time by the conduct of various members of the Friends or Quaker faith coming into the colony from England or the Barbadoes who tried to win, or force, a hearing by threats and very spectacular conduct which was utterly unlike the action of the Friends who later in that century populated Pennsylvania. Needless to state that the Puritans were as defiant in their actions toward the early misled Quakers as the interlopers could have been, and it is one of the deplorable blemishes on early colonial history that torture and even death were meted out to many Quakers, both men and women, whose only crime was fanaticism regarding their religion. Cotton Mather commented that if the erratic conduct of the overly-zealous Quakers had been ignored, they would probably soon have desisted, but they fed and grew on persecution. In the fall of 1658 twenty-five of the leading men of Boston, including the Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Wilson and our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD, signed a petition to the General Court against the Quakers as “professed enemies of the Christian Magistrate and seducers of the people”.<sup>21,31</sup>

They even went so far as to suggest the penalty of death for such of the Quakers as should defiantly return after being banished and the court† on October 19, 1658, voted an enactment whereby<sup>31</sup>

“three men and one woman, all of unsullied life, constant, heroic, resigned, triumphant even in spirit, yet with no declamatory or unseemly boastfulness, were hanged from a

\*This company which was chartered<sup>5</sup> in March, 1637-8, was the earliest military organization in this country and membership in it was considered no small honor. It was patterned as a junior branch and associate of the Honorable Artillery Company of London<sup>5</sup> (see Gore, p. 320).

\*\*The earliest town meetings<sup>5</sup> were held at the home of Gov. John Winthrop or some other official until the First Meeting House was built in 1632. But the will of Capt. Robert Keane who died in March, 1655-6, stressed the desirability of a town house and left a bequest of £300 toward such a building which should accommodate the town and colony officials, the Artillery Company (of which he was the founder), and should supply conveniences for a market; also for the building of a conduit (see p. 30) nearby. The selectmen considered the suggestion and gift and in March, 1656-7, appointed a committee to prepare a plan and to invite subscriptions from among the town people. Among the sixty-odd subscribers were THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> “BEAMSLLEAY” who each subscribed<sup>5</sup> £1 toward the total of £367 which was raised. This building served the town<sup>24</sup> until the great fire of 1711.

†Just a year later when three executions of Quakers by hanging on Boston Common was to be carried out, multitudes gathered to watch the tragic spectacle and as the Northenders were returning to their homes the drawbridge over the canal (called Mill Creek, see map, p. 30) fell through under the weight. Quaker historians state that many persons were injured, some fatally, and they considered it a righteous judgment.<sup>31</sup> Other writers make no mention of serious injuries.

gallows on Boston Common. With shame and regret unrelieved and unrelievable, must the historian for all time read, write and comment on that melancholy episode. All recognition of, all admiration for, some of the noble qualities of our Puritans, and all allowance for the exigencies and straits of their position, must pause at this point and refuse to justify or palliate."<sup>31</sup>

May we not hope that in time the mind of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD would have reacted more tolerantly as did the minds of our ANDREW<sup>1</sup> ELIOT and HENRY<sup>2</sup> HERRICK who signed a recantation and abject apology in 1692 for having voted for the death of certain so-called witches (Dawes-Gates, II, 332-3, 428-9).

Harvard College in its infancy was largely supported by gifts from the various towns and churches, sometimes as little as a bushel of wheat, and the tuition of students was paid in products from the farm or artisans' handiwork. In other words, it was business by barter, and consultation of its early records show frequent evidence that services rendered to the school were paid for, in turn, by commodities. Presumably the craft of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD as brazier or pewterer had been required, for in the Steward's book under date of October 2, 1652, we see<sup>22</sup>

"payd to Goodman BUMSTEAD 12<sup>s</sup> and by Mr powell 30<sup>s</sup> . . ."

and again on September 6, 1657,

"by m<sup>r</sup> parker to goodman BUMSTED by Cosser two bush wheat" 8 shillings.<sup>22</sup>

THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, with others, was appointed<sup>17</sup> on August 14, 1667, to take the inventory of the estate of the Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Wilson, a man greatly revered and respected who had been the first pastor of the First Church in Boston. This church (see Mills, p. 441) had been organized in 1630 under a tree<sup>18</sup> in Charlestown and moved two years later to Boston with Rev. Wilson serving first as teacher and then as pastor. At the time of its organization, Gov. John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop, whose name stood at the head of the list of members, wrote to friends<sup>19</sup> in England: "I do not repent my coming: I never had more content of mind."

During the life of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> in Boston he experienced many trying events including<sup>34</sup> reported earthquakes of varying intensity, about the time of his arrival in 1644 and others in 1659, 1663-4 and 1670; small-pox epidemics in 1666, and 1668; the "Great Fire" in 1653-4 and the "Greater Fire" in 1676 which destroyed forty-six dwellings, a church and other buildings and would have done much more damage but for a heavy rain.<sup>34</sup> The term of his life also covered the period of King Philip's War with all of its anxiety.

The will<sup>23</sup> of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD was dated May 25, 1677, and he died in Boston<sup>23,24</sup> on June 22, 1677, aged<sup>9,24</sup> sixty-seven. The will, which was probated August 4 of that year, referred to his son "Jeremy" and to the testator's three daughters, Hannah Sherwood (really Shearer)<sup>26</sup> wife of Thomas, MARY DAWES, wife of AMBROSE, and Mary (really Mercy), wife of Samuel Bosworth.

An item which must pertain to this family is found<sup>33</sup> in the Journal of the Rev. Peter Thacher of Milton under date of April 30, 1679; it reads "I spoke at Goodwife BUMSTEAD's this night;" and adds, incidentally, "I paid 5/6 for a pack of nine pins and bowle."

Widow SUSANNA survived her husband eleven years, dying at Boston on July

12, 1688, aged<sup>9,24</sup> seventy-seven and they both lie in the Granary Burial Ground opposite their one-time home (see map, p. 30).

On April 30, 1698, Jeremiah<sup>2</sup> Bumstead, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> and MARY (BUMSTEAD) DAWES with John Rowstone and his wife Mercy sold<sup>36</sup> to Alexander Sherrar and Richard Greene for £10-10 all their interest in a house and lands which were once a part of the estate of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD. MARY signed with her initials "M. D."

The children of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and SUSANNA (—) BUMSTEAD, the first two born in England, the next two at Roxbury and the last three at Boston were<sup>4,8,10,15,23,24,25,26</sup>

- i. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, b. bef. 1640; d. prob. unm. in Boston<sup>10,15,25</sup> May 3, 1661.
- ii. Jeremiah<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1636-7; d. Feb. 27, 1709, aged<sup>8</sup> 72, at Boston; m. 1st, by 1664 Anna Shaw; m. 2nd bef. 1676 Sarah (—).<sup>23</sup>
- iii. Hannah<sup>2</sup>, b. Jan. 25, 1641; living in 1677; was m.<sup>10,23,25</sup> Apr. 19, 1659, in Boston by Richard Bellingham, Deputy Governor, to Thomas Shearer (sometimes rendered<sup>23</sup> as Sherwood). In July, 1668, their home adjoined<sup>27</sup> on the south the yard of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD.
- iv. MARY<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>4</sup> in Roxbury Apr. 24, 1642; d.<sup>29</sup> at Boston May 22, 1706, aged 64; m.<sup>23</sup> abt. 1662 AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES (see Dawes, p. 18).
- v. Gerard<sup>2</sup>, said to have been b. 1643 at Roxbury,<sup>7,32,33</sup> not named.
- vi. Joseph<sup>2</sup>, bap. at Boston Nov. 24, 1644, aged 7 days; d. bef. 1653.
- vii. Mercy<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>15</sup> Jan. 20, 1649-50; living in 1677; m. at Boston abt.<sup>15</sup> 1668-9 Samuel<sup>2</sup> Bosworth, (Zaccheus<sup>1</sup>). She probably married<sup>36</sup> again, after 1677 and before 1698, John Rawlstone.
- viii. Joseph<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>4</sup> Oct. 24, bap. 31, 1653; d. bef. 1677.

#### NOTE

It is a surprising fact that the bicameral form<sup>37</sup> of our national Senate and House of Representatives as well as state legislatures was brought about as the final result of a seven and a half year suit about a sow. The facts are that in 1636 a stray pig was impounded in the sty of Capt. Robert Keayne,\* one of the outstanding and most generous citizens of early Boston. The town crier gave repeated notice that the owner could have the grunter by proving property and paying styage, and though various residents viewed the animal, no one claimed it, so Robert fed it for about a year along with his own stock. In due time he slaughtered one of his own hogs and presently one Mrs. Sherman appeared to claim the stray, but finding it to be differently marked than her long lost curly-tail, decided that Keayne had killed *her* porker. Her complaint was weighed first by the church elders who cleared Keayne of wrong doing; then Mrs. Sherman took the case to the civil court being urged on and advised by one George Story\*\*, but again Keayne was cleared and given £3 costs and he presently sued both Mrs. Sherman and Story for slander, being given £20 (some reports say £40) damages which, however, he never attempted to collect. Because he was a wealthy man and said to frequently drive a close bargain and the Shermans were poor, many of the colonists became actively partisan against Keayne. The next move was by Story who got a former witness to change his testimony and then asked for a new trial before the General Court. At that time the national legislature consisted of but one body and at the vote of the Court in this latest trial, lasting nearly seven days, two magistrates and fifteen deputies were for the plaintiff, while seven magistrates and eight deputies were for the defendant and seven deputies "were newters." By October, 1643, Mrs. Sherman's husband Richard had returned from England and had entered into the case, about which Story was also still petitioning. Popular indignation was so aroused because of the comparative financial status of the two parties, that legal rights were entirely ignored by many of the colonists but a result which was definitely unfortunate was the fact that the conflict brought the judiciary into disrepute. During the progress of the case about the sow the governor himself, as well as one of the magistrates, had written and published a summary of the details and an argument explaining his vote on the matter and one of the magistrates did likewise. The governor's publication gave added offence on certain phases and for the sake of peace he was asked to retract on those points, which he did at great length (covering a full page of fine print) at the opening term of court on March 7, 1643-4. Keayne offered to remit his right to damages if Mrs. Sherman and Story would acknowledge the wrong done him and finally the case was left in the hands of two referees who played for time in the belief that a cooler public judgment would lead to a truer concept of justice. This long-drawn-out but trifling suit about a sow had a far-reaching effect and profoundly affected political development. It constituted a memorable constitutional crisis and a change for the colony and for the states as they were formed to a bicameral system, for the General Court on the last named date ordered that ". . . because of divers inconveniences . . . by ma<sup>tr</sup>as & deputies siting together . . ." the two bodies should henceforth sit apart and that such orders as received the approbation of both groups should become law.<sup>37</sup>

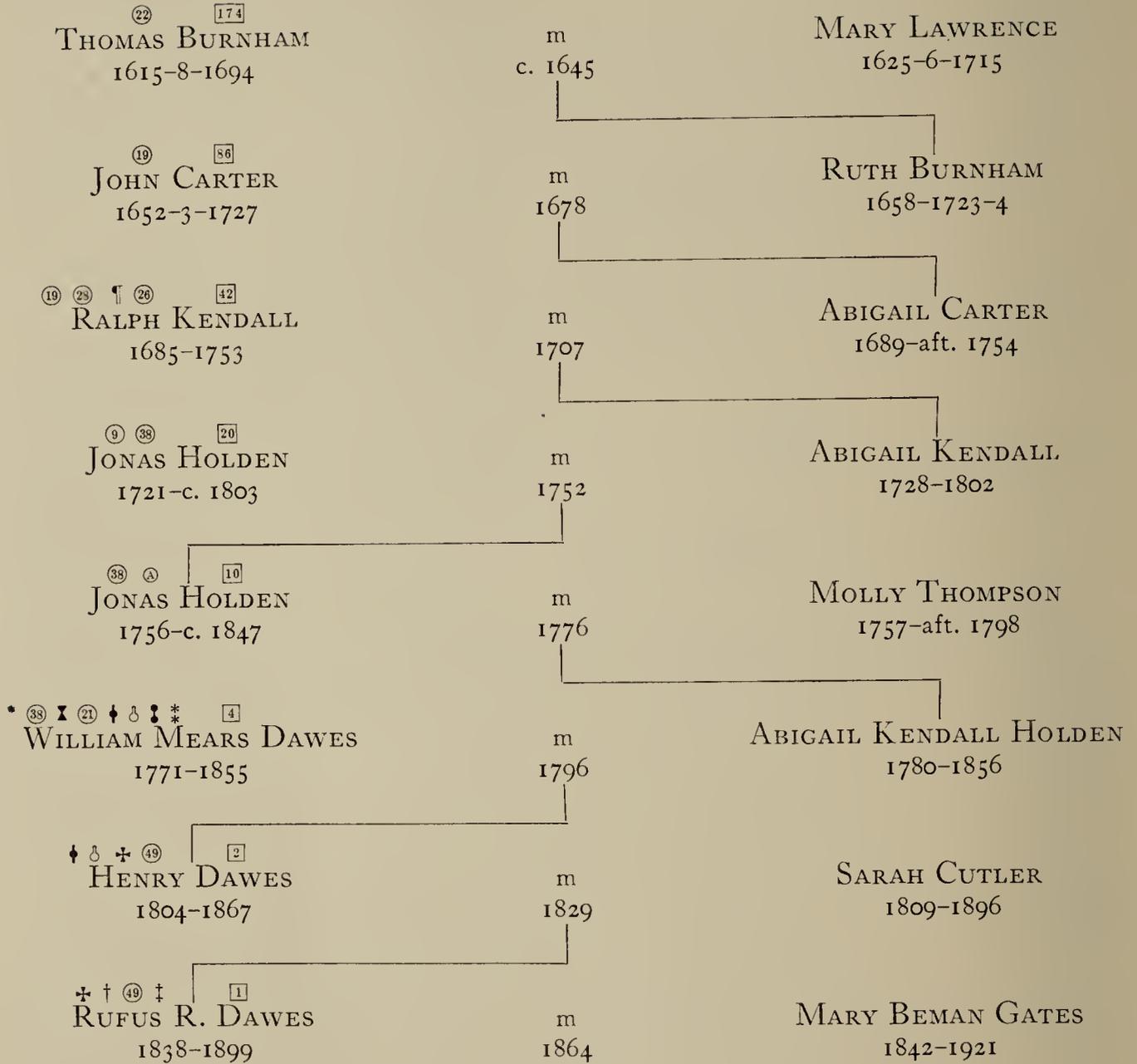
\*Capt. Robert Keayne then lived and kept this historical grunter at the south east corner of what is now Washington and State Streets and on that corner in the early 1700s our NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE kept his book store. Incidentally, the will of Capt. Keayne was,<sup>38</sup> itself, a matter of note for it disposed of an estate of about £4,000, covered one hundred and fifty folio pages "all in his own hand," or when printed covered fifty-three pages of seven point type and consisted of about 51,000 words.

\*\*Story held a personal grudge against Capt. Keayne who had called the attention of the authorities to the fact that Story was resident in the Sherman home in the absence of its head Richard Sherman, in England.

## REFERENCES

1. New England Register, LVII, 331.
2. Ibid., XLVIII, 127-8.
3. Ibid., XLVII, 401-6.
4. Ibid., IX, 252; Boston Record Commissioners Report, VI, 35, 84, 114.
5. The Bostonian Society Publications, 1906, III, 104-8, 146-7.
6. History of the First Church at Roxbury, W. E. Thwing, 1908, p. 56.
7. History of Roxbury Town, C. M. Ellis, 1847, p. 92.
8. Savage, I, 298; Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 377.
9. Gravestones in Granary Burial Ground, Boston, 1918, p. 50.
10. Pope's Pioneers, p. 79; History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, I, 484.
11. Lineage of the Bowens of Woodstock, E. A. Bowen, 1897, p. 214.
12. Suffolk Deeds, III, 213A.
13. Register of the Society of Colonial Wars, 1899-1903, p. 582.
14. New England Register, IX, 35.
15. B. R. C. R., IX, 30, 41, 45, 66, 80, 113.
16. New England Register, XXXI, 70.
17. Ibid., XVII, 344.
18. History of the First Church Boston, A. B. & G. E. Ellis, 1880, pp. 1-3, 6-9.
19. History of the United States, Julian Hawthorne, I, 77.
20. History of New England, J. Winthrop, Savage ed., 1853, II, 250; or same, ed. by J. K. Hasmer (being vol. VIII of "Original Narratives of Early American History") II, 210.
21. History of Old South Church, Boston, H. A. Hill, 1890, I, 218.
22. Colonial Society of Massachusetts Publications, XXXI, 125, 207.
23. New England Register, XV, 193-4, 204.
24. Pilgrims of Boston, L. Bridgman, 1856, pp. 9, 156.
25. New England Register, XVIII, 171, 333.
26. Records at Registrar's Office, Boston.
27. Suffolk Deeds, IV, 220; V, 392, 466.
28. Records of Massachusetts Bay, V, 190, 484.
29. Dawes Genealogy, H. W. Holland, 1878, pp. 48, 51, 53.
30. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, I, 161-2, 181.
31. The Puritan Age in Massachusetts, G. E. Ellis, 1888, pp. 448-50, 463-4; Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880, I, 185.
32. The Pilgrims of Boston, T. Bridgman, 1856, p. 156; Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 377.
33. History of Milton, A. K. Teele, 1887, p. 641.
34. History and Antiquities of Boston, S. G. Drake, 1856, pp. 334, 354, 366, 377, 382, 387.
35. New England Register, XV, 193-204, especially 201-2; Islands of Boston Harbor, E. R. Snow, 1935, pp. 325-41; Pirates of the New England Coast, Dow & Edwards, II, 310-27, especially p. 312.
36. Research by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Suffolk Co. Probates, Suffolk Co. Deeds, XVIII, 149.
37. Original Narratives of Early American History VII being "Journal of John Winthrop," 1908, II, 64-6, 116-21; History of New England, J. G. Palfrey, 1882, I, 618-23; History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Co., O. A. Roberts, 1895, 13-5; Savage, IV, 84, 212; Boston Notions, N. Dearborn, 1848, pp. 40-1; Records of Mass. Bay, II, 3, 12, 51, 58-9; The Crooked and Narrow Streets of Boston, A. H. Thwing, 1920, 119-20.
38. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Co., I, 15-9; B. R. C. R., X, 1-53.

# BURNHAM



- 22 Ipswich
- 19 Woburn
- 28 Lancaster
- † Charlestown
- 26 Kennebec River
- 9 Concord
- 38 Sudbury

- A Waitsfield, Vt.
- \* Boston
- ‡ Marlborough
- 21 Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.

- ♂ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- \* Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Malta, O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- † Marietta, O.

---



---

## BURNHAM

---

**T**HOMAS<sup>1</sup> BURNHAM born about 1615-8, emigrated\* in the "Angel Gabriel" in 1635 and was wrecked on the coast of Maine. He settled in the part of Ipswich which was called Chebacco, now Essex. He fought in the Pequot War in 1636-7 and is said to have also taken part in an expedition against the Indians in 1643.

He was married about 1640-5, doubtless in Ipswich, to MARIE<sup>2</sup> or MARY<sup>2</sup> LAWRENCE who was born in England about 1626, daughter of THOMAS and JOANE (ANTROBUS) LAWRENCE. After the death of THOMAS LAWRENCE in England and after the second marriage of her mother JOANE to our JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE, the combined TUTTLE family with the LAWRENCE children and their grandmother ANTROBUS (see Antrobus, p. 64) crossed the ocean on the "Planter" in 1635 arriving at Boston on June 7 and making up a family party of over a dozen.

THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BURNHAM was a selectman in 1647 and 1663, subscribed to the fund gathered to recompense Maj. Denison in 1648; and was a surveyor of highways in 1662.

In 1667 THOMAS<sup>1</sup> was granted the privilege of setting up a sawmill on the Chebacco River near the falls; in 1662 he was corporal of the Ipswich Company, in 1664 was made a sergeant, in 1665 was advanced to Ensign — and in 1683 was appointed Lieutenant. He served as deputy to the General Court from 1683 to 1685 both inclusive. He was listed among those who had the right of commonage in 1667 and in February 1678-9; also as being one of the freemen in December 1679, though these latter privileges had doubtless been acquired long before. His wife bore THOMAS<sup>1</sup> a full dozen of children and in March, 1683, when his daughter Sarah<sup>2</sup> was planning to marry Mesech Farley, a miller, son of Michael, the two fathers entered into a formal agreement whereby Michael<sup>1</sup> Farley would furnish a lot and would pay one-half of the cost which Lt. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BURNHAM incurred in building a home on it for the young couple.

Lt. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> made his will on January 10, 1693-4 and died at Ipswich on May 19, 1694, called seventy-one years old though in 1678 in a deposition he had called himself sixty years old. Widow MARY lived on until March 27, 1715.

The children of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and MARY (LAWRENCE) BURNHAM, all born in Ipswich, were

1. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1642-6; d. as "Lt." Feb. 21, 1728, called both 82 and 88 years old; m. at Ipswich Feb. 13, 1665-6, Lydia<sup>2</sup> Pingrie (Moses<sup>1</sup>); m. 2nd Dec. 16, 1689 Esther<sup>2</sup> Cogswell, (William<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).

\*In that same vessel, the "Angel Gabriel", came our JOHN<sup>1</sup> COGSWELL with his wife and eight children including SARAH<sup>2</sup> COGSWELL who eventually became the wife of SIMON<sup>2</sup> TUTTLE, half brother of MARY (LAWRENCE) BURNHAM above. In a deposition of March, 1659, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BURNHAM and SIMON<sup>2</sup> TUTTLE were called brothers.

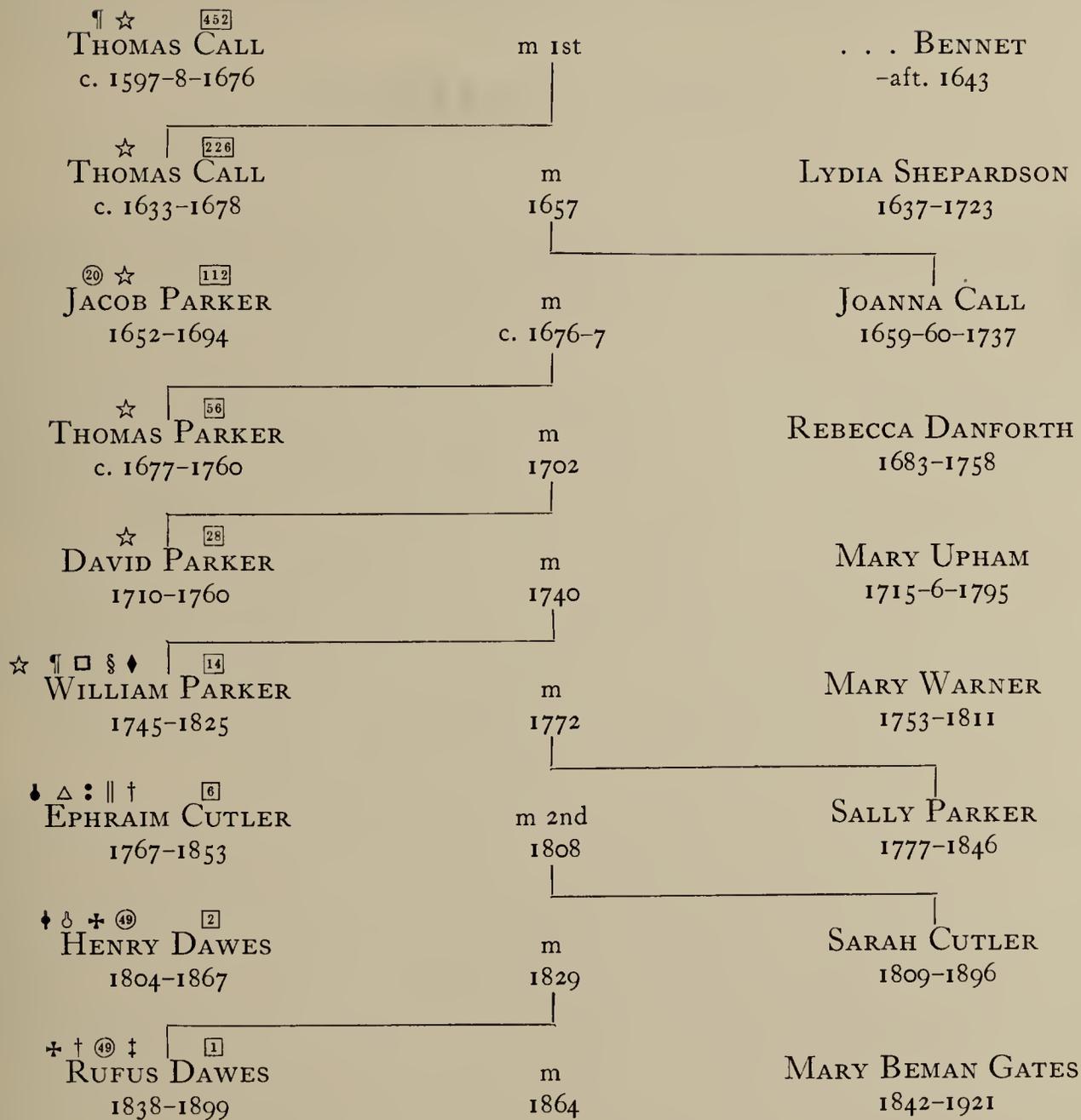
- ii. John<sup>2</sup>, b. perhaps 1648; said to have d. Jan. 12, 1704; m. at Ipswich June 6, 1668-9, Elizabeth Wells.
- iii. James<sup>2</sup>, b. perhaps 1650; d. June 30, 1729, called 78; m. Mary (—).
- iv. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1652; d. after her father; m. Oct. 9, 1672, John Clarke.
- v. Johanna<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1654; d. after her father; said to have m. 1st John Newmarch and 2nd Erastus Jones.
- vi. Abigail<sup>2</sup>, d. after her father.
- vii. Ruth<sup>2</sup>, b. July 1, 1657; d. July 30, 1657.
- viii. RUTH<sup>2</sup>, b. Aug. 23, 1658; d. at Woburn Jan. 11, 1724, called 55 yrs. but corrected (J. B. Wyman, Charlestown, p. 192) to 65; m. at Woburn June 20, 1678, JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER (see Carter, p. 150).
- ix. Joseph<sup>2</sup>, b. Sept. 26, 1660; no further record.
- x. Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, b. Sept. 4, 1662; no further record.
- xi. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, b. June 28, 1664; d. after father; m. Aug. 6, 1684, Meshack<sup>2</sup> Farley (Michael<sup>1</sup>).
- xii. Esther<sup>2</sup>, b. Mar. 19, 1665-6; d. after her father.

## REFERENCES

The Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 141-2; Savage, I, 304-5 (including an error); Pope's Pioneers, p. 81; Vital Records of Ipswich, I, 61, 63, 71; II, 72, 504, 511-2; Vital Records of Woburn, II, 30-1; III, 48; Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, p. 192, item under "JOHN CARTER 27."; The Burnham Family, R. H. Burnham, 1869, pp. 309, 311, including error;

Hammatt Papers, pp. 41-2; The Cogswells in America, E. O. Jameson, 1884, pp. xvi-xxi, 1, 9, 18-9; Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, II, 171-4; VI, 418; History of Ipswich, T. F. Waters, 1905, pp. 92-4, 238, 328; Descendants of Moses Pengry, W. M. Pingry, 1881, p. 12; Vital Records of Ipswich, II, 73, 511.

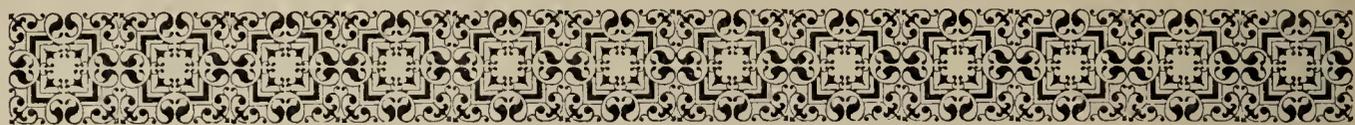
# CALL



† Charlestown  
 ☆ Malden  
 20 Chelmsford  
 □ Newburyport  
 § Allegheny Co., Pa.  
 ◆ Meigs Co., O.

♠ Edgartown  
 △ Killingly, Conn.  
 ∴ Waterford, O.  
 ∥ Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.  
 † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

♠ Thomaston, Me.  
 ♂ Morgan Co., O.  
 † Malta, O.  
 49 Mauston, Wis.  
 † Marietta, O.



## CALL-CAULE

**T**HOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL from Faversham, co. Kent, England, sailed in the spring of 1637 in the "Hercules" of Sandwich, John Witherley, Master, with his wife BENNET and three children\* to settle in Charlestown, in the Bay Colony.<sup>1</sup> On this same vessel sailed our JOHN<sup>1</sup> BATCHELDER (Daves-Gates II, 97) with his brothers and their families, and all of these had been certified at Sandwich, England, on June 9, 1637, as conforming to the orders and discipline of the Church of England and as having taken the oath of allegiance and supremacy to the King of England. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> was born about 1597-8, according to a deposition he made in his later life.<sup>2</sup> His occupations are given as husbandman, tilemaker and baker.<sup>2</sup> He was admitted as an inhabitant of Charlestown in 1637 and soon joined the church\*\* as is proved by the fact that he became a freeman<sup>9</sup> on May 13, 1640.

In our days of strong political feeling, it is interesting to look back three centuries and compare the experiences of the people of that day, including THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL, with some which we undergo now. In 1640 the male residents of Massachusetts Bay Colony were either<sup>15</sup> freemen, who, being church members and having taken the freeman's oath of allegiance to the government were enfranchised to vote and be voted for, or were non-freemen and ineligible on those points.

Freemen voted for Governor of the Colony, Deputy Governor, Major General, Treasurer, Secretary, etc. For some years the freemen of the colony had been obliged to go personally to a designated central town to vote,<sup>15</sup> but the disadvantages of that plan were so great, because of lost time, expense and Indian menace to unprotected settlements during their absence, that by 1640 it had been changed so that freemen might cast their votes for the major offices, on paper "open, or once folded, not twisted or rolled up", before the constable of their home town or before their deputies, who carried them, sealed up, to the place of election — usually Boston. The election of assistants or magistrates was by use of corn or

\*Of these three children, there is a unanimity of statement as to the identity of the two sons THOMAS<sup>2</sup> and John<sup>2</sup> but the name of the daughter was probably written as "Marg" and misread<sup>1</sup> for "Mary", for the most dependable renditions<sup>5</sup> make her "Margaret" but show that on the same vessel came<sup>5</sup> a Mary Call as servant to Joseph<sup>1</sup> Batchelor, brother of our JOHN<sup>1</sup> BATCHELOR (Daves-Gates, II, 97) from Canterbury, only eight or ten miles away from Faversham where THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL and his family had lived. It seems probable that this Mary was another daughter in our family, since the will of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> in 1670 named<sup>2</sup> a daughter Mary, and there is no record of her birth here.

The further evidence on Margaret<sup>2</sup>, then unmarried, is found (a) in the will<sup>20</sup> of her husband Thomas<sup>1</sup> Green of Malden, dated February 25, 1673-4, wherein he made<sup>7</sup> his "brother THOMAS CALL" one of his executors; (b) in the will<sup>19</sup> of THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL himself, dated February 28, 1678-9, in which he made bequests of £5 each to Ephraim<sup>2</sup> and John<sup>2</sup> Green when they should come of age; and (c) in a petition<sup>19</sup> to the Middlesex County Court on June 17, 1679, from Thomas<sup>2</sup> Green wherein it was explained that his brother Ephraim<sup>2</sup> Green had lived with their uncle THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL who had promised that his estate should help in caring for Ephraim<sup>2</sup>, who was evidently incapacitated. That since the death of THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL his widow LYDIA had refused to take administration or to deliver any part of the estate for the support of Ephraim<sup>2</sup>, whose care was a heavier burden upon Thomas<sup>2</sup> Green than he was able to bear.<sup>19</sup>

\*\*Only a "John" Caule (probably an error for THOMAS<sup>1</sup>) is recorded<sup>3</sup> as having previously joined the Charlestown Church (on October 24, 1639) though his wife "BENNETT CAULE" became a member<sup>3</sup> on February 16, 1639-40.

beans, " 'the corn to manifest election, the beans, contrary.' A person putting in more than one of either, or voting when he had no right to vote, was liable to a penalty of ten pounds. The elections thus early were not always more quiet than they are sometimes now" — thus spoke an historian<sup>21</sup> of 1845, and we may add nor, indeed, in 1940!

"An instance is afforded in the contest<sup>15</sup> between Winthrop and Vane in 1637. Then there was considerable rallying of voters (for the Newbury men went forty miles on foot to vote for Winthrop) and some political oratory; for Rev. John Wilson, in his zeal, 'got upon the bough of a tree', — for the election was 'carried on in the field' — and made a speech 'advising the people to look to their charter' and proceed to vote. Vane's friends desired to postpone the election; but Mr. Wilson's speech, writes Hutchinson, 'was well received by the people, who presently called out [demanding the holding of the] election! election! which turned the scale'. Winthrop was successful [and] his opponents 'grew into fierce speeches, and some laid hands on others'; there was 'great danger of tumult that day'."<sup>15</sup>

The estate in Charlestown owned by THOMAS<sup>1</sup> in 1638 consisted of six tracts, with a house in the South field, a garden in Middle row, four acres in the form of a triangle in the Line field, five acres of woodland in Mystic field and fifteen acres "above the ponds" in Waterfield.<sup>11,12</sup>

At an unstated date, but about 1644-5, the following petition<sup>11</sup> was made:

"To the honra<sup>b1</sup> Cort assembled at Boston the humble petition of THOMAS CAULE Whereas yo<sup>r</sup> petitioner Dwelleth by the water, at the fferry place\* on mistick side, many people haveing occasion to come that way & when they cannot have passage are necessitated to stay at yo<sup>r</sup> petitioner's (many of o<sup>r</sup> owne towne & of other townes have moved yo<sup>r</sup> petition<sup>r</sup> to desire leave to sell them some thing; for their refreshing) now yo<sup>r</sup> petition<sup>r</sup> Doth humbly request leave to sell bread, beare & other victualling for the refreshment of such as have occasion to stay, & yo<sup>r</sup> petition<sup>r</sup> shall humbly pray the lord to bless, guide & counsell yo<sup>u</sup> in all yo weightye affaires, and so I rest yo<sup>r</sup> humble suppliant  
THOMAS CAULE."

Twenty-two others signed the petition with him, and on "May 14, 1645, THOMAS CAULE is allowed to keepe victualing in his house for strang<sup>r</sup>s."<sup>11,13</sup> Thus THOMAS<sup>1</sup> was granted the first license for the sale of beer on Mystic Side.<sup>11</sup>

In 1648-9 a move was made to divide Mystic Side\*\* from Charlestown, perhaps for ecclesiastical reasons rather than civic, and an agreement about the location of the bounds was signed by ten men who probably were the only heads of families and male members of the prospective new Malden Church and of whom THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL was one.<sup>14</sup> In May, 1649, the separation from Charlestown was completed, and the name Malden was given the new town. Its earliest records have been lost,

\*This "Penny Ferry" which carried people from Charlestown<sup>21</sup> across the Mystic River toward what was then Malden but is now Everett was established in 1640 and served the public until 1787 when the Malden bridge was built. The first year the keeper apparently retained whatever fees he took in, and was permitted to charge "two pence for one person" and a penny each "when there go any more." Its Malden landing place was adjacent to the early home of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL and the home of JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM in Malden bordered on "the way to the Penny Ferry". When the present Everett was set off to Malden in 1726, Charlestown retained the ownership of and profits from the ferry and when Boston absorbed Charlestown the landing place and its strip of ground was the only possession of Boston on that side of Mystic River.<sup>21</sup> In 1751 the Boston Gazette carried an advertisement offering for sale the Penny Ferry with a good dwelling house for a tavern and seven acres of mowing land on Malden side and on August 6, 1775, the British burned down the house at the ferry landing.<sup>10</sup> The Malden-Medford bridge across the Mystic built in 1653 was the first toll bridge in New England and perhaps in the British Colonies.<sup>21</sup>

\*\*Prior to 1649 the term Mystic Side implied extensive land holdings of Charlestown, north of the Mystic River, the main portion of which was in that year set off and named Malden, with the retention to Charlestown for fifty-five years longer of approximately half of what is now the township of Everett which in its turn bore the name "Mystic Side," the residents of which territory were for long called by the Maldenites "our Charlestown neighbors" (see Parker, p. 471).

but in 1651, of their five selectmen, two were JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL, and in 1651 these five selectmen petitioned the court to replace the then licensed inn keeper by granting to Thomas<sup>1</sup> Skinner (*vide infra*. below) a license to keep an ordinary.<sup>11</sup> The cause of their displeasure with the incumbent was probably of a dual nature for he had displeased the Malden men by his attitude toward their church and pastor, as will presently be shown, and, as was proved within a year or two he also displayed very reprehensible personal conduct. Failing of acquiescence to their first request, they sent a second similar petition to the court in May, 1652, signed by the selectmen, including JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM, which resulted in the desired license to Thomas<sup>1</sup> Skinner to keep an ordinary there. A further petition from the same selectmen in December, 1653, obtained permission for Skinner "to retale strong waters in there Towne".<sup>11</sup>

A digression just here, seems suitable, to record certain connections between the CALL family and Thomas<sup>1</sup> Skinner, for the latter man, called "victualer", about 1654 bought a house and fifteen acres which was "soon found in the occupancy of THOMAS CALL as grantee or tenant of Skinner",<sup>11</sup> but whether THOMAS<sup>1</sup> or THOMAS<sup>2</sup> is not evident, since the father did not die until 1676, but the son was not married until 1657. However, the father could have settled on the property and have later turned it over to the son, for the next statement pertains definitely to THOMAS<sup>2</sup>, viz.: "The marriage of Skinner with CALL's widow LYDIA after 1678 returned the house and land to their earlier possessor."<sup>11</sup> And a situation not clarified by deeds<sup>19</sup> and very hard to understand appears therein, for LYDIA (SHEPARDSON) CALL Skinner had<sup>19</sup> by February 1677-8 a grandson THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER, by her daughter JOANNA<sup>3</sup>, and three other grandsons later, who might reasonably have expected to inherit their grandfather's lands (and eventually they did acquire at least a part of them by purchase, *vide infra* 138-9). On the other hand, Thomas<sup>1</sup> Skinner had possessed a good estate and had divided it between his two sons. This CALL property brought him by LYDIA, consisting of three acres with house and barn near the southeastern corner of Cross and Walnut Streets,<sup>11</sup> was deeded by the two of them in 1693-4 to his son Abraham Skinner on condition of their future maintenance. Abraham<sup>2</sup> died soon after, leaving the land to his widow and subsequently to their son Abraham<sup>3</sup>. It seems highly probable that our LYDIA was unhappy in the Skinner home and spent her later years in the home left by her first husband, THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL (*vide infra*).

Another digression along a quite different line will help an understanding of certain events and developments which involved THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL as well as our other Malden families.

We are told that in early Massachusetts<sup>14</sup> "the religious element made all others subordinate to itself; . . . it was an essential part of the Puritan life and mind. In themselves, a protest against the excesses of the established church in England, the founders of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay carried to the extreme, the beliefs and practices which made them a peculiar people. Coming out of a church which was dominated by the state, they sought to found a state which should itself be circled and guarded by the church."<sup>14</sup> Winthrop wrote about 1637, "Whereas the way of God hath alwayes beene to gather churches out of the world, now the world, or civell state, must be raised out of the churches' ". "This explains everything to us in the religious institutions of our ancestors. The English

Magna Charta restricted the right of suffrage, in the choice of their own representatives in the Commons, to freeholders. Puritans restricted the right of suffrage to Christians. They tried to evolve a state out of a church. . . . No such scheme of government had existed since the days of Samuel the Prophet Judge. . . . It was the embodiment of Theocracy without its purity; a government of God, evolved from the minds and pervaded by the prejudices of men . . . and, with all the sincerity and earnestness of its founders and supporters, it remained in its integrity not many years. It was already in its decline when the church of Malden was gathered." And the adoption of the half-way covenant, the intrusion of Baptists and other sects and many other influences shortened its life.

"Its mistakes were many; but not all was weakness and error in the Puritanic system. . . . There were in it arteries of healthy life, which remain today as pure as when first they flowed full of faith and liberty in Puritan hearts. It was a life filled with the spirit of a people who, emancipating themselves from the spiritual authority of the state, in the old world, in a new world came at last to throw off the political authority of the church; and who, through trials and dangers, building perhaps better than they knew in pain, laid deep and sure the foundations on which we rest."<sup>14</sup>

"Thus, during the colonial period, at least, both the ecclesiastical and the political records show a long series of experiments and mistakes — a blind groping. The glory of those days is that there was a constant approach toward better things. One by one . . . old prejudices and errors were laid aside. There was a sturdy element of conscience and common sense in the body of the people, which in the end proved stronger than courts and synods or magistrates and ministers. . . . To the freedom of thought, to the free will and ability to work and watch and wait, we owe all that makes the present full of good and the future promising. Out of the hearts and thoughts of the Puritans, and not out of the imperfect works which they or their children rejected came the good seed and the plentiful fruitage."<sup>14</sup>

The application of the above quotations to THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL and his contemporaries lies in the fact that whereas at first the Massachusetts churches<sup>14</sup> were each quite independent, making their own rules, choosing and sometimes even ordaining their own pastors,<sup>14</sup> (see Greene, p. 332) it had become, by 1650 when Malden church was forming, the courteous custom and almost the unbreakable rule to ask advice and assistance of the neighboring churches in such matters.

Malden church had called at least nine clergymen or church officers, without securing a pastor, and by 1650, learning that one Rev. Marmaduke Matthews had no church, they decided in desperation to call him to serve them and found they liked him well. In other words, the independence earlier maintained by churches, was employed by them. But Rev. Matthew, having already preached at Yarmouth and Hull, and having gained high praise from some prominent men, had also gained marked disapproval from others who blamed him for "weak and unsafe expressions."<sup>\*</sup> Indeed, some people urged his banishment, and he really was officially admonished and refused permission to return to Hull, though that town requested

<sup>\*</sup>Some of those "weak and unsafe expressions" were (with modern spelling):<sup>14</sup>

"Christ is gone up to heaven to prepare mansions for us, for as the sin of Adam did shut paradise, so the ascension of Christ doth open paradise again."

"To think we can have any conviction before we have Christ is a very delusion."

"The Scriptures are the foundation of 'Dogmatical & historical' faith but not of saving faith."

his further services. So when, about the middle of 1650, Malden, without taking advice of other churches, invited this man, already in disfavor in some quarters, to serve them, they were really inviting trouble, and they promptly got it. Various churches wrote to Malden in protest against Matthews' settlement or ordination; but Malden obstinately ordained him by herself; and really had repeated precedent therefor. However, after he had preached for sometime in the little meeting house at Bell Rock,\* he was summoned to appear May 7, 1651, before the General Court to answer charges made by Thomas Lynde, a church member and by John Hathorne, the misbehaving innkeeper (vide supra) who later committed and admitted forgery. A document<sup>11</sup> was addressed to the court May 16, 1651, and signed by "five of the most prominent men of the town", including JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM, which strongly upheld their pastor and discredited his critics.

In spite of this strong commendation, the court convicted him of "unsafe, if not unsound expressions" in point of doctrine, but decided to examine him further, on June 11th next, at the "Shipp" at the corner of Ann and Clark Streets in Boston and by this time they divided a secondary displeasure between Rev. Matthews and the Malden church because of his ordination without official approval. For this added offence, Mr. Matthews was ordered to humbly acknowledge his sin within a month or be fined £10 — but he did *not* acknowledge it, and the marshall when he attempted to collect the fine found nothing to attach, so the court ordered that "the execution thereof shalbe respited, till other goods appeare besides bookes." Instead, on June 11th, Rev. Matthews presented a lengthy document, most marvelously misspelled, explaining his views, which document was endorsed and approved by nine of his church members, including THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL and JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM.

And one of the most unusual developments appeared at the subsequent October, 1651, session of the court, when the case was again brought up by the presentation of a petition, bearing the signatures of thirty-six *wives* and *mothers* of his congregation, including ELIZABETH GROVER, wife of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and JOANNA CALL, wife first of DANIEL<sup>1</sup> SHEPARDSON and next of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL. It read:<sup>14</sup>

"To the Hono d Court

"The petition of Many Inhabitants of Maldon & Charlestowne in Mestickside Humble sheweth That y<sup>e</sup> Almighty God in great mercie to ou<sup>r</sup> souls as we trust hath Affter many prayers Jndeavo<sup>rs</sup> & long Wayting Brought m<sup>r</sup> Mathews among vs & putt him into the worke of the Ministrie. By whose pious life & labo<sup>r</sup>s the lord hath Afforded vs Many Savings Convictions directions and Consolations whose Continuance in y<sup>t</sup> Service of Christ if it were y<sup>e</sup> good pleasure of god wee much desy<sup>r</sup>, And it is ou<sup>r</sup> humble Request to this Hono<sup>d</sup> Court y<sup>t</sup> you would please to pass by Some personall & perticul<sup>r</sup> ffaylings (which may as we humbly conseave be yo<sup>r</sup> Glory & no greife of heart to you in tyme to come) And to p<sup>m</sup>itt him to Jmploy those tallents god God hath ffurnished him w<sup>th</sup> all. so Shall we yo<sup>r</sup> humble petion<sup>rs</sup> w<sup>th</sup> many others be Bound to pray, etc."<sup>14</sup>  
28.8.51"

Then were subscribed the thirty-six women's names!

Following all this confusion, the court did what it should have done in the beginning — turned the controversy over to the ecclesiastical authorities. But

\*In Bell Rock Cemetery<sup>10</sup> are stones erected to the memory of our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL, THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL, LYDIA (SHEPARDSON) CALL, JOANNA (CALL) PARKER, SARAH (—) PARKER, JACOB<sup>2</sup> PARKER, THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER, REBECCA (DANFORTH) PARKER, DAVID<sup>4</sup> PARKER, JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM, RUTH (WOOD) UPHAM, ABIGAIL (HAYWARD) UPHAM, JOHN<sup>2</sup> UPHAM, LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> GROVER and doubtless others.

first it saw fit to punish the church members for their wilfulness in connection with the ordination, by a fine of £50 which was secured by a levy or lien on the estates of three of the members, including Captain John<sup>1</sup> Waite who later married our SARAH (—) PARKER, and his then father-in-law Joseph<sup>1</sup> Hill, both outstanding men of the town. These three who were bound for the amount were permitted to apportion it among ten or eleven of the offending members, including JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL. In 1655 the Rev. Matthews returned permanently to England, and in May of that year the fine, still only partly paid, was up for discussion by the General Court when eight of the men,<sup>14</sup> including JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL and Captain John<sup>1</sup> Waite acknowledged the offence they had given by the ordination and asked that the balance of the fine be forgiven them, or that at least Joseph<sup>1</sup> Hills and Captain John<sup>1</sup> Waite be forgiven and cleared. The court ironically accepted and approved of their apology but insisted that the fine must be paid. These are the words of the court's reply.<sup>13</sup>

May 29, 1655.

"In answer to the petiçon of . . . JN<sup>o</sup> VPPAM . . . & THOMAS CALL in w<sup>ch</sup> they humbly acknowledg the offenc they gaue to the Court & seuerall churches about the ordination of m<sup>r</sup> Mathewes, etc. and therein also craving a remittment of thirteene pounds six shillings and eight pence, pt of a fine not yett satisfied, the Court doth well approve and accept of the petiçoners acknowledgments of their irregular actings in those times, but vnderstanding much, if not most, of the fine being pajd for, & that the rest is secured and should long since have binn pajd in, they see not cawse to graunt their request in that."

So these men who were mentally far ahead of their time, in their vision of religious and personal liberty were made sadly conscious that they must slow down their progress, and that to "stand before the Court as representatives of a contumacious church implied something more than distinction."<sup>14</sup> "There must have been both chagrin and grief and a touch of wrath in the little church at Bell Rock that winter."<sup>14</sup> Thus, by unearthing the reaction of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL and of his wife and associates to this extended religious controversy, we may deduce certain phases of character which must have been theirs — an intense craving for the sacraments of the church, broader minds than many of their contemporaries, and strong convictions and a willingness to testify for and even suffer for those same convictions.

In 1657 the selectmen, including JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL, made a gift of house and land to their minister who had succeeded the Rev. Matthews, and in June, 1662, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> as a member of a committee for the town, petitioned the General Court for the grant of a tract of land four miles square at Pennycook ". . . to be layd out by m<sup>r</sup> JONATHAN DANFORTH or some other Artist. . . ."<sup>11</sup> The court granted them one thousand acres which lay not at Pennycook but mostly in the northern part of the present Shrewsbury and slightly in what became Holden and West Boylston.

BENNET, wife of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL, died at an unknown date after<sup>2</sup> 1643, and he married secondly before<sup>14</sup> October 28, 1651\*, JOANNA (—) SHEPARDSON, widow of our DANIEL<sup>1</sup> SHEPARDSON. The death of JOANNA occurred at Malden January 30, 1660-1 and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL himself survived her until May, 1676, having lived

\*In spite of the fact that she signed the petition<sup>14</sup> relative to the minister in 1651 as "JOANNA CALL" she is said to have sold land<sup>4</sup> in 1654 to Henry<sup>1</sup> Dunster, president of Harvard as "widow JOANNA SHEPARDSON." Perhaps the land in question had belonged to her first husband.

to the age of seventy-nine.<sup>8,10,11</sup> His will dated November 23, 1670, and<sup>19</sup> proved October 3, 1676, gave real estate and a pair of black oxen to son John<sup>2</sup>, made bequests to his three living daughters, left ten shillings to each grandchild as they became of age, and made THOMAS<sup>2</sup> the executor and chief beneficiary of his estate<sup>19</sup> which was appraised at about £150.

The children of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and BENNETT (—) CALL, three of them born in England but in unknown order, were:<sup>1,2,4,5,6,7</sup>

- I. Margaret<sup>2</sup>, b. in Eng.; d. at Malden<sup>8</sup> June 22, 1667, having m. by 1652 as his first wife<sup>20</sup> a Thomas<sup>1</sup> Greene of that town.<sup>8,19,20</sup>
- II. THOMAS<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- III. John<sup>2</sup>, b. in Eng. 1635; d.<sup>4</sup> at Charlestown Apr. 19, 1697; m. June 21, 1656, Hannah<sup>2</sup> Kettle [Richard<sup>1</sup> and Esther (Ward)].<sup>4,6</sup>
- IV. Mary<sup>2</sup>, probably she who emigrated on same vessel as the Call family, but as servant (vide supra). She was named 1670 in her father's will.<sup>2</sup>
- V. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, bap. at Charlestown Feb. 21, 1640-1; d. Feb. 21, 1715-6, at Rehoboth;<sup>6</sup> m. 1st Sept. 20, 1663, Samuel<sup>2</sup> Tingley (Palmer<sup>1</sup>); m. 2nd Apr. 11, 1667-8, Daniel<sup>2</sup> Shepardson DANIEL<sup>1</sup>).
- VI. Mercy<sup>2</sup>, b. at Charlestown Nov. 7, 1643; d. there<sup>6</sup> Aug. 29, 1671; m. 1st Dec. 4, 1662, Samuel<sup>1</sup> Lee who d.<sup>8,24</sup> at Malden Aug. 19, 1676, aged 36. She was widow Lee in 1677-8 and is said<sup>4</sup> to have m. 2nd John Allen and some<sup>8,10</sup> Mercy Allen, wife of John, died at Malden in January 1678, aged 35. However some Mercy Lee m. at Malden<sup>8</sup> Dec. 2, 1686, Richard Wicks.

THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL (*Thomas*<sup>1</sup>) was born in England somewhere about 1633, since his gravestone at Malden records<sup>8</sup> his death as having occurred in November, 1678, at the age<sup>8,10</sup> of about forty-five. He married at Malden<sup>8</sup> on July 22, 1657, LYDIA<sup>2</sup> SHEPARDSON\* (see Shepardson, p. 546) who was also his stepsister and who became his sister-in-law as well as his wife.

He seems to have been much less concerned in public life than his father, though he became a church member at some unknown date and performed his civic duty by subsequently becoming a freeman<sup>9</sup> on April 29, 1668. It is repeatedly stated<sup>11</sup> that his home was near the southeast corner of present Cross and Walnut Streets in Malden, and this appears to have been the property acquired by purchase or lease from Thomas<sup>1</sup> Skinner about 1655-7 by either THOMAS<sup>2</sup> or his father, which property LYDIA, widow of THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL, after his death, returned to the ownership of the Skinner family by marriage with Thomas<sup>1</sup> Skinner and by its gift to that man's son Abraham<sup>2</sup> Skinner (vide supra).

While the earliest home of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL had been at the Malden end of Penny Ferry in what is now Everett, the family presently removed farther north into Malden proper, where they were consistently identified in the long drawn out church controversy with the Maldenites rather than the Southern party (see Parker, p. 471). Various items are of record referring to the survey of roads through or contiguous to the land of THOMAS<sup>2</sup>. One of these in 1701 ran from his house to the South Spring and one from his house to the meeting house to furnish a shorter route for the east end people.<sup>22</sup>

It is very interesting to note that THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER, a life-long Maldenite, grandson and namesake of THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL, who received a bequest of £20 from the latter man's will made shortly after the child's birth, showed in his adult life a strong desire to acquire lands held by his forbears. In July, 1709, he and his

\*In one record<sup>17</sup> she was called "ELIDIA".

three brothers acquired the rights of a half sister to all lands which had been owned by THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL and in 1738 he (THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER) bought out the rights of these brothers and a niece (daughter of a deceased sister) to his grandfather's lands.<sup>23</sup> Though no deed is of record, he is said<sup>22</sup> to have also acquired after 1725-6 the Call property which had been carried into the Skinner family by his grandmother, before 1693.

THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL was made sole executor<sup>2</sup> and chief beneficiary by the will of his father, THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, and less than three years later, his own death occurred.<sup>8</sup> His estate amounted<sup>19</sup> to over £317 and his will dated February 28, 1677-8, gave his wife one third of it for life "to dispose of as she shall see meet". It left £20 to his grandson, THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER, if he lived to the age of twenty-one, left £5 each to John<sup>2</sup> and Ephraim<sup>2</sup> Green (page 132) and divided the remainder between his daughters Lydia<sup>3</sup> and JOANNA<sup>3</sup> but by 1702 JOANNA<sup>3</sup> was the "only surviving heir".<sup>19</sup> He made his wife LYDIA and his brother John<sup>2</sup> Call his executors.

For some unknown reason, the estate of THOMAS<sup>2</sup> remained undivided for twenty-four years after his death in spite of the plea of his nephew Thomas<sup>2</sup> Green (vide supra). Finally, following a petition by John<sup>3</sup> Stearns, second husband of JOANNA<sup>3</sup> (CALL) PARKER, the court summoned<sup>19</sup> LYDIA (SHEPARDSON) CALL Skinner in the spring of 1701-2 to "appear and show cause, if any, why said division should not be made." In May a committee of five, Dea. John Greenland, Lemuel Jenkins, Thomas<sup>2</sup> Oakes, Peter Tufts and Joseph Whittemore were appointed, who set off to mother LYDIA her third and turned over the remainder to daughter JOANNA<sup>3</sup>. The widow's share included the east end of the family home and one third of the orchard, pasture, plow land and salt marsh.<sup>19</sup> Various items suggest that LYDIA may have had a mind of her own. Perhaps her right to a third part of the estate of THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL for the term of her life (a rather unusual feature) gave her a self-assurance which caused her to be none too easy to live with; perhaps she was a bit domineering, or her gift of a part of the CALL property to the Skinner family may have caused her to expect greater consideration than was accorded her in and by that family. For in the deed of gift (the equivalent of a will) from Thomas<sup>4</sup> Skinner to his son Abraham<sup>2</sup> the following significant words are found:<sup>19</sup>

"And to my wife LYDIA I give forty shillings to be paid in four years, ten shillings a year, if she demands it, in case that she doth not medle with the estate that I have given. . . ." <sup>19</sup>

In another document signed by Thomas<sup>4</sup> Skinner in May, 1698, he bargained with his daughter-in-law, widow of Abraham<sup>2</sup> for "meat, drink and clothes for my life," which implied that he was not holding himself responsible for LYDIA. Skinner died in March, 1703-4, but at least until 1711 land transfers made reference<sup>22</sup> to LYDIA Skinner's or widow Skinner's land, and it seems highly probable that she took advantage of the protective provision made for her comfort by THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL and made use of the "east end of the house". She lived to be about eighty-seven years old, dying at Malden<sup>8,11</sup> December 17, 1723.

The known children of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and LYDIA (SHEPARDSON) CALL were<sup>2,6,8,19</sup>

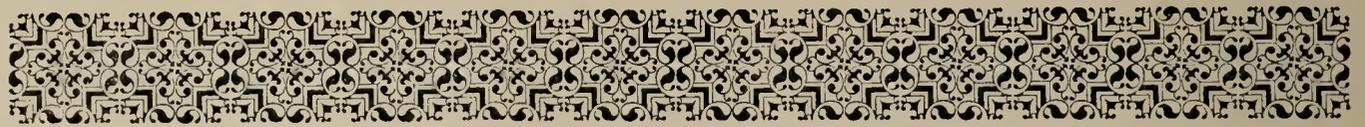
- I. Lydia<sup>3</sup>, named in her father's will;<sup>19</sup> died by 1702 when JOANNA<sup>3</sup> was the "only surviving heir."<sup>19</sup>
- II. JOANNA<sup>3</sup>, b. March 1659-60 at Malden; named for her grandmother who died less than a year later; d. at Malden<sup>8,16</sup> Dec. 4, 1737, ac. 78; m. 1st not later<sup>19</sup> than May, 1677, JACOB<sup>2</sup>

PARKER (see Parker, p. 466), since her father's will of February, 1677-8 named her son, THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER; m. 2ndly at Malden<sup>8</sup> Apr. 22, 1696, as his second wife, John<sup>5</sup> Stearns (John<sup>2</sup> Isaac<sup>1</sup>).<sup>16</sup> Her second husband by deed of gift under date of October 16, 1728, gave to JOANNA convenient room in his house, a garden spot and convenience to pass and repass to the garden and well; two cows, a horse, one pig and ten sheep, with one of the cows to be provided for winter and summer and the horse to be kept for her service, and firewood from his land and half of the household goods to do with as she pleased.<sup>19</sup> Thus we find evidence that her second marriage brought her happier conditions than her mother's had furnished.

## REFERENCES

1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 188-9; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, VIII, 276.
2. Savage I, 330; Pope's Pioneers, p. 87; New England Register IV, 183; Bi-Centennial Book of Malden, 1850, p. 240.
3. History of the First Church, Charlestown, Mass., W. I. Budington, 1845, p. 247.
4. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, pp. 18, 166-7, 574, 612, 861-2; New England Register XLVIII, 56-9.
5. New England Register, LXXV, 222, 225; American Colonists in English Records, G. Sherwood, 1932, Ser. 1, pp. 30-1.
6. Some Ancestral Lines — of Guilford Solon Tingley —, R. M. Tingley, 1935, pp. 62-5, 378.
7. Savage II, 306; Wyman's Charlestown, pp. 167, 441, 443.
8. Vital Records of Malden, Mass., pp. 14, 32, 201, 214, 237, 259, 276, 327, 335, 358, 379, 367, 377.
9. Records of Massachusetts Bay I, 376; New England Register III, 187, 240.
10. Malden Historical Society Register II, 63-5, 69; III, 54, 56, 58, 61, 65, 68; IV, 93-4; VI, 22, 48.
11. History of Malden, Mass. D. P. Corey, 1899, pp. 66-8, 70, 87-8, 104-111, 113-7, 141, 145-6, 152, 160, 201, 287, 301-2, 374-5, 433-5, 437-8; Wyman's Charlestown, p. 869; History of Cambridge, Mass., L. R. Paige, 1877, pp. 434-5.
12. Winchester, Mass., Record II, 1886, Frontispiece, pp. 9-10.
13. Records of Massachusetts Bay, II, 98; IV, pt. 1, 236.
14. Bi-Centennial Book of Malden, 1850, pp. 128-9, 139-42, 195; History of Malden, Mass., D. P. Corey, 1899, pp. 126-164, especially 141, 145-6, 150-1, 160-1; History of Middlesex County, Mass., S. A. Drake, 1880, II, 115-8.
15. History of Charlestown, R. Frothingham, 1845, pp. 99-100; History of New England, John Winthrop, 1853, I, 220, 261-2.
16. History of Billerica, Mass., H. A. Hazen, 1883, pt. 2, p. 139; History of Watertown, Mass., H. Bond, 1860, p. 455; Stearns Genealogy, Mrs. A. S. Van Wagenen, 1901, p. 30.
17. New England Register X, 162.
18. Middlesex Co., Mass., Probate Records VIII, 825, and Deeds, IX, 20.
19. Research in Middlesex Co., Mass., by Mrs. James T. Watts, of Washington, D. C., Probate Book IV, 243-4; V, 225-7; X, 466, 477, file No. 3892, Deeds I, 110; IX, 224, 226; X, 534; XII, 53; XV, 42, 569; XXVIII, 462; County Court Miscellaneous Records, p. 95.
20. Descendants of Thomas Greene, S. S. Greene, 1858, pp. 7-8.
21. History of Charlestown, Mass., R. Frothingham, 1845, pp. 95, 147; Corey's History of Malden, pp. 78, 85, 88, 448, 493; History of Middlesex County, Mass. S. A. Drake, 1880, II, 115-7; Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, II, 324; History of Middlesex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, III, 578.
22. History of Malden, Mass., D. P. Corey, 1899, pp. 70, 374, 433-8.
23. Parkers in America, A. G. Parker, p. 533; Research of documentary material made by Mrs. James T. Watts, Washington, D. C., Middlesex County, Mass., Deeds XV, 42; XXXIX, 300.
24. Swan-Farwell Genealogy, J. C. Frost, 1923, pp. 58, 144.





## CARTER

**T**HOMAS<sup>1</sup> CARTER\*, blacksmith, with his wife MARY and six children, almost or quite adult, emigrated from England and settled at Charlestown<sup>1</sup> not later than the summer or fall of 1636. That town in common with the other early settlements<sup>7</sup> admitted inhabitants only after severe scrutiny and only on a favorable vote by the town. Credentials showing church membership or good moral character were required and not infrequently residence was refused to applicants — not because of poverty but “such as were exorbitant, and of a turbulent spirit, unfit for a civil society, they would reject till they came to mend their manners”.<sup>7</sup> Therefore it is significant that on January 8, 1636-7, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> joined the church;<sup>1,2</sup> on September 2, 1639, his daughter HANNAH<sup>2</sup> did so; on October 24, 1639, his daughter Mary<sup>2</sup> and on November 4, 1643, his wife MARY became members;<sup>1,2</sup> and sons Samuel<sup>2</sup> and Thomas<sup>2</sup> followed suit<sup>1,2</sup> in 1645 and 1646-7. The fact that at nearby Woburn the minister was also a Thomas Carter\*\* and with a wife Mary, operated to quite uniformly cause our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> to be identified by the term, “blacksmith”.

On March 9, 1636-7, he was made a freeman,<sup>4,9</sup> implying that he had applied for that privilege at least six months earlier or in September, 1636. Of his sons, JOHN<sup>2</sup> was made a freeman on May 29, 1644, while Thomas<sup>2</sup> and Samuel<sup>2</sup> acquired that status<sup>4,9</sup> on May 26, 1647, showing thus their interest and participation in civic affairs.

Charlestown was built on a peninsula<sup>14</sup> formed by the Mystic and Charles Rivers (see map, p. 255). It was settled in 1629 and in early days had an extensive territory, but it became the mother of many towns, Charlestown Village (Woburn) in 1642, Mystic Side† (Malden) in 1649, and various others as time went on, until it became the smallest town in the state, as regards territory, and was absorbed, itself, in 1874 by its younger sister, Boston. Long before the arrival of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CARTER, the town had decided that each family should have a two acre house plot and two acres for every male who was “able to plant”, as well as later additional grants, so this family with its four grown sons would have been comfortably pro-

\*Evidence is seen<sup>13</sup> of a probable relationship with THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CARTER as well as with Richard<sup>1</sup> Adams of Malden in the will of John<sup>1</sup> Bibble who was at Boston in 1637, was licensed as an innkeeper at Hull in 1644 and later lived at Malden. This will dated July 21, 1653, (only a month or two after the death of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> himself) and probated on August 21 following, after making bequests to his own wife, daughter, son-in-law and grandchildren, gave “to THOMAS CARTER’s children of Charles Towne, Twelve pence a peece; to Charitie Whit of Boston, Twoe Shillings; to Richard Adames of Malden, and his wife and fife children, Twelve pence a peece”.<sup>13</sup>

\*\*To an amazing extent, too, the children and grandchildren of the minister bore names identical with those borne by the descendants of our THOMAS<sup>1</sup>.

†As early as April, 1638, land was laid out at Mystic Side<sup>17</sup> to many Charlestown men, including THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CARTER and his son Samuel<sup>2</sup> but no removal of any member of the family to that section is evident, though in 1658-9, when a division of common land was made there<sup>14</sup> “Widow [MARY] CARTAR” received a share as did also her sons Thomas<sup>2</sup> and Samuel<sup>2</sup>.

vided for. The town early made provision for its needy, but to an active imagination the resultant situation would seem a trying one to all concerned, considering the scanty space and conveniences under which the pioneers lived. We read that in October, 1635, the town voted "that widow Morly be monthly kept from House to House throughout the town, at 3s. in winter, and 2s. in summer, per week". It evidently did not work out well for in 1637 a room was provided for her in the watch-house. And in 1640 "Thomas Gold was allowed £3.10s for the widow Wood for one year past".<sup>14</sup>

By the time THOMAS<sup>1</sup> had been in Charlestown three years he had weighed the situation of men in his trade, had sensed what seemed to him an injustice and had sufficient initiative to prepare, with the approval of a blacksmith of Roxbury, a petition which they two signed and presented to the General Court<sup>3</sup> in September, 1639, (apparently between the 10th and 16th). It read:<sup>3</sup>

"The humble petition of Isaacke Morrell & THOMAS CARTER blacksmithes in the behalfe of themselves & the rest of the blacksmithes\* within this Colony.

Shewing & informing this Court that whereas heretofore Coles have bin in this Country sold them for 30s. a chaldron\*\* now of late they are rayed to 4 £ lacking but 2s. chaldron, and moreover that they are forced speedily to buy them at that great price or els they can not be gotten for money but are bought up & sent away into other parts of this Continent, . . . and yo<sup>r</sup> peticoners conceive that unlesse some speedy remedy be found out to help & prevent these mischeifes their trade will be much hurt and the commonwealth deeply prejudiced.

Therefore yo<sup>r</sup> peticoners in this case humbly crave the Advice & help of this Court & shall dayly as their duty is pray for yo<sup>r</sup> health & prosperity & the publicke."<sup>3</sup>

No recorded evidence is seen of acquiescence to this request, but an entry of September, 1642, calls the attention of the governor and magistrates to "Goodman Morrell's petition" which may have been the one quoted.

In 1640 the freemen used for ballots,<sup>7</sup> in an election of assistants or magistrates, corn or beans, "the corn to manifest election, the beans contrary". A person putting into the ballot box more than one of either, or of voting who had no right to vote was liable to a penalty of £10." And by that year Charlestown had grown to the point of having among its citizens tailors, coopers, ropemakers, glaziers, tile-makers, anchor smiths, collar-makers, charcoal burners, joiners, wheelwrights and blacksmiths. It boasted a brew house, a salt pan, a potter's kiln, a saw pit, a wind mill, water mill and a tide mill.<sup>7</sup>

On March 2, 1640-1, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CARTER and Edward Jones were chosen constables and took the oath of office, but official life does not seem to have run very smoothly for THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and he must have been very careless or forgetful for on September 7, 1641, he was fined<sup>4</sup> six shillings eight pence "for warning the iury men too late, & for a rong day, w<sup>ch</sup> was two dayes too late". No other evidence is seen of official activity on the part of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> but his service to the community with his forge and hammer would have been continuous, for no man was more useful, and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> retained his shop and probably operated it until his death.<sup>9</sup>

\*It is interesting to note that our DANIEL<sup>1</sup> SHEPARDSON of Charlestown and Malden was also a blacksmith and would have profited by this plan. Moreover, the friendliness between DANIEL<sup>1</sup> and our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CARTER is evidenced by the fact that when DANIEL<sup>1</sup> made his will in July, 1644, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CARTER and two other Charlestown men witnessed it.<sup>16</sup>

\*\*The term chaldron or caldron implied a nearly obsolete English dry measure for coal, lime, etc. Its weight varied with the locality, being commonly thirty-two bushels, but in London thirty-six bushels heaped up, in Newcastle nearly double that amount and in New York it was 2500 pounds.

By the general plans made, each person who came to the colony at his own expense, received fifty acres of land; each one who "adventured" or invested £50 with the colonizing company received two hundred acres; anyone who transported a servant received fifty acres on that account. Whether THOMAS<sup>1</sup> acquired land in such a manner or acquired sufficient means to purchase what he desired is not known, but he is recorded<sup>1</sup> as owning nine tracts of varying size in Charlestown on two of which houses stood. What appears to have been his home<sup>8</sup> (listed as "house, barn and garden") lay between present Monument Avenue and Pleasant Street, north of "WindMill Hill" or Town Hill. In May, 1640, when Charlestown asked for a grant of land for an outlying settlement — which in 1642 was formally named Woburn — THOMAS<sup>1</sup> acquired<sup>11</sup> a share or lot and purchased an equivalent adjoining tract,<sup>11</sup> making a total of one hundred and thirty-five acres. In 1647 he made a deed of gift<sup>1</sup> of one half of this property to his son-in-law WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE and in 1649-50 he gave the other half<sup>1</sup> to his son JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER.

In 1648 Charlestown was the scene of the earliest witchcraft case resulting in execution, of which Massachusetts Bay Colony was guilty. One Margaret Jones was accused, condemned and hung.<sup>14</sup>

An item<sup>6</sup> which quite surely pertains to THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CARTER, blacksmith, shows a donation of £1-2-0 to Harvard College in 1652, which would have been but shortly before his death. The steward's book shows a gift of £1-12-6 by Mrs. Palsgrave (widow of Dr. Richard<sup>1</sup> of Charlestown), next the gift "by *old* CARTER" (presumably of Charlestown) and following that a gift of fifteen shillings by Francis<sup>1</sup> Norton of Charlestown.<sup>6</sup> Of all recorded early Carters, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> is the eldest, and the next oldest Carter appears to have been the Rev. Thomas Carter of Woburn, who would assuredly have been referred to in a more respectful manner than was used in the steward's book. If an old man whose life had been spent in manual, though most useful, labor, had pride enough in education to give as generously as that, though he had no child who could profit by it, it suggests a keener mentality and sense of values, than had many men who might have considered themselves his betters. The will<sup>1,9</sup> of THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, dated May 5, 1652, made careful provision for his wife MARY during her life; made bequests of land to his sons Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup> and Joseph<sup>2</sup>, as well as to his daughters HANNAH<sup>2</sup> and Mary<sup>2</sup>; gave a cow and heifers to JOHN<sup>2</sup> and made bequests to four grandsons, Caleb<sup>3</sup> and Joseph<sup>3</sup> Carter (sons respectively of Samuel<sup>2</sup> and Joseph<sup>2</sup>), to John<sup>2</sup> Greene and to John<sup>2</sup> Brinsmeade.<sup>1</sup> The inventory<sup>1,9</sup> of his estate taken June 25, 1652, included his shop, tools, iron, steel, etc. and a £14 value in the services of his "servant Matthew the Scotchman",<sup>1</sup> whose cost of emigration THOMAS<sup>1</sup> had evidently paid. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> died between May 5 and June 25, 1652, and on September 10, 1653,<sup>5</sup> widow MARY and her sons Samuel<sup>2</sup> and Joseph<sup>2</sup> asked the advice<sup>5</sup> of the General Court as to the disposal of the bequests the deceased had made to his four grandsons, suggesting that the £10 legacies be delivered to the respective parents with the additional proportionate shares from the sale of certain property, the said parents giving security to the executors to protect the widow's life rights in the property, as well as their own children's rights. The court gave its approval to this plan.<sup>5</sup> Subsequently the three brothers, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup> and Samuel<sup>2</sup> had filed another petition with that court and received the ruling<sup>5</sup> on November 12, 1659, that the case should be settled in the Middlesex County Court. The next move was made<sup>32</sup> on

April 3, 1660, when the last named court "impowered Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup> and Ensigne JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER, as trustees to improve the estate appteyning to the children of their brother, WILLIAM GREENE, deceased, and in order thereto they are impowered to demand and receive the same where or in whose hands soever they shall find any part thereof." As a consequence, these trustees proceeded legally against Michael Bacon.<sup>32</sup>

In 1656-7, widow MARY was recorded<sup>1</sup> as holding the right to pasture, on the town commons, four and one-quarter cows — which doubtless would have been interpreted as four cows and either a sheep or a calf. She lived on until March 6, 1664-5, being recorded<sup>1</sup> as "Mother of the Carters in town".

The children of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and MARY (—) CARTER, all born in England, but in uncertain order, from two of whom we descend, were<sup>1</sup>

- I. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1606-8; called oldest son by father's will; d. at Charlestown Dec. 30, 1694. in 88th year;<sup>1</sup> m. 1st by 1639 Anna\* (—) who d. May 6, 1679; m. 2nd Oct. 24, 1679, Elizabeth (—) Johnson, widow<sup>1</sup> of William<sup>1</sup> of Charlestown.
- II. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, a shoemaker,<sup>9</sup> b. abt. 1616; aged 46 in 1662; d. Aug. 29, 1681, at Charlestown; m. by 1639, Winifred (perhaps Harrod or Harwood).
- III. Joseph<sup>2</sup>, called currier or leather worker,<sup>9</sup> of Charlestown and Woburn; d. at Charlestown Jan. 31, 1676, called 72; m. Susanna who survived him.
- IV. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- V. Mary<sup>2</sup>, d. abt. 1673; named in her father's will and in her husband's will, 1673, as of Stratford, Conn; m.<sup>2</sup> before Oct. 24, 1639, John<sup>1</sup> Brinsmeade.
- VI. HANNAH<sup>2</sup>, joined Charlestown Church Sept. 2, 1639; d. 1658; m.<sup>1</sup> 1st by 1642-3, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE (see Greene, p. 333); m. 2nd 1654-8 Thomas<sup>1</sup> Brown of Charlestown<sup>1</sup> who was b.<sup>1</sup> abt. 1628.

JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER (*Thomas<sup>1</sup>*) was born in England about 1616 to 1620, for while on April 4, 1660, he deposed that he was about forty years old, when he died at Woburn on September 14, 1692 (see illustration on p. 150) he was called<sup>9,12,15</sup> seventy-six. He had two wives of whom the first,<sup>10,15,18</sup> ELIZABETH, whom he married about 1642, was the mother of all of his children. Her identity has not been learned, but she died at Woburn<sup>12,18</sup> on May 6 or 7, 1691, aged seventy-eight and later in that same year he married secondly,<sup>12,15</sup> Elizabeth Grose. Record of his acquirement of church membership is not seen but the fact that he became a freeman<sup>4,10</sup> on May 29, 1644, proves that he first held such membership. On this same date his brother-in-law, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE, also took the freeman's oath.

The life of JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER from about 1636 to 1640 was spent at Charlestown, probably in his father's home, but when in 1640 land was granted across the Mystic River to the north to form "Charlestown Village"<sup>7</sup> he was one of thirty-two Charlestown men who became proprietors and settlers there. On December 18, 1640, they met and signed\*\* a series of "Town Orders"<sup>7</sup> which were the basis of the laws of the new town.

We are given the word of one of those first settlers, Capt. Edward<sup>1</sup> Johnson, that his contemporaries, as well as their immediate descendants "were a very industrious, as well as a hardy, courageous race of men". He says that they were "very laborious, if not exceeding, some of them". They were frugal of their time, diligent in their work, and gave no countenance to idleness or dissipation and as

\*This first wife was probably a Williams, for in 1662 Thomas<sup>2</sup> Carter was attorney<sup>1</sup> for his brother-in-law, Matthew Williams.

\*\*Others of this group<sup>7</sup> were our FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL, JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE.

late as 1699 we will find a member of this family called before the selectmen<sup>25</sup> because he misspent his time. But this record of diligence explains how in a brief ten years in Woburn they could have created homes from a wilderness, filled their own needs and have had a surplus to sell to the coast towns and even to export. Evidence of the strictness of discipline over servants is seen<sup>12</sup> in a judgment of 1653 toward one belonging to JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER who for "stubbornes & rebellion agst his master, shalbe openly and severly whipped at Woborne, not exceeding ten stripes."

JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER with his friend, Capt. Edward Johnson, had become involved about 1658 in a controversy<sup>19,21</sup> with Thomas<sup>1</sup> Dutton, about a land boundary, and the latter man had become very abusive toward JOHN<sup>2</sup> and finally the three of them petitioned the General Court for a ruling in the case. That body on October 19, 1658, appointed a committee of three to go to Woburn, hear the evidence, swear in witnesses, "& determine and setle the bounds of the lands in controursy. . . ." At the next term of court the committee reported, and were further authorized to render a specific judgment. On November 12, 1659, their decision was approved by the court and it required that Dutton should pay Ens. CARTER the charges of £3-2-4 resulting from a previous trial in their local court; that the charges of £6 for the committee's hearings should be divided equally among the three men; and

"Lastly. Wee agree, that, whereas Thomas Dutton hath clamorously abused Ensigne JOHN CARTER, calling him theefe & ljar, and in saying the sajd CARTER hath stolne the children's land, he, the sajd Dutton, the next Lords day, in a full meeting, doe then and there acknowledge that he hath wrongfully abused the sajd CARTER, which he refusing, wee judge meete, that he pay vnto the sajd CARTER the some of tenn pounds starling, at or before the twentieth of the next December after the date hereof."<sup>19,21</sup>

Apparently this decision caused reverberations for Thomas Dutton and one Gardner announced that JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER had slandered Edward Johnson\* by stating that a lease which the latter had drawn up for Dutton was "knavishly drawn or knavishly intended" and that the town records "were not worth a straw" — which was quite true!<sup>21</sup> As a result, on December 10, 1658, CARTER was sued in court by Johnson, his erstwhile friend, "for slanderous speeches against him." Both sides brought in witnesses to the number of seventeen, of whom FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL was one. The venerable Edward<sup>1</sup> Converse, friend of Johnson's, seemed to agree with JOHN<sup>2</sup> as to the value and condition of the records.<sup>21</sup> But the jury found CARTER guilty and ruled that he, lieutenant of the military company under Johnson as captain, should "both publicly and solemnly in front of the military company at Woburn, upon their next training day, in the former part of the day as soon as the clerk of the band hath called over the list, shall make this following acknowledgment in these following words, viz: —

"I, JOHN CARTER do acknowledge that I have wronged, slandered and defamed Capt. Edw: Johnson in saying that he . . . did falsify the Town Records, for which I am sorrowful."

\*Capt. Edward<sup>1</sup> Johnson, the most outstanding man of Woburn and personal friend of JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER, was the town clerk for thirty years. He was the soul of honor but the extreme brevity of his records led to no small amount of trouble and misunderstanding, especially as to boundaries, for the record which he kept for thirty years of town business, land transfers, etc., covered only thirty-six pages.<sup>41</sup> At one time the General Court sent a committee to settle the resultant confusion and uncertainty, but the report rendered was to the effect that notations, even of town action taken, were so brief as to be ambiguous. The standing of Johnson in the community may be inferred from the fact that even this condition of the records did not impair the confidence and esteem in which he was held.

“And in case the defendant shall refuse or neglect to make the said acknowledgment in manner as is above expressed, he, the said defendant, shall pay unto the plaintiff or his assigns, five pounds sterling in current pay of New England. Also the defendant is to pay unto the plaintiff costs of court, two pound eighteen shillings and nine pence.”<sup>21,32</sup>

The reaction of Woburn people to the threatened loss of their charter (see Appendix “B”, p. 694) is shown by the following:

“In 1664, at the beginning of the troubles with the home government about their charter, which the colonists resisted as infringements on their liberties, a manifesto to the General Court, from Woburn and other towns, subscribed by ‘very many hands,’ was received and noted. This was a testimonial of the people, signifying their ‘content and satisfaction’ in the ‘present government’, and offering the services of the towns in assisting and encouraging it.”<sup>23</sup>

From other acts of JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER, it seems reasonable to believe that one of the signatures to that manifesto may have been his.

In September, 1668, he was on a committee with Capt. Edward Johnson to make a division of timber and wood lands among the proprietors<sup>25</sup> and they were reimbursed for their services ten years later by grants of land. There had been a controversy between Woburn and Billerica as to their common boundary line, and the General Court had appointed a committee to confer and advise. As a result, an agreement was reached on October 21, 1669, and signed<sup>19</sup> by JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH in behalf of Billerica and by Capt. Edward Johnson, Lt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER and two others for Woburn. On February 22, 1669, JOHN<sup>2</sup> had the sad task of serving on a coroner’s jury which considered the accidental death of Samuel<sup>2</sup> Converse (Edward<sup>1</sup>) who was caught in the water wheel of the corn mill which he and his brothers had inherited from their father.<sup>30</sup>

A glimpse of the disfavor in which the Baptist Sect called “Anabaptist” was then held is found<sup>23</sup> in the case of the birth of a badly deformed child in the family of Joseph Wright in 1670 which was regarded by some as a punishment on several members of the family “for favoring the sentiments and practices of the Baptists”. The case was even brought before the magistrate and the witnesses included Lt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER,\* Mary Kendall (either wife or daughter of FRANCIS<sup>1</sup>) and RUTH<sup>2</sup> BLODGETT who was soon to marry THOMAS<sup>2</sup> KENDALL.<sup>23</sup>

JOHN<sup>2</sup> with his brothers Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, and Joseph<sup>2</sup> had from 1654, when their brother-in-law, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE died, maintained a careful oversight, trusteeship<sup>32</sup> and probably guardianship over his children, their three nephews and two nieces. It is highly probable that after the death of HANNAH (CARTER) GREENE Brown in 1658 that her children may have made their home with Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER. That he handled the property left by WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE is evident<sup>11</sup> from the fact on April 4, 1671 (when the Greene children would probably have all reached legal age) that John<sup>2</sup> Green acknowledged receipt from his “much respected uncle, JOHN CARTER, Senior, of Woburn” of all the estate willed him by WILLIAM GREENE, his father. John<sup>2</sup> Greene also receipted for a certain portion of the estate due his “loving brother, Ebenezer Greene,” which he agreed to pay over to that

\*That JOHN<sup>2</sup> was quite orthodox is shown by the fact that he and Lt. William<sup>2</sup> Johnson were in December, 1677, allowed ten shillings apiece for attending court<sup>12</sup> to give evidence against the “Anna baptists” because seven Woburn persons absented themselves from church service as a result of such disaffection.

brother. Thomas Knowlton receipted for his wife, Hannah<sup>2</sup> Greene, and JOHN<sup>2</sup> SNOW of Woburn receipted "as the full of" the portion due his wife MARY from her father, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE.<sup>11</sup>

In November, 1671, Lt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER was chairman of a committee to build a new meetinghouse which was ready for use by the following fall.<sup>25</sup> On May 15, 1672, the General Court ruled favorably upon a motion from Woburn Military Company, that Lt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER should become its captain,<sup>19</sup> and incidentally his son-in-law, James<sup>3</sup> Converse, then became its ensign. On May 7, 1673, by a request from Woburn,<sup>19</sup> Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER was authorized to "joyne such in marriage as are duly published as the law directs, one of the sajd parties, at least, living in that precincts". On March 11, 1674, the selectmen, among whom were numbered Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> and FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL, who met for town business on the first Monday of each month, agreed<sup>25</sup> that henceforth any member of their body who was not present at nine A. M., "unless detained by some providence of God", should pay a fine of three shillings to the town, and at the very next meeting Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> was tardy and was fined six pence for "being nere an hour to late". Soon afterward FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL was fined for a similar offense.<sup>25</sup>

The small pox was brought into the colony by a vessel<sup>25</sup> which landed at Nantasket on July 10, 1677, and within the next two years a total of eight hundred are said to have died in the colony of that awful disease. By the close of 1678 Woburn was suffering from so many cases of it that the selectmen issued an order on January 6, 1678-9, that such as were recovering from the disease should not attend meeting or mix with others for eight weeks from inception; that those who nursed the sick should sit in designated seats in the meeting house and should "goe forth first and hasten away"; and such as were well should not visit those who were ill.<sup>25</sup>

In July, 1680, the selectmen of Woburn appointed nine tithing men and apportioned the eighty-two resident families among them for general oversight<sup>23</sup> as to the order kept in their homes, and Dea. Josiah<sup>2</sup> Converse had in his group Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER and his son JOHN<sup>3</sup> CARTER.

In 1680 in Woburn<sup>23</sup> there were four Carter families, four Snow families, two Kendall families and two Green families, the sons of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE.

In 1687, Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> owned at least one slave for the birth is recorded of a daughter to Bess, his negro servant.<sup>12</sup>

No complete summary of the service of JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER as selectman has been found but it is said<sup>18</sup> to have been during<sup>26</sup> 1664 and 1672-9; that he was a commissioner to "end small causes" in 1664 and 1674 and that he either apportioned or collected the taxes<sup>18,26</sup> in 1653, 1658 and 1668. But the most thoroughly recorded line of public service rendered by him was the military. Following his service in the ranks, in his young manhood, he held the position<sup>12,18,20,21,22</sup> of ensign from 1651 to at least 1661; of lieutenant from 1664 to 1672 and of captain of the Woburn Company from the death of Capt. Johnson in 1672 until 1690 when he would have been seventy or over, and when fifty of the Woburn military company petitioned\* that he be replaced<sup>21</sup> because of "his great age and extraordinary deafness". He was courteously accorded the title until his death in 1692. Loss of life among

\*It is stated<sup>21</sup> that a part of the dissatisfaction which perhaps helped to bring about the petition for his removal from the captaincy, was because of an alleged tolerance on the part of JOHN<sup>2</sup>, toward the Andros regimé, or more especially toward one of the Justices appointed by Andros for Middlesex County, namely, William Symmes, personal friend of JOHN<sup>2</sup>. Perhaps he thought, as some did, that complaisance was better than battling what one could not change.

Woburn people from the Indians was comparatively negligible, but the town did its full part in furnishing fights and supplies and in the heavy taxation which resulted. Frequent calls were made upon the military groups to defend their own homes or to hasten to the help of nearby towns when Indian threats or attacks developed. Various debits and credits are seen<sup>23</sup> during the period of King Philip's War between the town of Woburn and Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> for powder by the barrel, flints, musket bullets, pistol bullets, etc.

About<sup>28</sup> December 1, 1675, during the outfitting of the army of one thousand men for the Narragansett Expedition (see Upham, pp. 624-7) Capt. Nathaniel Davenport was given command of the fifth company in the Massachusetts Regiment.<sup>28</sup> This company was made up of men from about eight different towns, including Woburn<sup>28</sup> from which thirteen recorded men<sup>28,29</sup> were impressed. These men were members of the company officered by Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER, Lt. William<sup>2</sup> Johnson and Ens. James<sup>s</sup> Converse, for in addition to the thirteen impressed men, these three officers of that company were credited to Woburn<sup>28,29</sup> under Capt. Davenport, making a total of sixteen. As to these three officers the record reads, "included in [with?] the list of impressment of thirteen men."<sup>29,42</sup> In other words, Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER and his two subordinate officers must have officered the impressed privates during the Narragansett Campaign. With Davenport's Company, they joined the other Massachusetts bodies on Dedham Plain; marched to the vicinity of Wickford (now Rhode Island); on the night of December 18-9 bivouacked in the snow at Tower Hill and on Sunday, December 19, took their part in the wearying march to the Swamp Fort (see map, p. 618) in the battle there in which Capt. Davenport was one of the first to fall, and in that excruciating experience of the night march back to Wickford carrying their dead and wounded through knee-deep snow (see Upham, pp. 622-7). Three\* of the Woburn men were wounded<sup>29</sup> and the others, including Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, must have presently taken part in the Hungry March northward (see Woodward, p. 670).

The will<sup>32</sup> of Capt. JOHN CARTER was signed June 15, 1691, five weeks after his first wife ELIZABETH had died. It made his son JOHN<sup>s</sup> the executor, and his two sons-in-law the overseers. It made bequests to the children of his three daughters; divided a five hundred acre tract in Quinebaug\*\* (see map, p. 618) into five equal parts of which one each went to JOHN<sup>s</sup> and to the two sons-in-law, a fourth part to his widowed daughter Abigail<sup>2</sup> and the fifth part to whichever son took on the expense of survey and division. The residue of his estate, which inventoried over £1,020, was to be divided into five shares of which JOHN<sup>s</sup> was to have two while the others went to sons-in-law Peter Fowle and James<sup>s</sup> Converse and to daughter Abigail<sup>2</sup>. He added an undated codicil to the effect that as he had married since writing the will he left his now wife Elizabeth £5 per year while she remained his widow or £50 in one sum if she preferred it. As an after thought he added that if he should die within a year and a half† she should receive £4 per annum or £40 in one sum.<sup>32</sup>

\*One of the wounded men was Zachariah<sup>s</sup> SNOW (RICHARD<sup>l</sup>).

\*\*The extreme north easterly part of Connecticut.

†Capt. JOHN CARTER died<sup>12</sup> one year and three months after he made his will so widow Elizabeth presumably received the larger amount.

Following the death of Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> on September 14, 1692, (see illustration below) an agreement was signed on January 7, 1692-3, by the heirs — JOHN<sup>3</sup> for himself, Peter Fowle and James Converse for their respective wives and James<sup>3</sup> Fowle (James<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>) for his mother Abigail<sup>2</sup> (Carter) and his brothers and sisters.<sup>32</sup>



HEADSTONE IN WOBURN CEMETERY TO  
CAPT. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER WHO DIED IN 1692-3

The children of Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> and ELIZABETH (—) CARTER, all born in Woburn, were<sup>10,12,15</sup>

- i. Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, b. Aug. 8, 1643; d. Dec. 20, 1653.
- ii. Mary<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 8, 1646; d. July 2, 1714, at Charlestown;<sup>31</sup> m. abt. 1665, Peter<sup>2</sup> Fowle (George<sup>1</sup>).<sup>31</sup>
- iii. Abigail<sup>3</sup>, b. Apr. 21, 1648; named in father's will;<sup>32</sup> m. 1st, by 1666-7, James<sup>2</sup> Fowle (George<sup>1</sup>);<sup>31</sup> m. 2nd Apr. 18, 1692, as his second wife Samuel Walker (Samuel).<sup>31</sup>
- iv. Hannah<sup>2</sup>, b. Jan. 19, 1650-1; d. aft. Sept. 26, 1706, when she made oath to inventory of her husband's estate.<sup>32</sup> m. at Woburn Jan. 1, 1668-9, James<sup>3</sup> Converse (James<sup>2</sup>, Edward<sup>1</sup>),<sup>30</sup> who d. July 8, 1706.
- v. JOHN<sup>3</sup>, see following.

JOHN<sup>3</sup> CARTER (*John<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>12</sup> at Woburn February 6, 1652-3, and died there<sup>12,23</sup> on April 8, 1727, aged seventy-five. He was married at that place<sup>12</sup> on June 20, 1678, to RUTH<sup>2</sup> BURNHAM (see Burnham, p. 130).<sup>33</sup> The will<sup>32</sup> of his father confirmed to JOHN<sup>3</sup> the house and thirty acres which the testator had given him at his marriage in 1678; it gave him four acres in Pine Meadow, one third of the testator's meadow land at Bull Meadow, two acres at Great Meadow

above the bridge and three acres of marsh\* in Charlestown bounds. It confirmed to JOHN<sup>3</sup> several cattle and some household stuff given him when he married, and the right to cut wood and timber for his every need, from his father's woodlands. It disclosed that Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> in a businesslike way had on December 29, 1690, made a listing of his lands with the value of each plot shown; that because of blotting and inter lineation, a copy was made at his direction on June 15, 1691, by his son-in-law, James Converse and signed by the testator on that date, and according to the valuations listed therein JOHN<sup>3</sup> was to have in addition to what he received at his marriage, "so much as will amount to £200 as money specifying that JOHN<sup>3</sup> "shall enjoy all my housing\*\* and ye rest of my homsted and lands adjoining. . . ." <sup>32</sup>

JOHN<sup>3</sup> was a church member in full communion by or before 1676 when he applied for freemanship<sup>34</sup> and he was admitted a freeman<sup>34</sup> on May 23, 1677. He is said to have been<sup>23</sup> a sergeant in 1682 and to have borne the title of lieutenant from 1700 until his death in 1727, being also selectman<sup>26</sup> at least in 1700 and 1710.

Before 1686 JOHN<sup>3</sup> had acquired the house, outhouses and fifty acres of land which once belonged to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE and intermediately to John Bateman and in that year JOHN<sup>3</sup> mortgaged the property.<sup>35</sup> The intensive industry of the earlier generations was fast giving way to comparative ease or indolence judging by the fact that John<sup>4</sup> Carter, son of JOHN<sup>3</sup> was on January 13, 1698-9, called before the selectmen "and animadverted upon for mispending his time, and admonished to improve it better for the futer, or else he might expect some other course would be taken."<sup>26,35</sup>

In justice to the earlier residents of Woburn, it should be recorded<sup>26</sup> that in addition to more or less continuous donations (from it as from every other town in the colony) toward the upkeep of Harvard College, the town in 1669 raised more than £27 for the erection of college buildings. But their public schools, as in other towns, in the late seventeenth and early eighteenth centuries, were sadly neglected. The grandsons of emigrants were not nearly as determined to educate their children as their forebears had been. The law required<sup>26,35</sup> that every town of fifty families should constantly provide a teacher, and towns of one hundred families were required to also maintain a grammar school. Neglect at first brought a penalty of £10 which in 1701 was raised to £20 and by 1718 to a sliding scale of £30 — £40. In 1685-6 Woburn had been criticized for the lack of a grammar school but the town claimed at that time that they had no boys who cared to attend it.

Mr. John Fox had kept grammar school in Woburn from 1701 to October, 1703, when he took up ministerial labors. At the selectmen's meeting in March, 1703-4, Lt. JOHN<sup>3</sup> CARTER and another were appointed to hunt for a teacher. They visited Harvard College, the only source of scholars, and searched in Andover but could get none. At a later meeting in 1710 the selectmen, of whom Lt. JOHN<sup>3</sup> was one, chose him to visit Cambridge again on a similar errand. He made two futile trips but later, by going to Boston, was successful in getting a grammar school teacher for six months.<sup>35</sup>

\*Marsh land which produced a heavy growth of tall, rank grass used as a thatch for roofs, was greatly valued.

\*\*This property was occupied by a sequence of four generations of the Carter family, three of those generations covering a period of one hundred and sixty-five years — Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> from 1640 to 1692, Lt. JOHN<sup>3</sup> from 1653 to 1727 and his son Capt. Samuel<sup>4</sup> from 1694 to 1787, while that man's son Samuel<sup>5</sup> lived there until his death in 1805.

In 1709 JOHN<sup>s</sup> and his wife RUTH mortgaged<sup>36</sup> a certain property, which debt was discharged in 1720. His wife RUTH, mother of fourteen children, (twelve of whom survived their parents) died at Woburn on January 11, 1723-4, called<sup>12,18</sup> fifty-five years old, but corrected<sup>36</sup> to sixty-five, which by her birth date,<sup>33</sup> is nearer right. This family is said<sup>10</sup> to have lived at Ipswich but if so it must have been for only a short period for no record of their presence there has been seen and the recorded births of all of their fourteen children as well as the death of both parents in Woburn<sup>12</sup> is conclusive.

The will<sup>37</sup> of Lt. JOHN<sup>s</sup> CARTER, dated February 5, 1723-4, was presented for probate<sup>37</sup> on May 16 and proved May 19, 1727. It made bequests to his six living sons, his five living daughters and to the two daughters of his deceased daughter Phebe<sup>4</sup>. It made his sons Samuel<sup>4</sup> and Jabez<sup>4</sup> his executors and though no inventory of his lands is found his "moveables" or personal estate amounted to over £185. It planned an average of a £50 legacy for each of his children, but the three elder sons had apparently received their shares, while the younger sons and the daughters had already received portions of their bequests. The balances due the daughters, including our ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup> were to be paid within five years.<sup>37</sup>

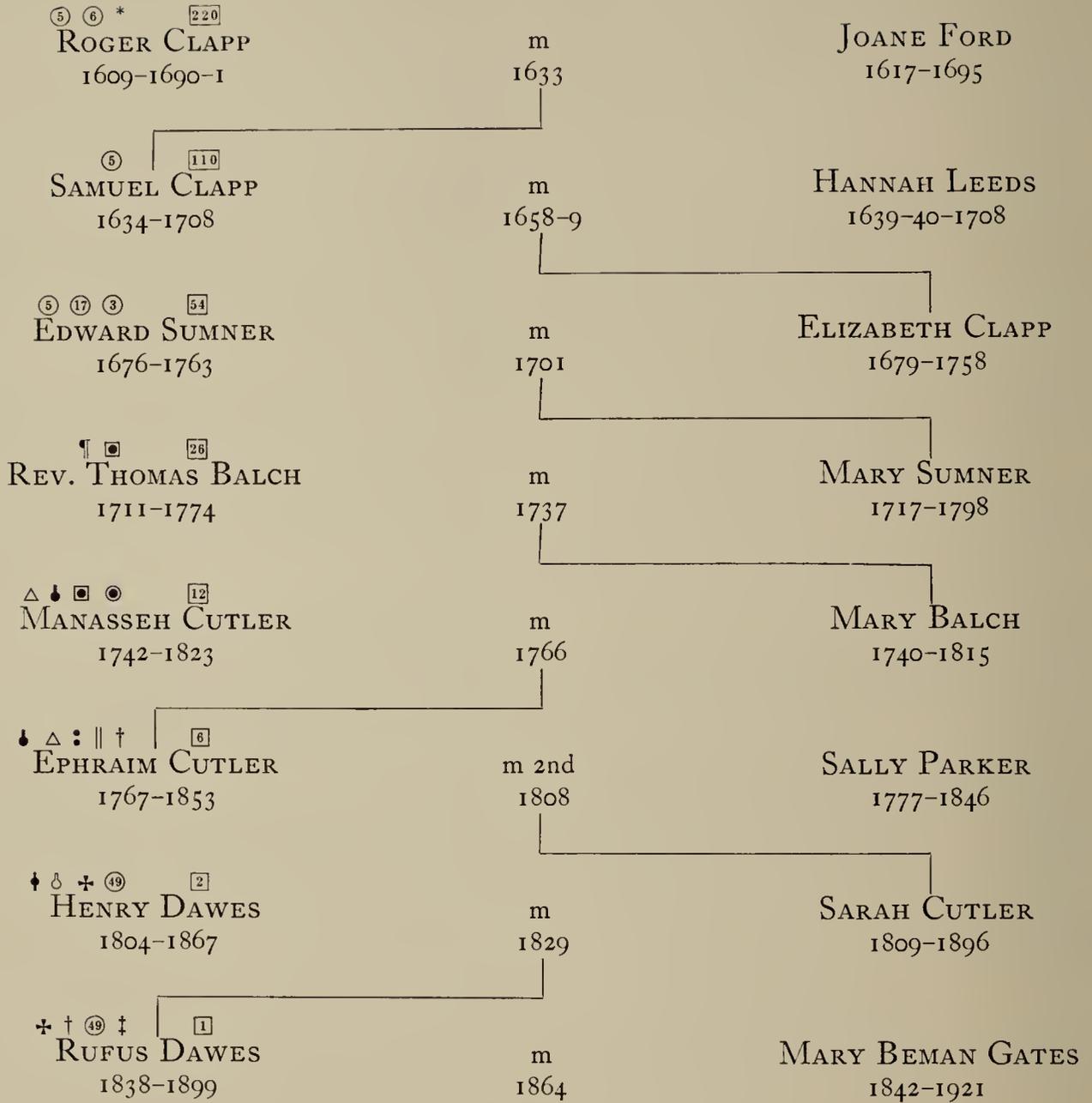
The children of Lt. JOHN<sup>s</sup> and RUTH (BURNHAM) CARTER, all born in Woburn, were<sup>10,12,15,36</sup>

- i. Elizabeth<sup>4</sup>, b. Sept. 18, 1680; named in father's will;<sup>37</sup> m. at Woburn Dec. 25, 1700, Ebenezer<sup>s</sup> Flagg (Gershom<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>38</sup>
- ii. Ruth<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 18, 1681; named in father's will<sup>37</sup> as wife of Josiah<sup>s</sup> Wright; she d. at Woburn Jan. 31, 1774, aged 92 or more; m. Sept. 17, 1700, Josiah<sup>s</sup> Wright (John<sup>2</sup> John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>40</sup>
- iii. Mary<sup>4</sup>, b. July 17, 1683; named in father's will<sup>37</sup> as wife of Joshua Sawyer; she d. at Charlestown Oct. 23, 1751, aged 69; m. May 22, 1706, Joshua Sawyer of Lancaster.<sup>36</sup>
- iv. John<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 8, 1685; d. at Woburn May 21, 1705, ae. 20.
- v. Thomas<sup>4</sup>, b. July 3, 1687, named in father's will, receiving a double portion;<sup>37</sup> d. at Woburn Mar. 17, 1753, aged<sup>18</sup> 66; perhaps he who m. at Cambridge Apr. 1, 1713, Susanna<sup>s</sup> Winship (Joseph<sup>2</sup>, Edward<sup>1</sup>).<sup>39</sup>
- vi. ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup>, b. Mar. 30, 1689; named in her father's will;<sup>37</sup> d. after 1754 when as a widow, she sold land in Lancaster; m. at Woburn in May, 1707, RALPH<sup>s</sup> KENDALL, (see Kendall, p. 382).
- vii. Phebe<sup>4</sup>, b. June 11, 1691; d. before her father whose will made bequests to her children Phebe and Ruth Tompson;<sup>37</sup> m. at Watertown Sept. 3, 1713, Jonathan Thompson.
- viii. Joseph<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 16, 1692-3; named in father's will;<sup>37</sup> living 1729; m. 1st (probably) at Cambridge Feb. 12, 1718-9, Anna<sup>s</sup> Cooper (John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>)<sup>39</sup> who d. at Woburn Aug. 2, 1727; m. 2nd at Charlestown Sept. 3, 1728, Ruth Dodge of Woburn.
- ix. Samuel<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 31, 1694; named in father's will;<sup>37</sup> d. at Woburn<sup>12,21</sup> as "Capt.," Jan. 21, 1787, aged 96; m. at Cambridge July 30, 1719, Margery<sup>s</sup> Dickson (John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>39</sup>
- x. Esther<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 21, 1696; named in her father's will<sup>37</sup> as wife of Samuel<sup>s</sup> Greene, (William<sup>s</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>).<sup>32</sup>
- xi. Josiah<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 3, 1698; named in father's will.<sup>37</sup>
- xii. Jabez<sup>4</sup>, b. Sept. 17, 1700; named in father's will;<sup>37</sup> d. at Woburn<sup>12,18,23</sup> as Lt. July 10, 1771, ae. 71; m. at Cambridge June 27, 1723, Abigail<sup>s</sup> Manning (Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Samuel<sup>s</sup>, William<sup>s</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>24,39</sup>
- xiii. Nathaniel<sup>4</sup>, twin, b. Mar. 4, 1702; named in father's will.<sup>37</sup>
- xiv. Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, twin, b. Mar. 4, 1702; slain<sup>23</sup> by the Indians near Dunstable, N. H., Sept. 5, 1724; his estate referred to in his father's will.<sup>37</sup>

## REFERENCES

1. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, I, 130, 137, 186-92, 438, 555; Savage, I, 254, 340-2; The Snow-Estes Ancestry, N. E. Snow, comp. by M. M. Jillson, 1939, I, 54, 57-8.
2. History of the First Church, Charlestown, W. I. Budington, 1845, pp. 247-8.
3. Note-Book kept by Thomas Lechford, Lawyer in Boston, 1638-1641, 1885, pp. 183-4; Records of Massachusetts Bay, II, 31.
4. *Ibid.*, I, 315, 334, 373-4; II, 293-4; New England Register, III, 190.
5. Records of Massachusetts Bay, III, 329; IV, pt. 1, pp. 176, 404.
6. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, 1935, XXI, 28.
7. History of Charlestown, R. Frothingham, 1845, pp. 54-5, 100, 103, 106-8.
8. A Century of Town Life, Charlestown, J. F. Hunnewell, 1888, pp. 108-9.
9. Pope's Pioneers, p. 90.
10. Savage, I, 340-2.
11. Woburn, Mass., Historic Sites and Old Houses, 1892, W. R. Cutter, pp. 28, 36-7, 39.
12. Vital Records of Woburn, I, 43-4; II, 30-1; III, 48, 55, 208, 255.
13. Pope's Pioneers, p. 48 and Supp. p. iv; New England Register, IX, 306-7.
14. Frothingham's Charlestown, pp. 7-8, 19-20, 98, 116-7, 151-3; Witchcraft in New England, S. G. Drake, 1869, pp. 58-61.
15. History of Woburn, S. Sewall, 1868, pp. 44, 598.
16. New England Register, VII, 32-3.
17. History of Malden, D. P. Corey, 1899, pp. 66-8.
18. Epitaphs in Woburn First and Second Burial Grounds, W. R. Cutter & E. F. Johnson, 1890; pp. 9, 14, 22, 24, 33, 42.
19. Massachusetts Bay Records, IV, pt. 1, pp. 353, 373, 407-8, pt. 2, pp. 442-3, 516, 554; V, 37-8, 537.
20. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, I, 38-45; History of Middlesex Co., D. H. Hurd, 1890, I, 348.
21. *Ibid.*, I, 346, 349, 378; Woburn Historic Sites, p. 28; History of Winchester, H. S. Chapman, 1936, pp. 53-4, 73-5.
22. New England Register, XXXIX, 259; King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 172, 474; Hurd's Middlesex Co., I, 378, 380-9.
23. *Ibid.*, I, 348, 351, 378, 382-9; Winchester, Record, I, 272, 276, 358-9; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, I, 38-45; History of Middlesex Co., D. H. Hurd, 1890, I, 348.
24. Manning Family, W. H. Manning, 1902, p. 154.
25. Sewall's Woburn, pp. 37-9, 45, 56-7, 79-80, 110-2, 122-3, 183.
26. *Ibid.*, pp. 53-4, 57, 213-4, 217-8, 579.
27. *Ibid.*, 10-25; Hurd's Middlesex Co., I, 346-7, 414.
28. Sewall's Woburn, p. 113; Bodge's King Philip's War, pp. 169-72, 474.
29. *Ibid.*, pp. 171-2, 474; New England Register, XXXIX, 258-9; Hurd's Middlesex Co., I, 382-3.
30. Converse Genealogy, C. A. Converse, 1905, pp. 8, 13, 22-3, 846, 849.
31. Wyman's Charlestown, pp. 368-70; Sewall's Woburn, p. 171.
32. Search in Middlesex Co., by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Probate File No. 4002, No. 4924; Middlesex Co. Court Records, (Pulsifer's Index) I, 161, 196, 210.
33. Burnham Genealogy, R. H. Burnham, 1869, p. 113; Vital Records of Ipswich, I, 63.
34. Winchester, Record, I, 359; Massachusetts Bay Record, V, 537.
35. Sewall's Woburn, pp. 57, 213-9, 217; Woburn Historic Sights, p. 28.
36. Wyman's Charlestown, pp. 192, 848.
37. Miss Moffatt's Search in Middlesex Co., Probate File No. 4005.
38. Flagg Genealogy, N. G. & L. C. S. Flagg, 1907, p. 133; H. Bond's History of Watertown, 1860, p. 763.
39. History of Cambridge, 1877, L. R. Paige, pp. 517, 535, 602, 696; History of Lexington, C. Hudson, 1913, II, 765.
40. Putnam's Monthly History Magazine, 1895, III, 232.
41. Wonder-Working Providence, Capt. Edward Johnson, 1654, edited and annotated by W. F. Poole, 1867, pp. lxxxix-xc; Vital Records of Woburn, III, 284.
42. Massachusetts Archives, LXVIII, paper 74A.

# CLAPP



- ⑤ Dorchester
- ⑥ Castle Island
- \* Boston
- ⑰ Milton
- ③ Roxbury
- ¶ Charlestown

- Dedham
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- ♣ Edgartown
- Hamilton
- ⋮ Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♁ Morgan Co., O.
- ⊕ Malta, O.
- ④ Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## CLAPP (*Clap*)

**R**OGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP, by his own testimony<sup>1,2</sup> was born at Salcombe Regis, co. Devon, England, on April 6, 1609, being the youngest of five sons,<sup>1</sup> and having also two sisters. The "Memoirs" of ROGER<sup>1</sup> written in his later life told<sup>2</sup> that he and three of his brothers lived at home, his mother being dead, and that his father was "a Man fearing God, and in good esteem among God's faithful Servants." ROGER<sup>1</sup> asked and received his father's consent to leave home, so he worked for a while about three miles from Exeter, co. Devon, and then became an employee within the city so that he could more easily attend the church served by the Rev. John Warham whose sermons he had come to enjoy greatly. Presently when ROGER<sup>1</sup> learned that the Rev. John Warham "and many godly Persons" planned to emigrate to New England, he received permission from his master to join them. He then wrote to his father who lived about twelve miles from Exeter asking his permission, but receiving no reply (because of his father's disapproval of the plan) ROGER<sup>1</sup> went to him and made a personal plea which was presently granted after a call was made on the father by the Rev. John Maverick, one of the emigrating party, who offered to have a personal care over ROGER<sup>1</sup>. So this young man not quite twenty-one met in March, 1629-30, at Plymouth, England, with the rest of the group which was so carefully planned by the Rev. John White to form a well balanced community (see Ford, p. 294); he attended the day of fasting at the New Hospital where the two ministers Warham and Maverick were chosen to head the church organization formed then and there, and on the next day March 20, sailed<sup>1,10</sup> in the "Mary and John"\* for the new world. They had preaching every day of the seventy which the trip consumed and ROGER<sup>1</sup> arrived on May 30, 1630, "in health"<sup>11</sup> though many of the voyagers were, or soon became, ill from the limited fare on the trip or other causes. The party was very much incensed because the ship master put them, their stock and their freight ashore at Nantasket Point, now Hull, seven and three-quarters miles<sup>11</sup> from what became Boston (see map, p. 618) for he was supposed to have landed them up the Charles River. He claimed that his lack of knowledge of the shore line made any other plan unsafe. ROGER<sup>1</sup> and certain others of the emigrants, well armed, by the use of a boat belonging to the "old planters" (see Ford, p. 295) rowed into the Charles River and hesitantly camped for the night near to a village of about three hundred Indians. One of the old planters who could speak with the Indians advised them not to come near the whites in the night and ROGER<sup>1</sup> who acted as a sentinel, reported that the advice was followed but next morning the Indians watched the group of about ten whites<sup>11</sup> for a while and then some of them approached holding out "a

\*Other passengers on that vessel who became ancestral to us were THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD, GEORGE<sup>1</sup> HULL (Dawes-Gates II, 453), HUMPHREY<sup>1</sup> PINNEY (Ibid., II, 659) and perhaps MATTHEW<sup>1</sup> GRANT (Ibid., II, 371).

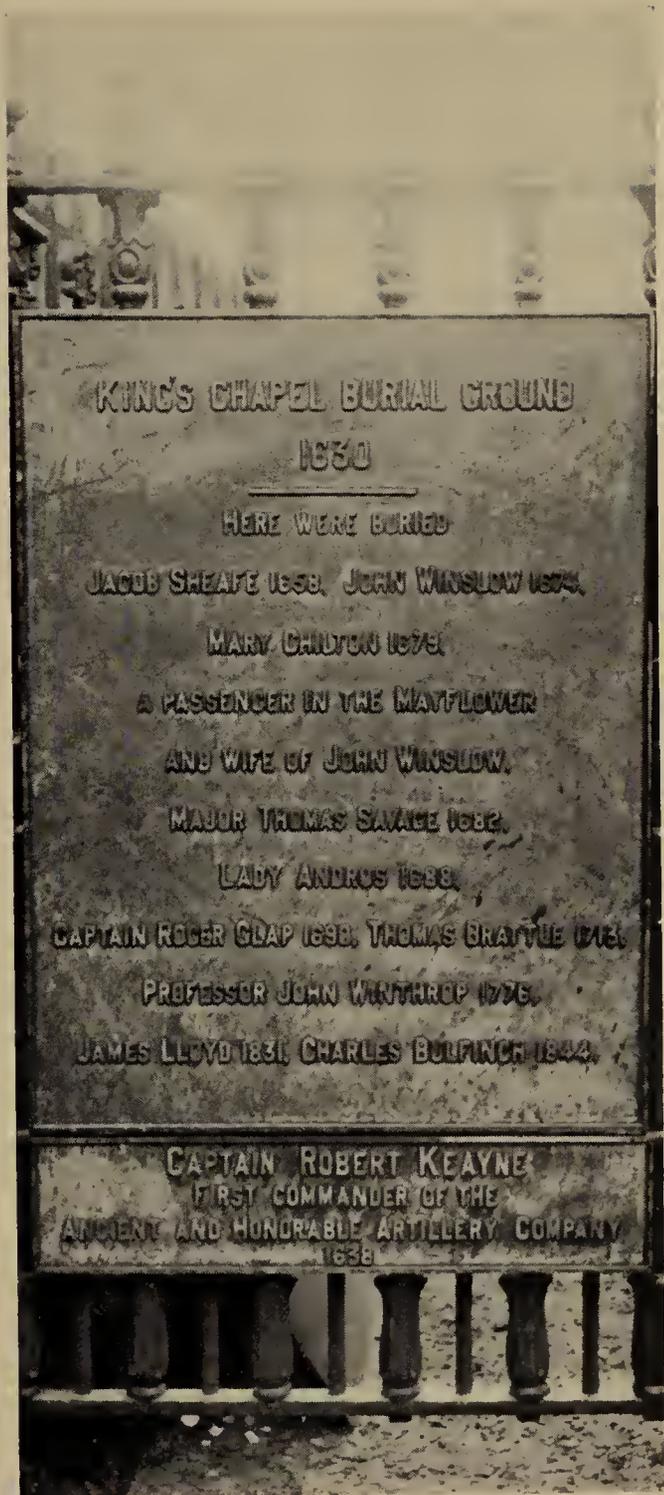
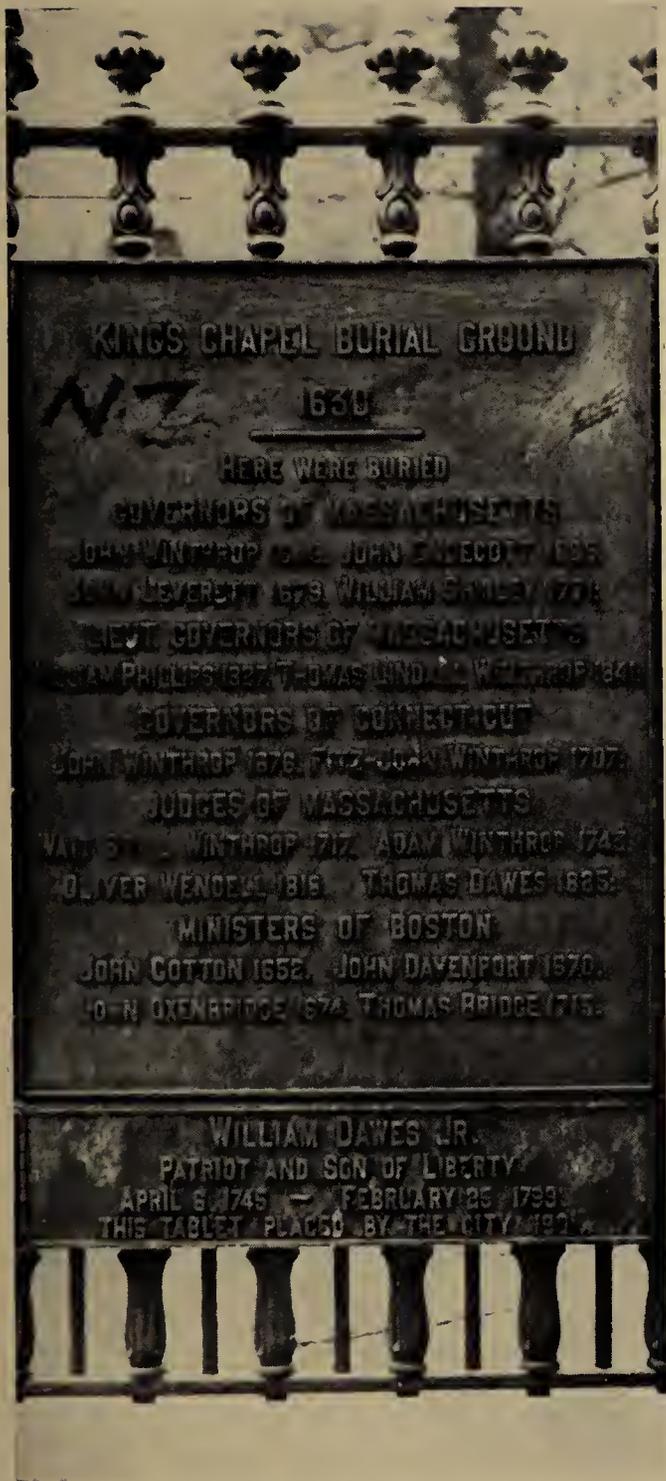
great Bass toward us; so we sent a Man with a Bisket, and changed the Cake for the Bass." These few men were soon recalled from the Charles River for others of the main party decided to cross over to the nearby neck of land called Mattapanock (which became South Boston, see map, p. 275) where their stock would have bountiful pasturage and springs of water and where it could be safely confined with a minimum of fence building across the narrow neck. Near here the men built shelters for their families, presently decided to make this their permanent placing and in September, 1630, were granted permission to name their settlement Dorchester in honor of the home town of the Rev. John White, who planned their emigration, and of the English home of some of the party, especially of our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD.

ROGER<sup>1</sup>, who had been so interested in religious matters and experiences in his early life, had failed to become a member of the church body when it was organized on their last day in England, and indeed showed himself to have been unduly self-critical and fearful that he was not living up to the requirements of his Master. But he recorded<sup>1</sup> that after his emigration he "was admitted into the Church Fellowship at our first beginning in Dorchester in the Year 1630" which affiliation he maintained for the sixty-odd added years of his life.

Throughout the many pages of his "Memoirs" written by his own hand ROGER<sup>1</sup> showed forth an extreme humility and religious fervor, not only relative to his own life from his youth onward, but also in his repetitious admonitions to his children and to their children to keep close to the Lord and to aspire to blameless lives.<sup>1</sup> In 1633 ROGER<sup>1</sup> made application for freemanship and took the oath of a freeman<sup>7,8</sup> on May 14, 1634, in company with HUMPHREY<sup>1</sup> PINNEY (Dawes-Gates, II, 659) who had been a fellow-passenger on the "Mary and John".

To revert to the earliest days of ROGER<sup>1</sup> in New England, he then spoke of the country as being "a vacant Wilderness, in respect of English. There were indeed some English at Plymouth and Salem, and some few at Charlestown, who were very destitute when we came ashore; and Planting Time being past, shortly after Provision was not to be had for Money."<sup>1</sup> ROGER<sup>1</sup> wrote to his father who sent him a supply of provisions as quickly as possible and arranged for an English neighbor who was a sea going man to renew this supply whenever his travels brought him to the colony. ROGER<sup>1</sup> recorded that fish, muscles, clams were a good help but bread was very scarce as was flesh of all kinds and many suffered hunger.<sup>1</sup> The Indians brought in corn to trade for clothing, knives, etc. The colonists made samp or hominy from the corn but had to eat it without butter or milk, and ROGER<sup>1</sup> wrote ". . . when I could have Meal & Water and Salt boiled together, it was so good, who could wish better?" He added<sup>1</sup> that he once got a peck of corn from the Indians in exchange "for a little Puppy-Dog," and referred to the occasional use of roast goat.

On June 14, 1630, two weeks after the "Mary and John" arrived, the "Arabella" with Gov. Winthrop and the other principal men of the Winthrop Fleet, as also the precious charter itself, reached New England<sup>11</sup> and gradually (by early July) the rest of the Fleet anchored in the Charles River, for Winthrop had intended to settle there but soon decided that he preferred Blackstone's Neck (later Boston). The influx of so many settlers necessitated that for a time many must live in tents or wigwams until buildings could be constructed and a great deal of sickness and



Tablets on gates of King's Chapel Burial Ground, Boston, showing the names of both ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP and WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES.

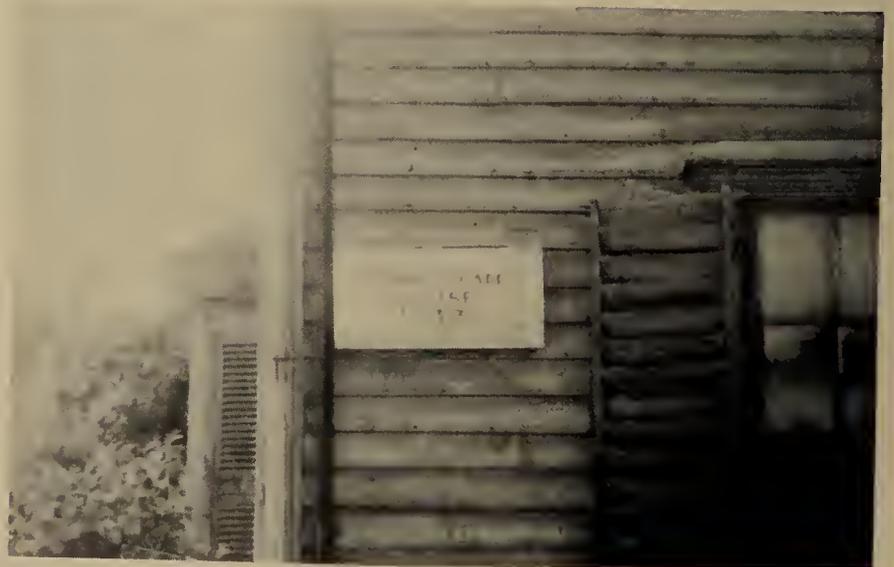


ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP Homestead  
in Willow Court, Dorchester,  
as it was rebuilt about 1767.

Present appear-  
ance of the  
CLAPP house in  
Willow Court.



Marker on CLAPP Homestead:  
"ROGER CLAPP House  
1633"



about two hundred deaths occurred that first winter, from exposure and improper as well as insufficient food, but later, fair health was the rule. After Gov. Winthrop's arrival, when he found how low the food supply was, he chartered the "Lyon," Capt. Peirce, Master, (see Brewer, p. 108) which had just arrived with eighty passengers and sent it back across the ocean early in July, 1630, to bring food-stuffs, lemons and other scorbutics to offset the scurvey, which limited fare during the long voyages had brought upon the people. This vessel left Bristol, England, on its return trip to the colony on December 1, 1630, and arrived there on February 5 following, with two hundred tons of provisions<sup>56</sup> and about twenty passengers including our JOHN<sup>1</sup> PERKINS, wife JUDITH and their five children ranging in age from about six to sixteen. On its arrival, the Governor and his Assistants ordered that the whole cargo of provisions should be bought for a general stock and distributed to all who had need in the various towns.<sup>1</sup> February 6 was set apart as a day of thanksgiving<sup>11</sup> for this food which saved many from perishing by famine.

In spite of every inconvenience and hardship ROGER<sup>1</sup> repeatedly recorded how thankful he was that God had brought him hither and he advised his relatives to come over, which a number of them did.

ROGER<sup>1</sup> was married at Dorchester on November 6, 1633, to JOANE<sup>2</sup> FORD (see Ford, p. 301) who had been a fellow passenger with him on the "Mary and John" though then but thirteen years of age and was at the time of her marriage only sixteen years five months old. So, though this is getting ahead of our story, it may be told that they lived happily together for fifty-seven years, she bore him fourteen children and outlived ROGER<sup>1</sup> about four years. Of these children five died in infancy, three of the others died at the ages of seven, fifteen and twenty-three, but the six remaining lived to marry,<sup>1,2,5,7</sup> and survived both their parents. It has been definitely established<sup>24,27</sup> that the Dorchester home of ROGER<sup>1</sup> and JOANE was on what is now Willow Court (see map, p. 275) and that its ownership has remained in the hands of his own descendants to this very day (1942), the present owner being Mr. Frank L. Clapp of the ninth generation (vide infra, chart and Note, pp. 172-173). It has been rebuilt and enlarged but bears a plate identifying it as the ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP house of 1633 (see plates XIII, p. 157). Its street number is 25 Willow Court.

An early action in any great adventure can not fail to be interesting and highly significant, and as early as January 6, 1633-4, which was a "Mooneday," it was ordered<sup>18</sup> by Dorchester vote that there should be a local fort built "upon the Rocke," on what was later Savin Hill (see map, p. 275); that the current tax or rate should be "doble" to meet the cost and that it should be "payd to THOMMAS FFORD, and ROGER CLAPP, who are appoynted to receive the same and payment to be made before the first day of february next, at the house of the said THOMMAS FORD;" which gave less than a month for collection, and suggests thereby the urgency the people felt for protective planning. This of course envisioned a comparatively small, local, land fort as compared with the Castle Island works. At times the ordnance owned by the colony was divided among several of these local strongholds and the main fortress at the Castle which commanded the channel of navigation into Boston Bay.

The many forms of service rendered<sup>17</sup> to the town and colony by ROGER<sup>1</sup>, continuous as they were, almost defy summarization. They included an infinite number

of trivial tasks which he performed as faithfully as more important ones, which is a definite index of character. He was a viewer of fences or land during many years between 1634 and 1659; acted as a rater or assessor; as selectman of Dorchester for at least eighteen different years between 1637 and 1665, during which time he was officially associated with WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON, RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS and repeatedly with WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER.

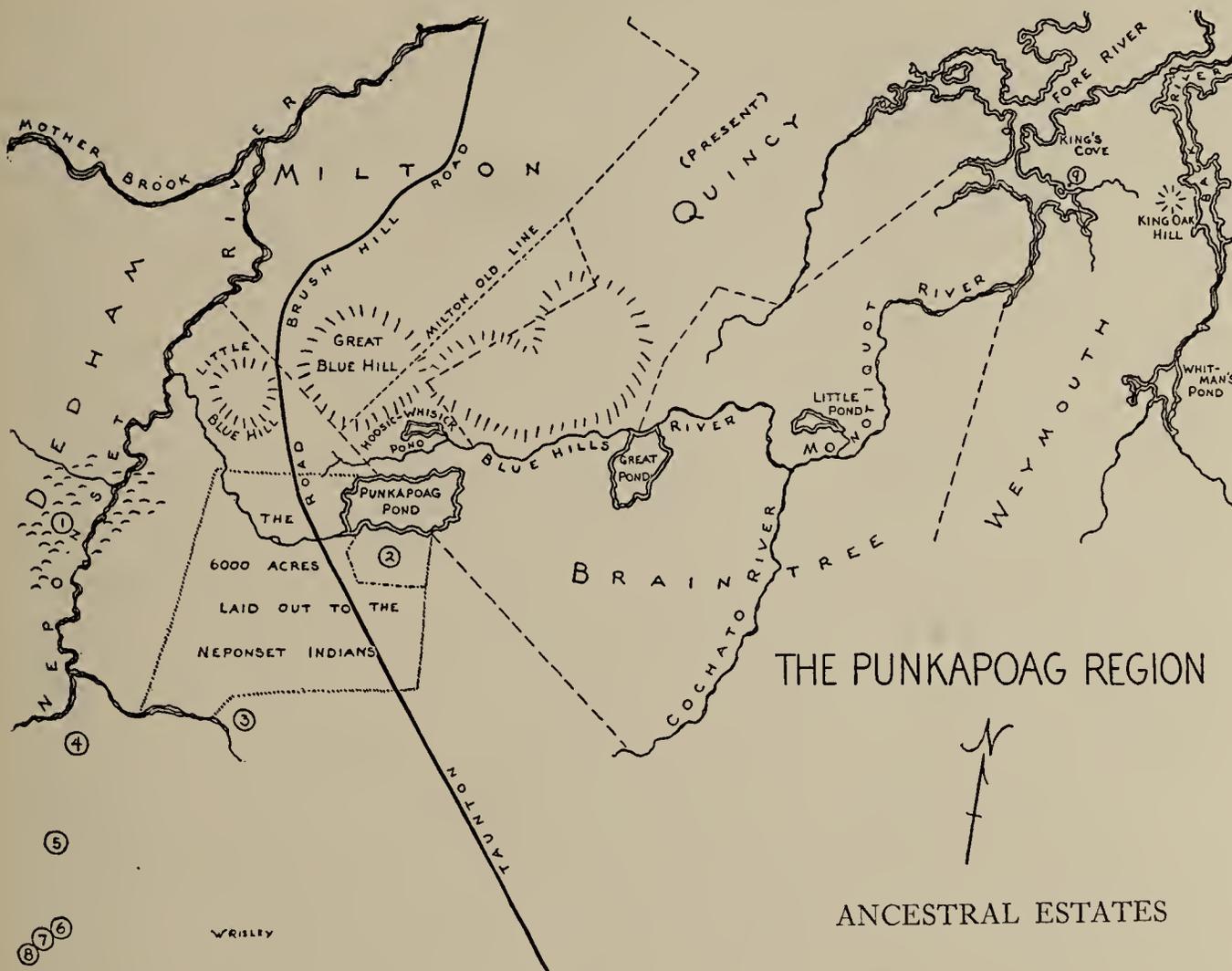
In about 1639-40 ROGER<sup>1</sup> appears to have had oversight<sup>18</sup> of the town's herd which grazed on the great neck (see map, p. 275), for it was ordered that every one who put any cattle there should give a note of the number and sort to ROGER<sup>1</sup> who would have also a record of each one's proportion and if any man put in "more than his stint" he must forfeit twenty shillings per animal and such stock would be impounded until payment of the fine, of which ROGER<sup>1</sup> would retain one-fourth and the town would receive the balance.

In 1641 ROGER<sup>1</sup> was one of the seventy-odd residents who signed what amounted to a quit claim of their rights in Thompson's Island in behalf of a fund to finance the Dorchester free school (see Leeds, p. 403); in 1659 after their loss of the island he represented the town before the court in requesting and acquiring a grant of one thousand acres in lieu thereof and in 1662 he and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER were "ordered, appointed and intreated to Seeke out a place or places" for that grant.<sup>18</sup>

In 1644-5 ROGER<sup>1</sup> and SUMNER were to lay a special tax to raise £250 to build a new meeting<sup>2</sup> house. This structure erected in 1645-6 was placed on or near the site of their first one, at the northerly end of Pleasant Street near the corner of Cottage, but was later removed<sup>16</sup> onto Meeting House Hill.

In 1646 ROGER<sup>1</sup> acquired<sup>36,37</sup> the honor of membership in the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company (see Gore, pp. 320-1) of which he became the second sergeant in 1647 and its lieutenant in 1655. In May 1649 ROGER<sup>1</sup> was engaged to repair a house<sup>43</sup> which earlier belonged to John Tilley (who was killed by the Pequots in 1637) and which had been given to the church by his widow. The selectmen requested ROGER<sup>1</sup> "to have it sufficiently ground seeled and the Cellar Righted vp and the walls of the house borded, and the Rooffe shingled." Possibly this rehabilitation may have been to fit it for the use of Rev. John<sup>2</sup> Wilson, Jr. who served<sup>43</sup> Rev. Richard<sup>1</sup> Mather as assistant from 1649 to 1651. The church sold this house and three acres of land in 1653. In about 1655 the town granted ROGER<sup>1</sup> the right to acquire seven hundred boards from the town's common lands; in November, 1655, the Steward's Book of Harvard credits ROGER<sup>1</sup> with a payment<sup>23</sup> of £2 in behalf of one Joseph Farnsworth, who did not graduate. Evidence is seen that "history repeats itself" and that some of the problems faced by the Dorchester men in 1655 were very like some which we are puzzling over today, for the General Court in November of that year named a committee<sup>9</sup> consisting of representatives from each county. Their governor and Lt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP were members from Suffolk, and their instructions covered the situation that

"this Court cannot but be very sencible of the state and condiçon of this country in respect of the mannifold wants already vpon vs, & fearing what may further ensue, if Gods prouidence prevent not, beyond what wee are for present able to see, doe judge it necessary, & account ourselues bound, to vse our vtmost endeavors . . . to consider of some such way as whereby both merchandizing may be encouraged & the hands also of the husbandman may not wax weary in his imployment, and, for begetting a right



- |                                    |                                  |                               |
|------------------------------------|----------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| 1. Purgatory Swamp                 | 4. WILLIAM <sup>1</sup> SUMNER   | 7. SAMUEL <sup>2</sup> CLAPP  |
| 2. ROGER <sup>1</sup> CLAPP's farm | 5. ROGER <sup>1</sup> CLAPP      | 8. RICHARD <sup>1</sup> LEEDS |
| 3. WILLIAM <sup>1</sup> ROBINSON   | 6. THOMAS <sup>1</sup> DAVENPORT | 9. Burying Island, Weymouth   |

understanding and a loving compljance betweene both, . . . and to consider of some way to regulate in point of workemens wages, if any way may be found.”<sup>9</sup>

In December, 1658, the selectmen recorded<sup>18</sup> that Lt. CLAPP was “intreated to see speedy repaires of the glasse windows about the meeting house.” In 1657-8 as is told elsewhere, he and Maj. Atherton laid out six thousand acres for the Indians at Punkapog.<sup>16,39</sup>

We are told<sup>65</sup> that in December, 1657, (though the General Court granted<sup>34</sup> it on November 12, 1659) Lt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP received a grant of five hundred acres “beyond the Blue Hills ‘where he shall find a convenient place’”; that Maj. Humphrey<sup>1</sup> Atherton, Ensign Foster, and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER were desired and empowered to lay it out, that on a plan of that locality made in 1662 by Joshua Fisher, on another made in 1689, and on Butcher’s map [1696-7] it was designated

as "Captain CLAPP's farm,"<sup>65</sup> (see map, p. 159) though at the latter date it had already been sold by two of his sons to John Fenno. On October 30, 1666, one Stephen Hopkins (Hoppin?) was testifying about having assisted in 1642 in running the Dorchester-Braintree line from the top of the Blue Hill southward, and gave testimony that it and the bounds of CLAPP's farm were in part identical (see map, p. 159). He added "I have also wrought upon the land, and made hay there for Capt. CLAPP divers years ago." This is believed to have been<sup>65</sup> the first hay cut in what is now Canton. After the arrival of the royal governor Andros he announced<sup>67</sup> that the titles acquired from the Indians or the General Court had no value in his eyes and that those who wished to retain the lands they claimed, must acquire new grants and titles from the king *through him*, paying such fees as he saw fit to require. Evidently ROGER<sup>1</sup> submitted to this indignity rather than to lose his land for on September 12, 1687, Andros gave an order<sup>66</sup> to Philip Welles, his surveyor, that "Whereas RODGER CLAP layes Clayme to five hundred acres of Land and meadow [neere Punkeponge] . . . for which he has . . . prayed a Graunt Yow are therefore to make a particular survey and draft thereof. . . ." This is what ROGER<sup>1</sup> called his Punkapog farm when by his will in 1690 he divided it between SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and Hopestill<sup>2</sup>. About the time ROGER<sup>1</sup> had acquired this land, Richard Thayer of Braintree claimed to have gotten a lease to it by giving one pound of tobacco to Indian Josiah (Wampatuck) and after the death of ROGER<sup>1</sup> this Thayer went to court in 1692 to recover it but lost the suit<sup>65</sup> and in 1694 SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and Hopestill sold the farm<sup>32</sup> to John Fenno for £100 (see above).

To recapitulate, Dorchester was first settled in the spring of 1630, being then composed of a comparatively scant area but in 1636 the town bought of the Neponset Indians, with the approval of the General Court, all the land between the Neponset River and the Great Blue Hill (see map, p. 159 which land in 1662 became Milton). Then in 1637 Dorchester received a so-called "New Grant" which continued from the Great Blue Hill southward to the boundary of Plymouth Colony. This made Dorchester about thirty or thirty-five miles long and the largest "town" in the county. From this New Grant was eventually formed Canton, Stoughton, etc., and it contained the ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP farm referred to. After the formation of Milton in 1662 Dorchester still held the land to the south of it and in June, 1665, the Indians' chief, Josiah (Wampatuck) sent to Dorchester a request for more land or an adjustment of some sort and the townsmen<sup>18</sup> appointed four of their best men, including Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER to meet with Josiah Sachem "and to treat with him, to see what the demand of the Indians is; as respecting any of Dorchester land; and to make full and compleat agreement, if they see their demands be but reason; and for that end, they take copies of the Deed from Kitchamikin, and other writings." The result was a setting aside of six thousand acres adjoining ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP's farm and Punkapoag pond, on which the Neponset Indians settled, became quite civilized and renamed their tribe "Punkapoag", but the whites called them the "Praying Indians." (see also p. 23).

In 1668 the Dorchester inhabitants drew lots for a placing of individual grants within the so-called "New Grant," though probably most of them had never visited it. This anticipated partial subdivision of this outlying land was voted upon favorably in 1671 and was referred to then as the "Twelve Divisions" (a

part of present Canton see map, p. 618) but the survey was not made until 1696-7. The plot of this survey shows allotments to the estates of Capt. CLAPP, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER, RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> DAVENPORT, all deceased, and to SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP. In 1726 Stoughton was incorporated from the southern end of this out-land of Dorchester, which had been intermediately called the "South Precinct," and the grandchildren and great-grandchildren of ROGER<sup>1</sup>, as late as 1724 and 1734, deeded away their rights in Stoughton lands<sup>45</sup> which had been set off to the estate of ROGER<sup>1</sup> as one of the Dorchester proprietors. The lot of one hundred and twenty-four acres in Canton assigned<sup>65</sup> to the estate of Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> passed to his son, Preserved<sup>2</sup> of Northampton and in 1717 he sold it<sup>54</sup> to EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER of Roxbury for £8.

In May, 1660, a committee of three including Lt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> was ordered<sup>34</sup> by the court to run the south line of the Bay Colony and, strangely enough, to continue it forty miles on the southwest of Hudson River. From 1661 to 1665 inclusive he served as a commissioner to end small causes, usually having WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER as an associate justice; in 1661 ROGER<sup>1</sup> was authorized<sup>9</sup> to perform marriages; in 1662 was to lay out a farm<sup>18</sup> which had been promised to the widow Stoughton and to remove the town's ammunition from the home of the widow Atherton.<sup>18</sup>

The boundary line between the Colonies of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay (being at that time also the southern line of Dorchester Township, see p. 160) which had been established years before, was not quite satisfactory so in 1664 a committee of six men was appointed to correct it, three from each colony, including Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP from the Bay (see map, p. 618). Their report reads:<sup>34</sup>

we "being all assembled at Dedham the 9th of the 3d moneth, comonly called May, anno 1664, did the day next ensuing trauaile together into the woods for the discouery of the southermost\* part of Charls Riuer, which hauing found out, partly by our oune vejw, & partly by y<sup>e</sup> sattisfying report of them p'sent with vs, (that had labored therein,) wee all mutually agreed vpon the first station. Hauing measured three miles\*\* southerly of the southermost part of the sajd riuer, wee marked a tree, and from thence a west line to Neetmock† Riuer, which by estimation, wee judged to be about fiue miles\*\* . . . & at the sajd Neetmock Riuer wee marked a black oake on fower sides, . . . & hauing marked diuers trees in thie ljne, from thence wee came backe about three miles & a halfe past the tree first mentioned to that station, w<sup>ch</sup> is the east [end] of this west ljne, where wee markt a white oake, in a plajne full of trees, in the same manner wee had markt the tree by the riuer aforesajd, at w<sup>ch</sup> place wee made an *angle*, & begann an east northeast ljne, to come to Accord Pond. . . . The length of the whole lyne is by estimation, as wee judged, about || 40 || miles . . ."

and they marked many trees throughout its length. On May 17, 1664, the six men including Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP signed this report to the General Court of Massachusetts Bay. This shows that their actual survey beginning due south from the southernmost part of Charles River (which point was near to the northeast corner of what is now Rhode Island State) ran in a westerly direction to the west side of

\*Their admission that they were *searching to discover* the southernmost point of the Charles River, coupled with later developments argues that they either did not go far enough west to find the southernmost point (see map, p. 618) which is at Bellingham, or that they estimated their subsequent distances and directions most inaccurately — though for *our* purposes these points are immaterial.

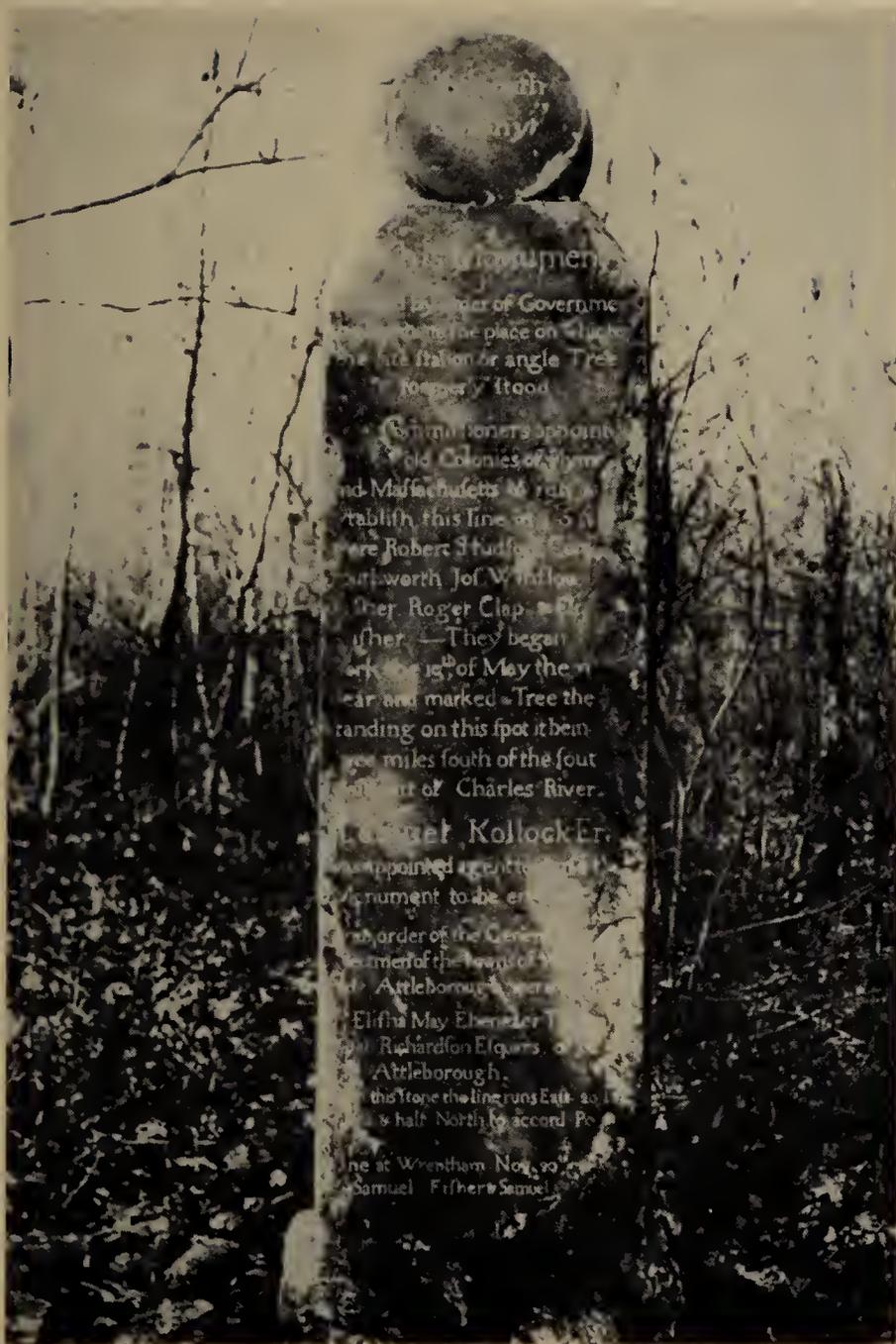
\*\*If they really reached the vicinity of what is now Bellingham, the distances would seem to have been nearer five miles south and three miles west.

†"Neetmock," being translated, becomes "Nipmuck" which river from Pawtucket, R. I. northward, is now called<sup>70</sup> the Blackstone.

what is now called Blackstone River, retraced itself to its starting point, and continued about three and a half miles farther east where they established an angle to the left (described as being at the marked, White Oak "Angle Tree") and ran onward, northeasterly, to Accord Pond. The tree bore this name for the hundred and twenty-six years that it stood and after it died the Massachusetts Legislature in 1790 ordered the placement of a monument there to record permanently the establishment and location of the boundary between the two colonies which is now the boundary between Norfolk County and Bristol-Plymouth Counties. For this seven days' survey, ROGER<sup>1</sup> received £4 and had his name cut indelibly on this monument (see plate XIV, p. 162) which bears on its north side the words "Massachusetts Colony," on its south side "Plymouth Colony" and on each side a statement of the general facts of the original survey, with the names of the six men who made it and the statement that the monument is to perpetuate the placement of the Angle Tree.<sup>33</sup> It is known as the "Angle Tree Stone," stands (1939) at the easternmost point of the southernmost line of the township of Plainville (set off from Wrentham in 1905) and is not on a travelled road, but stands alone in the woods about eighty rods from a country road which runs westward from North Attleborough. Because it was being damaged by relic hunters, a fence<sup>27</sup> was built around it in 1925 (see plate XIV, p. 162).

In 1664 three Dorchester men, without securing permission, took it upon themselves to build a gallery in the meeting house which was "preiudiciall to the light, and offensiue to many." The selectmen, including ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER announced<sup>18</sup> that in order that "such practice may not be vsed for future, we doe declare that the erecting of the sayd Gallery is disorderly; and therefore doe order that none of the parties that built it, nor any other doe presume to sit in the sayd Gallery vntill such time as the Towns mind may be fully knowne, and declared whether the sayd Gallery, shall be continued, or taken down againe, or how disposed of." Upon the "ingenious acknowledgment of their too much forwardness therein" by the offenders, the town agreed to let them use it. In February 1665-6 it was voted<sup>18</sup> "that Purgatory Swamp (see map, p. 159) should be deuided to the anchent p'prietors according to the anchent deuident" (proportion). Of this ROGER<sup>1</sup> received his share, of which SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> inherited at least a portion, for at the division of his estate his three heirs acquired their "part of the land at Purgatory."<sup>22</sup>

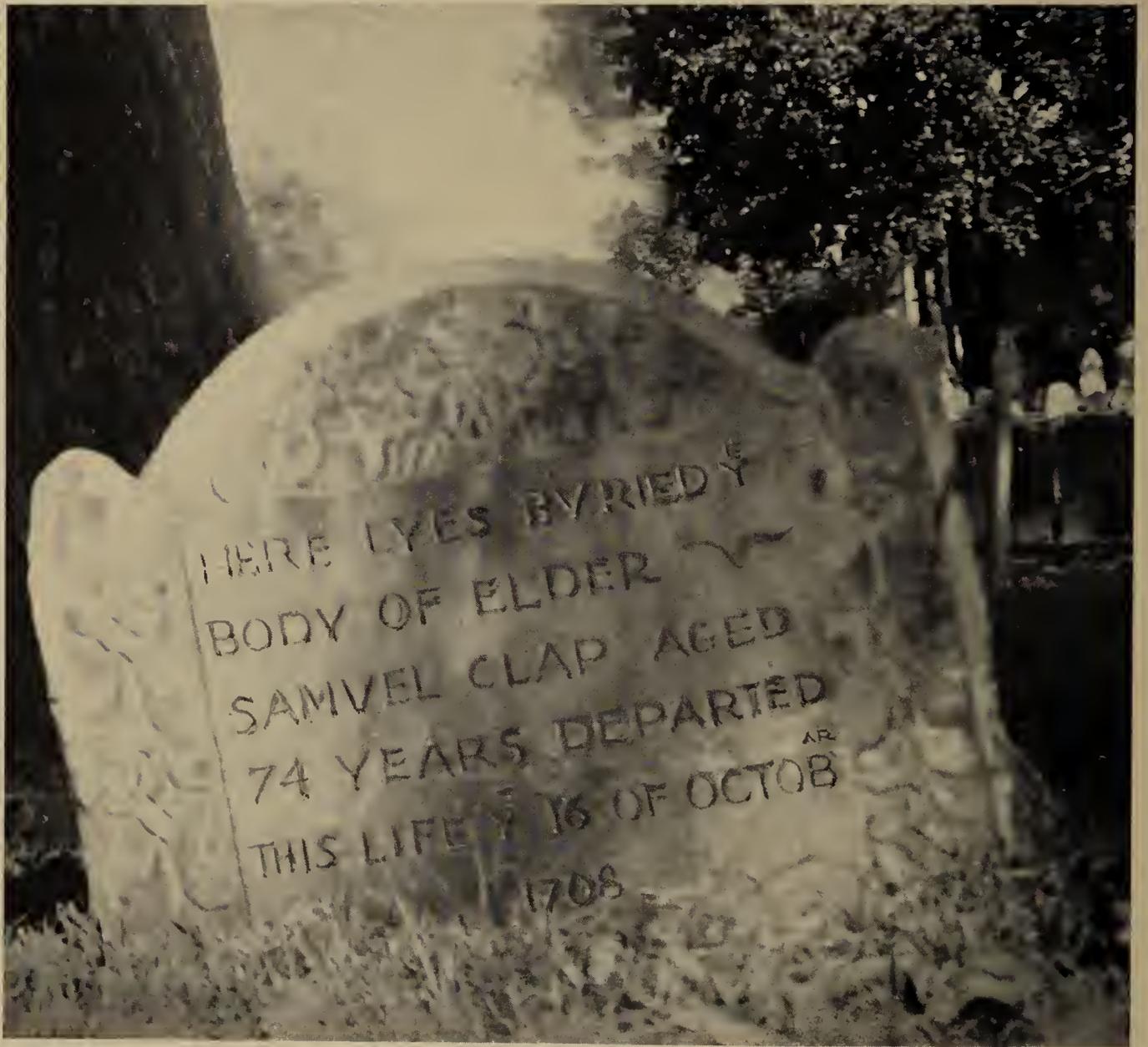
In 1668 and again in 1669 Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> was made a member of a council<sup>35</sup> from Dorchester Church to visit the First Church of Boston in an endeavor to settle a bitter controversy which had arisen therein and which vitally affected our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES. Such matters are hard for an outsider to weigh, and especially so at a remote time, but the facts are that in 1663 the Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Norton had died and in 1667 the Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Wilson died also, leaving the First Church without either teacher or pastor. In late 1667 or early 1668 a call had been given by a part of the membership to the Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Davenport of New Haven and to Rev. James Allen of Boston, but an influential minority of the church, including WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES objected strongly to the calling of Davenport, partly because of his considerable age (and he did die in less than three years of his coming to Boston) but mainly because his views as to baptism differed completely from those of the late incumbents who had favored the Half Way Covenant,<sup>15</sup> so twenty-eight members includ-



Angle Tree Stone showing the name of ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP.



Present appearance of same.



Gravestone of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP in  
Upham's Corner Burial Ground, Dorchester.

ing DAWES insisted upon being dismissed, that they might form a third church in Boston — The Old South — which plan was bitterly opposed by the others. The report of this first advisory council signed on August 8, 1668, by twelve men of Dorchester, Dedham, Roxbury and Cambridge including ROGER<sup>1</sup>, was most loving and pacifying and recommended the desired dismissal, adding: "But as to proceeding to church censure in such a case as this, we find no rule in Scripture." The following year ROGER<sup>1</sup> served on a second council\* of thirty-two men, called to consider further the same situation, which group rendered their report in April, 1669, again approving the above withdrawal from the First Church and the formation of the Third Church.<sup>35</sup> So the dismissal of the dissenters, which was utterly refused by the First Church, was advised by the first and fully sanctioned by this second council of churches and the Third or Old South was consequently formed at meetings held in Charlestown on May 12 and 16, 1669, though the controversy between the two churches was carried on "with no little asperity for fourteen years."<sup>35</sup> In January 1671-2 Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> was chosen guardian by Moses Pierce, third son of William Pierce\*\* late of Boston and the court allowed this choice.<sup>23</sup> He had also served in 1664 as guardian<sup>66</sup> of John<sup>2</sup> Nichols (minor son of Mordicai<sup>1</sup> Nichols, deceased) who later married a daughter of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES.

ROGER<sup>1</sup> had served as a deputy for at least eleven years between 1656 and 1673 when the court on May 10 decided that<sup>18</sup>

"Captain CLAPE being Chosen formerly to serve as deputy at the generall Court, and the Court finding a necessity of his p<sup>r</sup>esence at the Castle in thes troublesome times (and vpon their notice giuen to the freemen that they may chouse another deputy) the freemen being called together vpon the day aforesaid made choice of Lift<sup>nt</sup> John Capen to serue as as deputy for the yeere ensewing,"

The military service rendered by ROGER<sup>1</sup> was his most outstanding effort.<sup>6</sup> It covered a sergeancy in the Dorchester train band or militia as early as 1642, its lieutenantancy<sup>14</sup> under Capt. Humphrey<sup>1</sup> Atherton† from 1644 to 1661 and its captaincy from 1662 until August, 1665, when he was appointed†† Captain and Commander of the Castle which position he retained for twenty-one years until the arrival of the unwelcome royal governor Andros in 1686 when<sup>2</sup> "Some things were required of Him that were grievous to his pious Soul, and foreseeing a Storm of Troubles coming on the Country, and he now in his old Age, voluntarily resigned his Command."<sup>6,7,51</sup>

After becoming commander of the Castle ROGER<sup>1</sup> had addressed<sup>32</sup> a report and

\*Dorchester Church history<sup>35</sup> records the receipt of a letter of April 11, 1669, from "y<sup>e</sup> desenting breatheren of y<sup>e</sup> Church at Boston . . . wherein they did express ther desier to this Church to send ther [Dorchester's] elders . . . to give them [Boston] Counsell what may be y<sup>e</sup> mind of god y<sup>t</sup> they should doe in refrerance to y<sup>e</sup> difference y<sup>t</sup> was between y<sup>e</sup> Church ther [Boston] & them: this [Dorchester] Church after long adjetation . . . did by Vote Nominate and appoint Mr. Mather (pastor) Eldr Humphry Captaine CLAP & Captin ffoster . . ." members as above.<sup>35</sup>

\*\*William Pierce's daughter Esther chose<sup>23</sup> PHINEAS<sup>8</sup> UPHAM as her guardian at that time and the court appointed Joseph<sup>8</sup> Webb as guardian of Ebenezer Pierce. These Pierce children referred to JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM as "uncle."

†Atherton was one of the outstanding men of the colony and has been referred to<sup>14</sup> as "a very lively courageous man, with his stout and valiant Lievtenant CLAPE, strong for the truth. . . ."<sup>14</sup>

††The cause of his appointment was the sudden and tragic death of his predecessor Capt. Richard Davenport which event incorporated almost a miracle. Being weary with work, he had lain down for a nap in a room next to the powder magazine with only a thin board partition between. A heavy storm came up and lightning entering through the window killed him and wounded three or four other men but did no material damage to the fort and did not set off the powder.<sup>14</sup>

plea to the General Court which incorporated the following facts. He reminded them that when they placed him in charge in 1665, assigning £160 per annum for the garrison of Captain and four men, of whom one should be an able gunner, they planned that the gunner should receive £35 per annum. He assured them that the payment of less than £20 per annum apiece for the others would not bring men of the type which would be fit for the honor or safety of the country's service; this would leave but £65 per annum for the Captain who must feed these men and must keep his family on the island if he or the garrison were to have any comfort, yet most of the towns paid their share of the fort's upkeep in corn, shoes, or other goods which could not be exchanged for the necessities. Moreover, a great amount of wood costing a considerable sum of money, was needed on that cold Island and that if it were not for his private means he would sometimes be at loss to provide the necessities; so he petitioned that the court should instruct the treasurer to pay one-half of the whole sum in money. He added a report on the physical condition of the fort in these words:<sup>32</sup>

“Furthermore, I think it my duty to inform yo<sup>r</sup>selves concerning the Castle how it is in regard of the Decays thereof, the upper Deck or floar was never tight since I came to the Castle, and although I have got men at work to calk it to make it tight yet in a short time it will be leaky again, for some plates of the planks are rotten, the leakes cannot but hurt the timber worke of the other Roomes and is very afflictive unto us, there is raines sometimes no dry plase to lodg in, wee have been forced to rise out of o<sup>r</sup> beds many times the beds have been so wet with rain, and wee have no plase also to lay a bed in, but are forced to go from the little house to the Castle to bed in Dark rainy nights, and sometimes in snow above my wife's knees, she doth much desire to have a lodging room built joining to the little room where wee live, that in the cold winter she may not go so far out of Dores to bed if this Court will be pleased to show us the favor and those that may succeed us. Also the timber that lies in the brick wall on which the shutters of y<sup>e</sup> ports do hang are so rotten that it will not hold the iron hookes, two of the shutters are fallen Down and that timber being rotten so deep in the wall makes mee doubt lest the ends of the main beames of the gun room be rotten in the wall. These beames are about thirty foot long and no support but by the ends in the wall, yett a very great weight is on that floar, viz, six guns three thousand weight a piece besides many people on training days. Would it not be prudent to have some pillars under the beames, and to have planks prepared to lay the upper floare anew and to repair the ports. I thought it my Duty to inform this Hon<sup>ed</sup> Court of these Decays, that so you may do in it as you please.”

The reference ROGER<sup>1</sup> made<sup>32</sup> to the many people who would be within the fort on training days, probably implied the men who were members of the train band (who met four times a year and who were always served some refreshment) but it reminds one of the probability that many guests would visit the Island as an outing, adding no small amount to the living expenses of the commander and to the work of his wife. One instance of this sort is seen in the diary of the Rev. Peter Thacher of Milton (along with the record of various other picnicking events) where under date of October 26, 1681, he recorded:<sup>44</sup>

“My dear [wife] and I went with . . . Brother Clap [Ezra<sup>2</sup>, (Edward<sup>1</sup>)] and his wife with divers from Dorchester to the Castle to see Capt. [ROGER<sup>1</sup>] CLAP; were very kindly entertained with a great feast and returned home that night.”

In 1672 Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> while resident at the Castle<sup>36</sup> was very seriously ill and he was so greatly beloved by his old neighbors of Dorchester that that town “kept

a day of fasting and prayer to beg his life of God, and, when he recovered, a day of thanksgiving."<sup>36,37</sup> On March 21, 1672-3, while under the command of ROGER<sup>1</sup>, by some unhappy accident the fort on Castle Island caught fire<sup>14</sup> and was entirely destroyed except for the powder and a portion of the soldiers property — which implies an exceeding anxiety and a considerable financial loss for Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup>. A plan was made for immediate replacement of the fort and a committee<sup>14,18</sup> of five men, including the governor and Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup>, was appointed to plan and construct it; subscriptions were made to the amount of £1,500 and a tax was laid, besides, to defray the expense. In April, 1673, in this connection it was ordered that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER and two others "shall Each of them take a Sargent with them and goe to the Seauerall Squadrons and take ther Subscriptions."

In 1674 ROGER<sup>1</sup> gave factual evidence of his fineness of character when, though he disagreed with our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER as to the placing of a boundary line between them, instead of a suit at law, or even naming the person with whom he disagreed, it is recorded that at a town meeting<sup>18</sup> on December 10 ". . . Capt. ROGER CLAP made a motion and Request that seeing ther is some difference between himself and some other p'prietors of vpland bordering vpon his Meadow at the neck of land, he desiers that the towne would appoint some men to determine and state the bounds." The town appointed three men "with the Consent of Capt. CLAP and WILLIAM SUMNER."

Reverting to the acquirement of the "New Grant" in 1637, running south to the Plymouth Colony line from the Blue Hill (see p. 159), an Indian deed had been given for it, as well as for the first grant, by the regent Kitchamikin but the colonists did not consider the deed for the "New Grant" full enough to be satisfactory so they appealed to Josiah (Wampatuck), son of Chicataubut, for a fuller deed which he promised to give but he was soon killed in an Indian battle without complying. So after his son Charles Josiah reached his majority the plea was again made for a proper deed and on June 4, 1684, for money paid, that young man made a deed to five men representing the proprietors of Dorchester and Milton confirming to them the land south of Blue Hill excepting, with legal care, the six thousand acres "as now laid out and bounded which the Indians at Punquapaug do now enjoy"<sup>26</sup> (see map, p. 159). Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> and his son Ens. SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> were two of the five men named in that instrument.<sup>26,39</sup>

Following the final loss of their charter (see Appendix "B" p. 694) and the advent of the objectionable royal governor, Andros, Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> resigned<sup>51</sup> the command of Castle Island, after twenty-one years of service and residence there. He was then seventy-seven years old and more fitted for retirement than activity. He and JOANE removed to the south part of Boston and had a home, for the last few years of their lives, on the west side of Federal Street opposite Windmill Point. There he died and his will, leaving this home to JOANE, spoke of it as being bounded on the east by the sea<sup>2</sup> (see map, p. 31).

Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> made his will<sup>2</sup> on November 19, 1690, and died at the age of eighty-two years on February 2, 1690-1, leaving a considerable estate. He provided carefully for wife JOANE, giving her in addition to the Boston house and land, various other tracts, two feather beds with their furniture, a small trunk, £40 in money "or such goods as shee please to take out of my moueabels:" he required that each of their children should give her twenty shillings annually "for

her more comfortable living" and he gave fifty acres of his land at Westfield to the church there toward the maintenance of an able minister<sup>40</sup> if the Westfield people would pay to JOANE two bushels of good wheat, yearly. She was to have, also, anything which fell to her from the estate of her father FORD. He planned that after JOANE's portion was set out and his debts were paid that the rest of his estate should be divided equally among his six children except that SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, the eldest, should have a "dobbles portion in all." But he specified that whatever gifts any of them had received during the father's life should be reckoned as a part of their portion "which reseats, that i allow as part of there portion, you shall find in my littell sorrill booke." He added "my sone SAMUEL shall haue all my land, both upland and medow, at powow point, in dorchester neck, and to [two] small lots in the littell neck, (see map, p. 275) and my lot comanly caled the eaight acor lot, and halfe my farme at punkapage." He gave to Hopestill<sup>2</sup>, among other things, the other half of the farm at Punkapage and gave to Preserved<sup>2</sup> one-fifth of his land at Westfield<sup>40</sup> and all his holdings at Northampton where Preserved<sup>2</sup> had made his home since his majority. He referred also to "small gifts to my grandchildren." The document\* made widow JOANE and son SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> the executors and Elder James Black (Blake)\*\* and "cozen" Thomas Swift† the overseers.<sup>2</sup>

We are told of Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> that

"He was buried with much pomp; the military officers — probably the Artillery Company — preceeding the corpse, the Governor and General Court following the relatives as mourners, and the gun firing at the Castle."<sup>37</sup>

After the death of Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> his widow JOANE addressed a "humble Petition" to the Governor and General Court in these words:<sup>32</sup>

"Whereas it hath pleased the Lord to put a period to the days of yor Petit<sup>s</sup> husband who was for a long time improved in the country's service, as is well knowne to this Hon<sup>ed</sup> Court, and for his s<sup>d</sup> service there remains a considerable sume of money yet behind unpaid unto him, which is now wanting to defray the charges of decent interment of the s<sup>d</sup> Dece<sup>d</sup> and other necessaries for your Petitioner's supply.

"Yo<sup>r</sup> Petitioner doth therefore pray this Hon<sup>ed</sup> Court to consider the premises, that you would be pleas<sup>d</sup> to favour her so farre as to allow somewhat for her present reliefe and to defray the present charges of interm<sup>t</sup> of her s<sup>d</sup> dec<sup>d</sup> husband and as in duty bound shall ever pray."

and the answer was that ". . . what appears to be justly dew unto ROGER CLAPP dec<sup>d</sup> for his service to this Colony shal be paid his executors by the Country Treas<sup>r</sup> as sone as may be."<sup>32</sup>

JOANE survived Capt. ROGER for nearly four and one-half years, dying<sup>2</sup> on June 29, 1695, aged seventy-eight.

It has been written<sup>1</sup> of her that

"She was a godly and exemplary Woman, given to Hospitality; She abounded in Acts of Charity; so that when proper Objects of Pity and Charity came to her Knowledge, she never failed to relieve them herself, or to procure them Relief from others: Thus the Blessing of those that were ready to Perish came upon her."

\*He gave ten shillings apiece<sup>2</sup> to "cozen Estor bissel and Constant dewey" who was probably daughter<sup>19</sup> of Richard<sup>1</sup> Hawes and wife of Thomas<sup>2</sup> Dewey (Thomas<sup>1</sup>).

\*\*This was Elder James<sup>2</sup> Blake (William) of Dorchester.

†A Sara Clapp, probably a niece of ROGER<sup>1</sup> married October 16, 1676, Thomas<sup>2</sup> Swift, "son of Thomas Swift the quarter-master."<sup>2</sup>

Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> and his wife were both laid to rest in King's Chapel\* Burial Ground, the oldest cemetery in Boston,<sup>47</sup> and probably the only one used between 1630 and 1660. In 1939 the inscription on his tombstone near the southeasterly corner was easily legible, but it has been removed<sup>46</sup> from the place where he was laid.\*\* Honor has been done the name of Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP by its inscription on a bronze tablet<sup>27</sup> which was affixed to one of the gates of King's Chapel Burial Grounds in 1901, and that of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES Jr. is also there (see plate XII, p. 156).

Others of our ancestors who were buried in that cemetery were WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES and his wife SUSANNA, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES and his wife MARY, as well as seven of the children of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and SARAH (STORY) DAWES; two of the children of NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> and HANNAH (?*Flood*) BOONE also lie there.<sup>48</sup>

Much praise was spoken of Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP after his death by those who knew him, such as that<sup>37</sup>

“In his natural temper he was of a cheerful and pleasant disposition, courteous and kind in behaviour, free and familiar in his conversation, yet attended with proper reservedness, and he had a gravity and presence that commanded respect.”<sup>37</sup>

ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP “was one of the most noted and valuable men of his time.”<sup>44</sup>

“. . . was a Man generally known, honoured and esteemed by those that were contemporary with him . . .”<sup>1</sup>

“His meekness and humility were proverbial, and he was ‘of a very quiet and peaceable spirit, not apt to resent injuries; but when he thought the honor of God was concerned, or just and lawful authority opposed,† he was forward enough to exert himself.’”<sup>2</sup>

The children of ROGER<sup>1</sup> and JOANE (FORD) CLAPP, all born in Dorchester, were<sup>1,2,5,7,13,15</sup>

- I. SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- II. William<sup>2</sup>, b. July 2 or 5, 1636; d. Sept. 22, 1638.
- III. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. June 22, 1638; d. at Boston Dec. 25, 1711, aged 73-6 mo., “a vertuous and prudent woman;” m. about 1660 Joseph<sup>2</sup> Holmes (George<sup>1</sup>)<sup>13</sup> of Roxbury.
- IV. Experience<sup>2</sup>, b. Aug. 23, bap.<sup>15</sup> Aug. 1640; d. Nov. 1, 1640.
- V. Waitstill<sup>2</sup>, b. Oct. 22, 1641; d. Aug. 9, 1643.
- VI. Preserved<sup>2</sup>, b. Nov. 23, 1643; d. at Northampton Sept. 20, 1720, aged 76-10 mo.; m.<sup>13</sup> June 4, 1668, at Windsor, Conn. Sarah<sup>2</sup> Newberry of Windsor, Conn. (Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>13</sup>
- VII. Experience<sup>2</sup>, b. Dec. 1645; bap.<sup>15</sup> Dec. 21; died yng.
- VIII. Hopestill<sup>2</sup>, b. Nov. 6, bap.<sup>15</sup> in Dec. 1647; d.<sup>5</sup> at Dorchester Sept. 2, 1719, in 72nd year; m. Apr. 18, 1672, Susanna<sup>2</sup> Swift (Thomas<sup>1</sup> of Dorchester).<sup>13</sup>
- IX. †Wait<sup>2</sup>, b. Mar. 17, bap.<sup>15</sup> Mar. 24, 1649-50; d. at Boston in the house<sup>1</sup> her father and mother

\*The published inscriptions<sup>47</sup> from this burial ground unfortunately create an erroneous impression by inserting a coat of arms directly above the quoted inscription relative to Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup>, thus suggesting by juxtaposition, that the arms might have appeared on the stone or have pertained to him, neither of which is the truth.

\*\*A commissioner in charge of King's Chapel Burial Ground preferred order to accuracy and changed the location of many tombstones to make orderly rows, regardless of the placing of the graves they originally identified.<sup>46,51</sup> The stone of Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP was one of these.

†Such a case ROGER<sup>1</sup> himself recorded<sup>1</sup> in his “Memoirs” thus: “. . . Satan . . . hath . . . stirred up evil Men to seek the hurt of this Country; but God hath delivered his poor People here from Time to Time; Sometimes by putting Courage into our Magistrates to punish those that did Rebel; . . . Here was one Ratcliff spake boldly and wickedly against the Government and Governours here, using such Words, as some judged, deserved Death. He was for his Wickedness Whipt, and both his Ears cut off in Boston A.D. 1631; *I saw it done.*”<sup>1</sup>

‡“Leutenant CLAP declared the Reason why he called his child (wait) was because he did suppose the ffall of anti-christ was not farre off.”<sup>15</sup> Wait, herself “often spake of that Charge which her Father left his Children, viz. Never to spend any Time in Idleness.”<sup>21</sup>

lived and died in, May 3, 1717, in 69th yr.; m. Apr. 3, 1673, Jonathan<sup>2</sup> Simpson of Charlestown (John<sup>1</sup> or Jonathan<sup>1</sup> of Watertown).<sup>13</sup> Their daughter Wait<sup>3</sup> Simpson became the wife of James<sup>4</sup> Blake (James<sup>3</sup>, James<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>) the Annalist of Dorchester.<sup>13</sup>

x. Thanks<sup>2</sup>, b. July, 1651, or bap.<sup>15</sup> Aug. 25, 1650; d. yng.

xI. Desire<sup>5</sup>, b. Oct. 17, 1652; d. in Boston Dec., 1717, in 66th year; m.<sup>5</sup> 1st Oct. 21, 1679, by Maj. Pynchon to Sarah Pond; m. 2nd Dec. 27, 1716, Mrs. Deborah Smith.

xII. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, b. Apr. 1655; d. 1670 aged 15.

xIII. Unite<sup>2</sup>, b. Oct. 13, bap.<sup>15</sup> 19, 1656; d. Mar. 20, 1664.

xIV. Supply<sup>2</sup>, b. Oct. 30, bap.<sup>15</sup> Nov. 4, 1660; d. unm. Mar. 5, 1685-6.

SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP (*Roger*<sup>1</sup>), their eldest child, was born<sup>2,5</sup> in Dorchester on October 11, 1634, "when his mother was but in the 18th Year of her Age." He was baptized<sup>15</sup> there that same month and died in that town on October 16, 1708, aged<sup>2</sup> a few days over seventy-four, having been married\* at that place<sup>4,5</sup> on January 18, 1658-9, by Maj. Atherton to HANNAH<sup>2</sup> LEEDS (see Leeds, p. 407), whose death preceded his by only eight days. SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> was grown and married before his father removed to the Castle, so his entire life would have been spent in the one town. No evidence as to any special occupation on his part has been seen except as it pertained to service to the town and church, so probably farming was his principal interest.

SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> being the eldest son, was destined to receive, eventually, a double share of his father's estate and very probably lived, temporarily at least, in the family homestead at Dorchester in what is now Willow Court after the removal of ROGER<sup>1</sup> to Castle Island in 1665, especially since SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> was the only son then married; and as will be shown, that homestead descended through him to his son Samuel<sup>3</sup> and grandson Samuel<sup>4</sup> with a most interesting history (vide infra, p. 172).

The will of ROGER<sup>1</sup> gave<sup>2</sup> to SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> "all my land, both upland and medow at powow point,\*\* in dorchester neck, and to [two] small lots in the littell neck, and my lot comanly caled the eaight acor lot, and halfe my farme at punkapage:"<sup>22</sup> (see map p. 159). He evidently acquired also from his father's estate at least a part of that man's holdings in Purgatory Swamp for the three surviving heirs of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> divided the Purgatory land among them, so that even though SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> had made no purchases of real estate himself, he was quite well supplied.

In 1664 he with over one hundred others of Dorchester<sup>29</sup> signed (long hand) a petition to the court in the most appealing terms that it should make every effort to retain for the colonists their precious charter (see Appendix "B", p. 694).

In December, 1666, permission was granted to SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> to "set his barne five foote out on the highway, from the place where it now stands, and so to run Narower at both ends till it meete with the fence . . ."; in 1667 the town granted him the privilege of getting a load of "Clopbords" from the Cedar Swamp and in November, 1669, of getting two hundred railes out of the five hundred acre lot.<sup>21</sup>

In 1668-9 SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> was appointed by the selectmen to arrange with Nicholas Bolton "to tend the meeting house to keep it in decent order and to Ring the bell the yeer in sewing for which he is to haue 3<sup>15</sup> of which 10<sup>5</sup> of it in money if it can

\*Probably because of some one's confusion of old and new style dating, the marriage of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and HANNAH has been erroneously given<sup>7</sup> as November 18, 1659.

\*\*What was once known as "powow point" because the Indians held many gatherings there,<sup>27</sup> is now the location of the "L Street Baths" claimed to be the largest public baths (dressing rooms for bathers) in the world.

be gott or otherwis to haue 3<sup>d</sup> vpon the shilling for that 10<sup>s</sup>. . . .'<sup>21</sup> But in spite of this plan for good order the building must have been in bad condition for in July, 1670, an order was given to Sergt. SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> to procure some man or<sup>21</sup> men to stop the holes in the "meeting hous by dawbing of them," while in December 1675, the selectmen ordered him again to see to the mending of the meeting house; in September, 1677, its disrepair was still burdensome for both Sergt. SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and Deacon Blake were "to looke to the repaiering of the meeting hous for this winter, by stopping some holes and puting vp some seates that are fallen and the staires that goe vp to the pulpit . . ." and two months later they were paid four shillings<sup>21</sup> for that work, which causes fear that much further repair was still needed. Later SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> furnished boards, nails and labor again on both church and stocks.

The services rendered<sup>19</sup> by SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP were many of them performed within his own town, he having been from<sup>20,21</sup> 1661 to 1691 a viewer of fences, land or highways for sixteen different recorded years, a supervisor of highways for at least two years, a rater for four or more years, a recorder for at least two years and a selectman for no less than sixteen years.<sup>19</sup> He was frequently called upon, especially between 1666 and 1683 to run, or restore, boundary lines between Dorchester-Roxbury, Dorchester-Dedham or Dorchester-Milton and to survey the different subdivisions of his home town, being paid about two shillings or two and a half per day for these tasks. This work was sometimes done in company with RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS and very frequently with WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER.<sup>20</sup> SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> was a deputy to represent Dorchester at the General Court for many years.<sup>15</sup>

In a military line SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> served as Sergeant of the Dorchester train band<sup>20,21</sup> from at least 1666 until March, 1682-3, when he became Ensign<sup>22</sup> and was commissioned accordingly. The date of his becoming Captain of the militia is uncertain but it was prior<sup>27</sup> to July 25, 1691, when he was called "Capt. SAMUEL CLAP" (vide infra). On September 8, 1696, SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, (his father having died) was called "Capt. CLAPP" and was appointed<sup>15</sup> to accompany their Pastor, Ruling Elder and Deacons to Boston to attend the ordination of Benjamin Wadsworth as pastor of the First Church. It has been stated, but hitherto without evidence, that SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> held the title of Major and the following undated item from the published Church Records probably accounts for the tale:<sup>15</sup>

"He was many yeares Selectman, & Deputy of y<sup>e</sup> Court, & Captain, at last Major, but gave back his Comission . . ."

so, though he did not become a major he was evidently offered the title.

Incidental tasks of varied sorts were required of him such as service on a grand jury<sup>23</sup> in January, 1671-2; joining RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER in December, 1676, in looking for a plot of not over one-quarter acre where widow Long might build; attending to the repair of the pound in 1678 and taking the oath of allegiance<sup>23</sup> as of Dorchester in that year. In 1679 SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and SUMNER were to call upon John Mason for the legacy left to the school by the will of John Gornell and the next year SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> was appointed one of the guardians<sup>23</sup> of Sarah and Submit Weeks, children of\* William<sup>2</sup> Weeks (George<sup>1</sup>) deceased, and that same year he was to help settle the estate and help the widow and children of\*\* Benjamin<sup>2</sup>

\*William<sup>2</sup> Weeks, son of George<sup>1</sup> and Jane (Clapp) Weeks, was a cousin<sup>31</sup> of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP.

\*\*Benjamin<sup>2</sup> Bates had married<sup>31</sup> Jane<sup>2</sup> Weeks who was cousin of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>.

Bates (Clement<sup>1</sup>) of Hingham, who called SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> "cousin." About that time he and his wife HANNAH must have kept an inn for he was paid several different sums for the entertainment of the board of selectmen<sup>20</sup> of which he was a member. In 1684 SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and SUMNER were directed to see what highways<sup>21</sup> were needed and that year SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, with his father, was named as one of five grantees<sup>26</sup> in behalf of Dorchester in a deed of confirmation from the Sachem Charles Josiah. On July 25, 1691, the Governor and Council sent a letter<sup>27</sup> to the various towns to the effect that a fresh effort was to be made against the heathen (Indians) and a contribution of £1,000 was needed for supplies. The Dorchester letter was addressed to "Capt. SAMUEL CLAP" and two others of the town's chief men.

The latest public service found as required of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> occurred in July, 1703, when the Council resolved that there should be a committee of both houses appointed to repair to the Castle, then being rebuilt, and report the present state of the work and SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> was one of seven — evidently Representatives — who were named.<sup>22</sup>

SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP and wife HANNAH with his brother Hopestill<sup>2</sup> and wife Susanna on July 2, 1694, disposed of land<sup>32</sup> which came to them from their father's estate. The deed described five hundred acres at Punkapog (approximately Canton) with a small piece of meadow adjoining south, bounded on the north by a great pond called Punkapog, on the north east by Braintree line and on all other sides by the Indian lands and the common lands of Dorchester, according to the plot of 1662 and for this tract John Fenno paid them £100<sup>32</sup> (see p. 160 and map, p. 159).

What was evidently considered the crowning service of the life of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP was his election<sup>15</sup> on September 7, 1701, as a Ruling Elder of Dorchester Church and his ordination to that position on February 3, 1701-2. He continued in this post of honor until his death about seven years later, after which his brother Hopestill<sup>2</sup> was chosen to succeed him.<sup>15</sup> For in the fall of 1708 serious illness visited our family of CLAPP, ending the life of HANNAH, aged<sup>15</sup> about sixty-eight on October 8 and that of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> a week later on October 16. One writer<sup>7</sup> rather needlessly draws the conclusion that he died "of grief for loss of his wife" for he more likely died from some epidemic. Judge Samuel Sewall in his Diary<sup>25</sup> tells of taking a coach from Boston, in company with Messrs. Bromfield and Stoddard, and his own son Joseph to attend the funeral\* of Elder SAMUEL CLAPP who he says was "much lamented." The published history<sup>16</sup> says of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> that he was a "long time a Captain and often a representative; a very worthy man. . . ." A contemporary of his wrote:<sup>1</sup>

"He was a wise and prudent man," "partaking of the choice spirit of his father, treading in his steps and making good his ground; he was eminent for religion, and of a blameless and unspotted conversation. He was early and constantly employed in public affairs, was Captain of the military company, Representative for the town, and, the last seven years of his life, a Ruling Elder of the Church where he lived. . . ." <sup>1,2</sup>

And the Dorchester Church History records as of October 16

\*The early habit of furnishing food and drink at funerals was still in vogue at the time of the death of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and the habitually keen watchfulness of the fathers of the town over the conduct of its inhabitants is seen<sup>15</sup> in the fact that before the month of October had ended, the church had brought charges against Humphrey<sup>3</sup> Atherton (grandson of the honored and useful Humphrey<sup>1</sup> who had performed the marriage ceremony for SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and HANNAH) and on October 31, 1708, that young man appeared and "made confession to the church of his evil in being overtaken with drink at Elder CLAPP's funeral. It was accepted."<sup>15</sup> This man was associated in business with members of the Clapp family for many years.

"M<sup>r</sup> SAMUEL CLAP Ruling Elder Rested in y<sup>e</sup> Lord, 74 years old Compleat, & some few days over, & near 7 years a Ruling Elder, a very holy, wise, able upright, faithfull, humble, usefull servant of y<sup>e</sup> Lord all his Days, & one who lived desired & now died Lamented.

"Eight days before Oct: 8, 1708, Died His vertuous wife m<sup>rs</sup> CLAP with w<sup>m</sup> He lived in holy wedlock 49 years wanting about 3 mo: He sickned & went not to Her fun<sup>ra</sup>l."<sup>15</sup>

Elder SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP left no will nor is an inventory of his estate found. But the three, of his ten or more, children who lived to marry, all survived him and signed an agreement<sup>24</sup> on March 20, 1711, as to the division of his estate. A careful comparison<sup>32</sup> of the land descriptions in the will of Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> with those in the agreement dividing the estate of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> shows that, in the main at least, he had retained\* and passed on what he inherited, but had undoubtedly added to what his father gave him. He must have left a very considerable estate, for of his two daughters who shared equally, Hannah<sup>3</sup> at her death in 1747 left property amounting to £220 and\*\* Samuel<sup>3</sup> in 1724 left over £913. Later developments seem to prove<sup>32</sup> that SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> had built a home which he occupied in his later life though he still retained the ownership of the Willow Court house built by, and once the home of, Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup>, for the agreement<sup>2</sup> by the heirs divided between ELIZABETH<sup>3</sup> and Hannah<sup>3</sup> the house their father had lived in and gave to Samuel<sup>3</sup> as a part of his share, the property he himself lived in,\*\*\* which SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> had owned till he died. ELIZABETH<sup>3</sup> and her husband EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER acquired also the portion of her father's home lot in front of his residence, one-half of the orchard, a share in the barn, one-quarter of the pasture at Hawkins Brook, the lot at Hawes Hill, one-half of the lot at Little Neck, one-quarter of the meadow at Powow Point (on the north east side), one-quarter of the marsh at calf pasture (on the south east side of a little creek), her share of the land at Purgatory (see map, p. 159) and one-quarter of the land in the "Twelve Divisions" which came to be known by the name of Stoughton, and a portion of it even later, as Canton.

SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP and his wife HANNAH were laid<sup>27,68</sup> away in the Upham's Corner Burial Ground, the earliest one in Dorchester, near its entrance at the corner of Columbia Road and Stoughton Street (see map, p. 275 and plate XI, p. 163). Their son Samuel<sup>3</sup> and grandson Samuel<sup>4</sup> lie nearby, as well as other members of the family.

The children† of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and HANNAH (LEEDS) CLAPP all born in Dorchester were<sup>2,5,7,15,32</sup>

\*As late as March, 1734, four of the children of Samuel<sup>3</sup> Clapp sold to a fifth (their brother Thomas<sup>4</sup>) all their right and interest in the lands which had been owned by their father Samuel<sup>3</sup>, their grandfather SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and their great-grandfather ROGER<sup>1</sup> at Stoughton.<sup>32</sup>

\*\*As has been stated, SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> died intestate and his only son Samuel received much of his real estate. Samuel<sup>3</sup> died intestate and his eldest son Samuel<sup>4</sup>, received most of the real estate. Samuel<sup>4</sup>, in turn, died intestate and his only son Abner<sup>6</sup> inherited most of the real estate but disposed of the ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP homestead to his sister Mary<sup>6</sup> and her husband John Ward (see NOTE, p. 172).<sup>68</sup>

\*\*\*See NOTE, p. 172 relative to the Willow Court home of ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP and the Lemuel<sup>6</sup> Clapp branch of the family.

†There must have been an erroneous deduction inserted in the published Dorchester Church Record, for page 178 shows not only the baptism of Experience<sup>3</sup>, "daughter of SAMUELL CLAP" as 31, 5 Mo (July) 1670 but adds "Mary daughter of — Clap" 15: 3 mo 70 with the name "[Samuell]" inserted in the blank space. And a further confusion exists about those named "Samuel" in this third generation for though their second Samuel<sup>2</sup>, born in 1668, has been accorded the wife, family and extended life, and was doubtless he called "seven years old" who was to be catechized in 1676, yet one slight sign is seen that he might have immediately died after the last notation and have been promptly succeeded by another son given the same name for an item is found<sup>15</sup> among the last scattering baptisms (pp. 181-2) "(Samuel y<sup>e</sup> son of SAMUEL CLAP 76)" and "thes are out of order."

- i. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, b.<sup>5</sup> Jan. or<sup>2</sup> Feb. 22, bap.<sup>15</sup> Feb. 23, 1661; d.<sup>2</sup> Feb. 12 or<sup>5</sup> May 26, 1666, aged 5.
- ii. John<sup>3</sup>, b. June 16, bap.<sup>15</sup> June 19, 1664; d. Oct. 6, 1665.
- iii. Hannah<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 28, bap.<sup>15</sup> Sept. 30, 1666; d. Mar. 1, 1679-80, aged 13.
- iv. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, b. Aug. 6, bap.<sup>15</sup> July 31, 1668; d.<sup>5</sup> at Dorchester Jan. 30, 1723-4, called abt. 55; m.<sup>5</sup> Apr. 7, 1698, by Rev. Danforth to Mary Paul, prob. dau. of Samuel.
- v. Experience<sup>3</sup>, b. July 28, bap.<sup>15</sup> July 31, 1670; d. Aug. 3, 1671.
- vi. Unite<sup>3</sup>, bap.<sup>15</sup> Jan. 5, 1672; d.<sup>2</sup> Mar. 11 or<sup>5</sup> Jan. 18, 1674.
- vii. Return<sup>3</sup>, b. May 11, bap.<sup>15</sup> May 16, 1675; d. July 18, 1676.
- viii. John<sup>3</sup>, b. May 8, 1677; d.<sup>5</sup> unm. Mar. 7, 1701, aged 23-10 m.
- ix. ELIZABETH<sup>3</sup>, b.<sup>5</sup> July 12, bap.<sup>15</sup> July 13, 1679, (though erroneously stated<sup>2,7</sup> to have been b. Feb. 11, 1679-80); d. at Roxbury Sept. 26, 1758 "aged 79;" m.<sup>32</sup> Sept. 21 or<sup>41</sup> 25, 1701, (recorded at Roxbury) EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER (see Sumner, p. 584).
- x. Hannah<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 13, 1681; bap.<sup>15</sup> at Roxbury in Sept. 1681; d. Aug. 9, 1747, ae. 66; m.<sup>5</sup> Mar. 17, 1704, her third cousin Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> Clapp (Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, Nicholas<sup>1</sup>), grandparents of Capt. Lemuel<sup>6</sup> Clapp (see below and charts pp. 173 and 550 under both Clapp and Smith).

#### NOTE Relative to the ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP PROPERTY

This Willow Court property passed (see charts, pp. 173 and 550) from Samuel<sup>3</sup> (SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, ROGER<sup>1</sup>) to his son Samuel<sup>4</sup> and from him to his only son Abner<sup>5</sup> who lived at the Five Corners. Abner<sup>5</sup> and his wife on January 3, 1758, deeded<sup>68</sup> to his brother-in-law John Ward two-thirds of a dwelling house lately possessed and dwelt in by Samuel<sup>4</sup> Clapp deceased, and the other third after the death of the grantor's mother (which occurred June 1, 1770). This deed was not recorded until October 17, 1770, after this mother had died. The deed included also a half acre of land adjoining the east end of the said dwelling. After about three years of ownership by this brother-in-law and his wife Mary<sup>6</sup> Clapp, they sold<sup>24,32</sup> the old ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP home in Willow Court on February 3, 1761, to Capt. Lemuel<sup>6</sup> Clapp (1735-1819) for £71-6-8. This purchaser was a second cousin and also a fifth cousin of Mary (Clapp) Ward for he got his surname by descent from Nicholas<sup>1</sup> Clapp, through Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> and Ebenezer<sup>4</sup> but he descended also from Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> through SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and his daughter Hannah<sup>3</sup> who married Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> of the Nicholas<sup>1</sup> line, and became grandmother of this Capt. Lemuel<sup>6</sup> the purchaser.<sup>68</sup> So the ownership of the Dorchester home of ROGER<sup>1</sup> rested for five generations in the male line of his descendants then for an interim of about three years in a female of his line, and her husband, and for five subsequent generations, up to this 1939, in a line which bore the blood of ROGER<sup>1</sup> but took their name from Nicholas<sup>1</sup>, his cousin.

Capt. Lemuel<sup>6</sup> who had a tannery on the old Causeway Road (now Boston Street) near the corner of what is now Willow Court,<sup>24</sup> rebuilt and greatly enlarged the old ROGER<sup>1</sup> homestead in that court (see plate XIII, p. 157) about 1767 so that it probably incorporated not more than two of the rooms of the original house. We are told that in 1875 an examination showed that the corner posts were about one foot square and the center one was eight by sixteen, "of oak and as sound as new. Several flooring boards in the attic measure two feet wide." ". . . the west chimney of the old house measures about eight feet square in the cellar."<sup>24</sup>

One of the strange incidents which frequently are found during genealogical research appears in this family, for Capt. Lemuel<sup>6</sup> married in 1768 for his second wife<sup>42</sup> Rebecca<sup>6</sup> Dexter (Rev. Samuel<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>) who was the granddaughter of our SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> and MARIA CATHARINA (SMITH) MEARS and great-granddaughter of Capt. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SMITH (see p. 548 and chart, p. 550). This REBECCA<sup>6</sup> Dexter bore Capt. Lemuel<sup>6</sup> Clapp eleven children, and his will made in 1819 left the house in Willow Court for the use of his two youngest daughters, Catherine<sup>6</sup> Clapp born in 1782 and Rebecca<sup>6</sup> Clapp born in 1784 while they remained single. Neither one ever married but Rebecca<sup>6</sup> lived until 1855 and Catharine until 1872, having spent fifty-three years in the Willow Court home after her father's death. Between 1872 and 1875 the old homestead was purchased by two nephews of the late owners, namely Frederick<sup>7</sup> and Lemuel<sup>7</sup> Clapp (William<sup>6</sup>, Capt. Lemuel<sup>6</sup>).

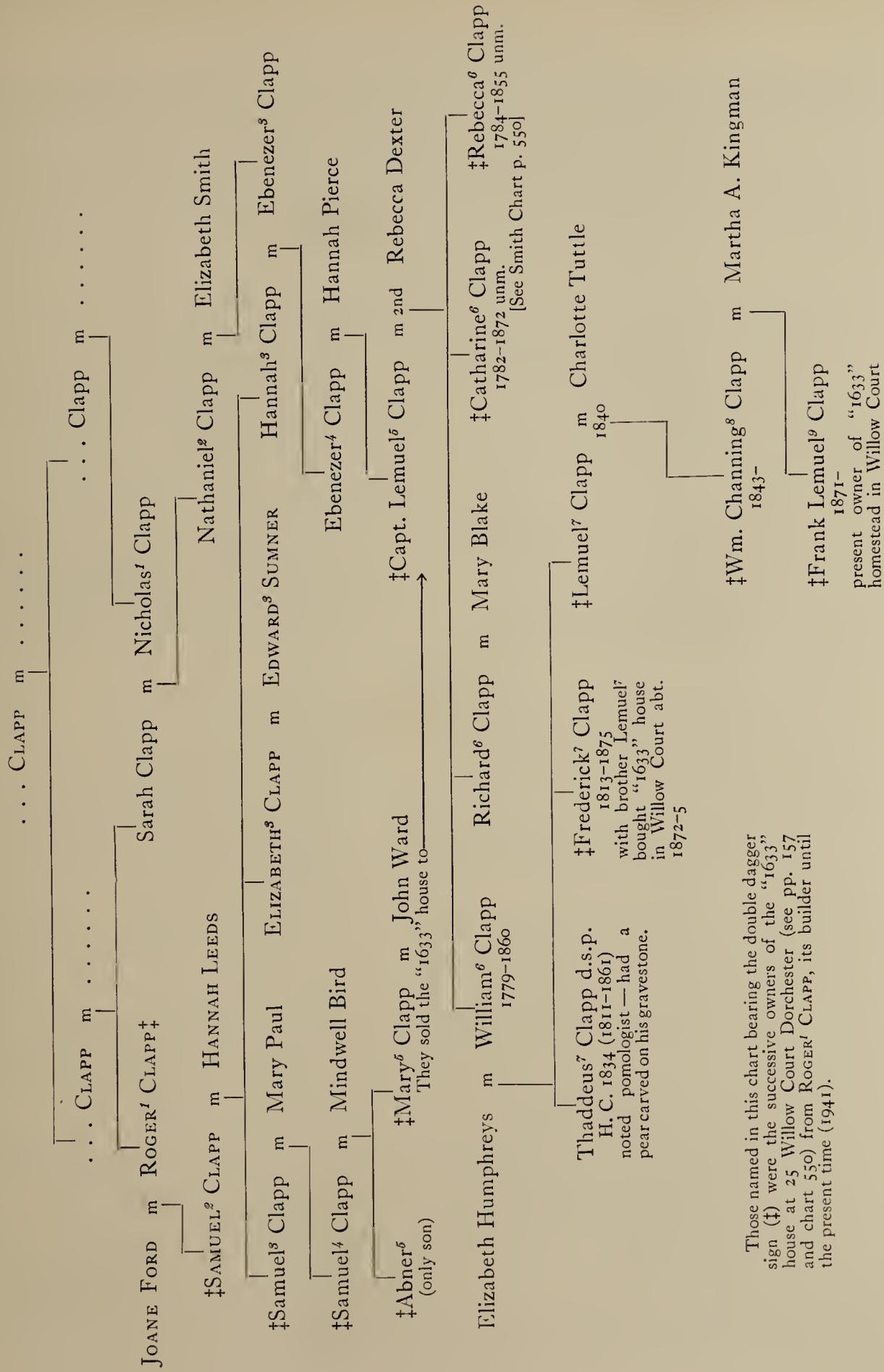
A grandson of Lemuel<sup>7</sup>, namely Frank L.<sup>9</sup> is the present (1939) owner of this historic property (see p. 173). From 1854 until the death of Catharine<sup>6</sup> in 1872 she had with her a niece Rebecca<sup>7</sup> Clapp (Richard<sup>6</sup> Capt. Lemuel<sup>6</sup>) and her husband the well-known antiquarian and historian William Blake Trask and as one of their most valued possessions<sup>42</sup> Catharine<sup>6</sup> and her sister possessed a portrait of MARIA CATHARINA (SMITH) MEARS painted by that woman's father probably about 1690, (see plate xxx, p. 549). This portrait next passed into the hands of Catharine<sup>7</sup> Clapp (Richard<sup>6</sup>) who married as his second wife Henry Humphreys; to her stepson and nephew the Rev. Charles Alfred Humphreys, and to his daughter Catharine Clapp Humphreys who married Mr. Edmund D. Barry and resided in Evanston, Illinois. After her death Mr. Barry gave the painting of this ancestress of ours to the American Antiquarian Society at Worcester,<sup>72</sup> where there is kept also, as a loan, the self portrait of her father the mysterious Capt. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SMITH (see plate, p. 548). This last mentioned painting was in the year of 1939, on temporary loan to the Metropolitan Museum of Art in New York City during the World's Fair.<sup>70</sup>

Capt. Lemuel<sup>6</sup> Clapp (1735-1819) of the Revolution was by trade a tanner as were three of his sons, Edward<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>6</sup> and Richard<sup>6</sup> who all lived close together in the Willow Court and Five Corners vicinity and their various tanyards were near at hand. The tendency toward this trade of tanning carried on to the grandsons of Capt. Lemuel<sup>6</sup> for William<sup>6</sup> had Frederick<sup>7</sup> and Lemuel<sup>7</sup> (who bought the ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP property 1872-5) who were tanners in their earlier lives; and Richard<sup>6</sup> had sons Lemuel D.<sup>7</sup> and Richard<sup>7</sup> who followed that trade at least a part of their lives.

Of these men William<sup>6</sup> Clapp also acquired a large farm situated in the north part of Dorchester, adjoining Boston which he and three of his sons\* have most systematically cultivated, leaning especially to horticulture, pomology and the originating of new varieties of fruits. Lemuel<sup>7</sup>, personally, planted the seed from which grew "Clapp's Favorite" Pear, a cross between the "Flemish Beauty" and the "Bartlett" which is much prized by fruit growers.

Frank L.<sup>9</sup>, grandson of this Lemuel<sup>7</sup>, inherited and lives (1940) in the home built\*\* by his great-grandfather William<sup>6</sup>. He owns also the one bearing the legend "ROGER CLAPP House 1633." It is reported of Mr. F. L.<sup>9</sup> Clapp that "he owns the

# CLAPP RELATIONSHIPS



Those named in this chart bearing the double dagger sign (†) were the successive owners of the "1633" house at 25 Willow Court Dorchester (see pp. 157 and chart 550) from ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP, its builder until the present time (1941).

entire tract\*\*\* where three of the Clapp houses stand and has a strong desire to turn it into a 'Clapp Memorial,' something like the old Fairbanks place in Dedham. The Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities is most anxious that this should be done and is willing to cooperate in such a movement if one could be organized."<sup>24</sup>

\*Thaddeus<sup>7</sup>, one of these sons, has a "Clapp's Favorite" pear carved on his gravestone in Forest Hills Cemetery.<sup>71</sup>

\*\*This house faces east on Boston Street at the northern corner of Willow Court.

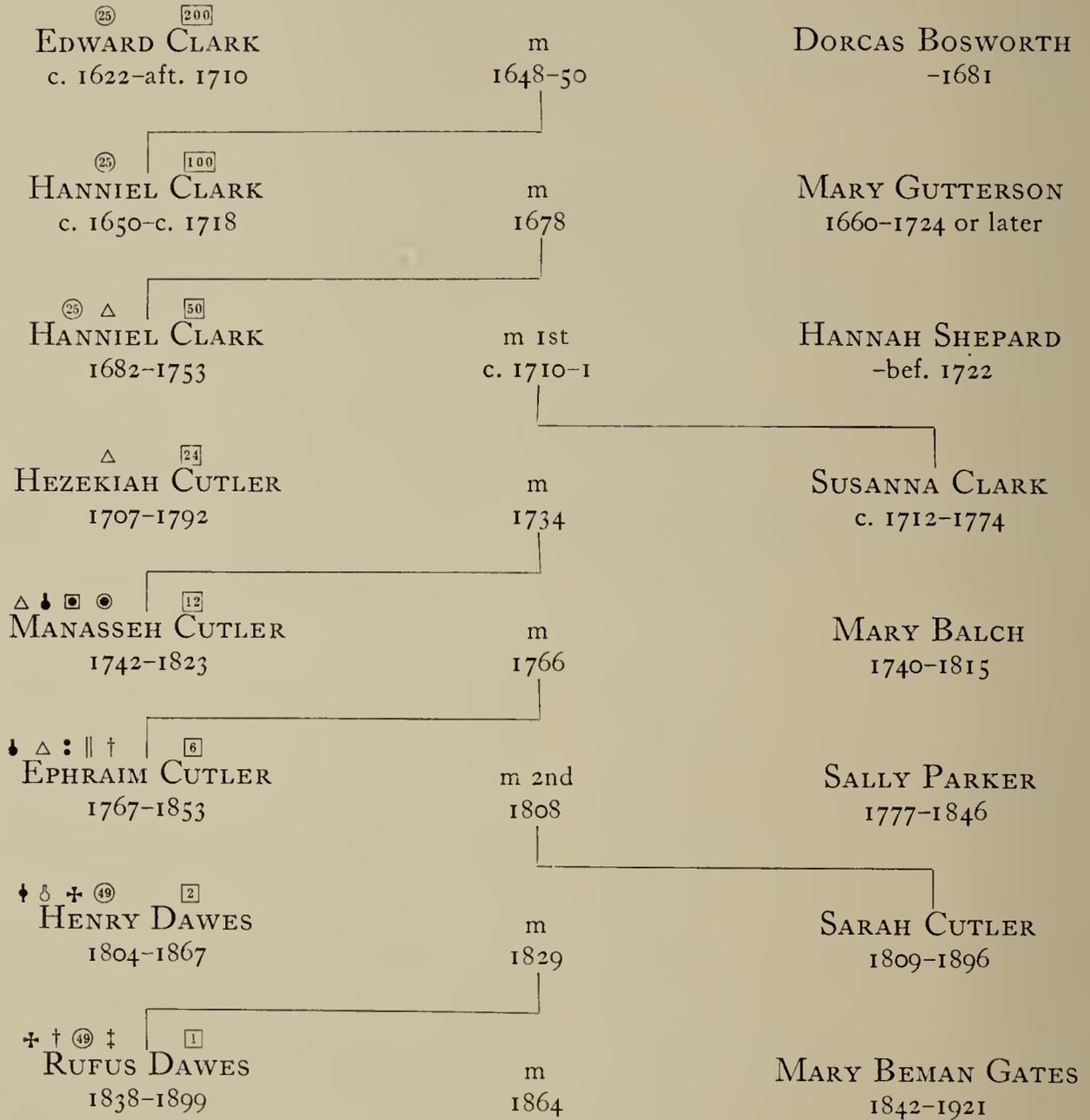
\*\*\*This tract lies between Boston Street and Massachusetts Avenue and on the east side of Willow Court [about three blocks from present Columbus Park and perhaps four blocks from the shore line of "Old Harbor" where the Dorchester people landed.]<sup>71</sup>

## REFERENCES

1. Collections of the Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society, 1884, I, being "Memoirs of ROGER CLAP, 1630," pp. iv-x, 17-19, 22, 24, 30-2, 35, 39-42, 53-64; Chronicles . . . of Massachusetts Bay, A. Young, 1846, pp. 345-67.
2. The Clapp Memorial . . . , E. Clapp, 1876, pp. xvi, 3-15.
3. *Ibid.*, pp. xvi-xx, 91-4, 105-7, 195-200.
4. Paine Ancestry . . . , S. C. Paine, ed. by C. H. Pope, 1913, pp. 120-3.
5. Boston Record Commissioner Report, XXI, 1, 5, 7, 12, 14, 16-18, 20, 24, 26-28, 30, 102-4, 124, 126, 130.
6. Records of Massachusetts Bay, Vols. II, III, IV, pts. 1 and 2, and V, see indices.
7. Savage, I, 390-1; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 100.
8. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 368.
9. *Ibid.*, IV, pt. 1, 247; IV, pt. 2, 39, 74, 276-8, 552.
10. Planters of Massachusetts Bay, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 65, 87-90; Winthrop's Fleet, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 102.
11. Boston Notions, N. Dearborn, 1848, pp. 13-6, 379; History of South Boston, formerly Dorchester Neck . . . , T. C. Simonds, 1857, pp. 12, 15, 19, 27.
12. Collections of Massachusetts Historical Society, Ser. 5, V-VII, being Diary of Samuel Sewall, I, 124, 152, 154, 339-40; II, 239.
13. History of Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 518; Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, II, 867; Blake Family, S. Blake, 1857, p. 26; Descendants of George Holmes, J. Holmes, 1908, p. 4; Savage, IV, 101; History of Watertown, H. Bond, 1860, p. 433.
14. Narratives of Early American History, VII, 130; XVII, 189; History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, O. A. Roberts, 1895, I, 87-8, 172, 222; Wonder-Working Providence . . . , E. Johnson, 1867, p. 191; Dearborn's Boston Notions, pp. 104, 412; History of Fairfield, Conn., E. H. Schenck, 1889, I, 307-9; Malden Historical Society Register, 1920, VI, 18; . . . History of Boston Fire Department, A. W. Brayley, 1889, p. 11.
15. Records of the First Church of Dorchester, 1636-1734, G. H. Ellis, 1891, pp. 7, 21, 35, 57-8, 114, 120, 131, 149, 153, 158, 160, 168, 171-6, 178, 180-1, 190-1.
16. History of Dorchester, Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society, 1859, pp. 33, 41-2, 83, 102-3, 176, 284, 422-4, 433-4; Original Narratives of Early American History, VII, being Winthrop's Journal, I, 75.
17. B. R. C. R., bearing on service of ROGER<sup>1</sup>, IV, see index.
18. *Ibid.*, IV, 5, 37, 87, 94, 110, 112, 126, 134-5, 151, 169, 193, 203, 210, 220, 305; XXI, 20.
19. Savage, II, 43, 308.
20. B. R. C. R., IV, 140, 152, 157, 173, 191, 202, 213, 222, 229, 240, 262, 264, 272.
21. *Ibid.*, IV, 136, 155, 161, 169, 210, 213, 218, 220, 223, 227, 233-5, 257, 270.
22. Records of Massachusetts Bay, V, 394; Massachusetts Archives, LXX, 90, 635.
23. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXIX, 31, 80; XXX, 971, 1166; XXXI, 106; Harvard Graduates, J. L. Sibley, 1873, I, 555.
24. . . . The Clapp Memorial . . . , E. Clapp, 1876, pp. 9-11, 16, 18, 212, 256-9, 271-6, 321-2.
25. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 5, VI, 239.
26. Suffolk Deeds (pub.), XIII, 149-50.
27. Research by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Mass. Archives, XXXVII, 59a.
28. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 113-4, 120, 124; IV, pt. 2, 285-8, 326-7; V, 418; Savage, IV, 189.
29. New England Register, V, 389, 397-8.
30. B. R. C. R., IV, 165-8, 181, 203, 244, 260, 319.
31. Genealogy of the family of George Weekes . . . , R. D. Weeks, 1885, pp. 32-6; History of Hingham, II, 38-9; Suffolk Deeds (pub.), XII, 130.
32. . . . Clapp Memorial . . . , 321-8, 379-82, 386-7, 389-90.
33. Stetson Kindred of America, N. M. Stetson, Book V, 91-3; VI, 30-3, 77.
34. Records of Massachusetts Bay, IV, pt. 1, 404, 424; pt. 2, 88-9, 115-6, 541; V, 204, 222, 418.
35. History of the Old South Church (3rd Church) of Boston, H. A. Hill, 1890, I, 4-5, 23, 27, 62-7; Annals of the American Pulpit, W. B. Sprague, 1859, I, 96; History of the First Church in Boston, A. B. & G. E. Ellis, 1881, pp. 114-9.
36. Schenck's Fairfield, I, 307-9.
37. Roberts' Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, I, 88, 157-8, 161, 172, 178.
38. The Mavericks of Devonshire and Massachusetts, B. F. Cresswell, 1929, pp. 30-46.
39. History of Canton, D. T. V. Huntoon, 1893, 1-15, 36, 594, map facing 592.
40. History of Westfield, Rev. J. H. Lockwood, 1922, 88-90.
41. Vital Records of Roxbury, II, 385, 646; ". . . Descendants of WILLIAM SUMNER," W. S. Appleton, 1879, p. 6.
42. Dexter Genealogy, O. P. Dexter, arranged by H. L. Mills, 1904, pp. 36-7, 61-5.
43. Savage, II, 453; IV, 34, 585; History of Dorchester, p. 182; B. R. C. R., IV, 305.
44. History of Milton, A. K. Teele, 1887, pp. 642, 646.
45. *Ibid.*, pp. 8-10; History of Norfolk County, D. H. Hurd, 1884, pp. 389, 731, 735, 919-20; History of Dorchester, pp. 26, 201, 581.
46. Topographical and Historical Description of Boston, N. B. Shurtleff, 1890, pp. 193-5, 476-92.
47. Memorials of the Dead in Boston . . . King's Chapel Burial Ground, T. Bridgman, 1853, pp. 64, 239-47.
48. *Ibid.*, pp. frontispiece, 36, 105, 160, 168, 293.
49. Savage, I, 388; III, 452-3; . . . Clapp Memorial . . . , pp. 94-6.
50. History of the Colony of New Haven . . . , E. R. Lambert, 1838, p. 194.

51. The islands of Boston Harbor, E. R. Snow, 1935, pp. 109-16; Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880, I, 222-3, 285-6, 536; III, ix.
52. History and Antiquities of Boston, S. G. Drake, 1856, pp. 64, 167-9, 172, 184, 192-3, 269, 285, 320-6, 346-7, 381, 396, 483; A General History of New England, Rev. Wm. Hubbard, 1848, pp. 146, 149-53.
53. Records of Massachusetts Bay, II, 36, 57, 63-4, 107-9, 164; IV, pt. 2, 276-8.
54. Savage, II, 13-4, 121; Drake's History and Antiquities, pp. 167-9, 184, 269, 285.
55. The Crooked and Narrow Streets of Boston, A. H. Thwing, 1920, pp. 123, 150, map facing 152, 179-80.
56. Snow's Islands of Boston Harbor, pp. 112, 185-6, 190, 346; Shurtleff's Typographical and Historical Description . . . , pp. 164, 443, 449; Drake's History and Antiquities . . . , pp. 48, 116-7, 164.
57. Ibid., pp. 183, 570; Snow's Islands, pp. 17, 133-4, 183, 201, 325-41; New England Register, XV, 201; Pirates of the New England Coast, G. F. Dow & J. H. Edmonds, 1923, pp. 310-27; History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, p. 287.
58. John Winthrop's Journal, I, 137, 141, 145, 147, 149-50, 174, 180-2; History of Salem, S. Perley, 1924, I, 259-63.
59. History of Charlestown, R. Frothingham, 1845, pp. 19-24, 39-48.
60. Perley's Salem, I, 67-9, 83-4; Banks' Planters, p. 58; History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, pp. 30-8; Genealogy of the Balch Families . . . , G. B. Balch, 1897, pp. 1-3; THOMAS GARDNER, Planter . . . , F. A. Gardner, 1907, 2-8; . . . Conant Family . . . , F. O. Conant, 1887, pp. 99-104; Winsor's Memorial History of Boston, I, 112-6; Life and Letters of John Winthrop, R. C. Winthrop, 1867, II, 23-5.
61. Winsor's Boston, I, 222; Winthrop's Journal, I, 80; Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 105, 108.
62. The Lambert Family of Salem, H. W. Belknap, 1918, pp. 9-13.
63. Sentry, or Beacon Hill, the Beacon and the Monument, W. W. Wheildon, 1877, pp. 31-3.
64. Notes and Additions to History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1876, pt. 1, 32.
65. History of Canton, D. T. V. Huntoon, 1893, pp. 4, 594-5, map facing 592, 632-3; History of Dorchester, pp. 67, 145, 182, 223, 233.
66. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXI, 302; XXIX, 7-8, 80, 220, 226.
67. History of New England, J. G. Palfray, 1885, III, 513-5, 524, 625-30.
68. Research by Miss Moffatt, Suffolk County Probates No. 4868, XXIV, 516; No. 9941, XLIX, 75; Suffolk County Deeds, LXXXV, 213; CXVIII, 5; Clapp Memorial, pp. 11, 16, 18, 41.
69. Register of the Pennsylvania Society of Colonial Dames, 1898, p. 129.
70. Indian Names . . . , J. H. Trumbull, 1881, p. 39.
71. History of Dorchester, pp. 360, 363-4; Clapp Memorial, pp. 252-3, 256-9, 271-7.
72. XVII Century Painting in New England . . . Louisa Dresser, 1935, pp. 133-40.

# CLARK



- 25 Haverhill
- Δ Killingly, Conn.
- ↓ Edgartown
- Dedham
- Hamilton
- Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♣ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- † Malta, O.
- 49 Mauston, Wis.
- † Marietta, O.



## CLARK, (Clarke)

EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK,\* of Haverhill, born<sup>1,8</sup> probably about 1622, was our earliest known ancestor of this surname to settle in America, though it is apparent that he had relatives here when he came (*vide infra*). Many of the first settlers of Haverhill had earlier been resident at Ipswich which may have been true of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> since some of his relatives lived at that place and he had various business interests and dealings there. He married, first, before<sup>40</sup> 1653 (it is said August 20, 1648) DORCAS<sup>1</sup> BOSWORTH [see Bosworth, p. 105] who died February 13, 1681, at Haverhill;<sup>40</sup> married secondly,<sup>40</sup> there on November 1, 1682, Mary (Johnson) Davis, the sister<sup>26</sup> of Thomas Johnson<sup>1</sup> and the widow<sup>26</sup> of Ephraim<sup>2</sup> Davis (James<sup>1</sup>) who had died there September 28, 1679.

The Indian deed to the tract of land which became Haverhill was dated November 16, 1642. When the town was incorporated in 1645, it included about thirty-two proprietors. The earliest record<sup>5</sup> of the presence of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK was in 1646. The original plan of the town outlined that no man should have over twenty acres in his house lot, and only those whose estate amounted to £200 might have that much, while those of lesser means received grants in proportion. In the subsequent divisions each proprietor received shares relative in size to his original lot which was known as his "accommodation grant." These tracts were quite widely and inconveniently scattered, so by 1650 or earlier the owners began to exchange<sup>4</sup> or sell their outlying tracts in order to have their holdings more nearly contiguous. In 1645 it was voted "that every inhabitant that will, may make upon the common for every acre of house lot which he hath, one hundred of pipe staves and no more; provided that he fall no timber for the same within two full miles of the house lots. . . ."<sup>4</sup> This was a valued privilege, for the settlers depended upon barrels and similar containers for the preservation of meats and most of their other supplies. In the early days the colonists, living in the vicinity of rivers or fishing places, copied the Indians' habit of burying several small fish in each hill of corn as fertilizer and evidently found that dogs were troublesome for one town on May 11 (planting time?) recorded:

"It is ordered that all doggs for the space of three weeks after the publishing hereof, shall have one legg tyed up, and if such a dogg shall break loose, and be found doing any harm, the owner of the dogg shall pay damages; if a man refuse to tye up his dogg's legg, and hee be found scraping up fish in a corn field, the owner thereof shall pay twelve pence damages, beside whatever damage the dogg doth. But if any fish their house lotts and receive damage by doggs, the owners of those house lotts shall bear the damage themselves,"

\*An Edward Clark, who is sometimes suggested<sup>1</sup> as the father of our EDWARD<sup>1</sup>, died in Portsmouth, New Hampshire, in 1675. He could not have been father to our EDWARD<sup>1</sup> for the settlement of the estate of Edward of Portsmouth shows that his children were all minors at the time.<sup>2</sup>

while another Essex county town as of May 19 recorded:

“It is agreed that all dogs shall be clog’d and sidelined in ye day, and tied up in ye night, and if any dogs shall be found trespassing in the lots, they that shall find them shall showt them.”

In 1650 EDWARD<sup>1</sup> owned a house lot and was taxed on a valuation basis of £40. In the winter of 1650-1 he rented a pair of oxen from John Newman, engaging them also for the next winter.<sup>6</sup> As early as 1650 the settlers began to push west and north. Their second division of plow land was laid out June 7, 1652, and EDWARD<sup>1</sup> then received four acres.<sup>5</sup> A second division of meadow was surveyed the next year, and following that an extensive common including all the land in the Hawkes Meadow district and thence north and east; and, beyond that common, a third division of upland (in a proportion of twelve acres to each acre of original “accommodation”) including territory now a part of Methuen, as well as much which is now in New Hampshire on the Spicket River and at Salem in that state.<sup>4</sup> In the fourth division of upland, made in October, 1659, extending even farther north and west, EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK received lot number 49 which was north of Salem Depot (see map, p. 209). In the last, or fifth division of common land, (which included all of the present North Salem, New Hampshire) made December 30, 1721, and drawn in the names of the original proprietors rather than their heirs, the estate of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> received<sup>19</sup> lot number 39. Much the larger portion of what was once Haverhill territory is now a part of New Hampshire.

There was no church bell in Haverhill in those days and one of the earliest records mentions the beating of a drum for the purpose of calling the people to meeting. During 1652 they tried the plan of having a man “blow his horn in the most convenient place every Lord’s day about half an hour before meeting begins, and also on lecture days; for which he is to have one peck of corn of every family for the year ensuing.” For some reason they wearied of the horn, so during 1653 EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK was engaged (probably for a like remuneration) to beat the drum on the “Lord’s days and lecture days.”<sup>5</sup> Reference is also found<sup>5</sup> to the “second beating of the drum,” probably just before service began.

In March, 1654, EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK deposed<sup>6</sup> that when he was in Ipswich the previous December “he heard Richard Shatswell sell [Isaac] Cousens one-half of a horse colt. . . .” Nothing is said of the disposal of the other half. Between the years 1659 and 1674 EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK was a principal in a number of law suits,<sup>7,9</sup> sometimes as plaintiff and in others as defendant, and repeatedly with a certain John Godfrey whose usual occupation seems to have been engaging in law suits against every one with whom he had business dealings, friend and foe alike.<sup>9</sup> Somewhat of discrepancy as to the exact age of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK appears from different depositions<sup>8</sup> of his own. For, in September, 1662, he called himself “about forty years”; in September, 1664, he called himself “about forty-three years”; but in June, 1674, he is recorded as calling himself “about forty-five years.”

He served<sup>9</sup> on a trial jury at Hampton in October, 1663, as constable of Haverhill in 1663 and 1664, as deputy constable in 1669 and 1671, as attorney for John Griffin in March, 1673, and in the same capacity for Philip Rowell in April, 1674, in which case a “debt for a horse . . . was to be paid in a cow and two sheep.”<sup>9</sup> EDWARD<sup>1</sup> took the oath of allegiance as of Haverhill on November 8, 1677, and was a carpenter by trade.

Facts showing relationships,<sup>3</sup> some of them not yet carried to their ultimate conclusions, justify a digression here to summarize these hints or clues as a basis for further investigation: Theophilus<sup>1</sup> Shatswell (Satchell) of Haverhill had married Susanna<sup>1</sup> Bosworth, sister<sup>12</sup> to the wife of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK. The will<sup>10</sup> of Theophilus<sup>1</sup>, dated June 20, 1663, was witnessed by EDWARD<sup>1</sup> and was also proved by him in Hampton court on October 13, 1663. The Shatswell family consisted of the wife, Susanna, and three daughters, namely, (1) Mary<sup>2</sup> Shatswell who married William Deale, whose estate was administered<sup>11</sup> in October, 1665, by EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK; (2) Lydia<sup>2</sup> Shatswell who married John Griffin for whom EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK acted as attorney<sup>12</sup> in 1673; and (3) Hannah<sup>2</sup> Shatswell who was joint executor of the father's estate with her mother, Susanna. This Hannah<sup>2</sup> Shatswell married<sup>10,13</sup> Richard Mercer and died at the birth of her only child, Abial Mercer, and her mother, Susanna (Bosworth) Shatswell also died before the estate of the deceased father and husband, Theophilus<sup>1</sup> Shatswell, was completely settled. Richard Mercer, the widower of Hannah, died about the same time leaving the orphan child no available assets and many debts. EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK was made administrator<sup>13</sup> of the estate of Richard Mercer and apparently had the care of his child, Abial, for a time; for he petitioned the court at Boston on May 29, 1671, recounting the above facts and asking "advice and direction as there is nothing to care for the child with." The will of Theophilus<sup>1</sup> Shatswell had definitely set off portions of his estate only to his two older daughters; the early death of the daughter, Hannah, left her indeterminate share so that, without court action, EDWARD<sup>1</sup> could not use it for the child's support. Following the guardianship of EDWARD<sup>1</sup>, Hanniel<sup>1</sup> Bosworth, (p. 105) of Ipswich, great uncle of the orphan, was made his guardian and the administrator of his portion but on April 10, 1683, Bosworth petitioned the court to be relieved of this responsibility.<sup>10</sup> In addition to the bequests to his own children, this will of Theophilus<sup>1</sup> made a bequest to his wife's nephew (our ancestor, the son of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK) in the following words:

"Also I giue HANILL CLARK my whole pportion of hauks meadow & y<sup>e</sup> 3d deuishon of vpland belonging To Sauages Land Layed out beyond haukes meadow . . . & tenn pounds  
al If he stay w<sup>th</sup> me or mine untill he be one & twenty years of age: || or else null all ||  
. . ."<sup>10</sup>

Added proof of the relationship between the two families is found in the deposition<sup>14</sup> of Joseph<sup>2</sup> Clark, son of EDWARD<sup>1</sup>, on April 11, 1670, relative to his "Aunt Sachell." Another combination of circumstances which should reveal definite relationships<sup>3</sup> is found in the trial in December, 1681, and the re-trial<sup>15</sup> in March, 1682, of a case between a Josiah Clark of Ipswich and Joseph Peasley of Haverhill because the latter failed, in the summer of 1681, to deliver one thousand white oak hogshead staves at a landing place in Haverhill. In this connection depositions by Robert Clement, sr. and by Josiah Clark himself, tell of going down to Josiah's "uncle's" and of leaving a message for Peasley; later the "uncle" followed them to the landing place to deliver an answer from Peasley.<sup>15</sup> An added deposition<sup>15</sup> by EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK leaves no reasonable doubt that he was that "uncle" for it showed intimate knowledge of the whole matter, and mentioned that he "reckoned with Peasley" and referred to Josiah as "cousin" which term at that time more frequently than not implied the relationship of a nephew or niece.<sup>16</sup> Furthermore,

the strong probability is that Josiah Clark, cooper, was the son of Thomas Clark, sr. of Ipswich<sup>3</sup> and if this surmise be true, the latter would have been a brother of our EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK.

One of the odd restrictions of that time is portrayed in the case of John Littlehall who, in October, 1672, was brought before the court for "living alone & ordered at farthest, within the time of six weeks next after the date hereof [to] remove himself from the said place and solitary life and settle himself in some orderly family in the said town and bee subject to the orderly rules of family goverment . . ." or move out of town.<sup>5</sup>

In 1685 EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK and about twenty other men were cited for fencing in with their own land, certain portions of the "Town's ways and common lands."<sup>5</sup> EDWARD<sup>1</sup> has, erroneously, been said<sup>18</sup> to have died in 1695, for when he was eighty-nine or ninety years old he made a deed, December 19, 1710, which he acknowledged three days later, whereby he gave<sup>17</sup> "for love and fatherly affection to son HANEL CLARKE of Haverhill for his care, dutiful and childlike affection in providing and maintaining me for this several years past, and in my old age in trust of him for future care, all lands and rights not before disposed of." The lack of reference to his wife suggests that she had died previously.

The children of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> and DORCAS (BOSWORTH) CLARK, all born, doubtless, in Haverhill, were<sup>1,40</sup>

- I. HANNIEL<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- II. Matthew<sup>2</sup>, died before June 6, 1715; m. at Haverhill April 2, 1679, Mary (Dow) Wilford.<sup>1,5,21</sup> She was born April 26, 1644, the daughter of Thomas<sup>1</sup> and Phebe (—) Dow of Haverhill, and was the widow of Gilbert<sup>1</sup> Wilford whom she had married by or before 1667, and who died before July 28, 1676.
- III. Joseph<sup>2</sup>, b. Mar. 6, 1653-4; d. in or before 1705; m.<sup>26</sup> Aug. 18, 1685, his step-sister, Mary<sup>2</sup> Davis (Ephraim<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>). Jotham<sup>2</sup> Hendricks (Daniel<sup>1</sup>) who had m. Hannah (Foster) Austin, assisted in settling the estate of Joseph<sup>2</sup> Clark.

HANNIEL<sup>2</sup> CLARK (*Edward*<sup>1</sup>) was born, doubtless at Haverhill, about 1650; for he deposed<sup>22</sup> February 2, 1673, that he was then about twenty-three years old. He died, doubtless at Haverhill, in or before 1718, for that year administration on his estate was granted to his widow and eldest son. HANNIEL<sup>2</sup> married<sup>18</sup> there on August 20, 1678, MARY<sup>2</sup> GUTTERSON (see Gutterson, p. 345). As has been stated (p. 179) he lived in his youth with his uncle and aunt Theophilus<sup>1</sup> and Susanna (Bosworth) Shatswell who had no son. He was named as a beneficiary in the will of that uncle.<sup>10,12</sup> It is evident that he complied with the terms of that bequest and remained with the family until he became of age for he and his wife MARY, of Haverhill deeded land in that town December 24, 1694, to Capt. Simon Wainright, stating that part had come to him by the will of Theophilus<sup>1</sup> Shatswell. He is quoted as having also said<sup>23</sup> that part of this tract he had bought from his father on December 30, 1663; but the date seems open to question for he would then have been but a youth. On November 28, 1677, "HAMEL" [HANNIEL<sup>2</sup>] CLARK and his brother Joseph<sup>2</sup> took the oath of allegiance.<sup>20</sup> Many scattered items bear evidence of the various activities of HANNIEL<sup>2</sup> CLARK. In 1673, Robert Hazeltine brought suit for damages against John Griffin because<sup>22</sup> that man's swine had gotten into his cornfield and at that time HANNIEL<sup>2</sup> CLARK (who was cousin to the

defendant's wife) deposed that he had ringed Griffin's hogs according to the law.<sup>24</sup> The following excerpts suggest that HANNIEL<sup>2</sup> raised considerable live stock:

"HAN. CLARKE's colt lay dead upon the plain. . . ."

". . . HANIEL CLARKE told him that he sold Benjamin Singletery two mares, and also that he had two mares killed in one year, a gray mare and her colt. . . ."

". . . an action, Jan. 25, 1680, HANIEL CLARKE v. Benjamin Singletery, for taking a young mare, in 1679, from EDW. CLARKE's yard, which mare came up with HANIEL's jades. Judgement for plaintiff . . ."

This controversy was re-heard in a resultant action in March, 1681, between Isaac Morrill of Salisbury and Mathew<sup>2</sup> Clark (EDWARD<sup>1</sup>) with Joseph<sup>2</sup> (EDWARD<sup>1</sup>) as a witness. In 1681, HANNIEL<sup>2</sup>, with others was employed for a time, by Daniel Ela, the work being in part the fanning of wheat. In 1702 the town of Haverhill owed HANNIEL<sup>2</sup>, or his son of the same name, twelve shillings, for a service rendered the previous year.<sup>25</sup> On March 15, 1716-7, HANNIEL<sup>2</sup> deeded<sup>35</sup> to his son Edward<sup>3</sup>, clothier of Haverhill, some land that formerly belonged to EDWARD<sup>1</sup>.

After the death of HANNIEL<sup>2</sup>, administration<sup>36</sup> of his estate was granted on March 17, 1718 to his widow MARY and his eldest son, HANNIEL<sup>3</sup>. On August 25, 1726, there was a deed made by the heirs of HANNIEL<sup>2</sup> disposing of land in Haverhill which was originally laid out "to ye accommodation of our grandfather EDWARD CLARKE deceased." This deed, signed by HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> CLARK, yeoman, and his wife, by Joshua Emerson and his wife Mary, by William<sup>3</sup>, Edward<sup>3</sup> and Timothy<sup>3</sup> Clark, yeomen, Sarah<sup>3</sup> Clark, "taylor," Josiah<sup>3</sup> Clark, clothier, John<sup>3</sup> Clark, bricklayer, and Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> Clark, spinstress, conveyed the land to their brother, Samuel<sup>3</sup> Clark, carpenter, of Haverhill.<sup>36</sup> Many other transfers of land inherited from HANNIEL<sup>2</sup> and from his father are on record. These children, as was the way of their time, scattered widely. HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> went to Killingly, Connecticut, William<sup>3</sup> to South Berwick, Maine, Edward<sup>3</sup> and Samuel<sup>3</sup> to Methuen, John<sup>3</sup> and, perhaps, Josiah<sup>3</sup> to Portsmouth, New Hampshire. Their widowed mother, MARY, died after February 5, 1724, for on that date requests were made for more land by various citizens of Haverhill, and among these "HANIEL & Edward Samel & Timothy CLARK requests six acers where Their mother lives."<sup>25</sup> She probably died, however,<sup>36</sup> prior to the deed of August, 1726, by the heirs.

The children of HANNIEL<sup>2</sup> and MARY (GUTTERSON) CLARK, all born in Haverhill, were<sup>1,40</sup>

- i. Mary<sup>3</sup>, b. July 15, 1680; d. after 1726; m. July 2, 1706, Joshua<sup>2</sup> Emerson (Michael<sup>1</sup>).<sup>27</sup>
- ii. HANNIEL<sup>3</sup>, see following.
- iii. Sarah<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 3, 1686; recorded as having died Oct. 13, 1689, but if so a later and unrecorded child bore the same name, for on Aug. 25, 1726, a Sarah<sup>3</sup> designated as "taylor," signed a deed with the other heirs, and in April, 1736, received land<sup>35</sup> from her brother Edward<sup>3</sup>.
- iv. William<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 25, 1689; d. after Aug., 1726, when he signed with the other heirs; said to have m. Joyce (—) and had William<sup>4</sup> bap. July 16, 1724, at South Berwick, Maine.
- v. Josiah<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 8, 1691; d. after Aug., 1726; perhaps it was he who died at Portsmouth, New Hampshire, before June 27, 1734, leaving a wife,<sup>37</sup> Mary, and minor children, Ann<sup>4</sup> and Sarah<sup>4</sup>. A John Clark, mason, of Portsmouth (presumably John<sup>3</sup> below) became surety for the widow Mary as administratrix.
- vi. Edward<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 29, 1694; d. before Jan. 6, 1746, when administration on his estate was granted to his son Edward<sup>4</sup>. He m.<sup>3,25</sup> (int. Feb. 12, 1714) Sarah Stevens and removed by Oct., 1735, to Methuen.

- vii. \*John<sup>s</sup>, b. Apr. 23, 1696. In a deed, dated Aug. 25, 1726, he was called bricklayer and in another of Jan., 1731-2, he was called bricklayer of Portsmouth, New Hampshire.<sup>35,36</sup> It is probable that he may have been the John Clarke called "mason" of Portsmouth whose estate<sup>37</sup> was administered by his widow, Agnes, Jan. 31, 1744-5, and completed by his son Josiah<sup>4</sup> in 1749.
- viii. Samuel<sup>s</sup>, b. July 10, 1699; d. May 2, 1752, at Methuen; m. at Haverhill, Aug. 14, 1721, his cousin Abigail<sup>s</sup> Gutterson (John<sup>s</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>t</sup>).
- ix. Timothy<sup>s</sup>, b. Apr. 7, 1701; d. at Haverhill Feb. 7, 1735-6; m. there before 1724, Gift Stevens.
- x. Elizabeth<sup>s</sup>, (called Mary by the church record) b. May 29, 1705; d. unmarried, Feb. 29, 1727-8, in her twenty-fourth year. She was called "spinstress" in a deed<sup>36</sup> dated Aug. 25, 1726.

HANNIEL<sup>s</sup> CLARK (*Hanniel<sup>s</sup>, Edward<sup>t</sup>*) was born<sup>40</sup> at Haverhill August 28, 1682, and died in Windham County, Connecticut after April 17, 1753, when he made his will, but before January 5, 1754, when the said will and other records of the Probate Court of Pomfret were "consumed by fire."<sup>33</sup> Though HANNIEL<sup>s</sup> had two wives no direct record has been found of either ceremony, but documentary evidence proves various facts. His first wife whom he married before<sup>41</sup> February 3, 1710-1, was HANNAH<sup>s</sup> SHEPARD daughter of JOHN<sup>s</sup> SHEPARD of Rowley by his first wife REBECCA (PUTNAM), widow Fuller (see Shepard, p. 543). This is proved by a deed of the above date whereby JOHN<sup>s</sup> SHEPARD transferred to his four living children by that first wife, a tract of Salem land left for them by their maternal grandfather Capt. JOHN<sup>s</sup> PUTNAM "late of Salem." The document specifically mentioned "HANNAH CLARK who was formerly HANNAH SHEPARD." On that same date "\*\*HANNIEL CLARK and HANNAH my wife" with her three brothers (see Shepard, p. 542) disposed of this Salem land<sup>41</sup> or at least a part<sup>38</sup> of it, to James Rose of Salem. Admittedly the death date of HANNAH (SHEPARD) first wife of HANNIEL<sup>s</sup> has not been found, but his second marriage to Tabitha (perhaps Hartshorn<sup>†</sup>) occurred before May 25, 1722, when she joined him in a deed transferring land in Bradford "adjoining the parsonage," to Richard Hazeltine and Edmund Chadwick of that town. In 1715, 1719 and in March, 1722, children of HANNIEL<sup>s</sup> were baptized in Haverhill in his name alone, which argues that their mother or mothers lacked church membership. Considering the deed proving that he had married Tabitha before May, 1722, it seems reasonable to believe that she was the mother of the child baptized in March, 1722 — and perhaps of the earlier one baptized in 1719 also.

The occupation of HANNIEL<sup>s</sup> is variously given as "cooper" in 1713, (unless, as is unlikely, that pertained to his father); as "husbandman" in 1719; as "yeoman" in 1726 and as "weaver" in 1730. As has been stated<sup>36</sup> he assisted his mother in the administration of his father's estate in 1718; he and his brothers Edward<sup>s</sup>,

\*This man's birth date and parentage have, by some writers, been given to a Jonathan Clark. This must be an error, for John<sup>s</sup> was definitely of Portsmouth in 1731-2, while Jonathan was, as definitely, of Amesbury at that time for five children were recorded to him there between 1724 and 1737. This Jonathan Clark m. first<sup>39</sup> at Haverhill, Feb. 23, 1715-6, Martha<sup>s</sup> Ela (Israel<sup>s</sup>, Daniel<sup>t</sup>); m. second, there Dec. 4, 1718, Priscilla Whittaker, probably daughter of William<sup>s</sup> (Abraham<sup>t</sup>); m. third at Amesbury, Feb. 10, 1741-2; Elizabeth Heath, (probably widow of Nehemiah). The compiler believes this Jonathan Clark was an unrecorded son of Joseph<sup>s</sup> (EDWARD<sup>t</sup>) born after the death of an earlier Jonathan<sup>s</sup>, in 1690, and before the birth of their son Ephraim<sup>s</sup> in 1694. This belief is strengthened by the fact that Hannah<sup>s</sup> Clark (Joseph<sup>s</sup>, EDWARD<sup>t</sup>) m. Samuel<sup>s</sup> Ela (Israel<sup>s</sup>, Daniel<sup>t</sup>) and this Jonathan, presumably her brother, m. first Martha<sup>s</sup> Ela (Israel<sup>s</sup>, Daniel<sup>t</sup>), while Ephraim<sup>s</sup> Clark (Joseph<sup>s</sup>, EDWARD<sup>t</sup>) m. Ruth Whittaker, doubtless a daughter of William<sup>s</sup> (Abraham<sup>t</sup>) and a sister<sup>39</sup> of Priscilla Whittaker, second wife of the said Jonathan Clarke.

\*\*As published<sup>33</sup> his name is rendered as "DANIEL CLARK" but the document itself gives the proper spelling of "HANNIEL."

†She may have been<sup>29</sup> Tabitha<sup>s</sup> Hartshorn (Joseph<sup>s</sup>, Thomas<sup>t</sup>) born in Reading Sept. 27, 1690, or possibly Tabitha<sup>s</sup> (John<sup>s</sup>, Thomas<sup>t</sup>) born at Haverhill Oct. 26, 1685.

Samuel<sup>3</sup> and Timothy<sup>3</sup> on February 5, 1724, petitioned<sup>25</sup> for six acres of land "where Their mother lives," but before November 19, 1724, HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> (printed<sup>28</sup> as Daniel) had removed, as did several other Haverhill families, for on the last named date<sup>28</sup> he became a member of the church at Killingly, Connecticut by letter from the Haverhill Church. He seemingly must have returned briefly to Haverhill in August 1726, likely because of his mother's death, for at that time the heirs of HANNIEL<sup>2</sup>, without inclusion of the name of widow MARY, disposed of land once owned by EDWARD<sup>1</sup>, by a deed signed by the other nine brothers and sisters, to Samuel<sup>3</sup> Clark of Haverhill<sup>36</sup> (vide supra).

In 1726 and 1731 HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> had children baptized at Killingly, in March, 1728, his son Zebediah<sup>4</sup> had entered into full communion<sup>28</sup> there and in June, 1728, his wife Tabitha did so, while in 1733 HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> was made a deacon.<sup>46</sup> At the earliest town meeting of which record is extant he was appointed one of the surveyors of the town,<sup>32</sup> but no further evidence is seen of public activity on his part.

HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> made his will<sup>43</sup> on April 17, 1753, naming his wife Tabitha and youngest son Josiah<sup>4</sup> as his executors. It was proved before<sup>33</sup> January 5, 1754, when the burning of the home of Penuel<sup>4</sup> Bowen\* of Woodstock, clerk of the Probate Court for the District of Pomfret destroyed all of that Court's records. By or before 1759 when the settlement of the estate of HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> was still pending, his son and executor Josiah<sup>4</sup> Clark died intestate. The widow of Josiah<sup>4</sup> assisted by her brother-in-law our HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> CUTLER appeared before the Assembly of Connecticut in May, 1760, and asked that a certified<sup>33</sup> copy of the will of HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> should be accepted in place of the original, to the end of simplifying the settlement of the estate. As will be shown, a justice of the place certified that he had made the copy and the Court accepted it and ordered it filed *at Pomfret*.\*\*

Since this document has proved so elusive, it seems advisable to include it here, in full:<sup>43</sup>

"In the name of God Amen this seaventieth [seventeenth] day of April anno 1753. I HANNIEL CLARK of Killingly in the county of Windham and Coleney of Conecticut in new England being advans in yars But of parfet mind and memory, thanks be to God therefor caling to mind the mortalety of my body and knoing that it is apointed for a man onc to Die Do make this and ordain this my last will and Testement that is to say primery and first of all I giue and Recommend my sole into the hands of god that gaue it and my Body I receomend to the earth to Be Bured in a Dessant and Christan manner at the decresen [discretion] of my Exceketers, heran after mencheden nothing douing [doubting] But at the Generl Reserecon I shall Rceue the same by the Amighty pour of god. and as touching such worly Estat wherewith it hath plesd god to Bessto [bestow] and and Bless me in this Life I giue Devise and Dispose of in the fwling manner. In Primeyes I giue and Bequeav to Tabatha Clark my Dearly beloued wife the one half of my Dweling house that part that she shall chuse and preverleg of the Barn so much as to cap [keep] a cowe and a horse and the one third part of the improvement of my Land or the Incom theirof so long as she Remains my widdo But if she shuld se case [cause] to

\*The date of the fire is also given<sup>44</sup> as January 5, 1755. Penuel<sup>4</sup> Bowen (Isaac<sup>6</sup>, Henry<sup>8</sup>, Griffith<sup>1</sup>) was appointed Clerk of Probate in 1752.

\*\*Repeated inquiries during the last twenty years made to the Probate Judges of the Districts of both Windham and Pomfret, as well as to the offices of the Secretary of State and the State Library, have brought no information as to this will of HANNIEL<sup>3</sup>. But the problem put into the hands of Mr. H. W. Brainard brought successful results. Brought also the explanation that the copy of the original will, "attested, was presented to the Legislature, was endorsed by Wylls the Secretary of the Colony and filed among the legislative papers [in spite of the fact that the legislature had ordered it filed at Pomfret<sup>33</sup>] and had lain in the attic of the State House for many years — since 1876 at least. A few years ago they began indexing this vast mass of papers at the State Library. Finding this will, they thought it should be filed among the Probate papers and did so."<sup>43</sup>

marry again the Incom to Return to my son Josiah Clark and also I giue and Bequeae unto my wife Tabatha Clark the one half of My moveable Estat within Dors During hur natrel Life also a cow and a horse and then to return to my son Josiah Clark. I giue to my well Belved sun Josiah Clark my homestid with the house and Barn and the Improvement that remains wich I haue not giuen to my wife and to his heirs foreuer also peas or pasel of land which Lise By the Rever joining upon John Smiths Land never the Less and prouided the Said Josiah Clark shall pay unto his Brothers and sisters excepting the funerl Charges an Docttors paid the Remainder of one hundred and fifty pounds good Bills of publick creadit in the old tenner shall be paid to my three suns Zebadiah Clark, Nathanael Clark and Nehemiah Clark to them or to their Hairs the sum to be equelly Devied to them shall Be paid By Josiah Clark or his Hares, I also giue to my suns Zebadiah Clark, Nathanael Clark and Nehemiah Clark Rite or pasel of land liing on the Norest of my farm containing ten Eakers and also I giue them a trak of land that I had of John (?) Leavens which Lise up aganst Seth Greens Containing thirty one Eakers the whole to Be Devided Ekwelly Between thes suns, said Zebadiah, Nathanael & Nehemiah. also I giue to my well belued Daughter SUSANAH CUTLER twenty seauen pounds of good Bills of publick creadt in the old tenner to be paid by my sun Josiah Clark. I also giue to my well blued Daughter Hannah Whitmore the sum of Twenty three pounds of good Bills of publick creadit in the old tenner to be paid unto hur by my sun Josiah Clark I giue and bequeae to my three suns and tow Dafters as abouesaid ten Pounds to each to be paid within one year after my Deces to yarly ten pounds to each yearly & the hole sume be paid that is aboue willed farther-more my sole will is thet my well beloued wife and my sun Josiah Clark shuld be my Excetrs to this my Last will and Testiment The True entent of thes primeses that the tow Daughters shuld pay their Ekeal proporion with their three brothers according to what they haue willed them theirby that I do confair this to Be my Last will and testament and no other Sined Sealed and published and pronounst in the presents of us<sup>43</sup>

Henry Green  
Benoni Cutler  
John Leavens

his  
HANNIEL × CLARK ○  
mark

The document as filed among the Probates in the State Library at Hartford is followed by (1) a deposition as to its accuracy by Joseph Leavens, Justice of the Peace who had made the said copy; (2) a deposition dated April 28, 1760, by Timothy Sabin, Judge of Probate at Pomfret as to the proving and recording there of the original will of HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> CLARK and its destruction by fire.

It is deplorable that we lack both the death of HANNAH (SHEPARD) CLARK and the exact birth date of her undoubted daughter SUSANNA<sup>4</sup> CLARK but the presence of HANNAH as wife of HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> on February 3, 1710-1 (vide supra) and the recorded death date of SUSANNA<sup>4</sup> as April 8, 1774, in her sixty-second year, i.e. born about 1712, with the fact that SUSANNA<sup>4</sup> named two daughters "Hannah" is good *evidence*. We regret our inability to submit *proof*. Indeed our opinion is that the second and third children and perhaps even the fourth recorded to HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> belonged also to his first wife HANNAH and they will be so placed but if any reader can correct us we will greatly appreciate the service.

An unrecorded child of HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> CLARK, quite surely by his first wife HANNAH (SHEPARD) was

1. SUSANNA<sup>4</sup>, b. abt. 1712 at Haverhill, named in her father's will as ". . . Daughter SUSANAH CUTLER"; d. at Killingly, Conn., Apr. 8, 1774, in her 62nd yr.; m. there Dec. 5, 1734, HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> CUTLER (see Cutler, p. 204).<sup>31</sup>

The other children of HANNIEL<sup>3</sup>, surely by his first wife, were

- ii. Zebediah<sup>4</sup>, (sometimes called "Zabdiell"), bap. at Haverhill July 3, 1715; joined Killingly Church Mar. 1, 1728, and was dismissed<sup>45</sup> from it to the church at Dedham May 12, 1739, being received into that organization on June 17, 1739, and being still a member there in July, 1776; m. 1st (int. Apr. 12) 1738 at Stoughton Mary Morse of that place; m. 2nd at Dedham by Rev. THOMAS<sup>6</sup> BALCH Mar. 3, 1747-8, to Rachel Thorp.<sup>45</sup> He had ten children in Dedham. Zebediah<sup>4</sup> was one of the guests at the marriage of MANASSEH<sup>6</sup> CUTLER as will be shown.
- iii. Nathaniel<sup>4</sup>, named in his father's will of April, 1753, after his brother Zebediah<sup>4</sup> and *before* Nehemiah<sup>4</sup>; also named in the nullified will of his brother Josiah<sup>4</sup> which was dated June 10, 1759, as one of the executors; no further record.
- iv. Nehemiah<sup>4</sup>, bap. at Haverhill Dec. 27, 1719; named in the nullified will of his brother Josiah<sup>4</sup> in 1759; probably it was he who m. at Thompson Conn. (earlier Killingly) Mar. 7, 1744, Abigail Dupton (sic). He is said to have sold his land there and to have removed.<sup>32</sup>

The known children of HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> CLARK, quite certainly by his second wife Tabitha were

- v. Hannah<sup>4</sup>, bap. at Haverhill Mar. 25, 1722; named in her father's will;<sup>43</sup> m. at Thompson<sup>30</sup> Dec. 10, 1740, Isaac<sup>4</sup> Whitmore (Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Francis<sup>1</sup>).<sup>42</sup>
- vi. Mehitabel<sup>4</sup>, bap. Mar. 20, 1726, at Killingly; not named in father's will 1753.
- vii. Josiah<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 6, bap.<sup>28</sup> 10, 1731, at Killingly; d. there intestate<sup>34</sup> in 1759 after<sup>43</sup> June 10; m. about 1756, Rebecca Wakefield b. Nov. 9, 1738, at Sutton, dau.<sup>42</sup> of Jonathan of Sutton. They had a daughter Elizabeth who died before Oct. 1760. The widow Rebecca m. 2nd before Oct. 10, 1760, Abel<sup>4</sup> Wheeler of Sutton<sup>42</sup> (Jonathan<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>42</sup>

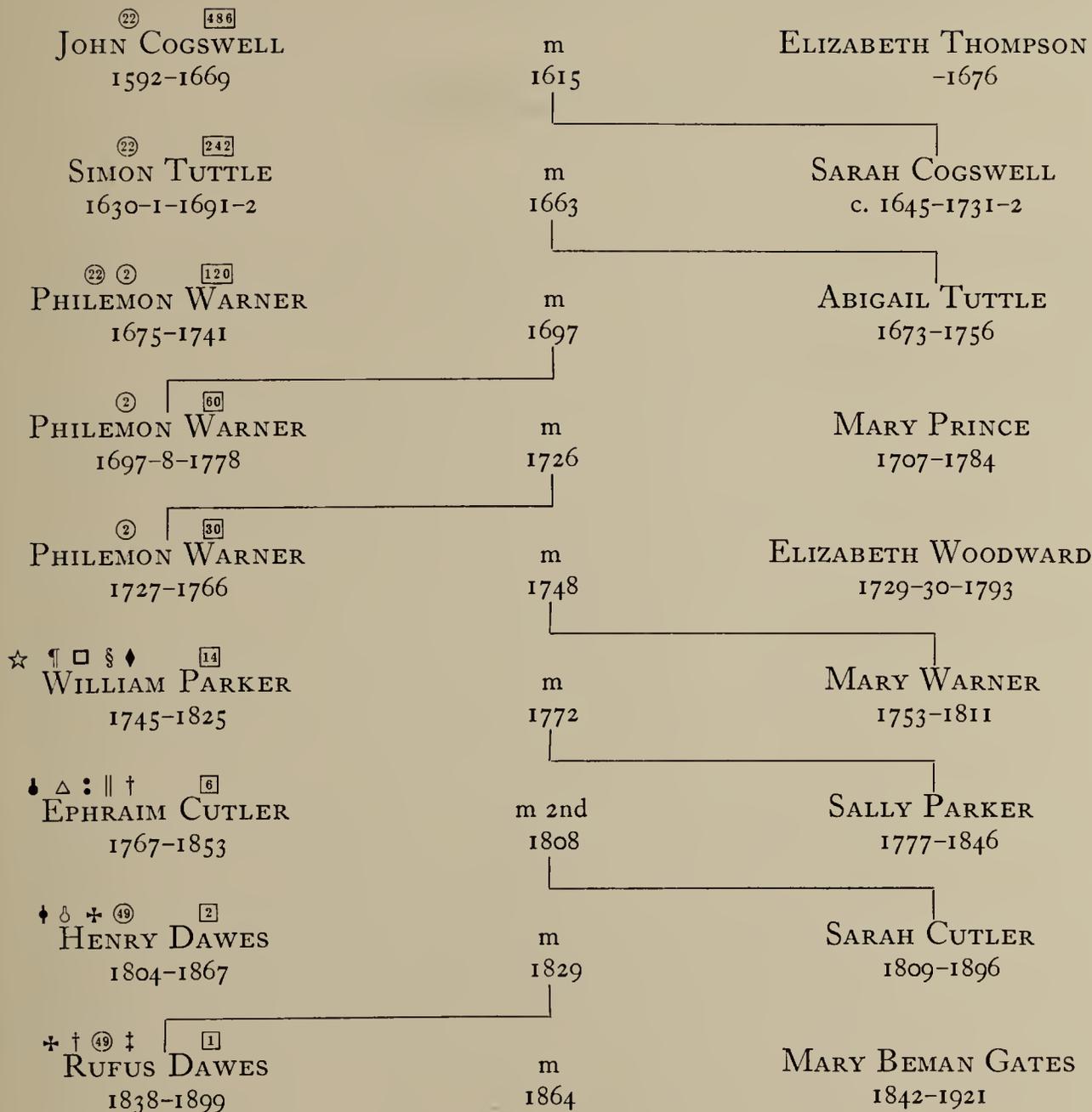
Though Josiah<sup>4</sup> really left a will dated June 10, 1759, naming his wife Rebecca, child Elizabeth, mother Tabitha, brothers Nehemiah<sup>4</sup> and Nathaniel<sup>4</sup>, with brother Nathaniel<sup>4</sup> and HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> CUTLER named as executors, it was for some reason declared null and void and administration was granted to widow Rebecca with HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> CUTLER and Ebenezer Green signing her bond.<sup>43</sup>

## REFERENCES

1. Essex Institute Historical Society Collections, XXVI, 64-6.
2. New Hampshire State Papers, XXXI, Probate Records, I, 167-8.
3. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court for Essex County, Mass., III, 412; IV, 194, 238, 249, 349-50; VIII, 263-4; Essex Institute Collections, XXVI, 59-61; Vital Records of Ipswich, Mass., II, 101, 525.
4. History of Salem, N. H., E. Gilbert, 1907, pp. 33, 38-40, 45-6.
5. History of Haverhill, Mass., [by J. G. Whittier, see C. A. Flagg's Guide to Massachusetts History, p. 58] ed. by B. L. Mirick, 1832, pp. 26, 28, 36, 42, 49-50, 205; History of Haverhill, Mass., G. W. Chase, 1861, pp. 72, 78, 80, 82, 142.
6. Records and Files of . . . Essex County . . . , I, 213, 328.
7. Ibid., II, 144, 157, 274, 277, 376, 438-9; III, 6, 39, 56, 84, 145, 166, 405; V, 111, 182, 230, 240, 249, 325, 438.
8. Ibid., II, 439; III, 184; V, 330.
9. Ibid., III, 97, 120, 166, 250; IV, 152, 188, 210, 450; V, 138, 301.
10. Essex Probate Records, I, 424-8.
11. Ibid., I, 425, 442; Records and Files, III, 280, 317.
12. Records and Files, V, 138; Old Families of Salisbury and Amesbury, D. W. Hoyt, 1897, I, 187; Pope's Pioneers, p. 409.
13. Essex Probate Records, II, 245-6, 298; Records and Files, V, 147.
14. Records and Files, IV, 238.
15. Ibid., VIII, 263-4.
16. Murray's English Dictionary, II, 1097.
17. Old Norfolk County Deeds, in Essex Antiquarian, IV, 45.
18. Lineage Book of the Daughters of Founders and Patriots, II, p. 36, No. 29.
19. History of Salem, N. H., E. Gilbert, 1907, pp. 47-8, 51, 61-2.
20. New England Register, VI, 203, 247.
21. Essex Probate Records, III, 93-4; Vital Records of Bradford, Mass., p. 167; of Newbury, I, 149; of Haverhill, II, 334; Old Families of Salisbury . . . , I, 114, 136-7, 172; III, 1024; Pope's Pioneers, p. 143; New England Register, XIX, 59; Savage, II, 64.
22. Records and Files, V, 270; VIII, 276.
23. Putnam's Monthly Historical Magazine, 1895, New Series, III, 112; Essex Deeds, XL, fo. 41.
24. Records and Files, V, 270; VIII, 67-8, 273.
25. History of Haverhill, Mass., G. W. Chase, 1861, pp. 208, 267-8, 274-5.
26. Essex Probate Records, III, 333-5; Old Families of Salisbury and Amesbury, I, 126; II, 705.
27. Vital Records of Haverhill, Mass., I, 114, 119-21; II, 65; Old Families of Salisbury and Amesbury, Mass., D. W. Hoyt, pp. 955-6.

28. Putnam's Monthly Historical Magazine, 1895, New Series, III, 225, 227, 259, 296; 1896, New Series, IV, 208; 1897, New Series, V, 174.
29. Vital Records of Haverhill, I, 158; of Reading, p. 121.
30. Bailey's Connecticut Marriages, II, 51, 52.
31. Cutler Memorial, N. S. Cutler, 1889, pp. 35-6; Life, Journals and Correspondence of Rev. MANASSEH CUTLER, W. P. and J. P. Cutler, 1888, I, 3-4, 45.
32. History of Windham County, Conn., E. D. Larned, 1874, I, 329, 334, 531; II, 90.
33. Colonial Records of Connecticut, XI, 403; Report of Examiner of Public Records of Connecticut, 1916, p. 31.
34. Search of Deeds and Wills in Essex County, Mass., by E. L. Smith, Brookline, Mass.
35. Essex County, Mass., Deeds, XXIX, 269; LXI, 21; XLIV, 83.
36. *Ibid.*, LXI, 21; LXVI, 60; Probate Docket 5443; Box 312, p. 227.
37. New Hampshire State Papers, XXXII and XXXIII, being Probate Records, II, 514-5, III, 242.
38. Essex County, Mass., Deeds, XXII, 256; XXIV, 2-3.
39. See Haverhill and Amesbury Vital Records; Essex Institute Collections XXVI, 67-8; XLIX, 44; History of Hampstead, N. H., H. E. Noyes, 1899, I, 407; II, 338, 724; E. S. Stearns' New Hampshire Genealogies, 1908, p. 1691 though the last two publications are believed to be in error as to the parentage of Jonathan Clark.
40. Vital Records of Haverhill, I, 65-6, 89; II, 65-6, 374, 383.
41. Essex Institute Historical Collections, LXIV, 236-40.
42. History of the Wheeler Family in America, A. G. Wheeler, 1914, p. 193; Wakefield Genealogy, H. Wakefield, 1897, pp. 150-2; Whitmore Genealogy, J. W. P. Purdy, 1907, pp. 27, 38.
43. Research of Connecticut Probates and Vital Records by Mr. H. W. Brainerd, Probate Files 1106 (will of HANNIEL<sup>3</sup>); 1107 (Adm. of Josiah<sup>4</sup>).
44. . . . Bowens of Woodstock, E. A. Bowen, 1897, p. 127.
45. Vital Records of Stoughton, p. 28; of Dedham, p. 77; Church and Cemetery Records of Dedham, pp. 149, 151-9, 162, 169, 173, 189.
46. History of Windham Co., Conn., R. M. Bayles, 1889, pp. 921-6, 927-8, 931-3, 936, 939.

# COGSWELL



- ②② Ipswich
- ② Gloucester
- ☆ Malden
- † Charlestown
- § Allegheny Co., Pa.
- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- ♠ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.

- ∴ Waterford, O.
- ∥ Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♠ Morgan Co., O.
- ✚ Malta, O.
- 49 Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## COGSWELL

**J**OHN<sup>1</sup> COGSWELL\* was<sup>1</sup> born at Westbury Leigh, co. Wilts in 1592 was married there on September 10, 1615, to ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup> THOMPSON daughter of the Rev. WILLIAM and PHILLIS (—) THOMPSON, who was Vicar of Westbury Parish from 1603 until his death in 1623.

The parents of JOHN<sup>1</sup> died soon after his marriage and he settled down in the family home to carry on the manufacture of woolen fabrics as his ancestors had done, in the inherited "mylls." But after nearly twenty years of successful business life there, they decided to emigrate to New England, so JOHN<sup>1</sup> sold his "mylls" and other property and on May 23, 1635, they and seven or eight of their children embarked on the "Angel Gabriel" for the new world. They had with them several farm and household servants and a goodly amount of furniture, household utensils, farming implements and a considerable sum of money. Lack of wind delayed their sailing until June 4 when, in company with the "James," they set sail from Bristol. Their passage was unusually slow for they did not reach the New England coast until mid-August. The two vessels kept company for about two weeks before they became separated, but arrived about the same time, the "James" anchoring at the Isle of Shoals and the "Angel Gabriel" at Pemaquid, Maine (see map, p. 19). On board the "James" was the Rev. Richard Mather who presently became the pastor at Dorchester and who wrote at length of the distressing experience these vessels and their passengers endured (see Dawes-Gates II, 841-3). For on August 15, 1635, a terrific storm and gale occurred which utterly wrecked the "Angel Gabriel" and cost several human lives\*\* as well as a heavy loss of cattle and freight. JOHN<sup>1</sup> COGSWELL and all his family reached the barren shore safely. They set up a large tent of his which had washed ashore, for physical protection; assembled such of their property as washed up on the beach and JOHN<sup>1</sup> took passage for Boston to arrange for a vessel to come and remove his family and property to Ipswich. The statement<sup>1</sup> is made, but is hard to believe, that his property loss was £5,000.

So in 1635 JOHN<sup>1</sup> COGSWELL became a resident of Ipswich. He received an eight acre lot at a corner of Bridge Street on which he built and temporarily occupied a house, but in 1636 the town granted him three hundred acres "at the further Chebokoe, having the River on the South east." This tract was about five miles east of Ipswich, in what became Chebacco Parish and eventually, Essex. Here,

\*JOHN<sup>1</sup> was the son<sup>1</sup> of EDWARD<sup>b</sup> COGSWELL, clothier of Westbury Leigh and ALICE his wife. The will of EDWARD<sup>b</sup> was dated June 23, 1615, and proved Jan. 12, 1615-6. It gave<sup>1</sup> to JOHN<sup>1</sup> £240 value of "bedding and other household stuff" as well as the "Mylls called Ripond" in the parish of Froome, Selwood for his lifetime. The will of widow ALICE dated June 25, 1615, and proved May 11, 1616, made son JOHN<sup>1</sup> her executor and residual heir.<sup>1</sup> PHILLIS (—) THOMPSON was buried there July 19, 1608. EDWARD<sup>b</sup> COGSWELL was the son of ROBERT<sup>a</sup> and ALICIA (—) COGSWELL also of Westbury Leigh, manufacturer of woolen cloths.<sup>1</sup> ROBERT<sup>a</sup> was buried June 7, 1581, and ALICIA on August 1, 1603.

\*\*Among the victims was Parson Joseph Avery with his family whom Whittier memorialized.<sup>1</sup>

late in 1636, JOHN<sup>1</sup> built a log house into which he removed and at this location (though later in a frame house) the rest of his life was spent. Here he was the third original settler. He must have brought evidence from England of church membership or have immediately joined the church, for he was made a freeman<sup>5</sup> on March 3, 1635-6, in company with our NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> DANFORTH. He sold a six acre lot<sup>8</sup> in Ipswich to JOHN<sup>2</sup> PERKINS and acquired from him a forty-five acre tract "beyond the great Chebacco River" and the weir built there with the seven year monopoly of catching alewives therein for sale as fertilizer.

In 1641 JOHN<sup>1</sup> mortgaged<sup>8</sup> his three hundred acre farm with its buildings to the Rev. William Hubbard to secure the payment of £85 sterling three months later. In 1646 JOHN<sup>1</sup> COGSWELL with JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE and others were threatened with suit because their taxes were in arrears.<sup>8</sup>

JOHN<sup>1</sup> COGSWELL died intestate<sup>9</sup> November 29, 1669, aged about<sup>1</sup> seventy-seven and his wife ELIZABETH died on June 2, 1676. They were buried in the old North graveyard of the First Church in Ipswich. Of ELIZABETH it has been said that "she was a woman of sterling qualities and dearly beloved by all who knew her." JOHN<sup>1</sup> deeded most of his property during his life. The inventory<sup>7</sup> of his estate was taken December 27, 1669, and filed March 29 following. It was taken by WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> HASKELL and John Burnham and showed property<sup>1</sup> amounting to only £115. The funeral service for JOHN<sup>1</sup> COGSWELL was conducted by the Rev. William Hubbard, pastor in Ipswich and since known as "the Historian of New England." The funeral procession traversed a distance of five miles to the place of burial. They moved under an escort of armed men, as a protection against the possible attack of the Indians.

The children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH (THOMPSON) COGSWELL, most of them born in Westbury Leigh, Wiltshire, England, were<sup>1,2</sup>

- I. A daughter who married and remained in England.
- II. Mary<sup>2</sup>, d. after Apr. 5, 1677; m. abt. 1649 prob. as his 2nd wife Godfrey<sup>1</sup> Armitage of Lynn and Boston.
- III. \*William<sup>2</sup>, bap. Mar. 1619; d. at Ipswich Dec. 15, 1700, aged<sup>6</sup> 71 or<sup>2</sup> 81; m. in 1649 Susanna Hawkes [Adam and Anne (Hutchinson)].<sup>1</sup>
- IV. John<sup>2</sup>, bap. July 25, 1622; d. at sea while returning from England; his will was proved Sept. 27, 1653; m. before 1648 . . . . . who died in 1652.
- V. Hannah<sup>2</sup>, d.<sup>3</sup> after 1669 when her last child was born; m. by 1651 Cornelius<sup>1</sup> Waldo.
- VI. Abigail<sup>2</sup>, m. Thomas Clark, res. Ipswich.
- VII. Edward<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1629; no further record.
- VIII. SARAH<sup>2</sup>, d.<sup>2</sup> at Ipswich Jan. 24 or 25, 1731-2 aged 86; m. 1663 \*\*SIMON<sup>2</sup> TUTTLE (see Tuttle, p. 602).
- IX. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, m. at Ipswich<sup>2</sup> July 31, 1657, Nathaniel Masterson who became<sup>4</sup> Marshall of the Province of Maine. Prob. he and his wife perished<sup>4</sup> in the Candlemas Day massacre 1691-2.

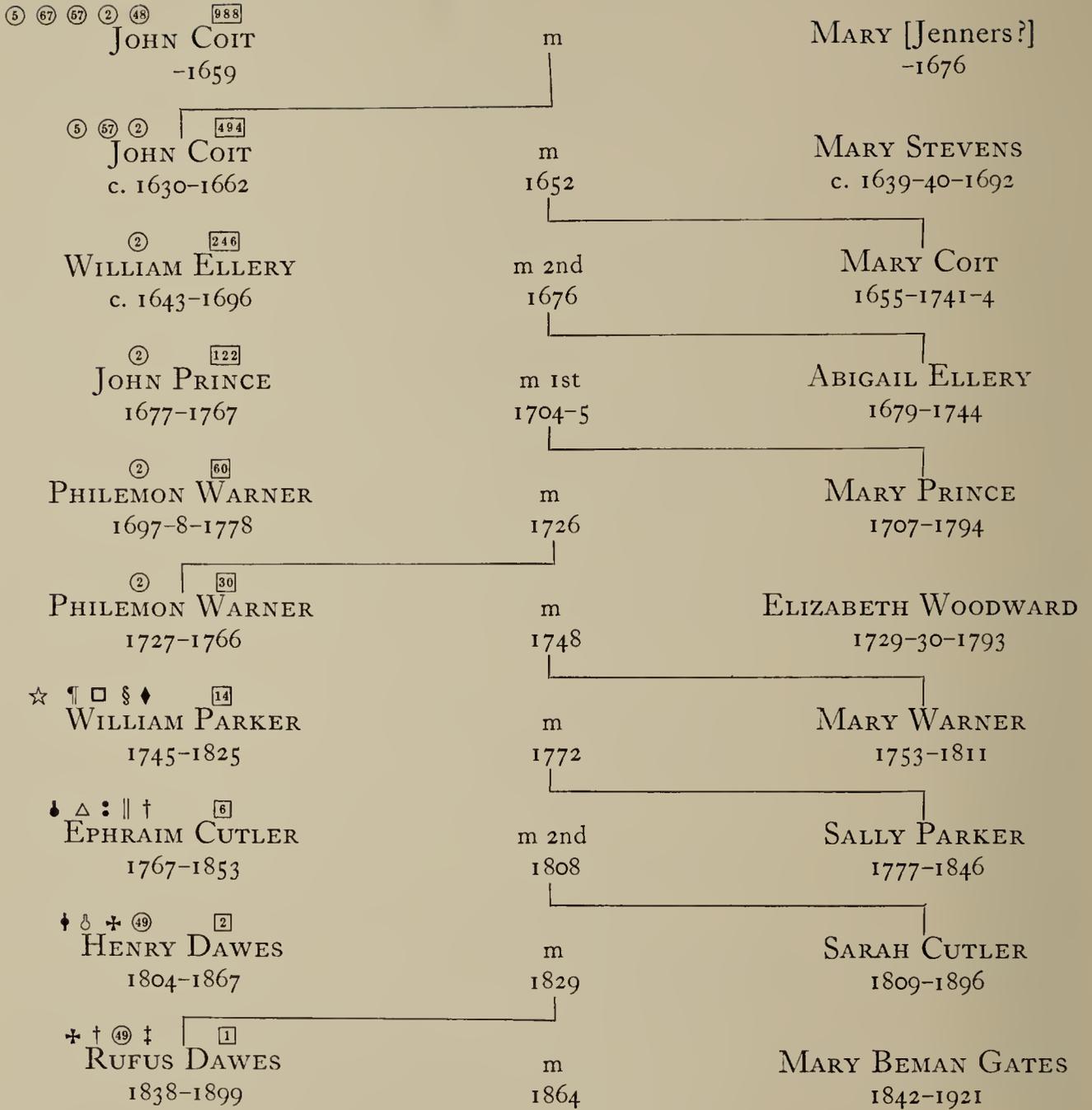
\*William<sup>5</sup> Cogswell (Francis<sup>4</sup>, Jonathan<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) born in 1750 (great grandson of a brother of our SARAH<sup>2</sup> COGSWELL) became, in 1773, the husband of Abigail<sup>6</sup> Dawes (WILLIAM<sup>4</sup>) — see Dawes, p. 36 for the hegira from Boston during its occupation.

\*\*SIMON<sup>2</sup> TUTTLE as well as Thomas Clarke both senior and junior, testified<sup>9</sup> on March 29, 1670, that "ourf ather COGSWELL did promise upon marriage that he would give all hee had & what he should more gitt unto his daughters Abigail and SARAH, and they should have it when hee and his wife dyed."<sup>9</sup>

## REFERENCES

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. The Cogswells in America, E. O. Jameson, 1884, pp. xvi-xxi, 1-19.</li> <li>2. Vital Records of Ipswich, II, 105, 530, 698.</li> <li>3. Waldo Family, W. Lincoln, 1902, I, 14.</li> <li>4. Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, C. T. Libby, 1928-39, p. 467.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>5. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 371.</li> <li>6. Hammatt Papers, pp. 59-60.</li> <li>7. Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 108.</li> <li>8. Ancient Records of Ipswich, 1634-1650, 1899, pp. 12-15, 28, 77, 105, 110, 114.</li> <li>9. Essex Probates, II, 180-1.</li> </ol> |
|--|--|

# COIT



- (5) Dorchester
- (67) Yarmouth
- (57) Marblehead
- (2) Gloucester
- (48) New London
- ☆ Malden
- ¶ Charlestown

- Newburyport
- § Allegheny Co., Pa.
- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- ♠ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- ∴ Waterford, O.
- ∥ Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♠ Morgan Co., O.
- ✦ Malta, O.
- (49) Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## COIT (*Goit, Goyte*)\*

\*\* JOHN<sup>1</sup> COIT a ship carpenter who was married probably in England to MARY (called *Jenners*), crossed the ocean at an unknown date in or before 1632 and is recorded<sup>1</sup> in Dorchester as one of its first settlers. There he had received a grant of land on a "neck," for prior to January 21, 1632-3, he and two other men "were granted<sup>1</sup> a p'portionable quantity of Marish [marsh] adjoining to their necke of Land." JOHN<sup>1</sup> had left Dorchester before April 17, 1635, under an uncertain plan, for on that date "4 acres of land, on the pine necke, formerly graunted to JOHN GOITE" were to be divided between two other settlers "on condition that he [JOHN<sup>1</sup>] come not over to possesse it the next Somer."<sup>1,23</sup> †JOHN<sup>1</sup> did not return to Dorchester but became employed in Essex County at his trade and settled there. The next definite evidence which we find of him pertains probably to 1635 and certainly not later than 1636-7. For a law suit<sup>2</sup> in Essex County as late as November, 1677, pertaining to the title to certain land, brought out a deposition by one Edward Richards aged about sixty, that about forty years earlier while he was resident in Swampscott vicinity (see map, p. 209) "JOHN GOYT, sr., was put ashore from a ship at Capan [Cape Ann, Gloucester]; and upon a Lord's day, by Mr. [John] Humphryes appointment, was fetched from thence in a boat and was employed by said Humphries to build a barque for him. After he [JOHN<sup>1</sup>] had built it, he intended to go to Mittapese, but was persuaded by Mr. Winthrope and Mr. Humphryes to stay in these parts and they promised him any accommodation fit for his employment. Then he 'satt downe at Marblehead,' at the cove" on the north shore of Marblehead Harbor (see map, p. 209). JOHN<sup>1</sup> himself had told the quoted deponent "that he chose this place because it was most suitable for his employment," so he evidently continued to build boats in the cove where he "sat downe" which was for many years called<sup>2</sup> Coit's Cove and mention is made of the shelter it furnished for the mooring of boats<sup>2</sup> as well as for the building of them. Marblehead was originally a part of Salem, was created a "plantation" under its own name in 1635 but did not become a separate town until 1649. Consequently early land grants at Marblehead were made by Salem authorities. The first placement of JOHN<sup>1</sup> at Marblehead may have been by colony action, or by the influence of the governor and deputy governor, as shown above, but in November, 1638,

\*This name in early days was variously spelled, as Coyte, Goite, Goyte and even Guoit.

\*\*There is a tradition<sup>31</sup> that JOHN<sup>1</sup> COIT ran away from his master in Wales, taking with him both that master's daughter and his Bible. Unverified traditions, if named as such, sometimes suggest an amusing possibility and in this case we may wonder whether the thought of JOHN<sup>1</sup> was to carry with him family records of origin or to hope that the presence of the Holy Book would sanctify his action.

†JOHN<sup>1</sup> COIT had a brother Solomon<sup>1</sup> Coit in New England<sup>3</sup> in 1652-3 but he is not seen later. Oddly enough it is reprehensible action on the part of JOHN<sup>1</sup> which furnishes the evidence of his brother's presence for in July, 1652, JOHN<sup>1</sup> was presented at court "for striking his brother Solomon on the head."<sup>3</sup>

Salem granted <sup>4,7</sup> him three acres "on the Neck" and the baptisms<sup>10</sup> of three of his children in 1643-4 were recorded as of Salem.

Other witnesses at the 1677 law suit referred to, testified that when JOHN<sup>1</sup> first came to Marblehead he built a wigwam and lived in it until his house was constructed; they told of helping him to saw planks to build shallops and do other shipbuilding. JOHN<sup>1</sup> received lot No. 38 (see map, p. 73) in Marblehead but we are told that his house was situated<sup>4</sup> on a hill or bluff at the extreme eastern point of land where the view of the ocean in its many moods must have been an ever-present joy! He built a stage\* on this lot "it being one of the first, if not the first, in the town."<sup>4</sup> He was a neighbor to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS and also to JOHN<sup>1</sup> DEVEREAUX (Dawes-Gates II, 285) and they were among the twenty-four heads of families who were assessed<sup>7</sup> £8 in January, 1637. In 1639 he sued Isaac Disborough for debt<sup>5</sup> and got out an attachment against him to cover ten shillings costs and to assure Isaac's presence at the next court. In 1640 the ownership of a boat was in litigation and pending decision, the vessel was left in the custody of JOHN<sup>1</sup>, as in escrow. That JOHN<sup>1</sup> was a man of conviction and courage is shown by the fact that when some civil or legal action had seemed unjust to him he boldly announced<sup>4,5</sup> in January, 1641-2, that "its better to go to hell gate for mercy than to Mr. Endecott for iustice." There must have been extenuating circumstances, judging by the leniency shown, for the "Court conceived the witness mistaken, passed it over with an admonition which took deep impression" — but having read of Endicott's hot temper and domineering ways, one may dare to hold a feeling of sympathy for the opinion of JOHN<sup>1</sup> in that matter. On June 18, 1643, MARY COIT joined the Salem Church<sup>17</sup> preparatory to the baptism of two of her children the next month.<sup>10</sup> In 1646 JOHN<sup>1</sup> owed an account<sup>5</sup> to the estate of George Pollard deceased. JOHN<sup>1</sup> and his family resided at Marblehead until 1647 when, on February 9, he sold<sup>2</sup> his house, stage and land (including eight acres of upland upon the neck, two acres of marsh, etc.) to William Pitt who later transferred<sup>4</sup> it to his son-in-law Christopher Lattimer. The eventual lawsuit<sup>2</sup> of 1677, to clear its title, has been the means of our learning many facts relative to the life of JOHN<sup>1</sup>. During the year 1647 he removed to Gloucester for in December, called of that place, he was chosen a member of the Grand Jury as he was again<sup>6</sup> in 1650 and in 1651. This was a definite recognition of his level-headedness for only the most dependable men were so chosen. He is said to have been a selectman in Gloucester in 1648 and 1649, and as has been stated, in November, 1651, he witnessed<sup>3</sup> against two Boston men for breaking the Sabbath by sailing out of the harbor at Annisquam.

Gloucester had until 1642 been a small and unimportant settlement<sup>14</sup> mainly of fishermen, but that year was noted for the arrival of the Rev. Richard Blinman,<sup>16</sup> once of Chepstowe, Monmouthshire, England, and later, but briefly, of Marshfield, Plymouth Colony. He brought with him a number of substantial citizens — perhaps Welsh parishioners of his — including WALTER<sup>1</sup> TYBBOT. Rev. Blinman served the town as its pastor until 1649-50, but friction had arisen in the church and he completed a plan to remove to New London, Connecticut, on Long Island Sound.<sup>14,16</sup> Between September, 1649, and November, 1650, he made this removal and twelve or more of the Gloucester families<sup>14</sup> including JOHN<sup>1</sup> COIT followed him

\*A stage at that time seems to have implied a landing stage or floating dock from which to build vessels, though the term was often also applied by fishermen to trays or platforms on which fish were dried.

in the fall of 1650 or the spring<sup>9</sup> of 1651. JOHN<sup>1</sup> COIT had acquired church membership either at Salem or at Gloucester, for in December, 1647, he had become a freeman<sup>6</sup> and his was one of the families which moved to New London. It is recorded<sup>9</sup> that he received a grant of land at New London on October 19, 1650, but he did not leave Gloucester until after June, 1651, for in that month he served<sup>6</sup> on an Essex County grand jury. His eldest son JOHN<sup>2</sup> may have accompanied the family to New London and have decided that he preferred Gloucester; or may have remained at the latter place (and perhaps Cupid had something to do with the decision) but whatever the cause, the life of JOHN<sup>2</sup> from 1647 onward was spent at Gloucester. We are told<sup>9</sup> that early in 1651 New Street, in the rear of the town plot of New London, was opened up for the accommodation of the Gloucester families and that it was then called Cape Ann Lane. The lots were of six acres each but the soil was not satisfactory and many of the families acquired other plots. JOHN<sup>1</sup> COIT promptly exchanged his original lot so as to live at Close Cove where he could have a shipbuilding yard and water of sufficient depth for the construction of pinnaces\* and shallows\* of twenty or thirty tons burden<sup>24</sup> such as were then most frequently in use for coastwise trade. These are said to have been "little more than decked boats"<sup>9</sup> but JOHN<sup>1</sup> was considered the most outstanding ship-builder of that locality<sup>24</sup> during his time. He associated with himself in the business his youngest son Joseph<sup>2</sup> and his two sons-in-law Hugh<sup>1</sup> Mould and John Stevens, and they continued the business\*\* after the death of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and throughout their own lives.<sup>9</sup>

In 1652 the town of New London granted land to JOHN<sup>1</sup> and forty years after his death his grandchildren deeded<sup>22</sup> half of it to James Avery of New London.

JOHN<sup>1</sup> made his will<sup>8,22,23</sup> on August 1, 1659, signing it with his mark, and died the 29th of that month. The inventory<sup>8</sup> of his estate totaled £103 and his will provided comfortably for his wife MARY and son Joseph<sup>2</sup>, gave substantial bequests to two daughters, and added "Also I give to my two sons and two daughters 20 shillings apiece, I meane those absent from me, in case they be living. . . ."<sup>8</sup> This last sentence pertained to JOHN<sup>2</sup>, resident in Gloucester, and three other children who have not been identified.<sup>9</sup> The widow MARY called "Goodwife COYTE" is recorded in October 1670 as possessing membership in the New London Church<sup>9</sup> and she remained his widow for over sixteen years, until her death at New London on January 2, 1676, at the age of eighty.<sup>8,10,14,17,23</sup>

The known children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and MARY (?*Jenners*) COIT were<sup>8,9,29</sup>

- i. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- ii. Joseph<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>10</sup> at Salem July 30, 1643; d. at New London, Mar. 27, 1704; m. there, July 15, 1667, Martha Harris†.
- iii. Mary<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>10</sup> at Salem with her brother on July 30, 1643; probably d. young.
- iv. Mary<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>10</sup> at Salem Mar. 17, 1644; m. at New London, bef.<sup>11</sup> Nov. 1665 John Stevens. They removed 1676 to New Haven, Conn.<sup>11</sup>
- v. Martha<sup>2</sup>, d. †Apr. 14, 1730, "aged about 86" (gr. st.); m. 1st June 11, 1662, at New London

\*A pinnace is described as "a small light vessel, generally two-masted and schooner-rigged" while a shallop was "a large heavy boat fitted with one or more masts and carrying fore-and-aft or lug sails and was sometimes furnished with guns.

\*\*Because of the usefulness of these three men to the community, they were<sup>9</sup> "at their liberty and freed from common training" about 1667-70.

†She is called<sup>8,9</sup> daughter of William Harris, of Middletown,<sup>12</sup> Conn.

‡The town records say Martha died in her 77th year but in this case the gravestone record is probably nearer right. Her second husband was father-in-law to two of her daughters.<sup>11</sup>

Hugh<sup>1</sup> Mould; m. 2nd<sup>11</sup> 1690 or later Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> White (John<sup>1</sup> of Hartford) of Middletown.<sup>11</sup>  
VI.-VIII. A son and two daughters referred to in the will<sup>6</sup> of JOHN<sup>1</sup>, whose identities are unknown.

JOHN<sup>2</sup> COIT (*John*<sup>1</sup>) was born probably about 1630, perhaps in England or after emigration, in Dorchester. He died at Gloucester<sup>4</sup> and before March 25, 1662, when administration on his estate was granted to his widow.<sup>5,6</sup> He married there<sup>13,15</sup> on September 21, 1652, MARY<sup>2</sup> STEVENS (see Stevens, p. 567). He had lived briefly with his parents at Dorchester and subsequently at Marblehead and at Gloucester. Some reports say<sup>9</sup> that he went with his father to New London and he certainly received the grant<sup>8</sup> of a lot there under date of March 18, 1650-1, which he forfeited either by not going, or by returning presently to Gloucester. He presumably acquired a part, at least, of his father's property in Gloucester when that man's removal occurred, and if so it would explain why only a twenty shilling bequest to JOHN<sup>2</sup>, the eldest known son, was made in the will of JOHN<sup>1</sup>.

After the Rev. Blinman left Gloucester, though the church was greatly weakened by the loss of the members who followed him, the town laid out land for a "teaching Elder" to serve them in the place of a minister. From 1650 until 1655 one William Perkins served the community in this capacity. He was followed by Thomas Millet as teaching elder and in March, 1657-8, friction arose<sup>14,18</sup> between him and our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS, town clerk, "for withholding a wrighting of the subscription of the inhabitants of Gloster for payment of their several sums to Mr. Millet for his labours among them, and his own proportion included, which is 50 shillings." The jury gave a verdict in favor of Elder Millett, but we are assured<sup>14</sup> that "no permanent estrangement between the two brethern was produced, as may be inferred from their appointment by the Court, in June, 1659, to exercise their gifts jointly for the edification of the inhabitants"<sup>14</sup> on the Sabbath. One service rendered us by the record of the suit against WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS is a listing of the subscribers which makes possible surmise, at least, as to their comparative financial ability. It shows that JOHN<sup>2</sup> COIT had subscribed ten shillings, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE, thirteen shillings, four pence, JOHN<sup>1</sup> DAVIS, fifteen shillings, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BROWNE, five shillings, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> HASKELL, eighteen shillings, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS two pounds, ten shillings and Henry Walker who became the third husband of MARY, mother of MARY (BROWNE) HASKELL, ten shillings, etc.<sup>18</sup>

JOHN<sup>2</sup> COIT had sold<sup>6</sup> certain Gloucester property, a house and land, to Robert Dutch\*, later of Ipswich and in 1658, by the testimony of MARY, wife of JOHN<sup>2</sup> there was over £20 still due. A kindly action is recorded in 1660 of several of our Gloucester ancestors in behalf of one John Jackson of that town. He was under harsh criticism in court and a statement as to his general good behavior was signed by twenty-seven of his neighbors, including JOHN<sup>1</sup> COIT, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS, JOHN<sup>1</sup> DAVIS, who each signed their names in long hand and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE who made his mark.<sup>6</sup>

In July, 1661, town action was taken that the salary of Rev. John Emerson who had engaged to become their minister should be £60 per annum to be paid in Indian corn, pease, barley, fish, mackerel, beef or pork.<sup>14</sup> So a pastor would have been at hand when JOHN<sup>2</sup> COIT died intestate before<sup>6</sup> March 25, 1662, when administration on his estate was granted to his widow MARY and to her father WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>

\*It develops, however, that Robert Dutch sold<sup>19</sup> all of his Gloucester property in 1656-7 to EDWARD<sup>1</sup> HARRADEN, earlier of Ipswich, and many years later court action as to boundary lines was recorded.<sup>19</sup>

STEVENS. For some strange reason the Probate record calls him COIT "of Marblehead" which was certainly an error. The inventory of the personal estate of JOHN<sup>2</sup> COIT totaled only about £28, including three cows appraised at £12, another cow and a steer at £5 each, six swine at £3, two chests, "to bed steds" one "sute of Carsie" etc. Widow MARY was left, then, with six small children and after five years of struggle she was married secondly at Gloucester on October 3, 1667, as "Widow MARY COITE" to John Fitch who apparently had no family. With him she spent about twenty-five years and died in Gloucester on November 7, 1692.

The madness which was witchcraft, aided and abetted probably by the hallucinations of delirium caused great distress for MARY during her last illness<sup>26,32</sup> as well as anxiety for her relatives. A court record at Boston under date of November 5, 1692, shows that complaint had been made by Lt. James<sup>2</sup> Stevens (WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) her brother, William<sup>3</sup> Stevens (James<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) her nephew and by Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> Coit (JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) her son against Esther (Dutch) Elwell daughter of Osman and wife of Samuel, Abigail Roe [Rowe] daughter of Hugh and Mary (Prince) Roe and against Rebecca (Dolliver) Dike daughter of Samuel<sup>1</sup> and wife of Richard, for committing acts of witchcraft against MARY Fitch wife of John Fitch of Gloucester. The case seems so very weak that it is a marvel that the court took cognizance of it, and they may have thrown it out, for no decision is recorded, but her brother James<sup>2</sup> Stevens testified,<sup>26,32</sup> weakly, "that MARY Fitch did say that she felt A woman upon ye bed, and put forth hir hand and felt ye hair of hir head and A peg in it, also testified that she said she was squesed to pieces, wheras I saw nobody hurt hur." Poor MARY died two days later on November 7 and got out of her misery, both mental and physical and we may hope that her passing ended the complaints against the defendants. Her husband John Fitch died at Gloucester on May 9, 1715, and in 1716 John<sup>4</sup> Coit (Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) claimed\* to be, and was recognized as, his heir.<sup>8</sup>

The children of JOHN<sup>2</sup> and MARY (STEVENS) COIT, all born at Gloucester, were<sup>13,14</sup>

- i. John<sup>3</sup>, birth not officially recorded, but claimed<sup>8</sup> for Aug. 14, 1653; d. there Apr. 15, 1675.
- ii. MARY<sup>3</sup>, b. June 4, 1655; d.<sup>20</sup> between 1741 and 1744 aged over eighty-six; m.<sup>13</sup> at Gloucester on June 13, 1676, as his second wife WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ELLERY (see Ellery, p. 288).
- iii. "Abbygale"<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 29 or Apr. 3, 1657; d. Mar. 19, 1726; m. 1st at Gloucester Nov. 13, 1677, Isaac<sup>2</sup> Eveleth (Sylvester<sup>1</sup>);<sup>21</sup> m. 2nd Thomas Willet (or perhaps Millet?).
- iv. \*\*Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, twin, b. Apr. 13, 1659; d. at Gloucester Jan. 10, 1742-3, aged 84; m. 1st there Feb. 16, 1686-7 Elizabeth Davis, probably daughter of JACOB<sup>2</sup> (JOHN<sup>1</sup>); she d. Feb. 11, 1699-1700; m. 2nd there<sup>14</sup> Feb. 17, 1701-2 Abigail (Sargent) Stevens, dau. of William<sup>1</sup> Sargent and widow of William<sup>3</sup> Stevens (James<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>);<sup>21</sup> she d. Jan. 8, 1709-10;<sup>15</sup> m. 3rd there (int. Nov. 30, 1711) Hannah (Howard) Sargent, dau. of Nehemiah<sup>2</sup> (Nicholas<sup>1</sup>) Howard (or Hayward) of Salem<sup>4,14,21</sup> and widow of John<sup>2</sup> Sargent (William<sup>1</sup>); she d. ae. 89.
- v. Matthew<sup>3</sup>, twin, b. Apr. 13, 1659; prob. d. yng.

\*This John<sup>4</sup> Coit, born in Gloucester<sup>30</sup> in March, 1691, grandson of MARY (STEVENS) COIT, graduated at Harvard in 1712 and was a schoolmaster in Marblehead in at least 1714 and 1715. His step-grandfather John Fitch who died at Gloucester May 9, 1715, left no will but on October 26, 1714, by a deed which was the equivalent of a will, made over to this "grandson of his wife's" all his estate both real and personal, and particularly all his lands and tenements in the township of Gloucester. On May 23, 1715, John<sup>4</sup> Coit was appointed administrator of the Fitch estate which included a negro called Robin Rounday to whom Coit on June 15, 1715, promised his freedom in four years.<sup>30</sup>

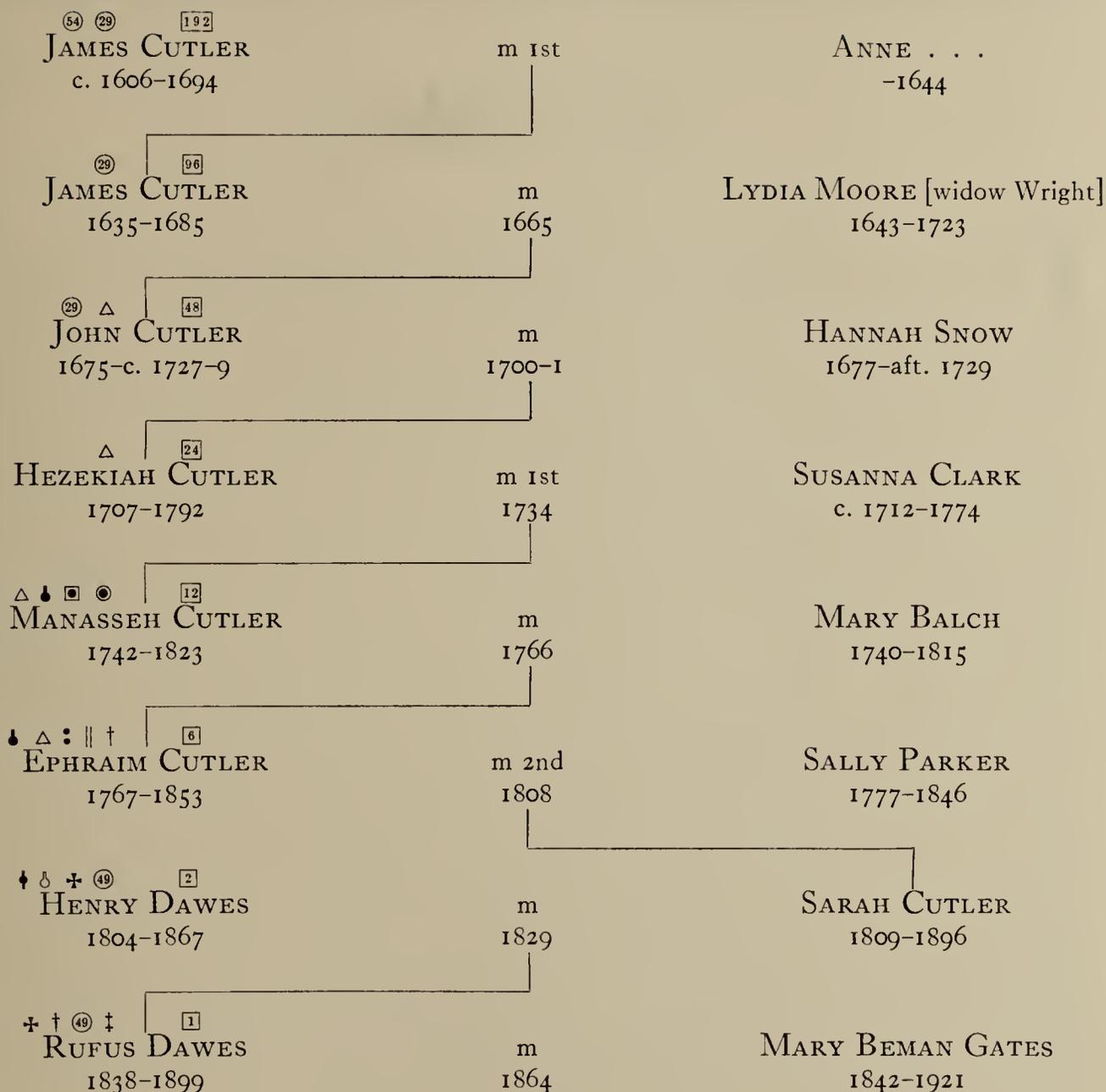
\*\*Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> Coit in 1690 was making his home with, or perhaps making a home *for*, Henry<sup>1</sup> Walker, widower of our MARY (—) Robinson BROWNE. Walker's will<sup>21</sup> dated August 29, 1690, and probated in October, 1693, made bequests to the descendants of his deceased wife by both of her previous husbands, namely to the children of her son Abraham<sup>2</sup> Robinson (Abraham<sup>1</sup>) and to the children of WILLIAM<sup>2</sup> and MARY (BROWNE) HASKELL, but the major part of his estate Walker left to Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> Coit who lived with him.<sup>21</sup>

- vi. Job<sup>3</sup>, b. Aug. 26, 1661; d. at Gloucester Sept. 15, 1690; m. about 1688 Hannah<sup>2</sup> Ellery<sup>25</sup> (WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) who bore him, in 1689, a dau. Mary<sup>4</sup> who d. in 1690; Hannah m. 2nd<sup>13</sup> Jan. 10, 1692-3 William Card.

## REFERENCES

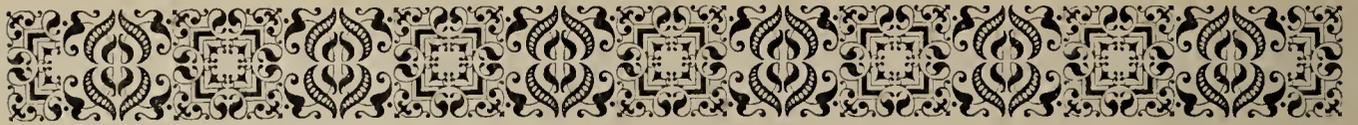
1. Good Old Dorchester, W. A. Orcutt, 1893, p. 44; History of Dorchester by its Antiquarian and Historical Society, 1859, pp. 38-9, 55; Early Records of Dorchester, W. B. Trask, 1867, pp. 5, 18; New England Register, XXI, 165 corrected by 173; Boston Record Commissioners Report, IV, 1, 11.
2. Putnam's Monthly Historical Magazine, 1897, V, 130; Records and Files of the Essex County Quarterly Court, III, 103; V, 109; VI, 362-3; VIII, 27-9.
3. Ibid., I, 246, 257, 284; Sketches of Swampscott, W. Thompson, 1885, pp. 10-13; New England Register, VI, 249.
4. History of Salem, S. Perley, 1926, II, 2, 47, 122-3, 135, 197 and map facing, 201; Town Records of Salem, 1868, pp. 63, 74.
5. Essex Quarterly Court, I, 12, 22, 35, 106; Perley's Salem, II, 122-3; Essex Probate Records, I, 60, 358-9, 457; Putnam's Magazine, 1897, V, 201.
6. Essex Quarterly Court, I, 129-30, 191, 204, 228; II, 68, 236-7, 368; III, 55; Essex Probate Records, I, 358-9.
7. History and Traditions of Marblehead, S. Roads, 1880, pp. 9-16; Annals of Salem, J. B. Felt, 1845, I, 168, 174; Essex Institute Historical Collections, IV, 182; IX, 62-3.
8. Coit Genealogy, F. W. Chapman, 1874, pp. 13-20, 299-300.
9. History of New London, Conn., F. M. Calkins, 1852, pp. 67, 69-71, 134, 143-4, 194-5, 230-1, 235, 250, 275; Cutter's Connecticut Families, 1911, I, 399.
10. Vital Records of Salem, I, 377.
11. Savage's Dictionary, III, 247; IV, 186-7, 572; Middletown Upper Houses (Conn.), C. C. Adams, 1908, pp. 714-5; D. L. Jacobus' Genealogical Magazine, p. 1700.
12. Savage, I, 422-3; New England Register, IV, 361-2.
13. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 160, 171; II, 139, 148, 210; III, 96, 130, 133.
14. History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, pp. 50-3, 71-2, 148, 189-91, 193-6, 214, 379, 584.
15. Babson's Gloucester, Notes and Additions, 1876, II, 77-8.
16. New England Register, LIII, 234-41; Calkins' New London, pp. 111-6; New London Historical Society, I, pt. 3, 13-4.
17. Pope's Pioneers, 1900, pp. 108, 195 (partly in error); Savage, I, 422; II, 289.
18. Essex Quarterly Court, II, 64; Essex Antiquarian, XII, 117.
19. Babson's Gloucester, 1860, pp. 83, 98; Essex Quarterly Court, II, 68; III, 390-1, 442.
20. Pedigree of Ellery in the United States, H. Ellery, 1881.
21. Babson's Gloucester, 1860, pp. 91-2, 148, 167; Pope, p. 474; Coit Genealogy, p. 19; Perley's Salem, II, 135.
22. Goodwin-Morgan Ancestral Lines, F. F. Starr, 1915, II, 427-31, 433-6; Connecticut Probates, I, 118.
23. Ancestry of H. B. Smith, Henry Smith Munroe, pub. privately, Enquirer Press, Litchfield, Conn., 1922, pt. 3, p. 55; Macdonough-Hackstaff Ancestry, R. Macdonough, 1901, pp. 295-7; Old Houses of Norwich, Conn., M. E. Perkins, 1895, p. 444.
24. In Olde Connecticut, C. B. Todd, 1906, pp. 71-2.
25. New England Register, XLIII, 313.
26. Research by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., in Essex Co., Mass.
27. Plymouth Colony Record, I, 108, 120; History of Old Yarmouth, C. F. Swift, 1884, pp. 16, 21-2, 45-6, 52-3; History of the First Congregational Church, J. W. Dodge, 1873, pp. 5-6.
28. Salem in the Seventeenth Century, J. D. Phillips, 1933, pp. 96-7; Winthrop's Journal, I, 187, 260, 331.
29. Ancestry of Lawrence Williams, C. B. Williams, 1915, pp. 72-3.
30. Savage, II, 169; Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 160; II, 210; III, 133; Essex County Deeds, XXVII, 149; XXIX, 17; Supreme Court Files of Suffolk County, No. 163089; Essex County Probates, Administration No. 9526, Vol. 311, 275; Harvard Graduates, 1937, J. L. Sibley, V. 623-4.
31. Chandler Family, G. Chandler, 1883, p. 53.
32. General Court Record at Boston, No. 2689.

# CUTLER



- 54 Watertown
- 29 Cambridge Farms (later Lexington)
- Δ Killingly, Conn.
- ♂ Edgartown
- ◻ Dedham
- Hamilton
- Waterford, O.

- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♂ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- 49 Mauston, Wis.
- † Malta, O.
- † Marietta, O.



## CUTLER

**J**AMES<sup>1</sup> CUTLER born about 1606 emigrated<sup>18</sup> from England at an unknown date but was a resident of Watertown by or before 1635 for his son JAMES<sup>2</sup> was born there<sup>13</sup> on November 6, 1635. JAMES<sup>1</sup> had married first, by 1634-5 ANNE or ANNA who by tradition was called<sup>1,10</sup> a sister\* of Mary, first wife of Ens. John<sup>1</sup> Grout. After bearing JAMES<sup>1</sup> four children ANNE died at Watertown and was buried<sup>13</sup> on September 30, 1644, and JAMES<sup>1</sup> married secondly on March 9, 1644-5, widow Mary (—) King whose first husband Thomas had just died<sup>8</sup> on December 3, 1644, leaving her with three small children, even as JAMES<sup>1</sup> had four motherless little ones. It must have been a "sickly season" or an epidemic was raging for during December of 1644 these parents<sup>2,8</sup> each of them lost a child. Mary unquestionably made JAMES<sup>1</sup> a good wife for the ten years she lived and during which she bore him four or five children and he made a good father to her daughters, treating them equally with his own when his time came to divide his property among his heirs. JAMES<sup>1</sup> married thirdly perhaps about<sup>8</sup> 1662 Phebe<sup>2</sup> Page (John<sup>1</sup> of Watertown). JAMES<sup>1</sup> received<sup>14</sup> seven small tracts of land in Watertown in 1636-7 ranging from one to twenty-five acres each, some of which adjoined land owned by Thomas<sup>1</sup> King whose widow he presently married. In 1642 he received<sup>14</sup> a farm of eighty-two acres. His homestall of eight acres was bounded on the west with Stone Street and north with the highway<sup>14</sup> and in this town he lived neighbor to ROBERT<sup>1</sup> JENNISON and JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup> HOLDEN. It has been stated<sup>2,4</sup> that in 1648 or 1649 JAMES<sup>1</sup> removed from Watertown to Cambridge Farms (Lexington) near the Concord line (later the Bedford line<sup>3</sup>) where his house was one of the earliest built<sup>3</sup> but the date of removal was probably somewhat later because in January, 1651, and again in December, 1652, he was chosen one of two surveyors for the highways of Watertown for the succeeding years;<sup>14</sup> in October, 1653, JAMES<sup>1</sup> still owed Watertown certain taxes, while in February, 1653, and March, 1655, Watertown owed small amounts to him for work done for Widow Braybrooke.<sup>14</sup>

JAMES<sup>1</sup> had, however, purchased<sup>1</sup> land in Cambridge Farms late in 1649 some of which he sold in 1651 and probably about 1651 he removed to this rather remote location where his home is said to have been<sup>1</sup> on an elevation commanding an extensive view and also to have been on what in 1913 was<sup>1,3</sup> Wood Street in Lexington. Here he was too remote from Watertown and especially from Cambridge to have taken any part in public affairs, and indeed no evidence has been found suggesting that he even possessed church membership and a resultant privilege of freeman-ship while in Watertown.

In October, 1664, when a threat to the continuance of their charter privilege

\*The parentage of Mary, first wife of John<sup>1</sup> Grout is at last established herein, beyond reasonable question (see Addendum to Whale, p. 663) so that if the sisterly tradition can be verified, we will have also therein the parentage of our ANNE.

existed (see Appendix "B", p. 694) a hundred and seven heads of families of Cambridge signed a petition to the General Court favoring and urging its continuance and among these signers<sup>4</sup> were "JEAMES X CUTLER" and "SOLOMON PRENTES." It is interesting to note that an additional list of thirty-five names signed to this petition is headed by the following preface:

"We, whose names are subscribed, being of the traine band and singell men in the above sayd town, doe also desire to manifest ourselves to be of the same mynd with our parents, masters and the aged men and householders of the place."

Recorded<sup>4</sup> as of February, 1675-6, a phrase that seems odd, refers to the habit of "fishing their Indian corn, which is the principal part of their husbandry and livlihood," which implied the burial of two or three small fish in each corn hill as fertilizer.

Though it appears that JAMES<sup>1</sup> had probably lacked church membership in his earlier days at Watertown, his name headed the list of eight petitioners representing those thirty called the "Farmers" of Cambridge Farms whose plea, dated October 11, 1682, to the General Court<sup>4</sup> requested the privilege of being created a separate precinct and of building a church of their own and hiring a minister, because their homes were from five to ten miles from the Cambridge Church. The Cambridge people objected to the plan and prevailed on the Court to reply in the negative but a renewal of the petition in 1691 brought the desired permission<sup>3,4</sup> which was obtained amicably.\* A subscription list dated in 1691 toward the building of a meeting house<sup>1,3</sup> in the "precinct" carried the names of JAMES<sup>1</sup> CUTLER for £1 and Thomas Cutler for £2. The structure was completed in 1692 and the Rev. Benjamin Estabrook was engaged as pastor.<sup>3</sup> In 1712, twenty-one years after their establishment as a precinct "the Farmers, according to their original design, sought to be entirely separated from the town of Cambridge, and to be a township by themselves."

The will<sup>1,2,3</sup> of JAMES<sup>1</sup> CUTLER of Cambridge Farms dated<sup>1,2</sup> November 24, 1684, when he was seventy-eight was proved by his sons Thomas<sup>2</sup> and John<sup>2</sup> nearly ten years later, on August 20, 1694, the testator having\*\* died<sup>3,6</sup> on July 17, 1694, at the age of about eighty-eight. The will made during the life of JAMES<sup>2</sup> who pre-deceased his father, gave lands to JAMES<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup> and Samuel<sup>2</sup>. To the rest of the children (including his two step-daughters, by his second wife Mary, widow of Thomas<sup>1</sup> King, viz., Mary Johnson and Sarah Parke) while to his own sons Thomas<sup>2</sup> and John<sup>2</sup> he gave equal portions of the balance of his estate, taking into consideration the value of specified gifts of money, land or goods, given (doubtless at the time of marriage) to John Collar, Richard Parks, daughter Parmenter, Sarah Waite, Mary Johnson, Hannah Winter, Joanna Russell and daughter Jemima, these gifts to be accounted as parts of the beneficiaries' shares. To his sons Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>2</sup> and Samuel<sup>2</sup> the testator gave his house and lands not otherwise disposed of, they paying to the other legatees their several proportions according to the will in three annual payments.<sup>1</sup> Thomas<sup>2</sup> and John<sup>2</sup> were made the executors. The estate amounted to over £108.

The picture which we acquire of JAMES<sup>1</sup> CUTLER portrays a diligent, honest,

\*In March, 1699-1700, Cambridge "voted to give the little meeting-house bell to the Farmers . . ." for Capt. Andrew Belcher had given them another.<sup>4</sup>

\*\*Many publications<sup>1,22,35,36</sup> claim he died on May 17, 1694. It probably had been written as the "5 mo." which in those days would have been July.

persevering man of very kindly, generous instincts since he served his sons-in-law and his step-daughters equally with his own.<sup>1,2,3</sup>

The children of JAMES<sup>1</sup> and ANNE or ANNA (—) CUTLER, all born in Watertown were<sup>1,2,3,4,13</sup>

- i. JAMES<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- ii. Hannah<sup>2</sup>, b. July 26, 1638; d. after March, 1684-5, when her 9th child was born and before Dec., 1689, when her husband's will failed to mention her; m. by about 1660-2 John<sup>2</sup> Winter (John<sup>1</sup>) of Cambridge Farms.
- iii. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. Jan. 28, 1639-40; bur. Dec. 30, 1644.
- iv. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. Mar. 29, 1643 or 1644; is said to have m. as his second wife John<sup>1</sup> Collar.

The children of JAMES<sup>1</sup> CUTLER by his second wife,<sup>10</sup> widow Mary (—) King were

- v. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. July 22, 1646; d. after Aug. 1685; m. abt. 1667 John<sup>3</sup> Parmenter "3rd" (John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>1,37</sup>
- vi. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1648; d. at Lexington July 13, 1722; m. by 1673-4 Abigail (—) who d. Feb. 19, 1711, ae. 65.
- vii. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1653; d.<sup>16</sup> at Weston Jan. 17, 1743-4, "ae 89" having m. by 1673-4 Thomas<sup>2</sup> Waite (Richard<sup>1</sup> of Watertown).<sup>8</sup>
- viii. Joanna<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1660; d.<sup>22</sup> Nov. 26, 1703, ae. 42-3; m. June 19, 1680, Philip<sup>2</sup> Russell (William<sup>1</sup>).
- ix. Jemima<sup>2</sup>, b. . . . .; d. at Southborough<sup>16</sup> Mar. 15, 1744; m. at Woburn<sup>12</sup> Sept. 22, 1697, Zerubbabel<sup>3</sup> Snow b. 1672 (JOHN<sup>2</sup>, RICHARD<sup>1</sup>).<sup>9</sup> They had nine children.<sup>9</sup>

Children of JAMES<sup>1</sup> CUTLER by his third wife Phebe<sup>2</sup> Page, the first two born at Cambridge Farms<sup>6</sup> were

- x. John<sup>2</sup>, b. Mar. 19, 1663; d. at Lexington<sup>6</sup> Sept. 21, 1714; m. Jan. 1, 1693-4, Mary<sup>3</sup> Stearns (Isaac<sup>2</sup>, Isaac<sup>1</sup>).<sup>8</sup>
- xi. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, b. Nov. 8, 1664; d. after father's will.
- xii. Phebe<sup>2</sup>, birth not recorded; unm. in 1684, further record is suggested in<sup>59</sup>.

JAMES<sup>2</sup> CUTLER (*James*<sup>1</sup>) was born at Watertown November 6, 1635, died<sup>3</sup> at Cambridge Farms on<sup>35</sup> July 30 or 31, 1685, at the age of nearly fifty. He married at Sudbury<sup>20</sup> on June 15, 1665, LYDIA<sup>2</sup> MOORE widow of Samuel Wright (see Moore, p. 447 and Wright, p. 686) who survived him thirty-eight years, dying his widow at Sudbury<sup>20</sup> November 23, 1723. Like his father he was a farmer<sup>1</sup> of Cambridge Farms, now Lexington, and had bought of his father land<sup>1</sup> on the brook near the Concord line (see map p. 255) which tract was increased by the will of his father after the death of JAMES<sup>2</sup>.

About the only personal item we find pertaining to JAMES<sup>2</sup> is the fact of his service in King Philip's War under Capt. Daniel Henschman when on September 23, 1676, he had wages due him<sup>21</sup> in the amount of £1-4-3.

The line of JAMES<sup>2</sup> disappeared from Massachusetts for his son James<sup>3</sup> died in 1691 probably unmarried; Samuel<sup>3</sup> was unable to care for himself in 1727 in Connecticut; Joseph<sup>3</sup> died in 1715 perhaps in Waltham leaving only daughters; JOHN<sup>3</sup> and Isaac<sup>3</sup> removed to Killingly, Connecticut and Thomas<sup>3</sup> to Warren, leaving none in the Lexington vicinity to carry on the name line of JAMES<sup>2</sup>.

He made his will July 28, 1685, and died<sup>3,35</sup> two or three days later. It called him "sick of body". The inventory of £226 valuation was taken by his brother Thomas<sup>2</sup> Cutler and brother-in-law Jacob<sup>2</sup> Moore. The will was proved October 8, 1685, by his widow LYDIA and her brother BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> MOORE, executors.<sup>2</sup> It

gave<sup>1,2,3</sup> to LYDIA the home lot with the dwelling, barn and other buildings; to the sons James<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup> and Thomas<sup>3</sup> shares in the Great Meadow as they came of age, to his daughter Ann £5 at her marriage and instructed wife LYDIA to divide the balance of his property among the other unnamed children when they came of age. This would apply to our JOHN<sup>3</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> and Isaac<sup>3</sup> who were aged respectively ten, four and one when their father died. As has been stated, wife LYDIA survived JAMES<sup>2</sup> for thirty-eight years, as his widow, so the rearing of their children, all eight of whom were minors at their father's death, would have rested wholly upon her.

The known children of JAMES<sup>2</sup> and LYDIA (MOORE) CUTLER all born at Cambridge were<sup>1,2,3,4,6</sup>

- I. James<sup>3</sup>, b. July 12, 1666; d. Feb. 1, 1690-1, at Lexington.<sup>6</sup>
- II. Ann<sup>3</sup>, b. Apr. 20, 1669; d. aft. Aug., 1707; m. at Lexington Sept. 26, 1688, Richard<sup>3</sup> Bloise [Richard<sup>2</sup> and Michael (Jennison) Bloise].<sup>8,16</sup>
- III. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, twin, b. May 2, 1672; living 1727 probably at Killingly, when his brother JOHN<sup>3</sup> provided for his support by four sons of the said JOHN<sup>3</sup>.
- IV. Joseph<sup>3</sup>, twin, b. May 2, 1672; d. perhaps at Waltham in 1715 between May 30 and Dec. 23; m. Hannah (—).
- V. JOHN<sup>3</sup>, see following.
- VI. Thomas<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 15, 1677; d. at Warren<sup>16</sup> Dec. 23, 1759, in his 82nd year; m. 1st abt. 1702 Sarah<sup>4</sup> Stone (Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Gregory<sup>1</sup>)<sup>11,16</sup> mother of all his children; m. 2nd Apr. 10, 1751, Lydia (Bowman) Simonds.<sup>3</sup>
- VII. Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 14, 1680-1; no further record.
- VIII. Isaac<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1684; d. at Killingly, Conn. June 8 or 18, 1758, ae. 74; m. there about 1712-3 Sarah (—) who d. June, 1763, ae. 75.

JOHN<sup>3</sup> CUTLER (*James<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>3</sup> at Cambridge Farms on April 14, 1675, died at Killingly, Connecticut\* after<sup>3</sup> September 8, 1727, and is said<sup>35,36</sup> to have died in 1729 aged 54. He married at Woburn<sup>1,3,10,12</sup> on February 6, 1700-1, HANNAH<sup>3</sup> SNOW (see SNOW, p. 556).<sup>9,10</sup> The death of his father when JOHN<sup>3</sup> was but ten years old argues that his mother's influence would have been a controlling factor in his habits of life.

His wife HANNAH brought her church letter from Woburn to the church at the Farms on July 5, 1702, and JOHN<sup>3</sup> was received into full communion there on February 13, 1704. He lived at Cambridge Farms until he was about thirty-eight having eight of his eleven children born there and baptized in the church which his grandfather JAMES<sup>1</sup> had petitioned for, after which he removed to Windham County, Connecticut about 1713, following his own younger brother Isaac<sup>3</sup>. Shortly before his removal from Cambridge Farms that locality became legally "Lexington." Throughout the life of JOHN<sup>3</sup> there, he had been called "Junior" because of the presence of his uncle John<sup>2</sup> who lived until 1714.

Reports vary, one stating that JOHN<sup>3</sup> bought land in Connecticut as early as 1706 — which seems doubtful — but another which was quite true was that JOHN<sup>3</sup> and his brother Isaac<sup>3</sup> acquired the sawmill built very early by James<sup>3</sup> Leavens close to the Rhode Island line, on a brook running into the Assawaga or Five Mile

\*Notice was given in the preface that the incessant repetition of the word "Massachusetts" would be avoided in this volume for brevity's sake and that reference to a state would only be made when a family removal from Massachusetts had taken place. We now modify that notice by stating that since four generations of CUTLERS, JOHN<sup>3</sup>, HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup>, MANASSEH<sup>6</sup> and EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> resided in and near Killingly, Windham County, Connecticut from 1713 until 1794 (and we have plainly announced that removal) we shall in this chapter similarly omit a repetition of the word "Connecticut". The only other ancestral family of ours to come to this locality was that of HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> CLARK.

River. This was the first sawmill east of the Quinebaug<sup>40</sup> and may have been the sawmill still owned (or partly owned) by JOHN<sup>3</sup> when he divided his estate<sup>17,35</sup> in September, 1728. After the death of JOHN<sup>3</sup> in 1729, Isaac<sup>3</sup> and his sons still continued in the milling business<sup>40</sup> on the Assawaga until 1748 or later. When JOHN<sup>3</sup> removed to Killingly he paid £120 to James<sup>3</sup> Leavens for about two hundred acres of land adjoining that of his brother Isaac<sup>3</sup>.

Killingly Township, in general terms, was incorporated in 1708 within the southern part of what had been the Nipmuck Country (see map, p. 618). In later terms, it occupied the northeast corner of Windham County in the Colony of Connecticut. It was then an unusually large township extending at first from the Plainfield line north to the colony boundary (its own boundary lines being parallel and nine miles apart) and from the Quinebaug River eastward to the Rhode Island line. Its Indian name had been euphonious "Aspinock" though the whites called<sup>40</sup> it the Whetstone Country from the brook which drained it and why it should have been changed to deadly "Killingly" is hard to understand. It had been owned by the Colony of Connecticut rather than by individuals or corporations and may have, consequently, had an advantage in price as an attraction to settlers for it was quite hilly and rocky, alternating with marshes and sand flats, and not particularly fertile, but its streams furnished good mill sites. It had been laid out in 1708 as a township with certain requirements as to the number of settlers required, and with a price of £40 due in October 1709. That amount was paid promptly and about thirty settlers were then on the ground, including Isaac<sup>3</sup> Cutler, younger unmarried brother of our JOHN<sup>3</sup> and their cousin Jonathan<sup>3</sup> (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, JAMES<sup>1</sup>).<sup>17</sup>

Killingly had as older-settled neighbors to the westward the group which had migrated in 1686 from Roxbury to what is now Woodstock (see Gore, pp. 328) and a number of these families gradually worked their way eastward into Killingly and became closely associated with our people. For instance John<sup>2</sup> Leavens of Roxbury became one of the "goers" to Woodstock (see Gore, pp. 327) selling in 1687 the Roxbury land which had been his father's and which included the triangular tract which presently became the Roxbury garden and nursery of our PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER known for long as "GARDNER'S Green". After the arrival of John<sup>2</sup> Leavens and his family in Woodstock, the lives of his sons James<sup>3</sup> and Joseph<sup>3</sup> are of interest to us in various ways; as youths in 1698 and onward before Killingly's settlement they gathered tar and turpentine from the pines of what became Windham County. They sold these products to James<sup>2</sup> Corbin of Woodstock. About 1700 Joseph<sup>3</sup> Leavens at the age of seventeen, working alone in the woods, was bitten on the thumb by a rattlesnake. Knowing that he must act quickly if he saved his life, he courageously chopped off the thumb and then killed the snake. In later years his daughter Lurana<sup>4</sup> Leavens became the wife of Benoni<sup>5</sup> Cutler (Timothy<sup>4</sup>, JOHN<sup>3</sup>) a most patriotic and useful man. James<sup>3</sup> Leavens settled in Killingly, acquiring extensive land holdings there, including one or more mill sites on the Five Mile River. When Isaac<sup>3</sup> and Jonathan<sup>3</sup> Cutler arrived from Cambridge Farms in 1709 they bought land from James<sup>3</sup> Leavens as did also our JOHN<sup>3</sup> CUTLER when he arrived in 1713. JOHN<sup>3</sup> paid to James Leavens £120 for about two hundred acres of land adjoining that of his brother Isaac<sup>3</sup> which is described as having been north east<sup>15</sup> of Rattle Snake (or Killingly) Hill.

In October, 1710, Lt. Peter<sup>2</sup> Aspinwall in behalf of the residents of Killingly

asked the approval of the General Court to tax<sup>15</sup> non-resident owners fifteen shillings on the hundred acres to help build a meeting house, a minister's house and to settle a minister. This request was granted and freedom from Colony taxes was also accorded so that an equivalent sum might be added toward the projected building. In July, 1711, the town offered to give Rev. John Fisk three hundred and fifty acres if he would settle among them, and he moved in and held Sabbath services though it was October, 1715, before he was ordained and a church finally organized.<sup>15</sup> James<sup>3</sup> Leavens, Peter<sup>2</sup> Aspinwall and others brought letters from Woodstock and though record is not found of membership acquired by JOHN<sup>3</sup> CUTLER, his children born in 1717 and 1719 were baptized<sup>17</sup> so the CUTLER family were surely affiliated.<sup>34</sup>

JOHN<sup>3</sup> CUTLER is said<sup>17</sup> to have made a division of his property on September 8, 1727, which must have been the equivalent of a will, but the exact date of his death is not shown. It gave to his sons Seth<sup>4</sup>, Timothy<sup>4</sup> and Uriah<sup>4</sup> one hundred seventy-six acres plus a two-thirds ownership in his sawmill, gave each of them a yoke of oxen and a one-third part of his utensils for husbandry. It bound those three sons with their brother HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> to share equally the expense of maintaining their uncle Samuel<sup>3</sup> Cutler during his life; bound each to pay the daughters Mary<sup>4</sup> and Jemima<sup>4</sup> £5 apiece within three years of the father's decease. It gave to daughter Hannah<sup>4</sup> twenty acres of land and a part of his household goods at the death of his wife. It gave to daughters Abigail<sup>4</sup>, Patience<sup>4</sup> and Keziah<sup>4</sup> equal parts of a certain tract of land and gave to HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> the balance of his property, enjoining him to provide his mother HANNAH "with meat, drink, and apparel, both in sickness and in health, during her life: also to provide for bringing up the young children until they became of age and to give £5 to each of his sisters except Hannah<sup>4</sup>.

Of this family Uriah<sup>4</sup>, the youngest son, sold his inheritance in 1734-5 and removed permanently to Morristown, New Jersey; Seth<sup>4</sup> removed to Hampton, Connecticut, to which place he took his church letter<sup>17</sup> by February, 1738; Timothy<sup>4</sup> died at the age of about thirty-one at Windham leaving a widow with a posthumous son. In the case of Timothy<sup>4</sup> the court ordered HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> to take inventory and settle the estate;<sup>17</sup> and of the sons of JOHN<sup>3</sup>, HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> who inherited the homestead at Killingly was the only one who remained there.<sup>17</sup> His obligations to his mother and the younger children would have held him, whether he chose or not.

There is reason to believe that the "Mrs. Hannah Cutler" who married November 2, 1736, Deacon Eleazer Bateman was our widow HANNAH.

The known children of JOHN<sup>3</sup> and HANNAH (SNOW) CUTLER, the first eight baptized at Cambridge Farms as children of JOHN Jr., the others at Killingly, Connecticut, were<sup>3,6,17,22</sup>

- i. Hannah<sup>4</sup>, bap. Nov. 30, 1701; said to have m. a Dr. (—) Holmes of Woodstock, Conn. but no such person is seen there.<sup>18</sup>
- ii. Mary<sup>4</sup>, bap. July 4, 1703; m. at Woodstock, Conn., as his 3rd wife, on Oct. 29, 1730, Joseph<sup>4</sup> Bacon, Jr. (Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup> George,<sup>1</sup>).<sup>8,19</sup>
- iii. Seth<sup>4</sup>, twin, bap. July 7 or 29, 1705; d. Feb. 9, 1751, at Windham, Conn.;<sup>17,19</sup> m. there Oct. 22, 1734, Elizabeth Babcock.
- iv. Timothy<sup>4</sup>, twin, bap. July 7 or 29, 1705; d. abt. 1736-7, at Windham,<sup>17</sup> Conn.; m. Mar. 17, 1733, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Leavens of Killingly (James<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).
- v. HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup>, see following.
- vi. Dinah<sup>4</sup>, bap. Sept. 4, 1709.

- vii. Jemimah<sup>4</sup> (called Jeremiah), bap. May 27, 1711; d.<sup>18,19</sup> after March, 1750; m. at Woodstock, Conn. Apr. 19, 1731, Benjamin<sup>3</sup> Corbin (Jabez<sup>2</sup>, Clement<sup>1</sup>).<sup>19</sup>
- viii. Uriah<sup>4</sup>, bap. Mar. 29, 1713; d. Feb. 5, 1795, aged 86 at Morristown,<sup>28</sup> N. J.; m. 1st there,<sup>28</sup> Dec. 15, 1743, Rachel Campfield, who joined the church Sept. 6, 1761; by her he had five children;<sup>29</sup> m. 2nd<sup>28</sup> Apr. 17, 1763, widow Sarah Whitehead.
- ix. Patience<sup>4</sup>, bap. Sept. 1, 1717; living<sup>35</sup> in Sept., 1727.
- x. Keziah<sup>4</sup>, bap. July 19, 1719; living<sup>35</sup> in Sept. 1727.
- xi. Abigail<sup>4</sup>, mentioned<sup>35</sup> in division of the estate in Sept., 1727.

HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> CUTLER (*John<sup>3</sup>, James<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>*) was born at Cambridge Farms (Lexington) being baptized there as the son of "JOHN Jr." on<sup>6</sup> April 20, 1707; died<sup>17,18</sup> at Killingly, Connecticut on October 4, 1792, at the age of eighty-five having married there on December 5, 1734, as his first wife SUSANNA<sup>4</sup> CLARK (see Clark, p. 184) who died April 8, 1774, at the age of sixty-two. He married there secondly about 1775-6 widow Abigail Robbins who died in 1791 aged seventy-two.

As has been stated, when HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> was not yet twenty-one years old the division of his father's estate (and the death of that father when HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> was but twenty-two) gave him the homestead, laid upon him the care of his mother for the rest of her life, the bringing up of the young children until they became of age, the payment of bequests of £5 from his father's estate to each of six sisters and a share, with his brothers, of the care of his uncle Samuel<sup>3</sup> Cutler during that man's life.<sup>17</sup> JOHN<sup>3</sup> CUTLER paid high compliment to his son HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> when he laid such a heavy responsibility upon him, and it was borne bravely and loyally.

On February 25, 1733, HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> was received into Killingly Church in full communion as was his wife SUSANNA on<sup>34</sup> June 24 or<sup>17</sup> 27, 1736, and he spent a long and active life<sup>17</sup> as a leading member of that body. The span of the life of HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> in Killingly encompassed both conflict and peace, as to religion, as to the eastern boundary of the colony and as to the Revolution.

The eastern or Connecticut-Rhode Island boundary was a long time in controversy. Contention and quarreling between these two colonies continued for sixty-five years until in 1727 the Privy Council in England entered into the matter.<sup>41</sup> Rufus Choate in referring to that situation is quoted as having once said<sup>41</sup> "The commissioners might as well have decided that the line between the states was bounded on the north by a bramble bush, on the south by a bluejay, on the west by a hive of bees in swarming time, and on the east by five hundred foxes with firebrands tied to their tails." Indeed a part of the original JOHN<sup>3</sup> CUTLER farm was finally lost<sup>40</sup> by a re-settlement of the Connecticut-Rhode Island boundary when the line actually passed through the family home<sup>35</sup> during its occupation by HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup>, and he presently removed to the vicinity of Killingly Hill. Some of his rights to land in Rhode Island were not disposed of until within the recollection of his grandson EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> (1767-1853). Poor Connecticut also had trouble over her western boundary but that was later and does not concern our interests.

In the meantime the re-survey of the Rhode Island boundary which cut the home and farm of HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> in two and caused his removal to the vicinity of Killingly Hill seems to have automatically placed him over the line in the Thompson Society, in the portion called the "South Neighborhood" for\* in May, 1742, and in November, 1744, HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> had his sons MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> and Ephraim<sup>5</sup>, respec-

\*These baptisms of the two sons of HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> may possibly have been performed in the North Parish because the First Society lacked a pastor at that time.

tively, baptized<sup>35</sup> by the Rev. Marston<sup>2</sup> Cabot (George<sup>1</sup>) the first minister of the North Society<sup>42</sup> who had been ordained there in December, 1729, and who served them until his sudden death<sup>42</sup> in April, 1756. Moreover, on May 9, 1751, a memorial<sup>31,37</sup> was presented to the General Assembly signed by six men including HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> CUTLER to the effect that they were all inhabitants of Thompson Parish in the town of Killingly but that their places of residence were nearer to the meeting house of the First Society, that the roads in that direction were much better and asking that they, with their estates, might be annexed to the First Society, which was granted.<sup>31</sup>

The First Society, in which the Rev. John Fisk had been ordained in 1715 when their first building was completed, had prospered under his care, having grown to over four hundred members when he suddenly resigned in July, 1741. The First Church Society was then without a pastor for several years and during that time great confusion arose because of the very evident need of a larger meeting house for such a numerous membership and especially because of their utter inability to agree upon a satisfactory location. The early settlers desired that it should be erected on Killingly Hill near where the First Society house had been since 1715, while some later comers resident farther south insisted that it should be near them and used some unlovely tactics to accomplish their ends. It finally became necessary for the General Assembly to intervene and another division<sup>32</sup> of the original Society\*\* resulted in October, 1745, making three religious organizations in Killingly, (a) the First or Central Society, (b) the North Society formed in 1728 which became Thompson (being served by Rev. Marston Cabot, 1730-56) and (c) the South Society of Killingly which built its meeting house on Break Neck Hill but did not prosper very well. In December, 1745, the central group which retained the name and much of the personnel of the original "First Society" decided to build a new home on the apex of Killingly Hill about one-fourth of a mile north of their old church and on the "east side of the country road." They were given<sup>37</sup> permission to use the material from the old building and their new structure was described as "a spacious, commodious edifice . . . having three great double doors, opening east, west and south; large square pews, furnished with lattice-work, a high pulpit and sounding board; galleries, front and sides, with rising seats and wall-pews in the rear and two flights of broad stairs leading to them."

In April, 1746, the Rev. Perley<sup>4</sup> Howe, H. C. 1731, was ordained as pastor<sup>43</sup> of the First Society of Killingly and served them until his death in March, 1753. In the meantime in May, 1751, as has been told, HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> CUTLER with his family and five other families<sup>31</sup> were permitted to be set off to the First Society.

The Rev. Mr. Howe was followed in this pastorate by the Rev. Aaron Brown, Yale 1749, who was ordained in January, 1754, and served that church<sup>44</sup> until his death in 1775. After his ordination he married, in November, 1754, Damaris (Cady) Howe, widow of his predecessor, and some time prior to 1761 he tutored her third son<sup>43</sup> Joseph<sup>5</sup> Howe and our MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER in preparation for their

\*In 1728 the Rev. Mr. Fisk acquired sixty new members for the First Society which more than offset<sup>37</sup> those lost to the North Society.<sup>40</sup>

\*\*The early comers, including<sup>37</sup> the Leavens, Cutlers and Batemans, were the ones who clung to the Killingly Hill location and the placement of the line setting off the third or South Society in October, 1745, specified that it was to run from the east side of the Quinebaug to the Rhode Island line running in such a way as "to leave Deacon Eleazer Bateman's dwelling-house ten rods north of said line. . . ."<sup>37</sup>

college course at Yale which they entered together in 1761, graduating<sup>44, 45</sup> with honors in 1765. Under these two ministers the First Society regained its prestige and usefulness "the head and heart of the large town [ship] with its three organized [religious] societies."<sup>37</sup> It is gratifying to note that HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> and his family were at last in peaceful religious surroundings. During the latter part of the life of HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup>, and following the death of the Rev. Aaron Brown, the First Church in Putnam was served<sup>44</sup> by the Rev. Elisha Atkins, Yale 1773, from 1784 until 1839, of whom we will hear later.

In 1760 HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> seems to have been quite busy with outside affairs, for that year he served<sup>39</sup> as collector of the country rate and with two others was also a collector of the town rates. About that time the First Church records were "much damnified by fire" and he and two others were named as a committee to arrange about a new book for the insertion of such records, for which they spent<sup>39</sup> ten shillings. It may have been in or about that year when he removed from his farm divided by the re-established Rhode Island line to a location near the new meeting house on Killingly Hill. In May, 1760, he appeared before the General Assembly with Rebecca (Wakefield) Clark, his wife's sister-in-law, widow of Josiah<sup>4</sup> Clark, petitioning for the official acceptance of a certified copy of the will of our HANNIEL<sup>3</sup> CLARK, the original of which had been burned with other probate records in 1753-4 (see Clark, p. 183). In 1760 HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> served on a second church committee. In January, 1775, thirty-four men of Killingly including HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> subscribed sums ranging from six shillings to £2-8 to buy a lot adjoining the meeting house property for a public common<sup>39</sup> which has ever since served the town.

Relative to the domestic situation in the family of HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup>, two of the five children born to wife SUSANNA, died in childhood, both of them having borne the name of "Hannah" as did the mothers of both parents. Of the three children who became adult, the younger son Ephraim<sup>5</sup> who was in business at the "Cross Roads" in Killingly died from the effects of a fall from a frightened horse in May, 1766, when he was twenty-two, leaving his parents utterly alone. In June, 1770, our Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> with his wife and two children came from South Dedham where he was studying theology, to visit his parents, who insistently urged that the little grandson EPHRAIM<sup>5</sup> named for his deceased uncle and then but little over three years old, should remain with them to ease their loneliness. This request was granted and though the child was taken to Ipswich Hamlet in September, 1771, at the ordination of his father, his own choice as well as that of his grandfather HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> was that he should return to Killingly where he grew up and remained as long as that grandfather lived. He was carefully taught and trained, as will presently be told, by his grandmother SUSANNA until her death on April 8, 1774, when EPHRAIM<sup>5</sup> was in his seventh year. After that the home was cared for by a housekeeper while the bond between the grandfather and grandson would have become constantly closer. In his later life EPHRAIM<sup>5</sup> wrote of one historic experience which occurred when he was just past eight years old:<sup>17, 36, 46</sup>

"I well remember that the express with the news of the battle of Lexington came directly to my grandfather's house in the night. He was in bed and I slept with him.

\*This battle which occurred during the forenoon<sup>70</sup> of Wednesday, April 19, was thus reported at Killingly fifty-five miles airline from Boston in the early morning hours of Thursday, April 20 and the march which was immediately undertaken by HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> and his fifteen neighbors would of course have been much longer.

He arose and fired his gun three times, which was doubtless the agreed signal as it was universally expected there would be a hostile attack from the British. Before sunrise he with fifteen others had started for the battlefield. He had the care of a quantity of powder which was kept in the meeting house. He gave directions to have half a pound delivered to each man as he called for it. The house was thronged through the day with parties of ten or twenty men who followed on towards Boston. I suppose that from the age of sixteen to seventy all left except sickness or some disability excused them. I remember that while the men were all away the women were thrown into quite a panic by a report which was started by some mischievous or evil-disposed person, that 'Mal-bones niggers' were coming to pillage and burn the place. Our house was filled with trembling, frightened women and children. There was not a firearm or weapon in the place and only a few aged men. I remember they prepared kettles of heated water and the boys were stationed as sentinels to give timely notice of their approach. My place was the top of my grandfather's gambrel-roofed house. But we saw no negroes nor indeed anybody else for the whole place seemed deserted."

So we have evidence<sup>72</sup> that HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> though about sixty-eight years old marched to fight for his country without waiting for the sun to rise. His name is not found on any formal muster roll, and admittedly he did not remain long in service after sufficient numbers had assembled for the country's safety. The way we know that he soon returned to his home is that EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> recorded<sup>36</sup> (without date but apparently about 1775-6) his grandfather's second marriage to Mrs. Abigail Robbins. EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> also recorded his grandfather's generosity in charging his housekeeper, before he marched away, to provide food\* etc. for all soldiers who called during his absence and in, himself, aiding their families during the soldiers' absence, estimating at over \$1,000 the contribution in such causes, beyond legal demands.<sup>36</sup>

In nearby Brooklyn the Windhamites point with pride to the Putnam Farm (see map, p. 618) and the field in which "Old Put," Maj. Gen. Israel<sup>4</sup>, left his oxen standing in the forenoon of Thursday, April 20, 1775, while he rode on his swiftest horse and with the use of relays wrote back from Concord on Friday April 21 as to the assemblage of troops and supplies. Popular regard links his ride with those of Revere and DAWES and may we not claim equal recognition for sixty-eight year old HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> CUTLER who started before the sun could rise, for the battle front on foot fifty-five or sixty miles away, airline, which may have been seventy-five or a hundred miles by road!

HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> has been described<sup>35</sup> as "a man who had a commanding influence with those around him, dignified in his appearance and manners, respected for his wise and prudent counsel and his great firmness of character. He was regarded as a truly benevolent and Christian man, a friend to the poor, and an intelligent, public-spirited citizen." One instance<sup>36</sup> of his benevolence concerned an aged woman, a church beneficiary, who had for a long time occupied a chair at his fire-side and enjoyed the hospitality of his house. She was so well satisfied with the treatment she received that she finally proposed that he should "keep her all the time and have all the blessing!"

His first wife SUSANNA was evidently an outstanding individual. The usual habit in those days was to take the women, wives and mothers, for granted and without comment. Therefore it is the more notable that we find in print repeated comment on SUSANNA, such as that she was<sup>35,37</sup> "a lady of great personal beauty

\*Each soldier was to be furnished also with a half pound of powder from the town's supply before starting out.

and strength of mind, with education in advance of her time." She devoted herself to the improvement of her children, ". . . a woman of uncommon culture."<sup>17</sup> "In manners and mental cultivation she was superior to most of her sex at that period."<sup>36</sup> She "devoted much of her time to instructing her children and early cultivated in them a love of learning."<sup>36</sup> And EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> who was under her immediate care and training for nearly four years, recorded of her<sup>36</sup> "My grandmother to whose care I was committed was a very intelligent woman and took much pains to instruct me daily." This unusual praise seems thoroughly justified in view of the outstanding accomplishments of her son MANASSEH<sup>5</sup>, and of her grandson EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup>. For she taught<sup>36</sup> six-year old EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> "to read well." Though she died a few days before he was seven, he had "read to her much of the Bible" and could repeat the Shorter Catechism; and by the time he was eight he had the task each Sabbath noon, after church service, of reading the war news from the New London Gazette to the elderly people who then filled the home of HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup>, all anxious to hear the latest news.<sup>36</sup>

The last three or four years<sup>17,36</sup> of the life of HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> were passed in extreme helplessness from palsy. He died in his eighty-sixth year and left his farm to his grandson EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> who had been as a son to him for twenty-two years.<sup>17</sup>

The children of HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> and SUSANNA (CLARK) CUTLER all born in Killingly, Connecticut were<sup>17,18,34,35</sup>

- i. Mehitabel<sup>5</sup>, b. Apr. 1 or 7, bap. 10, 1737; d.<sup>35</sup> Jan. 1, 1790, leaving an only daughter; m. Oct. 10, 1758, Simeon Lee and is said to have "removed to N. Y."
- ii. Hannah<sup>5</sup>, bap. Dec. 24, 1738; d. yng.
- iii. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup>, see following.
- iv. Ephraim<sup>5</sup>, b. Nov. 13, bap. 18, 1744, in Thompson Parish<sup>35</sup> by the Rev. Marston<sup>2</sup> Cabot; d. unm. at Killingly<sup>35</sup> May 22, 1766, as the result of a fall from a frightened horse and the horse falling upon him.
- v. Hannah<sup>5</sup>, b. Dec. 5, 1747; d. Dec. 25, 1753.

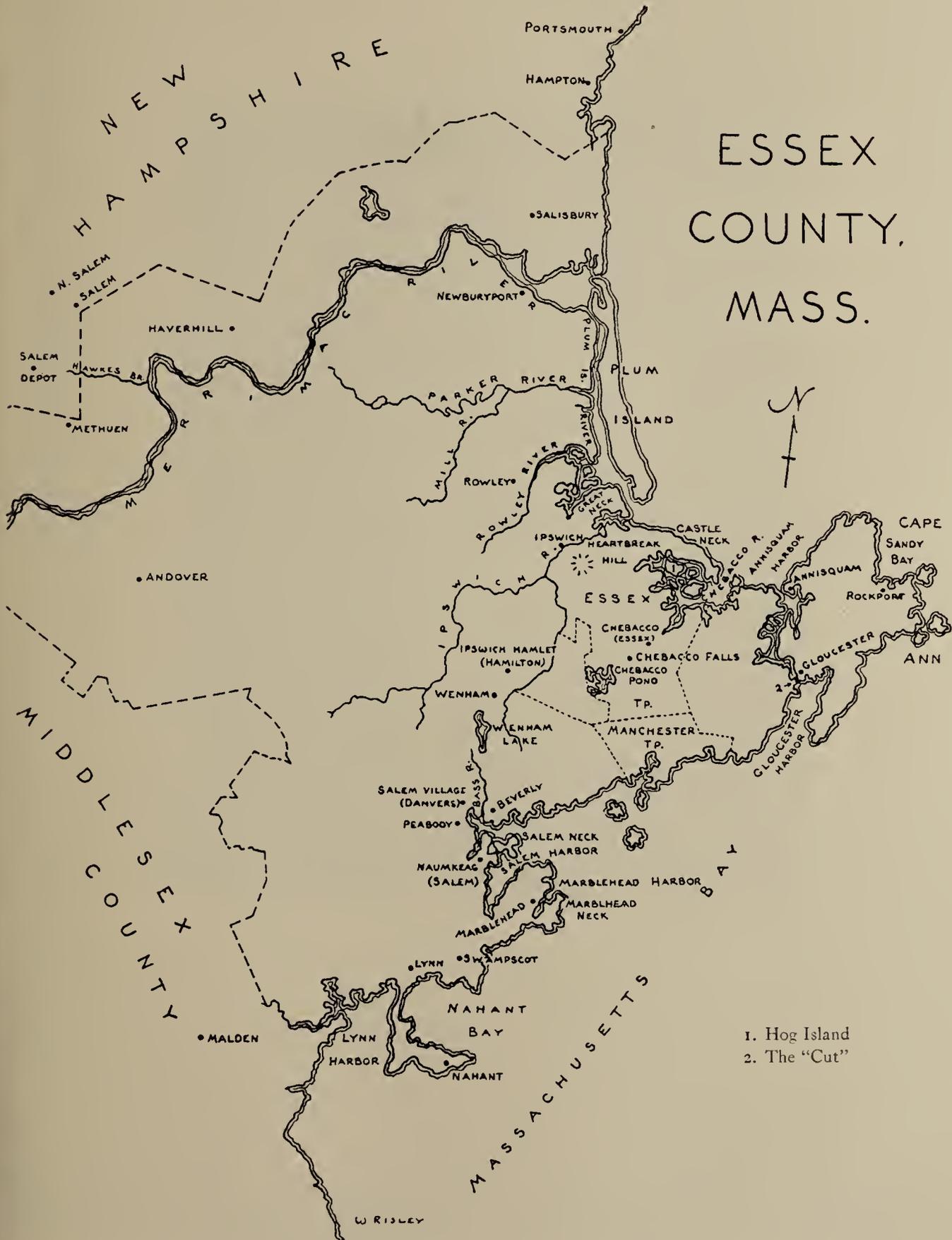
MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER (*Hezekiah<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, James<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>*) was\* born<sup>17</sup> at Killingly, Connecticut May 13, 1742, and baptized<sup>35</sup> in Thompson Parish May 30 by the Rev. Marston<sup>2</sup> Cabot; died at Hamilton on July 28, 1823, in his eighty-second year having married at Dedham on September 7, 1766, (see note, p. 211) MARY<sup>6</sup> BALCH (see Balch, p. 82).

In discussing or recording the life of this man, one is staggered by the multiplicity of interests and occupations in which he concerned himself with definitely acceptable service to science, religion, mankind. Since volumes *have* been written about his accomplishments (and other volumes *might* be) the scope of this article must be limited and the compiler has chosen to relate many of the little daily episodes which portray the color of the personal life of the man, listing with only the greatest brevity the really momentous accomplishments of his long, useful and over-full life, since they are discussed at length in many publications.<sup>58,63,68</sup>

In his youth on the Killingly farm MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> "grew up with such habits and principles as are calculated to form a useful and worthy character."<sup>35</sup> The farm work\*\* and rural pleasures of skating, fishing, gunning, etc. helped toward a fine physical development, valuable habits of industry, an inherent love of nature which

\*While the family records<sup>35</sup> show his birth as May 13, the official vital records of Killingly and other publications place it at May 28 but all agree that he was baptized on May 30.

\*\*We are told<sup>44</sup> that from his actual farm work in his youth he "acquired a skill in the use of many farming utensils, especially the sickle, which was somewhat remarkable, and of which he often gave specimens in subsequent life."<sup>44</sup>



ESSEX COUNTY, MASS.

- 1. Hog Island
- 2. The "Cut"

ESSEX COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

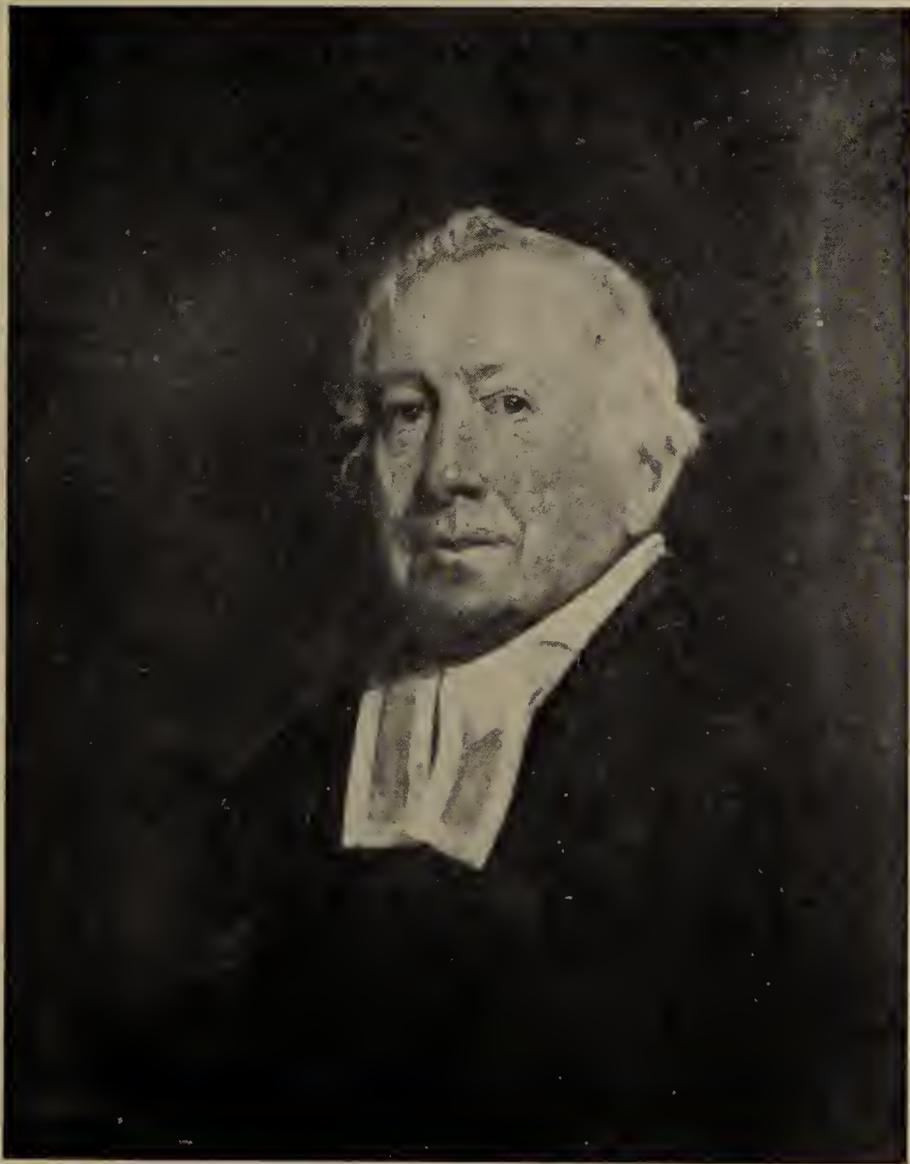
influenced his later studies and led him "to devote much time and thought to the pursuit of the different branches of natural history"<sup>35</sup> especially botany and astronomy. As has been stated his very exceptional mother SUSANNA (CLARK) CUTLER exerted herself to implant in her children a love of learning — and most successfully so in his case. As a youth he had the advantage of such schools as the country then afforded but the passing years developed in him a desire for a more liberal and thorough education. His parents made this possible by having him tutored and prepared for college by the Rev. Aaron Brown, then pastor of the Killingly Church who was also tutoring his own stepson Joseph<sup>5</sup> Howe, a brilliant scholar, and these two young men entered Yale together in 1761 when MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> was nineteen. The general plan<sup>36</sup> then was that he should study medicine, but during his college course while examining some books lately added to the library, an early publication of Linnæus on botany and other scientific works attracted his attention and evidently<sup>36</sup> influenced the studies of his later life. At their graduation on July 31, 1765, his friend Joseph<sup>5</sup> Howe ranked first<sup>45</sup> in their class while of MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> it is recorded<sup>44</sup> that "he was distinguished for his diligence and proficiency, and graduated with high honour." In 1766 and onward the astronomical notations were numerous in the Journal of MANASSEH<sup>5</sup>. A dated item would read<sup>35</sup> "Viewed Jupiter. Four moons were visible in this position:" and then he would illustrate.

After graduation MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> visited his mother's brother Zebediah<sup>4</sup> Clark who had settled in Dedham and was offered, and accepted, the opportunity to teach their school for a time. Little items bearing on local school conditions are found in the Journal MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> kept, as under "Jan. 4 [1766] Sat. Extremely cold. No wood at the schoolhouse" — which did not promise well for Monday's comfort. And "April 1, 1766. Concluded my school — between ninety and one hundred scholars. Bade them farewell with some counsels etc. In the afternoon only spelled, and concluded with catechising them."<sup>35</sup> While teaching in Dedham MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> made the acquaintance of the young lady who presently became his wife.

On May 20, 1766, after the closing of his school and the return of MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> to his father's home in Killingly, his younger brother Ephraim<sup>5</sup> was thrown from his frightened horse, quite near the family home and the animal fell upon him, crushing him so badly that he died the next morning. As a consequence MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> remained with his parents most of the summer of 1766 and on July 27 of that year became a member in full communion of the First Church under the Rev. Aaron Brown, his former tutor.<sup>35</sup>

The acquaintance of MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> with the BALCH family had opened up an unexpected business offer to him which caused him to lay aside, temporarily, whatever plans he had for a professional life. Mrs. Hannah (Sumner) Newman\* asked him to take over and run (probably close out) the importing and trading business which her first husband had left. This business included the retail sale of fabric for women's clothing and ship chandlery; the outfitting of whaling vessels and a sharing of the oil brought back, etc. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> made a hurried trip to Edgartown and accepted the proposition. Then on<sup>17,35</sup> September 7, 1766, at Dedham he was

\*She was a daughter<sup>51</sup> of our EDWARD<sup>9</sup> SUMNER and therefore aunt of "POLLY" BALCH, fiancée of MANASSEH<sup>5</sup>. She married secondly<sup>51</sup> on August 27, 1766, Jonathan Metcalf of Dedham. Her first husband the Rev. John Newman had been an early pastor of the Edgartown church before he went into business. Prior to her second marriage she presented a silver communion service to the church which service was still in use<sup>52</sup> in 1911. She also donated a fund of £333 for the benefit of deserving widows. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> handled her goods on a 20% commission basis and handled goods for others at the same time.



Reverend MANASSEH<sup>d</sup> CUTLER

*By the courtesy of Miss Mary Elizabeth Poole of Marblehead.*

MARY (BALCH) CUTLER  
wife of the Reverend  
MANASSEH<sup>s</sup> CUTLER



Hand Embroidery  
(in color)  
by MARY BALCH CUTLER  
owned by Mrs. Nancy  
(Cutler) Lininger.

married\* to MARY<sup>6</sup> BALCH by her father the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH and they removed at once to Edgartown to take up his new duties. The Journal kept by MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> listed<sup>35</sup> the guests who were invited to be present at the ceremony as four sons of EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER, (uncles of the bride), with their wives, with one Sumner cousin of hers; four members of the local Everett family, four members of the local Dean family (related to the bride),<sup>49</sup> Mr. Robert Williams and wife of Boston and Zebediah<sup>4</sup> Clark and wife of Dedham, maternal uncle of MANASSEH<sup>5</sup>. The ceremony occurred at seven in the evening after which an applicable Psalm was sung, a handsome supper was served "and the evening was spent in a very agreeable manner."<sup>35</sup>

After the young couple's arrival at Edgartown but few items are recorded, for MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> "had as much custom as he could possibly tend." In January, 1767, they set up singing meetings in the CUTLER home, assembling twice a week and "began to sing by rule, the first that had been practiced in this town."<sup>35</sup> In March, 1767, after he had studied for and been admitted to the bar, MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> was employed in at least two law suits<sup>35</sup> in the Court of Common Pleas of Norfolk County and he notes "My first attempt that way." In October he recorded that his sloop the "Favorite" had just landed safely at the Vineyard, laden with sugar "from the Mole of Cape. St. Nicholas", Hayti. He also imported salt from the Bahamas.

He recorded that in 1768 he made up his mind to study theology having "for many years had very serious thoughts of entering the ministry" and diligently undertook such study by himself, but by November, 1769, he had, to a considerable extent, settled up his affairs and those of Mrs. Newman (now Mrs. Metcalf) and left the Vineyard with his wife and the two sons she had borne him, for Dedham and the home of his father-in-law the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH under whom he spent nearly two years in intensive study of Divinity.<sup>35</sup>

The Journal recorded on Tuesday November 14, 1769, of MANASSEH<sup>5</sup>, "This day had my hair cut off,\*\* but with much reluctance. Had a dark wig;" and two weeks later he preached twice at Mendon, supplying in place of his father-in-law and noting that it "Being the first time I ever entered the sacred desk, was something intimidated." The texts he took were Luke 16:31 and First Corinthians 3:11. During the next two years, having been licensed, he preached intermittently at Douglas, Wrentham, Roxbury and Boxford.<sup>54</sup> In June, 1770, MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> with his wife and two young sons visited the home of his father HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> in Killingly and was urged to leave with the lonely grandparents little EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup>, namesake of the son they had lost in May, 1766. This was done and the child henceforth had the same wise care and mental training which had been his father's privilege. In May, 1771, MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> was given a call to settle at Ipswich Hamlet, "one mile from the sea and some thirty miles northward from Boston (see map, p. 209). This was the third parish of Ipswich and had just lost after fifty-four years of service its first and only minister, the Rev. Samuel<sup>8</sup> Wigglesworth.

September 11, 1771, was appointed by the church for the ordination of the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER at the Hamlet and invitations had been sent to ten churches to be represented at the Council by their pastors and two delegates each. This

\*The Journal<sup>35</sup> of MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> himself gives his marriage date as September 7 as do also certain other publications<sup>17,45</sup> in spite of the fact that the Vital Records of Dedham<sup>53</sup> quote September 23 as the day of filing an intention, and October 8 as the date of the ceremony.<sup>49</sup>

\*\*"In order to comply with the clerical costume of the period."<sup>57</sup>

included the Killingly Church which sent its pastor the Rev. Aaron Brown, our HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> CUTLER and Mr. Joseph Torrey. The Journal describes minutely the ordination ceremony.<sup>54</sup> On Wednesday, September 18 the teams with the CUTLER households goods set out from the home of the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH in Dedham where our family had lived during the two years of study which the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> had performed under his father-in-law. Several Balch relatives came north with them and other friends joined them in Boston, making a convoy of six carriages, while at Danvers they were met by a number of their parishioners, and at Beverly by an even larger number who had come out to meet and welcome them, having provided "a very handsome entertainment" at the parsonage where the CUTLERS were to live. The Journal continues: "Soon after our arrival our goods came. We set them up and then sang a Psalm. The people show us many marks of kindness and respect. A remarkably pleasant day."<sup>54</sup>

The year 1774 began as a year of sadness to this family for on January 8 the Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH died and just three months later on April 8, 1774, "after a very short illness" SUSANNA (CLARK) CUTLER, beloved mother of the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> passed away. Beginning in 1774 and continuing for forty years the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> "preached a lecture" every Thursday, which would have added greatly to his regular duties.<sup>54</sup> And then the time was at hand when the nation was talking of and fearing war. Even while MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> was a student at Yale the Stamp Act had been passed in March, 1765, to take effect on November 1 following, and it caused a universal uprising even among the students.<sup>45</sup> Its repeal in April, 1766, was joyously greeted by a huge bonfire in King Street, Boston.<sup>35</sup> But as time went on we read<sup>54</sup> in his Journal of fasts everywhere because of "the melancholy situation of our public affairs"; of the uprising of the country people with four thousand of them assembled in Cambridge in protest against the seizing of the powder in the Arsenal at Medford by the royal Governor; of passing through Boston to observe the intrenchments which the [British] soldiers were throwing up, upon the Neck, to defend themselves against the country people; of praying with the Ipswich Minute Men as they assembled, when word of the Lexington Battle came through, and then of joining them on their hurried march to Cambridge on the notable April 19, 1775; arriving there just as the British completed their humiliating retreat down "Battle Road"; and of stopping at Menotomy (now Arlington) where they saw the dead. A few days later "saw the Stockbridge Indians burn the head of Gen. Gage upon the green." In August "went to Roxbury and saw the works there which were fine" (see Sumner, p. 586). May 3, 1775, "viewed Boston from Dorchester Hill. Saw the Regulars at work fortifying Beacon Hill and the neck. We came to Roxbury and went as far as the George's Tavern (see Mears, pp. 431). The Regular sentinels and ours were about forty rods asunder." "Came home. Not much disposed for study." May 10, "This day the grand Continental Congress meets at Philadelphia."

In September, 1775, the Journal recorded that two or three Companies, and the next day one thousand more men, marched through the Hamlet on their way to Quebec with a note added later that "these troops suffered almost incredible hardships in their celebrated march by the Kennebeck River, through the wilderness of Maine, to Quebec." In the early part of 1776 the Journal told<sup>54</sup> of the making of saltpeter, for ammunition; of the evacuation of Boston on March 17 by the

British; of their demolition of the Castle\* on March 20 so that it became "a shocking heap of ruins." Visited the "Lady Juliana" a prize ship taken by a privateer which carried as cargo, besides sugar, rum, etc., cashew-nuts! In July, 1776, a group of four men including the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> went to Boston to be inoculated for small-pox by Dr. Manning, who punctured them in their arms, with success. In August the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> received a message\*\* from Col. Ebenezer Francis to go to Dorchester and supply his regiment as Chaplain for their three months term of service defending the town and harbor of Boston.<sup>36</sup> His church agreed to his performing this duty and four of his ministerial friends agreed to supply the pulpit while he was in the army. He lived in the barracks with the field officers and preached to the regiment each Sabbath day, but "found it very hard to speak abroad" (probably meaning in the open). When the regiment was reviewed by Gen. Washington attended by his aides-de-camp, the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> "went on to the parade with the other officers, and took my post on the right wing. As the General began to march I paid the first salute with the fire-lock. . . ." The next day the field officers, chaplain and surgeons "were invited to dine with the General. A very genteel dinner. Rose from table about 4 o'clock." On November 23 a committee from the General Court invited the regiment to tarry three months longer but they decided against it, so they were all taken off duty and sent home.

After these three months in the army the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> began the year of 1777 by a thorough resumption of his parochial duties of which not a fraction can be even hinted at here. He was methodical, industrious and almost tireless but even with those attributes, it is incredible that he could get any studying done when one reads of the bewildering numbers of lectures, ministers' meetings, fasts and thanksgivings, catechisings, visitings, weddings and funerals he recorded, in addition to which he personally supervised his garden and farm and for many years of his life also ran a private boarding school in his home as will presently be shown. The riding to nearby towns to attend councils or exchange pulpits would consume endless hours.

In February, 1777, he recorded briefly "Hauled wood — thirty teams. Got a fine quantity of good wood. Dined sixty-four persons." In June, 1777, the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup>, under the general direction of Dr. Manning of Boston, inoculated about fifty persons "some with puncture, and some with threads." They were attended by Dr. Manning but were visited daily by the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup>. In July he rode to Beverly to get some wine for the sacrament. Paid twenty shillings a gallon for it. In August he preached at Squam (see map, p. 673) and brought home with him "four fine lobsters as a rarity." During this year he studied French assiduously in addition to his ministerial subjects. In September because of the scarcity of West Indies molasses, he boiled<sup>54,56</sup> some cornstalk juice into molasses, finding by his first experiment that boiling away five parts made "tolerable molasses" so then he busied himself in planning suitable mills for grinding the stalks.

\*For some months numerous men of Tory tendencies had been forced to live at the Castle for their personal safety and when the British found it was necessary to evacuate Boston, these men and their families as well, embarked with the fleet.<sup>74</sup> The Castle had been mined and after the embarkation of the British the mines were fired. Gen. Washington set men to work to refortify the island and Paul Revere spent some time there either in charge or helping with repairs.<sup>74</sup>

\*\*The official record<sup>65</sup> of his service shows a confusion of dates, as: (a) that he was commissioned August 16, 1776; (b) that he marched September 2 and that (c) on September 5, 1776, Col. Ebenezer Francis recommended that he be commissioned and the council on that date (d) ordered that a commission be issued. His pay abstract for travel allowance dated November 27, 1776, at Dorchester Heights credited him with two days' allowance.<sup>65</sup>

In October he learned of Burgoyne's surrender and on November 7 he set out for Boston to see Burgoyne and his army come into Cambridge. ". . . The procession (with their military guards) reached near three miles." The Hessians "appeared to be as dull, heavy molded, and dirty a pack as ever I saw."

On August 4, 1778, the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> was asked by Gen. Titcomb to go to Rhode Island as Chaplain to his brigade in the unsuccessful expedition under Gen. Sullivan\*, undertaken to dislodge the British from Newport. Following his return in early September, he resolved to fit himself more perfectly to serve his parishioners medically, both as a service to them while their local physician was in the army and as an aid to himself financially. So he purchased a number of the best medical books, studied both medicine and anatomy and took instruction under his friend, Dr. Elisha Whitney,<sup>45</sup> accompanying him in his daily visits to his patients. He soon won for himself among the medical profession\*\* the reputation of being a safe and skillful practitioner.

The Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> was an enthusiast in the pursuit of knowledge, either for himself or in assisting others toward it. Soon after his settlement at the Hamlet, he began having a few scholars in his home. But the financial condition brought on by the Revolution caused him to undertake teaching in a more extensive way. Among his scholars were the sons of Captains Grant, Muchmore, Cabot and Cleaveland, nine boys from Salem, Samuel Gardiner and William Dodge from Cambridge and a Capt. Ingolson even "brought a French boy to live with me and learn English."<sup>54</sup> He "Had a window cut out in the school-room. Tables finished for my boys, and twenty stools."<sup>54</sup> And this service to the youth of New England continued with slight interruptions for over thirty-five years. Some prepared for college, others studied theology, while many studied navigation by means of lunar observations.

The Hon. Mr. Silsbee in a letter dated as late as 1849 wrote: "During the four years that I was Dr. CUTLER's pupil, and a resident in his family, very much of his time was devoted to botany, so much so as to attract attention, and to cause frequent calls upon him from different parts of our own country, and occasionally from Europe." And though no specific mention is made of the fact, the existence of this school very greatly increased the family burdens of wife MARY and about the time of her death it was given up. Imagine the task of feeding and housing a dozen or two boys in addition to one's family and duties as a minister's wife! And yet MARY (see plate xvii, p. 211) found time for elaborate embroidery of which some has endured<sup>89</sup> to the present day (see plate xvii, p. 211). MARY, who was highly praised for her kindly disposition,<sup>44</sup> died suddenly on November 2, 1815 "from the bursting of a blood vessel† of the lungs"<sup>62,64</sup> and about that time the Doctor gave up having pupils in his home.

During the Revolution, about 1781, a part of the library of the celebrated Dr.

\*The failure of this expedition resulted<sup>86</sup> from the sudden and unexpected lack of cooperation of the French fleet with the Continental forces, but some severe fighting occurred before our soldiers withdrew to the mainland. "A pair of handsome silver-mounted pistols, taken from the enemy" were presented to Chaplain CUTLER by the officers of the brigade. In 1817 these were presented by the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> to his grandson Charles<sup>7</sup> Cutler (EPHRAIM<sup>9</sup>).<sup>36</sup>

\*\*His Journal recorded<sup>54</sup> invitations he received from physicians in various towns, to watch operations, to assist in dressing an amputated arm, to assist in an autopsy, etc. "In due time he acquired a high reputation as a physician; and his success in the treatment of some of the most difficult cases, such as hydrophobia, the bite of a rattle-snake, lock-jaw, &c., became quite proverbial."<sup>44</sup>

†Other dates given<sup>44,45,57</sup> are November 3 and November 13.

Richard Kirwan was being shipped<sup>44,77</sup> across the Irish Channel when the vessel was captured by an American privateer which brought the prize to Beverly. There were more than a hundred precious scientific volumes in the collection which were sold to seven clerical and scientific men of Salem and vicinity, of whom the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> was one. The Rev. Joseph Willard of Beverly was their custodian for some time. These gentlemen offered compensation to Dr. Kirwan but he graciously preferred that the books should be an outright gift from him. They were presently removed to Salem where they became a part of what was first called the "Philosophical Library," then the Salem Athenæum and finally the Essex Institute.<sup>44,77</sup>

A digression is justified relative to the monetary difficulties of the times. When the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> became their pastor in 1771, the parish had voted him £133-6-8 "as settlement" and as salary, £85 and the use of the parsonage.<sup>56</sup> As a result of the Revolution, the people had been unable to meet their obligations to him. But in addition to that, the value of currency had depreciated so greatly as to form an impossibly heavy burden in itself. He wrote in his Journal "In 1777 money had depreciated as much, at least, as five for one, but in 1779 it was nearer twenty to one. I have spent considerable of an estate in the support of my family, and now am driven to the practice of physic." In March, 1779, he was invited to inform the parish what sum would satisfy him in settlement of his arrearages of salary. He declined to name a sum and the parish voted him £512 (depreciated currency) in addition to his regular salary. In November, 1779, the parish voted to pay him £1,500 "for the present year" which would have been in the depreciated currency. Perhaps that plan was not completed for in November, 1780, the parish chose a committee of five "to calculate" how much his original £85 would amount to under existing conditions. This apparently gave the committee a headache for at an adjourned meeting they recommended<sup>56</sup> that he be given £8,000 for his salary that year! That vote was reconsidered, however, and another taken\*\* that they raise £100 in silver for him.

As a suggestion of one of the ways in which a parson's purse was lightened, his Journal tells us that about that time, as Col. Jackson's regiment passed through the Hamlet "on their way from the eastward" (Maine) the parsonage housed two field officers and four commissioned officers while the soldiers camped in the meeting house and were supplied from the parsonage with sauce, milk, wood, etc. (without pay!). Under date of April 1, 1783, the Journal recorded "*News of Peace between America and Great Britain*" after eight years and ten days of war; and April 29 was chosen to celebrate the fact, with the nearby villagers gathering at Ipswich where the Proclamation from Congress was read, an oration delivered, songs sung, and thirteen cannon fired followed by feasting and fireworks at night.<sup>54</sup> So here closed one great epoch of the life of the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> and of the nation.

In his Journal the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> very frequently referred to his personal work in his garden. In September, 1777, he recorded "Planted out in my borders in the great alley Crown Imperials, Persian Iris, early and late Daffies and Peonies. Visited the sick." In April, 1779, he brought from Salem two scions of the Catalpa

\*He bought the parsonage, which had been owned by his predecessor, enlarged and greatly improved it, leaving it at his death, in external appearance, substantially as it was sixty-five years later (see plate xviii, p. 220).

\*\*It is stated<sup>57</sup> that in 1788 he received £100 (probably silver); in 1796, \$367; in 1797, \$400; from 1807 until 1821 it was \$450. Then at his own request<sup>57</sup> because of his increasing weakness, it was gradually lessened — to \$400 in 1821; to \$333.33 in 1822 and to \$150 in 1823 during which year he died.

tree; in August made a screw to express castor oil; in April, 1781, acquired five scions of Balm of Gilead and in April, 1782, sowed all of his West India seeds (he acquired plants from all over the world to try out their suitability to New England conditions and shared herbarium specimens with numberless people in many countries), set out mazzard cherries from Newbury, some thyme and hawksweed and budded several cherries and one plum tree; in March, 1783, tarred his apple trees against millers. In July, 1784, he was one of a group of scientists to explore the White Mountains, this being the earliest such effort undertaken. He and other scientists made a second trip of exploration to those mountains in July, 1804.<sup>54</sup>

A summary of his public honors shows that in addition<sup>63</sup> to his Bachelor's Degree at Yale, on July 31, 1765, he was accorded a Master's Degree at Harvard on July 18, 1770; was elected<sup>68</sup> a Fellow of the Academy of Arts and Sciences on January 31, 1781; was made a member of the Philosophical Society at Philadelphia in January, 1784 or 1785 and elected an honorary Fellow of the Massachusetts Medical Society in June of that year. In 1789 he was<sup>44</sup> granted an honorary degree of Doctor of Laws by Yale, and in 1791 he received that degree. He became<sup>44</sup> a member of the Massachusetts Agricultural Society and a charter member of the Massachusetts Historical Society in 1792; an honorary member of the Linnæan Society of Philadelphia in 1809; President of the Bible Society of Salem in 1811; a member of the American Antiquarian Society in 1813 and of the New England Linnæan Society in 1815.<sup>63</sup> Intermediately the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> was elected in 1800 to represent his people at the Massachusetts General Court and following that to represent them for two terms in the House of Representatives in Congress. In 1795 he was appointed by Washington, Judge of the Supreme Court of the Ohio Territory which he declined.

A unique memorial of the opening of the Northwest Territory occurred in 1937-8 when a group of Civilian Conservation Corps boys re-enacted in minute detail in costume, with a covered wagon and a double ox-team the trek of Marietta's founders in 1787-8. They started in December, 1937, from in front of the house (still standing) which had been the home of Dr. CUTLER in 1787, for the mouth of the Muskingum, and arrived there, as had their prototypes, according to schedule on April 7, 1938. Subsequently they visited many towns to the west and north which are incorporated within the Northwest Territory.

As late as 1937 an added honor was shown to the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> and to Gen. Rufus Putnam by the issuance of a three cent stamp commemorative of the passage of the "Ordinance of 1787" and of the opening of the Northwest Territory. It bore a portrait of each man and an outline map of the Territory, was in honor of the hundred and fiftieth anniversary of those events and was first put on sale simultaneously in New York City and in Marietta on July 13, 1937. The Post Office Department announced that sixty-five million of the adhesives of that issue would be printed.

The Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> had published<sup>44,45,57</sup> in 1787 three editions (one in French) of explanatory matter relative to a map of the Northwest Territory; during that year he published<sup>44</sup> an anonymous pamphlet, prophesying that many people then living would see our great western waters navigated by steam and that within fifty years the North West Territory would sustain more inhabitants than all of New England. It then seemed a random and improbable conjecture but has since risen to the dignity of a prophecy.

Of his clerical performances there were published: his charge at the ordination<sup>57</sup> of the Rev. Daniel Story,\* 1798; a National Fast Sermon, 1799; his charge delivered in 1805 at the ordination of the Rev. Perez Lincoln in Gloucester and a charge delivered in 1806 at Ipswich at the ordination of the Rev. David T. Kimball;<sup>45</sup> a sermon before the Bible Society of Salem, 1813; a Century Discourse on the church he served, 1814. Besides these there were published a goodly number of scientific articles of astronomical and botanical import in the *Memoirs of the American Academy*. One of these of about a hundred pages extent, published<sup>45</sup> in 1787, was the earliest American attempt at a classification of indigenous flora according to the Linnæan system and it "was instrumental<sup>44</sup> of bringing into use lobelia and other efficacious indigenous plants." It was reprinted in part in the "*Columbian Magazine*" at the suggestion of Dr. Benjamin Franklin, a personal friend of Dr. CUTLER'S.<sup>45</sup>

Of course the value of the long life of religious work performed by the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> is utterly beyond our knowledge or computation; so also is the value of his many years of educational effort, but it seems as though they could not have done more for the future peoples of our country than did his efforts following the Revolution in behalf of the formation of the Ohio Company of Associates and in the modification and passage of the Ordinance of 1787 which pertained then to the Northwest Territory and which in the succeeding years has become an indissoluble part of the laws and privileges of every state in our Union, lying west and north of Ohio. The subject is too far-reaching to be even attempted here, but the references given will suggest to those who are interested a few of the volumes in which the subject is discussed. The situation reduced to its simplest terms is this: at the close of the Revolution the government paid its soldiers off in paper — bills of indebtedness which then had no negotiable value. A group of Massachusetts men, mostly ex-military officers and soldiers, discussed the possibility of exchanging this paper for western land if they could get satisfactory terms and the guarantee of laws which would please them. That would mean a migration westward of some of the best New England blood, a considerable lessening of the government debt, and the acquisition by the impoverished ex-soldiers of something material in the place of worthless paper, as well as the holding of the western country against foreign occupation. The Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> joined this group most enthusiastically. At the Bunch of Grapes Tavern in Boston (see map, p. 30) on March 1, 1786, they formed an organization<sup>68</sup> called the Ohio Company. On March 8, 1787, the shareholders held a meeting at Brackett's Tavern in Boston and appointed three directors to make proposals to Congress. These directors appointed Dr. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER, one of their number, to act as their agent to purchase the lands from Congress, "leaving the matters of location and price mainly to his judgment."<sup>68</sup> The general plan had been pending before Congress for some months but without any resultant action. Dr. CUTLER left the Hamlet on June 23, 1787, by means of his horse and carriage for the three hundred mile trip and arrived in New York where Congress was in session on July 5. He had formed a very definite idea as to the specific details, both legal and otherwise, which a bill acceptable to him must include. The amended bill or "Ordinance" incorporating his requirements was presented

\*Daniel Story was being ordained to serve the church in Marietta, Ohio, by that body's request, but at Hamilton and in Dr. CUTLER'S church (see Story, p. 570).<sup>45</sup>

on July 9 and by means of his tact, diplomacy, statesmanship, was passed at its third reading on July 13 by the unanimous vote of every state and every member except a Mr. Yates of New York. On July 27 Congress authorized the contract for the purchase of lands on the terms specified by Agent CUTLER. This was fourteen days after the passage of the Ordinance and fifty-two days before the completion of the Constitution of the United States. The story is recommended to you. It is worth reading in its fullest detail. This was the famous "Ordinance of 1787" often called the "Ordinance of Freedom" and under its terms slavery was forever shut out of the Northwest Territory while many other hitherto unheard of civic blessings were made obligatory. He was a man and his was a mind far ahead of his time. To quote just one instance of its extreme and still continuing praise for the wisdom incorporated in that Ordinance we choose: "Never, probably, in the history of the world did a measure of legislation so accurately fulfill, and yet so mightily exceed the anticipations of the legislators. The ordinance has been well described as having been a pillar of cloud by day and of fire by night, in the settlement and government of the North-western States."<sup>68</sup> By the terms of this Ordinance and the agency accorded him, the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> and Maj. Winthrop Sargent, secretary of the Ohio Company, signed a contract\* for one million, five hundred thousand acres of land in behalf of that Company. The acquirement of subscribers who would invest their "paper" in this venture and, what was much more significant, would venture with their families into the far west required much time and energy, of which the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> furnished a goodly portion. He was also intimately concerned in the plans for the departure of the first adventurers (of whom his son Jervis<sup>6</sup> was one) surveyors, etc. who started westward on December 3, 1787, and arrived at the mouth of the Muskingum on April 7, 1788. Dr. CUTLER himself made a trip to Marietta starting on July 21, 1788, in a sulky (with a small traveling trunk\*\* under its seat) for the larger part of the journey, though the last hundred miles or more he changed to horseback. He traveled with two men on horseback arriving at Marietta on August 19, after a trip of seven hundred and fifty-one miles. He left on his return trip on September 8, arriving at his home October 15.

In 1812 a fire in his study destroyed an unknown but considerable amount of his papers and of course the amazing extent of his correspondence, scattered far and wide much manuscript from his pen. In spite of these losses it is most interesting to know that his great great grandson, General Charles G. Dawes, has assembled about ten thousand pages of manuscript in the handwriting of the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER covering the period 1762 to 1820; has had each one of these pages† mounted between protective coverings of transparent silk and then bound according to their subject matter, in seventy-six volumes. The perfection of fine craftsmanship in preservation impresses one as would a beautiful jewel casket

\*Certain agents who had been trying without success to come to terms with Congress for the purchase of western lands for speculation, asked the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> to purchase for them, as well as for the Ohio Company, so it came to pass that he and Maj. Sargent signed a contract for a total of five million acres of land — an unprecedented thing, indeed!

\*\*This small trunk, covered with hide from which the fur was not removed, is in the possession of his great, great, grandson Gen. C. G. Dawes. It is protected from moths by a glass case.

†The pages vary from 4x7½" to 13x16½". They are bound in full dark green polished French levant with gilt stamping and each volume is protected first by an extra linen cover and then by a box made to look like a book and, itself, bound in three-quarters levant. Twenty-two of the volumes contain sermons and the others a variety of subjects. This task of preservation and binding was performed by the late Ernst Hertzberg and Sons of Chicago.<sup>89</sup>

prepared to protect some very precious object. It gives one pride to see such honor of craftsmanship accorded to the preservation of the words and written thoughts of a most honorable ancestor.

The children of Mary (Cutler) Torrey and of Elizabeth (Cutler) Poole, being grandchildren of the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup>, and then resident in Danvers (Peabody) only nine miles from the Doctor's home in Hamilton, had the privilege and pleasure of frequent family reunions there. Sometimes in summer the garden and orchard with their beauty and fruits and the pond with its fish would furnish entertainment, for a couple of vehicles filled with youngsters who would arrive. Of these visits a granddaughter has written:

"As we passed the parsonage, and drove around the large area between this and the church, the first object we saw was the cottage of Jesse, the gardener, a freedman, whom Dr. CUTLER brought from Washington. He was an honest, good-natured mulatto, who, with a polite greeting . . . proceeded to devote himself the entire day to the enjoyment of the boys. . . ."

Of the house itself this granddaughter wrote:

"Over the porch on the south side, fronting the garden, I recollect a thrifty trumpet flower, its brilliant clusters supported by a large trellis. The porch nearer the street was embowered in the more modest honey-suckle, which on a summer morning sent its fragrance through all the house. On the same side, near the window of the front sitting-room, a tall well-developed moss-rose was lovingly domesticated. In a recess in this honey-suckle porch hung a large barometer, whose subtle movements with childish curiosity we watched, morning and evening, for indications of fair weather. The varied soil on the estate favored the cultivation of rare trees and shrubs, that are found only in their indigenous localities. Here grew the pawpaw and persimmon by the side of strange foreign plants; and in a swamp, not distant, flourished a transplanted magnolia, and in the garden a large tulip-tree. He introduced from England and successfully cultivated the buckthorn, a living, charming substitute for the dead, barren stone wall."

At other times a sleigh ride would precede Thanksgiving festivities for children and their parents and the picture furnished us is of

"The large, square parlor, the glowing radiance of the huge hickory fire that illuminated every countenance; grandmother, with her sweet face and ladylike manner, sitting near the fire; grandfather, in his large arm-chair under the mirror opposite the fire, and the space on either side filled with his children and happy descendants, engaged in merry, entertaining conversation, made an attractive picture of an old family circle. . . . The study was a large, low-studded room in the southwest corner of the third story, overlooking the hills and dales within a large circumference. The spacious study-chair,\* placed in front of the cheerful Franklin stove, was furnished with a movable slab, on which his sermons were written."

While of the church services held by the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> and the deep respect accorded him by his parishioners this granddaughter wrote:

"After the patient audience had sat through the two hours' service with no extra warmth but that each supplied to himself (for it was winter), we were dismissed with the usual benediction. Instead of the rushing process by which churches were often vacated, the congregation silently and reverently stood in quiet expectation. During this impressive pause, their pastor was deliberately preparing to leave the church. As

\*It is interesting to hear that the man who performed the careful preservation of the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> manuscript (see Note p. 218) when on an eastern trip, visited the home of Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> in Hamilton and noted<sup>89</sup> the two worn places in the floor of his study, in front of where his chair stood, where his feet had rested for so many years.

he passed down the aisle, he was greeted with a respectful bow from every pew, which with head and hand he gracefully returned; and, when he had reached the door, the people slowly retired."

We are told<sup>57</sup> that "In person, Dr. CUTLER (see plate XVI, p. 210) was of a light complexion, above the common stature, erect and dignified in his appearance. His manners were gentlemanly; his conversation easy and intelligent. . . . His voice, in preaching, was not loud; but it was distinct and audible to his congregation. . . . Amid his growing infirmities he strove, and was enabled, to perform his parochial duties, till within four years of his decease. Even during this period, he for the most part preached and visited his flock. He knew that his end approached and no longer able to comply with his wish to be publicly useful, he had assistance several months previously to his death. Shortly before this, he voluntarily relinquished the most of his salary though it was legally his due."<sup>57</sup>

It is said<sup>78</sup> that "neatness was his passion and everything in his library and about his place was in perfect order"; that he was "usually attired in a black velvet suit, with black silk stockings and silver knee- and shoe- buckles. His manners were courtly and he entertained most graciously the many guests who came to his house in Hamilton."<sup>78</sup> A grandson\*of his described<sup>44</sup> his personal appearance as uncommonly prepossessing — a florid complexion; a good-humored expression of countenance; a full-proportioned, well-set frame of body. He was remarkably slow and deliberate in all his motions. He possessed a natural dignity of manners, in which there was no air of stiffness or reserve, but, on the contrary, the utmost frankness and cordiality. He was very fond\*\* of society. His conversation interspersed with anecdotes and illustrations drawn from a wide experience of the world, made him a most entertaining and instructive companion."<sup>44</sup> Another description<sup>45</sup> calls him "tall and portly, in manners courtly and dignified." One writer tells<sup>44</sup> that Dr. CUTLER suffered from asthma for twenty-four years "which though slight at first constantly increased until it finally terminated in consumption (Yale Annals). For the last year or two he was obliged to have some one to support him in his walk from his house to the pulpit, and then to preach, sitting in an arm chair, which was placed there for his accommodation. . . ." <sup>44</sup> The Hon. George F. Hoar said of him that "He was probably the fittest man on this continent, except Franklin, for a mission of delicate diplomacy."<sup>54</sup> The discourse delivered at his funeral by Dr. Benjamin Wadsworth (H. C. 1769) of Danvers was published.<sup>45</sup> He was buried in Main Street Cemetery, Hamilton<sup>61</sup> (see plate XIX, p. 221).

The children of Rev. MANASSEH<sup>6</sup> and MARY (BALCH) CUTLER, the five youngest born at Ipswich Hamlet, now Hamilton, were<sup>17,24</sup>

I. EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup>, see<sup>49</sup> following.

II. †(Maj.) Jervis<sup>6</sup>, b.<sup>17</sup> at Edgartown, Martha's Vineyard, Sept. 19, bap.<sup>24</sup> Oct. 9, 1768; d. at

\*Dr. Joseph Torrey of the University of Vermont.<sup>44</sup>

\*\*It is reported<sup>67</sup> of the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>6</sup> that in his young days his pleasure in social life even extended to participation in dancing and that his partners, "Killingly's future great-grandmothers, never wearied of chanting the praises of 'NASSEH CUTLER';" the report adds that this action sadly shocked at least one of his biographers — and, indeed, one could truthfully add, some of his descendants.

†Jervis Cutler had, at the age of sixteen, made a voyage to France, and at nineteen joined the company of adventurers to go to Ohio and was the first of the forty-eight to leap ashore at the mouth of the Muskingum, April 7, 1788. Just to see the country he joined a surveying party, rambling off with the hunter of the group. He followed one side of a creek while the hunter followed the other. Jervis presently left the main stream and followed a branch, thus becoming entirely separated from both hunter and surveyors. When he realized his mistake he retraced his steps but could not find his trail. To make a long story short, he was lost in the woods for five days with only his little dog as companion. He was one of the associates



Home of the Reverend MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER at Hamilton with the spire of his church showing dimly in the background.



Church of Reverend MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER  
at Hamilton.



Tomb of Reverend MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER at Hamilton.

- Evansville, Ind. June 25, 1846, at the age of 76; m. 1st at Pomfret, Conn. Mar. 22, 1794, Philadelphia Cargill (Benjamin of Pomfret) who died in Ohio on Oct. 6, 1820; m. 2nd Mrs. Elizabeth S. (Frazier) Chandler.
- III. Mary<sup>6</sup>, b. May 3, 1771, at Dedham; d.<sup>25</sup> Sept. 1 or (gr. st.)<sup>76</sup> Oct. 9, 1836, aged 66, while on visit to Burlington, Vt. and was buried there;<sup>76</sup> m. at Hamilton<sup>62</sup> Mar. 8 or 18, 1794, Dr. Joseph<sup>6</sup> Torrey (Col. Joseph<sup>5</sup>, Rev. Dr. Joseph<sup>4</sup>, Ens. Joseph<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>25</sup>
- IV. Charles<sup>6</sup>, b.<sup>17</sup> Mar. 26, bap. 28, 1773, and recorded at Ipswich;<sup>24</sup> d. at the home<sup>36</sup> of his brother EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> at Ames, Ohio<sup>17,49</sup> Sept. 17, 1805, unm. H. C. 1793.
- v. Lavinia<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 6, bap. 13, 1775; d. s. p. at Hamilton<sup>62</sup> Mar. 12, 1823; m.<sup>62</sup> there Oct. 9, 1800, Jacob Berry, Captain of an East India Merchantman.
- VI. Temple<sup>6</sup>; b. Apr. 10, bap. 12, 1778; d. at Ipswich of small pox June 22, 1778, ae. 3 months.<sup>24</sup>
- VII. Elizabeth<sup>6</sup>, b. and bap. July 4, 1779; d. at Danvers Apr. 22, 1854, ae. 75; m. (int.<sup>62</sup> May 22) June 13, 1802, Dea. Fitch<sup>6</sup> Poole (William<sup>5</sup>, Zechariah<sup>4</sup>, Jonathan<sup>3</sup>, Jonathan<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>)<sup>26</sup> of Danvers, deacon for many years of the Old South Church in Danvers.
- VIII. Temple<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 24, bap. Mar. 3, 1782; d. Nov. 5, 1857; m.<sup>62</sup> 1st Oct. 7, 1804 or 1805 Sophia Brown (1782-1822); m. 2nd Apr. 29, 1823, Hannah (Appleton) Smith.

EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER (Rev. *Manasseh*<sup>5</sup>, *Hezekiah*<sup>4</sup>, *John*<sup>3</sup>, *James*<sup>2</sup>, *James*<sup>1</sup>) was born\* at Edgartown on December 13, 1767, and died at Constitution, Warren Township, Washington County, Ohio<sup>17</sup> July 8, 1853, at the age of eighty-six. He married first at Killingly on April 8, 1787, Leah<sup>5</sup> Atwood.\*\* Judge EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> married secondly in Meigs County, Ohio on April 13, 1808, SALLY<sup>6</sup> PARKER (see Parker, p. 481). As has been told (vide supra, p. 206) when EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> was but little over three years of age in June, 1770, he became a member of the household of his grandfather HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> and the special comfort and pupil of his grandmother SUSANNA until her death on April 8, 1774, when EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> would have been in his seventh year. Even as a child he must have had a keen mentality for she had taught him so that during his grandmother's life he had read to her much of the Bible and had learned and repeated the Shorter Catechism. In his later life he wrote<sup>36</sup> of her that

"She was a most excellent woman, strict in her government, but always kind. I could read well before her death, and early acquired a love of reading, which has been a great source of comfort to me, and a lasting benefit."

After her death he and his grandfather HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> would have been more closely drawn together than formerly. As has been told (see pp. 206-7) he slept with his grandfather and in the early morning hours of Thursday, April 20, 1775, when an express arrived telling of the Battle of Lexington the day before, HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> fired off his gun three times to warn his neighbors that the expected attack by the

---

who began the settlement at Waterford, in the spring of 1789, and remained in the west until 1790 when he returned to New England and married Miss Philadelphia Cargill; in 1802 he settled at Bainbridge, Ohio, as a fur-trader. He was chosen Major of Colonel McArthur's regiment in 1806 and enlisted a company for active service, of which he was appointed Captain. The company was ordered to New Orleans in the spring of 1809. Soon after his arrival there he was prostrated by yellow fever . . . and soon after he returned to New England. In 1812 he published a book entitled "A Topographical Description of the State of Ohio, Indiana Territory and Louisiana," with a "Concise Account of the Indian Tribes West of the Mississippi." He illustrated this book with his own copper-plate engravings. In 1818 he again came west and settled as an engraver of plates for bank notes in Nashville, Tennessee. Jervis was tall and graceful and unusually handsome and his winning personality made friends wherever he went. In 1841 he removed to Evansville, Ohio, where he lived until his death at which time he was the last survivor of the pioneer group that reached Marietta in the spring of 1788. His second wife was Mrs. Elizabeth S. Chandler.

\*By the vital records of Edgartown the birth<sup>24</sup> of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> is erroneously given as 1766 but references<sup>17,35,36,49,50</sup> all correct the year to 1767.

\*\*Leah<sup>5</sup> Atwood was born<sup>17</sup> August 14, 1768, at Killingly, Connecticut and died at Constitution, Ohio on November 4, 1807. Her mother was Leah<sup>5</sup> Churchil and her father was Ebenezer<sup>4</sup> Atwood (Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>69</sup>

British had taken place, and before the sun rose HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup>, sixty-eight years old, and fifteen other men who had quickly assembled, had started afoot the seventy-five or more miles to the battlefield. That left young EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup>, in his eighth year, at home with the housekeeper. Very possibly he helped to weigh out the half pound of powder to each man who reported on his way to Boston. He has left to us a record of many events of those trying days, of the raising of the Liberty Pole and flagstaff near his grandfather's home; of the kettle of tar for signaling; of the return and second marriage of his grandfather; of his own task on Sabbath noons, from the time of the Battle of Lexington until the close of the war, of reading the news from the New London Gazette to the elderly people who would quite fill his grandfather's home.<sup>36</sup> It was a thrilling time for a small boy!

By the time EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> was sixteen he was compelled, by the increasing feebleness of his grandfather, to conduct the whole business of the family; to cut their wood and haul it about two miles, care for the stock, etc. He also began a small commission business, buying butter, cheese, poultry and, in the course of time, droves of sheep and some cattle and swine which he took to market. One year he had several hundred turkeys, part of which he drove as far as Providence for sale — and in that case got cheated by the man with whom he did his business! When he was but eighteen his military friends elected him orderly sergeant of the train band and soon after raised him to ensign, which position he retained until he left New England.<sup>36</sup>

His grandfather had planned that EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> should be educated at Yale as his father had been, but financial conditions during and following the Revolutionary war precluded the possibility. However, his natural love of reading and study stood him in good stead, and the advice and assistance of the Rev. Elisha Atkins, pastor of the First Society (and successor to the Rev. Aaron Brown) caused him to take up geometry and trigonometry and to acquire a knowledge of drawing and surveying which was very important and useful to him in after life.<sup>36</sup> The deep interest of his father, the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup>, in the development of the Ohio Company and his effort to obtain subscribers for shares in the enterprise, caused EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> to enter into the agency and he obtained upwards of twenty subscribers in 1787-8. In 1787 he was married to Miss Atwood and in 1790 he entered into a partnership with a Samson Howe of Killingly, in a retail mercantile business. The partnership was dissolved about 1792 and EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> carried the business on alone, building a store at his home for its accommodation and thereby just about meeting family expenses. In the meantime the wife of HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup> died in 1791 and he himself passed away on October 4, 1792, in his eighty-sixth year, having been quite helpless for three or four years from palsy.<sup>36</sup> He left his farm to EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> who sold it and closed out his mercantile business in 1794 "with the intention of trying some new field of effort."<sup>36</sup> Finding no satisfactory opening in Connecticut or Massachusetts and his wife's health demanding a milder climate, EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> decided to remove to Ohio where he owned three shares\* of Ohio Company's land. By this time they had four children, the eldest not yet eight and the youngest a little over a year. So, on June 15, 1795, they left Killingly and their lifelong friends on this "hazardous journey and perilous enterprise."<sup>36</sup> They were to travel west

\*A share amounted to approximately twelve hundred acres and this investment covered most of his property.

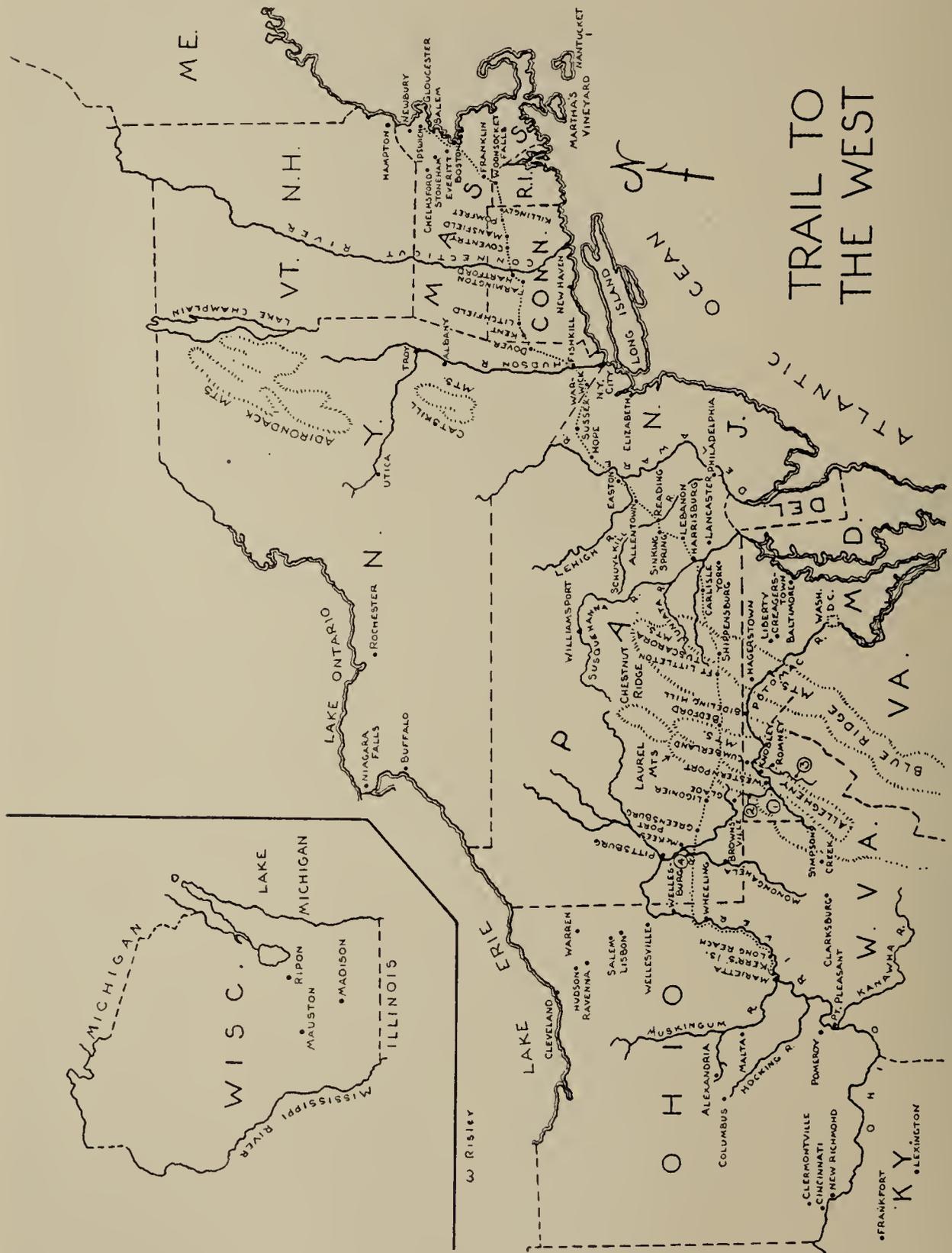
with several Putnam families<sup>36</sup> of Pomfret: viz. those of \*Col. Israel<sup>5</sup>, his sons Israel<sup>6</sup>, Jr., George W.<sup>6</sup> and William P.<sup>6</sup> and the Colonel's daughters Sarah<sup>6</sup>, Mary<sup>6</sup> and Elizabeth<sup>6</sup>. EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> with his wife, four children and goods made the trip in a wagon drawn by a yoke of oxen and two horses and they drove a cow which supplied them with milk on the way as well as after their arrival. The Putnams utilized two large wagons with four oxen to each, and one wagon with two horses, having also two riding horses and three cows. For their route see map, p. 224. As they "were passing over the ridges west of Carlisle, called the Three Brothers, on the top of one of them, Mrs. Putnam, wife of Israel<sup>6</sup> Putnam, Jr. was taken sick, and gave premature birth to a child. No house being near, we had to make something like a bier, on which a large blanket was bound. Upon this she was laid, and four of us took it on our shoulders, and carefully and safely carried her on westward to the foot of the mountains, where there was a tavern, a large stone house, and a spacious farm." Here some of the Putnams remained until she was able to travel while EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> and the rest went on to the Monongahela River (see map, p. 224) a short distance above Williamsport where a cabin was rented and boat builders were engaged to build a small Kentucky flat-boat (see illustration, p. 477) sufficient to take the group down to Marietta.

The boat was ready by the time the Putnams arrived, so the families embarked at Williamsport with the movables while Col. Israel<sup>5</sup> Putnam and EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> started to drive the horses and cattle across country by way of Washington, Wellsburg, etc. At the latter place they were overtaken by two of their party who brought them word that because of low water the boat was stranded ten or fifteen miles from where it started and that three of the party, including the wife of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup>, were ill, so these two family heads turned over the transport of the stock to the younger men and returned to the boat. When the river would rise a trifle they would push out into the stream to make what headway was possible but they sometimes made only three or four miles a day because of being aground and EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> with one of the Putnam boys spent much of their time in the river lifting at the boat to get it over the sand-bars and shallows. As soon as one sick person recovered another was taken ill. EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> in his Journal described Pittsburg "with its cabins and hewed log houses," adding that below that town "every human dwelling in sight of the river was fortified by what was then called a stockade." They were several days getting down to Beaver Creek but before reaching it little Hezekiah<sup>7</sup> Cutler was taken sick and died and EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> and his wife faced the sad necessity of burying him by the river-side.

At Wellsburg they were detained for some time by the sickness of the Putnams and after passing Wheeling Mary<sup>7</sup> eldest child of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> died and had to be buried in the wilderness on the Ohio side of the river thirty miles above Marietta. Soon after that, Mrs. Cutler, in passing over a plank from the boat to the shore, fell and broke two of her ribs. Finally, a little over three months after leaving Killingly, and after spending thirty-one days on the river, they arrived at Marietta on September 18, 1795. But EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> had by that time been attacked by dysentery

\*Son of Gen. Israel<sup>4</sup> (Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>). The Colonel's entire family of five sons and three daughters became residents of Ohio, most of them at Belpre.<sup>71</sup>

Gen. Rufus<sup>6</sup> Putnam who headed the Founders of the Northwest Territory was the son of Elisha<sup>4</sup> (Edward<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) so of the two lines of descent quoted above, Joseph<sup>3</sup> and Edward<sup>3</sup> were brothers. Gen. Israel<sup>4</sup> and Elisha<sup>4</sup> were first cousins and Col. Israel<sup>5</sup> was a second cousin of Gen. Rufus<sup>6</sup>, the Founder.<sup>50</sup>



TRAIL TO THE WEST

- 1. Backbone Mountains
  - 2. Savage Creek
  - 3. Patterson's Creek
  - 4. Parkinson's Ferry
- .....Route of Rev. MANASSEH CUTLER to Ohio in 1788

which had greatly weakened him. They acquired, temporarily, one room on the second floor of a block-house at "Picketed Point" at the confluence of the Ohio and Muskingum Rivers for their goods and themselves and poor EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> was barely able to climb the stairs to reach it. Their discouragement must have been complete as his weakness increased, with the loss of their two children in mind, and no friends near to hearten them. However, a number of Killingly families who had preceded EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> to Ohio, had settled at Waterford on the east side of the Muskingum River, about twelve miles, airline, northwest of Marietta (see map, p. 224).

When they heard of his arrival they visited him and during October, after he had become strong enough, they took him in a canoe to see Waterford which he decided should be his home. So two pirogues were engaged to take the family and their properties up the Muskingum where Capt. Daniel Davis whom EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> had known and befriended in Killingly put at his disposal "at least one-half of the best log-house in the country to dwell in during the winter."<sup>86</sup> EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> with his family, increased the number resident at Waterford to thirty-three. Plenty of provisions such as venison, wild turkeys, bear meat, pork and corn-meal were obtainable and EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> had brought with him from Williamsport, Pennsylvania enough flour for seven or eight months. The season was mild enough so that plowing was continuously possible and that winter (1795) Gen. Rufus Putnam gave EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> a job of surveying Donation lots to the extent of about fifty thousand acres which brought him about one hundred dollars, a great help, for the trip west had cost two hundred dollars and their sickness fifty dollars more. In the spring of 1796 they moved into an empty cabin in nearby Fort Frye and during that summer built one of their own which they moved into in the fall. He bought four acres of rich bottom land near the fort, cleared it of trees during the spring and in June planted it with corn which gave him a fine crop. He kept a dry goods store while at Waterford.<sup>81</sup> During 1796 EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> was greatly surprised to receive from Gov. St. Clair three commissions, one as captain of the militia; another for justice of the peace and quarter sessions and a third for judge of the Court of Common Pleas.

In 1797 EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> traded one piece of cleared and improved land near Waterford for about six hundred acres of fertile wilderness land in what is now Ames Township, Athens County, where he already owned certain other tracts. He cut a horse path from Waterford about twenty miles to Federal Creek\* where his land lay. With the plan of carrying on extensive farming he desired to settle on this remote but fertile tract, but desired acceptable neighbors with common interests. Accordingly, he arranged with Lt. Ewing\*\* and Capt. Benjamin Brown,† Revolutionary veterans, that he would sell each of them one hundred acres and would give each of them a second hundred acres if they would settle near him in the wilderness. They agreed, chose their locations, and Lt. Ewing made a small clearing and built

\*Federal Creek was named thus because it had thirteen branches or tributaries in agreement with the number of states then in the union.

\*\*Lt. George Ewing of the "Jersey Blues" was the father of the noted Hon. Thomas Ewing (1789-1871), Secretary of the Treasury and Secretary of the Interior. Thomas in his youth was a subscriber to the "Coonskin Library" (vide infra, p. 227).

†Capt. Benjamin Brown<sup>79</sup> was the head of the family which furnished the name for "Grandmother Brown's Hundred Years."<sup>79</sup>

a cabin into which he moved his family in March, 1798. Capt. Brown removed to his tract in the spring of 1799 and on April 16, 1799, EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> took two men to his land to clear a place for a cabin. By May 1 they had cleared about one acre and had the logs ready for a cabin. Just then a heavy rain fell which raised Federal Creek to admit large pirogues to come within two miles of his place so EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> with his two men and Samuel Brown hastened to Waterford through the twenty-odd mile horse path he had cut between these locations, in order to bring away his goods by water while it was high since no real roads existed then. When they came to Wolf Creek it was impassable from the late rain. So they felled a large bitter-nut hickory tree near the creek, peeled about thirty feet of bark from it and with bark of the leatherwood sewed up the two ends to form a canoe. They smeared the slippery inside with earth so they could stand up in it, made some paddles from the hickory and went aboard to float down to Waterford. Presently they saw a bear which they shot and landing, placed him in the canoe. With this added weight the leatherwood strings threatened to give out, so EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> laid down in the boat and by grasping his hands around the bow held the boat together until they arrived at their destination fifteen miles below. Pirogues and men had been engaged previously for the moving and the next day they started with the goods and furniture down the Muskingum and the Ohio, then up the Hocking River and Federal Creek, a total distance of about eighty miles. The women and children of both the CUTLER and Brown families were to be removed to their new homes via the twenty mile horse path so EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> with four horses took the two mothers and all the children\* with certain baggage and started cross-country but night overtook them before they were able to cross Sharp's Fork of Federal Creek and they were obliged to encamp through a very rainy night. By morning the creek was rapidly rising and EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> hurriedly got all of his charges across it except for A. G. Brown (son of Capt. Benjamin) then about two years old, whom he carried. As he stepped on a drift of flood-wood which reached across the creek, it broke away from the bank and threatened disaster, but he got safely across and they reached their camp, their new home, which he named "Ames" on May 7, 1799. The pirogues arrived the next day. Next a two mile road must be cut from Federal Creek to their camp, their goods hauled up and then a cabin built. Immediately land must be cleared for planting if a crop was to be had that year. By June 15 four acres were cleared and on the sixteenth they were planted and in time produced a hundred and fifty bushels of corn that ripened well. But the next day after he had finished planting EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> had to find his way through the woods to Marietta to attend court as Judge. This was a trip\*\* of twenty-five miles airline, each way, and held him at Marietta for two weeks or more, four times a year, and he never failed attending a single court for seven years, though in only one instance were his fees sufficient to pay his board while he was in attendance.

EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> had little trouble with the Indians while in Ames except for the theft of two horses; buffalo and elk were occasionally seen; deer and bear were abundant; wild turkeys were innumerable, but wolves and panthers also infested the woods. In one case in 1801 EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> and Joseph Brown who had been cutting a road to mill almost lost their lives in the worst snow storm ever known in that country

\*Wife Leah had borne two children during their residence in Waterford.

\*\*This trip would necessitate that for one night on the way he would spance his horse and sleep in the woods.

when they had to camp out overnight and were hampered by having a horse run away. Their hands, feet and faces were badly frozen.<sup>36</sup>

At this period only one newspaper, the "United States Gazette," was taken in this neighborhood and EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> was the subscriber. Its arrival was very uncertain — perhaps not oftener than once in three months.<sup>80</sup>

EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> performed a missionary work toward the settlement of Ohio while he lived in Ames by buying heavily of land,<sup>81</sup> on time, from Easterners and reselling to many settlers who could not otherwise have migrated because of their inability to buy land; completing the program by allowing them to pay him in stock or in grain after they had raised it. "Not less than two hundred families were thus furnished with farms."<sup>81</sup> He also became a heavy stock raiser himself. As he said<sup>81</sup> of the land barter:

"This early led me into the droving business. I commenced this traffic\* in 1800 and it is said I drove over the mountains the first cattle ever driven from Ohio. For thirty years or more I did more or less of this business, driving one and sometimes two droves each year. It was a very laborious affair for me, with generally small profit, but necessity controlled it. There was no other means of raising funds to pay my debts and it resulted in placing many poor families who had nothing to buy land with, in very flourishing circumstances. The eastern markets were very uncertain and it sometimes took eight or nine weeks to effect a sale."

The concern of these New Englanders for education for their children was keen,<sup>82</sup> and as early as 1801 EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> welcomed to his home a cousin of his, Moses Everett, a Harvard graduate who taught the local children in a room of the CUTLER home\*\* for a time. During Everett's incumbency, when the rapidly increasing number of settlers came together from perhaps as much as ten or more miles afield to discuss the building of roads† there came up also for discussion the need for books — a library in fact! With the scarcity — almost *absence* — of actual money, that suggestion must have seemed a vain hope. For their personal needs they must depend upon the "products of the forests and the cleared areas. There was but little surplus, and for that little, there was no market." But one Josiah True of the Sunday Creek settlement having vision and ingenuity, proposed that they should catch coons, cure and "send their skins to Boston for sale by Samuel Brown who expected to go East in a wagon before many seasons." With animal life so plentiful in the woods and the young men and even boys, such skillful hunters, that suggestion simplified the financial phase perfectly. By the time that Samuel Brown was ready to make his trip eastward a goodly number of pelts‡ were also ready and five men who

\*An erroneous claim has been made<sup>83</sup> to the effect that "Mr. Samuel Lutz, of Pickaway county, in the year 1822, was the first to drive a large herd of fat cattle to Baltimore market." The writer then tells also of Mr. George Renick of Ross County who began to take stock afoot from Ohio to New York by way of the "Zane trace" to Wheeling, West Virginia in 1833, yet we have proof<sup>81,82</sup> above that our EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER began droving in 1800.

\*\*In 1802-3 another term of school was taught there under similar circumstances by Charles<sup>6</sup> Cutler, younger brother of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> and himself also a graduate of Harvard in 1793. He died unmarried at the home of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> at Ames on September 17, 1805.

†There is disagreement<sup>82</sup> as to the time of this road-library town meeting, different people placing it in the fall of 1801, 1802 and 1803.

‡One of the hunters who joined in gathering pelts was Thomas Ewing, then about twelve years old, who invested ten coonskins — his entire wealth — in the library. Earlier he had had access only to "The Vicar of Wakefield" and "Watts' Psalms and Hymns."<sup>82</sup> He, more than most, doubtless welcomed the books which were brought back to Ohio. He earned his way through Ohio University, became United States Senator, Secretary of the Treasury, etc.<sup>82</sup> (vide supra, p. 225).

were able to do so\* paid for their shares in cash. Brown reached Boston before mid-August, 1804, but intermediately, the founders had adopted as a formal title<sup>82</sup> of their organization "The Western Library Association in the Town of Ames," though in Ohio it is better known as the "Coonskin Library." On February 2, 1804, they had adopted twenty-five articles as rules and regulations of the society. The value of a share was placed at \$2.50 and subscribers were entitled to draw out books to the value of two-thirds of their share or shares. The books were to be drawn out quarterly from May 1 through October and monthly during the rest of the year when long winter evenings extended the reading hours. Very heavy fines were planned for thumb marks, grease spots or other injury. The rules, list of members, payments made, etc., were carefully entered in a book which is still (1940) extant. The sale of the pelts brought in \$73.50. The Rev. MANASSEH<sup>6</sup> CUTLER and Rev. Thaddeus Harris made the selection of the fifty-one books which Samuel Brown brought back to Ames. EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER was chosen the first Librarian. In 1807 the need for a book case was recognized and its provision recommended. Additional books were frequently purchased. In 1808 the library was incorporated. In 1811 the Sunday Creek Settlement was organized as the township of Dover, and in 1816, since a number of shareholders lived there, a plan was made to keep a part of the books in Dover, changing them every six months. Later an actual division of the books was made between the two groups.

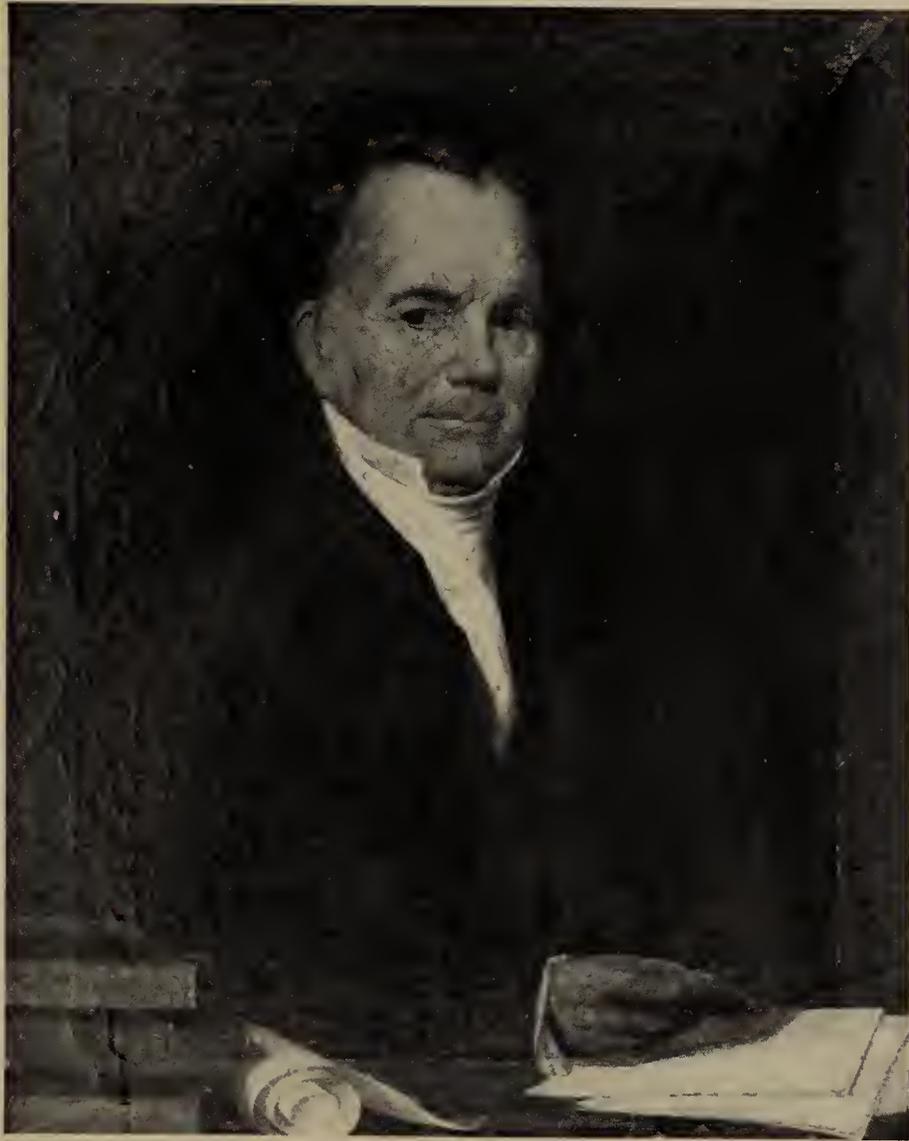
The service rendered by this library is beyond computation. In 1826 there were 462 volumes drawn out though the number of subscribers was comparatively small. Unquestionably its greatest service was rendered during the first thirty-five years of its existence for when that period had passed newspapers and magazines were easily obtainable.<sup>82</sup>

In 1862 William P.<sup>7</sup> Cutler (EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup>) purchased what was left of the Coonskin Library, for sentiment's sake, and with it the record book and bookcase, he paid \$73.50, the same amount which was expended for the original fifty-one volumes. In course of time it was loaned by his daughter and sole heir, Miss Sarah J.<sup>8</sup> Cutler, to the Ohio Historical Society and at her death in 1933 was, with the record book and old walnut bookcase (see plate XXII, p. 232) willed to that institution. In October, 1929, there was dedicated at Amesville a tablet commemorating the Coonskin Library which had begun its period of service one hundred and twenty-five years earlier in the home of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER.

The CUTLER farm at Ames was invariably called "The Old Farm."\*\* In this vicinity EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> ultimately gave farms to three of his children, Charles<sup>7</sup>, Nancy<sup>7</sup> and Mary<sup>7</sup>. In this Federal Creek vicinity he owned<sup>36</sup> sixteen hundred acres or more and while resident there in July, 1803, EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> obtained from Gen. Rufus Putnam a contract for surveying part of the public lands in the Military Tract — mostly those in Guernsey County. This occupied him for about three months and he received an order for \$1,250 in return. He also owned<sup>81</sup> about two thousand acres on the west side of the Ohio River about six miles below Marietta. This was in what became Warren Township in 1810 and was, in this family, usually

\*Of these EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER bought four shares, Jason Rice and Sylvanus Ames each two shares, while Benjamin L. Brown and David Boyles each bought one share.<sup>82</sup> Their payments were made on April 1, 1804.

\*\*Reports from the "Old Farm" show that in addition to stock and ordinary farm crops, it furnished in 1814 two thousand five hundred and thirty-seven pounds of cheese besides pork, butter, honey and maple sugar to the amount of some hundreds of dollars.



Judge EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER



Homestead of Judge EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER  
"The Old Stone House" on the Ohio River below Marietta.

called "Warren" in spite of the fact that there was already a village of that name in Trumbull County. In 1804 the health of Leah, wife of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> began to fail and in 1806 after nearly eight years of residence on Federal Creek he decided to lease the "Old Farm" and remove his family to his land nearer Marietta where medical care would be possible for his wife. This necessitated a trip of twenty-seven miles through the woods. They left Ames<sup>81</sup> on December 26, 1806, in two long covered wagons which his brother Jervis<sup>6</sup> had been using to carry feed for hogs he had been droving, and had lately brought in from Bainbridge.<sup>81</sup> The road toward Marietta was very rough, but even that they left eight miles west of that town and cut their way five miles through the woods "over high hills and across creeks" to the bank of the Ohio, arriving at the house of Mr. Elias Newton about sunset on December 28, 1806. The twenty-seven mile trip had taken three days and they stayed at the Newton home while EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> moved onto his own land, and completed a partially constructed building which he had bought. The winter of 1806-7 was exceptionally cold and was followed by a rainy late spring during which the river overflowed the low bottom lands two or three times and the succeeding summer was a very "sickly" one because of agues, remittent fevers, etc. During the spring of 1807 EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> began to clear space for his new home, the "Stone House," and to prepare materials for it — sandstone\* from his own quarries, back from the river. The building was slow and costly and "the walls were not half their destined height" when Leah's health rapidly declined and she died on November 3, 1807. At this time Temple<sup>6</sup> Cutler, brother of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup>, was in Ohio on his first visit and it was decided that Temple<sup>6</sup> should take young Daniel C.<sup>7</sup>, not yet nine years old, back to his grandparents in Hamilton. EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> furnished his son with a fine horse, the journey was completed in twenty days and Daniel C.<sup>7</sup> remained in the home of his grandfather Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> until 1816.

A unique situation developed in the life of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> which reflects credit on the character of Leah, his first wife. When she realized that she could not live long, and faced the prospect of a motherless condition for her four children, she frankly and courageously told EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> that he must marry again. He distractedly exclaimed that he knew no one! How could he do so? Then Leah with a generosity and broadmindedness that few women could match, recommended her own successor, a woman thirty years of age who had had much of masculine attention but had never married. Leah evidently knew of her and may have met her, but as their ultimate correspondence (still extant) shows, EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> had not previously met her though his standing in the community gave the lady in question assurance as to his character.

EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> visited her in her home. They soon learned that their likes and dislikes, opinions, etc. were similar; that mutual respect and admiration might quickly ripen into affection. They became formally engaged and after a short time EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> returned to Meigs County to claim SALLY<sup>6</sup> PARKER (see Parker, p. 481) as his second wife on April 13, 1808, and she took up the task of mothering his children and eventually five additional ones of her own.

Early in the spring of 1809 the family moved into the completed "Stone House" (see facing plate XXI) which continued to be the cherished CUTLER home for seventy

\*The stone quarried from these hills, cut into grindstones was a major source of income for time without end, being second to none in grade.

or more years (see p. 235). In the early days Warren had no school except by private arrangement and it became the habit for EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> to promise responsibility for the pay of the teacher and then to visit all the poor families (most of them his own employees) telling them to send their children without expense. The earliest school in Warren was taught by Gen. John Brown of Athens and was held in the CUTLER sitting room.<sup>81</sup>

In 1810 EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> still owned about thirty-five hundred acres which he valued at \$12,000, namely the "Old Farm" at Ames, the "Home Farm," as their residence was always significantly called, and the "Upper Place" in Warren Township. Sadness came to wife SALLY for on Sunday evening about ten o'clock of February 17, 1811, MARY (WARNER) PARKER, her mother, died at the age of about fifty-eight.

A reverberation of the war of 1812 as it affected this family shows that Charles<sup>7</sup> Cutler, eldest son, was in service as a subaltern officer in a company of mounted dragoons; "Money was scarce and times hard; tea three dollars a pound and common calico one dollar a yard";<sup>81</sup> while flour was ten dollars a barrel.

In 1814 Jervis<sup>6</sup> Cutler came to Ohio on a visit and when he returned to Massachusetts EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> sent with him, on horseback, his daughter Nancy<sup>7</sup> then aged about twenty-two. They started in late June traveling through Virginia, Washington, Baltimore, Philadelphia and New York to Massachusetts, making about six hundred and eighty miles in seventeen days. Nancy<sup>7</sup> stayed in the east until after the sudden death of her grandmother MARY (BALCH) CUTLER in November 1815.

After the sale of the cattle driven east by EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup>, Charles<sup>7</sup> and their helpers in July, 1816, EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> bought in Maryland a fine horse for Charles<sup>7</sup>, gave him money for expenses and sent him to Hamilton to get Nancy<sup>7</sup> and Daniel C.<sup>7</sup>, who had been living with their grandparents, the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>6</sup> and his wife, and to bring them back to Ohio. Charles<sup>7</sup> bought a light wagon for their return to the west and brought not only his brother and sister but also the family of one Tiffany Adams\* from Killingly, Connecticut, the old home of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup>.

During the period 1821-3 the settlers along the Ohio River suffered exceedingly from an epidemic which they called "the pestilence" (see footnote). In its more severe forms it resembled yellow fever and was quickly fatal while in the milder cases it bore a similarity to an extended case of "fever and ague" and wore the patients to a shadow. During 1821 Nancy<sup>7</sup> Cutler had it badly but recovered while Julia<sup>7</sup> and Clarissa<sup>7</sup> were burdened with fever and ague for several months. In many cases an entire family would be sick at once with little or no chance of any help from outside. In 1822 it began as early as June, was very severe in July and August and did not abate until heavy frosts came in the fall. The river was lower than ever before known, and was covered in many places by a green scum while many grey squirrels were in evidence and contributed a very odd appearance as many of them swam the river with their long bushy tails held aloft. If from any cause their tails got wet and draggled, the squirrels were almost sure to drown.

\*Mrs. Adams was a sister of Dr. Joseph Torrey who had married Mary<sup>6</sup> Cutler (Rev. MANASSEH<sup>6</sup>). Mr. Adams evidently became much pleased with Ohio for within the next few years certain relatives of his with their families followed him to the west. The sickly seasons of 1821-3 played havoc with this family in a tragic degree,<sup>81</sup> for graves in the Gravel Bank Cemetery at Warren hold fourteen members of the two Adams family groups, leaving only two youths of the name living. They presently returned to their relatives in New England.

In 1822 EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> and SALLY were both down sick with the epidemic, their son William P.<sup>8</sup> almost died with it and his brother Manasseh<sup>7</sup> did die on October 2. EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> sent a note to Marietta asking the Rev. Samuel Robbins to come out and preach a funeral sermon but received an apologetic reply that the minister could not come because of the pressure of funerals among his own people, so a service was held by a neighbor, an old Methodist Class Leader. The wellknown Dr. Hildreth had six hundred cases under his care in Marietta and the other medical men were just as driven. Each member of the Cutler family was sick that year except Daniel C.<sup>7</sup> though on alternate days Nancy<sup>7</sup> cared for the others — or shook!

For more than twenty years after EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> came to live at the "Home Farm" there was no regular preaching in the neighborhood. When the weather and road permitted, the family would drive to Marietta to attend church; when ministers were passing through Warren or visiting near, word would be sent around and the neighbors would gather at the CUTLER house for a service. Sometimes an itinerant minister would preach in the log school house. At many times both at the "Old Farm" and the "Home Farm" EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> would read<sup>81</sup> a published sermon. In 1819 Mary Ann<sup>7</sup> Cutler (daughter of Jervis<sup>6</sup>) who was teaching a summer school at Warren, began holding Sunday School<sup>81</sup> with the help of JOSHUA<sup>5</sup> SHIPMAN (Dawes-Gates II, 740) and Silas Slocum. In April, 1827, an agreement was entered into between the Rev. Jacob Little, a home missionary from Connecticut and six men of Warren including EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> that they would pay him \$200 per year for one half of his time as a minister in their behalf, but he very soon accepted a call to Granville, Ohio for his full effort. Then for a while a Rev. Augustus Pomeroy served them and on February 23, 1828, under his care the "Presbyterian Church of Warren" was organized\* in the brick school house which had just been completed on the upper part of Seth Bailey's farm.<sup>85</sup> At this time EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER who had never previously acquired church membership and also his daughter SARAH<sup>7</sup> joined on a profession of their faith; and among the papers of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> is still preserved a signed document wherein he explained his religious viewpoint and desire.<sup>81</sup> In March, 1833, wife SALLY joined the church and in April, 1833, EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> was made a ruling elder<sup>85</sup> and he "served the church and Sabbath-school ably and faithfully until his death," as Sunday School superintendent and teacher and when a pastor was lacking he read a sermon and led the devotions of the congregation on Sabbath and conducted prayer meetings.<sup>81</sup> In 1837 a meeting house was built on the river road\*\* at a cost of about \$1,400 which was borne mainly<sup>85</sup> by EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup>, his son William P.<sup>7</sup>, Seth Bailey and Oren Newton. From 1828 until 1858 a number of different ministers† served the organization among whom the Rev. A. Kingsbury preached for eleven or more years.

\*One of the immediate results of the organization of the Warren Church was the founding in 1830 of the Washington County Temperance Society with EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER elected as its first president and in April, 1832, the organization of a local branch in Warren. By this means there came to be in this neighborhood a considerable elimination of the habit of serving liquor in stores, in harvest fields, at working bees and in homes. After two months of existence the Warren organization had over a hundred members.

\*\*It was dedicated on December 24, 1837, free from debt, as is shown by a little homemade memorandum book, with a cover of wallpaper. It is said<sup>85</sup> to have been incorporated on February 13, 1838. It served its members for seventy-six years until the flood of 1913 floated it off of its foundation and down the river to ruin against a tree in the yard of George W. Bailey. It was rebuilt but farther up the hill adjacent to Gravel Bank Cemetery where EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup>, his wife SALLY and their children lie.

†From 1854 to 1856 the pastor was the Rev. James S. Walton under whose preaching in the latter year thirty-two members joined the Church.<sup>85</sup>

EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> is said to have been a large and well-built man and he must have had a mighty reserve of strength to have endured as much hard work as he did. In 1827 when he was about sixty years old his portrait (see plate xx, p. 228) was painted by Sala Bosworth of Marietta.

EPHRAIM,<sup>6</sup> throughout his fifty-eight years of life in Ohio, served his community well and widely in civic and political lines. In addition to his official positions as Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, Justice of the Peace and of Quarter Sessions, Captain (and in 1801 Major) of Militia, he was elected a member of the Territorial Legislature\* in September, 1801, to fill a vacancy and was a member of the Convention to form the Constitution of the State of Ohio in 1802. "In the convention he took a prominent part in securing the adoption of the clauses that excluded slavery from the State."<sup>85</sup> In 1819 he was elected to the legislature, serving until 1825 in either the lower house or the senate during which time he introduced bills covering two most important objectives, the ultimate passage of which are largely credited to his unceasing effort in their behalf. They were an *ad valorem* system of taxation and a carefully planned system of public schools. There were many posts of honor and responsibility assigned to him, such as providing for the lease and improvement of school and ministerial lands; encouragement toward building a system of canals in the State; also of a railroad; service as a trustee of Ohio University at Athens for many years, etc., etc.; ". . . it is true that no man in Ohio, in 1825, stood higher as a statesman of integrity, ability and comprehensive views of State policy than himself."<sup>85</sup> Numberless instances of outstanding praise of the character and conduct of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> could be quoted.<sup>85</sup>

We read by the hand of her daughter Julia P.<sup>7</sup> Cutler that "our mother was a long time ill with inflammatory rheumatism and heart trouble" — implying much of pain, and then on June 30, 1846, wife and mother SALLY died at the age of sixty-nine and was buried at Gravel Bank Cemetery (see plate xxiii, p. 233 of Cutler lot). Many sentences or phrases which come down to us picture vividly the life of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> and of his family in the "Old Stone House" — such as reference to a corn husking bee; "I moulded candles" (1848); "spun some woolen stocking yarn today"; "our folks killed twenty-six fat hogs this forenoon . . . I had fourteen persons to dinner"; "tried out and strained the lard"; "William returned from the 'Old Farm,' brought over about fifty head of cattle, making one hundred and thirty to winter here"; "Mrs. G. began to do housework for me again. She is to have seventy-five cents a week until May 1, then a dollar a week until September 1"; "Washed the sheep this forenoon"; "sheared them, have about a hundred and thirty here and some at the 'Old Farm'"; "cholera in St. Louis and Cincinnati; over a thousand deaths a week in each place"; "commenced making soap"; "have a large family — hands to butcher beef cattle, killed six today"; "killed seven [next day]; loaded a large flat [boat] with beef; commenced trying tallow — over two hundred and fifty pounds"; "seventeen in the family today — threshers"; "Mr. Seth Bailey rode down in the rain to show Pa [EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup>] Zachary Taylor's inaugural speech. It was delivered yesterday [March 5, 1849] at twelve o'clock in Washington, was received by telegraph in Marietta, printed and hawked about

\*We may well be proud of the courage<sup>80</sup> shown by EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER and his colleague Wm. R. Putnam, representatives of Washington County in the Territorial Legislature sitting at Chillicothe in 1801. They knew that their constituents did not favor forming a state government at that time and they two, alone, blocked the passage of the bill even though for two successive nights a mob threatened to attack the house where they lived.<sup>80</sup>

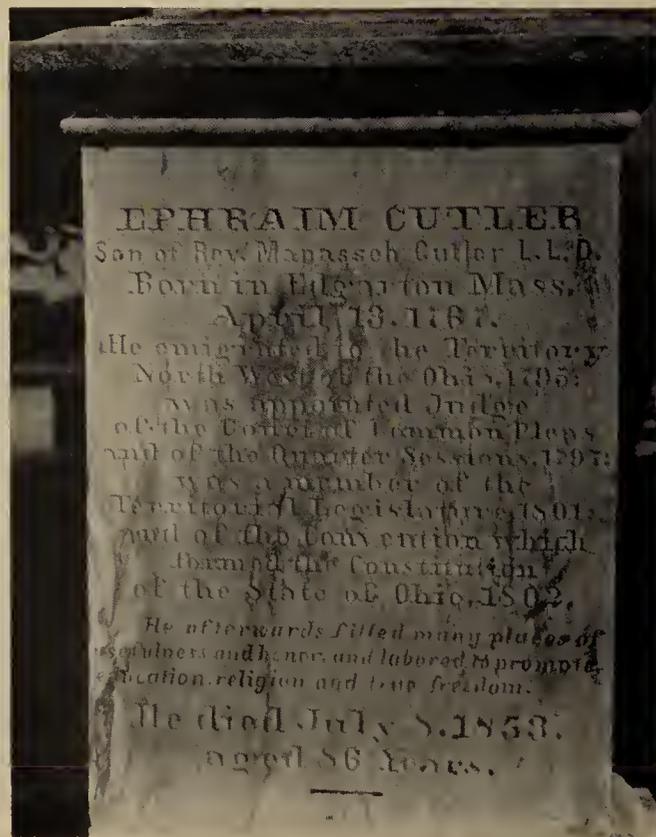


Bookcase and books from the Coonskin Library  
now at the Museum of the Ohio Archaeological  
and Historical Society at Columbus, Ohio.

*Courtesy Dr. Harlow Lindley.*



CUTLER lot at Gravel Bank Cemetery near Constitution.



Inscription on CUTLER monument above.

the streets by three o'clock the same day. *That ten years ago would have been pronounced impossible, and no one found credulous enough to believe it — and yet it is true.* What will not invention, genius and mechanical skill accomplish!" And so we might quote, endlessly.

In January, 1842, a post office<sup>50</sup> was established in Warren Township with EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER as postmaster, the office itself located in the "Old Stone House" and the name "Constitution" given it in his honor, as having been one of the most prominent members and the latest survivor of the convention which framed the first Constitution of the State of Ohio.

We are told<sup>85</sup> that the oldest house in Warren Township was the CUTLER house which was still standing in 1881 and that "Its massive masonry is emblematic of the mind and character of its builder and occupant for nearly one half a century", Judge EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER. His later life was lived quietly in the "Old Stone House" with his only surviving son William P.<sup>7</sup> handling the business of the family as the worthy successor to a most admirable father and his daughter Julia P.<sup>7</sup> caring for his personal needs. In 1850 Julia P.<sup>7</sup> wrote of the eighty-third birthday of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> her father that "but for his deafness he might be thought fifteen years younger . . . PA came home this evening having ridden through snow and wind . . . twenty-eight miles. Few men of his years would like so long a ride on horse-back, even in pleasant weather." And so he lived, patiently, wisely and helpfully until his death on July 8, 1853, at the age of eighty-six years and three months being survived by six of his eleven children. He was buried in the CUTLER lot in Gravel Bank Cemetery (see facing plate XXIII).

After the death of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup>, his son William P.<sup>7</sup> carried on the business of the family, even as he had done during his father's later years. His loyal provision for his sisters in time of need, and his helpfulness of friends or employees on occasion, proved him to have followed in his father's footsteps. He and his family with his sister Julia P.<sup>7</sup> resided in the "Old Stone House" until 1872 when the last of the Cutlers permanently removed to Marietta.

The children of EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER by his first wife, Leah Atwood, the first four born at Killingly, Connecticut, were <sup>17</sup>

- i. Mary<sup>7</sup> (Polly), b. May 11, 1788; d. Sept., 1795, on the way to Ohio.
- ii. Nancy<sup>7</sup>, b. Feb. 25, 1790; d. in Franklin Co., O., Dec. 21 or 31, 1882, ae. 93; m. at Constitution June 22, 1833, Rufus Gregory Carter (1789-1851) res. Athens and Sandusky, O. They had two children.
- iii. (Col.) Charles<sup>7</sup>, b. Mar. 30, 1792; d. of cholera on the plains west of St. Joseph on May 24, 1849, while en route to California during the gold rush; m. Mar. 28, 1819, Maria Walker (Hon. George). They had six children.
- iv. Hezekiah<sup>7</sup>, b. Mar. 13, 1794; d. Aug. 20, 1795, en route to Ohio and buried on the bank of the Ohio River.
- v. Mary<sup>7</sup>, b. July 30, 1796, at Waterford; d. near Amesville, O., Feb. 18, 1872; m. at Constitution July 2, 1818, Gulliver Dean (1792-1882).
- vi. Daniel Converse<sup>7</sup>, b. Feb. 20, 1799, at Waterford, O.; d. in Franklin Co., Kan. Jan. 10, 1887; m. Nov. 5, 1834, Betsey Larkin (Judge Abel Larkin of Rutland, Meigs Co., O.).

The children of EPHRAIM<sup>7</sup> and SALLY (PARKER) CUTLER, all born at Constitution, Ohio, were<sup>17</sup>

- vii. SARAH<sup>7</sup>, b. Apr. 17, 1809; d. at Marietta, Ohio Dec. 31, 1896; m. at Constitution Jan. 20, 1829, HENRY<sup>7</sup> DAWES (see Dawes, p. 56).<sup>27</sup>

- VIII. Manasseh<sup>7</sup>, b. July 25, 1810; d. Oct. 2, 1822.
- IX. (Hon.) William Parker<sup>7</sup>, b. July 12, 1812; d. at Marietta on April 11, 1889; m. at Constitution, O. Nov. 1, 1849, Elizabeth Williamson Voris, daughter of Dr. William and Elizabeth W. (Means) Voris of Adams Co., O. and of Constitution. They had six children of whom but one, Sarah Julia<sup>8</sup>, "the last of her line," lived to grow up. She died in Marietta on May 15, 1933 at the age of 77. (See Note "A" below.)
- x. Julia Perkins<sup>7</sup>, b. Jan. 24, 1814, d. unm. at Marietta on Dec. 18, 1904. (See Note "B" below.)
- XI. Clarissa Warner<sup>7</sup> Cutler, b. Oct. 27, 1816, d. July 8, 1874, Pana, Ill.; m. at Constitution, O. Sept. 8, 1846, Rev. James S. Walton, b. Jan. 13, 1817, d. at Pana, Ill. Oct. 1, 1874. They had, surviving, (Walton)
- a. James Pennock, b. Dec. 3, 1847, Chester, O.; d. at Lincoln, Neb. Jan. 11, 1906, m. 1st at Constitution, O. June 30, 1870, Mary Annette Bailey, b. there Apr. 17, 1849; d. at Lincoln, Neb. June 11, 1875, dau. of Wm. D. and Mary A. (Ward); m. 2nd at Lincoln, Neb. Aug. 7, 1877, Ann Eliza Dobson, b. Feb. 27, 1849; d. there Apr. 7, 1933. James P. and Mary A. (Bailey) Walton had
    1. Mary Emerson Walton, b. Pana, Ill. Mar. 25, 1872; m. Lincoln, Neb. Oct. 6, 1891, Frank Wilsey Ferris. Surviving children (Ferris) were
      - a. Esther Annette, b. Lincoln, Neb. July 17, 1892; m. at Moorhead, Minn. Oct. 12, 1921, Curtis Hall Pomeroy. They had (Pomeroy)
        1. Marjorie Alice, b. Sept. 11, 1922.
        2. Robert Ferris, b. Aug. 2, 1924.
        3. Bruce Dean, b. Apr. 11, 1928.
      - b. Frank Peter, b. Dec. 29, 1893; m. Feb. 23, 1921, Joy Kinne Elms. They had (Ferris)
        1. Jean Marjorie, b. June 20, 1922.
        2. Mary Joan, b. June 20, 1923.
        3. John Peter, b. Oct. 27, 1924.
        4. James Walton, b. Oct. 21, 1927.
      - c. Walton Cutler, b. Oct. 18, 1895, m. June 30, 1928, Lincoln, Neb. Elizabeth Jessie Armstrong. They had (Ferris)
        1. Walton Cutler, b. Feb. 17, 1931.
      - d. Doritha Lois, b. Nov. 7, 1897; m. at Boise, Ida. Jan. 6, 1923, Clarence Holt Lanctot. They had (Lanctot)
        1. Barbara Shirley, b. Oct. 1, 1923.
        2. Mariel Rae, b. Oct. 31, 1925.
    - b. William Cutler, b. Apr. 24, 1854; d. at Caliope, Ia. Nov. 27, 1896; m. Feb., 1882, Kitty McKinnon. Only child (Walton)
      1. Donald James, b. Jan. 30, 1896; m. May 9, 1922 Elizabeth Alice Reed.

## NOTE "A"

William Parker Cutler took charge of the family farm at Warren even before the father's death. He was a member of the Ohio State Legislature from Washington County from 1844 to 1847 and was Speaker of the House during his last term. From 1847 for almost twenty years Mr. Cutler was engaged in building the railroad from the Ohio River to Cincinnati which afterwards became a part of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad system. He served either as vice-president or as president of the road during the time he was connected with it. In 1860 he was elected to Congress in the district composed of Washington, Morgan and Muskingum counties. He engaged in the building of several roads in Indiana and Illinois as a contractor. Mr. Cutler was a voluminous writer. His reports, circulars, pamphlets, addresses and newspaper articles in behalf of the Marietta and Cincinnati Railroad would fill volumes. Political and literary articles were numerous from his pen. With his sister Julia he prepared the "Life, Letters and Correspondence of MANASSEH CUTLER." His service to the churches, schools and colleges of his state were many. He was the last of the line of EPHRAIM CUTLER to bear the name except for his daughter Sarah Julia who died unmarried.

## NOTE "B"

From her girlhood, throughout her long and busy life, Julia Perkins<sup>7</sup> Cutler was a fascinated student of history and genealogy and a prolific writer on these and other subjects. After her mother's death she became the home maker for her father and after his death for her brother William P.<sup>7</sup>, whose wife was not strong. But in spite of her heavy household cares, she wrote *volumes* — in the form of family Journals and "Annals of the Homestead" which have been drawn upon heavily in this present work; in preparing for the press the "Life, Journals and Correspondence of Rev. MANASSEH CUTLER" her grandfather (two volumes published in 1888) and "The Life and Times of EPHRAIM CUTLER" her father, published in 1890. She wrote a pamphlet entitled "The Founders of Ohio, Brief Sketches of the Forty-Eight Pioneers . . ." which was published

in 1888, but she did not even sign it. Beside these more pretentious efforts she wrote many "poems" for submission to a local literary society called "The Lyceum." Many of these commemorated historic facts or legends, such as "The Legend of Boone's Rock," "The Cross upon the Oak," "Doughty — a Ballad" about an Indian of that name. Her love of her home "The Old Stone House" (see plate XXI, p. 229) caused her to write as follows:

"THE OLD HOMESTEAD"

"Across the fields, hard by the shore,  
 Our home we see, beloved of yore,  
 The mansion dear of old gray stone,  
 For seventy years our very own,  
   The ivy climbing up the wall  
   And clustering round the chimneys tall,  
   And from the greenness twined about  
   The small paned windows looking out.  
 With lingering gaze, we westward turn,  
 O'er hill and dale, through brake and burn,  
 Along a rough and devious way  
 To distant hills our footsteps stray.  
   We trace the belt of dark green pines  
   Across the ridge in broken lines,  
   Find pastures rich on every side  
   Where flocks and herds are wandering wide.  
 Profusely o'er their mossy bed,  
 The fragrant wintergreens are spread.  
 Where ripe grapes the tree tops crown  
 We pull the purpling clusters down.  
   Through copsewood wild our steps we force  
   'Till reached the Hocking's sluggish course.  
 We turn us to the level lands  
   Where our memorial chapel\* stands,  
 Remembering, as we breathe a prayer,  
 That Thou, O God, art everywhere!  
 And we pass on where tenants dwell,  
 On open glade, in bosky dell.  
   As winds the road around the hill,  
   A scene appears, the eye to fill,  
   Of terraced hills and deep defiles,  
   Ohio with its gem-like isles  
 The valley broad, the quiet homes,  
 The distant city's burnished domes\*\*  
 Combine to make a picture rare  
 And beautiful, beyond compare.  
   How oft with joy our hearts have bounded  
   When, homeward bent, this point was rounded  
   The river met our homesick eyes,  
   We saw our home before us rise.  
 But scattered now afar and near  
 Are those we loved who sheltered here.  
 Some in quiet walks and ways  
 Have spent their comfort-giving days,  
   While some have life-long borne the cross  
   O'er rugged paths, 'mid toil and loss.  
   For Christ's dear love one thither went  
   Unto the distant orient sent.  
 When burst the clouds of war o'er head,  
 Some proved that manhood was not dead,  
 By gallant deeds and duty done.  
 Now let them wear their laurels won.  
   Careful of right and strong of will,  
   As were their fathers, they are still;  
   And we in them the likeness trace,  
   The kinship of the self-same race.

Julia P. Cutler

\*A memorial chapel to the Cutler children who died young was built at the village of Cutler among the hills and quarries to accommodate the workmen employed by the CUTLER family.

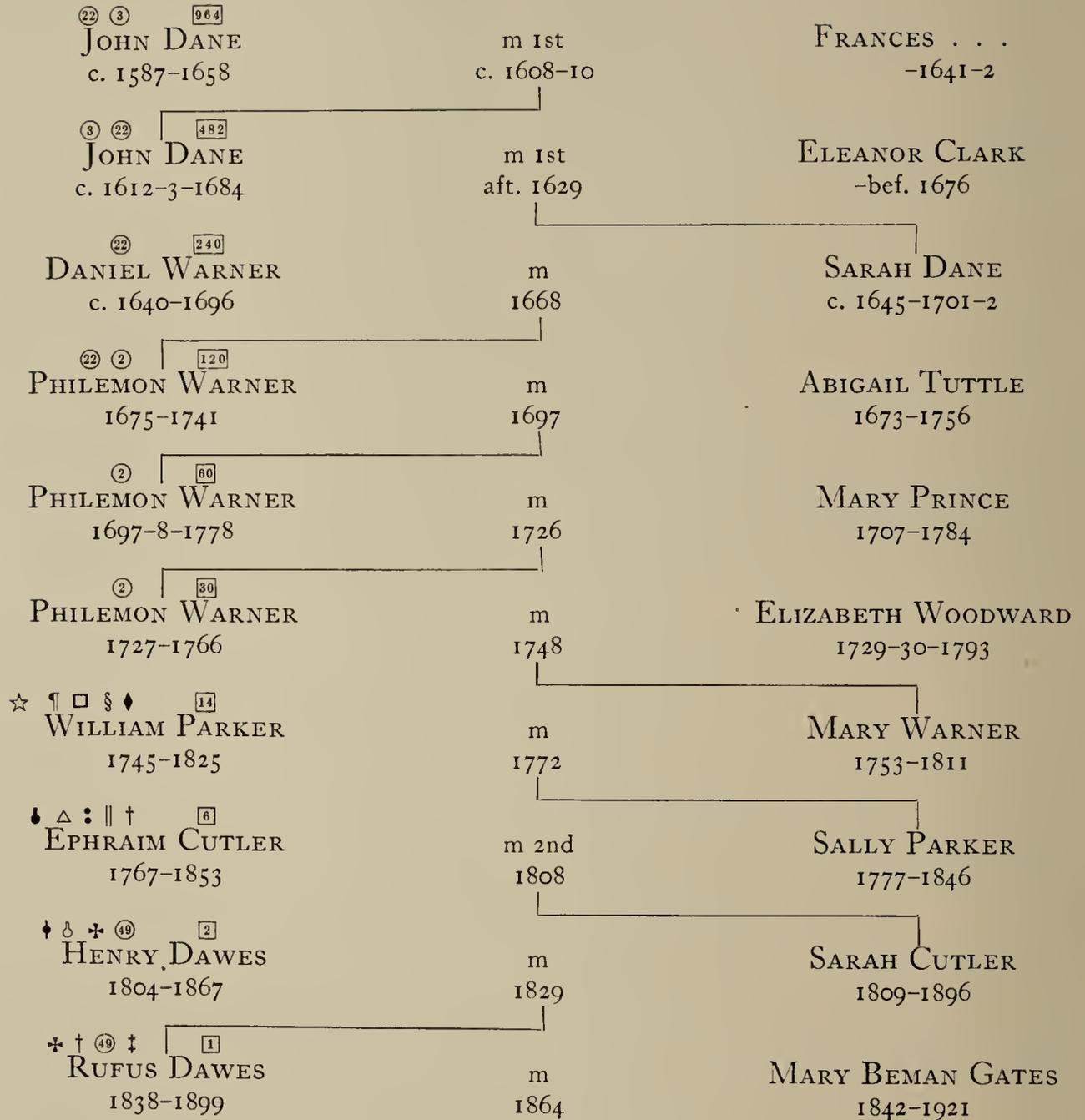
\*\*Parkersburg, West Virginia.

## REFERENCES

1. Cutler Memorial, N. S. Cutler, 1889, pp. 17-26.
2. History of Watertown, H. Bond, 1860, pp. 189-91, 1007, 1010, 1028.
3. History of Lexington, C. Hudson, 1913, I, 26, 29, 305-6; II, 141-4.
4. History of Cambridge, L. R. Paige, 1877, pp. 76, 97-8, 119-21, 399-400, 443, 464, 518-21.
5. Vital Records of Cambridge, I, 176-6; II, 100.
6. Vital Records of Lexington, pp. 17-8, 108, 171.
7. New England Register, LXVIII, 271-2; Savage, III, 360; History of Framingham, W. Barry, 1847, p. 353.
8. Bond's Watertown, pp. 44, 326, 383, 454, 617; Hudson's Lexington, II, 591-2.
9. Genealogy of the Richard Snow Family, G. B. Snow, mss. in Newberry Library, pp. 11, 16.
10. The Snow-Estes Ancestry, N. E. Snow, comp. by M. M. Jillson, 1939, I, 5-6, 59-61.
11. Hudson's Lexington, II, 144, 676; Gregory Stone Genealogy, J. G. Bartlett, 1918, p. 95; Vital Records of Warren, p. 169.
12. Vital Records of Woburn, III, 68.
13. Watertown Records, Book I, pt. 3, pp. 4-6, 11-2.
14. Ibid., Book I, pt. 1, pp. 14, 27, 31, 33-4, 39-40, 46; Book I, pt. 2, pp. 3, 7, 10-2, 22, 30-1, 86-8, 90, 103, 121-2, 137.
15. History of Windham Co., Conn., E. D. Larned, 1874, I, 159-73, 179; 1880, II, 149.
16. Giles Memorial, J. A. Vinton, 1864, p. 239; Vital Records of Southborough, p. 182; Vital Records of Weston, p. 386.
17. Cutler Memorial, pp. 25-37, 65-7, 114-23, 193-5.
18. History of Woodstock, Conn., C. W. Bowen, 1930, II, 257, 285; IV, 66-7, 194-8.
19. Connecticut Marriages, F. W. Bailey, I, 107-8; IV, 69; Vital Records of Woodstock, Conn., p. 4; Corbin Genealogy, H. M. Lawson, 1905, pp. 23-6, 35.
20. Vital Records of Sudbury, pp. 185, 301.
21. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 58.
22. History of Lexington, C. Hudson, 1868, pt. 2, pp. 48-50, 207, 274.
23. Supplement and Index to Paige's Cambridge, M. J. Gozzaldi, 1930, pp. 165-9.
24. Vital Records of Edgartown, p. 28; Vital Records of Ipswich, I, 107-8; II, 121, 535; Vital Records of Hamilton, pp. 49, 88.
25. Torrey Families . . . , F. C. Torrey, 1924, I, 13, 29, 47, 83-7, 154-5, 210.
26. New England Register, XXVIII, 486.
27. Dawes Genealogy, H. W. Holland, 1878, p. 86.
28. Record of the First Presbyterian Church of Morristown, N. J., pp. 7, 12, 38, 60, 65, 76, 213.
29. Ibid., pp. 13, 21, 29, 45, 52-4, 60.
30. Larned's Windham County, I, 13-5, 21-2; Historic Gleanings in Windham Co., Conn., E. D. Larned, 1899, pp. 98-9, 135-40.
31. Colonial Records of Connecticut, V, 60-1; VII, 11; X, 21; XI, 403.
32. "The Leavens Name," P. F. Leavens, 1903, pp. 6-29, 31, 41.
33. Aspinwall Genealogy, A. A. Aspinwall, 1901, pp. 26-7, 40.
34. Putnam's Monthly Magazine, 1895, III, 224-7, 259, 296; 1896, IV, 77; 1897, V, 178; 1899, VII, 73; 1900, X, 142-3.
35. Life, Journals and Correspondence of Rev. MANASSEH CUTLER, LL.D., Wm. P. and J. P. Cutler, 1888, I, 1-7, 10-21, 433 note.
36. Life and Times of EPHRAIM CUTLER . . . J. P. Cutler, 1890, pp. 1-52.
37. Larned's Windham, I, 167, 305-12, 329, 332, 334, 527, 529-31, 632.
38. Ibid., I, 13-5, 18-23, 166-70, 173, 177, 260-1, 329.
39. Ibid., II, 34, 78, 88-92, 144-5.
40. History of Windham County, R. M. Bayles, 1889, pp. 750-7, 760-1, 921-41.
41. History of Connecticut, G. L. Clark, 1914, pp. 175-80; History of the Colony and Province of Massachusetts Bay, T. Hutchinson, ed. by L. S. Mayo, 1936, I, 178; II, 151-4.
42. . . . Cabot Family . . . , L. V. Briggs, 1927, I, 16-8.
43. Howe Genealogies, D. W. and G. B. Howe, 1929, II, 171-2, 182; Descendants of Nicholas Cady, O. P. Allen, 1910, pp. 23, 61-2.
44. Annals of the American Pulpit, W. B. Sprague, 1857, I, 707-10; 1859, II, 15; Biographical Sketches of the Graduates of Yale, F. B. Dexter, 1896, II, 201-2; 1903, III, 470-2.
45. Dexter's Yale, 1903, III, 93-4, 112-7.
46. Larned's "Historic Gleanings", pp. 98-110, 116-7, 129.
47. The Battle of the Frogs . . . , W. L. Weaver, 1857; Larned's Windham, II, 591-2; Bayles' Windham, pp. 207-13; A Preliminary Genealogy of the Dyar Family, H. G. Dyar, 1903, pp. 7, 10-1; Elderkin Genealogy, D. W. Elderkin, 1888, pp. 9-26.
48. History of Connecticut, Rev. S. Peters, 1877, pp. 129-31.
49. . . . Balch Families in America, G. B. Balch, 1897, pp. 86-9.
50. History of Washington County, Ohio, William & Brother, publishers, 1881, pp. 634, 636, 641.
51. Descendants of WILLIAM SUMNER, W. S. Appleton, 1879, p. 6.
52. History of Martha's Vineyard, C. E. Banks, 1911, II, 164, note.
53. Vital Records of Dedham, pp. 104, 121.
54. Life of MANASSEH . . . , I, 19, 21, 23-4, 29-36, 39, 45-8, 52-9, 61-4, 71-7, 83-96 et seq., 113-4.
55. Sprague's Annals of the American Pulpit, V, 50-2; Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1881, II, 225, 508-9; III, 101; IV, 469, 475; Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, p. 257; Dexter's Yale Biographies, 1885, I, see index; Boston Notions, N. Dearborn, 1848, p. 207.
56. History of Essex County, D. H. Hurd, II, 1211-7.
57. History of Ipswich, Essex and Hamilton, J. B. Felt, 1834, pp. 196-7, 278-9, 287, 294-300, 352.
58. "The Earliest Settlement in Ohio," Alfred Mathews in Harper's Magazine of June-November, 1885, being LXXI, 552-65; Ordinance of 1787, and Dr. MANASSEH CUTLER, . . . W. F. Poole, 1876, pp. 1-38 (also printed in North American Review, Apr. 1876).
59. Records of the Town of Jamaica, Long Island, N. Y., Josephine C. Frost, 1914, II, 413.
60. Historical Account of Massachusetts Currency, J. B. Felt, 1839, pp. 83, 135, 196.
61. Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1927, 1928, pp. 873-4.
62. Vital Records of Hamilton, pp. 49, 83, 88.
63. Sprague's Annals of the Pulpit, II, 15-9; Life of MANASSEH . . . , pp. 19, 23-4, 83, 113-4; Dexter's Yale, III, 114; Felt's Ipswich, Essex and Hamilton, pp. 298-9; List of the Officers and Members of the Massachusetts Historical Society January, 1791-September, 1897, 1897, p. 7.
64. Life of MANASSEH . . . , II, 351.

65. Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors in the Revolutionary War, IV, 324.
66. Massachusetts Historical Society Proceedings, 1876-7, XV, 163-77 being Paul Revere's Signal, by Rev. J. L. Watson, 1876.
67. Magazine of American History, 1881, VI, 246-51, 257; Historical Magazine, 1860, IV, 159-60; Connecticut Quarterly, 1896, II, 386-9; Historical Collections of Ohio, H. Howe, 1891, III, 472-508.
68. "MANASSEH CUTLER" by Wm. F. Poole, in New England Register, XXVII, 161-5.
69. Word of Dr. Reuben Jay Atwood (b. 1865, now deceased); Churchill Family . . . , G. A. & N. W. Churchill, 1904, p. 30.
70. Pictorial Field Book of the Revolution, B. J. Lossing, 1851, I, 533.
71. The Putnam Lineage, Eben Putnam, 1907, pp. 180-1.
72. Lineage Book of the D. A. R. for 1920, CLVI, 159-60.
73. Canada and the American Revolution, G. M. Wrong, 1935, pp. 293-306 and bibliog. 485; New England Register, VI, 129-45; The Invasion of Canada in 1775, E. M. Stone, 1867.
74. The Islands of Boston Harbor, E. R. Snow, 1935, pp. 124-6.
75. History of Plymouth Plantation, Wm. Bradford, pub. by Massachusetts Historical Society., 1912, II, 278, 280-1; Bradford's History of Plymouth Plantation ed. by Wm. T. Davis, 1908, pp. 349-52.
76. Kindness of Susan Gale Adams.
77. History of Beverly, E. M. Stone, 1843, p. 311; History of Essex County, D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 706.
78. Dictionary of American Biography, V, 12-4.
79. Grandmother Brown's Hundred Years, 1827-1927, H. C. Brown, 1930, pp. 8-10, 20, 22, 82-3, 85, 87-9, 98.
80. History of Athens County, O., C. M. Walker, pp. 47-70, 81, 119-21, 249-50, 387-93, 399-400, 571; Memoirs of the Early Settlers of Ohio . . . , S. P. Hildreth, 1852, pp. 410-27.
81. Manuscript Family Records, including "Genealogy Book" and "Annals of the Homestead", both by Julia P. Cutler (1814-1904) daughter of EPHRAIM<sup>o</sup> and SALLY (PARKER) CUTLER, pp. 4-7, 20-47, 75-86, 109-35, 152, 168-9, 193-7, 209-16.
82. Ohio Archaeological and Historical Publications, 1917, XXVI, 58-77, Article by Sarah J. Cutler on the "Coonskin Library"; Walker's Athens County, pp. 399-400; Life of EPHRAIM<sup>o</sup> CUTLER, pp. 50-1.
83. Ohio Archaeological and Historical Publications, XVII, 247-53 being "The Coming and Going of Ohio Drowning", Rev. I. F. King.
84. EPHRAIM's Life . . . , pp. 83.
85. History of Washington County, O., H. Z. Williams and Brother, 1881, pp. 448, 455, 471-2, 485, 540-1, 633-6, 641-3.
86. History of Southeast Missouri, R. S. Douglass, 1912, I, 212-33.
87. Hildreth's Memoirs . . . , pp. 414-20; Cutler Genealogy, pp. 120-2; Howe's Historical Collections, III, 505-8.
88. Research by Miss Eva L. Moffatt.
89. Statement of Ernst Hertzberg and Sons, of Chicago.

# DANE



(22) Ipswich  
 (3) Roxbury  
 (2) Gloucester  
 ☆ Malden  
 □ Newburyport  
 § Allegheny Co., Pa.

◆ Meigs Co., O.  
 ♣ Edgartown  
 △ Killingly, Conn.  
 ∴ Waterford, O.  
 ∥ Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.  
 † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

† Thomaston, Me.  
 ♂ Morgan Co., O.  
 ✦ Malta, O.  
 (49) Mauston, Wis.  
 † Marietta, O.



## DANE (*Dayne, Dajne, Deane*)

JOHN<sup>1</sup> DANE born about<sup>18</sup> 1587 was a tailor, resident<sup>1</sup> first at Berkhamstead, Hertfordshire, England, where at least two of his children were born, and later at Bishop's Stortford of that county, to which place he removed<sup>5</sup> by 1615. He had married, probably by 1608-10, FRANCES (—).\*

JOHN<sup>1</sup> and his wife were<sup>1,18</sup> deeply religious people and strict disciplinarians, as is proved by a unique "Declaration" or biography written by their son JOHN<sup>2</sup> in his later life, from which document, to be reproduced presently, we gain much of our knowledge of the earlier generation as well as of the writer. It informs<sup>1</sup> us that JOHN<sup>2</sup> preceded his parents to New England but that they "hasted after me as sone as thay could"; that he, himself, came<sup>1</sup> first to Roxbury but soon removed to Ipswich where he could worship under the Rev. John Norton who had been curate to this family in Bishop's Stortford and who had come to Ipswich in 1635 to serve its church as Teacher.<sup>6</sup> No definite date has been recorded for the emigration of any member of this family but a John Dane who was recorded<sup>12</sup> at Ipswich in 1635, must have been JOHN<sup>2</sup>, and JOHN<sup>1</sup> is believed<sup>18</sup> to have reached Ipswich in 1636 with his wife FRANCES and probably<sup>3,5</sup> their daughter Elizabeth Howe and son Francis<sup>2</sup> Dane. The earliest recorded evidence on this point is of certain Ipswich land granted<sup>8</sup> to "JOHN DEANE the elder" which was entered on the books on April 9, 1639, but must have been assigned and occupied somewhat earlier. "JOHN DEANE the elder" was also mentioned as an abuttor on October 25, 1639, and he with his sons JOHN<sup>2</sup> and Francis<sup>2</sup> all had rights in the commons<sup>8,11,12</sup> in February, 1641-2. Either JOHN<sup>1</sup> or his son of the same name became<sup>16</sup> a freeman on June 2, 1641. The Ipswich grant to JOHN<sup>1</sup> was for a one-acre house lot<sup>11</sup> "lying in the street called the West end . . ." on the north side<sup>18</sup> of Ipswich River and adjoining<sup>20,21</sup> the lot of Robert Muzzey. He had also six acres of planting ground "beyond the Ready (Reedy) Marsh" and four more acres of planting ground<sup>8</sup> within the common fence.

By 1641 or 1642 JOHN<sup>1</sup> lost his wife FRANCES and about that time he removed to Roxbury where on July 2, 1643, he married secondly<sup>10</sup> Annis widow of William<sup>1</sup>

\*FRANCES, the wife of JOHN<sup>1</sup> DANE, had been<sup>1,18</sup> at one time a servant to Lady Margaret Denny who was maid of honor to Queen Elizabeth and wife<sup>34</sup> to Sir Edward Denny, a gentleman of the queen's privy chamber. Lady Margaret died on April 24, 1648, aged eighty-eight<sup>18</sup> and was buried in the church of Bishop's Stortford.<sup>34</sup> FRANCES was probably the daughter of Thomas and Margaret Bowyer, for among the "Benefactions" recorded for the Parish of Bishop's Stortford is the following:<sup>33</sup>

"JOHN DANE, by deed dated 21st of July, 1630, in consideration of the Parish having been at great charge in relieving Margaret his mother-in-law, the wife of Thomas Bowyer, after the death of her husband, &c conveyed a parcel of ground taken out of a great yard belonging to JOHN DANE, with a heremall there, or booth, and half part of a well lying in Hockerill Street, for the benefit of the chief inhabitants of this Parish forever."<sup>33</sup> This furnishes probability, but no proof of parentage for FRANCES, for DANE could as suitably have called Margaret "mother-in-law" if she were step-mother to himself or to FRANCES.

Chandler of that place<sup>13</sup> who had both been residents of Bishop's Stortford before their emigration<sup>22</sup> in 1637.

In October, 1649, JOHN<sup>1</sup> petitioned the General Court that the house and lands which had belonged to William<sup>1</sup> Chandler might be made over to him for he had<sup>13,16,22</sup> "paid more debts of Chan<sup>1rs</sup> than y<sup>e</sup> house and land was worth, & also brought up y<sup>e</sup> children of Chandler w<sup>ch</sup> have been chargeable to him." Two days later<sup>16</sup> "In ans<sup>r</sup> to the peticon of JOHN DAJNE ffor the setling the howse and lands of W<sup>m</sup> Chandler (whose wyddow he marryed, & children brought vp) on him, the said JOHN DAJNE, his request was graunted; & y<sup>e</sup> said howse and lands confirmed on him by this Courte."<sup>16</sup> In this connection it is a pleasure to note<sup>18</sup> that on February 2, 1651-2, after two and a half years ownership, JOHN<sup>1</sup> made a deed of gift to his "dear and loving wife Annis Dane . . ." of all the housing and lands that had belonged to her first husband "reserving the vse of it in my owne hands vntill my death. . . . Provided that vpon the death of the sajd Annis or vpon the disposall of the sajd housing & land vnto the children or otherwise by the sajd Annis the sajd housing & land shall stand bound for the payment of tenn pounds . . ."<sup>18</sup> which sum he made over to his son JOHN<sup>2</sup> DANE. The Chandler property which temporarily belonged to DANE consisted<sup>24</sup> of a house and home lot of five and a half acres situated at present Bartlett and Washington Streets (see map, p. 416) the second lot in the nookes next to Dorchester and a share in the thousand acres near Dedham. This home lot adjoined that of John<sup>1</sup> Watson which was purchased by PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER and eventually became a part of the James<sup>6</sup> Mears (James<sup>5</sup>, JAMES<sup>4</sup>) estate between<sup>14</sup> Bartlett and Cedar Streets (see map, p. 416). But JOHN<sup>1</sup> also possessed, by purchase, the third and fourth lots in the nookes, consisting of ten and a half and thirteen acres respectively.<sup>24</sup>

He witnessed<sup>15</sup> two documents in January, 1647, and two more in February, 1648, one of which gave a power of attorney to JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS. Again in October, 1650, he witnessed a document<sup>15</sup> by which MILLS sold one-third part of the ship "Jane."

The will<sup>17</sup> of JOHN<sup>1</sup> DANE, "in his own hand" writing was dated September 7, 1650. He gave to son JOHN<sup>2</sup> £10 "out of my now dwelling house, which will appear in a deed dated\* 2d feberi in fift one [1651] . . . on feather bede & on feather boster & two fether pillows & a yellow rugg, & also a pewter platter." To his daughter Elizabeth How a black cow "to be deliuered to her after my deseas emediatly . . . a litl kittle, & on pewter candlestick." To his son Francis<sup>2</sup> he gave his old black cow, his Bible and his woodland at Roxbury. "To louing wiff Anic, whom I mak sooll exseekitrix all my movable goods that is not expressed." JOHN<sup>1</sup> died at Roxbury September 14, 1658, and his will was proved on October 16 following.<sup>17</sup>

The known children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and FRANCES (?*Bowyer*) DANE, all born in England, the first two probably at Berkhamstead, Herts, were<sup>1,40</sup>

- i. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. prob. 1608-10; d. at Ipswich<sup>2</sup> Jan. 21, 1693-4; m.<sup>3</sup> at Bishop's Stortford, Herts, Eng. on June 27 or<sup>40</sup> 28, 1628, James<sup>1</sup> Howe son<sup>3</sup> of Robert Howe of Hatfield Broad oak, Essex, Eng.
- ii. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, see following.

\*This was the exact date of the deed returning to wife Annis the property of her first husband which verifies the claim, that he retained a £10 valuation of it for JOHN<sup>2</sup>.

- iii. Francis<sup>2</sup>, bap. at Bishop's Stortford<sup>5,22</sup> Nov. 20 or<sup>40</sup> 23, 1615; d.<sup>4</sup> at Andover Feb. 17, 1696-7, aged 81; m. 1st Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Ingalls (Edmund<sup>1</sup>); m. 2nd at Andover<sup>4</sup> Nov. 22, 1677, Mrs. Mary Thomas; m. 3d in 1690 his stepsister<sup>13,22</sup> Hannah (Chandler) Abbott, dau. of William<sup>1</sup> and Annis (Bayford) Chandler and<sup>22</sup> widow of George<sup>1</sup> Abbott called "jr." Rev. Francis<sup>2</sup> was enrolled<sup>5</sup> at Cambridge University, England in the spring of 1633 but did not graduate. He became "Teacher of the church at Andover, having been an officer in ye church 48 years." Because of his criticism of the witchcraft delusion he barely escaped being one of its \*victims.<sup>5</sup>
- iv. Mary<sup>2</sup>, bap. at Bishop's Stortford May 1, 1616 and died there<sup>40</sup> May 28, 1617.

JOHN<sup>2</sup> DANE (*John*<sup>1</sup>) who was born about 1612-3, doubtless at Berkhamstead, co. Herts, England, died at Ipswich on September 29, 1684. He married first<sup>1</sup> in England, probably in Essex, after<sup>1</sup> 1629 and before<sup>1</sup> 1635 ELEANOR<sup>1</sup> CLARK<sup>11</sup> who was the mother of all of his children and he married secondly before March, 1676, Alice (Dutch) Newman.\*\* As has been shown JOHN<sup>2</sup> DANE emigrated in or before the early part of 1635. His own tale of his life, written in 1682 two years before his death was written in a small volume three and a half inches wide by six inches long called "A Declaration of Remarkabell Prouedenses in the Corse of My Lyfe". It contained one hundred thirty-two leaves, was bound in parchment, with a lappet, and was in his own handwriting. The odd thing about it is that in spite of its length it was rendered twice — in prose and in rhyme. It became the property of his daughter SARAH<sup>3</sup> DANE who married DANIEL<sup>3</sup> WARNER and is said† to have been given by her to her grandson PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> WARNER. In course of time it came into the possession of John J. Babson, historian of Gloucester (where PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> lived) who gave it<sup>1</sup> about 1853-4 to the New England Historic and Genealogical Society where it remained for years.

In spite of its length it is given here in full, for it "is invaluable in identifying the family's residence in England . . . in giving us an insight into the character and sentiments of persons in Mr. DANE's condition in life, in his day."<sup>1</sup>

What was probably intended by JOHN<sup>2</sup> as a title page reads:

"By JOHN DANE, senner, of Ipshwitch,  
And Chiriergen, in the yer of our Lord, 1682;  
Containing sum poems in waie of  
preparation for death, besides the obsaruaton  
of seauarall prouedensis in the Cose of  
his lyfe, and aded seauerall meditations.

He that liues out full seauenty years,  
and has fullfild that number,  
his after time that doth apere  
is of grefe and great wonder. (psalme the 90 10)."

\*Abigail (Dane) Faulkner and Elizabeth (Dane) Johnson (two daughters of the Rev. Francis<sup>2</sup> Dane) with the latter woman's daughter Elizabeth Johnson were all three accused in the witchcraft trials.<sup>16</sup> The courageous stand of the Rev. Francis<sup>2</sup> was largely instrumental in ending the craze.

\*\*She was the daughter<sup>23</sup> of Osmund<sup>1</sup> Dutch of Gloucester and widow of John Newman of Ipswich. After the death of JOHN<sup>2</sup> DANE she married thirdly as his second wife Jeremiah<sup>1</sup> Meacham.<sup>23</sup>

†In the New England Register<sup>1</sup> of 1854 the New England Society published the text of this "Narrative" in full, stating that on the inner cover of the book was written in large letters: "PHILEMON WARNER, Jun<sup>r</sup>, his Book given him by his grandmother WARNER, Jan<sup>ra</sup> 20th. 1741:2 . . . pr PHILE. WARNER 1770." This statement seems to the compiler irreconcilable by the known facts, for the grandmother SARAH (DANE) WARNER of PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> WARNER died on December 28, 1701 or 1702. A request for a facsimile of this inner cover has brought from the Librarian of the Society the statement that the original has been missing from their files since August 1927.

“A DECLARATION OF REMARKABELL PROUEDENSES  
IN THE CORSE OF MY LYFE.”

“And first of a famely prouedens. In my infansy, and yet I ueary well Remember it, my fatter Remoud his habetation from barcumstid [Berkhampstead] to Starford [Stortford]. Thare he bout a house, and brout his famely theather; and he went back againe to finesh matters with him he had sould his two, and my mother and hur children ware at Storford. Not being among anie acquaintans, and my fatter staying longer then she thout he would, or himself other, my mother met with sum wants and was trobeled and weapt. I doubt not but she layd open her wants to god, for she was a serious woman. And my Sister How, she was but a lettell gurle, she went into the yard and sot doune in the sun under the window; and laying hur hand on the ground to Rise up, thare lae a shilling under hur hand. She brout it in. I, being a lettell boy, askt hur where she found it. She shewed me. I went and scrabled with my fingers in the place and found a notther. It being in the nick of time in hur wants, she toke great notis of it and I doubt not but made good improuement thareof, with great acknouledgment of gods marsie at that time.

“I shall menshon one more consurning my Mother. When she liued in starford, one nyte, in her slepe, she fell into a dream, and waking she was mutch taken with it. She tould my father, and could not cepe it out of hur mind. And it was, that sutch a minester, I haue forget his name, should preach sutch a weke and sutch a day at elsuam, [Elsenham], on sutch a text. The thouts of it did so take with hur that she inquiered, and as she dreamed, so it was; the same man, the same day, the same text. She and my brother How herd him. I, then being so young, cannot Remember euery thing; but I doubt not but that she made good improuement of that sarmon.

“Consarning my self; when I was but a lettell boy, being edicated under godly parents, my Conshans was ueary apt to tell me of euells that I should not doe. Being now about aight yers ould, I was giuen mutch to play and to run out without my fathers Consent and againe his comand. One a time, I haueing gone out most parte of the day, when my father saw me cum home, he toke me and basted me. I then cept home, and folowed my busenes two or thre dase. My father and mother Comended me, and tould me that god would bles me if I obeyed my parents, and what the contrary would ishew in. I then thout in my harte, o that my fatter would beat me more when I did amis. I fard, if he did not, I should not be good.

“Not longe after, I being alone on the shobord Repping open a payer of bretches of a Gintilmans who had had a hole in his pocut and sewed up againe, thorow which hole he had lost or dropt into his knes of his linings a pese of gould, which, when I saw, I thought I myt haue it, for I thout nobody knew of it, nor could know of it. I toke the Gould and hed it, and sat upon the shoboard to worke; but, thinking of it, I thout it is none of myne. I fetcht it againe, but upone more pondring I went and hed it againe. When I had dun so, I could not be quiet in my mynd, but fetcht it againe, and thout thow nobody could know of it, yet god, he knew of it. So I gaue it to my fatter, hoe gaue it to the gintelman. I cant but take notes of gods goodness in then giving me Restrayingn grace to presarue from sutch a temptation, though then I slytly passed ouer many sutch prouedenses.

“I did think myself in a good condishon. I was conuinsed that I should pray and durst doe no other, and Red and here sarmons and durst doe no other; yet I was giuen to pastime and to dansing, and that I thout lawfull. Now uppone a time, when I was groune 18\* yers of age or thare abouts, I went to a dansing scoll to lerne to dans. My father hering of it, when I cam home tould me, if I went agayne, he would bast me. I tould him, if he did he should neuer bast me againe. With that, my father toke a stick and basted me. I toke it patiently, and said nothing for a day or [two], but on morning betimes I res and toke 2 shurts on my back and the best sute I had, and a bybell in my pocet, and set the dores open and went to My fathers chamber dore and said, god by father, god by mother. Why, whether are you going? To seke my fortin, I answered. Then said my mother, goe whare you will, god he will find you out. This word, the point of it, stuck in my brest, and afterwards god struck it home to its head.

“Although I thout my fatter was two Strict, I thout Soloman said, be not holy ouer mutch, and daued was a man after gods oun harte, and he was a danser: but yet I went my Journey, and was from him half a yere before he hard whare I was. I first settled in barcumsted, and thare Rought on a shobord that had bene improud that waie. On a nyte, when most folke was a bead, a mayd cam into the shobord and sat with me, and we Jested together; but at the last she cared it so, and put huself in sutch a poster, as that I made as If I had sum speshall ocashon abrod and went out; for I fared, If I had not, I should haue cumitted foley with hur. But I ofen thout that it was the prayers of my parents that preuaild with god to kepe me. I then gaue my self mutch to dansing and staying out and heatting myself and lying in haymowes, the pepell being a bed whare I abod that I lost my culler and neuer Recuferd it a gaine.

“I then went and wrought at harford, [Hertford] and went to an in for my lodging. The next day I went and got worke in the toun. It was nere the time of the sises at harford, and my m\*\*\* had manie sargants Cotes to make; and I sat up

\*In the rhymed narrative he says that when he left his parents he was “sixtene yeres of age” which, from the general context, is more reasonable since his repeated depositions<sup>28</sup> place his birth at 1613.

\*\*The inverted comma is used for a sign of contraction for which we have not the proper character. M' here stands for Master. Twice, at least, in the following pages, it is used for Mistress.

thre nights to work, and then I went to my In to lodg. The dore was lockt, and I knockt hard. I hard one of the mayds sa, thare is one at the dore. I hard one sa, tis no matter, it is none but the tayler. So they opend the dore, and the ostis sat in a chare by the fyer, in hur naked shift, houlding hur brests open. She said to me, a chare being by hur, she houlding out hur hand, Cum let us drink a pot, and seuerall times Reetrated hur words. I said I was so slepey that I could not stay with her now, but I would drink a cup with hur in the morning; and so I hastened awaie to my Chamber. Here I toke no notes of the goodnes of god in Restraying me, but Ratther ascribd it to my self; all though I had as Retched a natter, as I haue bene sens more sensible on then before.

"Awhile after thare was a Cockpit bult, to fite Cockes in, and many Knits and Lords meat thare; and thare folowed to the toune a manie braue Lases. And upone a day, as I Remember, thare came on from Starford that I was wonderfull glad to see, that I myt inquier of my frinds thare. I inuited him to this in to drink; and thare was one of theas braue lases thare which dind at the table I dind at, and it is lykly that I myt drink to hur and she to me; but this I know, I neuer toucht hur. The nite after, I came to goe to bead and askt for a lite. My ostes sayd, we are busey, you may goe up without, the mone shines. And so I did. And when I cam in the chamber, I went to my bed side and puld of all my Clothes and went in, and thare was this fine lase in the bead. I slipt on my Clothes agayne, and went doune and askt my ost, why she would sarue me so. O, sayd she, thars nobody would hurt you. I tould hur, if I hired a Rome, I would haue it to myself; and shoud my self mutch angrey. So she gaue me a lite into another Chamber, and thare I lae; but, in the morning, I went to that chamber I used to ly in, for I had left a lettell bundell of things on the beds tester. I cam to the dore and gaue the dore a shuf, and this fine Mistres Reacht out hur hand out of the bead and opend the dore. So I went in. I doubt mis I am troblsom to you. No, sayd she, you are welcum to me. I tould hur, I had left a small trifell on the tester of the bead, and I toke it and went my waie. For all theas, and manie other of the lyke, I thank god I neuer yet knew any but thos two wifes that god gaue me. But when I conserder my Retched hart, and what I myt with shame and blushing speke that waie, I cannot but sa, O, wonderfull, unspekable, unsarchabl marseys of a god that taketh care of us when we take no Care of ourseluse.

"I now being at harford, M<sup>c</sup> Goodin preacht thare, and he preacht consarning prayer. But on saboth day, not being in that trim that i would haue bene in, (I had a great band that cam ouer my shoulders that was not clene, and sum other things that I would haue had,) I would not goe to meeting but walkt in the filds close by a meadow sid. Thare was, whether fly, wasp or hornet, I cannot tell, but it struck my finger, and watter and blod cam out of it and paind me mutch. I went up to a hous and shoud it, but thay knew not what a sting I had at my harte. Now I thout of my mothers words, that god would find me out. I hastend home to the Chamber I lay in, at my masters house; and when i cam thare I toke my bybell and lokt ouer sum instructions my father had Ret, and I weapt sorly. The payne and swelling increast & sweld up to my shoulder. I prayd ernistly to god that he would pardon my sinn and heall my arme. I went to a surgin and askt him what it was. He said it was *the take*. I askt him what he meant. He said it was taken by the prouedens of god. This knoct home on my hart what my mother said, *god will find you out*. Now I made great promises that if god would here me this time I would Reforme.

"It pleased god in a short time to ease me and I did Reforme, and stod in aw of gods Judgments, though I had a linking mind after my former pastime. I then Rout with m<sup>c</sup> Tead, that liues at Charlstoune. He was a young man then. He and I was going to a dansing on nite, and it began to thunder, and I tould him I doubtedt we ware not in our waie; and he and I went back againe. But about a munth or six wekes after, I had a mynd to uisit a frind of a saboth day foure myle of of harford; but I tok a good whyle pondring whether I myt or no. I knew m<sup>c</sup> gooding was a good man, and that the other was naught; but, to quiet my mynd, I thought that Christ said consarning the phareses, thay set in moises chare, here them. I thought he myt preach good matter. And thus I blynded my eyse, and went. And when I cam thare, thay ware gone to meeting; and I flattred myself, it may be I shall mete them cuming home. And so I went in to an orched, and sat doune in an arbore; and, as before, one the same finger and on the same place, I was strucken as before, And as it struck my hand so it struck my harte, for I sudingly Rose up and went into a wood; and thare I cryd bitterly, and now concluded that god, god had found me out. I was now utterly forlorn in my spiret, and knew not what to du, thinking that god now had utterly forsaken me, and that he would here me no more. And when I had cryd so long that I could cry no longer, I Rose up in a forlorne condishon, and went home to harford. I then, in a Restles condishon knew not what to du. I was thinking what to do to throw of this troble; and at this time, awhile after, thare was on master scurfeld, [Scofield?] who was a minester and my godfather, that had a sonn that was bound to saint Christifars, and he was at me to goe with him. I Readily agred. And when the time was cum that we should goe, thare came nuse that saint Christifars was taken by the spanyard.\*

"Then was I at a sore lose, and considred what I should du. I drew up this conclushon, that I would goe and work Jurney work thorow all the Counties in ingland, and so walk as a pilgrim up and doune on the earth. But, at last, I had sum thouts to goe first home to my fathers house; but I thout he would not entertaine me. But I went; and when I came home, my

\*St. Christophers was captured by a Spanish fleet in 1629. Six hundred of the English settlers were condemned to work in the mines of Mexico, which outrage was one of the reasons that induced Cromwell, in 1655, to send the fleet over under Penn and Venables against Jamaica.

father and mother entertained me ueary louingly, and all the naighbors. Yet my mynd was still trubled, though I had sum secret thouts that god myt still doe me good. M' hares [Harris?] preaching at storford on that text, *Am I my brothers Cepper?* declard that we out to be one anothers keepers. Upon which I spake to one that I was acquainted with, that if he saw me eyther du or say that that was not mete, that he would tel me of it. At that time when I herd anie Red a chapter that thare was anie of the promises in, my tares would Run doune my Chekes. I saw a young man Cuming in the streat, and I fard that he would call me out. I left the shopbord and went into a backhouse, and prayed to god to kepe me that I myt not be ouercum.

"After awhile that I had abod with my father, m' Norten\* cuming to my fathers wisht him to put me to m' Barentons. That was a ueary Religious famely as euer I came in. And I went theather and was Buttler; thare I cept companie with the choises Christians. I went to here m' farecloth, thre or fowr myle, I haue forgot the tounes name. The words of m' fare Clothes text was thease: Ye that ware alents and strangers from the comanwelth of isrell hath he Reconsild to himself In this sarmon he did so set forth the loue of Christ, his Redenes and willingnes to entertaine pore sinners, as that I Beleue thare ware uearey feaw dry eyse in the metting house, nor without dores for manie could not com in. It was great incureg-ment to me.

"Sone after this I mared, and went and dwelt at a place called wood Roe, in hatfeld. Sone after I had the palsie taking me, which did mutch weaking my brayne and spoyle my memory. And just it was with god that it should be so, for I cannot but acknowledg of what god had then bestowed on me. I went to a phisishon, and he tould me that it was too latte to doe me annie good. I was so as that I could scarce goe to bed or from bed without helpe. And my mother hauing bene saruant to the Ladie denney,\*\* she speaking of it to the Ladie, she tould hur of a meadson, that had cuered an ould woman of thre score yeres ould. My mother, diligently atending to the meathod of the besenes, cam to me and aplied the same to me, and it ceuerd me; though I have the marks of it on my face to this day. Then I liued on wood Ro grene, on hatfild forrist. No soner on trobel was at an end, but a nother insude. There was on muschen liued under the same Rofe that I liued in, only he liued at one end and I at the other. Thare was farmers and yemans sonnes meat thare and I was among them, thinking no harme. But thay ware a contrifing to haue a mearey metting at that muschins hous, and inuitted me to be one of them. And being among them, thay would contrif thare busenes with me, and tould me that thay would hae four bushills of barly out of a barne, (the ouner of which, one of these was his son,) and this muschin was to turne it into malt, and brew it, and drink it thare. I durst not Cros them, thay ware sutch blustering lades; but I was in a sad tune, and knew not what to doe. But I went to my Brother Howes† father and advised with him. He was a ueary onest man, and he tould me I should, by no meanes, be among them when thay did act that busenes, but make sum Journey sum waie or other, and he would du the busenes for me. So I did. And he acquainted the woman of the house, a prudent woman. And at the time apointed thay went to the barn. The woman, hauing had fore knowledg of it, stud after supper at hur hall window lesening, the barne not being fare distant from the house, and she hard a noise at the barne, and sent suddinly to the barne, and toke them with fowr bushills of barly, cared out of the barne in a sacke. The thing being discovered, the men ware in a bad tose, but thay suspected me; and the yemons sonn came flattring to me, to know if I did not tell of it; and said it is well that it was found out, but neds he would know if I did not tell sum of the famely. I toud him I had not spoke with anie of the famely sens we ware togetther. Many words past, but notthing did apere, but suspishon. But on of the Company (as afterwards I was informed, and I myself suspected him and escaped his hands) came with a sord to my shop to kill me.

"This was no sooner ouer but cumes a new trouble.

"I then went to liue in the chef place in hatfild toune, and toke a prentis and kept a gurniman. And the taylers ware so disgust at it that they made arnestly to the ould lady barenton, Sr fransis barenton's‡ widdow, and to m' Sr Thomus barenton to git me out of the toune; for sayd thay he takes up all our worke, and we know not how to liue. This was so eagirly prosecuted as that m' Roburd barenton tould me y<sup>t</sup> he would giue me his eres, if he did not send me out of toune. And after thre times sent for before Sr Thomus barenton, by warrant, and pleaded against, and could not preuaile, Thay sumansd me to the quarter seshons; but god of his goodnes stod by me, and afterwords I found great frenship from thos that was my profest aduersareys.

"When theas stormes ware a lettle ouer, thare was a great cuming to nu ingland; and I thout that the temptations thare

\*This was Rev. John Norton, afterwards minister at Ipswich. He had been curate at Bishop's Stortford, where the author's father then resided.

\*\*There is a monument at Bishop's Stortford to Lady Margaret Denny, a descendant of the Edgcombess . . . in Cornwall, Maid of Honor to Queen Elizabeth. . . . The Lady Denny mentioned in the text was undoubtedly this person. She died April 24, 1648, aged eighty-eight.<sup>34</sup>

†The father of James How, who emigrated to New England and settled at Ipswich, resided at this time<sup>3</sup> at Hatfield, co. Essex, Eng., or in its vicinity. . . .

‡Sir Francis Barrington . . . married Joan, daughter of Sir Henry Cromwell, and aunt to Oliver Cromwell, the Protector . . . The family home was at Barrington Hall, co. Essex (see map, p. 712) and Sir Thomas had become head of the family while Robert the second son resided at nearby Hatfield Broadoak.<sup>1,39</sup>

ware two great for me. I then bent myself to cum to nu ingland, thinking that I should be more fre here then thare from temptations; but I find here a deuell to tempt, and a corrupt hart to deseue. But to Return to the way and manner of my cuming. When I was mutch bent to cum, I went to starford to my fatter to tell him. My brotther how was thare then. My fatter and motther showd themselves unwilling. I sat close by a tabell whare thare lay a bibell. I hastily toke up the bybell, and tould my father if whare I opend the bybell thare i met with anie thing eyther to incuredg or discouredg that should settell me. I oping of it, not knowing no more then the child in the womb, the first I cast my eys on was: Cum out from among them, touch no unclene thing, and I will be your god and you shall be my pepell. My fatter and motther neuer more aposd me, but furdered me in the thing; and hasted after me as sone as thay could. My first cuming was to Roxbury. Thare I toke a pese of ground to plant of a frind. And I went to plant, and hauing cept long in the shep, the weatther being hot, I spent my self, and was ueary wearey and thurstey. I cam by a spring in Roxbuery streat, and went to it, and drunk, and drunk againe and againe manie times; and I neuer drounk\* wine in my lyfe that more Refresh me, nor was more pleasant to me in my lyfe, as then I absolutly thout. But m' Norton\*\* being at ipshwitch, I had a mynd to liue under him. And, on a time, I came to ipshwitch alone when thare was no path but what the ingens had made; sumtimes I was in it, sumtimes out of it, but god directed my waie. By the waie I meat in on place with forty or fiftie indiens, all of a Roe. The formost of them had a long stafe that he held on his forhed lyke a unicorns horne. Many of them ware powwous; and, as I past by them, I said, What chere. Thay all with a loud uoise, laughing cryd out, What chere, What chere, that thay made the woods Ring with the noyse. After I parted with them about a myle, I meat with two indines, one of them a uery lusty sannup. I had a packet under my arme, and he toke hould of it, and pekt into it. I snatcht it away, with an angrey countinans, and he made no more of it. So I came to ipshwich, and agreed with goodman medcafes uesell to bring me from boston, whare I had brout my Goods. I brout a yeres prouidyon with me, but I sone parted with it. My meall I parted w<sup>th</sup> for indin the next yere. I thout if on had it another should not want. Thare came a naibor to me and said he had no corne. He made great complaints. I tould him I had on bushill and I had no more, but he should haue half of it. And he had; and after I herd of sartain that at the same time he had a bushill in his house. It trubled me to se his dealings, and the dealings of other men. Manie trobles I past thorow and I found in my hart that I could not sarue god as I should. What thay ware, ware two teadus to menshon. But uppon a time walking, with my Gun on my shoulder charged, in the myle brok path, beyond Decon goodhewes, I had seauerall thouts cam flocking into my mynd, that I had beatter make away myself then to liue longer. I walkt discosing with sutch thouts the best part of an ouer, as I Judged it, at length I thout, I oute of two euells to chuse the least; and that it was a greater euell to liue, and to sin against god then to cill myself, with manie other satanecall thouts. I cock my Gun, and set it one the ground, and put the musell under my throte, and toke up my fote to let it of. And then thare cam manie thing into my head; one that I should not doe euell that good myt cum of it. And at that time I no more scrupld to cill myself then to goe home to my oune house. Though this place is now a Rode, then it was a place that was not mutch walkt in. I was then mutch lost in my spiret, and as I Remember the next day m' Rogers preacht, and exkpressing himself that those ware blesed that fard god and hopt in his marsie. I thout that I fard god and hopt in his marsie. Then I thout that that blesednes myt belong to me, and it mutch supported my spiret.

"Upone a time we ware in sum preasant want in the famely, & my wife tould me she had nothing for the children. She desierd me to take my gun and se if I could git nothing. And I did goe; and I had one pigg and then that was hily estemd on, and that folowd me a great waie into the marshis. I thout the prouedens of god semd to tell me that I should not goe out to day. So I Returnd back againe with my pigg, and when I cam within les then forty Rod of my house, a company of great gray gese cam ouer me, and I shot and brout doun a galant gose in the uery nick of time.

"In sixty one, my house was burnt, as nere as I can Remember; and it was a most uialant fier. At that time I could not but take notes of seuarall prouedensis concurring with. I doe not know that I did murmer at it, but was silent loking up to god to santifie it to me. It pleased god to stur up the harts of my louing frinds to help me to the careyng on of another. I had bene ill before, and not well fitting to goe abrod, and could not indewer weat on my fete. When the carts went into the woods, I went with them, and manie times in the swamps broke in up to the knese, in could watter, in the winter. And it plcasd god I grew beatter then before, which I lookt on as a speshall hand of god. A second prouedens was this that, though my prouidyons was all burnt, I had a stock of fine swine, and the corne that was burnt, when the flowrs fell downe and the fier out, thease swine fell to eating the burnd corne, and fatted to admiration, and that in a small time, so that I had good porke for the workmen to carey on the work.

"Thus god hath all along presarud and cept me, all my daies. Although I haue manie times lost his speshall presanc, yet

\*In the summer of 1864 excavations were made in Roxbury (now Washington Street) for the purpose of laying a sewer and disclosed the "Old Brook" as it passes the junction of Dudley Street and Shawmut Avenue, "the bed of the stream being some twenty feet below the present (1864) surface of the ground," which is believed to have been the "Spring" from which JOHN<sup>s</sup> DANE "drounk."<sup>41</sup>

\*\*Rev. John Norton who had been curate at Bishop's Stortford,<sup>6</sup> serving the writer's father, emigrated to New England in 1635 and was ordained Teacher at the Ipswich Church in 1638 when Rev. Nathaniel Rogers became Pastor there. He had, however, been unofficially helpful earlier to Rev. Nathaniel Ward who was Pastor from 1634 to 1638.

he hath Returnd to me in marsi againe. Ons in ingland at M' Barentons house, in Christmas time, the cumpanie in the hall was shewing trickes in the nite, and m' Barenton came and stoud by. I being thare I toke notes that my m' changed her countinans, and the tares Ran doune hur chekes and she turnd awaie. I preasantly thout that hur thouts was better improud then myne. It put me apone a serious medetation of the Joys of heauen and of the unanetys of this world. It toke sutch an impreshon of my harte as that, though it was a time of Jolety, I could scarce here musick nor se wantonnes, [dancing?] that i was able to show my face without sheding of tares.

"The lyke impreshon had my thouts brout to me upone a question in our priuet mettings, upon a question of that text: Gods loue constraynes us to loue him that has loued us first. Beating my thouts on gods infinet loue toke sutch an impreshon of my harte as that I thout I could doe anie thing for god or safer anie thing for god. O louing Relations haue a Care of quenshing sutch motions of gods spiret, lest you bring sorow and affliction on to your heads and harts, as manie others haue done, to thare great greif and sorrow; and I can speake it to the grefe of my soule, by wofull exkperans."

As to the life of JOHN<sup>2</sup> in America, beyond what he included in his "Declaration," it is seen that in Ipswich in February, 1641-2, one Thomas Scott questioned the ownership<sup>9</sup> by JOHN<sup>2</sup> and by a Samuel Younglove of ten acres of land lying at the end of West Meadows but two arbitrators upheld their rights, yet apparently for the sake of peace JOHN<sup>2</sup> and Younglove waived that point, for two years later they were granted twenty acres apiece in another location "in lieu of a former grant at West Meadows."<sup>9</sup> In 1641-2, JOHN<sup>2</sup> as well as his father and brother were commoners<sup>8,11</sup> at Ipswich. Some John Deane became a freeman<sup>16</sup> on June 2, 1641, and that is usually believed to have been JOHN<sup>1</sup> though sometimes assigned to JOHN<sup>2</sup>, while others claim<sup>11</sup> that JOHN<sup>2</sup> became a freeman as late as May 24, 1682, but that must have pertained to John<sup>3</sup> for<sup>12</sup> on December 2, 1679, JOHN<sup>2</sup>, called senior, was recognized as a freeman having the right to have his vote on town affairs counted and recorded.<sup>11</sup>

The town evidently loaned gunpowder to its inhabitants on certain conditions, and JOHN<sup>2</sup> appears to have acquired a share of it, but in October, 1643, he and JOHN<sup>1</sup> DAVIS were among such as have forfeited £1, for not returning their powder according to an order of the town.<sup>9</sup>

In 1647 JOHN<sup>2</sup> and William Story, questioning a certain claimed ownership, tore down some fence<sup>29</sup> but were called into court for trespassing and were required to pay £3 damage and to mend the fence. In February, 1647-8, JOHN<sup>2</sup> and Samuel Younglove were granted eight acres of marsh apiece "of the South syde Hogg Island, by a little Island."<sup>9</sup> In 1648 JOHN<sup>2</sup> subscribed<sup>9</sup> two shillings toward compensation<sup>11</sup> for Maj. Denison. That year he was chosen as one of four surveyors for the town and was<sup>9</sup> to view a parcel of land near Chebacco Falls. In December, 1648, the town owed £1 to JOHN<sup>2</sup> and to Robert Day for bricks.<sup>9</sup> 1657 JOHN<sup>2</sup> was chosen constable<sup>27</sup> and in 1661 he lost his home by fire.<sup>9</sup> He served on trial juries<sup>26</sup> in 1647, 1649, 1651, 1654, 1662, 1664 and was honored by being chosen on grand juries at least five different years — the first time in 1654 having DANIEL<sup>2</sup> WARNER as a fellow member — and serving also in 1660, 1665, 1675 and 1681. His service as selectman<sup>11</sup> covered<sup>12</sup> at least the years 1664-9, 1676 and<sup>27</sup> 1682. He served endless times<sup>25</sup> as a witness to wills or deeds, as overseer of wills and appraisor of inventories. In six different depositions during his life JOHN<sup>2</sup> testified as to his age<sup>28</sup> showing his birth to have been in 1613 or a trifle earlier. In 1664 JOHN<sup>2</sup> had a share and one half equaling four and a half acres<sup>11</sup> on Plum Island granted to him while his son John<sup>3</sup> had three acres.

He must have been ailing in 1667 for in April that year, at the age of fifty-four he was released<sup>23</sup> from training on condition that he should pay six shillings eight

pence per year for the use of the military company, but in March, 1676, he was fully released.<sup>11</sup> In 1674 he deposed that Obadiah Woods had boarded at his home and he also complained<sup>29</sup> of a woman who had made a disturbance in church.

A deposition<sup>28</sup> in the very words of JOHN<sup>2</sup> sworn to on December 4, 1676, pictures his home life, and has an added flavor all its own, from its weird spelling and lack of punctuation.

“JOHN DANE, aged sixty-four years and upward, testified that ‘being in my owne house quiet by a good fire with my fameley about me I hard a Rattling at the dore and suddenly Danell hovey cam in groning with his hand one his head and fell flat one the flower in a most amasing maner and being got up agayne stagered and we Rose in an afrited condishon and set him in the chare he Cryd out if you can doe anything for me doe it I answered what is the matter he said John Le knoct him downe and struck him blynd I answard whare he sayd he is in the highway would you could take him, my sonn and I sudinly Run out and met with John Lee and asked him what the matter was he bed us stand of and cum at our perrill my sonn philemon folowed him he with drew backwards my sone sudinly Ran with in him and so we toke his stafe and had him to our house yet before the cunstable came (he staid so long) after we sent; that Joseph cuming to his brother and thay guieing good words we let them goe.’ ”<sup>28</sup>

Prior to 1677 JOHN<sup>2</sup> and his family had been living on what was (most offensively) called Hog Lane but in May of that year he bought of Daniel<sup>1</sup> Hovey a small lot which was bounded in part on “Labour-in-vain Road” and “the old way to the wharf.” He built a new house on this lot, evidently spent the rest of his life in it and by his will gave it to his wife Alice for the period<sup>11</sup> of her life. After her death in 1704 John<sup>3</sup> Dane sold it.<sup>12</sup>

In<sup>11</sup> 1677 JOHN<sup>2</sup> was a tithing man and continued so in 1678 when<sup>27</sup> DANIEL<sup>2</sup> WARNER was also serving thus. Being called Docktor DANE, he took the required oath of allegiance<sup>27</sup> in 1678. He had an injury to his leg in 1678 for he testified<sup>28</sup> that he had been frequently at Mark Quilter’s house\* for twelve weeks “curing his ‘shot leg’.” That same year JOHN<sup>2</sup> owned in addition to the commonage of his own right that which he had bought<sup>12</sup> of John Newman, former husband of his second wife.

The will of JOHN<sup>2</sup> DANE called<sup>11</sup> “Chirugion” dated May 31, 1684, gave to his wife Alice, during the term of her life that new house he had built on the land which he had bought (in 1677) from Daniel<sup>1</sup> Hovey, which was to be kept in repair by the testator’s son John<sup>3</sup>. To that son he gave the farm which he had bought of Richard Hubbard, while his books and manuscripts were to be divided between sons John<sup>3</sup> and Philemon<sup>3</sup>, the latter to divide them and the former “to chuse.” He made bequests to his daughters Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> and SARAH<sup>3</sup> and to grandchildren<sup>11</sup> Mary Chandler and Daniel<sup>3</sup> Hovey, of whom the latter was to receive £30 when he became of age.<sup>30</sup> His will was probated on September 30, 1684, and the inventory showed an estate of over £469. In 1698 John<sup>3</sup> and Philemon<sup>3</sup> became guardians<sup>31</sup> of two minor children of their sister SARAH (DANE) WARNER.<sup>31</sup>

The children of JOHN<sup>2</sup> and ELEANOR (CLARK) DANE born (doubtless) at Ipswich and in about this order, but not recorded there, were<sup>7,18,19</sup>

\*The quoted words of JOHN<sup>2</sup> cannot fail to be of interest. His deposition<sup>35</sup> regarding Mark<sup>2</sup> Quilter (Mark<sup>1</sup>) who died late in 1678 leaving a widow, an adopted son and a dictated but unsigned will which is called “onkitive” (nuncupative) incorporated his observation of the Quilter’s manner of living, thus:

“They had plenty of good food, beer and cider . . .” and JOHN<sup>4</sup> “lookt one him [Quilter] as being singler aboue many and thought because he had but a letle fameley he loued to spend it one thare carkises.”

Incidentally, one of the problems of genealogical research is hinted at by the fact that a variant of Quilter in the early records is “Twilter.”<sup>35</sup>

- I. \*Mary<sup>s</sup>, b. abt. 1636-9; d. at Andover, May 10, 1679; m. at Ipswich Aug. 18 or 24, 1658, as his 1st wife, her father's stepbrother William<sup>2</sup> Chandler (William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>4,22</sup>
- II. \*\*John<sup>s</sup>, b. abt. 1643-4; d. at Ipswich Jan. 1707-9; m. there Dec. 27, 1671, Abigail<sup>s</sup> Warner (DANIEL<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>).<sup>31</sup>
- III. SARAH<sup>s</sup>, b. abt. 1645; d. at Ipswich Dec. 28, 1701 or 1702; m. there Sept. 23, 1668, DANIEL<sup>s</sup> WARNER (see Warner, p. 652).<sup>11,31</sup>
- IV. Philemon<sup>s</sup>, b. abt. 1646; d. at Ipswich Oct. 18, 1716, aged 70; m. there 1st. Oct. 7, 1685, Mary Thompson; m. there 2nd Dec. 25, 1690, Ruth<sup>s</sup> Converse (James<sup>2</sup>, Edward<sup>1</sup>).<sup>38</sup> He was called a physician, and served in King Philip's War.
- V. Elizabeth<sup>s</sup>, d. aft. July, 1704, when her husband's will was made; m. abt. 1652 Reginald<sup>2</sup> Foster (Reginald<sup>1</sup>).<sup>32</sup>
- VI. Rebecca<sup>s</sup>, presumably she d. bef. May, 1684, for she was not named in her father's will though her son Daniel was bequeathed £30 when of age.<sup>30</sup> She m. perh. abt. 1668-70 James<sup>2</sup> Hovey (Daniel<sup>1</sup>) who settled at Brookfield and was slain by the Indians Aug. 2, 1675.

\*It was undoubtedly this Mary<sup>s</sup> Dane who became<sup>36</sup> a servant in the home of JOHN<sup>2</sup> PERKINS and who was before the court in March, 1654, with Jeffrey Skilling for fornication. She was ordered to be whipped — after she was delivered — and to be at all charges for the bringing up of the child.<sup>36</sup> The penalty laid upon Jeffrey is not stated<sup>91</sup>.

\*\*John<sup>s</sup> Dane was a member of the witchcraft jury<sup>37</sup> in 1692 and took his part in sending to death the many victims of that horror. With the other members of that jury, including HENRY<sup>2</sup> HERRICK and ANDREW<sup>1</sup> ELLIOTT (see Dawes-Gates II, 332-3), he later signed the abject apology and recantation for their mistaken act. John<sup>s</sup> was a great grandfather of Nathan Dane who endeavored to obtain legislation opening up the Northwest Territory prior to the activity of Rev. MANASSEH CUTLER in that matter.

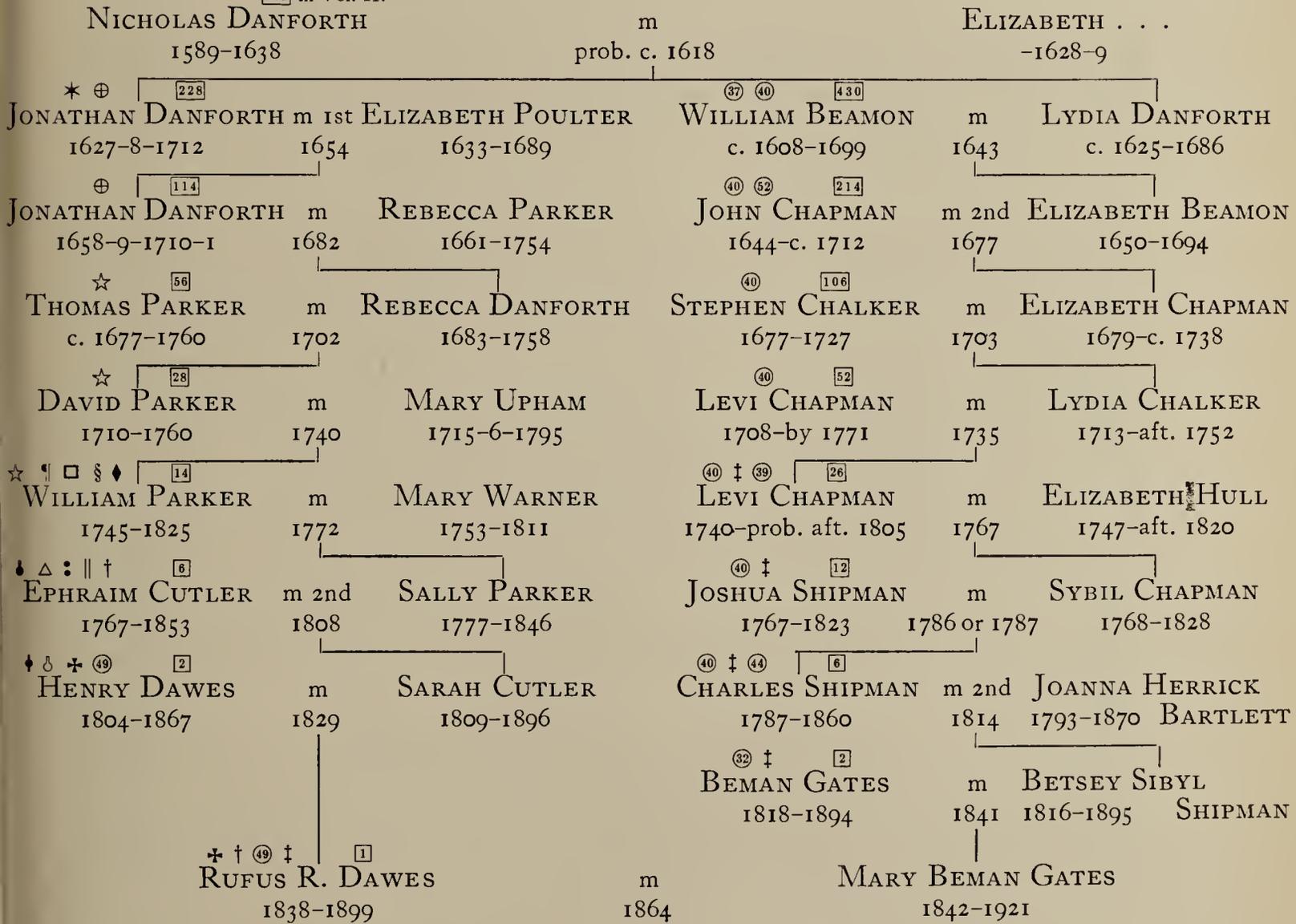
## REFERENCES

1. New England Register, VIII, 147-56; Pope's Pioneers of Massachusetts, 1900, p. 129; Savage's Genealogical Dict., II, 6-7.
2. Vital Records of Ipswich, II, 123, 536, 539, 591, 706.
3. Howe Genealogies, D. W. Howe, ed. by G. B. Howe, 1929, II, 153-5, 165.
4. Vital Records of Andover, II, 102, 198, 409, 420; . . . Ingalls Family . . . , C. Burleigh, 1903, p. 18; Descendants of George Abbott of Rowley, L. A. Abbott, 1906, I, 13-6, especially note on p. 13.
5. Alumni Cantabrigiensis, J. & J. A. Venn, 1922, II, 7; The Founding of Harvard College, S. E. Morison, 1935, p. 374.
6. Ibid., p. 392; Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 171; History of Ipswich, Essex and Hamilton, J. B. Felt, 1834, pp. 219-22.
7. Ibid., pp. 306, 309, 339.
8. The Ancient Records of . . . Ipswich, 1899, pp. 50-1, 62, 92.
9. Ibid., pp. 79, 100, 103, 120, 124-6, 132.
10. Vital Records of Roxbury, II, 103, 502.
11. Hammatt Papers, A. Hammatt, 1854, pp. 67-70, 394-401.
12. History of Ipswich, T. F. Waters, 1905, pp. 91-8, 207, 391, 394, 480-1, 483, 485, 491, 500.
13. Descendants of William and Annis Chandler . . . , G. Chandler, 1883, pp. 1-5, 11-14.
14. History of Roxbury, F. S. Drake, 1905, pp. 210, 368-9.
15. Boston Record Commissioners Report, XXXII, 120-1, 200-1, 326, 355-6.
16. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 379; II, 283; III, 177.
17. New England Register, IX, 37.
18. Dane Genealogy, Perley Derby in "Sermon . . . and Other Papers in Memory of Francis Dane," S. J. Spalding, 1871, pp. 33-4; Suffolk Deeds, III, 192-3.
19. Some Ancestral Lines . . . of . . . Tingley and . . . Meyers, R. M. Tingley, 1935, pp. 57, 84-5.
20. Probate Records of Essex Co., Mass., I, 28-31.
21. New England Register, LXVIII, 271-2; XCI, 213.
22. Ibid., LXXV, 79, 84-5, 133, 142-5; New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, LXI, 225; LXVII,<sup>6</sup> 50.
23. Ibid., LXV, 109; LXIX, 32-3; Pope's Pioneers, pp. 147, 309, 328.
24. B. R. C. R., VI, 39; Suffolk Deeds, I, 145, 304.
25. Probate Records of Essex County, I, 284, 369; II, 3, 59, 138, 290, 350-1, 393, 417.
26. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex Co., I, 111, 175, 232, 362; II, 225, 347; III, 182, 270; VI, 63; VIII, 150.
27. Ibid., II, 11; VI, 441; VII, 157; VIII, 381.
28. Ibid., III, 243, 410; IV, 257; V, 307, 414; VI, 132, 238; VII, 270.
29. Ibid., I, 124; II, 170; III, 71-2; V, 307, 413.
30. Hovey Book (Family Assoc.), 1914, pp. 30, 62-70.
31. Posterity of WILLIAM WARNER . . . of Ipswich . . . , E. Warner, pp. 4-6; New England Register XV, 50; XX, 64-8.
32. Descendants of Reginald Foster . . . , E. J. Forster, 1876, pp. 4, 6-7; Foster Genealogy, F. C. Pierce, 1899, oo. 124-7; New England Register, XC, 310.
33. History and Antiquities of the County of Hertford . . . , R. Clutterbuck, 1827, III, 265.
34. Ibid., 1821, II, 107.
35. Essex Probates, III, 259-61; . . . Essex Quarterly Court, VII, 270.
36. Ibid., I, 337; Essex Antiquarian, X, 176.
37. Salem in the Seventeenth Century, J. D. Phillips, 1933, pp. 306-7; Salem Witchcraft, C. W. Upham, 1867, II, 459-61, 474-5; Lectures on Witchcraft, C. W. Upham, 1832, pp. 127-9.
38. Converse Family, C. A. Converse, 1905, I, 8.
39. Memoirs of the House of Cromwell, M. Noble, 1787, I, 21, 36; II, 39 et seq.
40. Photostatic copy of a Transcript of the Parish Register of Bishop's Stortford, in the Public Library, New York City, consulted by E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass.
41. New England Register, XVIII, 65.
42. New England Register, XC, 308.

# DANFORTH

The Danforth family is the only one which is ancestral to both RUFUS R. DAWES [ibid., I, 3-0, 00,] and to his wife MARY (GATES) DAWES [ibid., II, 3-6, 29 and 278]. The left half of the chart below, as will be seen, pertains to Vol. I and RUFUS R. DAWES while the right half pertains to his wife and Vol. II.

\* 456 in Vol. I.  
862 in Vol. II.

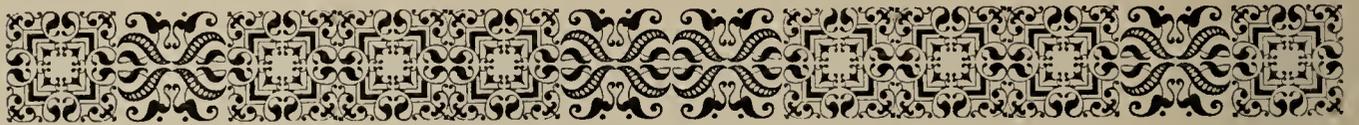


- \* Cambridge
- ⊕ Billerica
- ☆ Malden
- † Charlestown
- Newburyport
- § Allegheny Co., Pa.

- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- ♠ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- Waterford, O.
- ∥ Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♠ Morgan Co., O.
- ④9 Mauston, Wis.
- ✦ Malta, O.
- † Marietta, O.
- ③7 Salem

- ④0 Saybrook, Conn.
- ⑤2 East Haddam, Conn.
- ③9 Salem, O.
- ③2 Montague and Amherst
- ④4 Athens, O.



## DANFORTH

**N**ICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> DANFORTH, son of THOMAS and JANE (SUDBURY) DANFORTH was baptized March 1, 1589, at Framlingham, co. Suffolk, England, where his ancestors had lived for generations\*, and though admittedly "yeomen", they had considerable property, as is shown by their wills, and had an excellent standing in the community.<sup>1</sup>

NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> was a beneficiary by the will of his maternal grandfather, THOMAS SUDBURY, in 1606, and he married about 1617-8 ELIZABETH (—) whose identity\*\* has not been learned but who was buried at Framlingham on February 22, 1628-9, leaving seven or perhaps eight children.<sup>1</sup> NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> did not marry again. He was executor of his father's will which was dated April 20, 1621, and proved September 7 following, was a church warden of St. Michael's at Framlingham in 1622, and on a "Borough Leet Jury" in 1629. His position as church warden proves that in 1622 he was a member in good standing in the Established English Church, and Cotton Mather, a personal acquaintance of the sons of NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>, recorded of him that he was "a gentleman of such estate and repute in the world, that it cost him a considerable sum to escape the knighthood, which King Charles I imposed on all [possessed] of so much [income] per annum; and of such figure and esteem in the Church, that he procured that famous lecture† at Framlingham in Suffolk, where he had a fine mannour, which lecture was kept by Mr. Burroughs and many other noted ministers in their turns, to whom [Burroughs] and especially to Mr. Shepard‡ he prov'd a Gaius [host], and then especially when the Laudian fury scorched them".<sup>15</sup>

The English home of NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>, at least from 1628 to 1634, lay between Framlingham and Saxted as is proved by surviving records kept by the Rev. Richard Goltz, Rector of those two towns, which show NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> to have been<sup>37</sup> one of the "Outedwellers Towardes Saxted" and further show that in addition to an agreed tithe NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> paid, promptly and in full, a church tax upon his crops and land.<sup>37</sup> The latest recorded item pertaining to his presence there is the following payment of tithe or tax:<sup>37</sup>

\*In Framlingham<sup>1</sup> WILLIAM<sup>a</sup> "DERNFORD" died in 1512, leaving a wife ISABELL and son PAUL<sup>b</sup>. PAUL<sup>b</sup> died there in 1538, leaving a wife KATHERINE and son NICHOLAS<sup>c</sup>. NICHOLAS<sup>c</sup> died there 1585 leaving a wife ALICE (who died in 1603) and son THOMAS<sup>d</sup>. THOMAS<sup>d</sup> was married January 24, 1585, to JANE SUDBURY (daughter of THOMAS) who was buried March 21, 1601, and THOMAS<sup>d</sup> DANFORTH died in 1621, having specified that his son NICHOLAS<sup>e</sup> or <sup>1</sup> should be executor of his will.<sup>1</sup>

\*\*The claim has been made that she was a sister of Rev. Zachariah<sup>1</sup> Symmes of Charlestown and daughter of Rev. William Symmes of Canterbury, England, but no proof of such a relationship has been found.

†Presumably he financed or endowed a chair or lectureship there.<sup>18</sup>

‡Rev. Thomas Shepard with his wife, child and his brother Samuel came to New England on the "Defence" of London, Edward Bostock, Master, sailing about<sup>41</sup> the last of July or about<sup>42</sup> August 10, 1635, and arriving at Boston on October 3 after a very stormy voyage.<sup>42</sup> On October 5, he arrived at Newtowne where some of his friends had already settled and where he became their beloved pastor.

"NICHOLAS DAMPFORDE: — 1634 received Novembr 19th: for his herbage & corne as agreed £1-15."

He is called<sup>37</sup> one of Rector Golty's "chief parishioners". Neither the date of his removal nor the vessel on which he sailed is of record, probably because of the increasingly strenuous effort on the part of the government to restrain men of means ("subsidy men") from emigrating, even as it also attempted to forbid Puritan ministers from leaving the country. The statement is often made that NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> emigrated in 1634 but the payment of the above English tax late in that year,<sup>37</sup> coupled with his earliest recorded presence in New England as of October, 1635, argues that his removal probably occurred in 1635. He would then have been about forty-five years old and solely responsible for the care of his seven (or eight?) motherless children, of whom the eldest was about sixteen and the youngest, our JONATHAN<sup>2</sup>, about six.

It is evident that NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>, in common with many other Englishmen of his day, had felt a tolerance toward and an increasing sympathy with the Puritan movement, even while in England, and it has been stated<sup>40</sup> perhaps truthfully that he crossed the water as a member of the party of Rev. Thomas Shepard who, as well as others of his group, traveled under an assumed name<sup>41</sup> — some of them being entirely omitted from the passenger list<sup>41</sup> in order that they might not be forcibly detained — and this last explanation may easily cover the voyage of NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> and his children. Documentary proof on this point is lacking, but while the Rev. Mr. Shepard was under Laudian disfavor in England, he found refuge<sup>42</sup> for a time at the home of one Rev. Mr. Burroughs (who likely was the man of that name who held the lectureship provided by NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>) and perhaps also in the DANFORTH home itself (vide supra). After their removal to New England NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> immediately became an active member of the Rev. Mr. Shepard's church<sup>1</sup> and at the death of NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> his second son Samuel<sup>2</sup> was left in the personal care of the pastor.<sup>10,15</sup>

Another situation which immediately identified NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> with the Puritan element and also suggests that either he had been previously acquainted in England with some of the incoming Newtowne men — or else that his very appearance and bearing inspired confidence, is the fact that as early as November, 1635, he was put into office.<sup>4</sup> About the time that he and the Shepard party arrived Newtowne lost more than fifty families by their migration<sup>2</sup> under the Rev. Thomas Hooker to what became Hartford, Connecticut. This left not over eleven of the original families in residence<sup>2</sup> and enabled the newcomers to acquire, immediately, living quarters and cleared land by purchase. NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>, himself, in October, 1635, and May, 1636, purchased<sup>1</sup> the holdings in Newtowne of John White, John Talcott, William Spencer, Edward Stebbins and of Rev. Thomas Hooker. NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> and his family are said<sup>1,3,5</sup> to have lived on the north side of what is now Bow Street near Plympton and Mount Auburn Streets<sup>1,2,3,14</sup> but which was then called "Cow-yard Rowe".<sup>4,5</sup>

In behalf of the incoming Shepard party, there must have been made a slight modification (perhaps because of known prior church membership) of the general rule requiring six months' time to intervene between the application for freemanship and its consummation; for men who were "made free" (took the oath of allegiance) on March 3, 1635-6, should have been here by the previous September to apply

for the privilege. But nearly a dozen Newtowne men who arrived early in October, 1635, with Rev. Thomas Shepard, his brother Samuel and others were made free the following March, and among these was<sup>7</sup> NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> DANFORTH. Even before he acquired freemanship he was chosen<sup>4</sup> in November, 1635, as one of the nine townsmen or selectmen for the ensuing year and was re-elected<sup>4</sup> in 1636 and 1637, serving until his death. In December, 1635, he and two others were appointed<sup>2</sup> to build a bridge or causeway at the southerly end of present Dunster Street "down to low water mark" to accommodate those who wished to use the ferry, and to set up a broad ladder on the farther side of the River for convenience in landing.<sup>2</sup> His most frequent form of service seems to have been as a surveyor for the town or colony<sup>6</sup> for in March, 1635-6, with Ensign William<sup>1</sup> Jennison (brother of our ROBERT<sup>1</sup>) and with William<sup>1</sup> Spencer (brother of our GERRARD<sup>1</sup> see Dawes-Gates II, 769) he was appointed to "sett out the bounds" of Concord; in September, 1636, NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> assisted in setting out the bounds of Roxbury; in November, 1637, he was directed to establish the boundary between Dedham and Dorchester and on March 6, 1637-8, within a month of his death the General Court commissioned him to make a further survey.<sup>6</sup>

But a broader type of service rendered by NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> was as a deputy to the General Court,<sup>6</sup> attending five sessions between September, 1636, and September, 1637. The first session he attended decided that the name "Newtowne" should be changed to Cambridge<sup>43</sup> and at an adjourned session on October 25, 1636, established a precedent of which we may well be proud by making "the earliest recorded appropriation for public education in New England"<sup>40</sup> whereby

"The Court agreed to give £400 toward a Schoale or colledge, whearof £200 to bee paid the next yeare & £200 when the worke is finished, & the next Court to appoint weare & w<sup>t</sup> [what] building."<sup>40,43</sup>

The next year, in November, 1637, it was decided that this school (Harvard) should be located at Cambridge and a committee of twelve men — six magistrates and six ministers — was appointed to make plans for this college, which body became its first board of overseers.<sup>\*40,43</sup>

Another responsibility laid upon NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> by the General Court was that of handling the sale of liquor at Cambridge for in those early days only the most respectable and dependable citizens were permitted to sell it. Frequently deacons were designated by the court for that service. The official record shows that:

"Whereas it hath appeared vnto this Court, vpon many sad complaints, that much drunkennes, wast of the good creatures of God, mispence of precious time, & other disorders have frequently fallen out in the inns, & com̄on victualing houses w<sup>th</sup> in this iurisdiction, whearby God is much dishono<sup>r</sup>ed, the pfession of religion repached, & the welfare of this com̄onwealth greatly impaired, & the true vse of such houses (being the necessary releefe of travellers) subverted; ffor redresse hereof it is now ordered, that after the last day of this present month, it shall not bee lawfull for any person that shall keepe any such inne or com̄on victualing house, to sell or have in their houses any wine, or strong waters,

<sup>\*</sup>By what appears to have been a misapprehension<sup>38</sup> on the part of whoever indexed the Records of the Massachusetts Bay Colony<sup>38</sup> and also of him who indexed Paige's History of Cambridge, the name within this group rendered as "Mr. Dampont" has been construed as pertaining to NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> DANFORTH, thereby according to him membership on the first Board of Overseers or Trustees of Harvard. Two later publications,<sup>39</sup> however, amplified by a personal letter from an historian and the librarian of Harvard, establish the fact that NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> being neither minister nor magistrate was automatically excluded from the board, and the misspelled name really referred to the Rev. John Davenport then of Massachusetts but later of New Haven.<sup>39</sup>

nor any beere, or other drinks other than such as may & shall be souled for 1<sup>d</sup> the quart at the most; & for this end none of those psons (other than in such townes as for want of a comon brewar shalbee allowed by this Court, or by the Court of Assistants, or by two of the counsell) shall brewe any beere to sell, but shall take the same of some \*comon brewer, vpon paine to forfeit for every offence against this order xℓ: And it is further ordered, that no such comon brewer shall sell or vtter to any inn or comon victualing house, w<sup>th</sup> in this iurisdiction, any beere, or other drinke of any stronger size then such as may & shalbe afforded at the rate of 8 sh<sup>s</sup> the barrell, vpon paine of 20ℓ for ev<sup>ry</sup> offence against this order.

"On March 12, 1637-8, the laws for impositions to bee paid vpon wine & strong water is repealed; & it is ordered, that every towne shall present a man to bee allowed to sell wine & strong water made in the country, & no other strong water is to bee sould.

"These vnder written are allowed to sell wine & strong wat<sup>r</sup>:

"For . . . Newetowne M<sup>r</sup> DAMPORT . . . No man else is to sell by retaile eith<sup>r</sup> sack or strong water, w<sup>th</sup>out license from the counsell."<sup>6</sup>

Unusually high praise is uniformly accorded to the characters of NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> and of his children. One writer says of NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> "He was the progenitor of a family in New England whose successive representatives have been more than ordinarily distinguished in their day and generation, and whose name, honorable alike in Church and State, [has been] the ornament and the oracle of each of the learned Professions in turn. . . ." <sup>15</sup> And another<sup>40</sup> calls him the "founder of a veritable dynasty."

The outstanding service to their country by his sons Thomas<sup>2</sup> and Samuel<sup>2</sup> justifies special mention, that of Samuel<sup>2</sup> as a scholar and a most valuable pastor of the church at Roxbury from 1650 until his death in 1674<sup>1,10,13,15</sup> while the life of Thomas<sup>2</sup> was replete with civic and governmental service of the most responsible sort, dependably performed.<sup>2,15,19,44</sup>

The last illness of NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> must have been of brief duration since he would presumably have been in fair health when on March 6, 1637-8, he was ordered to survey land and on March 12 when he was appointed to supply the demand for strong drink in Cambridge. However, at their meeting on May 2, less than two months later, reference was made to his death, and the court appointed a successor to complete the survey<sup>6</sup> earlier required of him. The Boston records say he died in April, 1638, and the Cambridge records agree, so he may even have died in Boston while attending a session of the court. But the strange thing is that neither a will nor a distribution of his considerable property among his heirs is found, though in various cases the heirs have later disposed of property which had been their father's. It is frequently stated that NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> left but five children, but intensive study justifies the claim that he undoubtedly left seven<sup>9,11</sup> and perhaps eight, as will be shown.

The children\* of NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH (—) DANFORTH all born at Framlingham, co. Suffolk, England, and through two of whom we descend, were<sup>2,10,15</sup>

1. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, bap. Aug. 3, 1619; d. at Cambridge, June 26, 1680; m. there Oct. 1, 1639, perhaps

\*The claim is made<sup>11</sup> that NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> had a daughter Martha who married Richard French and that in 1654 they sold land which she had inherited from her father.<sup>11</sup> Other statements<sup>20</sup> are that

(a) Richard French bought on January 26, 1651-2 the home on Bow Street which had belonged to NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> DANFORTH, lived in it and sold it on October 8, 1654, to Edmund Angier;

(b) Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth inherited his father's homestead which he sold in 1652; and

(c) Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth deeded to Richard French in 1654 the land, house, etc. which he had inherited from his father. French did have a wife Martha, and by her a son Samuel born at Cambridge in 1653 and perhaps John and Joseph.

- as second wife,<sup>16</sup> Andrew<sup>1</sup> Belcher of Sudbury and Cambridge.<sup>12</sup> They became the grandparents of Gov. Jonathan<sup>9</sup> Belcher.
- ii. Mary<sup>2</sup>, bap. May 3, 1621; doubtless she m. by 1637 Dr. Thomas<sup>1</sup> Parish\* of Boston.<sup>9</sup>
- iii. Anna<sup>2</sup>, bap. Sept. 3, 1622; d. at Lexington<sup>12,14</sup> Dec. 9, 1704, aged 82 or 84; m. at Cambridge<sup>8,14</sup> Jan. 19, 1643, Matthew<sup>2</sup> Bridge (John<sup>1</sup>).
- iv. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, bap. Nov. 20, 1623; d. at Cambridge Nov. 5, 1699; m.<sup>12</sup> Feb. 23, 1643-4, Mary<sup>2</sup> Withington (Henry<sup>1</sup>).
- v. LYDIA<sup>2</sup>, bap. May 24, 1625; d. at Saybrook, Conn., Aug. 16, 1686; m. there<sup>10,11,16,17</sup> Dec. 9, 1643, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMON\*\* of that place.
- vi. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, bap. Oct. 17, 1626; d. at Roxbury Nov. 19, 1674; m. Nov. 5, 1651, Mary<sup>2</sup> Wilson (Rev. John<sup>1</sup> of Boston).
- vii. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- viii. Probably Martha<sup>2</sup>, who m. by or before 1652, Richard French.<sup>11,20</sup>

JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH (*Nicholas<sup>1</sup>*) said<sup>19</sup> to have been born February 29, 1627-8, was baptized<sup>2,3,10</sup> on March 2, 1627-8, at Framlingham, England, died at Billerica<sup>25</sup> on September 7, 1712, at the age of eighty-five and was married by Increase Nowell at Boston<sup>25</sup> on November 22, 1654, to his first wife ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> POULTER (see Poulter, p. 500). She died at Billerica on October 7, 1689, at the age of sixty-five and he married secondly at that place on November 17, 1690, Esther (Champney)† Converse, widow of Josiah<sup>2</sup> Converse (Edward<sup>1</sup>).‡ JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> lost his mother a week before he was a year old and was brought to New England by his father at the age of five or six. That father died when JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> was but ten years old and no further word has come down to us portraying his early life. It must have been spent in Cambridge where NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> had established the family home. It may have been that the eldest sister who married in 1639 cared for the younger children. NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> left a considerable estate which would have easily supplied all their material needs. We are told that Samuel<sup>2</sup> was left in the care of the Rev. Thomas Shepard, the Cambridge minister, and although no record remains, undoubtedly guardians would have been appointed for the other minors. Samuel<sup>2</sup> was graduated at Harvard and his two brothers may have been trained there, stopping short of graduation, for they were both well educated, outstanding men. If JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> failed of college training, that very fact would call forth the

\*Dr. Thomas<sup>1</sup> Parish<sup>9</sup> by a wife Mary had a daughter Mary b. 1638; Thomas<sup>2</sup> b. July 21, 1641, Boston and Mary again in 1643. Thomas<sup>1</sup>, the father, returned to England before 1654 when, his house at Cambridge having burned, Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth as his agent sold Parish's homestead. The son Thomas<sup>2</sup> Parish attended Harvard and Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth, called "his unkell", paid his expenses.<sup>9</sup> The only reasonable conclusion is that Mary, wife of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Parish, was Mary<sup>2</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>), sister of Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth.

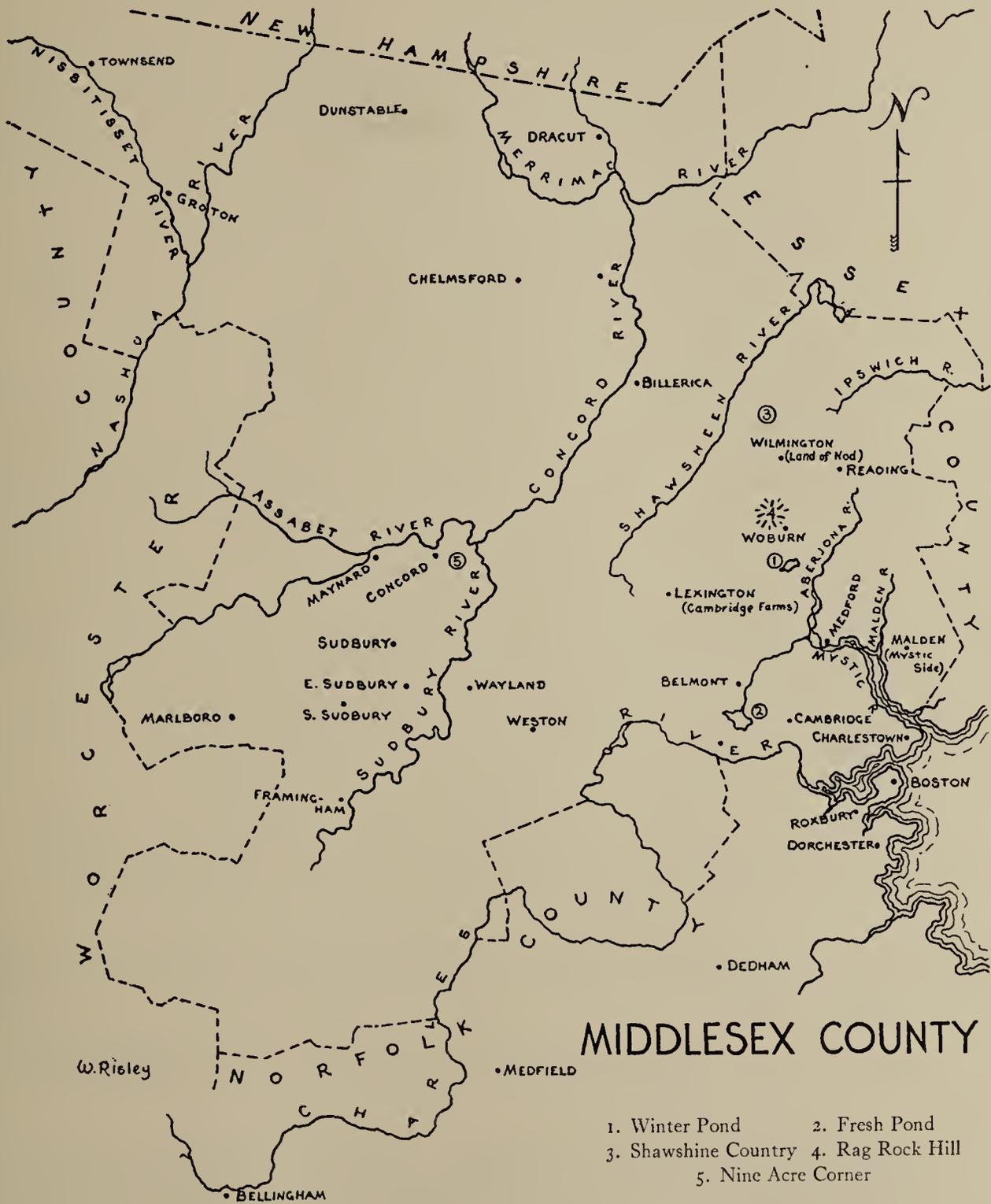
\*\*In an old volume of Saybrook records, a page is devoted to each of the early settlers and, inscribed therein, is a record of his family and his lands. The page pertaining to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMON seems to have been written by him, except for the last item recording his death. Poor writing on his part has furnished, in the opinion of some, a shadow of question as to the surname of his wife, there apparently given as "Danford", but other evidence seems to justify the opinion<sup>10</sup> that she was the daughter of NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> DANFORTH.

The majority of marriages in that early day were between individuals who resided near each other; in this case, however, their places of residence, Cambridge, Massachusetts, and Saybrook, Connecticut, being both on the water, rendered travel easy. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMON had earlier lived in Massachusetts and had relatives there so that opportunity for acquaintance between the families is easily seen.

But the significant<sup>17</sup> features are that (1) Lydia<sup>2</sup> Beamon, eldest daughter of this couple, married secondly as his second wife Alexander Pygan of Connecticut and on July 2, 1698, Andrew<sup>2</sup> Belcher (Andrew<sup>1</sup>) grandson of NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> DANFORTH in a receipt to this Alexander Pygan called him "cozen", and he could in truth have been the husband of Belcher's first cousin, if, as is claimed, LYDIA<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH was the wife of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMON; and (2) Rebecca<sup>2</sup> Beamon, youngest daughter of the above couple married John Clark and had a grandson named "Danforth Clark".<sup>10</sup>

†If, as seems likely NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> DANFORTH and his children emigrated with the Shepard party (vide supra) it follows that JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> would have then been a fellow passenger<sup>42</sup> with his future second wife.

‡The will of Edward<sup>1</sup> Converse used the term "kinsman" in regard to John<sup>1</sup> Parker (brother of our JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER) who became the step-father of ELIZABETH (POULTER) DANFORTH above.



### MIDDLESEX COUNTY

- 1. Winter Pond
- 2. Fresh Pond
- 3. Shawshine Country
- 4. Rag Rock Hill
- 5. Nine Acre Corner

higher praise for his natural, inherent ability, intelligence and self-education, for it has been said of Joseph Tompson, the first school master of Billerica, and son of a minister, that "with the possible exception of DANFORTH he, [Tompson] was the best educated man in town".<sup>19</sup> As has been stated, the life of Rev. Samuel<sup>2</sup> Danforth was bountifully filled with religious service; that of Thomas<sup>2</sup> was filled to overflowing with loyal, patriotic public service while that of JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> was as useful as either, not only by filling many official positions but also in the more varied lines of military service, religious interest and effort, and especially in the mathematical and scientific line of civil engineering and surveying. Because of his many sided usefulness, he has often been called "the father of the town" of Billerica where his adult life was spent. His excellence in these varied lines of endeavor justifies a separate summary of each of these forms of activity.

As early as 1637, the General Court appointed Capt. William<sup>1</sup> Jennison, brother of our ROBERT<sup>1</sup> (see Jennison, p. 369) and Lt. William<sup>1</sup> Spencer, brother of our GERRARD<sup>1</sup> (see Dawes-Gates, II, 769) to view Shawshin, lying north and west of Cambridge, to see if it be fit for a plantation<sup>19</sup> and in 1641 this territory was granted to Cambridge. While Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth as eldest son had inherited the family home in Cambridge and Samuel<sup>2</sup> was at Harvard and later at Roxbury, our JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> had soon after his majority (by or before 1653) settled upon these outlying lands then called by their Indian name of Shawshine or Shawshinnock, but later renamed for the old English town Billerica. Here he would have met ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> POULTER, his first wife, who doubtless made her home with her mother and step-father John<sup>1</sup> Parker, with whom JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> enjoyed the closest and friendliest relations, officially and personally, until that man's death.

In October, 1654, just a month before his marriage, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> and a number of his neighbors had addressed a request<sup>2,19</sup> to Cambridge that they might become a separate town, and on January 29, 1654-5, Cambridge replied:

"In answer to a letter sent to the town from our neighbors of Shawshine, alias Bilracie [Billerica], whereby they desire that whole tract of land may be disengaged from that place and be one entire body of itself, — the town consented to choose five persons a Committee to treat and conclude with them concerning their request therein . . ."

The detailed report of this committee was made on February 17 and was evidently acceptable to the petitioners for thirteen men, including JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH, signed a statement that

"These propositions are accepted of and consented unto by us, the present inhabitants of Shawshine; and we do humbly crave this honored Court to confirm and record the same."<sup>2</sup>

It develops that the inhabitants of Billerica were to reimburse Cambridge for the tract taken over and they were taxed in proportion to the extent of their holdings. As late as 1675, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH was granted certain land in and by Billerica because he had "expended a thousand and a half of shingles to purchase Cambridge lands for the town."<sup>19</sup>

In about 1654 JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> built his house on the north side of what is now West Street, it being one of the earliest, if not the first house built in Billerica. The statement has been made<sup>19</sup> that "unless it was replaced by a second house before

1675, which is not probable, . . ." it stood<sup>19</sup> until removed in 1878 — which would mean 223 years of existence for it.

Being an original settler of Billerica and one of the earliest proprietors, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH received a proportionate share of each succeeding division of the town lands even as late as 1708 and frequent references are found<sup>19</sup> to his extensive land holdings, numerous land transfers and items of taxation.

His service to the town of Billerica showed infinite variety and his prompt attention to every trivial need proved his willingness to serve in small as well as in greater matters. These demands included<sup>19</sup> helping to "make the cuntry rate"; being chosen deputy for the town in 1659-60 "to joyne with the Com̄itie to isew [issue, complete] the buseness about County bridges" and serving again seven years later "to agree with some able and honest artificer for erecting a bridge over Billerica river . . ." which structure was to have arches sixteen feet wide and flooring of oak plank four inches thick and was to cost "seven score and five pounds starling; ten in cash, ten in wheat, ten in malt, and the remainder in corn and cattle, not exceeding one half in cattle, which must be under seven years old".<sup>19</sup>

In 1661, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> and one other were to "agree with herdsmen or a herdsman, and to draw vp orders that consernes the same, in behalf of the whole", and a part of these orders required that the said herdsmen "shall take and deliver these cattell . . . at . . . JONATHAN DANFORTH's southeast corner of his house lot."<sup>19</sup>

After the restoration of Charles II to the throne of England in 1660 certain forces — trouble makers — busied themselves by deliberately representing to the king that the Massachusetts Bay Colonists were dissatisfied with the existing form of government (see Appendix "B" p. 694) which was directly opposite from the truth and caused great anxiety among the Puritans. As a consequence, many towns addressed testimonials of loyalty to the General Court for transmission to the King and the document prepared by Billerica bore the date of October 19, 1664, with the signatures of thirty-five men,<sup>19</sup> including that of JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH. A manuscript record by JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> which has survived shows that in August, 1669, a contribution of £6 was gathered for the relief of the fleet which had gone on an expedition to recover the Island of St. Christopher from the French.<sup>48</sup>

And at home it was the habit of the men of Billerica to assemble annually to cut the brush along the highways, being grouped in "squadrons" under named leaders and assigned to specified roads. One of these leaders in 1677 was JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH and his men were to cut between his home and the meeting house.<sup>19</sup>

Though cash contributions for the upkeep of Harvard would have been most welcome — and JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> himself is recorded as giving ten shillings in April, 1651 — yet for many years gifts of produce of insignificant amounts and of infinite variety were gratefully received and recorded (for barter was the necessity of that time). Consequently, in October, 1678, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH writing for the selectmen directed Job Lane to report to the General Court that though they had diligently endeavored to collect and send the full amount expected of them, that they were lacking £6-8-10 which they hoped to get in "as soon as corn is merchantable".<sup>19</sup> In 1679 in the list of rateable males, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> paid for two polls — himself and JONATHAN<sup>3</sup>, while in 1688 his tax list showed<sup>19</sup> three rateable males who would have been JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> himself and his sons Samuel<sup>3</sup> and Nicholas<sup>3</sup>. In those days when sundials rather than clocks were in use, a record shows that in

1697 JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> sold an hourglass to the town [for use in church?] and repaired the town horseblock, receiving six shillings two pence.

In 1665, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> succeeded John<sup>1</sup> Parker, his wife's step-father, as town clerk and served the town for twenty-one years or terms,<sup>19</sup> until 1686. He "gave character to the system [records] which remained substantially unchanged for two hundred years. Few records made today are as clear and easy to read as are those of DANFORTH."<sup>19</sup> For his systematic mind and foresight caused him to separate into different volumes, the current town action from the births, marriages and deaths, and the latter he arranged by families, instead of by chronological sequence, so that his index gives one immediate access to the summarized data on any given family.<sup>19</sup> His service as selectman equaled or exceeded his tenure as town clerk, covering twenty-one years or more — 1660-1, 1665-8, 1670-85, all inclusive<sup>19</sup> and even as late<sup>48</sup> as 1698 — and he also represented the town<sup>2,15,19,22</sup> at the General Court<sup>48</sup> in 1684-5.

The service of JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> as a surveyor was his most individual and highly specialized line of endeavor. He inherited his father's ability and during his forty or fifty years of practice and application really excelled that parent's record of accomplishment, meeting the needs not only of his own town and county but those of the colony itself throughout northeastern Massachusetts and southeastern New Hampshire. "His descriptions fill some 200 pages in his own very clear and handsome hand-writing in the [first] volume of Land Grants." Many of his "plots" [descriptive drawings] are preserved in the State Archives and in various county records<sup>19</sup> and some of them have been reproduced in publications of historic import.<sup>21</sup> In deference to the excellence of JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> in this line of endeavor he was frequently referred to<sup>19,21,26</sup> as an "Artiste" (sometimes spelled "Artis" or "Artic") evidently implying expertness, as of a professional. The use of that term has been found in 1659-60, 1662, 1677, 1695 and as late as 1702 when at the age of seventy-four he was still called upon for expert advice. The task confronting JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> when delegated to lay out tracts of any great size, necessitated, first a search over the country side to find a tract of the extent required which would not overlap some earlier grant. Then a report of that location to the General Court whose approval was necessary before surveying could begin. During his forty or more years of service, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> ran innumerable, literally thousands, of boundary lines in addition to the survey<sup>26</sup> of many large tracts. In one case in 1640-1, he was required to lay out for Margaret Winthrop, widow of Gov. John<sup>1</sup> of Massachusetts, a three thousand acre tract "in a true circle".<sup>19</sup> In 1659 he surveyed a one-thousand acre grant on the north side of the Merrimack River. In May, 1661, the General Court granted a tract of four thousand acres to the town of Billerica, to provide funds for the maintenance of a minister among them, requiring that JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> and two others should lay it out, and Billerica, in turn, offered one thousand acres of this grant to JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> and to John<sup>1</sup> Parker (his step-father-in-law, see Poulter, p. 500) if they would assume all the charges of search and of survey. The land was ultimately sold, through the agency of John<sup>1</sup> Parker, to provide funds for the completion of their meeting house and salary for their minister.<sup>19</sup>

The remuneration received by JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> for services of this sort varied considerably. As has been said, he sometimes received land in payment for services. In 1659 he was to survey and record the lots for a settlement of about twenty-five

families and to be paid from the town rate, two and a half pence for every acre. In some cases he received a flat sum as in 1665-6 when he was to survey and plat forty acres for forty-two shillings.<sup>19</sup> His services as surveyor extended as far afield as to Haverhill, Dracut, Dunstable, Groton and Townsend in Massachusetts, and even to Amherst and other New Hampshire towns.<sup>19</sup>

In addition to the many forms of civic usefulness and the extensive scientific service rendered by JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH, he was most valuable to his town and country in a military way.<sup>19</sup> During the Indian menace of King Philip's War the entire colony was in constant fear, the threat to the frontier towns being even greater than to those nearer the seaboard. The fear of Billerica people would have been second to none, but they fortunately suffered less during that period by actual loss of life than did many other settlements. The plans made by them for defense included the appointment in August, 1675, of JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH and three others to prepare places of safety for the women and children. These men developed a system of fortification of nine or more houses, called garrisons,<sup>19</sup> to which the forty-eight resident families were definitely assigned and among which the adult or fighting men of the town, as well as a few soldiers from outside, were apportioned. The main garrison which would become their "last refuge in case of extremity" was the home of their pastor, the Rev. Samuel Whiting, who himself enrolled with the troopers; and another was the home of Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH which stood opposite to Sergt. Kidder's garrison. In this house Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> lived and died. It may have been the structure he erected in 1654, but most certainly it endured from 1675 or earlier until torn down in 1878, being "the only incontestable relic of that day."<sup>19</sup>

JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> was overseer of James Paterson's garrison in addition to being master of his own. To his home were assigned three families and six fighting men which included himself, his son JONATHAN<sup>3</sup>, aged about sixteen, Samuel Manning and John Dunkin (doubtless theirs were the families assigned here) and two soldiers sent in from other towns to assist.<sup>19</sup> All brush and undergrowth near garrison houses was cleared away; no soldier might remove from the town or temporarily absent himself without permission; no gun might be discharged except against an enemy; in case of an alarm every man must hasten to his appointed place; and watch was kept day and night. The wildest flights of imagination in this latter day cannot conceive of the full significance of the experiences of that period to the father, to the mother and even to the mere children. For danger was always present, threatening either death or captivity; the heavy toil of the home maker was infinitely increased by disruption of regular habits and flight to the garrison houses, and fear was the daily portion of every person.

Following King Philip's War in August, 1676, many Indian captives, especially children, were sold to or divided among the colonists as servants until they would become of age, and in this way<sup>45</sup> a boy of twelve "son to Papa meck, alius David, late of Warwick or Cowesit", Rhode Island, was apportioned or bound out to JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH. The boy became known as John Warrick and was so recorded when he died at Billerica on January 15, 1686,<sup>45</sup> still called the Indian servant of Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup>. It was probably because of his service at this time that a Narragansett grant was acquired in this family, which in 1749 was a part of the estate of the grandson Samuel<sup>4</sup> (JONATHAN<sup>3</sup>).<sup>10,44</sup>

At about 1675 the town formally organized a military company under the command of JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH who until then had held only the title of Lieutenant but was presently made their first Captain,<sup>15,19</sup> which title he bore actively<sup>24</sup> until at least 1690 and probably later, and he was uniformly granted it<sup>25</sup> by courtesy until his death in 1712.

The residents of Billerica, in common with those of other towns, suffered greatly not only by looting and the destruction of property by the Indians, but also by the interference with their usual occupations of planting, reaping, etc.

In 1676 a letter to the General Court asking for a reduction of taxes was signed by JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH as chairman of the selectmen. In 1678 he was one of three appointed by the Governor's Council to formulate rules and suggestions for the safety of the outlying towns of Middlesex County.

In 1689 a rather unusual situation arose, the reason for which, one can only surmise, though it was likely because he had passed sixty, the theoretical age of retirement from active military duty. For on June 17, 1689, when an election of military officers was in order, "Captain DANFORTH led the Company out, gave them liberty of choice, manifested [stated?] his own unfitness for the place and willingness that another be chosen. They took Captain DANFORTH at his word, and gave him only twelve votes, to thirty-five for Lieut. Joseph Tompson. . . ." The clerk made this report to the "onered Goviner and counsel and jentlemen representatives", craving confirmation of the Company's choice. The representatives accepted and confirmed the report, but the governor and council were of another mind, disregarded the vote and decided to "consent not" and to "insist that DANFORTH remain Captain and Tompson Lieutenant. . . ." <sup>19</sup> The next recorded action of JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> rather gives the lie to his modestly suggested "unfitness," for in 1690 when Sir William Phipps lead the colonial troops against Quebec in an effort to break the French control of lower Canada, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup>, then aged sixty-two, went as one of the Captains of the Middlesex Regiment,<sup>24</sup> but apparently some unusual domestic condition existed in his home which rendered it difficult for him to leave, for under date of July 15, 1690, the colony ordered "that Capt. DANFORTH, now going forth in their Maj<sup>tes</sup> service in the intended expedition for Canada, have liberty to hire some meet person in said town to serve his domestic occasions in his absence, and that the said person be exempted from impress to any public service other than attending duty in town during said expedition."<sup>19</sup> The campaign was a miserable failure but Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> returned safely after the endurance of many delays, extremely severe weather, an appalling loss of life and unbelievably poor management of the expedition throughout.

The only criticism even suggested against Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> was made in 1695 by Lt. Col. Joseph Lynde who was sent out on August 23rd after some Indians who had just carried out one of their fatal raids against Billerica. To his report of his troops' action he appended a

"P.S. We have left about five hundred of bread in the hands of Capt. DANFORTH, who was not so prudent in the disposal of some of what was spent as, in my way home I was informed, he should have been. I directed him at my coming away to preserve what was left until further order."<sup>19</sup>

The continuing interest and effort of Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> in the military is shown by his having charge of the town's stock of ammunition in 1696 and as late as 1703.

In July, 1696, the supply in his hands consisted of a barrel of powder, 110 pounds; part of an old barrel, 68 pounds; lead, 120 pounds; flints 130; bullets, 38 and match "sufficient".<sup>19</sup> In 1703 a careful account was taken of the stock of ammunition in the hands of Captain DANFORTH and a distribution of some of it to the inhabitants was ordered.<sup>19</sup>

JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH was evidently a deeply religious man and though no membership of his is recorded with the Cambridge Church where his youth was spent, later developments show that about 1657 he received letters of dismissal from that church. His residence in Billerica would have been about fourteen miles from Cambridge, while Chelmsford was only about six miles from his home, and in February, 1656, he "proposed himself" to the Chelmsford Church for fellowship. That church, after "it was considered of, and agitated" informed him that since he was "by vertue of his [deceased] father's covenant under the immediate inspection and charge" of Cambridge Church, they, Chelmsford, were not free to accept him unless and until the Cambridge Church should yield up what right they had in him. In the following month, on March 22, 1656-7, JONATHAN "DAMFORD" presented himself to Chelmsford again, this time bringing "letters from the elders of Cambridge Church" and again asking for membership, which they again declined, apparently claiming that because of his father's covenant with Cambridge, an implied affiliation existed with the son and that he should personally join the Cambridge Church and then be dismissed to them, adding ". . . he seems called, for his owne parte, to sit still a while & wayte till God more fully shew vp his way."<sup>23</sup>

As for the situation at Billerica, in August, 1658, nineteen men, residents there, including JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH, signed a document relative to reimbursement for the young Rev. Samuel<sup>2</sup> Whiting (Rev. Samuel<sup>1</sup>) who was then called "our minister".<sup>23</sup> There existed then neither church building nor church organization, yet these individual men made him an offer contingent upon his remaining among them during his life. It included a house, which had been built for an earlier temporary pastor, a ten acre privilege, a salary of £40 for the first two years, £50 for the third year, £60 for the fourth year, and afterwards to "better his maintenance as the Lord should better their estates." It developed that his salary after the fourth year was £70 and he did stay with them for life, serving them fifty-five years.<sup>23</sup>

And relative to this long life of the Rev. Samuel at Billerica, it is repeatedly recorded that JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> was his companion and life-long and trusted friend.<sup>23</sup> The Rev. Samuel evidently preached in his own or some other house for two years, but in November, 1659, though they even yet had no church organization they planned the building of a meeting house which should be 24 x 30 and 12 feet high, "the studs to be 3 foot asunder . . . the sides and ends shall be covered with bords and the Roof with thatch" and JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH was one of a committee of three to "agree with workmen to bild and finish the said house". In December, 1661, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> was again one of a committee of three "to examine the acontes about ye bildinge and finishing the meeting house". The delay in formally organizing a church was due to an uncertainty or actual difference of opinion on certain fundamental religious principles, especially that of infant baptism and whether that alone qualified a subject for citizenship. Their utter

sincerity commands one's respect but the intricacies of their theorizing would confuse a Philadelphia lawyer. The differences of opinion on this matter did not constitute slow mentalities, but rather uncomfortably active ones, occupied in splitting hairs.<sup>23</sup> No evidence is seen, however, of open conflict between those who differed; and the support of the pastor and building of the meeting house argues against the existence of any destructive differences. But one strange thing is seen regarding our JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH for though he was a personal friend of the pastor, helped to support him and was soon to be active in the building of the church at Billerica, yet in January, 1659, he renewed his application to join the Chelmsford Church (see p. 261). Perhaps he thought he had followed their advice to "sit still" quite long enough or possibly he desired to finish what he had "started". At any rate, on January 7th, by Chelmsford Church records, "JONATHAN 'DAFFORD' brings L<sup>rs</sup> from y<sup>e</sup> ch of Cambr., wherein they resign vp all their right in him vnto us, to proceed with him." But even then, the Chelmsford Church, hesitated and wrote a long letter on January 29th, "To or [our] Beloved Brethern" (there *was* no church, only a pastor and an audience) at Billerica, asking various questions and showing themselves overly fearful of offending Billerica if they should accept the long suffering JONATHAN<sup>2</sup>. The end was not yet, but evidently the Billerica group eventually answered and favorably, for under date of March 12, 1660-1, the Chelmsford records show that a "Testimony" signed by Rev. Samuel Whiting and two other prominent men of Billerica had been received and that Chelmsford had voted to "proceed to tryal with him [JONATHAN] in order to his joining". One month later, on May 12, 1661, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> finally became a member "promising to attend y<sup>e</sup> Rule & order of y<sup>e</sup> Gospel, as touching joyning the ch. at Billerica if once gathered, or else to remove his station to this or some other Towne where a church shall bee". And JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> kept his promise and on January 11, 1665, took letters of dismission to the church in Billerica for whatever differences of opinion had existed had been adjusted and on November 11, 1663, the Billerica Church had been finally organized and Rev. Mr. Whiting, ordained. In 1663 and in 1664, while still holding membership in Chelmsford, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> subscribed £1-11-0 toward Rev. Mr. Whiting's salary.<sup>19</sup> In 1675 the selectmen of Billerica of whom JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH was one, passed "an order that all children and youth from eight years old and upwards should be sent by their parents and masters to the Reverend Mr. Whiting, to receive catechetical instruction at such times as should be appointed".<sup>23</sup> In 1677 the Billerica inhabitants were grouped under the oversight of five tything men and JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> was under the care and inspection of Richard Hassell.<sup>19</sup>

In 1679-80 the capacity of the church was increased by building a gallery within it. It was also shingled at that time but by 1693 it was evident that they must build a larger meeting house and JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH was chairman of a committee of four to attend to the entire business and he was also on a committee to assign seats to the people after the building was finished.

Relative to their beloved pastor, Samuel Whiting, during the Indian wars his house was one of those garrisoned and was called "the main garrison and the last refuge in case of extremity"<sup>23</sup> and he was "the trusted counsellor of DANFORTH, Tompson, and others, in all their important and secular matters, as well as spiritual."<sup>19</sup> Though he was a brilliant Harvard graduate and of gentle family, when

the Indian war came he enrolled among the troopers.<sup>19</sup> Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH, his loving parishioner, wrote a folio manuscript of several hundred pages of sketches of the sermons of Rev. Samuel Whiting over a period of several years.<sup>23</sup> This was seen by Mr. Farmer in 1836 but its whereabouts is now unknown.

One can catch a glimpse now and then of a glorious independence in the mind and action of JONATHAN<sup>2</sup>. In July, 1692, during the witchcraft craze the constable of Billerica was officially required to subpoena "at their peril" Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH and others to appear at court to testify as to their knowledge relative to one Martha (Allen) Carrier\* once of Billerica, but then of Andover. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> defied the law, and the constable reported "According to this warrant I have showed it to Capt. DANFORTH, and his answer is, that he can say nothing in y<sup>e</sup> case that is worth mentioning." Martha was hung, but if there had been more people like JONATHAN<sup>2</sup>, who could "say nothing" she might have lived.<sup>19</sup> And in 1698 after a bridge had gone out by flood and several towns planned to join in rebuilding it, Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> and Joseph Tompson were appointed to represent Billerica but "Capt. DANFORTH, being presented with the selectmen's order, wholly refused. Joseph Tompson went alone."<sup>19</sup>

Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH signed his will<sup>34</sup> in April, 1709, the signature being easily read,<sup>10</sup> though his hand trembled as well it might at eighty-two! On September 4, 1711, he made out a list of his previous gifts<sup>34</sup> to his children, that it might be used in connection with the desired apportionment expressed in his will. According to it, the previous gifts had varied from £12 to £30 to his five daughters, over £68 to son Samuel<sup>3</sup> and the double portion of about £162 to his eldest<sup>34</sup> son JONATHAN<sup>3</sup>. The will itself was probated<sup>34</sup> on October 27, 1712, after his death on September 7. The beneficiaries he named were his second wife Esther (who died the following April), his seven living children and his grandchildren, Mary<sup>3</sup> Parker (John<sup>2</sup>, Abraham<sup>1</sup>) and Samuel<sup>4</sup> Danforth (JONATHAN<sup>3</sup>) both of whom lived with him. His oldest son JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> was given a double portion and was named an executor with his brother Samuel<sup>3</sup> and brother-in-law Oliver Whiting, but JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> died before his father and the other two acted alone. On October 10, 1712, three sons-in-law and the daughter Mary<sup>3</sup> asked that the will be probated and on November 13, 1712, the inventory was filed showing property to the amount of over<sup>34</sup> £585. On January 1, 1713-4, an agreement was entered into by the living heirs<sup>34</sup> viz.: the daughters (a) widow Mary Parker (b) Lydia Wright (c) Anna Whiting and (d) Sarah French with their respective husbands, by (e) Simeon Hayward on behalf of his deceased wife Elizabeth, (f) by son Samuel<sup>3</sup> Danforth and (g) by grandson Thomas<sup>4</sup> Danforth, eldest son and joint administrator of the estate of his deceased father,<sup>34</sup> JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> DANFORTH.

Of the six sons of Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> only two left male issue to carry on the name. Different historians have called him "the founder of Billerica, its leading citizen of his generation and the most noted surveyor of his time in the colony"; have said "His energy and wisdom made his counsel of value, and his piety shone";<sup>19</sup>

\*The Carrier case was one of the most atrocious of that benighted period. In addition to the accusation and arrest of Martha, four of her children, her sister and that sister's daughter were also imprisoned. The law at that time required that relatives of those held in prison must provide, or pay for, food for them and pay prison fees, so the husband and father, Thomas Carrier, expended £7-6 in this way and in 1710 nearly twenty years after the execution of his wife he asked to be reimbursed for the amount and that the Attainder might be taken off, and the court authorized the payment of the sum requested.<sup>19</sup> During the trial, the Carrier children were required to testify against their mother but "her two sons refused to perjure themselves till they had been tied neck and heels so long that the blood was ready to gush from them."<sup>19</sup>

have referred to "the wise and good JONATHAN DANFORTH" whose "eminent ability and unaffected piety have been the theme of the historian and the poet".<sup>19</sup> A memorial poem to him, presumably written by his nephew Rev. John<sup>s</sup> (Rev. Samuel<sup>2</sup>) begins:

"He rode the circuit, chain'd great towns and farms,  
To good behavior; and by well marked stations,  
He fixed their bounds for many generations.  
His art ne'er failed him, though the loadstone failed,  
When oft by mines and stream it was assailed.  
All this is charming, but there's something higher  
Gave him the lustre which we most admire. . . ."

Then follows an account of his piety.<sup>19</sup>

Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH lies buried in the old Cemetery at Billerica and his wives' graves lie on either side of his. The three of them are marked by stone slabs, and as late as 1901 the inscription on his stone was quite distinct.<sup>10</sup>

The children of JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> and ELIZABETH (POULTER) DANFORTH, all born in Billerica, were<sup>2,3,10,19,25,29</sup>

- i. Mary<sup>s</sup>, b. Jan. 29, 1655-6; d. after Jan. 1, 1713-4, when heirs signed agreement about father's estate;<sup>34</sup> m. at Billerica June 4, 1678, John<sup>2</sup> Parker (Abraham<sup>1</sup>) of Chelmsford, nephew of our JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER. It is an odd coincidence that her grandmother MARY (—) POULTER also married a John<sup>1</sup> Parker, uncle of the younger man of that name.
- ii. Elizabeth<sup>s</sup>, b. May 27, 1657; d. after Mar. 1696, and prob. after\* Apr., 1709, but before Jan. 1, 1713-4, when her husband alone signed, in her behalf, an agreement of heirs relative to her father's estate;<sup>34</sup> m. at Billerica, Mar. 7, 1686-7, Simeon or Simon Hayward of Concord<sup>29</sup> who signed said agreement as her heir.<sup>34</sup>
- iii. JONATHAN<sup>s</sup>, see following.
- iv. John<sup>s</sup>, b. Jan. 23, 1660-1; d. Feb. 7 following.
- v. John<sup>s</sup>, b. Feb. 22 or 24, 1661-2; d. June 1 or 4 following.
- vi. Lydia<sup>s</sup>, b. June 1, 1664; d. at Concord<sup>29</sup> Nov. 4, 1758, aged 92; m. by early 1694 Edward<sup>2</sup> Wright (Edward<sup>1</sup>) of Concord.<sup>32\*\*</sup>
- vii. Samuel<sup>s</sup>, b. Feb. 5, 1665-6; d. at Billerica Apr. 19, 1742, aged 74-2-11; m. there Jan. 8, 1694-5, Hannah<sup>s</sup> Crosby (Simon<sup>2</sup>, Simon<sup>1</sup>).<sup>2,3</sup>
- viii. Anna<sup>s</sup>, b. Mar. 8, 1667-8; d. at Billerica, Aug. 13, 1737, aged 69; m. there Jan. 22, 1689-90, Oliver<sup>s</sup> Whiting (Rev. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Rev. Samuel<sup>1</sup>).
- ix. Thomas<sup>s</sup>, b. Apr. 29, 1670; d. July 31 following.
- x. Nicholas<sup>s</sup>, b. July 1, 1671; d. Mar. 8, 1693-4, aged 23.
- xi. Sarah<sup>s</sup>, b. Dec. 23, 1676; d. at Concord Oct. 15, 1751, aged 74-10; m. 1st at Billerica May 22, 1695, William<sup>s</sup> French (Jacob<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>);<sup>33</sup> m. there 2nd June 10, 1729, Ebenezer Davis of Concord.<sup>29</sup>

JONATHAN<sup>s</sup> DANFORTH (*Jonathan<sup>2</sup>, Nicholas<sup>1</sup>*) was born at Billerica on February 18, 1658-9, and died there January 17, 1710-1, preceding his aged father

\*The will of JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> made<sup>34</sup> in April, 1709, referred to his seven children which would necessarily have included Elizabeth<sup>s</sup> as well as JONATHAN<sup>s</sup> both of whom died before settlement of the estate.

\*\*Relative to the name "Edward Wright", special analysis is necessary since in at least two publications<sup>31</sup> three different individuals of that name are blended into one, viz., the men:

1. Edward<sup>1</sup> Wright of Boston, m. there<sup>35</sup> May 27, 1657, Mary Powell. He was a shoemaker and with wife Mary was recorded there in 1667, 1672 and 1686.<sup>35</sup>
2. Edward<sup>1</sup> Wright of Concord had land among the earliest settlers; m. there<sup>32</sup> about 1653 Elizabeth (Mellowes) Barrett and had there 6 or 7 children of whom Edward<sup>2</sup> was b. Jan. 22, 1657, d. at Concord, June 22, 1725, and he it was who m. Lydia<sup>s</sup> Danforth, above. Edward<sup>1</sup> d. at Concord Aug. 28, 1691, and his wife Elizabeth d. there Feb. 15, 1690-1.<sup>32</sup>
3. EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT (widow DOROTHY<sup>1</sup>) of Sudbury is of chief interest to us and being ancestral necessitated this identification<sup>36</sup> and the elimination of the others who had been confused with him. Incidentally, there was one other of the name at Scituate, but being more remote he avoided the confusion.

by twenty months. He married there on June 27, 1682, REBECCA<sup>2</sup> PARKER of Chelmsford (see Parker, p. 466). The home of this family was east of Long Street opposite his father's place.<sup>46</sup>

In 1675-6 when JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> was under seventeen — yet accounted a “fighting man” — he was one of six soldiers assigned to his father's garrison, the family home<sup>46</sup> (vide supra). We of this day may try, but in vain, to comprehend the state of mind of these our forbears during a period of nearly two years while King Philip's war was waged. The constant anxiety and fear of an attack, the agony of fear lest captivity or massacre should suddenly take dear ones, the loss by fire or plunder of crops and possessions so dearly acquired, even the problem of housekeeping, comparatively unimportant as against life itself, would be so enormously complicated with the endless possibility of having to race death to the nearest garrison house! And if they were fortunate and reached the garrison safely, the problem of housing and feeding three to seven families in quarters which were scanty for one, would tax both ingenuity and patience. During the period when the children of JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> were small, there was an Indian raid on Billerica on August 1, 1692, when in each of two families the mother and two children were slain. As a result we find the record of February 27, 1692-3, that

“At a meeting of the milicia in Bilerika, both of horse & foot, in observance of a warrant from our honoured Major, for the renewing of watching and scouting in our Town, ordered . . . that the watch . . . be carefully observed. . . . At the same time it was agreed . . . that a petition be drawn up . . . to be presented unto his excellency . . . for some easement of our scouting required of us, or metigations in our public charges; this was agreed upon by the milicia and by the selectmen & several other inhabitance present.”<sup>46</sup>

Another facet of that early life is seen in the subjoined item that “We expended [spent] this evening at Bro. Crosbey's . . . [had] two pots of Rosted cider”.<sup>46</sup> But on August 5, 1695, a second massacre took place at Billerica when fifteen persons, members of four families, were slain or taken captive.<sup>46</sup> In view of such occurrences the state of mind of JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> and REBECCA, or of any contemporaneous parents, is literally beyond our comprehension.

JONATHAN<sup>3</sup>, as well as his father, served therefore in King Philip's War and when at long last the government got around, sixty years later, to giving the promised land bounty to the survivors or the heirs of the participants, the service of either JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> or of his father must have been responsible for a grant, for the inventory of the estate<sup>10</sup> of Samuel<sup>4</sup> (JONATHAN<sup>3</sup>) in 1749, listed land acquired for Narragansett service. JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> probably continued his association with the militia for at his death he was recorded as “Ensign”. There is no evidence of any other official position held by him, though in April, 1683, he served on a committee with his father, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup>, to re-establish the boundary line between Billerica and Andover, which had been in controversy.<sup>46</sup>

In November, 1685, a division of common land was made between the proprietors, wherein the allotments were surveyed by JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> and two others who were “fully empowered to determine all matters of difficulty”. At this time JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> drew lot No. 11 as the result of his ownership of a fifteen-acre privilege, and JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> to whom his father had given a five-acre privilege or right, drew lot No. 60.<sup>46</sup> On August 24, 1688, a list was made of the heads of families of Billerica,

showing the number of rateable (taxable) males in each home and the taxable estate. This list shows that Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> had two rateable males besides himself and that he was taxed 12 shillings 1 penny beside, while JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> owed no poll tax beside his own but was taxed 4 shillings 7 pence beside.<sup>46</sup> On April 18, 1690, JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> who was called "junior" throughout his life was made a freeman of Billerica.<sup>46</sup>

In 1707 another division of common lands was made whereby Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> and JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> received lots on the north side of Rocky Hill Road and in 1708 still another division added to the land holdings of the proprietors and in this case Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> on a ten-acre right received ninety-three acres while JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> and Samuel<sup>3</sup>, each on a five-acre right received forty-six acres apiece,<sup>46</sup> while that same year a division on the west side of the Concord River netted Capt. JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> seventy-seven acres in the third Range, and JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> forty-six acres in the fourth Range.<sup>46</sup>

A town meeting was held in 1709 "to incoridg [engage?] a schoole-master for Reading and Writing" and in November, 1713, "it was voted that the selectmen shaill mak yous of their best discrastion in providing a scoull-master for a quarter of a yeare" and on January 18 following the selectmen were to "se out for a school-master against March court and to provide a housse." One Joseph Tompson was their school master from 1679 onward for many years, the first evidence of a successor being in 1715, though as early as 1680 mention is found of "school dames" and in 1718 John Hartwell's wife was permitted "to keep a school to Instruct children to Read".<sup>46</sup>

JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> had received from his father, perhaps as soon as he married and certainly by 1685, a five-acre proprietor's right in Billerica, and ultimately had received from the same source a house lot of twenty acres and seven other tracts of varying size, including meadow, timberland and swamp, showing a total gift value of £162. Either the subsequent divisions of common land, a natural advance in value or good business ability on the part of JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> had increased his holdings, for in spite of the advent of nine children in his family, his inventory when he died at the age of fifty-two showed a valuation of over £265. He evidently endured a long illness for on December 30, 1710, shortly before his death, he made out a deed of gift to his "beloved wife REBECCA", for love and affection and for her tender care and great love expressed toward him during his "long sickness", whereby she was given certain moveables, including a bed, chest, linen, pewter and brass, a bag of hops of "sixty weight", two cows, a horse and nine sheep. This deed was signed in the presence of his brother Samuel<sup>3</sup> Danforth and his brother-in-law, Oliver Whiting, who later testified that the grantor's expressed wish was that this gift should not debar his wife of her third of the rest of his estate.<sup>34</sup>

On March 12, 1710-1, widow REBECCA and her eldest son Thomas<sup>4</sup> Danforth were appointed administrators of the estate of her deceased husband<sup>34</sup> and guardians were appointed for the younger children.<sup>10</sup> A first inventory exhibited in court on March 12, 1710-1, showed property amounting to over £241 (£181 of real estate and £50 of personal) but a later one dated in January, 1711-2, showed a value of over £265. Several parcels of real estate valued at £50 were set off to the widow leaving about £145 in land to be divided into ten shares of which Thomas<sup>4</sup>, the eldest son, was to have two, and he prayed the court's permission to purchase

from the other heirs the entire land holdings.<sup>34</sup> This request was granted and he was ordered to pay £14-0-6 to each of his five brothers and three sisters with four per cent. interest. On April 24, 1712, his sister REBECCA<sup>4</sup> and her husband, THOMAS<sup>5</sup> PARKER receipted to him for the purchase of their share, on February 17 and 18, 1718-9, Sarah<sup>4</sup> and Jacob<sup>4</sup> receipted for their shares and on July 7, 1724, John<sup>4</sup> did so.<sup>34</sup> On April 16, 1712, widow REBECCA and son Thomas<sup>4</sup> rendered to the court their accounting of the personal estate, showing over £22 for distribution beside a £10 advance made to daughter REBECCA<sup>4</sup> during the life of the deceased. Of this sum the widow was given £7-8-6 and each child twenty-nine shillings eight pence.<sup>34</sup>

So widow REBECCA was left with nine children, one married and the others at home, the youngest being a child of seven. According to frequent pioneer custom, she was married again, about June, 1718, as the third wife of Joseph<sup>2</sup> Foster (Thomas<sup>1</sup>) of Billerica.<sup>47</sup> They entered into a marriage contract on June 26th which was referred to in his will dated July 26th, 1721. It read in part:<sup>47</sup>

“ . . . I give unto my loving and beloved wife RABACKAH Foster forty pounds currant money to be paid to her in a year after my deseace and I do further give her the liberty to take whatever she brought with her to my hous boath within doors and without acording to my pramice that I made with her and I do further give her a mo[u?]rning sute throu out and I do further give her the liberty of any room in my house for a year after my deseace or longer time if shee does desier it that so shee may have the liberty of spending that pravision that shee has helpt labor for, boath of meat and drink and 10 pounds mor if shee lives with me five years and I do further give her my brindled heifer. . . . As for my ought [out?] lands which I rasarve they shall be to pay my debts and my wive's dowry and my funarail charges. My wive's dowry will be about aight and forty pounds in all besides her liberty in the hous as I have given her in my will and if she shall live with me five years from our first marriage than shee shall have ten pounds mor . . . ”

This will was proved on December 18, 1721, and our REBECCA lived on as a widow for over thirty-three years, surviving five of her sons and dying in her ninety-fourth year.

After her death at Billerica on March 25, 1754, her estate, which must have been conserved carefully since it had increased<sup>34</sup> to £141 was assigned on April 14, 1755, to her grandsons Thomas<sup>5</sup> and Elijah<sup>5</sup> Danforth, sons of Thomas<sup>4</sup> deceased, who were directed to pay the respective portions to their uncle Jonathan<sup>4</sup>, to the heirs of their deceased uncles Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, Jacob<sup>4</sup> and John<sup>4</sup>, and to their aunts REBECCA<sup>4</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> and Sarah<sup>4</sup> — these shares amounting to £14-0-6 each. So the total share of our REBECCA (DANFORTH) PARKER was

£14- 0-6	at the first division of her father's estate;
29-8	of his personal estate;
14- 0-6	at the final division of her mother's estate
£29-10-8	

The children of JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> and REBECCA (PARKER) DANFORTH, all born in Billerica, were<sup>2,10,19,25</sup>

- I. REBECCA<sup>4</sup>, b. June 30, 1683; d. at Malden<sup>30</sup> Dec. 20, 1758, aged 75; m. at Billerica Dec. 31, 1702, THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER of Chelmsford (see Parker, p. 468).
- II. Thomas<sup>4</sup>, b. Mar. 17, 1685-6; d. at Billerica Oct. 31, 1737; m. there Sept. 19, 1734, Rebecca Simonds of Bedford. He was administrator, with his mother, of his father's estate.

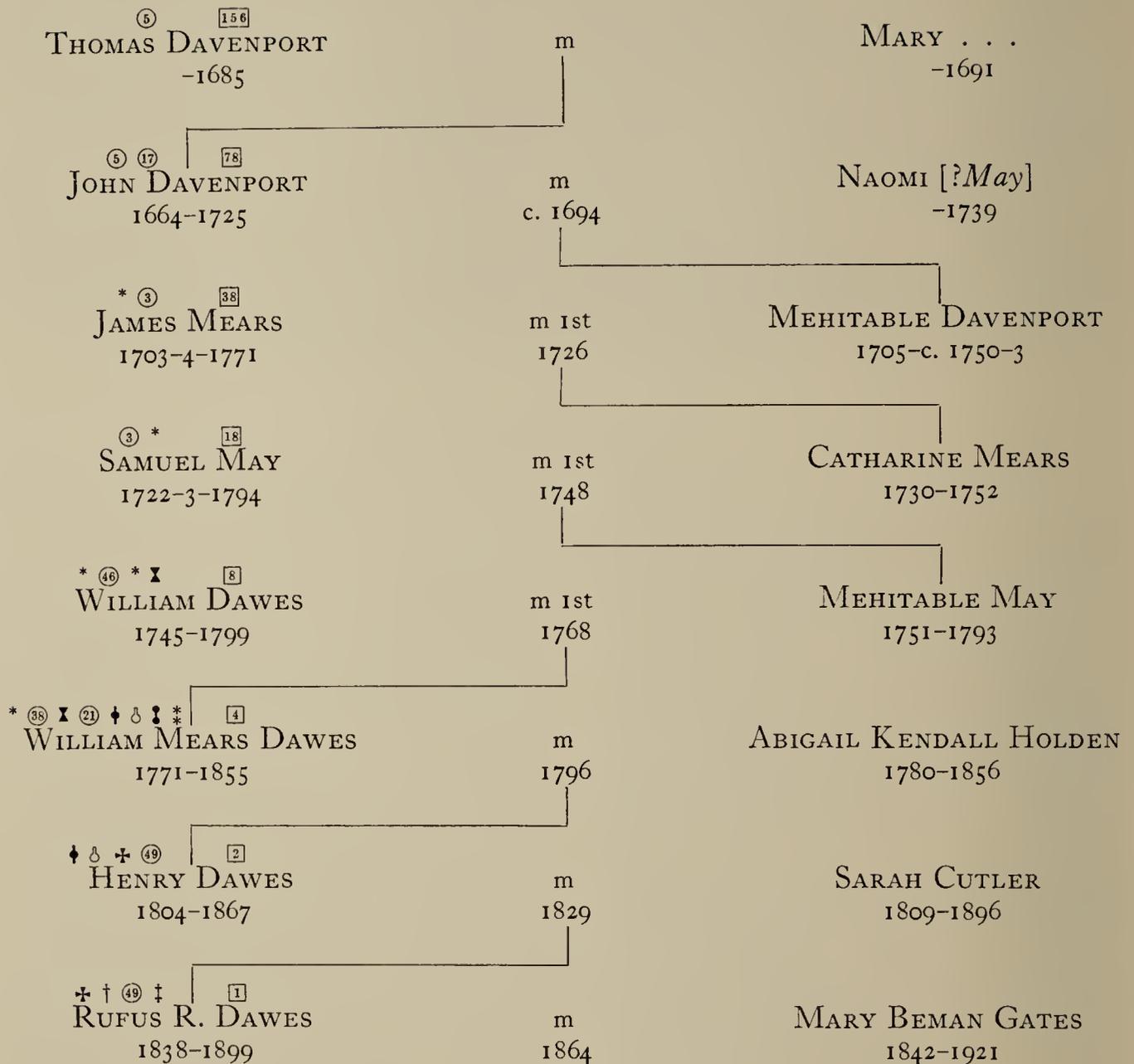
- iii. Jonathan<sup>4</sup>, b. Mar. 22, 1687-8 or 1688-9; d. there Mar. 23, 1761-2 in 73rd year; m. there Nov. 18, 1713, Elizabeth (Manning) Fassett, daughter of Samuel<sup>3</sup> (William<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>) and widow of Peter Fassett of Cambridge.<sup>33</sup>
- iv. Elizabeth<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 31, 1690; d. at Billerica Jan. 11, 1766; m. 1717 as his second wife Christopher<sup>3</sup> Osgood (Christopher<sup>2</sup>, Christopher<sup>1</sup>) of Andover and Billerica.<sup>33</sup>
- v. Samuel<sup>4</sup>, b. Sept. 16, 1692; d.<sup>10</sup> bef. Aug. 17, 1749; m. at Billerica Aug. 5, 1714, Dorothy<sup>3</sup> Shedd (John<sup>2</sup>, Daniel<sup>1</sup>).<sup>33</sup> It was doubtless he who lived with his grandfather JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH and was given by that man's will<sup>34</sup> £20 if he continued in testator's service until he was 21.
- vi. Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 17, 1695; d. s. p. Mar. 10, 1748-9. "Inventory wholly personal. Brother Jacob administrator."
- vii. Jacob<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 6, 1697-8; d. at Billerica<sup>25</sup> Jan. 2, 1754, aged 55-10-16; m. there Oct. 6, 1719, Rebecca<sup>4</sup> Patten. (Dea. William<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, William).<sup>33</sup>
- viii. Sarah<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 18, 1700; d. at Warren, Mass. Apr. 2, 1786, in 86th year; m. by August, 1728, Solomon<sup>3</sup> Keyes (Solomon<sup>2</sup>, Solomon<sup>1</sup>).<sup>33</sup> of Chelmsford and Warren.
- ix. John<sup>4</sup>, b. June 3, 1703; d. about Feb. 1735; m. at Andover<sup>28</sup> (int.) Sept. 17, 1726, Tabitha Johnson. On July 7, 1724, he receipted to his brother Thomas<sup>4</sup> for his portion of their father's estate.<sup>10</sup> He lived at Shrewsbury<sup>28</sup> and at Westborough.<sup>10,28</sup>

## REFERENCES

1. Genealogical Gleanings in England, H. F. Waters, 1901, II, 1405-6; Danforth Genealogy, J. J. May, 1902, pp. 1-5.
2. History of Cambridge, Mass., L. R. Paige, 1877, pp. 30-7, 43, 62, 110-7, 223-4, 393-4, 460, 463, 506, 519, 529-32, 622 and note; History of King Philip's War. G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 400.
3. Supplement and Index to Paige's History of Cambridge, M. I. Gozzaldi, 1930, pp. 205-8.
4. Records of Cambridge (formerly Newtowne), 1896, I, 14-5, 36-9, 65, 71, 124; 1901, II, 14-6, 18, 23-5, 27, 29.
5. Register of the Lands and Houses in Newtowne, 1896, p. 71.
6. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 166, 173, 178, 180, 184, 191, 194, 204, 208-9, 217, 219, 221, 228, 261.
7. *Ibid.*, I, 371; New England Register, III, 94.
8. *Ibid.*, IV, 55; Vital Records of Cambridge, Mass., II, 108, 525; Epitaphs from the Old Burying Ground in Cambridge, W. T. Harris, 1845, pp. 8, 178.
9. Graduates of Harvard University, J. L. Sibley, 1881, II, 37-8; Paige's Cambridge, p. 622 and note; New England Register, IV, 182; Genealogical Register, J. Farmer, 1829, p. 216; History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, O. A. Roberts, 1895, I, 117; Vital Records of Cambridge, I, 536.
10. Danforth Genealogy, pp. 5-12, 18-9, 23-5, 27-9, 37-8, 42-6.
11. Pope's Pioneers of Mass., 1900, p. 130.
12. Records of the Church of Christ, Cambridge, Mass., S. P. Sharples, 1906, pp. 6, 9-10.
13. Sibley's Harvard Graduates, I, 88-92, 366.
14. History of Lexington, Mass., C. Hudson, 1913, II, 54; John Bridge Genealogy, W. D. and N. Bridge, 1924, pp. xxvi, xxxiv, 3-5.
15. New England Register, VII, 315-21; Paige's Cambridge, pp. 393-5; Massachusetts Archives, XXX, 193; Magnalia Christi Americana, C. Mather, 1853, II, 59.
16. Savage, II, 7-8; New England Register IV, 20.
17. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 4, I, 28-31, 50; New England Weekly Journal, 1734; History of New London, Conn., F. M. Caulkins, 1852, p. 341; Redfield Genealogy, J. H. Redfield, 1860, pp. 11-2.
18. Britannica, 11th ed., X, 774; Murray's Dictionary, VI, 169.
19. History of Billerica, Mass., H. A. Hazen, 1883, pt 1, pp. 3-6, 16-7, 21-3, 25-7, 31-2, 34-5, 39-40, 42-5, 47-9, 51-2, 57-60, 64, 68, 70-1, 73-5, 78-9, 82, 89-94, 96, 99-100, 103, 107-8, 110-3, 115-7, 121, 125-7, 130-3, 148, 153-8, 165, 168, 170, 172, 174, 184-5, 190-4, 196-8, 200, 208, 211, 213, 215, 253, 304-5; pt. 2, pp. 34-6, 104, 114; History of Middlesex Co., Mass., S. A. Drake, 1880, I, 261, 267; History of Middlesex Co., Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1890, II, 327-31; Salem Witchcraft, C. W. Upham, 1867, II, 208-15, 296, 480.
20. Paige's Cambridge, pp. 53-2, 551-2; Gozzaldi's Supplement and Index, pp. 208, 278; Danforth Genealogy, p. 18; Savage, II, 207; Cambridge Vital Records, I, 268.
21. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex Co., Mass. VI, 40, 319-25; VIII, 117-9, 313-4.
22. Index of Ancestors, Society of Colonial Wars, 1922, p. 134.
23. Sibley's Harvard Graduates, I, 88-92, 363-6; Hazen's Billerica, pt. 1, pp. 152-60, 174; pt. 2, pp. 34-6, 156.
24. Year Book of the Society of Colonial Wars, 1898, p. 137.
25. New England Register, XI, 200; Vital Records of Billerica, pp. 53-8, 241-3, 259, 296, 354-5, 364, 402; Converse Genealogy, C. A. Converse, 1905, pp. 5, 17.
26. History of Chelmsford, Mass., Rev. W. Waters, 1917, pp. 477, 495, 519, 533; History of Malden, Mass., D. P. Corey, 1899, pp. 301, 375.
27. Vital Records of Chelmsford, Mass., pp. 215, 286.
28. Vital Records of Andover, Mass., II, 99; Vital Records of Westborough, Mass., p. 30.
29. Vital Records of Concord, pp. 30, 38, 40-1, 55, 416, 436.
30. Vital Records of Malden, Mass., p. 367.
31. Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 516 (corrected in part); Hubbard Thompson Memorial, L. K. Stewart, 1914, oo. 338-41 (corrected in part).
32. Gazetteer of the British Isles, J. Bartholomew, 1887, p. 141; Bulkeley Genealogy, D. L. Jacobus, 1933, pp. 27-8; American Genealogist and New Haven Genealogical Magazine, D. L. Jacobus, XI, 28; Vital Records of Concord, Mass., pp. 9-10, 40, 55, 110, 416; History of Concord, Mass., A. S. Hudson, 1904, pp. 165, 181; History of Concord, L. Shattuck, 1835, p. 389; Hartwell Genealogy, L. W. Densmore, 1887, p. 6; same,

- 1895, p. 36; Savage IV, 655; Pope, p. 516; New England Register LIII, 196.
33. Patten Genealogy, T. W. Baldwin, 1908; p. 31; Osgood Genealogy, Ira Osgood, 1894, p. 261; Osgood Genealogy, E. Putnam, 1894, p. 261; Daniel Shedd Genealogy, F. E. Shedd, 1921, p. 53; Manning Genealogy, W. H. Manning, 1902, pp. 141, 147; Keyes Genealogy, Asa Keyes, 1880, pp. 59-60, 130-1; Hazen's Billerica, pt. 2, p. 57; New England Register, XLIV, 371; Vital Records of Warren, Mass. pp. 43, 178.
34. Middlesex Co., Mass., Probate Files No. 5890, 5891, searched by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass.
35. Suffolk Co., Mass., Deeds, V, 358; X, 60-1; XIV, 41-3; New England Register, XI, 203; LIII, 196; (disputing Pope, p. 516).
36. Vital Records of Sudbury, Mass., pp. 157, 290-1, 331; certain portions *only* of New England Register LIII, 227, 359; of Pope, p. 516 and of Hubbard Thompson Memorial, L. K. Stewart, 1914, pp. 337-41.
37. NICHOLAS DANFORTH and his Neighbors, J. Booth, London, Eng., pub. by Framingham, Mass., Hist. Soc., 1935, pp. 5-11, 13-21, 34-5, 52.
38. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 217, and index p. 425; Paige's Cambridge, pt. 1, p. 43 and index p. 708.
39. Letter of May 28, 1937, from Robert P. Blake, Librarian of Harvard University; Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, Collections, 1925, XV, xxxiii; Three Centuries of Harvard, S. E. Morison, 1936, p. 49.
40. The Founding of Harvard College, S. E. Morison, 1935, pp. 164-8, 190.
41. The Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 167-71.
42. The Autobiography of Thomas Shepard, 1832, pp. 8, 33-5, 41-5, 50-9.
43. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 177-83, 194, 208, 217, 253, 304.
44. History of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 400, 474.
45. New England Register, VIII, 271; Hurd's Middlesex Co., II, 327; Vital Records of Billerica, p. 401.

# DAVENPORT



- ⑤ Dorchester
- ①⑦ Milton
- \* Boston
- ③ Roxbury
- ④⑥ Worcester
- ✕ Marlborough

- ③⑧ Sudbury
- ②① Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ♂ Licking Co., O.

- \* Ripon, Wis.
- ✕ Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## DAVENPORT\*

**T**HOMAS<sup>1</sup> DAVENPORT\*\* probably came to Massachusetts Bay Colony in what has been styled<sup>1</sup> the "second emigration" in 1635. He settled in Dorchester where he became a church member<sup>2</sup> on November 20, 1640 and a freeman<sup>3</sup> on May 18, 1642. He was married, probably in New England, and certainly before 1643, to MARY whose surname has not yet been learned but who joined<sup>2</sup> Dorchester Church on March 8, 1644. Their home place<sup>1,5</sup> in Dorchester was on the northeastern or eastern slope of Mt. Bowdoin and, by modern terms,<sup>21</sup> was near the junction of Olney Street and Geneva Avenue (see map, p. 275). In November, 1653, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> purchased<sup>12</sup> of William Pigrom for £16 that man's holdings which lay near the DAVENPORT home, in 1659 purchased land<sup>5</sup> from widow Mary Glover, and in February, 1665, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> paid £120 in money to William Blake for his dwelling, barn, orchard and twenty-three and a half acres in Dorchester which adjoined both the DAVENPORT and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER land.<sup>12</sup> It seems that THOMAS<sup>1</sup> had agreed to an exchange of land with Robert Stiles but had failed to keep his promise for<sup>2</sup> on July 5, 1681

"y<sup>e</sup> Elder declared to y<sup>e</sup> Church that bro<sup>r</sup> THOMAS DAVENPORT was under some offence about y<sup>e</sup> exchange of some land w<sup>th</sup> Robt. Stiles in not standing to his engagement w<sup>th</sup> Stils but disposing it to another man & y<sup>t</sup> some breatheren had delt with him about it but could git noe satisfaction, he thought y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Church might goe to bro<sup>r</sup> DANFORDS hous (he not being able to com to y<sup>e</sup> Church) to heer y<sup>e</sup> Case, but y<sup>e</sup> Church Concluded by a Vote to send y<sup>e</sup> Elder & deacons & bro<sup>r</sup> SUMNER bro<sup>r</sup> LEEDS Richard Baker Ensigne Hale bro<sup>r</sup> Trot Isak Joanes bro<sup>r</sup> Tolman Sen<sup>r</sup> Daniel preston & desiered Bro<sup>r</sup> Edward pason to be ther also and as many as would or Could besids to heer y<sup>e</sup> Case & returne to y<sup>e</sup> Church how they found it."

A week later, on July 10

"y<sup>e</sup> Elder did (in y<sup>e</sup> name of y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>'</sup>sons above deputed) declare to y<sup>e</sup> Church y<sup>t</sup> they had been w<sup>th</sup> brother DAVENPORT & after long agetations they brought it to this conclusion y<sup>t</sup> bro<sup>r</sup> DAVENPORT & Stiles chose out some men each of them to Consider of y<sup>e</sup> matter & they did engag each to y<sup>e</sup> other in a bond of 30 pounds to stand to their determination w<sup>ch</sup> afterward was don & Stiles had his land confeirmed into him."<sup>2</sup>

It develops that all this fuss was over two small tracts of an acre and one quarter each and on July 22, 1681, the issue was closed when a deed<sup>12</sup> was signed by the marks of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> DAVENPORT and of his wife MARY and was witnessed by

\*The many variants used both in England and the Colonies on this name Davenport have caused a great deal of confusion.<sup>18</sup> In a deed given by THOMAS<sup>1</sup> in 1681 his surname was spelled in three different ways in a space of only six lines. In the colonial records and archives of Massachusetts the following variations are found in addition to the accurate form "Davenport": Danport, Dampport, Damfort, Danfort, Danforth, Damforth, Damford and Danford. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> DAVENPORT has frequently been confused with Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>).

\*\*An item <sup>4,18</sup> which likely implies relationship to this family is a bequest in the will of Christopher<sup>1</sup> Gibson of Dorchester, to his cousin Thomas Dampford which probably pertained to THOMAS<sup>1</sup> or his son of the same name.

WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER covering this transfer of land which had been laid out by "Master JOHN GORE."<sup>12</sup>

One definitely reprehensible action on the part of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> in his early life in Dorchester is recorded<sup>13</sup> in the following form under date of March 3, 1639-40:

"THOM: DAVENPORT, for huiring John Parish to cast baules of paste, w<sup>th</sup> copperas in them & cast it into a mans yard, was admonished seriously to take heed of doing the like."

It would be interesting to know just what had raised the ire of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> that he should retaliate in such a manner!

THOMAS<sup>1</sup> served Dorchester<sup>10</sup> as a fence viewer in 1656, 1658-9, 1661-2 and 1666-7 and assisted WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER in laying out a highway in 1677. He was chosen as constable in March, 1669-70 and was still serving in November, 1671. In one case he energetically took a gun by distraint from a man who owed a fine, because of a defective fence but was directed by the selectmen to return it to the owner as soon as the fine was paid.<sup>10</sup>

In 1664 when the excitement and fear were growing lest the colony might lose its charter, and when a hundred and two Dorchester men signed a petition to the General Court urging that every possible action be taken to prevent such a calamity (see Appendix, "B" p. 694) two of those signers were THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and his son Thomas<sup>2</sup>.

On December 3, 1666, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> asked permission<sup>11</sup> of the selectmen to have as a tenant in his house one Daniel Holbrook who had lately come from Melton, England. This was refused but he evidently ignored the refusal and entertained the man, for a week later on December 10 the selectmen directed<sup>11</sup> the constable "to leuy vpon the estate of THOMAS DAUENPORT tew [or ten?] shillings by distress or otherwise, for Entertaining Daniell Holbrooke as an Inmate into his house without order." On February 5 two men filed bond of £30 that they would "save the toun harmless" from Holbrook's presence. Perhaps THOMAS<sup>1</sup> considered that this action freed him from the fine, for he failed to pay it and on March 11, 1666-7, the fine is shown to have been<sup>11</sup> ten shillings, but he was told that it would be remitted if, before April 10 next, he would clear the water<sup>1,11</sup> course across the way, "before one come to the house he [THOMAS<sup>1</sup> had] bought<sup>11</sup> of William Blake."

In December, 1667, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> asked and received permission<sup>11</sup> to get two hundred rails, and one tree for fence posts, from the five-hundred acre tract set apart for that purpose by the town. In November, 1669, he was allowed to use as fire wood the tops of the trees his son Thomas<sup>2</sup> had been permitted to cut down to make plows,<sup>11</sup> in March, 1670-1, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> had privilege to cut about twelve loads of timber toward building a barn and in January, 1678, had permission to get two hundred rails from the same source.<sup>11</sup> His sons Thomas<sup>2</sup> and Charles<sup>2</sup>, as well as the other residents, frequently acquired rails or logs from that same tract.

THOMAS<sup>1</sup> evidently set one fence of his, so that it encroached on the road near his house, for in May, 1668, the selectmen ordered<sup>11</sup> him to "Rectefie the streightening [narrowing] of the highway at the bottom of the Hill between his hous and Clement Maxfields." Apparently he was very neglectful in the matter for in September, 1669, the selectmen<sup>11</sup> themselves "vewed the way betweene Clement Maxfield and THO: DAUENPORT and they found it not broad enough and therefore staked out the way two rod broad from the Stone wall in vpon that land which THOMAS DAUENPORT haue taken in."<sup>11</sup>

In April, 1669, Thomas<sup>2</sup> must have been living in bachelor quarters for he and three other young men "not under government of families" were called before the selectmen.<sup>11</sup> In November, 1670, the town paid<sup>11</sup> THOMAS<sup>1</sup> fifteen shillings for carting clapboards from puncapege (later Canton) and in November, 1680, paid<sup>11</sup> him for "carting timber for the bell"<sup>11</sup> — probably to construct a frame from which to hang the church bell. Suffolk County Court in January, 1672-3, required Thomas Grant of Dorchester to give bond for his good behavior and our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> became his surety<sup>14</sup> to the amount of fifty shillings.

Late in 1675 the family of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> DAVENPORT in common with a thousand other colonial families,<sup>16</sup> faced the sad necessity of some member going to war against the Indians under King Philip in the Great Swamp Fight. In this family it was Thomas<sup>2</sup>, eldest son of THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, who was to go and in preparation the young man made his will<sup>18,21</sup> which began: "Being now by the Providence of God called fourth to the Wares . . ." He left a chest to his mother and the rest of his estate to his sister Sarah<sup>2</sup> and to his brother Charles<sup>2</sup> who was named as executor. Thomas<sup>2</sup> was in the company commanded by Capt. Isaac Johnson who was killed at the Swamp Fight while leading his forces across the fallen tree trunks at the back of the fort, being succeeded<sup>16</sup> in command by Lt. PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM who received his mortal wound here (see UPHAM, p. 625) and at this fight Thomas<sup>2</sup> Davenport also lost his life, for the inventory of his estate was taken on January 4 and his will was proved<sup>18,21</sup> on January 28, 1676, by his brother Charles<sup>2</sup>.

On September 11, 1676, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> "of Dorchester" (though with his name spelled "Danforth")<sup>18</sup> presented a petition to the General Court<sup>22</sup> recounting the loss of his eldest son, and the fact that a poor blind Indian had brought two of his children "and did bestow them" upon THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and his son, who petitioned thus, asking permission to accept\* the children.

In January, 1675-6 THOMAS<sup>1</sup> served on a trial jury<sup>14</sup> and in January, 1677-8, was one of the grand jurors in company<sup>14</sup> with GEORGE<sup>2</sup> SUMNER. At the session of the General Court in April, 1678, it was decided<sup>14</sup> that THOMAS<sup>1</sup> DAVENPORT "by reason of age and weakenesses of body attending him is freely discharged from attending upon Ordinary traynings, hee keeping armes according to Law." In October, 1678, he was one of the Dorchester men who signed the required oath of allegiance\*\* to the king.

On July 24, 1683, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> signed<sup>21</sup> his will<sup>4,5</sup> "being aged" and calling himself "yeoman". He made his wife MARY and son Charles<sup>2</sup> his executors and named SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP as one of the overseers. His "well beloved" wife was to have the whole estate as long as she remained his widow and was to have a third of the rents and profits if she married again — which she did not do. His son JOHN<sup>2</sup> was to live with his mother and manage the estate and after her death was to have the house, barn and orchard over and above his single portion. The testator's other lands were to be divided between† Charles<sup>2</sup> and JOHN<sup>2</sup> who were to pay to Jonathan<sup>2</sup>, Ebenezer<sup>2</sup> and Mary<sup>2</sup> one fifth part each of the estate after the death of their

\*Very frequently young Indians who had been taken as prisoners were sold as servants to the colonists, so perhaps permission to accept them without payment was the point at issue.

\*\*Others of our Dorchester ancestors who then signed the oath of allegiance<sup>14</sup> were SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP, RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER.

†An item in the will shows that a part of the holdings of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> at his death consisted of two lots lying between Battin's land and Week's hill.<sup>21</sup>

mother which occurred at Dorchester on October 4, 1691. Though his will was proved on February 4, 1685-6, for some reason the estate of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> which had totaled over £332, was held open for over thirty-five years and after the death of Charles<sup>2</sup> in February, 1720, administration<sup>21</sup> of the remainder of the father's estate was granted to Ebenezer<sup>2</sup> in June, 1721.

When the "Twelve Divisions," in the "New Grant" (see Clapp, p. 171) were finally laid out in 1696-7 to the early proprietors of Dorchester or their heirs, lot forty-three of one hundred sixty-six acres was assigned to THOMAS<sup>1</sup> DAVENPORT "& his son" and to three other men. This survey<sup>27</sup> was not made until ten years after the death of THOMAS<sup>1</sup>; his portion (see map, p. 159) lay immediately north-east of the lot acquired by SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP and the district eventually became Canton.<sup>27</sup>

Study of Dorchester and Milton vicinity discloses an interesting sidelight in the fact that their outstanding feature,<sup>24</sup> the Great Blue Hills, (see map, p. 275) furnished the origin of the name "Massachusetts." They rise to a height of six hundred thirty-five feet above sea level which makes them plainly visible for a great distance up and down the coast and even far out at sea and the name "Massachusetts" implies "near the great hill or mountain." The early tribal name of the Indians living near the Great Hill was "Massadchuseück," which, in anglicized form, was adopted by the colony and later by the state. Many variants may be seen, such as "Masathulets" used in 1629 by Thomas<sup>1</sup> Hutchinson in a letter to England, and even "Messey-tusick" used by R. Cromwell, Protector, in 1658 in a letter to the governor of the Bay Colony.

The children of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and MARY (—) DAVENPORT all born at Dorchester were<sup>1,2,4,5,6</sup>

- i. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, b. Dec. 28, 1643; some Sarah Davanport d.<sup>6</sup> May 10, 1679, but this girl is said<sup>5</sup> to have d. at the birth of a child Nov. 14, 1680; m.\* after<sup>2</sup> 1676 Samuel Jones who is called son-in-law by the will<sup>17</sup> of THOMAS<sup>1</sup>.
- ii. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>2</sup> Mar. 2, 1645; killed in King Philip's War Dec. 19, 1675, being a member of the company of Capt. Isaac Johnson<sup>1,16</sup>. He is often mis-named "Danforth" and considered as the son of Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>).<sup>18</sup>
- iii. Mary<sup>2</sup>, bap. Jan. 21, 1648-9; d. 1707, named in father's will; m. abt. 1670 Samuel<sup>2</sup> Maxfield (Clement<sup>1</sup>).
- iv. Anna<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>2</sup> Dec. 29, 1650; called<sup>2</sup> 24 yrs. old in 1676 when she was listed among the "maids" to be catechized; not named in father's will.
- v. Charles<sup>2</sup>, bap. Nov. 7, 1652; d. at Dorchester Feb. 1, 1719-20, ae. 68; m. there about 1678 Waitstill Smith (Quartermaster John and Katherine).<sup>5</sup> In 1676 he was called<sup>2</sup> 22 years old and was to be catechized.
- vi. Abigail<sup>2</sup>, bap. July 15, 1655; not named in father's will; prob. d. before 1676 since she was not catechized.
- vii. Mehitable<sup>2</sup>, b. Feb. 14, 1656-7; d. Oct. 18, 1663.
- viii. Jonathan<sup>2</sup>, b. Mar. 6, bap. 13, 1658-9; d.<sup>5</sup> at Little Compton, R. I. on Jan. 11, 1729; m. at Dorchester Dec. 1, 1680, Hannah<sup>5</sup> Maynard\*\*. In 1676, being called<sup>2</sup> 16 years old he was to be catechized.
- ix. Ebenezer<sup>2</sup>, b. Apr. 26, bap. 28, 1661; d.<sup>5</sup> at Dorchester July 19, 1738; m. 1st abt. 1682 Dorcas Andrews (James of Falmouth, Me.);<sup>19</sup> m. 2nd at Dorchester May 26, 1724, Sarah Bartlett; m. 3rd<sup>5</sup> abt. 1726-7 Patience (—).
- x. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, see following.

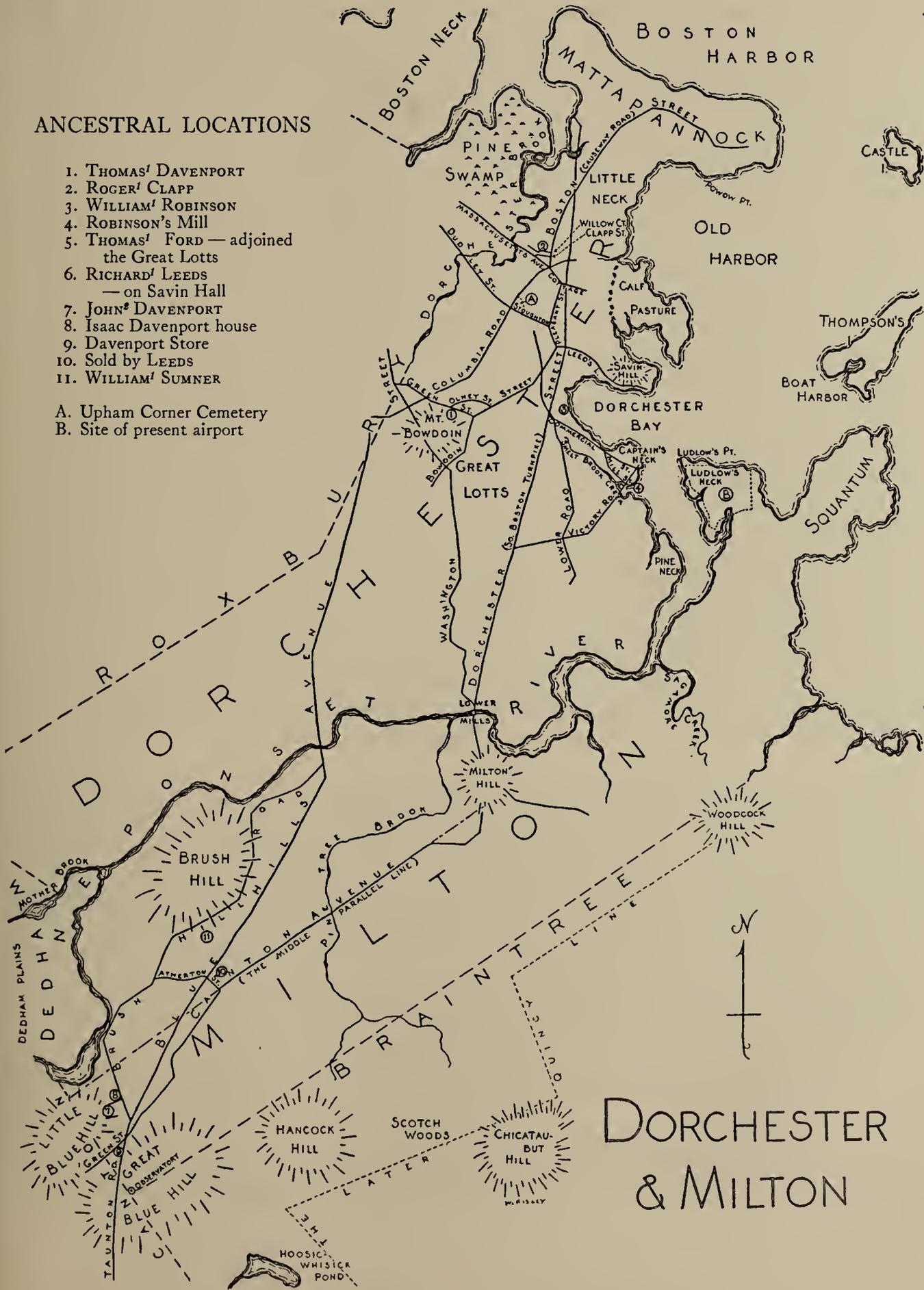
\*In 1676 Sarah<sup>2</sup> called thirty-one years old was listed<sup>2</sup> among the "young maids" who were to be catechized.

\*\*She was the daughter of John<sup>1</sup> and Mary (Gates) Maynard and granddaughter of John<sup>1</sup> Maynard and of Stephen<sup>1</sup> Gates.<sup>5,23</sup>

ANCESTRAL LOCATIONS

1. THOMAS' DAVENPORT
2. ROGER' CLAPP
3. WILLIAM' ROBINSON
4. ROBINSON'S Mill
5. THOMAS' FORD — adjoined the Great Lotts
6. RICHARD' LEEDS — on Savin Hill
7. JOHN<sup>s</sup> DAVENPORT
8. Isaac Davenport house
9. Davenport Store
10. Sold by LEEDS
11. WILLIAM' SUMNER

A. Upham Corner Cemetery  
 B. Site of present airport



DORCHESTER & MILTON

JOHN<sup>2</sup> DAVENPORT (*Thomas*<sup>1</sup>) was\* born<sup>4,15</sup> at Dorchester on October 2 or 20, and baptized there<sup>2</sup> on November 20, 1664. He died at Milton<sup>7</sup> on March 21, 1725, having married<sup>20</sup> about 1694 NAOMI\*\* who survived him about fourteen years, dying<sup>5,7,20</sup> at Milton as his widow on January 7, 1739. As has been stated, his father's will obligated JOHN<sup>2</sup> to live with his mother and run the home property until the mother's death after which he was to inherit the house, barn and orchard in addition to his proportionate share of the parental estate. There is some reason<sup>19</sup> to believe,<sup>5</sup> however, that JOHN<sup>2</sup> may have followed his older brother Ebenezer<sup>2</sup> to Maine for a short time. Ebenezer<sup>2</sup> was at Falmouth (Casco Bay) from 1680 to 1685 or later, and some John Davenport (perhaps JOHN<sup>2</sup>) had an account<sup>19</sup> in 1684 with the estate of Thomas Ladbroke of Portsmouth who died before September, 1683. No record has been found of JOHN<sup>2</sup> in Dorchester until after his marriage.

The value of the parental house, barn and orchard in Dorchester which JOHN<sup>2</sup> inherited in 1691 was estimated<sup>21</sup> at £53 beside which he would have acquired one-fifth part of the remaining estate, and he presumably maintained his residence on the homestead at least from his marriage until about 1706 for his six older children were recorded and baptized at Dorchester while the seventh was recorded at Milton in 1707 the year that JOHN<sup>2</sup> was first taxed<sup>5</sup> in that town. However, while he was still resident in Dorchester, he became involved with† Peter<sup>2</sup> Lyon (*Peter*<sup>1</sup>) in some business affair which bore upon a lease from the Punkapog Indians and perhaps settlement by Lyon on some part of their six thousand acre reservation<sup>27</sup> (see map, p. 159) which ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP helped to lay out to them in 1657. The Indians had been forbidden to dispose of these lands but in numerous instances they forgot, or the English over-persuaded them and long-time leases were made. Presently the court declared that any such leases made subsequent to 1700 were illegal. On May 30, 1705, JOHN<sup>2</sup> DAVENPORT was listed as a lessee of Indian land in connection with Peter<sup>2</sup> Lyon (it is quite certain that JOHN<sup>2</sup> never lived there though his son John<sup>3</sup> is claimed<sup>8</sup> to have done so) and JOHN<sup>2</sup> was ordered to appear before the Continental Court in Boston<sup>24</sup> on August 18, 1706.

\*In 1676 JOHN<sup>2</sup> was erroneously called<sup>2</sup> eight years old when he was listed among those who were to be catechized.

\*\*The wife of JOHN<sup>2</sup> DAVENPORT has been believed<sup>5</sup> by many and definitely stated<sup>20</sup> by some, to have been Naomi<sup>3</sup> the daughter of Timothy<sup>2</sup> and Ruth (Tileston) Foster. It seemed logical, for they two grew up together in Dorchester, were catechized<sup>2</sup> together and no other Naomi of the right age can be found in Dorchester vicinity. Late research<sup>21</sup>, however, has developed quite compelling evidence that Naomi<sup>3</sup> Foster must have married Abraham<sup>2</sup> Jones (*Thomas*<sup>1</sup>) of Hull and Raynham where their children included a Hatherley, Timothy, etc. But a new theory has been evolved that the NAOMI who married JOHN<sup>2</sup> DAVENPORT may have been *Naomi*<sup>3</sup> *May*, daughter of our JOHN<sup>2</sup> MAY, which, if it can be proved would give us a double line of descent from JOHN<sup>2</sup> MAY (see May, p. 415). It would not have been unreasonable for JOHN<sup>2</sup> DAVENPORT born 1664 at Dorchester to have gone as far afield as to neighboring Roxbury for a wife, and *Naomi*<sup>3</sup> *May* born in 1667, still living and unmarried in July, 1690, is a reasonable bet for the girl he married about 1694. Moreover *Naomi*<sup>3</sup> *May* had an uncle Samuel<sup>2</sup>, a brother Ephraim<sup>3</sup> and a sister Mehitabel<sup>3</sup> May which three names were given to three of the children of JOHN<sup>2</sup> and NAOMI (—) DAVENPORT.

†An illustration of the restraints laid upon young lovers of the early days is portrayed by the following excerpts<sup>26</sup> from the journal of the Rev. Peter Thacher of Milton, relative to this Peter<sup>2</sup> Lyon who aspired to the hand of Jane Vose daughter of Sergt. Thomas:

"Dec. 16 [1684] — Went and solemnly discoursed with Jane Vose giving her much good counsel.

26 This morning Sargent Badcock & Peter Lion were at my house to get me to go & treat with Sargent Vose about consenting to Peters marrying his daughter.

30 Treated with Sargent Vose about giving his consent that P. Lion should marry his daughter Jane, but his answer was plainly negative.

Jan. 3, 1685. I went with Sargent Badcock to treat with Jane Vose & to acquaint that her father could not consent, whereupon we labored abundantly to take off her affections &c —

Jan. 6 Went to Sargent Badcocks, he & I labored much with Peter Lion & Jane Vose."

The young people were evidently most sincere and persistent, for in 1685-6 they were married and since they acquired and built on some of Sergt. Thomas Vose's best land, we may assume that he had relented.

JOHN<sup>2</sup> purchased land about 1706 in the westerly part of Milton on the south side of Canton Avenue<sup>15</sup> which is usually spoken of as being "at the foot of Blue Hills" (see map, p. 159). Here, on the northwest side of the Blue Hill range,<sup>25</sup> he built a house which is still standing in 1941 (see plate xxv, p. 387) in which JOHN<sup>2</sup> himself, lived and died and in which his son Samuel<sup>3</sup>, grandson Samuel<sup>4</sup> and great grandson Isaac<sup>5</sup> were born. In this line of descent Samuel<sup>4</sup> was a silversmith and carried on part of his business in Milton while Isaac<sup>5</sup> was a merchant,<sup>25</sup> long in partnership in Boston with John McLean who so liberally endowed the Massachusetts General Hospital and McLean Asylum for the Insane. Isaac<sup>5</sup> Davenport built "a spacious and handsome mansion near the old homestead"<sup>25</sup> which consequently is referred<sup>5</sup> to as "the old farm house on the Isaac Davenport estate." This Isaac<sup>5</sup> bears an added interest for us, for he married on October 2, 1787 Mary<sup>6</sup> May, one of the younger children of our SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> MAY by his second wife.<sup>25</sup> This Mary (May) Davenport was thus a half-sister of MEHITABLE (MAY) DAWES who probably frequently visited at the Davenport mansion and saw the home of JOHN<sup>2</sup> DAVENPORT in the rear.

There was a Davenport Lane in the vicinity and another early building which bore the family name was the "Davenport Store" which stood on the corner between Green Street and Canton Avenue (see map, p. 159) "famed of old as a halting place for all the teams. [A sign] 'Baiting [food and drink] for Horses' was in plain sight. The thirsty were also refreshed. . . ."<sup>15</sup>

Five of the children of JOHN<sup>2</sup> removed from Milton, John<sup>3</sup> and Ephraim<sup>3</sup> to Stoughton; once an outlying part of Dorchester where THOMAS<sup>1</sup> "& his son" received land; Joseph<sup>3</sup> to Newton Lower Falls and Samuel<sup>3</sup> left the old homestead and took his family to Mendon when his son Samuel<sup>4</sup> became of age and took over the ancestral home. The marriage of MEHITABLE<sup>3</sup> took her to Roxbury, leaving only Stephen<sup>3</sup> and Samuel<sup>4</sup> to represent the family in Milton. In 1724 and again in 1725 the deacons of Milton Church were by vote<sup>2</sup> to sell the trees in the thirty or forty acre lot which the church owned, adjoining the lot owned by JOHN<sup>2</sup> DAVENPORT.

The will<sup>21</sup> of JOHN<sup>2</sup> was dated February 19, 1722-3 and proved on April 5, 1725, after his death two weeks previously. He named his wife NAOMI and son Samuel<sup>3</sup> as executors, gave to well beloved wife NAOMI one third of the estate real and personal during her life time; gave to eldest son John<sup>3</sup> the £130 which had been paid to Samuel Crane for land in addition to £30 "in diet" (food) which he had had while clearing that land and building upon it; gave to sons Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Ephraim<sup>3</sup> and Joseph<sup>3</sup> and to daughter MEHITABLE<sup>3</sup> "in equal proportions out of my estate" but gave to his younger sons Stephen<sup>3</sup> and Benjamin<sup>3</sup> one third part more of his estate in equal shares than to the four children named above. No inventory<sup>21</sup> of the estate is recorded but from the double share of £160 given to the eldest son, the estate must have been quite large.

The children of JOHN<sup>2</sup> and NAOMI (—) DAVENPORT, all but the last one born at Dorchester, were<sup>2,4,5,6,15</sup>

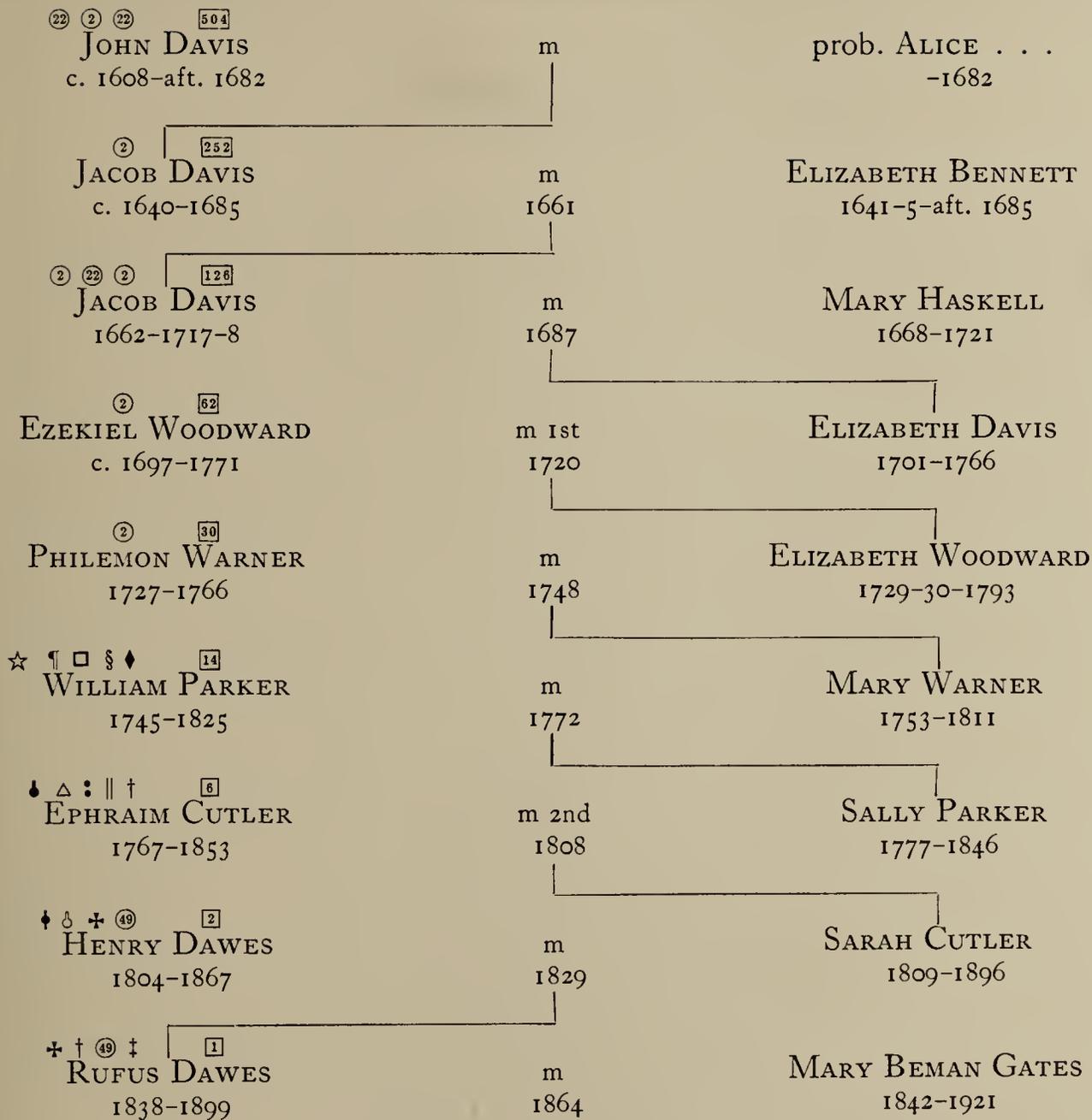
- i. John<sup>3</sup>, b. June 10, bap. 16, 1695; d.<sup>5</sup> at Stoughton July 20, 1778; m. at Milton June 10, 1725 Mary<sup>4</sup> Bent (Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>8</sup> John<sup>3</sup> is called<sup>8</sup> "of Ponkipog".
- ii. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, b. Oct. 20, bap. 24, 1697; d. at Mendon<sup>9</sup> on June 29, 1773, in his 75th year; m. abt.

- 1719-20 Rebecca Holbrook, dau.<sup>5</sup> of Daniel and Abigail (Craft). They lived at Milton until about 1741 when he removed to Mendon.<sup>5,15</sup>
- III. Ephraim<sup>3</sup>, bap. Aug. 6, 1699; unm.; bur.<sup>5</sup> Feb. 25, 1774, a blacksmith of Stoughton.
- IV. Joseph<sup>3</sup>, b. Aug. 30, bap. Sept. 7, 1701; d.<sup>9</sup> at Newton Lower Falls Mar. 12, 1752; m. in Needham Apr. 29, 1731, Sarah<sup>3</sup> Ware (Ebenezer<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>).<sup>9</sup>
- V. Stephen<sup>3</sup>, b. Oct. 8, bap. 12, 1703; d. at Milton Mar. 2, 1784, ae. 80; m. there Dec. 27, 1734 Thankful<sup>4</sup> Bent\* (Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>8</sup>
- VI. "MEATABLE" (MEHITABLE<sup>3</sup>), recorded as born<sup>4,5,6</sup> Aug. 30, but as bap.<sup>2</sup> Aug. 26, 1705; d. at Roxbury (probably about 1750-3 since JAMES<sup>4</sup> married again in 1754);<sup>7</sup> m. at Milton by Rev. Peter Thacher of that place Dec. 15, 1726, to JAMES<sup>4</sup> MEARS (see Mears, p. 436).
- VII. Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, b.<sup>7</sup> at Milton Aug. 12, (though recorded as having been bap.<sup>28</sup> on Aug. 10) 1707; named in his father's will; but some man of this name d. at Milton<sup>7</sup> on Feb. 17, 1725, a month before the death of JOHN<sup>2</sup>.

## REFERENCES

1. History of Dorchester, Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society, pp. 101, 117, 144-5, 199, 207, 229.
2. Records of the First Church at Dorchester . . . 1636-1734, G. H. Ellis, 1891, pp. 5-6, 86-7, 139, 141, 157, 159, 162, 167, 169, 171, 173, 183-5, 207, 209-10, 213, 216, 218.
3. Records of Massachusetts Bay, II, 291; IV, pt. 1, 369.
4. Savage's Genealogical Dictionary, II, 11-14; Pope's Pioneers of Mass., 1900, p. 131, 186.
5. New England Register, V, 91; XXXIII, 25-8, 32-4 and especially errata on p. 132; Vital Records of Roxbury, I, 183; III, 209.
6. Boston Record Commissioners Report XXI, 2, 5-7, 24, 39, 41, 46, 48, 50, 120, 122, 131.
7. Vital Records of Milton, pp. 21, 111, 217; New England Register, XXXVIII, 28-9.
8. Bent Family, A. H. Bent, 1900, pp. 10, 21-2.
9. Vital Records of Mendon, p. 462; Vital Records of Newton, p. 440; Ware Genealogy, E. F. Ware, 1901, pp. 41-2.
10. B. R. C. R. IV, 85, 96, 109, 119, 121, 139, 164, 168-9, 172-3, 178, 218.
11. Ibid., IV, 136, 138, 140, 149, 151, 158-9, 161, 171-2, 175, 197, 229, 242-3, 259, 314.
12. Suffolk Deeds, III, 192-3; V, 184-5; XII, 125.
13. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 286.
14. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXIX, 223; XXX, 648, 872, 915, 971-2.
15. History of Milton, A. K. Teele, 1887, pp. 172, 562-4, and maps facing pp. 72 and 100.
16. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 162-3, 287-9, 432.
17. New England Register, V, 389-95, 398.
18. Ibid., XXXII, 95-6.
19. Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, C. L. Libby, 1928, pt. 1, pp. 16, 64; 1933, pt. 2, p. 183; 1936, pt. 3, p. 406; History of Portland, Me., W. Willis, 1865, pp. 289-90, 292-3.
20. Foster Genealogy, F. C. Pierce, 1899, p. 922.
21. Search by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Records of Hull, Raynham, etc. Suffolk Co. Prob. No. 1447, VI, 519-21; Invt. IX, 258.
22. Massachusetts Archives XXX, 222.
23. History of Marlborough, A. S. Hudson, 1889, pp. 47-8; Stephen Gates Genealogy, C. O. Gates, 1898, pp. 10-11; Vital Records of Sudbury and Marlborough.
24. Handbook of American Indians . . . F. W. Hodge, 1905, I, 816; Teele's Milton, pp. 6, 631-40; Indian Local Names with their Interpretations, S. G. Boyd, 1885, p. 23; Original Narratives of Early American History, VII, being Winthrop's Journal, I, 50; History of Massachusetts, T. Hutchinson, I, 455; Early Settlers of Rowley, G. B. Blodgette, 1933, p. 340.
25. May Genealogy, S. May, 1878, pp. 8-9, 14.
26. Teele's Milton, p. 656; Lyon Memorial, A. B. & G. W. A. Lyon, 1905, I, 325.
27. History of Canton, D. T. V. Huntoon, 1893, pp. 46-7, 52, 595, 631, 637, map facing p. 592.
28. New England Register, XXIII, 17.
29. Courtesy of Miss Sutermeister, a Davenport descendant of Milton and testimony of the Milton Public Library.

# DAVIS



- ② Ipswich
- ② Gloucester
- ☆ Malden
- † Charlestown
- Newburyport
- § Allegheny Co., Pa.

- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- ♠ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- Waterford, O.
- ∥ Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♠ Morgan Co., O.
- ✚ Malta, O.
- ④ Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## DAVIS\*

JOHN<sup>1</sup> DAVIS born about 1608 emigrated at an unknown date to Ipswich where he was a commoner<sup>1,2</sup> in 1641 and kept two-thirds of the town cow herd in 1642 and again in 1643. The contract for this employment was first arranged for on April 15, 1642, when he agreed, with the assistance of a helper, to keep the cows on the north side of the river. Difficulty had arisen between the inhabitants and two earlier keepers because goats had been sent with the cows and because stock was sometimes delivered to the wrong herd keeper, thus imposing upon him a task for which he was not paid. JOHN<sup>1</sup> was to serve in this capacity for twenty-five weeks of the year, and was to have the equivalent of twenty shillings a week, payment to be made in corn at three shillings per bushel.<sup>2</sup> He signed this contract with his mark.<sup>1</sup> In 1642 the two late constables were ordered "to forthwith pay to JOHN DAVIS" four shillings for going with the Deputy Governor from Ipswich to Cape Ann.<sup>19</sup> About 1643 powder had been loaned<sup>1</sup> by Ipswich to various settlers on certain unnamed conditions as to its return and in October of 1643 the list of those who "have forfeited, for not returning their Powder" included<sup>1</sup> the names of JOHN<sup>1</sup> DAVIS and JOHN<sup>2</sup> DANE in the amount of £1 each.<sup>1</sup> DAVIS sold, on February 8, 1648, to Daniel Rindge, a six acre lot on Heartbreak Hill<sup>2</sup> and that year was one of those who "did subscribe their names to allow unto Major Dennison\*\* three severall somes yearly while he continued to be our Leader" promising to pay two shillings in this cause.<sup>1</sup> Nothing more is seen of JOHN<sup>1</sup> in Ipswich, but by 1656 he had evidently removed to Gloucester where he bought of Richard Window, (see Bennett, p. 88) of that town, his house, barn, orchard and land.<sup>3</sup> During his residence in Gloucester JOHN<sup>1</sup> was a member of the grand jury in 1657, 1658, 1676, 1677 and 1679, being called "Sr." in the second and the last instances, though in the first mentioned case he failed to be present and his place was taken by George Blake of Gloucester, and, in the second case, he himself was chosen to act as substitute for one who was detained by illness. In 1659 and 1673 he served<sup>8</sup> as constable of Gloucester. He subscribed fifteen shillings in 1657 for the minister of that town, deposed relative to a disturbance at the church door<sup>†</sup> in 1660; and that year he, with THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS and JOHN<sup>1</sup> COIT signed a document addressed to the General Court testifying as to the general good character<sup>8</sup> of John Jackson. Being called "of Gloucester" JOHN<sup>1</sup> took the oath of a freeman in November, 1663, helped to take the inventory of Richard

\*The name "Davis" was so common in the early days, even as now, and the name "John" is so little help in identification that we may have omitted some items which pertained to our JOHN<sup>1</sup>, or have included some we should have omitted. If error exists, apology is offered and correction invited.

\*\*For becoming their military leader.<sup>1</sup>

†An argumentative woman admitted in court<sup>8</sup> that she had stood in the church doorway with her hands placed on the two door posts in order to stop the entrance of a certain man toward whom she wished to expostulate.

Window in 1665, was a witness relative to the presentment<sup>8</sup> of Clement Coldam of Gloucester in 1668; it was likely he who deposed in 1668 then being aged sixty years. In June, 1677, he was one of those chosen by the selectmen of Gloucester to be a tithing man,<sup>8</sup> in 1664 he was a selectman<sup>5</sup> and in 1671 was named in a list which included the "selectmen, Town clerke & Town Treasurers" of Gloucester.<sup>3</sup>

An interesting side light on conditions in that town is furnished by the report<sup>6</sup> of a case wherein certain elements attempted to surreptitiously establish a second ordinary in the town in the vicinity of the church and training field. A definite protest was made by JOHN<sup>1</sup>, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE and others (see Prince, p. 511).

JOHN<sup>1</sup> is said to have returned in later life to Ipswich leaving his sons James<sup>2</sup> and JACOB<sup>2</sup> at Gloucester where they married and raised families. James<sup>2</sup> who served as ensign of the train band in 1681 and as captain in 1689, being "very sickly" as a consequence<sup>19</sup> is credited with having given to the town, in his offspring, "some of its most valued and useful citizens — men who for a whole century were constantly in office and, whether filling civil, military or ecclesiastical stations, always securing the best reward for public service — public confidence."<sup>3</sup> Nor is there any evidence that the line of JACOB<sup>2</sup> was less dependable. If JOHN<sup>1</sup> made this removal to Ipswich, it must have been after November 7, 1682, for on that date, calling himself JOHN DAVIS "senior" of Gloucester, he sold to Isaac Eveleth "house and land, barn and orchard running up to the common . . ." In this deed he referred to<sup>3</sup> his wife as ALICE but circumstances suggest that the document could not have been signed until some time later, for an "EALS DAVIS" died<sup>7</sup> at Gloucester on December 10, 1682, who was very likely that wife, and it is inferred that he must have been married again soon thereafter, for the wife's signature to the above deed, with JOHN<sup>1</sup>, is said to have been the mark<sup>3</sup> of a Frances Davis. Modern minds would wonder why the document should not have been re-written but, in many cases, the inability of the principals to write rendered it necessary to hire that service performed and, in the instance above, illness of the wife of JOHN<sup>1</sup> may have delayed the signature hoping for her recovery which never came. The consummation of the transaction might have been neglected indefinitely — even until a new wife was acquired who might then have supplied the delayed signature.

Of JOHN<sup>1</sup> it is also said that "he appears to have been living in Ipswich as late as 1687"<sup>3</sup> but, in any case, no evidence of his death is seen.

The known children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> DAVIS and probably ALICE, born at unknown dates and places and in uncertain order were<sup>3,7</sup>

- I. James<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1636; d. at Gloucester May 1, 1715, "aged 69;" m. 1st about 1658 Mehitable (—) who d. June 9, 1666; m. 2nd Dec. 6, 1666, Elizabeth Batchelder of Wenham who d. Jan. 1, 1697; m. 3rd Aug. 3, 1697, Mary (Collins) Ellwell Cook (dau. of John Collins, wid. 1st of Josiah Ellwell and wid. 2nd of John Cook) who d. March 9, 1725, aged 79.<sup>3,7</sup>
- II. JACOB<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- III. Possibly John who as "Jr." of Gloucester took the oath of fidelity in 1677, and whose existence is suggested in 1676 and 1679 by the designation of JOHN<sup>1</sup> as "Sr."<sup>9</sup>

JACOB<sup>2</sup> DAVIS (*John<sup>1</sup>*) must have been born about 1640, died September 2, 1685, at Gloucester,<sup>3</sup> and married there<sup>7</sup> on January 20, 1661, ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> BENNETT (see Bennett, p. 88). His relationship to JOHN<sup>1</sup> is definitely established by the unusual means of mention of the father in the record of the younger man's marriage.<sup>7</sup>

The knowledge of one escapade of his youth has come down to us for, in March,

1655, he and James White were sentenced to be fined or to sit in the stocks "for stealing apples on the Sabbath day."<sup>10</sup>

In 1664, three years after his marriage, JACOB<sup>2</sup> was made a freeman of Gloucester and, in 1665, he became a beneficiary by and witness to the will of Richard Window, his wife's step-father, as well as an overseer of his estate and a guardian to Anthony<sup>2</sup> Bennett who was that man's step-son and his own brother-in-law.<sup>10</sup> In 1666, 1676 and 1680 JACOB<sup>2</sup> was on the trial jury; and, in King Philip's War of 1675 when a levy was made on Gloucester for eight men JACOB<sup>2</sup> was one who made up the quota "all wch due want warm cloathing and must have new coates," as reported by the officer in charge.<sup>11</sup> He had had a grant<sup>3</sup> of land at Gloucester in 1662 at the head of Long Cove and in 1682 he, with others, had a grant of the stream at the head of Little River "to set up a sawmill on." This mill was carried on by his son JACOB<sup>3</sup> after the father's death even though the son resided, for a time, at Ipswich. In 1685 as "Sr." he was included in the list of "selectmen, town clerks & Town Treasurers."<sup>11</sup> At his death JACOB<sup>2</sup> left<sup>3,19</sup> a house, upland, meadow, cattle, sheep, swine, farming tools, saddle and pillion, gun, cutlass and belt, one-half ownership of a sloop and four canoes valued at £12-10. His estate totaled<sup>3</sup> over £298 with but £20 of debts. But three months after his death a posthumous daughter was born to poor widow ELIZABETH — of whom no further record is found.

The children of JACOB<sup>2</sup> and ELIZABETH (BENNETT) DAVIS, all born in Gloucester, were<sup>3,13</sup>

- I. JACOB<sup>3</sup>, see following.
- II. John<sup>3</sup>, b. Nov. 25, 1665; d. Mar. 24, 1665-6.
- III. Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, b. June 27, 1667, probably she who d. at Gloucester on Feb. 11, 1699-1700, having m. there on Feb. 16, 1686-7 as his first wife Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> Coit (JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).<sup>4,16</sup>
- IV. Susannah<sup>3</sup>, b. June 27, 1670.
- V. Moses<sup>3</sup>, b. July 6, 1673.
- VI. Mary<sup>3</sup>, b. June 3, 1676.
- VII. Aaron<sup>3</sup>, b. Nov. 2 or 11, 1678; d. April 24, 1718, at Gloucester; prob. he who m. Hannah<sup>3</sup> Haskell (Joseph<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) who d. his widow there on March 25, 1730, in 47th year.<sup>18</sup>
- VIII. John<sup>3</sup>, b. July 17, 1681; d. Aug. 10, 1681.
- IX. Sarah<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec., 1685, doubtless she who d. at Gloucester Mar. 15, 1724-5, aged about 40, having m. there on Jan. 3 or 13, 1704-5, Joseph<sup>3</sup> Haskell, (Joseph<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>).<sup>15,16</sup>

JACOB<sup>3</sup> DAVIS (*Jacob<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>*) was born January 26, 1662, at Gloucester, died there February 1, 1717-8 "aged about 55" and married at that place<sup>13</sup> on September 14, 1687, MARY<sup>3</sup> HASKELL, (see Haskell, p. 352) who, after his death, married secondly as his second wife our EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> WOODWARD.<sup>13</sup> In 1694 JACOB<sup>3</sup> was among the "selectmen, town clerks & Town Treasurers" of Gloucester<sup>11</sup> and, probably about 1697, he removed to Ipswich for a period, for he bought<sup>12</sup> property there on December 30 of that year from Shoreborn Wilson which he sold on December 1, 1701, to Thomas Newman, and he was a tithing man<sup>12</sup> in Ipswich in 1701. JACOB<sup>3</sup> evidently retained his church membership at his earlier home for, in 1703, he was listed as a member at Gloucester but as "out of town." As has been stated JACOB<sup>3</sup> continued during his temporary Ipswich residence to operate the sawmill which his father had built at the head of Little River in Gloucester, and operated a fulling mill which he had constructed there.<sup>3,19</sup> In 1707 he sold certain Gloucester land<sup>3</sup> to EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> WOODWARD and in 1708 received a grant of land near his mill on which "to erect a bigger house."<sup>3</sup> It is surmised<sup>3</sup> that this "bigger house" of JACOB<sup>3</sup>

DAVIS, near the mill stream, was the antique and interesting structure which was still standing<sup>19</sup> there in Gloucester in 1907. But to revert to his temporary placing at Ipswich, his occupation there is made evident<sup>12</sup> by the statements that "JACOB DAVIS the potter, was the housekeeper's friend" and as "the potter, DAVIS," he sold\*<sup>20</sup> to Col. John Appleton on February 17, 1707, an acre and a half of land at the corner of Market and Central Streets for £33. On this ground there had been built before 1717 the noted old "Appleton House" still standing in 1898.<sup>20</sup> JACOB<sup>3</sup> sold<sup>12</sup> about four acres of adjacent land in Ipswich to Capt. Beamsley Perkins\*\* on April 17, 1710. This sale may easily have marked the time of his return to Gloucester where he died survived by widow MARY and all his children but the eldest.

The children of JACOB<sup>3</sup> and MARY (HASKELL) DAVIS, the first four born in Gloucester and the last two and perhaps three born in Ipswich, were<sup>2,8,13,14</sup>

- I. Jacob<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 10, 1688. One of this name called "son of JACOB" d. at Gloucester<sup>13</sup> on Feb. 13, 1688-9, and another d. at Ipswich<sup>14</sup> on June 9, 1703, called "son of JACOB and MARY." If these were both children of this family, the birth of the second Jacob is lacking.
- II. Moses<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 9, 1689-90; settled in Ipswich and will proved in Feb., 1753; probably he who m. at Gloucester Aug. 15, 1726, Abigail Sargent.
- III. William<sup>4</sup>, b. April 6, 1695; d. about 1752; probably he who m. at Gloucester May 17, 1716, Abigail Andress [Andrews] and who m. secondly there July 1, 1719, Mary Doliver.
- IV. Mary<sup>4</sup>, b. May 8, 1697; probably she who m. 1st on Nov. 30, 1720, Jacob Lufkin, and m. 2nd Sept. 17, 1724, Andrew<sup>5</sup> Harraden (Edward<sup>2</sup>, EDWARD<sup>1</sup>) both of Gloucester.
- V. Aaron<sup>4</sup>, b. about 1699; doubtless he who d. before 1745, having m. at Gloucester Nov. 3, 1725, Phebe Day who m. 2nd in that year.<sup>15</sup> Res. Attleborough.
- VI. ELIZABETH<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 11, 1701, at Ipswich; d. Oct. 1, 1766, aged 64, at Gloucester,<sup>13</sup> m. there on Nov. 30, 1720, EZEKIEL<sup>5</sup> WOODWARD (see Woodward, p. 675).
- VII. Joseph<sup>4</sup>, b. June 19, 1707, at Ipswich; prob. he who m. at Gloucester Sept. 21, 1732, Jemima<sup>4</sup> Haskell (William<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>).<sup>18</sup> Said to have been in Portsmouth N. H. about 1753.

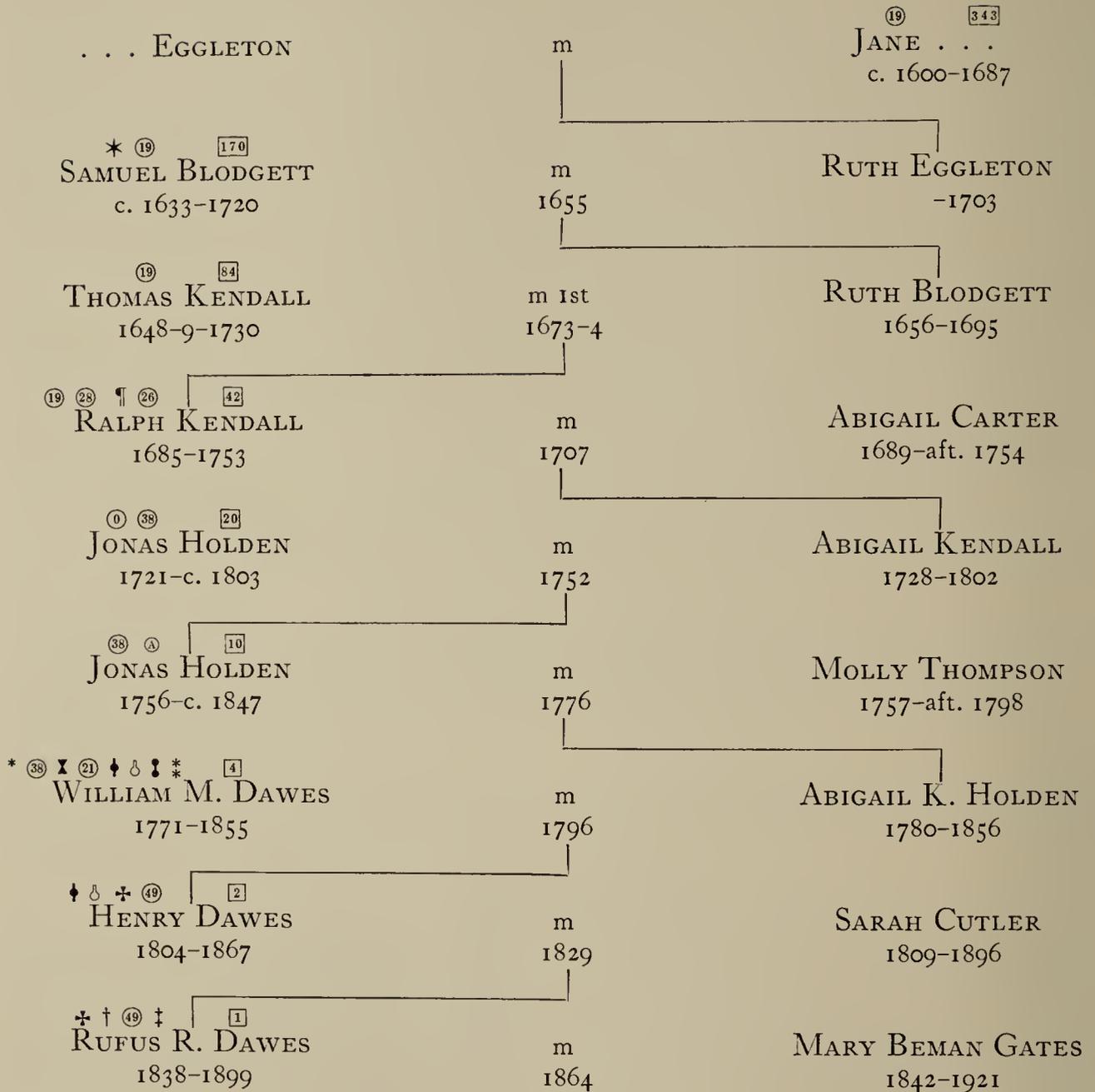
\*He had purchased about six acres in Ipswich from Thomas Metcalfe in November, 1699, which he disposed of<sup>12</sup> as shown above.

\*\*This Beamsley<sup>4</sup> Perkins (Abraham<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) was grandson of our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY of Boston.

## REFERENCES

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Ancient Records of Ipswich, ed. &amp; pub. by G. A. Schofield, 1899, pp. 92-4, 98, 100-1, 125; New England Register, XXIII, 314-5.</li> <li>2. Hammat Papers, pp. 70, 277.</li> <li>3. History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, pp. 75-9, 584-5; Notes and Additions to the History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1876, part 1, pp. 14-7, 24.</li> <li>4. Coit Family, F. W. Chapman, 1874, p. 19.</li> <li>5. Probate Records of Essex Co., II, 1, 15.</li> <li>6. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex Co., V, 360-1.</li> <li>7. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 187; II, 160-1, 163; III, 105, 108.</li> <li>8. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex Co., II, 58, 64, 109, 161, 192, 194, 216-7, 237; III, 108, 267; IV, 41-2; V, 221, 360-1; VI, 215, 289, 317; VII, 242.</li> <li>9. Ibid., VI, 215, 402; VII, 242.</li> <li>10. Ibid., I, 387; III, 137, 266-7, 321; VI, 145; VII, 384, 420.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>11. History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, pp. 206, 585; Notes and Additions to History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1891, Part 2, p. 4.</li> <li>12. Ipswich in Massachusetts Bay Colony, T. F. Waters, 1905, I, 83, 343, 419; 1917, II, 5.</li> <li>13. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 181, 184-5, 187-8, 191-3, 195-7; II, 156, 158, 160, 162-4, 167; III, 103, 106, 332.</li> <li>14. Vital Records of Ipswich, I, 110-1; II, 537.</li> <li>15. Notes and Additions to History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, I, 37; II, 81.</li> <li>16. Vital Records of Gloucester, II, 158, 165; III, 96, 166.</li> <li>17. Perkins Genealogy, G. A. Perkins, 1889, pp. 11, 22, 24, 39.</li> <li>18. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXII, 138, 142.</li> <li>19. New Hampshire Genealogies, E. S. Stearns, 1908, I, p. 217.</li> <li>20. Publications of the Ipswich Historical Society, 1898, V, 47.</li> </ol> |
|---|--|

# EGGLETON



- ①⑨ Woburn
- \* Cambridge
- ②⑧ Lancaster
- ¶ Charlestown
- ②⑥ Kennebec River
- ⑨ Concord
- ③⑧ Sudbury

- ④ Waitsfield, Vt.
- \* Boston
- ¶ Marlborough
- ②① Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.
- ♁ Morgan Co., O.

- ♁ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- † Malta, O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- † Marietta, O.



## EGGLETON\*

(—) EGGLETON\*\* whose identity and placing have not yet been found was married in England by about 1630-2 to JANE (—) born<sup>1</sup> about 1600 who bore him at least two daughters.<sup>1</sup> By or before 1650 JANE and these daughters arrived at Woburn and somewhere about that time JANE was married, secondly, to James<sup>2</sup> Britton (James<sup>1</sup>) who died at Woburn<sup>2</sup> on May 3, 1655. She married a third time at that place<sup>2</sup> on February 1, 1658-9, becoming the second wife of Isaac<sup>1</sup> Cole† with whom she lived until his death<sup>2</sup> there on June 10, 1674. Then on October 6, 1674, the following document was presented to the court,<sup>1</sup> proving JANE to have been the mother of our RUTH:

“The Humble request of JANE Cole y<sup>e</sup> relict of Isack Cole deceased & of SAMUEL BLOGHEAD & John Nutton, y<sup>t</sup> whereas Jsack Cole of Wooburn died intestate and left a one hundred twenty pounds Estate: viz forty pounds in moveables and y<sup>e</sup> rest in house & Lands. Its their request y<sup>t</sup> their Mother in law JANE Cole may have a competency to maintain her in her old age she being about 74 years old. If the court See fit to order y<sup>e</sup> one half of the s<sup>d</sup> Estate y<sup>e</sup> about mentioned parties are willing to Entertain her & free y<sup>e</sup> town from charges and y<sup>e</sup> Selectmen doe concur herein.”

6, 8 [mo., October] 74

“The court having heard w<sup>t</sup> all Ptyes concerned can say in this case, do order to y<sup>e</sup> widow [JANE] forty pounds to be payed out of y<sup>e</sup> moveables as prised in the Inventory, or money, & y<sup>e</sup> widow to make choyc of her bed & furntiture in pt.”<sup>1</sup>

Following that decision, no further record of widow JANE is seen until the Selectmen's Records of September 4, 1683, say “Widow [JANE] Cole to be relieved”.<sup>6</sup> Her son-in-law John<sup>1</sup> Nutting died about 1676 for shortly after that his wife was called “widow Sarah Nutting” and she had returned to Woburn<sup>7</sup> to be with or near her mother and sister. The only other item found relative to widow JANE is the record of her death at Woburn<sup>2</sup> on March 10, 1687.

The known children of (—) EGGLETON and his wife JANE (—), both born in England, were<sup>1,2</sup>

- I. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, d. aft. 1676; m. at Woburn, Aug. 28, 1650, John<sup>1</sup> Nutting of Woburn, Chelmsford and Groton. Nutting was killed<sup>7</sup> by the Indians during King Philip's War and Sarah went to live with her sister RUTH.
- II. RUTH<sup>2</sup>, d. at Woburn<sup>2</sup> Oct. 14, 1703; m. there<sup>1,2,8</sup> Dec. 13, 1655, SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> BLODGETT (see Blodgett, p. 92).

\*This name is variously spelled as Iggleden, Ingulden, Eggleston, etc.

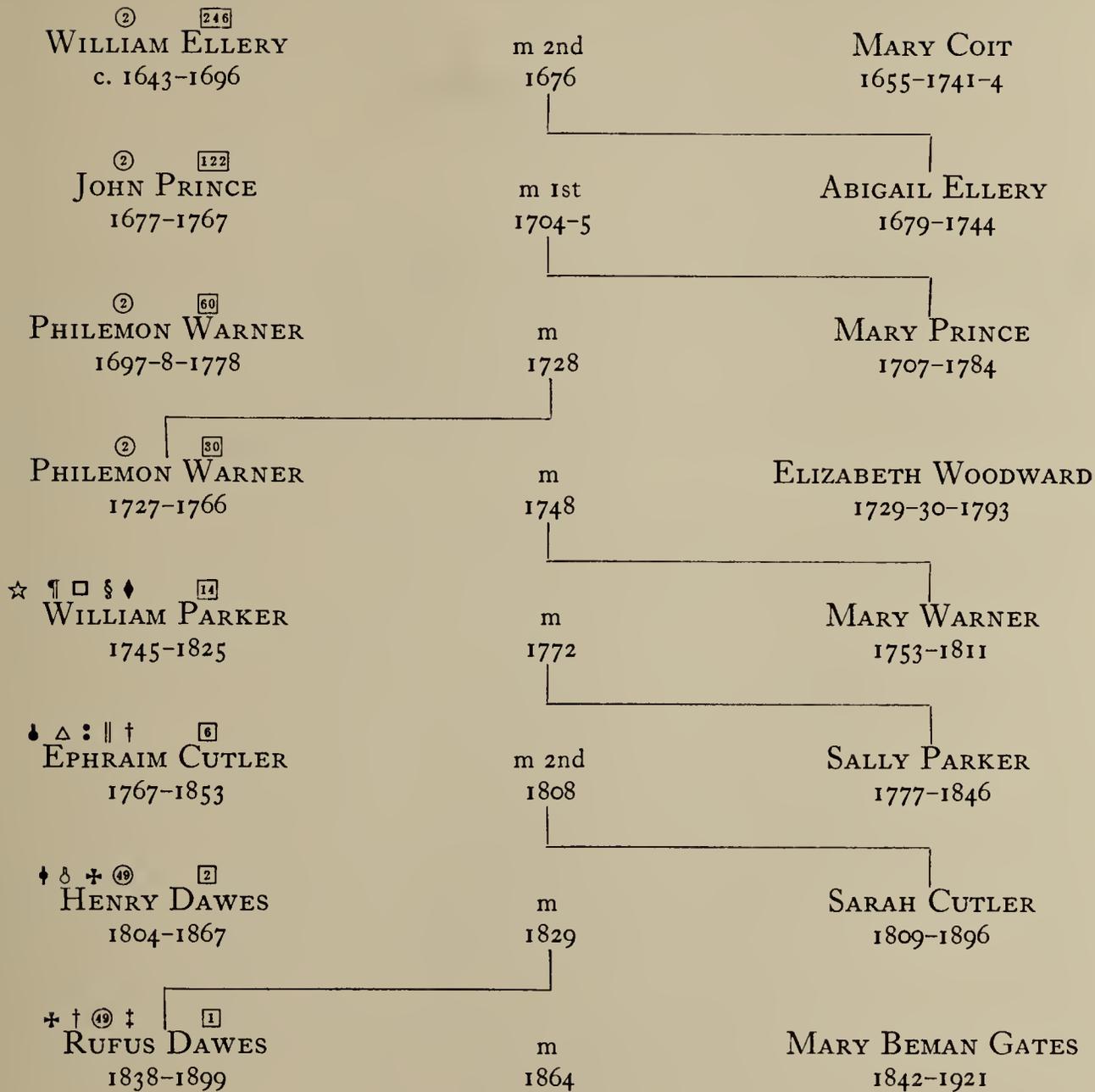
\*\*This man has frequently, but erroneously, been claimed as Stephen Iggleden of Biddenden,<sup>3</sup> co. Kent, who died there about 1638 and whose widow Elizabeth (Bennett) Iggleden emigrated<sup>3,4</sup> in the “Castle” which sailed for New England<sup>4</sup> in April, 1638. She did bring<sup>1</sup> with her a daughter Ruth, who had been baptised at Biddenden on November 8, 1631, as well as two other daughters and settled at Roxbury,<sup>4</sup> but that Ruth did *not* marry our SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> BLODGETT.

†The statement has been carelessly made that a daughter Britton rather than a widow Britton married in 1658-9; and repeatedly it has been claimed that JANE Britton married Isaac<sup>2</sup> Cole rather than his father, but the document herewith<sup>1</sup> showing JANE to have been born about 1600 disproves such claims. Another error frequently made is the assignment of the 1674 death date to Isaac<sup>2</sup> instead of to his father, but the younger man died in New Hampshire<sup>5</sup> about 1706.

## REFERENCES

1. New England Register, LIX, 417-8.
2. Vital Records of Woburn, Mass., II, 9, 37; III, 57; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 70; History of Woburn, S. Sewall, p. 594.
3. New England Register, LXV, 186-7.
4. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 191; New England Register, II, 53, 183.
5. Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, C. T. Libby, 1928-39, p. 155.
6. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, Mass., T. B. Wyman, 1879, p. 229.
7. Nutting Genealogy, J. K. Nutting, 1908, pp. 40, 58.
8. History of Cambridge, Mass., L. R. Paige, 1877, p. 489.
9. Genealogical and Personal Memoirs of Boston and Eastern Mass., W. R. Cutter, 1908, II, 608-9.

# ELLERY



- ② Gloucester
- ☆ Malden
- † Charlestown
- Newburyport
- § Allegheny Co., Pa.
- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- ♣ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.

- ⋮ Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ◆ Thomaston, Me.
- ♣ Morgan Co., O.
- ④ Mauston, Wis.
- ✦ Malta, O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## ELLERY

**W**ILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ELLERY\* born about 1643, reached New England on an unknown boat at an unknown date but before October 8, 1663, on which day<sup>2</sup> he was married at Gloucester to his first wife Hannah<sup>2</sup> Vinson, daughter of William<sup>1</sup> of that place. His father-in-law gave<sup>1</sup> our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> a two acre lot adjoining his own on Spring Street<sup>1</sup> (see map, p. 673) on a cove which has been variously called Spring Cove or Vinson's Cove but came to be called ELLERY's Cove. Here WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> spent thirty years of his life and here his widow MARY was living as late as 1708, for after the death of his first wife<sup>1,2</sup> on December 24, 1675, he married<sup>11,15</sup> secondly, at Gloucester,<sup>2</sup> on June 13, 1676, MARY<sup>3</sup> COIT (see Coit, p. 195) who was about twelve years his junior.

In 1664 the inhabitants of Gloucester to the number of twenty-two signed<sup>9</sup> a document granting to their minister, the Rev. John Emerson, the use of the mill and all rights pertaining to the flow of water, etc., on condition that he was to keep it in good repair, and apparently they guaranteed him all the town business. Among these signers were WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ELLERY, EDWARD<sup>1</sup> HARRADEN, JOHN<sup>1</sup> DAVIS and his sons James<sup>2</sup> and JACOB<sup>2</sup> DAVIS. In 1670 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> owed a debt of £1-6-8 to the estate<sup>8</sup> of John Croad of Salem and in 1671 was a witness to the will<sup>8</sup> of Mrs. Bridget Varney. Having become a church member, he was admitted<sup>1</sup> as a freeman on May 15, 1672, and at a court held at Boston in November of that year he and Henry<sup>1</sup> Walker\*\* took the freeman's oath together.<sup>8</sup> In November, 1673, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> with his father-in-law William<sup>1</sup> Vinson and brother-in-law of the same name and THOMAS<sup>2</sup> PRINCE, jr., were summoned<sup>8</sup> as witnesses in the trial of William Ford of Charlestown. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> at this time deposed that he was about thirty and "that he saw William Ford set sail in Annesquam upon a Saturday night about nine o'clock, and came through the gut [cut] and he heard him say that he got home on the Sabbath day in time to go to meeting in the afternoon."<sup>8</sup> In that same year WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ELLERY and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE were on a coroner's jury considering the death of a man who had probably been drunk and who had certainly drowned.<sup>8</sup>

As has been said, a tragedy came to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>† and his four older children on the day before Christmas in 1675 in the death of the wife and mother. In 1677 he and his former father-in-law William<sup>1</sup> Vinson took an inventory of the estate of John Collins, Jr. and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> signed in long hand<sup>8</sup> their report to the court.

\*WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ELLERY is sometimes said<sup>7</sup> to have come from the west of England while other writers specify<sup>12,13</sup> that he was from Bristol, but proof has not been found. In England a variant is Hillary, pronounced Illary and often spelled so. An Isaac Ellery, called of Gloucester<sup>16</sup> who was killed at the Narragansett Fort in 1675 may have been a relative.<sup>16</sup>

\*\*Third husband of our MARY (—) Robinson BROWNE.

†WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ELLERY has been accorded service in King Philip's War by the Society of Colonial Wars but Bodge does not verify.

As early as 1638 there had been under consideration by the Cape Ann settlers<sup>1</sup> the possible desirability of dredging a passage, canal or cut (often recorded as "gut") through the narrow neck of land (see map, p. 673) that separated the waters of Massachusetts Bay from Annisquam Harbor. In July, 1643, about the time of the birth of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> that project had been undertaken as an individual enterprise by Rev. Richard Blynman the first minister of Gloucester, with the permission of the town and with certain accruing tolls or benefits. He "cut the beach through" to connect with Trynall Cove and Little River forming a canal which would allow the passage of small vessels occupied in coastwise trade, saving them the necessity of sailing around Cape Ann via the Atlantic. Since the residents of Gloucester were situated on both sides of Little River, a foot bridge was built which by swinging around on a pivot, allowed the passage of boats. The ownership of the cut and bridge passed from Mr. Blinman to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS who lived at the cut by the beach<sup>17</sup> (see map, p. 673), and by 1704 it had passed into the possession of Capt. Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> Coit (JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>). During the winter of 1704, however, a terrific storm accompanied by an unusually high tide filled the cut with sand and gravel.<sup>1</sup>

Various odd names were applied to local points such<sup>9</sup> as "Five-Pound Island", "Ten-Pound Island" and "Done Fudging." This latter name was applied to approximately the middle of the cut where the opposite currents met, for persons poling or fudging a boat or raft on a stream against the current here "took a fair tide and were therefore 'done fudging' ".<sup>9</sup>

Few intimate details of the life of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> have been found but it is noticeable that not once was he recorded as being in court either as plaintiff or defendant. The fishermen and mariners who made up the major part of the inhabitants of such a settlement as Gloucester had to be imbued with the spirit of fighters in order to survive the fierce onslaughts of wind and waves — and all too many lost the battle even so! It was probably but natural that their battling instincts should invade their personal associations. And the fact that of all the maritime counties, Essex County alone has published her early court records tends to give the families of that section a disproportionate exposition of such controversies as occurred. The complete avoidance of such conflict in the life of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ELLERY is, therefore, the more noteworthy.

In 1688 at a division of Gloucester lands WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> acquired a Cape lot;<sup>9</sup> in 1689 he represented Gloucester at the General Court and in 1689, 1690, 1692 and 1693 he served the town as a selectman,<sup>9</sup> being called "Serg<sup>t</sup> ELLERY"\* in 1692. In July that year Gloucester became quite alarmed over a supernatural appearance<sup>10,17,22</sup> believed to be three or more men who menaced the safety of the town. Five men including Benjamin<sup>2</sup> Ellery took oath that they had seen<sup>22</sup> these spirits or spooks and that they were impervious to bullets. After two weeks of this visitation the town sent abroad for help and on July 18 fifty or sixty men came from Ipswich to help deliver the town from its menace<sup>10,17</sup> but there the story inconsiderately stops! In 1692 with about one-quarter of the population on the west side of the River, a ferry was established between Trynall Cove and Biskie Island. In 1693 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was taxed £1-2-3; that year he owned a sloop<sup>9</sup> and he died<sup>1</sup>

\*Probably referring to the Train Band.

at\* Gloucester on December 9, 1696. He left a will<sup>25</sup> dated December 9, the day of his death, making his wife MARY his sole executrix. He made a bequest to his eldest daughter Hannah (then Card) and gave all the rest of the estate to wife MARY "to bring up my children that are under age, and when they are of age, I give her full liberty and power to make a will and dispose of my said whole estate unto my children as she pleaseth." He signed with his mark, probably from weakness, for formerly his signature had been in long hand.<sup>8</sup> The witnesses<sup>25</sup> were John Emerson, Jr., son of their minister, John Fitch, stepfather to widow MARY and William Sargent, but the odd thing is that though MARY as executrix presented the will on April 26, 1697, the records seem to show that it was never probated. However, on November 7, 1698, MARY filed an account of her administration listing among other items the fact that her husband had taken into his hands moneys\*\* given by her grandfather STEVENS (or perhaps by *their* grandfather) to her daughters Mary (Ellery) Stevens and ABIGAIL<sup>2</sup> ELLERY to the amount of £2-10-0 each. On May 18, 1706 a final agreement of the heirs of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ELLERY was signed by<sup>25</sup>

son Benjamin<sup>2</sup> Ellery

daughter Hannah Card

Samuel<sup>3</sup> Stevens and wife Mary (a daughter)

JOHN PRINCE and wife ABIGAIL (a daughter)

son Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> Ellery

son Benjamin<sup>2</sup> Ellery for Jemima<sup>2</sup> Ellery

and widow MARY ELLERY by her mark in behalf of Eleanor<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>2</sup> and Dependence<sup>2</sup> Ellery.

His estate totaled £194 and included the ownership of a two-thirds interest, valued at £28, in an unnamed sloop. The report of widow MARY, executrix of his estate, shows<sup>1</sup> that eight shillings was paid for his coffin and three shillings for "digging ye grave and ringing ye bell." The habits of that day were so binding that though poor widow MARY was left with six or more young children and that six weeks after the death of her husband she gave birth to a posthumous son (whom she named "Dependence"! ) there was spent<sup>1,9</sup> at the death of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> for "Rum, wine, Cyder and Shug<sup>r</sup> and spis for ye funnerall £2.5" and for "8 pair of gloves, 16s; a frame over the grave, 5s 6d." For courtesy demanded that those who attended should be offered refreshment and that the minister and other outstanding personages in the community should be given gloves for the ceremony. What a drawerful a minister would acquire!

So then our MARY would have taken up alone the task of rearing and providing for her flock. We are told that in 1708 she was still living in the old home at Ellery's Cove. She lived on as the widow of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, until after 1741, that is

\*WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> spent his last thirty years at the homestead and one hundred and twenty-nine years later his grandson Benjamin<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>2</sup>) died there.

\*\*Unfortunately certain recorded statements in connection with the estate<sup>25</sup> of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ELLERY are impossible of acceptance. Because of the deductions which have been made herein, (after exhaustive study by the compiler and other genealogical students) it becomes necessary, since they do not tally with the said records, to insert an explanation. The crux of the situation is in the accounting by widow MARY (COIT) ELLERY on her deceased husband's estate on November 7, 1698, which some one else *wrote* and she *signed* with her mark; and in an ambiguous use of personal pronouns. For there she is made to refer to her own daughter Mary (Ellery) Stevens' "grandfather STEVENS", although the said "grandfather STEVENS" was WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, grandfather to widow MARY herself. Since no will nor even a death date of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS has been found, it is impossible to prove this point. Correction is invited.

forty-five or more years as a widow — which is certainly a record! And apparently she had a wonderful success with her children for all five of her sons became fine useful citizens, reared useful families, assembled considerable wealth and were highly respected. Her stepson Benjamin<sup>2</sup> became the grandfather of William<sup>4</sup> Ellery who signed the Declaration of Independence and the great-great grandfather of William Ellery Channing, D. D. At the death of her own son John<sup>2</sup> the Boston News Letter stated<sup>13</sup> that “He was well respected among us.” When her son Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> died in Gloucester, the Boston Evening Post<sup>13</sup> of June 15, 1761, stated “He was a Gentleman much approved in that Town and greatly esteemed for his Prudence and integrity.” When William<sup>2</sup> died the Boston News Letter said he “was universally respected by all that knew him both as a gentleman and Christian.” Dependence<sup>2</sup> became a sea captain and the exact date of his death is unknown. The five daughters who lived to marry were not outdone by their brothers in character or conduct.

As for widow \*MARY herself, her activity displayed itself<sup>9</sup> as late as 1722 when “Mrs. MARY ELLERY was paid £3.18s ‘for cureing Ebenezer Lurvey, and his Diat’ ” so at the age of sixty-seven she evidently acted as nurse (perhaps also prescribed treatment) and boarded this child aged five while she cared for him.<sup>14</sup> When her son John<sup>2</sup> of Boston made his will on December 11, 1741, he referred to his “ ‘Honoured Mother’ Mrs. MARY ELLERY of Gloucester, widow.”<sup>14</sup> At this time she would have been eighty-six years old<sup>20</sup> but when his son, John<sup>3</sup> Ellery of Hartford, Connecticut, a very wealthy man, made his will on September 5, 1744, MARY, his grandmother, had already died. He referred to something which he had coming to him “by the death of his late honored grandmother Mrs. MARY ELLERY of Gloucester” and ordered it to be disposed of by his uncles Capt. Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> and Capt. William<sup>2</sup> Ellery of Gloucester for the benefit of his poor relatives in or about Gloucester.<sup>14</sup> In 1747 Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> sold to his brother-in-law James Edgerly the property which had once belonged to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and mention is made of the cellar of that first house over which another building had been constructed.<sup>20</sup>

The children of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ELLERY by his first wife Hannah<sup>2</sup> Vinson all born in Gloucester were<sup>1,2,3,12,13,16</sup>

- i. William<sup>2</sup>, b. Sept. 15, 1664; prob. d. yng., not named among the heirs.
- ii. Hannah<sup>2</sup>, b. Jan. 25, 1666; d. prob. aft.<sup>4</sup> Oct. 1710; m. 1st abt. 1688 Job<sup>3</sup> Coit (JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>); m. 2nd at Gloucester Jan. 10, 1692-3 William Card.
- iii. Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, b. Sept. 6, 1669; d.<sup>1</sup> July 26, 1746, at Newport, R. I.; m. July 30, 1696, Abigail Wilkins (John<sup>1</sup> of Boston and Bristol). They settled in Rhode Island.
- iv. Susannah<sup>2</sup>, b. Feb. 2, 1672; d.<sup>3</sup> at Gloucester<sup>6</sup> Jan. 15, 1704-5; m. John Harris of Ipswich and Gloucester. She had<sup>19</sup> at Gloucester sons John and William 1702 and 1705 and died in five days. [Did she not m. 1st (—) Wardwell and m. 2nd Nov. 19, 1700, at Ipswich this John Harris?]

The children of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and MARY (COIT) ELLERY all born in Gloucester were<sup>1,2,3,12,13,14,15</sup>

\*A vessel named the “Desire” had been built in 1678 in Briggs’ Shipbuilding yard<sup>24</sup> at Hobart’s Landing in Scituate Harbor, Plymouth County. It was a sloop of sixteen tons, a round sterned open vessel and was owned in 1698 by John<sup>2</sup> Wing, mariner of Boston and by Mary Ellery, widow, of Gloucester. This must have been our MARY (COIT) ELLERY widow of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, who had died in 1696 for no other widow MARY is of record at that time. As for her part ownership in the sloop “Desire”, it was probably by inheritance from her husband WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> who left a two-thirds interest in a sloop.

- v. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. Feb. 24, 1676-7; d. at Gloucester<sup>6,13</sup> June 1, 1758; m. 1st there Jan. 12, 1692-3, Samuel<sup>3</sup> Stevens (James<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>);<sup>15,18</sup> m. there 2nd, (int. Feb. 28) Mar. 16, 1757-8, Elder Edmund Grover, both being<sup>20</sup> over 80.
- vi. ABIGAIL<sup>2</sup>, b. Mar. 20, 1679; d. at Gloucester Dec. 4, 1744, ae. 64 yr. 9 mo.; m. by 1704-5 as his first wife, Capt. JOHN<sup>3</sup> PRINCE (see Prince, p. 514).
- vii. John<sup>2</sup>, b. June 25, 1681; a mariner of Newport, R. I. in 1708 and later a merchant of Boston;<sup>7</sup> d.<sup>3</sup> there<sup>7</sup> July 20, 1742; m.<sup>3</sup> there<sup>12</sup> Aug. 30 or 31, 1710, Jane Bonner (Capt. John).
- viii. \*Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>,\*\* b. Mar. 31, 1683; d. at Gloucester<sup>2</sup> May 3, 1761, in 78th year; m. there,<sup>2</sup> 1st, on Jan. 1, 1710-1, Abigail Norwood (Francis) who d. in 3 months; m. there,<sup>2</sup> 2nd, Feb. 16, 1720-1, Ann Sargent (William, called<sup>9</sup> 2nd).<sup>13</sup>
- ix. Jemima<sup>2</sup>, b. Apr. 17, 1686; living in 1706.
- x. Elinor<sup>2</sup>, b. Dec. 22, 1688; prob. d. yng.
- xi. Elinor<sup>2</sup>, b. June 30, 1691; d. at Gloucester<sup>21</sup> 1734; m. 1st there<sup>2,20</sup> Nov. 30, 1714, James Sawyer called son of Thomas<sup>2</sup>, (James<sup>1</sup>); m. there,<sup>2</sup> 2nd,<sup>20</sup> Aug. 15, 1732, James Edgerly called son of Samuel<sup>2</sup> (Thomas<sup>1</sup>)<sup>20</sup> though this man was probably thirteen years her junior.<sup>16,21</sup>
- xii. \*William<sup>2</sup>, b. Mar. 17, 1693-4; d.<sup>1</sup> at Gloucester Sept. 20, 1771 aged 77; m. there,<sup>2</sup> 1st, May 22, 1719, Dorcas<sup>4</sup> Elwell (Elias<sup>3</sup>, Josiah<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>) who d. Feb. 13, 1733; m. there,<sup>2</sup> 2nd, Oct. 1, 1739, Abigail<sup>3</sup> Allen (Joseph<sup>2</sup>, Joseph<sup>1</sup>).<sup>20</sup>
- xiii. Dependence<sup>2</sup>, posthumous, b. Jan. 24, 1696-7; d. at Gloucester or at sea bef.<sup>1</sup> 1757, or about<sup>13</sup> 1761; m. there<sup>2</sup> Jan. 4, 1721-2, Sarah Warner probably<sup>5</sup> dau. of PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> and ABIGAIL (TUTTLE) WARNER and if so, b. at Ipswich Mar. 8, 1704. At Gloucester eleven children were recorded to them. About 1723-4 he was captured by the noted pirate Capt. John Phillips as was also Andrew<sup>3</sup> Harraden (see Harraden note, p. 349, with references).

\*It is said<sup>22</sup> that Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> and William<sup>2</sup> Ellery with PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> WARNER and four other prominent citizens, members of the First Parish but resident at the Harbor, in 1738 built a new Meeting House at their own expense and that they with others projected the first school house in the Harbor Parish.

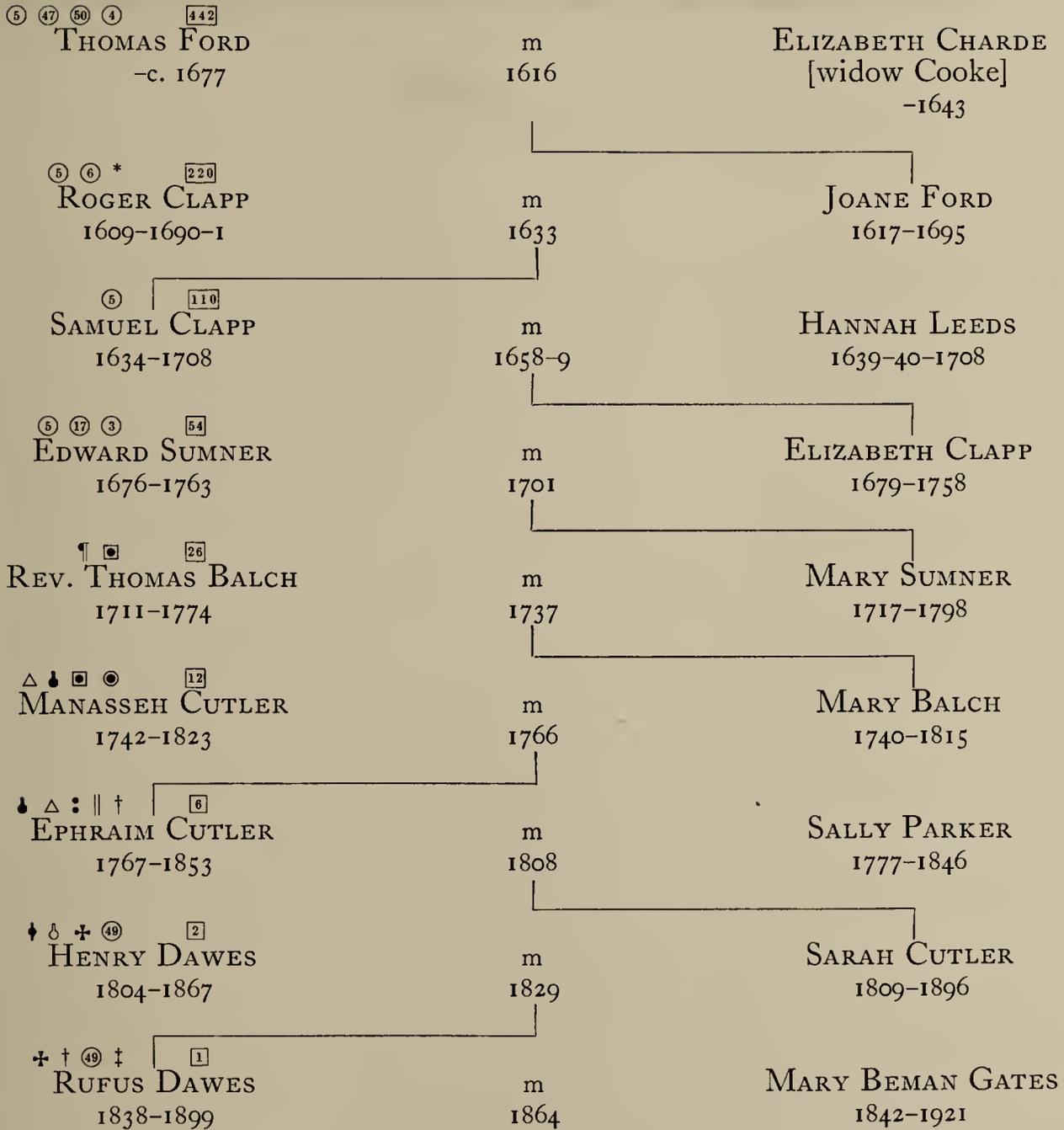
\*\*In 1711 Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> Ellery was granted "flatty land" on the west side of PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> WARNER's wharf to build a wharf for himself.<sup>1</sup>

Another, and entirely unrelated item pertains to a grandson of Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, namely John Stevens<sup>4</sup> Ellery (Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>) born in 1748 and died in 1797 leaving as a part of his estate<sup>20</sup> 9968 gallons of brandy valued at \$13,444.

## REFERENCES

1. History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, map used as frontispiece, pp. 7-10, 54, 84-5; Notes and Additions to Babson's Gloucester, 1876, I, 18-21.
2. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 234-5; II, 193-5, 495, 524; III, 124-5, 160, 250.
3. Savage, II, 112-3, IV, 375; Pope, p. 471; New England Register, IV, 362; XLVIII, 313-4.
4. Vital Records of Gloucester II, 193-4; III, 124; History of Salem, S. Perley, 1924, I, 434.
5. Vital Records of Ipswich, I, 385; Posterity of WILLIAM WARNER, Edward Warner of Boston (abt. 1866), p. 7; New England Register, XX, 64-8.
6. Babson's Gloucester, 1860, pp. 167-8, 240-1; Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 326-7, III, 160.
7. Historical Catalogue of the Old South Church, Boston, 1883, p. 350.
8. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex Co., IV, 401; V, 117, 119, 128, 221, 259-60, 267-8; VI, 378; Probate Records, II, 203, 313; III, 181.
9. Babson's Gloucester, 1860, pp. 149-50, 201, 213, 215-6, 221, 275, 308, 379, 585, 592-3.
10. Ibid., pp. 205-13; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, VI, 231-2.
11. Coit Genealogy, F. W. Chapman, 1874, p. 18.
12. Heraldic Journal, 1865, I, 177-9.
13. Pedigree of the Ellery Family in America, Harrison Ellery, 1881.
14. New England Register, XLIII, 313-4; Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 444.
15. Tingley-Meyers Ancestry, R. M. Tingley, 1935, pp. 349-50.
16. Newport Historical Magazine, 1882, IV, 181-8.
17. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, VI, 231-2; Babson's Gloucester, pp. 165, 212-3.
18. Ibid., pp. 86-7; Coit Genealogy, p. 16; Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 237, 467; II, 369; Ingersoll Genealogy, L. D. Avery, 1926, p. 14.
19. Hammatt Papers, p. 125; Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 326-7, III, 160; Vital Records of Ipswich, II, 205; Babson's Gloucester, 1860, pp. 240-1.
20. Ibid., p. 147; Babson's Notes and Additions, I, 1, 18, 68, 77-8, 91; II, 74, 116; History of Durham, N. H., Stackpole and Meserve, II, 171.
21. New England Register, XXXIV, 282-3.
22. History of Essex Co., Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, II, 1305-7.
23. Research by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Essex Probates 8682, Rec. Vols. 306, 117 and 309, 39-40.
24. Shipbuilding on the North River, L. V. Briggs, 1889, pp. 284, 395; "The Owl," Wing Family Mag., Vol. 15, p. 1280.

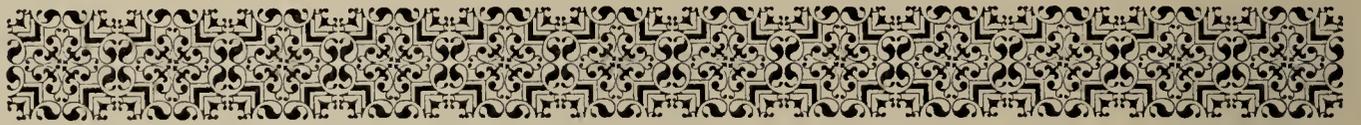
# FORD



- ⑤ Dorchester
- ⑥ Castle Island
- ④⑦ Windsor, Conn.
- ⑤⑩ Hartford, Conn.
- ④ Northampton
- \* Boston
- ④⑦ Milton

- ③ Roxbury
- ¶ Charlestown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- ♣ Edgartown
- Hamilton
- ◻ Dedham
- ⋮ Waterford, O.

- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♣ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ✚ Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## FORD

**T**HOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD\* whose parentage has not yet been proved,<sup>1</sup> has been first definitely recorded<sup>1,42,43,44</sup> at Bridport, co. Dorset when he married on June 19, 1616, the widow\*\* ELIZABETH (CHARDE) Cooke.<sup>1</sup> Their residence continued at Bridport until 1619 or later and there they had two daughters baptized, but by 1623 they were resident fifteen miles farther east, in Dorchester, co. Dorset, where they had a son and two daughters baptized<sup>1</sup> in Holy Trinity Church, two of whom died there in infancy, the latest one on March 28, 1629.<sup>1</sup> To explain the emigration in 1629-30 of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD with his wife ELIZABETH, their three daughters and her son Aaron Cooke, it is necessary to digress. The church of the Holy Trinity in Dorchester, England, where they had been affiliated, then had as its rector<sup>5,6</sup> the Rev. John White, who was so deeply interested and influential in the early emigration to New England as to have been called<sup>6</sup> the "Founder of Massachusetts." In the summer of 1629, after this man had seen one group of emigrants embarked for Salem in New England, he had written to Governor Endicott already at Salem,<sup>5</sup> "to appoint places of habitation for sixty families out of Dorsetshire which were to arrive the following spring." This plan pertained to the group of which THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD became a member and at a meeting<sup>34</sup> held "at the Deputyes House" in England on October 15, 1629, there were present twenty-five members of the council which largely financed the emigrants as well as "M<sup>r</sup> FORDE, w<sup>th</sup> divers others of the genalitie." This meeting was to arrange that this financing company should benefit for seven years by the shipment of "beavo<sup>r</sup> and other ffurrs in those [colonial] pts soly . . ." and to arrange for the changed conditions after the charter† itself, and consequently the actual government of the colony was removed to New England by the hand and in the person of Gov. John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop in the following spring.<sup>34</sup>

Great care was evidently taken to enlist in this later company of which FORD was a member, the elements of a well balanced community, as it consisted of two devoted ministers, Messrs. Maverick and Warham, two stockholders of the London financing company, Messrs. Rossiter and Ludlow, three men of military experience and "several men past middle life with adult families and good estates," under which description THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD "of Dorchester,"<sup>3</sup> one of Rev. White's parishioners would fall. Added to these was a large proportion of active well trained young men

\*It is quite possible,<sup>1</sup> but not proved, that our emigrant had had an earlier wife, for some one of his name, who may have been he, married in December, 1610, at Powerstock, Dorset, one Joane Way who died in May, 1615.<sup>1</sup>

\*\*ELIZABETH CHARDE had been married<sup>1</sup> first on September 2, 1610, at Thornecombe, co. Dorset to Aaron Cooke to whom she bore two children, Elizabeth who died young and Aaron Cooke, Jr., baptized March 20, 1613-4, who emigrated with his mother and stepfather and became one of the more prominent colonists of New England. His father Aaron Cooke, sr., joyner, died on December 28, 1615, at Bridport.<sup>1</sup>

†This action established a notable precedent for hitherto colonies had been governed at long distance, from England (see Appendix "B", p. 694).

of whom ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP was one.<sup>5</sup> In mid-March, 1629-30, the company\* as a whole, numbering about one hundred and forty persons, met at Plymouth, Devonshire, where the "Mary and John" a ship of four hundred tons had been chartered\*\* and fitted out. There they spent their last day in Old England at the New Hospital keeping "a solemn day of fasting and prayer at which the Rev. Mr. White was present and preached in the forenoon."<sup>5,6</sup> Here, too, they formed their church organization and bound their ministers to them, this being the first church body to be transferred to the Bay Colony, and unquestionably THOMAS<sup>1</sup> was a member of it, as was probably also his wife ELIZABETH.

Then on March 20, 1629-30, the "Mary and John" set sail† from Plymouth, England on its journey which lasted seventy days during which the company had preaching and expounding of the Bible every day.<sup>4</sup> Captain Squeb, master of the vessel, was supposed<sup>19</sup> to land the travelers on the Charles River where a placing for them had been suggested, consonant with Rev. White's request. But on their arrival,<sup>5</sup> May 30, 1630 at the barren, uninhabited Nantasket Point, Squeb put them and their cattle and goods ashore, much to their displeasure and complaint, claiming that his unfamiliarity with the coast line thereabout made any other plan unsafe.

This left the hundred and forty emigrants at least twelve miles across the Bay from where they had expected to land and nearly eight miles from where Boston later stood. ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP referred to this as<sup>4</sup> a "forlorn Place in this Wilderness. But as it pleased God, we got a Boat of some old Planters,‡ and laded her with Goods; and some able Men well Armed went in her unto Charlestown: where we found some Wigwams and one House." He went on to tell of how they unloaded their goods about where Watertown was presently settled, started to build a shelter and exchanged biscuits with the Indians for fish. But this group was presently recalled by those at Nantasket Point in favor of a neck of land called Mattapanock, now South Boston (see map, p. 275) which would accommodate their cattle with safety and with a minimum of fence building, as well as furnishing greatly needed forage and numerous springs<sup>4</sup> for the animals. So these people at greatly increased inconvenience and expense removed their cattle and baggage and settled early in June, 1630, at what the Indians had called Mattapan, thus forming the third settlement<sup>10</sup> in New England. On September 7, 1630, the name Mattapan was officially changed to Dorchester in honor of their sponsor, the Rev. John White, and the earlier place of residence of certain members of the group, including THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD. On June 14, Gov. Winthrop on the flagship "Arabella" arrived and during the subsequent month the ten other ships which made up his fleet,<sup>2</sup>

\*No passenger list of the "Mary and John" has been found but by later testimony<sup>2,3,4,5,7</sup> many of those who emigrated on it are known, including<sup>10,12</sup> THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD, ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP, GEORGE<sup>1</sup> HULL (Dawes-Gates, II, 453-4) and HUMPHREY<sup>1</sup> PINNEY (Dawes-Gates, II, 659-62) while the claim is made<sup>28</sup> that MATTHEW<sup>1</sup> GRANT was also of the number.

\*\*At the time that THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD emigrated, the cost of passage<sup>37</sup> was £5 for an adult, £10 for a horse and £3 for a ton of freight.

†Idlers on the dock called the emigrants "cract-braines."<sup>2</sup>

‡At the time of the arrival of the "Mary and John" the only English settlements in what became Massachusetts were<sup>10</sup> at Salem and at Charlestown, and the latter place, by the word<sup>4</sup> of ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP boasted<sup>5</sup> but a few wigwams and one house worthy of the name which was undoubtedly the "Great House" built<sup>55</sup> at the foot of Charlestown town hill in 1629-30 for, but in advance of the arrival of, Gov. John Winthrop. Therefore it seems definite that the "old Planters"<sup>20</sup> referred to were certain men of Salem who consistently bore that title and who included our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER (see p. 305), JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH (see p. 70), ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT and JOHN<sup>1</sup> WOODBURY (see Dawes-Gates, II, 221, 823). These men, because of Rev. John White's correspondence with Gov. Endicott at Salem, would have been expecting the arrival of the "Mary and John."

with a body of passengers estimated<sup>33</sup> all the way from seven hundred and fifty to fifteen hundred, reached the shores of New England.

The long voyage had impaired the health of many of the party and on June 28 Dr. Fuller of Plymouth visited Mattapan<sup>5</sup> and bled some twenty of them — the usual medical treatment of that day, regardless of the difficulty existing, which in this case would likely have been scurvy from the limited diet on board ship. Because of the evident shortage of supplies — especially of grains — and this heavy emigration of 1630, Gov. Winthrop soon after his arrival chartered<sup>5</sup> the “Lyon”, Capt. Peirce master, which had lately arrived<sup>2</sup> from England with eighty passengers, to have it make a hurried trip to Ireland for provisions and scorbutics. Peirce left the colony early in July, 1630, and started back from Bristol, England on December 1, 1630, with two hundred tons of goods and about twenty passengers, including on that stormy winter passage<sup>2</sup> our JOHN<sup>1</sup> PERKINS and his wife JUDITH with their five children. Those provisions saved many a colonist from suffering, perhaps even from starvation.

As has been shown, the formation of the earliest church of Dorchester was accomplished under their two ministers on their last day in England, at Plymouth and the membership of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD, and doubtless of his wife ELIZABETH, would have been contained in their minutes, and, as will be shown, those records were taken to Windsor and later were lost. On the basis of his prior church membership, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> requested admission<sup>3</sup> as freeman of the Bay Colony on October 19, 1630, and took the oath of a freeman<sup>1,3</sup> on May 18, 1631.

Both Salem and Dorchester claim to possess the earliest New England town records<sup>10</sup> — which point need not be passed upon here. Suffice it to say that the first two leaves of the extant Dorchester book are missing and one book of their records was burned in 1657 so that the earliest\* preserved record<sup>10</sup> of Dorchester affairs pertains to January 16, 1632–3. Realizing doubtless that they were helping to establish a new manner of life and of civic organization, they appear to have weighed carefully their every move. On April 3, 1633, they very logically decided<sup>9</sup> that “It is agreed that a doble rayle [fence] with morteses in the posts, of 10 foote distance one from the other, shall be set up in the marish . . . by the owners of the Cowes vnder named, p’portionally. 20 foote to every cowe”,<sup>10</sup> and both THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD and MATTHEW<sup>1</sup> GRANT had two cows while GEORGE<sup>1</sup> HULL owned three. This fencing was to be completed by May 7, with a penalty of five shillings for each cow whose owner was neglectful.

During the year<sup>10,12</sup> 1633 Dorchester had elected twelve townsmen, later called selectmen, and of this first board,<sup>9,11</sup> THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD and GEORGE<sup>1</sup> HULL were members. This was a step forward in town government and set the pattern which was “followed the next year by other settlements, and led to the law of the General Court, passed in 1636, regulating town governments, which has continued in full force to the present day.”<sup>5,11</sup>

On October 8, 1633, a meeting of the whole town occurred at which the following agreement was voted:<sup>9</sup>

“. . . it is ordered that for the generall good and well ordering of the affayres of the Plantation their shall be every Mooneday before the Court by eight of the Clocke in the

\*A prior, but undated item therein records<sup>11</sup> that our JOHN<sup>1</sup> “GOYTE” (COITE) and two others were each to have a quantity of Dorchester marsh adjoining their neck of land. GOYTE soon removed to Essex County.

morning, and p<sup>e</sup>sently upon the beating of the drum, a generall meeting . . . att the meeteing house, there to settle (and sett downe) such orders as may tend to the generall good as aforesayd; and every man to be bound thereby without gaynesaying or resistance . . .”

This was signed by seven of the selectmen, including THOMAS<sup>t</sup> FORD.<sup>9,11</sup>

On January 6, 1633-4, it was ordered that there should be a fort made upon the Rock, . . . and that the charge thereof should be met by a doubling of the plantation tax which was to be paid to THOMAS<sup>t</sup> FORD and ROGER<sup>t</sup> CLAPP “at the house of the said THOMMAS FORD before the first day of February next” which gave the settlers but three weeks in which to pay.<sup>9</sup> On March 4, 1633-4, THOMAS<sup>t</sup> and three others were appointed to “sett out the bounds betwixte Boston & Rocksbury, w<sup>ch</sup> is nowe in difference betwixte them.”<sup>21</sup>

Other casual forms of civic service were rendered by FORD, during his six year residence in Dorchester, such as viewing fences, surveying land and caring for three of the bulls of the town herd.<sup>9</sup>

The location\* of the Dorchester home lot of THOMAS<sup>t</sup> adjoined the “great lots,” and some holdings of his are shown to have been<sup>9,11</sup> two acres “in Mr. Ludlows Neck” (see map, p. 275) which he acquired in April, 1635, and six acres of fresh meadow nearest the town which was granted him in December, 1635, while WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> SUMNER was given three acres of fresh marsh next to Goodman FORD the following February.<sup>9,11</sup> The latest acquisition of land in Dorchester was recorded to FORD on July 5, 1636, and his removal from the town is implied in a record<sup>9</sup> of January 16, 1636-7 when Mr. Holland was to have land on Ludlow’s Neck (see map, p. 275) formerly granted to FORD by “payeing THOMAS FORD the charges he hath beene at in ditching.”

For a goodly number of the early settlers of Dorchester, hearing of the rich lands to be settled along the Connecticut River, had for some time desired permission to remove there, and by the summer of 1635 had acquired the privilege to go south and look the land over. On their arrival at the cleared land along the river they found a group of Plymouth people\*\* already settled and other groups (of Dutch from New Amsterdam and of English from the mother country) on the point of taking possession<sup>7</sup> of the best of the meadow land. So some of the Dorchester men, including MATTHEW<sup>t</sup> GRANT, were left on the ground to maintain their claim while other members of their party hurriedly retraced their steps and assembled their families to the number of about sixty men, women and children and started through the unbroken wilderness on October 15 with their stock driven before them. The trip consumed fourteen days<sup>10</sup> and following it trouble of every sort assailed them, for they arrived too late to raise any crops, and construction of caves on the river bank or huts to protect them from the weather consumed much time. Winter came on early and was very severe; vessels on which they had shipped supplies were lost at sea and the suffering of those who wintered there, was intense, while some made their way back to the Massachusetts settlements during

\*A transfer<sup>9</sup> in 1638 describes the location thus: “. . . a p<sup>e</sup>cell of land being a hoame lott that was THOMAS FFORDS next adjoyneing the ends of the great lotts one [on] the one side and on the necke which was sometimes M<sup>r</sup> Ludlows Necke one [on] the other side beine the first lot one [on] that necke from the footes of the great lotts and also that medow of the breadth of the sayde lot which runs towards the New ditch towards the sea. . . .”<sup>9</sup>

\*\*Sharp criticism has been voiced against the aggressive manner in which the Dorchester men claimed and took over a placing on Connecticut River, against all comers (see Dawes-Gates, II, 372-6).

the winter. A considerable number of the Dorchester men, including THOMAS' FORD very wisely waited until the summer of 1636 to change their location. As has been stated, the latest date recording him in Dorchester was July 5, 1636, and he probably removed soon after, though the first record of FORD in Windsor<sup>13</sup> (now Connecticut) is of 1637.

In this new home THOMAS' acquired a very extensive amount of real estate — both by outright purchase and by grant from the General Court or from the town, in which case the extent of land acquired would be commensurate with the amount of estate<sup>22</sup> he had to expend in Windsor.

The early home of THOMAS' FORD while in Windsor was presumably, for a time at least, on the house lot granted to him in 1637. This may be the lot he returned to the town in 1642. He purchased the house and land<sup>22</sup> of Thomas Thornton in 1640 and may have lived there for a time. He acquired hundreds of acres by grant on the east side of the Connecticut River as well as extensive lands to the north of Windsor settlement, which by latter day terms might be described as the north one-third of Windsor, the south part of Suffield and all of the present village of Windsor Locks<sup>22</sup> as well as fifty acres in Massaco<sup>25</sup> (now Simsbury) which lay on both sides of the Farmington River<sup>24</sup> above the falls.

Something of the scope of FORD's business interests in Windsor is suggested<sup>27</sup> by the fact that GEORGE' HULL as early as February, 1639-40 "moved the Court in behalf of THOMAS FORD of Windsor, that in regard [that] the workmen are much taken up and employed in making a bridge and a meetinghouse with them, and his [FORD's] work hindered of impaling [fencing] in the ground which was granted him by the Court for a hog-park, that there may be granted him a year longer time for the fencing it in; which was upon the reasons aforesaid, condescended to."<sup>27,32</sup> Presumably this applied to FORD's own employees.

As for civil service performed by THOMAS' FORD during his two periods of residence at Windsor (vide infra) he was chosen deputy\* to represent the town in General Court<sup>26,40</sup> during 1637-40, both inclusive, in 1644, and<sup>27</sup> in 1654; he served on at least fourteen juries between 1641 and 1649 and on\*\* grand juries<sup>26</sup> in 1643 and 1662. In April, 1638, he and four other deputies<sup>27</sup> were "fined 1s. a peece for failing [prompt attendance] att the hower appointed which [is] 7 of the Clocke." In February, 1640-1, the General Court, with the aim of cooperation between the three river settlements, Windsor, Hartford and Wethersfield, which then bordered one against the other, appointed a committee of six including THOMAS' FORD "to take into their serious consideration how the grownd belonging to the seuerall Plantations may be best imp'ued, so as to sute ech others conuenience, whereby their Corne may be p'serued and their Cattle kepte w<sup>th</sup> lest chardge of fencing or herding, as may most conduce to the comon good. . . ."<sup>27</sup>

In March, 1642-3, THOMAS' was assisting widow Hutchinson,<sup>27</sup> probably as her attorney, in a law suit over the settlement of the estate of her deceased husband, of which she was executrix. The matter came up for hearing on April 6, 1643, but it is recorded that since FORD "could not receive instruction, y<sup>e</sup> tryall is deferd till next Court"<sup>27</sup> and the reason for this delay was undoubtedly the final illness

\*In 1640 the deputies to the Bay Court and perhaps also to Connecticut Court were paid two shillings six pence per day during attendance.<sup>35</sup> That year deputy THOMAS' FORD was one of a committee of five to build a county jail.<sup>39,52</sup>

\*\*It was the habit to choose grand jurymen from among the most conservative, dependable and valuable of the citizens.<sup>35</sup>

of his wife ELIZABETH who either died or was buried at Windsor on April 18, 1643. A temporary interruption of the life of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> in Windsor evidently occurred shortly after the death of his wife ELIZABETH for on November 20, 1644, he was married<sup>31</sup> at Hartford to Ann (—) Scott widow of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Scott of that place. In June, 1644, the General Court had voted that each of the three River towns should arrange<sup>26</sup> that some responsible inhabitant should "keepe an Ordinary" as accommodation for strangers passing through and THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, a member of the Court, with his new wife Ann established<sup>39</sup> such service in the home\* earlier belonging to her husband Scott which was located on the southwest corner of State and Front Streets.<sup>39</sup> The diary of John<sup>2</sup> Winthrop (Gov. John<sup>1</sup>) stated that on a journey\*\* through Connecticut he "reached the inn of THOMAS FORD at Hartford" about nine o'clock in the evening of November 17, 1645, and spent the next day there, and FORD was still keeping this inn<sup>39</sup> in 1648 though he also retained his large land holdings at Windsor, to which place he presently returned, probably<sup>39</sup> about 1652.

Thus the summary of known activities of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> in Hartford is covered by his marriage in 1644; his action as innkeeper from 1644 onward; an appointment on a committee of four, by the General Court, and sometime prior to June, 1646, to set a fair price on the building of two thousand and twenty-four rods of fence "or to choose a fifthe man if they disagreed, w<sup>ch</sup> hath been long neglected by the said parties . . ." and they were then ordered to perform this task within two months<sup>27</sup> or forfeit £100. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> was sued by Magistrate William Whiting in 1646-7 for slander and was fined more than £4 and costs of court.<sup>27</sup> He acted as an arbitrator<sup>27</sup> in 1649 and it is stated<sup>39</sup> that the Scott home used as the inn was sold in 1652 to Thomas Cadwell so that probably establishes the approximate time of the removal of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> from Hartford.

There is a possibility that he lived for a short time (about 1652-3) in the wilderness on the land granted to him at Massaco, for it is recorded<sup>24,25</sup> that by or before September, 1653, forty-four acres of that grant "hath bine improved by him [THOMAS<sup>1</sup>] by plowing and mowing. . . ." It has been stated,<sup>24</sup> however, and may be true, that Aaron<sup>1</sup> Cooke, stepson<sup>45</sup> of THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, was the first actual resident of that land which later became Simsbury and which FORD deeded<sup>24</sup> to Cooke in 1670. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> had certainly returned to Windsor by February, 1654-5, when he was chosen constable for the ensuing year.<sup>27</sup> In 1656 he purchased<sup>22</sup> the Hosford place and made his home thereon as long as he remained in Windsor; in 1658-9 bought the Arthur Williams house and lot and acquired other real estate beside,<sup>22</sup> and sold various properties. In May, 1663, he forfeited a considerable tract "to the country by mortgage."<sup>25,32</sup> In that case he was granted a £30 equity that same year and he asked the Court for £6 additional but was refused.<sup>25</sup> In 1659-60 THOMAS<sup>1</sup> paid six shillings for his seat in Windsor church and in 1660 his wife Ann joined that organization.<sup>14</sup>

A certain series of events shows that in 1650 THOMAS<sup>1</sup> had (1) stood god-father<sup>22</sup> for his granddaughter<sup>27</sup> Experience<sup>2</sup> Strong; (2) in 1654 he had given bond to the

\*The Scott residence is said to have consisted of a hall, parlor, several chambers, garret, cellar and leanto.<sup>39</sup>

\*\*John<sup>2</sup> Winthrop had been traveling through all of New England in and before 1645 investigating the best location for the establishment of "yorn [iron] Works" and finally decided in favor of Braintree. Another early Iron Works was established at Lynn<sup>38,47</sup> by the same company about the same time.

court for the appearance at the next session,<sup>22</sup> of his neighbor, and friend Walter Fyler; (3) in 1668 in a very business-like way he gave a conditional bond for a deed of his homestead, the Hosford place, after the death of himself and wife, to Zerubbabel<sup>2</sup> Fyler (Walter<sup>1</sup>) in case Fyler should marry Experience, FORD's said granddaughter;<sup>22</sup> (4) in 1669 they were married<sup>23</sup> and (5) on August 23, 1672, without waiting for death, he and his wife, then resident in Northampton, executed a deed of that property to these young people.<sup>27</sup>

It has often been stated that THOMAS<sup>1</sup> left Windsor, Connecticut for Northampton about 1659 when his son-in-law John<sup>1</sup> Strong did so, and that belief was probably actuated by the fact that FORD is said<sup>30</sup> to have exchanged a house and lot in Windsor for similar property belonging to Edward Elmore of Northampton on December 10, 1660, but the matter of early removal is reasonably disproved by the fact that FORD who frequently took inventories<sup>29</sup> and helped to settle estates of Windsor people, performed such services in 1667 for the estate of Nicholas Denslow, in 1669 for widow Elizabeth Denslow and in April of 1670 took an inventory of the estate of his pastor, the Rev. John Warham, with whom he crossed the ocean.<sup>29</sup> Moreover, in John Winthrop's Medical Journal he was referred to<sup>25</sup> as "Old THOMAS FORD of Windsor" in 1668 and he was listed as one of the "freemen<sup>25</sup> of Windsor" in October, 1669.

So the removal of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and his second wife to Northampton was undoubtedly after April, 1670, and was admittedly before August of 1672 when they deeded the Hosford (Windsor) place, as above,<sup>22,27</sup> to Zerubbabel<sup>2</sup> Fyler and his wife. No evidence is seen of any public activity on the part of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> from this time on. His wife Ann died at Northampton\* on May 5, 1675, and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> himself followed her<sup>30</sup> on November 28, 1676. He left no will but the inventory of his estate taken January 4, 1676-7 showed property to the value of over £369 and the administrators<sup>3</sup> appointed were his son-in-law John<sup>1</sup> Strong, his grandson Preserved<sup>2</sup> Clapp and his daughter Hepzibah<sup>2</sup>, now "good wife Marsh." After the death of the last named woman, the two other administrators and a son of the deceased Hepsibah<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>3</sup> Lyman, deeded<sup>41</sup> land in Windsor on April 29, 1685, which had been granted to THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD during his life.

It is repeatedly asserted<sup>16,30</sup> that both THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and his step-son<sup>41,42,45</sup> Aaron<sup>1</sup> Cooke were loyal friends to Goffe and Whalley the regicides and FORD himself is called "a man of energy and influence" who "made his impress on posterity through 'three or four daughters' of excellent worth."<sup>16</sup>

The children\*\* of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH (CHARDE) FORD all born in co. Dorset, England, were:<sup>1,16,23,41,42,43,44</sup>

\*Some publications<sup>16</sup> claim that THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and his second wife died at Northfield while other statements cause them to reside in their later life at Hadley<sup>16,30</sup> but it is believed that these statements are both erroneous.

\*\*THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD was by Col. Banks assigned<sup>2</sup> a daughter Mary who is supposed to have emigrated<sup>2</sup> with him. The only elaboration found on her is the natural deduction<sup>52</sup> that she was "born in England" but no documentary evidence justifies her inclusion and neither a Mary nor any heirs of hers<sup>3</sup> figure in the settlement of the estate of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD.

Another theory which is disproved by indirection is that THOMAS<sup>1</sup> had, by his second wife Ann (—) Scott, a daughter<sup>53</sup> Ann Ford, but the above argument of non-inclusion among the heirs of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> pertains to her also, and is amply verified<sup>54</sup> by the published statement by Mr. J. G. Bartlett that her "parentage has not been determined."<sup>54</sup> This Ann Ford was probably an emigrant. She married<sup>54</sup> first at Windsor on March 12, 1676-7, Thomas<sup>2</sup> Newberry (Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>) who died April 30, 1688, and married secondly on January 16, 1689-90 at Springfield as his third wife Joseph Leonard and died there on January 6, 1690-1.<sup>54</sup>

- I. JOANE<sup>2</sup>, *hap.*\* June 8, 1617, at Bridport; d. at Boston on June 29, 1695, aged 78 and is said<sup>18</sup> to have been buried near her husband in King's Chapel Burial Ground; m. Nov. 6, 1633, at Dorchester ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP (see Clapp, p. 157).<sup>4,16,18</sup>
- II. Abigail<sup>2</sup>, *hap.* Oct. 8, 1619, at Bridport; d. at Northampton July 6, 1688, ae. 80; m. abt. 1636 as his second wife Elder John<sup>1</sup> Strong.<sup>27</sup>
- III. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, *hap.* Sept. 21, 1623, at Dorchester; bur. there<sup>1</sup> Oct. 6, 1623.
- IV. Hepzibah<sup>2</sup>, *hap.* May 15, 1625, at Dorchester;<sup>1</sup> d. at Northampton Apr. 11, 1683; m. 1st, at Windsor abt. 1641 Richard<sup>2</sup> Lyman (Richard<sup>1</sup> of Hartford); m. 2nd at Northampton<sup>52</sup> Oct. 7, 1664, as his second wife John<sup>1</sup> Marsh of Hadley. The will of Hepzibah<sup>2</sup> made in 1677 and probated at Northampton in March, 1684, named five Lyman children and her one daughter by Marsh.<sup>52</sup>
- V. Hannah<sup>2</sup>, *hap.* Feb. 1, 1628-9, at Dorchester;<sup>1</sup> bur. there Mar. 28, 1629.

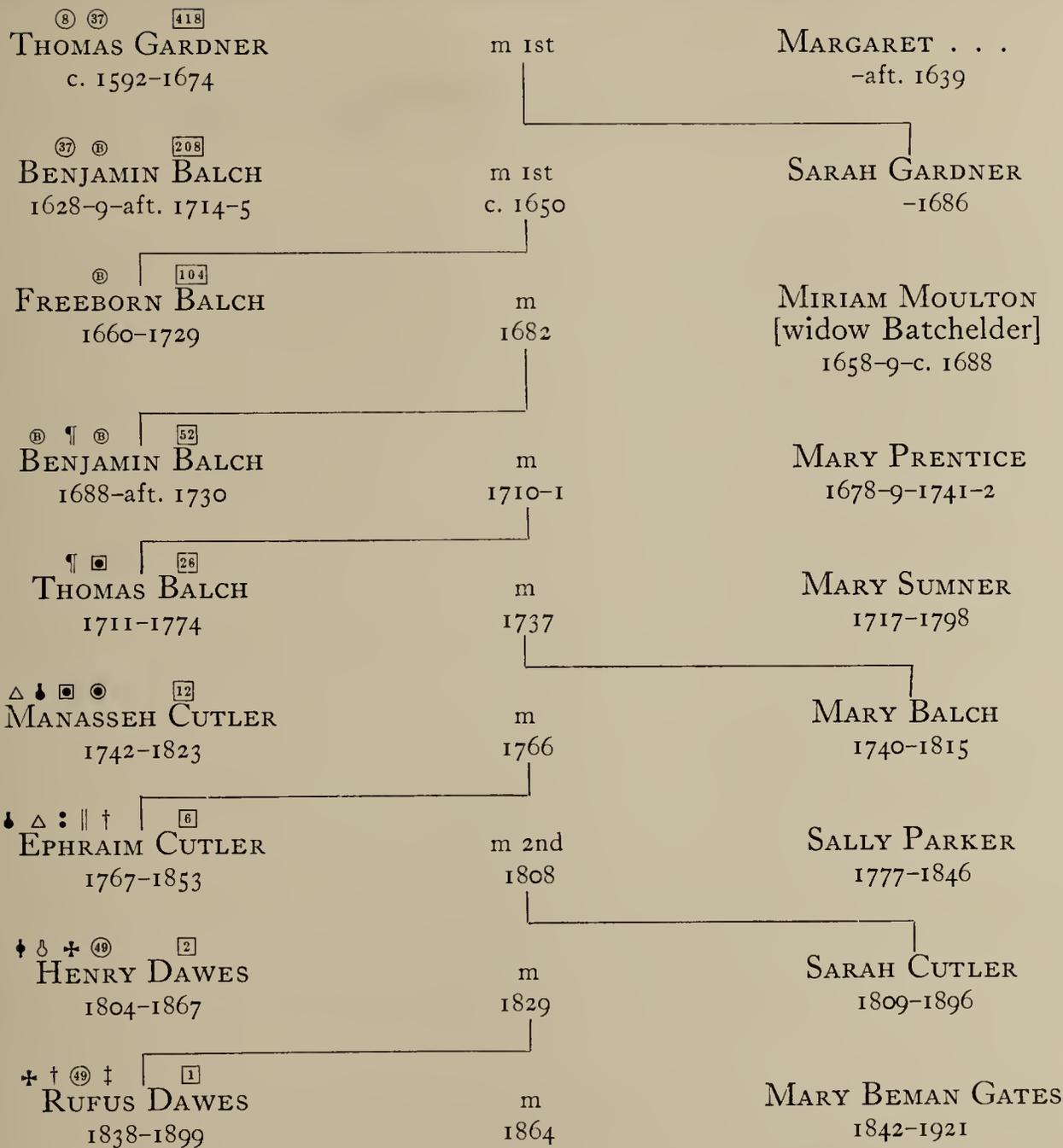
\*The Medical Journal of Dr. John Winthrop, page 887, carries a notation<sup>15</sup> as of 1668 relative to "JOANE, [aged] 51 yrs., wife of Capt. CLAP of Dorchester, dau. of Old THOMAS FORD of Windsor."

REFERENCES

1. Articles by Mr. C. A. Torrey in the *American Genealogist*, Jan., 1935, XI, 179-80; July, 1939, XVI, 41-3; see also references 42, 43 and 44.
2. *Planters of the Commonwealth*, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 65, 85-90, 92-3; *The Winthrop Fleet of 1630*, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 36, 102-3.
3. *Pope's Pioneers of Mass.*, 1900, p. 172; C. E. Banks' *Topographical Dictionary of English Emigrants 1620-50*, pub. by E. E. Brownell, 1937, p. 32; *Savage*, I, 390; II, 183.
4. *Collections of the Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society*, 1844, being "Memoirs of ROGER CLAP," I, iv, 17-20, 39-41, 54; *Clapp Family in America*, E. Clapp, 1876, pp. 3-4.
5. *History of Dorchester*, *Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society*, 1859, pp. 14-5, 17-22, 27, 32-3, 42, 51, 98.
6. "John White . . . the Founder of Massachusetts," *Frances Rose-Troup*, 1930, pp. 198-200.
7. *Dawes-Gates Ancestral Lines*, M. W. Ferris, 1931, II, 371-9, 453-4, 659-60.
8. *Original Narratives of Early American History*, VII, being *John Winthrop's Journal*, I, 50; *History of Fairfield, Conn.*, E. H. Schenck, 1889, I, 303-4.
9. *Boston Record Commissioner's Report*, IV, I, 3, 5-6, 10-12, 14-17, 19, 22, 35.
10. *Chronological and Topographical Account of Dorchester*, Rev. T. M. Harris, 1804, pp. 4-6, 8-10.
11. *Early Records of the Town of Dorchester*, W. B. Trask, 1867, pp. 3-8, 11, 13, 17, 19-20, 22, 24, 26, 28, 30.
12. *Collections of the Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society*, II, 1846, being *Annals of Dorchester*, J. Blake, 1750, pp. 7-12.
13. *History of Windsor, Conn.*, H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 24-39, 45-55, 156, 871-89.
14. *Ibid.*, I, 21, 87, 93, 124, 150, 153-6, 160-1, 167-8, 178, 465, 478, 493-4, 496, 500, 548-9, 873, 878; II, 1892, 270-1.
15. *American Genealogist*, D. L. Jacobus, 1932-3, IX, 60.
16. *Savage's Dictionary*, II, 183; *Pope's Pioneers*, p. 172; "My Ancestors," *Lyman May Paine*, 1914, p. 131; *Fulton-Hayden-Warner in America*, C. E. Leonard, 1923, pp. 291-2, 523; *Ancestry of K. C. Paul*, E. J. Paul, 1914, p. 126; *Powers-Banks Ancestry*, W. H. Powers, 1921, pp. 82-3; *The Strongs of Strongville, Ohio*, Albert Strong, 1931, p. 17; *Paine Ancestry*, S. C. Paine, ed. by C. H. Pope, 1912, pp. 122-3.
17. *Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown*, T. B. Wyman, 1879, II, 990.
18. *Memorials of the Dead in Boston containing . . . Inscriptions . . . in the King's Chapel Burial Ground*, T. Bridgman, 1853, pp. 64, 244.
19. *Schenck's History of Fairfield*, I, 303-4.
20. *Dawes-Gates Ancestral Lines*, 1931, II, 223-5, 823-4; *History of Salem*, S. Perley, 1924, I, 84 et seq.
21. *Records of Massachusetts Bay*, I, 113, 366.
22. *History of Hartford County, Conn.*, J. H. Trumbull, 1886, II, 547, 550, 553, 561-2; *Stiles' History of Windsor*, 1891, I, 87, 93, 124, 150, 153-6, 161, 167-8, 178, 493-4, 496, 549, 873, 878.
23. *Ibid.*, II, 1892, 270-1, 276.
24. *A Record and Documentary History of Simsbury, Conn.*, L. I. Barber, 1931, pp. 29-30.
25. *Colonial Records of Connecticut*, I, 247, 405, 409; II, 519.
26. *Ibid.*, I, 13, 17, 27, 46, 70, 88, 92-3, 103-4, 109, 129, 136, 140, 147-8, 158, 172, 180, 257, 379.
27. *Ibid.*, I, 17, 42, 60, 76, 81-3, 87-9, 141, 143, 184, 256.
28. *Stiles' Windsor*, 1892, II, 302; *Grant Family*, A. H. Grant, 1898, pp. 1-2; *History of Dorchester*, pp. 38, 55.
29. *Manwaring's Connecticut Probates*, I, 29, 112, 125, 167, 191-2, 247.
30. *Descendants of Elder John Strong . . .*, B. W. Dwight, 1871, I, 17-9.
31. *Historical Catalogue of the First Church at Hartford, Conn.*, 1885, p. 235.
32. *Paine Ancestry*, S. C. Paine, p. 123; "My Ancestors", p. 131; *Powers-Banks*, p. 83; *The Strongs of Strongville, Ohio*, p. 17; *Savage's Dictionary*, II, 183; *Pope's Pioneers*, p. 172; *Fulton-Hayden-Warner in America*, 291-2, 523; *Ancestry of K. C. Paul*, p. 126.
33. *History of a Grammar School (Roxbury)*, C. K. Dillaway, 1860, p. 197.
34. *Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony*, I, 54-5, 137.
35. *History of Charlestown*, R. Frothingham, 1845, p. 101.
36. *The Journal of American Folklore*, VI, 101, article by Alice Morse Earle.
37. *New England Register* VI, 123; LXXVI, under "Memoirs," p. xxxv; *Les Trois Rois*, R. P. Nevin, 1888, p. 115; *History of Middleboro*, T. Weston, 1906, p. 31; *History of Fayette Co., Pa.*, Franklin Ellis, p. 567.
38. *Publications of the Ipswich Historical Society*, 1899, VII, 33-5; 1902, XII, 28.

39. Colonial History of Hartford, Conn., Rev. W. D. Love, 1914, pp. 61, 72, 216, 233, 287; Massachusetts Historical Society Proceedings, Ser. 2, VIII, 8.
40. List of Officials Civil, Military and Ecclesiastical of Connecticut Colony . . . , D. L. Jacobus, 1935, p. 19.
41. Research by Mr. A. L. Holman, now deceased; Hampshire County Deed Book, B-163, at Springfield.
42. Research by H. W. Brainard and Col. C. E. Banks establishing Bridport, England, records on FORD for Mr. S. M. Fox of Manhattan, Kan. and communicated by him (with certain pertinent data furnished by Clement E. Cooke of . . . . . Vt.) to Mr. A. L. Holman in 1928.
43. Mr. S. M. Fox of Manhattan, Kan. furnished the Bridport (Eng.) rector's records on THOMAS' FORD to the Boston Transcript of February 14, 1923 (see under ref. 16 the "Fulton-Hayden-Warner" and "The Strongs of Strongsville").
44. Report of the Bridport rector of records on THOMAS' FORD furnished by H. B. Alexander to the "Hartford Times" of August 16, 1909.
45. Records of the First Church at Dorchester, G. H. Ellis, 1891, pp. iii-vi, 5; History of Dorchester, p. 148; Pope's Pioneers, p. 114; Savage, I, 445, II, 39; Stiles' Windsor, I, 161, 801; II, 160-1.
46. History of Massachusetts, Thomas Hutchinson, I, 455; Early Settlers of Rowley, G. B. Blodgette, 1933, p. 340.
47. History of Old Braintree and Quincy . . . , W. S. Pattee, 1878, pp. 450-7, 470-1; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 5, VIII, 36-7.
48. Life and Letters of John Winthrop, R. C. Winthrop, 1864, I, 389.
49. Colonial Women of Affairs, E. A. Dexter, 1924, pp. 13-4, 18.
50. The Reade [Family] Record, pub. by the Reade Society . . . 1914, issue No. 7, p. 9.
51. . . . Dewey Family History, L. M., W. T. and O. C. Dewey, 1898, p. 539.
52. Moore and Allied Families . . . L. E. and A. L. de Forest, 1938, pp. 248-61, 348-55, especially 260.
53. Stiles' Windsor, II, 518.
54. Newberry Genealogy . . . J. G. Bartlett, 1914, p. 55.
55. History of Charlestown, R. Frothingham, 1845, pp. 23-4, 41; . . . History of Charlestown, J. F. Hunnewell, 1888, pp. 2, 110, 113-5, 191.

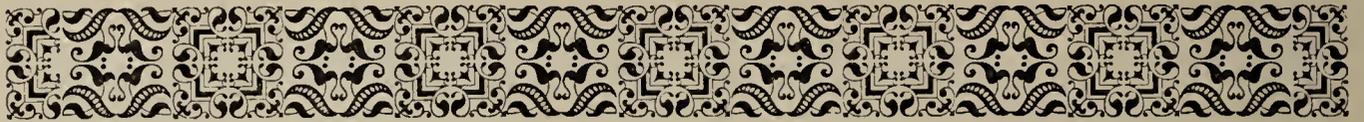
# GARDNER of Cape Ann



- (8) Cape Ann
- (37) Salem
- (B) Beverly
- ¶ Charlestown
- Dedham
- △ Killingly, Conn.

- ♠ Edgartown
- Hamilton
- ⋮ Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♠ Morgan Co., O.
- † Malta, O.
- (49) Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## GARDNER\* of Cape Ann

THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER, born about 1592, is said<sup>1</sup> to have emigrated\*\* in late 1623-4 or early 1624, sailing from Weymouth, England with an appointment from the English "Dorchester Company," of which the Rev. John White was leader, to act as overseer† of planting operations at Cape Ann while some of the members of that group carried on fishing.<sup>15</sup> He acted as head of the plantation for a year, having thirteen men under him, but the place was so poorly chosen for agricultural purposes, being rocky and unfertile, that failure was certain before they began and even the fishing under direction of John Tilly was not a success that year. The English Company, in discouragement, sent word to ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT then at Nantasket asking him to take over the management of the plantation, both fishing and planting, which he did (Dawes-Gates, II, 221) but he also found success at that location an impossibility and the Cape Ann experiment was given up. CONANT searched out a locality of fertile soil on the mainland and advised the English Company to authorize a similar effort at Naumkeag (see map, p. 73). This plan was carried out in 1626 and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER and his family were among the few who made this removal with CONANT as did also our JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH and JOHN<sup>1</sup> WOODBURY. The name of the place was presently changed to Salem and in time THOMAS<sup>1</sup> received several tracts of land including one hundred acre farm located at or near what is now Peabody.<sup>4</sup> THOMAS<sup>1</sup> became a freeman<sup>17</sup> on May 17, 1637, and was a representative to the General Court that year.<sup>18</sup> His church membership had of course preceded 1637 and his acquirement of freeman-ship; and a ‡MARGARET who was undoubtedly his wife joined Salem Church in 1639. As early as May, 1639, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> received the grant of "a banke of vpland nere the strongwatter brook to his marsh paying 5<sup>s</sup> per acre. . . ."<sup>11</sup> The location of this in latter day terms places it at the junction of Grove and Main Streets in

\*It is an odd fact that we have two ancestors bearing the name of "THOMAS GARDNER," one of Essex County whose blood comes to us through the Cutlers and the other of Roxbury whose descent blends into the Dawes family.

\*\*It is stated<sup>2</sup> that he and his wife and three sons probably came in the "Zouch Phenix" with JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH, Peter Palfrey, JOHN<sup>1</sup> WOODBURY et al who settled at Cape Ann.

†There are those who laboriously claim for THOMAS<sup>1</sup> the honor of being the first "governor" of Massachusetts, but that is stretching the truth. He was admittedly the first man given official authority over a small portion of what later became Massachusetts Bay Colony. He served thus for one year, without satisfaction either to himself or his sponsors. His successor ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT had no better success and they were both honorable conscientious men.

The claim has also been made that THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER was related to the Rev. John White of Dorchester who was so active in planning the colonization at Cape Ann, as well as later similar efforts, but no dependable evidence<sup>13</sup> substantiates a relationship between them, though the reverend gentleman did have a sister who married a Thomas Gardner of England.<sup>13</sup> There are publications<sup>10</sup> which state that THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER (c1592-1674) was the second generation in New England, that an older man of the name came to Cape Ann in 1624 and died<sup>10</sup> in 1635 but †diligent search by various students has shown no justification of such a theory.

‡MARGARET, first wife of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER, has persistently been called *Fryer* or *Frier* but no evidence to justify the statement has yet been seen nor is the date of her death recorded. His second wife was widow Damaris (—) Shattuck who died<sup>20</sup> as wife of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> at Salem on November 28, 1674.

Peabody and here the GARDNERS were buried for several generations. In 1677 the statement was made in court that it "was always called Mr. GARDINER's Hill for this thirty years." But when Grove Street was laid out and the hill cut down such stones as were still standing were removed to Harmony Grove Cemetery and placed in a triangular lot just inside of the Peabody gate.<sup>1</sup>

In March, 1672, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> had leased<sup>1,22</sup> a house and about thirty acres of land to one John Pudney for a seven year period at an annual rental of £11 and two barrels of cidar. GARDNER was to furnish the casks for the cidar. Of the £11 rental, £4 were to be paid and delivered in wood at eight shillings per cord; forty shillings thereof were to be paid in butter and cheese, of which there was to be one firkin of butter; a second forty shilling portion was to be paid in good pork and the remainder of the £11 was to be paid in corn at price current.<sup>1</sup> After the death of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> in 1674, Pudney was said to have run behind with his rent and in 1677 George<sup>2</sup> and Samuel<sup>2</sup> Gardner, the executors of their father's estate, brought suit against him and attached some of Pudney's goods but he rendered an account showing over £19 paid in produce and the jury cleared him.<sup>22</sup> In the meantime a child of Pudney's had died and he took down the fence and dug a grave for it on GARDNER's Hill. Samuel<sup>2</sup> Gardner rebuilt the fence, filled up the grave and forbade the burial there. Pudney defied him by re-digging the grave and completing the burial. The result was several lawsuits in April, 1677, in June, 1677, and a third one in November of that year. Much of testimony was given but the main point of interest at this late date seems to be that William Trask, one of the "Old Planters," testified that "he never heard that old Mr. GARDINER hindered any from burying their dead there, but he [GARDNER] said at several funerals 'friends & neighbours doe nott buerey your dead by such a young tree for I Doe desire to be burried there my selfe'" and added that THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER had been buried by that young tree.<sup>22</sup>

Wife MARGARET died at an unknown date and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> married secondly widow Damaris (—) Shattuck. With the advent of this second wife into the GARDNER family, a certain sort of controversy entered, for she and her children had become either active Quakers or at least favorable to that sect and were frequently under criticism for failure to attend the approved religious services, or were before the court and fined for being present at Quaker gatherings. There is no evidence that THOMAS<sup>1</sup> was personally concerned in this tendency but it could not have added peace to his home life to have his wife and one or two of his own sons concerned. For Richard<sup>2</sup> Gardner who had married\* Sarah<sup>2</sup> Shattuck came into disfavor on this score and by 1668 removed with his family<sup>4</sup> to Nantucket; while by 1672-3 his brother John<sup>2</sup> and family followed him there. The permanent removal of George<sup>2</sup> Gardner to Hartford, Connecticut and the death of Joseph<sup>2</sup> in King Philip's War left only Samuel<sup>2</sup> to carry on the Gardner name in Essex County.

Scattered items of information<sup>21</sup> about THOMAS<sup>1</sup> show that in 1660-1 he employed Hugh<sup>1</sup> Jones who referred to THOMAS<sup>1</sup> as his "master." After the death of Joshua<sup>2</sup> Conant in England THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, his father-in-law, was appointed administrator of the estate. In April, 1674, he sold land in the North Neck to Hugh Jones.<sup>21</sup>

\*The Gardner sons must have been well thought of, for there is a claim<sup>19</sup> that two of them married step-sisters, daughters of their stepmother Damaris (—) Shattuck; Richard<sup>2</sup> Gardner did so as stated above but no proof has yet been seen that his brother George<sup>2</sup> Gardner married a Hannah Shattuck. The statement has also been made<sup>11</sup> that two of the sons of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER married daughters of Emanuel<sup>1</sup> Downing, as Joseph<sup>2</sup> Gardner definitely did; the second claim<sup>11</sup> referred to Samuel<sup>2</sup> Gardner and a *presumed* Mary<sup>2</sup> Downing but that man's wife is shown<sup>1</sup> to have been a Mary White.

The death of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> on December 29, 1674, just one month after that of his wife Damaris, suggests the probability of an epidemic of some sort. The will<sup>5</sup> of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER dated as early as December 7, 1668, was not proved until March 29, 1675. The inventory disclosed an estate of over £274 with but £6 indebtedness. The document provided for his second wife Damaris, who was then living, for his six sons Thomas<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, and Joseph<sup>2</sup>, gave £15 apiece to his daughters SARAH BALCH and Seeth Grafton and £5 apiece to the two daughters of his deceased daughter Miriam Hill.<sup>5</sup>

The children of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and probably<sup>4</sup> MARGARET (*Fryer?*) GARDNER, several of whom were born in England but at unknown dates, were<sup>1,3,4</sup>

- I. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, \*d. at Salem<sup>1</sup> 1682; m. 1st Hannah (—); m. 2nd Elizabeth Horne.
- II. \*\*George<sup>2</sup>, removed<sup>4</sup> to Hartford, Conn. in 1673; d. Aug. 20, 1679; m. 1st Mrs. Ruth (—) Turner; m. 2nd Mrs. Elizabeth (Allen) Stone.<sup>1</sup>
- III. Richard<sup>2</sup>, removed 1668 to Nantucket;<sup>4</sup> d. there Mar. 23, 1686, or 1688; m. abt. 1652 at Salem, Sarah<sup>2</sup> Shattuck, daughter of widow Damaris<sup>1</sup> Shattuck who had become the second wife of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER.<sup>1</sup>
- IV. John<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1624; removed<sup>4</sup> 1672 to Nantucket; d. there<sup>6</sup> July 6, 1706, ae. 82; m. abt. 1650-2 Priscilla<sup>2</sup> Grafton †(Joseph<sup>1</sup>).<sup>7</sup>
- V. \*\*Samuel<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1627; d.<sup>3</sup> Oct. 1689; m. 1st Mary White daughter of John and Elizabeth; m. 2nd Aug. 2, 1680, Elizabeth (—) Paine.
- VI. Joseph<sup>2</sup>, killed in the Swamp Fight, Dec. 19, 1675; m. Ann<sup>2</sup> Downing† (Emanuel<sup>1</sup>) who m. 2nd Gov. Simon Bradstreet.
- VII. SARAH<sup>2</sup>, d. at Beverly Apr. 5, 1686; m. abt. 1650 as his first wife, BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> BALCH (see Balch, p. 72).
- VIII. Miriam<sup>2</sup>, d. by 1664; m. as his first wife by 1657 John<sup>1</sup> Hill of Salem.
- IX. Seeth<sup>2</sup>, bap. Dec. 25, 1636; d. Apr. 17, 1707; m. 1st c.1655-6 Joshua<sup>2</sup> Conant (ROGER<sup>1</sup>); m. 2nd Dec. 1, 1659, John<sup>2</sup> Grafton (Joseph<sup>1</sup>).<sup>7</sup>

\*In the "Commonplace Book" kept<sup>16</sup> by Samuel Sewall he recorded between the dates of November 11 and 12, 1682, that ". . . Wednesday . . . Mr. Gardner of Salem, who lives p. the Meeting-House, going into his Shop after Lecture to open it, as he was hanging up a net of Cotton-wool, fell down dead over his Threshold: which made a great Hubbub." This was evidently Thomas<sup>2</sup>.

\*\*These were the men so friendly with the MOULTON family, witnessing the wills of ROBERT<sup>1</sup>, of ROBERT<sup>2</sup> and of ABIGAIL his wife and acting as "gardiens" of their minor children, including our MIRIAM<sup>2</sup>. George<sup>2</sup> retained his rights in the Salem mills until his death<sup>16</sup> though he had been for years in Hartford.

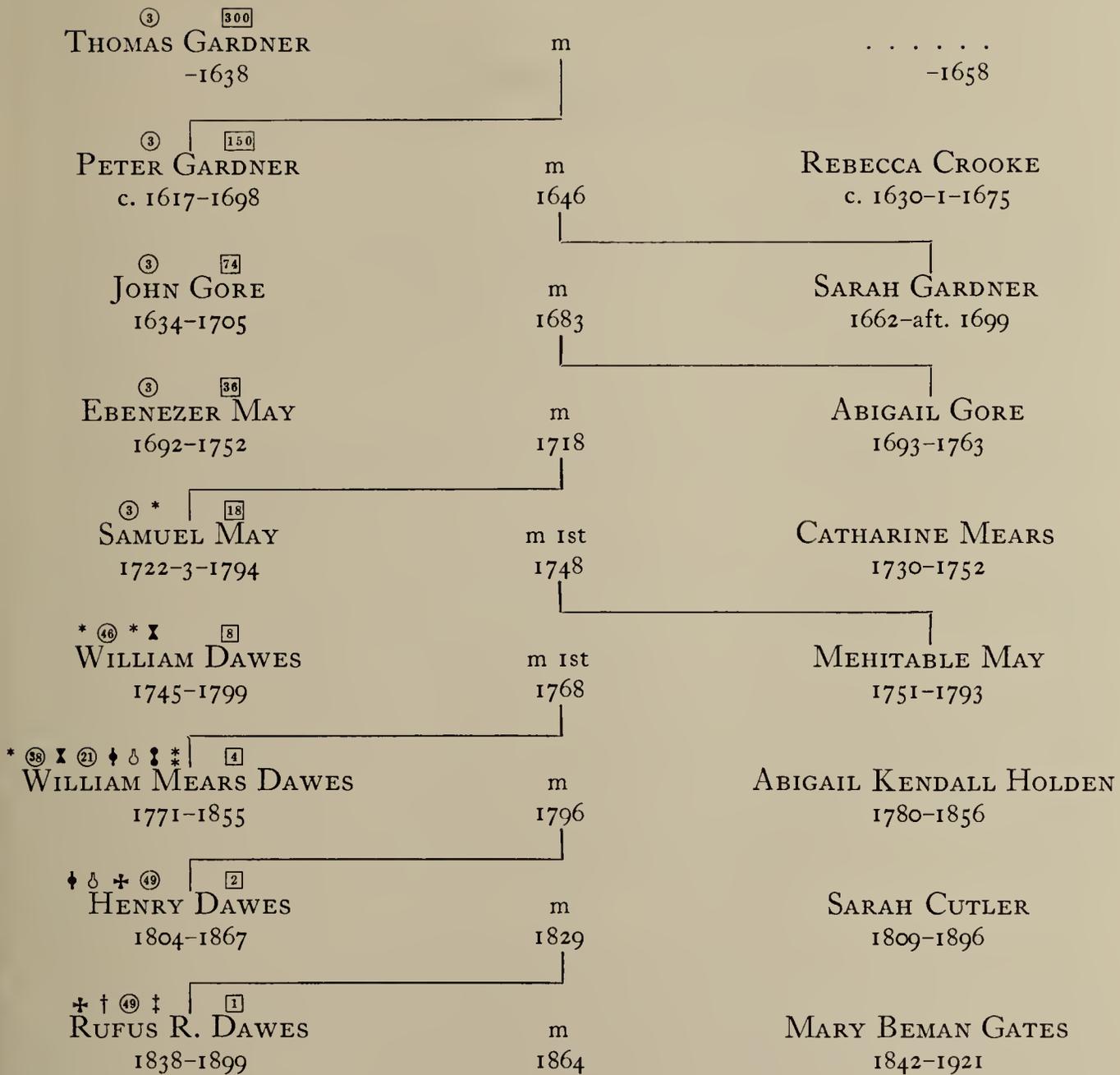
†The emigrant of the Grafton family is sometimes called<sup>14</sup> Joshua instead of Joseph but the latter name is unquestionably right.<sup>7</sup>

‡It has been stated that two of the sons of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER married daughters of Emanuel<sup>1</sup> Downing, but a second case is not evident.

## REFERENCES

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. THOMAS GARDNER Planter and Some of his Descendants, F. A. Gardner, 1907, pp. 3-21, 27-8, 34-5, 46, 47-9, 52, 69-70, 74, 87-9, 92, 100-1; Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXVII, 81-101.</li> <li>2. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 58.</li> <li>3. Savage, II, 227-30; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 182.</li> <li>4. History of Salem, S. Perley, 1924, I, 68-9, 465; II, 203-4.</li> <li>5. Essex Probates (pub.), II, 423-5.</li> <li>6. Vital Records of Beverly, II, 371; of Nantucket, V, 306, 317.</li> <li>7. Grafton Family of Salem, H. W. Belknap, 1928, pp. 14-5, 19; Conant Family, F. O. Conant, 1887, p. 136-7.</li> <li>8. History and Genealogy of the Cabot Family, L. V. Briggs, 1927, II, 797-8 (with error).</li> <li>9. Famous Families of Massachusetts, M. C. Crawford, 1930, I, 79-80.</li> <li>10. New England Register, XXV, 48-9, with error; George Hayes of Windsor . . . C. W. Hayes, 1884, p. 27, note, with error.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>11. Salem Witchcraft, C. W. Upham, 1867, I, 38-46, with error.</li> <li>12. John White . . . the Founder of Massachusetts, Frances Rose-Troup, 1930, pp. 86, 104.</li> <li>13. Ibid., pp. 393, 407, 411, 416.</li> <li>14. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XIV, 166-71.</li> <li>15. History of Plymouth Plantation, 1620-1647, William Bradford, Massachusetts Historical Society, 1912, I, 352-4, 360-2 with notes, 374.</li> <li>16. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 5, VI, preliminary p. 19*, preceding the Sewall Diary; Manwaring's Connecticut Probates, I, 305-6.</li> <li>17. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 204, 373.</li> <li>18. Perley's Salem, I, 198.</li> <li>19. Memorials of the Descendants of William Shattuck, L. Shattuck, 1855, Appendix, p. 361.</li> <li>20. Vital Records of Salem, I, 337; V. 270, 273.</li> <li>21. Records and Files of the Essex Quarterly Court, II, 217-8 et seq.; New England Register, LXI, 150.</li> <li>22. Records and Files, VI, 283-5, 356-7; THOMAS GARDNER, Planter, pp. 11-20.</li> </ol> |
|--|--|

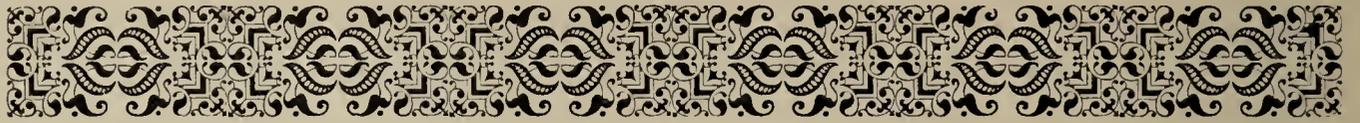
# GARDNER of Roxbury



- ③ Roxbury
- \* Boston
- ④ Worcester
- X Marlborough
- ⑤ Sudbury

- ⑥ Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ♂ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.

- ④ Mauston, Wis.
- † Malta, O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- † Marietta, O.



## GARDNER of Roxbury

THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER and his unnamed wife of Roxbury, emigrated at an unknown date, perhaps following their sons of whom PETER<sup>2</sup> sailed from London<sup>3,12</sup> in April, 1635, in the "Elizabeth," William Stagg, Master, arriving at Boston in midsummer, and his elder brother Thomas<sup>2</sup> is believed to have been the man of that name, aged twenty-two who sailed<sup>4</sup> for the new world in the "Safety," John Grant, Master, on August 10, 1635. A sad dearth of information exists relative to the earliest years of Roxbury's life because<sup>5</sup> of a devastating fire in the latter part of March, 1645. This was caused by the explosion of seventeen or eighteen barrels of the town's stock of gunpowder which had been stored in the house of one John Johnson. The shock of it shook the houses even in Boston and Cambridge as an earthquake might have done, blew burning cinders beyond the (Boston) meeting house that stood in King Street (State Street) and created quite a panic there for the time being. This catastrophe destroyed the Roxbury town records<sup>5</sup> prior to 1645 and the original agreement as to their free school<sup>43</sup> (see Bridge, p. 113). So we can say<sup>29</sup> of those early days of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER and his wife, merely\* that they were both members of Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Eliot's Church before May 17, 1637, when THOMAS<sup>1</sup> applied<sup>1</sup> for freemanship.\*\*

Some knowledge† may be deduced as to the extent of the land holdings of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> (in contradistinction to those of his son of that name who settled in Muddy River) from these scattered items:<sup>9</sup> (1) John Johnson had bought from THOMAS GARDNER of Roxbury thirteen acres twenty rods of wood and pasture land "in the nookes‡ next Dorchester . . ."; (2) JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE had bought of GARDNER a fourteen-acre lot<sup>9</sup> near Dorchester bounds; (3) Robert Williams acquired about nine acres lying in the "Great Lots," earlier the property of THOMAS<sup>1</sup>; (4) Widow GARDNER apparently inherited lot number nineteen in the "division of the Nookes" which was later re-assigned to her and ultimately indexed to their son PETER<sup>2</sup>. Beside these, (5) Edward Payson acquired<sup>9</sup> about seven acres of swamp and upland and four acres of land with a barn and orchard "lately" the land<sup>5</sup> of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER while Giles Payson and Richard Peacock both had land "adjoining the

\*A Thomas Gardner who may have been of this family was<sup>6</sup> a deputy to the General Court held at Newtown on September 26, 1637.

\*\*A Thomas Gardner, presumably Thomas<sup>2</sup> (THOMAS<sup>1</sup>) took his freeman's oath<sup>40</sup> in 1646.

†In order to establish facts of ownership and to overcome as far as possible the inestimable loss of the town records by the fire of 1645, Edward<sup>8</sup> Denison (William<sup>1</sup>) undertook in 1654 to record<sup>44</sup> from the concerted evidence of the townsmen all obtainable facts relative to early land ownership and transfers, thus rendering a very great service to posterity, but of course such records lacked the advantage of dates. This assemblage of material is called "Estates and persons of 1639" or Roxbury's "Book of Possessions" and in its identification of lands is by a listing of abutters and by a sequence of owners.<sup>44</sup>

‡The term "Nookes," often found in Roxbury land descriptions<sup>9</sup> of the early days, strangely enough implied<sup>31</sup> the knolls or points of land which protruded into the meadows near the streams, as "The Nookes next [to] Dorchester" and those on Stony River.

assignes" of THOMAS GARDNER which is believed<sup>41</sup> to imply that certain other property was held by or for the sons in this family.

THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER called "householder" or "housekeeper" was buried<sup>7,8</sup> at Roxbury<sup>11,16,29</sup> in November, 1638. After his death his widow lived on in Roxbury for twenty years<sup>8,9,11</sup> and as "Widdow GARDNER" received<sup>9</sup> or was re-assigned land in "the last diuision of the Nookes next Dorchester, being the nineteenth lott" then described as lying between John Stebbin and the assignes of John Mathews and as consisting of seven and three-quarters acres and twenty rods. Stebbin's lot was number eighteen and Mathews' lot (otherwise called Thomas Bell's) was<sup>9</sup> number twenty. This nineteenth lot was undoubtedly inherited by PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER under whose name<sup>9</sup> it was indexed, and who probably lived on it with his mother. We read that "our aged Sister GARDINER was buryed" at Roxbury<sup>15,16</sup> October 7, 1658.

The known children of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER and his wife, both born in England were<sup>2,8,10</sup>

- I. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, b.\* abt.<sup>2,4,39</sup> 1613-6; d. July 15, 1689; m. at Roxbury July 4, 1641, Lucy Smith; removed<sup>30</sup> in the 1650s to Muddy River (Brookline); had ten children of whom Abigail<sup>3</sup> m. Rev. John Wise, a very clever writer.\*\*
- II. PETER<sup>2</sup>, see following.

PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER (*Thomas*<sup>1</sup>) of Roxbury, born about 1617, was a youth of only eighteen years when he† embarked<sup>3,12</sup> on the "Elizabeth" in April, 1635, with our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMAN (Dawes-Gates II, 117) as another of the passengers. PETER<sup>2</sup> died at Roxbury, November 5, 1698, having married there<sup>16</sup> on May 9, 1646, REBECCA<sup>1</sup> CROOKE,†† daughter of ROGER CROOKE.‡ It seems highly probable that PETER<sup>2</sup> and his mother made their home together from the time of his father's death in 1638 until her death in 1658 or at least until his marriage in 1646. Another strong probability is, since Thomas<sup>2</sup> had removed to Brookline, that PETER<sup>2</sup> inherited her property in the "Nookes next Dorchester" which is described<sup>9</sup> (in the Book of Possessions 1638-40) in the name of Widow GARDNER but is indexed under the name of PETER<sup>2</sup>. Shortly after the marriage of PETER<sup>2</sup> a scourge fell upon the country<sup>17</sup> for

" . . . about the end of the 5th month (July) upon a suddaine, innumerable armys of caterpillars filled the country, devouring the grasse, oats, corn, wheat and barley. They would crosse highways by thousands. Much prayer was made to God about it and fasting

\*Thomas<sup>2</sup> deposed in July, 1668, that he was aged about fifty and in January, 1672, that he was about fifty-six.<sup>39</sup>

\*\*The Rev. John Wise (1652-1725) of Ipswich, a martyr under Andros (see Appendix "B", p. 694) had a marvelous mind. A book<sup>34</sup> which he wrote "The Churches Quarrel Espoused . . ." was published in Boston in 1715 and sold by NICHOLAS<sup>8</sup> BOONE. (See Boone, p. 99).

†One publication<sup>14</sup> makes PETER<sup>2</sup> emigrate from Hammersmith from whence his wife certainly came, but in the absence of definite evidence that theory may fitly be questioned for when he left England in 1635 she would have been only five years old.

††REBECCA CROOKE has been repeatedly<sup>17</sup> described as a "wealthy woman from England who settled at Roxbury." She died in 1675 being recorded as in her forth-fifth year which would put her birth about 1630-1 and her age of marriage at about sixteen. This scarcely coincides with the above description, which probably simmers down to a mere reference to her uncollected share of her father's estate (see text).

‡ROGER CROOKE, a tailor<sup>13</sup> of Hammersmith, parish of Fulham, county of Middlesex, England, yeoman, by his will<sup>18</sup> proved March 2, 1638-9, left his estate to his daughters Mary, REBECCA and Ruth and to his sons Walter, Christopher, John and Samuel. It specified that if the eldest son Walter desired to acquire the daughters' rights to the lease of a certain house he must pay to each of them £100. Walter was the executor and was required to provide for his sisters. Some Ruth Crook who may have been the girl mentioned in this will became the second wife of William<sup>1</sup> Read of Boston<sup>45</sup> in 1654.

in divers places, and the Lord heard and on a suddaine took them all away in all parts of the country to the wonderment of all men. It was the Lord for it was done suddainely."<sup>17</sup>

PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER was one of five among our ancestors who subscribed<sup>43</sup> toward the support of Roxbury's Free School, being responsible for two shillings annually which amount had been lessened by half about 1674 but was still considered as an obligation against his property in 1690 and later (see Bridge, p. 113).

On December 12, 1646, a few months after their marriage, PETER<sup>2</sup> and his wife joined in a legal action as follows:<sup>13</sup>

"PETER GARDINER, Carpent<sup>r</sup> & REBECCA his wife Constituted Michaell Powell of Dedham in N:E: their lawfull Attorney to aske & receive &c: a certain Legacie [from the executors of her father . . .] given unto the said REBECCA by the last will & testament of ROGER CROOKE of Hammersmith near London Tailor deceased, & of the receipt to give acquittance &c:"

Presumably, therefore, Michael Powell was a lawyer or was planning a trip to England and perhaps we may deduce that he was a good collector in their behalf, supplying PETER<sup>2</sup> and REBECCA with capital, for not again until after his death was PETER<sup>2</sup> referred to in the records as a carpenter. He was, however, repeatedly referred to in legal documents as a merchant,<sup>13</sup> sometimes exporting tobacco to England and importing other commodities. In September and in October, 1648, Nicholas Rice of Boston constituted PETER<sup>2</sup> and one Nicholas Gamage of London his attorneys<sup>13</sup> to collect certain legacies in England.

Two shipments of tobacco to London, in which PETER<sup>2</sup> was concerned were rather heavy. One consignment in October, 1649, shows him to have had as a partner one Thomas Tart and at that time they shipped four butts,\* eight hogsheads and one barrel of the weed. Another shipment made in April, 1650, by PETER<sup>2</sup> as sole owner consisted of "two butts,\* 1 puncheon\*\*, one fatt† & seven hogsheads. . . . The marke is P. G."<sup>13</sup> In each of these cases PETER<sup>2</sup> filed with a Notary Public of Boston a certification that the tobacco had been "planted at Rhode Island as two of their magistrates testify."<sup>13</sup> This certification was then a precautionary action which presently became a legal requirement, as is explained<sup>37</sup> by Mr. Jerome E. Brooks.†† The English Parliament in November, 1644, had freed from taxation‡ all export and import between New England and the mother country though the tobacco shipped to England from Virginia and Maryland was then taxable. By connivance between the planters of the last named colonies who raised it and the shipmasters who transported it, this dutiable tobacco came to be entered in England as a duty-free *New England* product. As a consequence, and in order to circumvent the customs defrauders, Parliament voted on June 20, 1650, that the New England product should be taxed as was that from the southern colonies.<sup>37,38</sup>

\*A butt is described as a cask or vessel holding about two hogsheads. — Webster.

\*\*A puncheon was of about two barrel content. — Webster.

†Fatt or vat implied a container. — Webster.

††These facts are quoted<sup>37</sup> by permission of Mr. Brooks from his compilation of Volume II, 106, 285 of Arents, History of Tobacco . . .

‡The Charter<sup>46</sup> of the Colony of the Massachusetts Bay in New England which passed the seals of Parliament on March 4, 1628-9, had originally granted seven years absolute freedom from taxation for all persons or goods going to that colony. It further granted, after the expiration of this seven year period, that for 21 years they were to be tax-free except for a five pounds per centum customs charge on products sent to England.<sup>46</sup>

In December, 1663, PETER<sup>2</sup> testified in court that Mary (Smith) Torrey's first husband, John Scarborough, was killed at Boston, "shooting off one of the great guns" or, as otherwise recorded,<sup>32</sup> he "was slaine by charging a great gunne."\*

On October 25, 1664, a petition<sup>22</sup> was signed by forty men of Roxbury begging the General Court to protect the colony against the threatened loss of its charter (see Appendix "B", p. 694). Included were the names of "PETTER GARDNER" and EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE who signed with their marks, and of JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE and JOHN<sup>1</sup> MAY senior. On January 27, 1673-4, PETER<sup>2</sup> was the plaintiff in a court action<sup>21</sup> against Timothy Proutt "for not delivering the saide GARDNER six barrells of Rumm . . . from . . . the Island of Barbados & shipped on board the Ship called the Endeavo<sup>r</sup> of Boston . . ." during the preceding August. The case was decided in favor of the defendant and PETER<sup>2</sup> had to pay the costs of court. He was a member of a Jury of Tryals on November 23, 1675, and was licensed<sup>21</sup> on October 29, 1678, to "retaille Cider untill Aprill next." He signed the oath of allegiance<sup>21</sup> on October 29, 1678-9 as was required of all colonists and was excused<sup>21</sup> from "attending upon ordinary traynings upon his keeping of two fire armes well fix't alwaies liable to the Clerk's view, and in readiness for the Country's Service" at the session of county court in January, 1679-80, when he would have been over sixty.

Soon after her marriage, wife REBECCA had become a member<sup>9,15,29</sup> of Roxbury Church, being called "Goodwife GARDINER, wife of PETER" and there all of her children were baptized. No evidence is seen that PETER<sup>2</sup> acquired early church membership<sup>41</sup> but some one of the name in April, 1690, (when he was the only known adult) took the oath of a freeman.<sup>42</sup> There is a tradition or oft repeated tale<sup>17</sup> that when JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE visited the home of PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER, the wife REBECCA, who was rocking her infant SARAH<sup>3</sup> GARDNER in the cradle, advised GORE to marry. He jokingly replied as he rocked the cradle back and forth "Perhaps I'll wait for your daughter;" and it actually happened that when about fifty years of age he was married to SARAH GARDNER, the infant he had rocked in the cradle" who was twenty-eight years his junior.

After a married life of almost thirty years and the bearing of a dozen children, REBECCA died at Roxbury on June 10, 1675, being in her forty-fifth year.<sup>16</sup> Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Eliot\*\* in his church record wrote<sup>15</sup> on June 11, 1675, "Sister GARDNER, wife of PETER GARDNER, was buried. She dyed in the Lord sweetly." PETER<sup>2</sup> outlived his wife over twenty-three years, dying intestate at the age of about eighty-one at Roxbury on November 5, 1698. It seems probable that some of his later years were spent at Muddy River (Brookline) where his son Joseph<sup>3</sup> resided. A document<sup>28</sup> dated June 10, 1699, identified his heirs and the property disposed of as follows:

\*This accident would have occurred either at Fort Hill or at the Castle, but prior to the service of ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP as its Captain.

\*\*Rev. Samuel<sup>2</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>) was ordained<sup>33</sup> assistant to the Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Eliot to serve Roxbury Church in September, 1650, continued so until his death in 1674 and in this capacity would have served and associated with our ancestral Brewers, Bridges, Danes, Gardners, Gores and Mays.

†The twelve acre home place (see map, p. 416) of PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER which he had purchased of John<sup>1</sup> Watson and which eventually became a part of the James<sup>6</sup> Mears (James<sup>6</sup>, JAMES<sup>4</sup>) estate, has been identified as adjoining the JOHN<sup>1</sup> DANE homestead. It is claimed<sup>17</sup> that the triangular space between Dudley and Warren Streets (see map, p. 416) was, in the late sixteen hundreds, the garden and nursery of PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDINER and "was long known as 'GARDINER's Green'".<sup>17</sup> PETER<sup>2</sup> as a proprietor of Roxbury also acquired<sup>36</sup> a share in Woodstock (now Connecticut) lands in the first division made in 1695-6, his lot being number one hundred seventeen and consisting of thirty-five and three-quarters acres. It had earlier been owned<sup>47</sup> by the Leavens family of Roxbury and of Woodstock, Conn., who in the latter locality became closely allied in both business and marriage with our Cutler family.

“Joseph Gardner of Muddy River, husbandman, and Mary his wife, Benj<sup>n</sup> Gardner of Wethersfield, cordwainer, and Margaret his wife, JOHN GORE of Roxbury, Gentleman and SARAH his wife, and Moses Craft of Wethersfield, Maulster and Rebecca his wife, (which said Joseph and Benj<sup>n</sup> Gardner, SARAH GORE, and Rebecca Crafts, are children of their honored father, PETER GARDNER, late of Muddy River, carpenter, deceased intestate,) in consideration of £200 paid them by Edward Bromfield of Boston, sold to him a house, lot and about twelve acres of land in Roxbury . . . which was purchased of John Watson of Roxbury, yeoman, by the said PETER GARDNER in his lifetime.”

This deed was acknowledged<sup>28</sup> at Boston on June 20, 1699, by all the signers except Margaret Gardner and Rebecca Crafts who acknowledged it at Hartford, Connecticut on August 1, 1699.

The children of PETER<sup>2</sup> and REBECCA (CROOKE) GARDNER, all born in Roxbury, were<sup>8,11,15,16</sup>

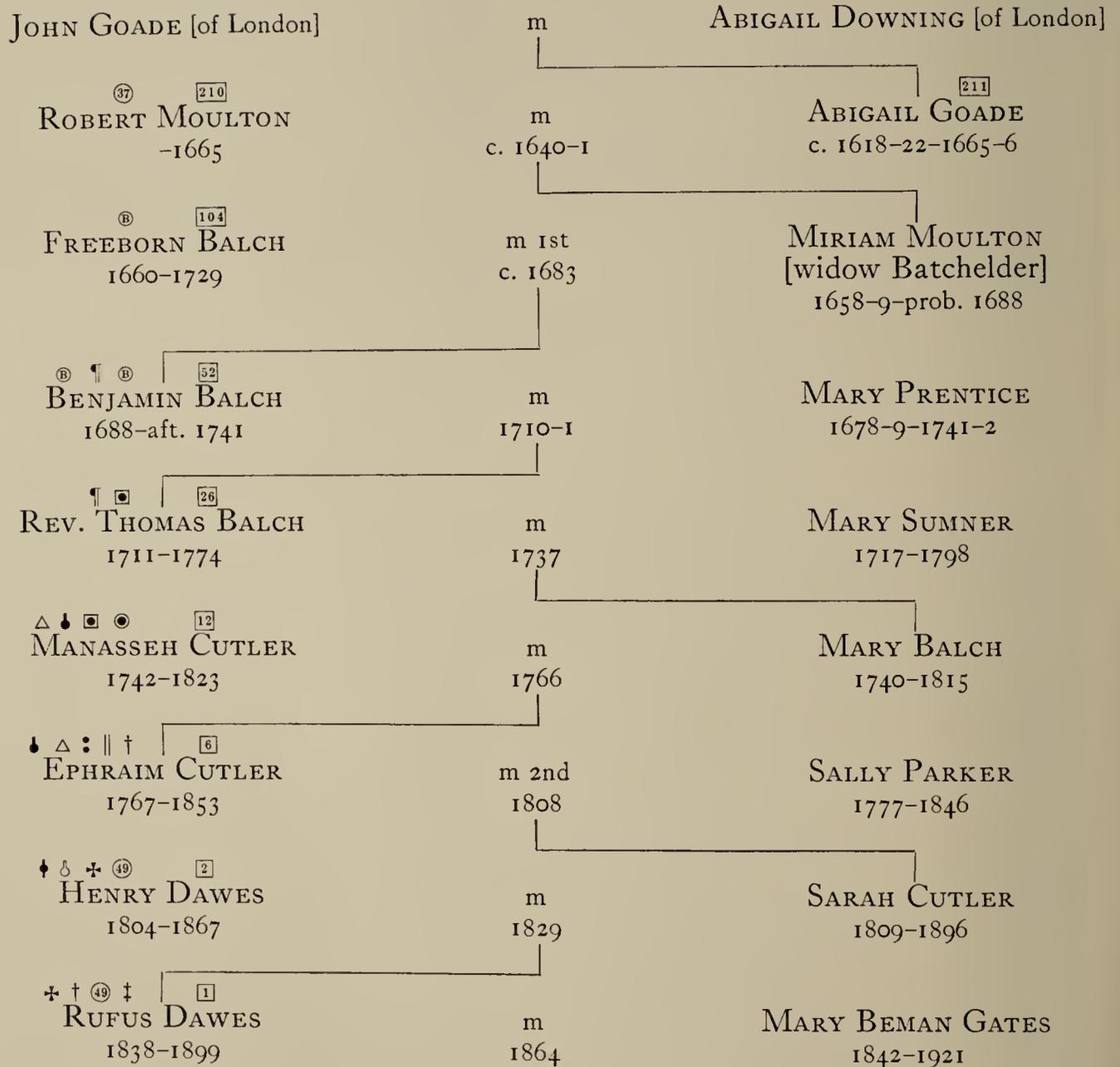
- I. Rebecca<sup>3</sup>, bap. Nov. 9, 1647; prob. d. yng.
- II. Peter<sup>3</sup>, b. June 24, 1648, bap. Mar. 24, 1649-50; died of consumption, prob. unm.; bur. Oct. 31, 1674 (also given as Oct. 30, 1673).
- III. Rebecca<sup>3</sup>, bap. Mar. 24, 1649-50; d. aft. Aug. 1699; m. at Roxbury<sup>16</sup> June 24, 1667, prob. as his 2nd wife, Moses<sup>2</sup> Crafts (Griffin<sup>1</sup>)<sup>28</sup> and removed to Deerfield and later to Wethersfield, Conn.<sup>23</sup>
- IV. Thomas<sup>3</sup>, b. May 1, bap. 23, 1652; bur. Aug. 10, 1653.
- V. Sarah<sup>3</sup>, b. Jan. 10, bap. 29, 1653-4; bur. Feb. 20, 1660-1.
- VI. John<sup>3</sup>, b.<sup>25</sup> Dec. 6, bap. 30, 1655; no further record.
- VII. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 1, 1656-7; was a Lt. under the command of Capt. Samuel Wadsworth and was slain<sup>16,20,26</sup> by the Indians at the Sudbury Fight, Apr. 21, 1676 (see Wright, p. 681).
- VIII. Joseph<sup>3</sup> (or perhaps<sup>16</sup> Josiah), b. Jan. 11, bap. 16, 1658-9; d. aft. 1699; m.<sup>28</sup> 1681 Mary<sup>2</sup> Corbin (Clement),<sup>35</sup> and lived at Muddy River (Brookline).
- IX. SARAH<sup>3</sup>, b. Apr. 20; bap. June 8, 1662; d. after<sup>27,28</sup> 1699; m. at Roxbury,<sup>16,27</sup> May 31, 1683, JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE (see Gore, p. 325).<sup>35</sup>
- X. Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, b. Apr. 23, 1663, bap. May 22, 1664; removed by 1686 to Wethersfield, Conn., was prob. a mariner and d. at sea; invt. of his estate<sup>24</sup> made Feb. 27, 1713-4; m. June 21, 1688, Margaret (—)<sup>23,28</sup>
- XI. Ebenezer<sup>3</sup>, b. Aug. 5, bap. Sept. 10, 1665; d. May 13, 1683.
- XII. Jonathan<sup>3</sup>, b. Aug. 14, bap. Sept. 1, 1667.

## REFERENCES

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. New England Register, III, 95, 348.</li> <li>2. Biography of John White, Frances Rose-Troup, 1930, p. 393.</li> <li>3. New England Register, XIV, 312.</li> <li>4. Ibid., IV, 263; Hotten's Emigrant Lists, p. 123.</li> <li>5. Original Narratives of Early American History, Amer. Hist. Assn. VIII being Winthrop's Journal, "History of New England," II, 220-1; History of Boston Fire Department, A. W. Brayley, 1889, p. 4; Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880, I, 409; History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, O. A. Roberts, 1895, I, 66-7.</li> <li>6. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 204.</li> <li>7. New England Register, VI, 183.</li> <li>8. Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 181.</li> <li>9. Boston Record Commissioners Report, VI, 12, 17-8, 20, 22, 29, 31, 33, 35, 43, 73, 86, 103, 174.</li> <li>10. History of Cambridge, L. R. Paige, 1877, p. 557; Lineage of the Bowens, E. A. Bowen, 1897, p. 220.</li> <li>11. Savage, II, 230.</li> <li>12. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 145-7.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>13. B. R. C. R., XXXII, 68, 160, 411-2.</li> <li>14. Banks' Topographical Dictionary, pub. by E. E. Brownell, 1937, p. 110.</li> <li>15. B. R. C. R., VI, 118-22, 124-5, 127, 174, 176-7, 181-2.</li> <li>16. Vital Records of Roxbury, I, 140-2; II, 161, 530.</li> <li>17. History of Roxbury, F. S. Drake, 1878, pp. 15, 88-9, 210, 322, 368-70.</li> <li>18. New England Register, LXIII, 279-80.</li> <li>19. Suffolk Co. Deeds (unpub.), XIX, 172.</li> <li>20. New England Register, XL, 63, 405.</li> <li>21. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXIX, 369; XXX, 634, 960, 970, 1152, being records of the Suffolk Co. Court.</li> <li>22. New England Register, V, 394.</li> <li>23. History of Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, I, 271; II, 253, 352.</li> <li>24. Hartford, Conn., Probate Records, VIII, 278.</li> <li>25. New England Register, XI, 330.</li> <li>26. Soldiers of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 231.</li> <li>27. Gore Genealogy, W. H. Whitmore, 1876, p. 3.</li> </ol> |
|---|---|

28. Crafts Genealogy, J. M. & W. F. Crafts, 1893, pp. 39-41.
29. B. R. C. R., VI, 73, 86, 176; Vital Records of Roxbury, II, 530; History of the First Church of Roxbury, W. E. Thwing, 1908, pp. 56, 58.
30. History of Brookline, J. G. Curtis, 1933, pp. 30, 95.
31. History of Roxbury, C. M. Ellis, 1847, pp. 31-2, 88, 119.
32. Savage, IV, 34; Pope, p. 403; Winsor's Boston, I, 409.
33. Thwing's Roxbury Church, pp. 9, 38-41; Danforth Genealogy, J. J. May, 1902, p. 23.
34. Early Boston Booksellers, G. E. Littlefield, 1900, pp. 197-8; "The Churches Quarrel Espoused or a Reply in Satyre . . .", John Wise, 2nd ed., Boston, Reprinted. "Sold by NICHOLAS BOONE, at the Sign of the Bible in Cornhill, 1715."
35. History of Woodstock, Conn., C. W. Bowen, 1932, IV, 59; *Ibid.*, 1935, VI, 9-11.
36. B. R. C. R., VI, 51-6.
37. Tobacco; its History . . . George Arents, Jr., 1938, II, being an essay, glossary and bibliography by Jerome E. Brooks, pp. 106, 285.
38. Books Manuscripts and Drawings Relating to Tobacco from the Collection of George Arents, Jr., Herbert Putnam, 1938, p. 89.
39. Research by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass.
40. "Boston Notions", N. Dearborn, 1848, p. 50.
41. Weld Collections, C. F. Robinson, pub. by L. H. Weld, 1938, pp. 59-60.
42. New England Register, III, 348.
43. Ellis' Roxbury, p. 57; History of the (Roxbury) Grammar School, C. K. Dillaway, 1860, p. 12, 14-23.
44. Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880, I, 407-9, 420-2.
45. Savage, III, 519; Bostonian Society Publications, III, 138; Reade Record, 1917, No. 10, pp. 2-4; 1921-2, No. 14, p. 23; B. R. C. R., IX, 48.
46. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 13-4.
47. "The Leavens Name", P. F. Leavens, 1903, pp. 18, 24, 41.

# GOADE and DOWNING



37 Salem  
¶ Charlestown  
104 Beverly  
■ Dedham  
△ Killingly, Conn.

♠ Edgartown  
● Hamilton  
⋮ Waterford, O.  
|| Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.  
† Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

♠ Thomaston, Me.  
♂ Morgan Co., O.  
✝ Malta, O.  
49 Mauston, Wis.  
‡ Marietta, O.



## GOADE (*Goode*) and DOWNING\*

**A**BIGAIL<sup>1</sup> GOADE, born about 1618–22, daughter of JOHN and ABIGAIL (DOWNING) GOADE of London, crossed the ocean<sup>2</sup> by or before 1640 in an unknown vessel, to become a member of the family of her uncle Emanuel<sup>1</sup> Downing in Salem, very likely because of earlier death of her parents. Her father was called a “skinner” as was also her Aunt Susanna Downing’s husband, Francis Kirby. This implied that they were dealers in hides, leathers, furs, shoes, etc.

Since the character of her uncle Emanuel<sup>1</sup> Downing and his family\*\* and the environment of his home would have been highly significant in and to the life of our ABIGAIL<sup>1</sup>, it seems fitting to weigh conditions there. As has been stated, Emanuel<sup>1</sup>† was educated at Cambridge, entering in December, 1602, and specializing in law after which he became a member of the Inner Temple.<sup>7</sup> He married first Anne Ware, daughter of Sir James of Dublin, by whom he had three children; and on April 10, 1622, he married secondly Lucy Winthrop, younger sister of John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop who emigrated with the Fleet in 1630 to establish Massachusetts Bay Colony and who became its first resident governor.

Emanuel<sup>1</sup> and Lucy spent some years in Dublin where their well-known son George<sup>2</sup>‡ was born but they had returned to England by 1626 when Emanuel<sup>1</sup>

\*Of the Downing family of co. Suffolk, a *gentle* family, and armigerous,<sup>16</sup> it has been said that an outstanding characteristic was that they “consistently, through two centuries, manifested a practical belief in the absolute value of Learning”.<sup>7</sup> The earliest established family head in this line was GEORGE<sup>a</sup> DOWNING of Beccles, co. Suffolk, whose will<sup>6</sup> signed December 15, 1561, named his wife CICELY and five children of whom his second and third sons, John<sup>b</sup> and GEORGE<sup>b</sup> were “to go to the grammer schole, and then to the Universitie of Cambridge”. His estate was probated on June 26, 1564, by his widow CICELY. Their son GEORGE<sup>b</sup> matriculated<sup>3</sup> at Cambridge in 1569, took his bachelor’s degree in 1573–4, his master’s degree in 1577 and served as Master of the Grammar School at Ipswich, co. Suffolk from 1589 until his death in 1610. He married a Miss BELLAMY and had ten children, of whom Emanuel<sup>c</sup>, the eldest, later the emigrant to New England, was baptized at St. Lawrence, Ipswich,<sup>16</sup> August 12, 1585, and Nathaniel<sup>c</sup> was baptized there October 8, 1587, followed by three daughters, Susanna<sup>c</sup>, the eldest, Nahomie<sup>c</sup> and our ABIGAIL<sup>c</sup>. The wife of GEORGE<sup>b</sup> died before 1611 for when he made his will<sup>6</sup> on January 17, 1610–1, she was not named. He sent at least two of his sons, Emanuel<sup>c</sup> and Joseph<sup>c</sup> to Cambridge<sup>3</sup> and had evidently provided for them financially as well, for excepting a bequest of books to Joseph<sup>c</sup>, his entire estate was left to the three daughters whom he named as joint executrixes. That he was comfortably fixed is evidenced by his permission to these daughters to sell “my howse and tenements with the gardanis, orchardes and all that doth belongs thereto, . . . to the value of eight skoare and tenn powndes”. He gave them the lease of “White Friars”, the house he lived in, and equal shares of the estate. Nahomie was to have the “danske cheste” [damask?] “which standeth in the summer parlor”, and he specifically withheld from his son Joseph<sup>c</sup>, in the daughters’ behalf, “my twoo household bybles with tenne of my cheif bookes . . .”.<sup>6</sup> At this time the girls were probably unmarried but presently Susanna<sup>c</sup> married Francis Kirby, a “skinner” and merchant of London who subsequently carried on extensive business dealings with John<sup>2</sup> Winthrop and Emanuel<sup>1</sup> Downing in the colony; between January, 1611 and 1615, our ABIGAIL<sup>c</sup> married JOHN GOAD, skinner of London; and by repeated circumstantial evidence Nahomie<sup>c</sup> must have married Richard Hill of London and have been the “sister Hill” frequently referred to<sup>5</sup> by Lucy (Winthrop) Downing as well as by Richard Kirby, husband of Susanna<sup>c</sup> Downing.

\*\*Emanuel<sup>1</sup> Downing is impersonally listed as a member of a “gentle family,” which was definitely armigerous.<sup>16</sup>

†It has been surmised<sup>7</sup> that he was named in honor of Emanuel College which had been founded the year before his birth by Walter Mildmay, a relative of the Winthrop family and very likely acquainted with the Downings.

‡This son was the well (if not favorably) known Sir George (later baronet) whose name was given to and is borne by the noted Downing Street in the heart of London.

became an attorney of the Court of Wards and was instrumental in getting a similar position for his brother-in-law, John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop. As the plans for emigration to the colony in New England developed, Emanuel<sup>1</sup> was deeply and actively interested, first in an advisory capacity and presently with the thought of eventual participation. After the sailing of the eleven vessels of the Fleet with their seven hundred or more passengers,<sup>12</sup> he and his wife both carried on extended correspondence with different members of the Winthrop family in New England, and Emanuel<sup>1</sup> was particularly occupied with export and import between England and the colony, making considerable investments himself, and frequently referring to his own eventual emigration. His wife wrote<sup>10</sup> her brother on March 4, 1636-7, that one chief point of objection to their removal was the lack of adequate educational privileges — especially for George, their eldest son.

It is rather a coincidence that on the previous<sup>13</sup> October 28, 1636, the court in New England had already voted £400 to establish a college and on November 15, 1637, Cambridge was chosen as its location and this was the birth of Harvard, which name was given<sup>11</sup> it on March 13, 1639, and, to anticipate, with the first class of this colonial college their son George<sup>2</sup> Downing graduated.<sup>10</sup>

For the three children of Emanuel<sup>1</sup> by his first wife preceded him to New England, James<sup>2</sup> in the fleet with his uncle, John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop, and Susan<sup>2</sup> and Mary<sup>2</sup> in 1633 under the care of Gov. William Coddington. But finally Emanuel<sup>1</sup> with wife Lucy and various children, including son George<sup>2</sup>, sailed<sup>11</sup> in the "Thomas and Frances", being eight weeks on the way and arriving at their destination before September 7, 1638, for on that date the Rev. Edmund Browne who sailed on the same vessel wrote, from the colony, relative to what is now Harvard, "Wee have a Cambridge heere, a College erecting, youth lectured, a library, and I suppose there will be a presse this winter".<sup>11</sup> Rev. Browne's writing also recorded the fact that Lucy (Winthrop) Downing supplied his wants on the voyage "out of her treasury of provision. I was joyned in the messe w<sup>th</sup> them, had a often refreshing w<sup>th</sup> fresh meate and bottle beere et coeter."<sup>11</sup>

Emanuel<sup>1</sup> settled at Salem\* where within a month of their arrival he and his wife joined the church on November 4, 1638, and he became a freeman during the following March, and thenceforth he took a very prominent and constructive part in colonial affairs.<sup>3</sup> Business took him to England\*\* in 1642, 1644 and again in 1652, and he died in England or Scotland about 1656-60. His daughter Ann<sup>2</sup> baptized in April, 1633, in London, married<sup>9</sup> in Salem in August, 1656, Capt. Joseph<sup>2</sup> Gardner (THOMAS<sup>1</sup>), who lost his life in the Great Swamp Fight (see Upham, p. 624).

On the whole the life of Emanuel<sup>1</sup> Downing in both Old and New England

\*Two items culled from the great number of letters preserved furnish the following sidelights on daily needs and trials: Gov. John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop noted on October 11, 1633, while Emanuel<sup>1</sup> was still in England,

"The wolves continued to do much hurt among our cattle; and this month by Mr. Grant, there came over four Irish greyhounds which were sent to the Governor by Mr. Downing, his brother-in-law." And in 1640-1, after the Downings' arrival in the colony, Lucy, wife of Emanuel<sup>1</sup> wrote to the governor's wife, begging garlic and sage and to borrow a gander for "I have 3 geese and not a husband for them . . ." <sup>14</sup> It is recorded<sup>13</sup> that in 1638 Emanuel Downing brought over "at his great charges, all things fitting for takeing wild foule by way of duck coy," and the court gave him liberty to use some pond in Salem vicinity to make use of this equipment, and forbade anyone to use a gun within a half-mile of that pond under threat of fine or other punishment. This was undoubtedly in behalf of food supplies rather than mere sport.

\*\*The fine home which Emanuel<sup>1</sup> Downing built near Salem burned down<sup>17</sup> in 1645 while he was temporarily in England and his family was at meeting. Their loss of bedding, apparel and household goods amounted to £200.<sup>17</sup>

seems to have been highly commendable as to morals and ideals in relation to the church, the community, the colony, his friends and family, and during the last thirty years of his life "he was a strong and useful adherent of the infant colony, by his personal service when here and by his investment and planning when away."

But one outstanding trait evident in the lives of many early colonists (as well as later men) marked him as it did also Judge Samuel Sewall, the Diarist, namely, the matchmaking propensity in behalf of his flock, with an eye to the financial standing of prospective partners. In Sewall's case<sup>15</sup> his purse-weighing, relative to his own various wives, or their prospects, as well as his concern for his children's possibilities, causes him to appear actually ridiculous, but in the case of Emanuel<sup>1</sup> one may justly say he was perhaps only provident and thrifty. His daughter Lucy<sup>2</sup> caused him the greatest concern, but he desired to marry his eldest son James<sup>2</sup> to one Rebecca Cooper, an orphan with a dowery. However, the girl's guardian had other plans. Emanuel<sup>1</sup> had also his niece our ABIGAIL on his hands. His wife Lucy wrote early in 1640-1 to her sister-in-law, the wife of Gov. John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop:

"I thank you . . . for the mayde. I have good hopes of her. My cozen [niece] NAB and she were fellow traullers in the ship from Eng: NAB giues her the report of a very good carigd theer: . . . My mayde ABYGALL is suddaynlie to be maryed to ROBERT MOULTON of this towne: and I hope it may proue a blessinge of comfort to her, for the parents and sonne [MOULTON] are people of a religious peacable life, and prouident in their estates."<sup>14</sup>

And Emanuel<sup>1</sup> himself wrote to Gov. John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop on January 20, 1640-1: "I desire . . . to match some of my elder children because some thinke me to blame, that none of them are disposed of. I have provided a verie good match for my neice, NAB. GOADE; he is old MOULTON his only sonne, a member of our church, of 4 or 500li [pounds] estate: if my sonns [James'] busines proceede I may about a moneth hence haue both couples married on a day."<sup>14</sup> But that double wedding did not occur for the son's business did not "proceed"!

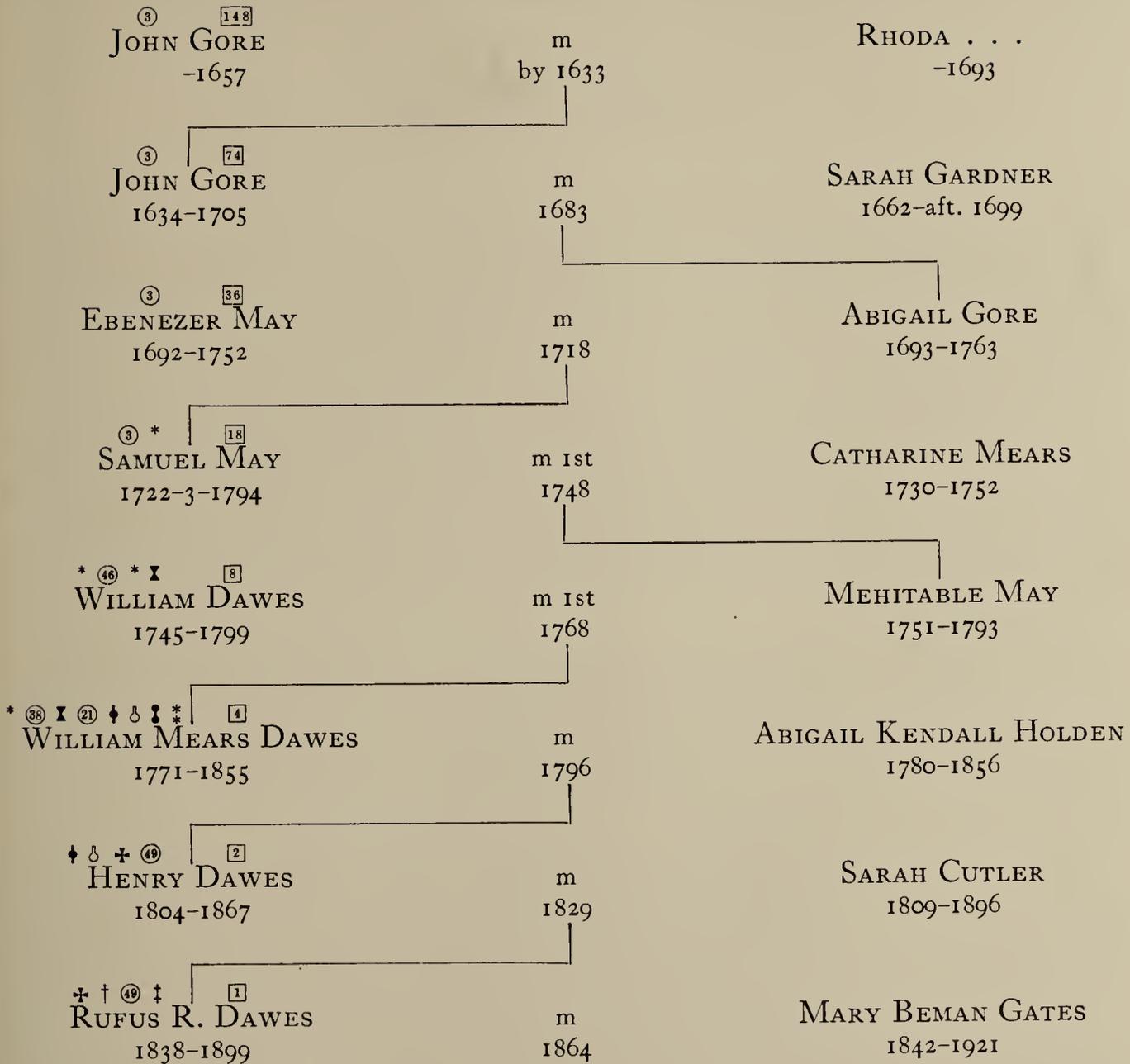
The known children of JOHN GOADE of London by his wife ABIGAIL DOWNING, born probably in London, were

- I. John, born by 1615-6, for the will<sup>1,6</sup> of his mother's brother Nathaniel<sup>5</sup> Downing "of London, gentleman," dated May 7, 1616, gave "To my sister, ABIGAIL GOADE, wife of JOHN GOADE, skinner, twenty pounds, and to their son, John Goade, forty shillings to make him a cup."
- II. Thomas<sup>1</sup> Goad, born about 1620, for in 1635, at the age of fifteen, he emigrated<sup>4</sup> on the "Abigail" with John<sup>2</sup> Winthrop as a servant, having been outfitted by his aunt (called "Sister Hill", wife of Richard, doubtless Nahomie Downing, see p. 315) but through interference of a meddling outsider<sup>5</sup> he was defrauded of what his aunt had provided and soon after arrival in New England he left the employ of Winthrop and sailed for Spain, probably planning a return to his relatives in England.<sup>5</sup> He was called "cosen" [nephew] by Richard Kirby, husband of Susanna Downing.
- III. ABIGAIL<sup>1</sup>, b. doubtless in London and probably about 1618-22; d. in Salem, Mass., between<sup>8</sup> Jan. 5 and March 22, 1665-6; emigrated to New England perhaps early in 1640 for on September 8, 1640 she joined<sup>2</sup> Salem Church and she married there about February, 1640-1, or soon after, undoubtedly at the home of her uncle Emanuel<sup>1</sup> Downing, ROBERT<sup>2</sup> MOULTON (see Moulton, p. 455).

## REFERENCES

1. Water's Gleanings, pp. 35, 37-9; New England Register, XXXVIII, 193-7.
2. Pope's Pioneers, pp. 144, 189, Supplement XVI; History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, II, 26-9.
3. Alumni Cantabrigiensis, II, 62.
4. New England Register, XIV, 320; Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 162-7.
5. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, IX, 248, 267; Ser. 4, VI, 44, 59-60, VII, 13, 16-7; Ser. 5, I, 9-10, 336-7.
6. Suffolk Manorial Families, being Winthrop of Groton and Allied Families, J. J. Muskett, 1896, pp. 96-9; Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 1564, 20 Stevenson; 1616, 48 Cope, Sentence 23 Parker.
7. The Godfather of Downing Street, John Beresford, 1925, pp. 16-41.
8. Probates of Essex Co., Mass. II, 27-8.
9. Savage, I, 236; II, 65-6, 228.
10. Sibley's Harvard Graduates, 1873, I, 28 et seq.
11. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, VII, 76; XV, lxx, cxxxii.
12. Life and Letters of John<sup>t</sup> Winthrop, R. C. Winthrop, 1864, I, 388; 1867, II, 176-81, 204-11.
13. Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony, I, 183, 208, 236.
14. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 4, VI, 56-7; Ser. 5, I, 31-2.
15. American Antiquarian Society Transactions, 1857, III, 144.
16. Pope's Pioneers, 1900, Supp. [p. xvi]; New England Register, LXXXVI, 261, 267, 280; History of Harvard University, S. E. Morison, 1935, p. 376.
17. Salem in the 17th Century, J. D. Phillips, 1933, pp. 142-3; Winthrop's Journal, II, 220-1, being VIII of Original Narratives of Early American History.

# GORE



- ③ Roxbury
- \* Boston
- 46 Worcester
- X Marlborough
- 38 Sudbury
- 21 Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.

- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ♂ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- 49 Mauston, Wis.
- † Malta, O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- † Marietta, O.



## GORE (*Gorre*)

**J**OHN<sup>1</sup> GORE, born in England,\* was the eldest son<sup>53</sup> of RICHARD<sup>a</sup> GORRE of Southampton, gentleman, who died at Southampton, co. Hants between January 6, 1643-4, the date of his will, and January 3, 1644-5, the date on which it was proved<sup>54</sup> in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury. This document which was written on a sheet twelve inches by fifteen, after a religious preamble, called the testator "of the towne of Sothampton;" mentioned first, son Thomas Gorre living at Baddisley (Badsley?) "where I lately lived," whose legacy was £200; gave to wife Elizabeth one half of the household goods and implements, together with all my wool and yarne and £200; it made bequests to four servants, to the three ministers of the town of Southampton and to one minister of Baddisley; made small bequests to the poor of these two towns and gave the residue to his eldest son JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORRE whom he named sole executor, but named two others as "executors in trust."<sup>53</sup>

On December 23, 1644, JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE of Roxbury appeared before a Notary Public in Boston and signed<sup>10</sup> a power of attorney authorizing one Joseph Browne of Southampton, England, to prove and execute the will, but that service really was performed by one of the "executors in trust." Since JOHN<sup>1</sup>, as eldest son, would automatically have inherited a double share, it shows that the estate of RICHARD<sup>a</sup> must have considerably exceeded £800, and the context suggests that his occupation concerned weaving.

JOHN<sup>1</sup> was married in England by or before 1633 to RHODA whose surname\*\* has not yet been learned. They emigrated with their son JOHN<sup>2</sup> by 1635 when they became<sup>1</sup> residents† of Roxbury. They both joined the Roxbury Church<sup>1</sup> and JOHN<sup>1</sup> took the oath of a freeman<sup>1,3</sup> on April 18, 1637. In 1638 he became a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company‡ of Boston<sup>34</sup> and was its clerk

\*Some writers<sup>35</sup> erroneously claim that this family came from Waltham Abbey or from nearby Nasing, co. Essex as a number of Roxbury families definitely did, but the document quoted above nullifies the claim. What may be considered further evidence of origin can be found in the files<sup>53</sup> of the Committee on Heraldry of the New England Historic Genealogical Society. They have a photograph of the will of RICHARD GORRE, a typewritten copy of its text and an enlarged photograph of the seal attached to it, with a copy of a letter of report dated February 14, 1908, from Mr. F. W. Walford, 62 Chancery Lane, London, W. C., England. The arms<sup>50</sup> on the seal are like those described by Burke<sup>36</sup> as belonging to a Gore family of Wiltshire, the adjoining county to the northwest, with the addition, however, of a crescent for difference. By this means the Committee on Heraldry makes the claim that RICHARD GORRE belonged to an armigerous family.

\*\*Later events suggest the possibility of a relationship to the John<sup>1</sup> Watson family of Roxbury<sup>4</sup> or to Chrispin Hooper of Boston.<sup>13</sup>

†Tradition says<sup>26,34</sup> of wife RHODA that after the debarkation of the family at Boston, as they made their way to Roxbury where they planned to reside, two men carried her over Boston Neck because the ground there was wet and swampy. When they reached a small hill in Roxbury on the land of John Remington, RHODA was so delighted with the view from this rise that she exclaimed "This is Paradise!" and the place was ever after called Paradise Hill. Incidentally, after the death of her husband JOHN<sup>1</sup> and the death of neighbor Remington's wife, RHODA became his second wife.

‡"The name and fame<sup>55</sup> of the Honourable Artillery Company of London were transplanted to Massachusetts soon after its colonization, by some of its members, and a junior company was established at Boston, which is the oldest military organization on the American continent. It is recruited, to a great extent, from those who have been active members of the

in 1655. His home lot<sup>1</sup> of about four acres lay "west of Stony River on the way leading to the Landing-place and Tide-Mill, . . . on the south west side of Tremont Street, just beyond the railroad crossing, and it extended to Parker Street."<sup>26,34</sup> "A brick block now covers the site of the Gore house, which is said to have been taken down in 1876. The name is perpetuated by Gore Avenue which traverses a part of the original estate."<sup>34</sup>

The loss of the Roxbury records by fire in 1645 (see Gardner, p. 308) obscures very effectively the story of the earlier affairs of the families of that town. Such items as remain to us, however, show that in 1638-40 JOHN<sup>1</sup> was one of the larger land owners of the town. For in addition to his home lot he had more than a dozen other Roxbury tracts ranging all the way from a few acres to one of one hundred and eight-eight<sup>5</sup> acres,\* but totaling over four hundred acres. In the early days JOHN<sup>1</sup> had several servants\*\* in his household, and was sometimes called a farmer<sup>34</sup>

volunteer militia. It elects its officers annually; has its stated spring and fall parades; listens once a year to a sermon preached in a church, which is followed by a "feast" in Faneuil Hall, with distinguished invited guests, and is jealous of its prerogatives and its traditions. The New England organization is also a living link between generations, past and present, and has outlived every institution, except the Christian Church and the Public School, that was in existence on the American continent when it was chartered.

"The colonists lost no time in organizing train-bands, which were supplied with the weapons and equipments sent out from England and were drilled by veteran officers, who were paid for their services. At a Court of Assistants, held at Boston, July 26, 1631, it was 'Ordered, that evy first Thursday in evy month there shal be a genall traineing of Capt. Vndrhill's company att Boston and Rocksbury, and evy first Friday in evy month there shal be a genall traineing of the remaindr of them who inhabitt att Charlton, Misticke and the New Towne, att a convenient place aboute the Indian wigwams, the traineing to begin at one of the clocke in the afternoon.'"

By October, 1636, there were ten train bands in existence in Massachusetts and their officers conceived the plan of organizing in the colony a subsidiary of the honored London organization to which some of them had belonged before emigration. As a result a charter was granted to twenty-four of them in March, 1638-9, under the name of the "Military Company of Massachusetts" which title later became the "Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company." Among the charter<sup>55</sup> members were William<sup>1</sup> elder brother of our ROBERT<sup>1</sup> JENNISON, *Thomas<sup>1</sup> Cakebread* (see p. 660) and William<sup>1</sup> Spencer elder brother of our GERRARD<sup>1</sup> SPENCER (see Dawes-Gates II, 769).

This organization served as a military school in which officers of the scattered train bands could acquire uniformity of tactics and drill. It also furnished the only social distinction in the infant colony and furnished the only titles used, other than those of the ministry.

"Each musketeer<sup>55</sup> was to be provided with a musket, priming wire, worm, scourer, and bullet-mould, a rest, bandoleers, a sword, one pound of powder, twenty bullets, and two fathoms of match rope. The musket was a matchlock, the cock holding by a screw, and the burning match rope was applied to the powder in the pan. Muskets were generally large and heavy, and a forked staff, or rest, was required to support them when presented to fire. The staff, or rest, had a crotch or crescent at the top, and a sharp iron at the bottom to fasten it in the ground. Musketeers carried their powder in little wooden, tin, or copper cylindrical boxes, each containing one charge; twelve of these boxes were fixed to a belt two inches wide, worn over the left shoulder, and the boxes and belt were called bandoleers. Usually the primer containing the priming powder, the bullet-dog, and priming-wire were fastened to the leather belt. These, and the little long boxes hung upon the belt, made much rattling. This belt, with its dangling appendages, had some resemblance to a string of sleigh-bells. The Artillery Company took an active and influential interest in the formation of the "United Colonies of New England" consummated May 19, 1643, for mutual military defense versus Indian and French, which finally resulted in our fight for independence.

JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE was our earliest ancestral member<sup>34</sup> followed<sup>56</sup> by WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON in 1643, JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE in 1644, ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP in 1646, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD in 1647, SIMON<sup>2</sup> TUTTLE in 1651, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY in 1656, JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS in 1665, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES in 1674, WILLIAM<sup>4</sup> DAWES in 1760 and his son WILLIAM<sup>6</sup> DAWES in 1768.<sup>56</sup>

\*In 1638 some four thousand acres of land had been assigned<sup>3</sup> to Roxbury "whear it may bee layde out w<sup>th</sup>out p<sup>r</sup>judice (prejudice) to any plantation or former graunts. . . ." and of this JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE was allowed one hundred and eighty-eight acres.<sup>2</sup> It may have been this same tract of one hundred and eighty-eight acres which was recorded as granted<sup>6</sup> to RHODA GORE fifty years later in 1688, but in any event it was still "not yet laid out" as late as November, 1717, when her grandson John<sup>3</sup> Gore of Roxbury (JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) petitioned again for it.<sup>6</sup> In addition to his Roxbury land, JOHN<sup>1</sup> purchased<sup>8</sup> property farther north, in Salisbury (see map, p. 209) about 1654. It consisted of a one-third interest in a saw mill, a house adjoining and fifty-six acres of upland and meadow. The deed was not made out until after his death when Thomas Macy, the grantor, conveyed the property to widow RHODA, the executrix, in August, 1658, "to satisfy a debt<sup>12</sup> owed by the deceased (JOHN<sup>1</sup>) to Chrispin Hooper of Boston. At a later transfer in 1662 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES was a witness.<sup>12</sup>

\*\*The names of two of these servants have been recorded<sup>14</sup> as (1) "Hanah Roe the maide servant of Mr. GORE", who became a member of the church;<sup>14</sup> and (2) Thomas Reeves who came to Roxbury in 1638, joined the church and presently became an indentured servant to JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE. He was so faithful and helpful that in May, 1644, before his term of service was completed, JOHN<sup>1</sup> asked permission of the General Court<sup>3</sup> to grant Reeves "his libty & freedome . . . hauing binn faithfull to his m(aster) in his place." In June, 1644, that permission was given to JOHN<sup>1</sup>, and Reeves in 1645 took the oath of freemanship and that year married his fellow servant Hannah Rowe.<sup>1,3</sup> Thus Reeves' loyalty was rewarded by the generosity of JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE.

but he took a prominent part in the town's life and was also called a merchant. In 1639 he attested and sealed deeds,<sup>7</sup> and was also chairman of a committee of four to settle the bounds between Boston and Roxbury at Muddy River "to the corner of Dedham lands next adioyning."<sup>3</sup> Later in that year he was on a committee from Roxbury "to marke y<sup>e</sup> trees that are to be the bounds" toward Dedham. This last boundary, however, remained in dispute until 1697.

JOHN<sup>1</sup> was one of our five\* Roxbury ancestors who bore the honor of pledging their homes<sup>5,31</sup> and property in 1645 for the annual payment of certain small stated sums<sup>32</sup> for the support of the "Free Schoole" in Roxbury (see Bridge, p. 113). JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE promised sixteen shillings annually "for his dwelling house" and for nearly one hundred years this and the various other subscribed sums were paid by the property first pledged, though about 1674 some arrangement was made whereby the original pledges were reduced by half, and a list made in 1690 shows the GORE home as liable for only eight shillings.<sup>5</sup>

In addition to interest in this local school, JOHN<sup>1</sup> and his wife displayed an appreciation of and a helpful attitude toward Harvard College. He made frequent gifts to it, sometimes joining Roxbury Church in a gift of money and at other times giving privately, as when in September, 1651, "M<sup>r</sup> GOORE" gave £1 to Harvard's president towards its upkeep, and in the following March a donation of "Sugar by M<sup>r</sup> GOORRE of roxbury" was recorded.<sup>4</sup> A payment "by GOORE" of thirty-three shillings six pence in the fall of 1657 would have been<sup>4</sup> either from the estate of JOHN<sup>1</sup> or perhaps more likely from his son JOHN<sup>2</sup>. JOHN<sup>1</sup> and RHODA further showed their approval of education by sending their eldest son, JOHN<sup>2</sup>, as a student<sup>37</sup> to Harvard in 1651. His tuition was paid largely in provisions, as was the habit then and in October, 1657, when she was only four months a widow, RHODA paid to Harvard forty-six shillings toward the tuition of Caleb<sup>2</sup> Watson.\*\*

JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE was made town clerk<sup>7</sup> or notary by 1639, constable<sup>3</sup> in 1641 and was town clerk for many years<sup>2,26</sup> as was his son JOHN<sup>2</sup> in later years. The Roxbury records in the Boston City Hall are in the handwriting of these two men for a period of fifty or sixty years.<sup>35</sup> The standing which JOHN<sup>1</sup> held in the community is portrayed by the almost universal use of the title "Mr." before his name.

In business affairs he was rather deeply involved. In 1651 he held a mortgage<sup>13</sup> on a house, one half of a well and one hundred acres of land owned by John Woodcock. He must also have signed<sup>10</sup> as surety in an extensive business deal between our JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE (see p. 600) and an English firm composed of William Stanley, Peter Le Gay, et al, of Southampton where RICHARD<sup>a</sup> GORE died and his son JOHN<sup>1</sup> had probably lived. It appears that in February, 1649, TUTTLE contracted to have certain supplies ready for shipment to the Barbadoes to fill orders taken there by the English firm, which sent a vessel for this merchandise. The master of the vessel and one of his mariners, Bradley and Barton by name, bore powers of attorney from the Englishmen to accept this freight or to take action in

\*Beside JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE, these were<sup>5</sup> DANIEL<sup>1</sup> BREWER, five shillings; JOHN<sup>1</sup> MAYS, two shillings; EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE two shillings. With these amounts, halved by 1674, there is added, in another list, the name of PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER (whose property had come to be owned by one Cheney at the later date) paying one shilling annually.<sup>5</sup>

\*\*Caleb<sup>2</sup> Watson, born in Roxbury in 1641, and so contemporaneous with the children of RHODA, was the son of John<sup>1</sup> Watson and of his wife Alice, widow of Valentine<sup>1</sup> Prentice. She and Valentine were married at Chelmsford, co. Essex, England, on June 29, 1626, and her surname began with "B" but the rest is illegible.<sup>45</sup> The question naturally arises as to whether widow RHODA may have been related to Alice or to Watson.

case it was not delivered. TUTTLE admitted before a notary that he did not have the full amount of merchandise ready. As a consequence on June 5, 1650, the agents filed an attachment against JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE, his wife JOAN and against JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE. On December 30, 1650, TUTTLE tendered the agents settlement in full in such goods as he had, but they refused to take any goods other than such as they had orders for, so on March 1, 1650-1, TUTTLE mortgaged his home and lands in Ipswich to secure his debt of £487-5-6. By December, 1651, JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE had, himself, become agent or attorney for these English merchants and then in their behalf accepted settlement in full for the TUTTLE debt and released the mortgage on the TUTTLE property.<sup>10</sup>

Before his death, JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE had personal business dealings<sup>15</sup> with William Stanley of the same firm, for as late as December, 1662, widow RHODA with her son Samuel<sup>2</sup> Gore, mortgaged to Stanley of Southampton, the home\* left by JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE in Roxbury (with the approval or permission of Remington, her then husband) to secure the payment of £136-6 sterling owed by GORE, deceased, to Stanley. The mortgage deed showed that RHODA was then living in this home and it provided for three payments of £45-8-8 each, by May 20 and October 20, 1663, and by April 25, 1664, of which the first payment was to be in "merchantable deale boards" and the others in merchantable provisions.<sup>15</sup>

JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE of Roxbury signed his will<sup>9,47</sup> on May 22, 1657, and in it referred to his being sick; required that his debts in both Old and New England should be paid and that all accounts owing to him should be speedily gathered up to pay his obligations as far as they would; he directed that some of his land or stock should be sold to completely clear his debts; that the balance of his estate should be held together until his younger son Samuel<sup>2</sup> became twenty-three. He gave one half of his estate to wife RHODA during her life and planned that "if my Loveing wife should Liue a widow Long and by Reason of any hand of God as sicknes or the like should be in any want, I doe giue her full power, with Consent of my overseers to sell some land and spend the same for her Comfort." The will referred to his five living children, explained<sup>9,47</sup> that JOHN<sup>2</sup> and Mary<sup>2</sup> had received their portions previously — probably at the time of their marriage, and it made wife RHODA sole executrix. The Roxbury vital records<sup>22</sup> state that JOHN<sup>1</sup> died on June 4, 1657, but the church records specify that he died on June 2 and was buried the next day.

The inventory of his estate, showing a valuation of over £812, was taken<sup>9</sup> June 22, 1657, and his will was proved on July 30, following. The inventory<sup>20</sup> was very long and showed the ownership of books to the value of £15, showed that the house was well furnished and contained<sup>47</sup> the following rooms: parlor, hall, kitchen, shop, with a chamber over each of these rooms — an unusually large and commodious house for 1657!

It is interesting to note that in spite of the fact that six of their eleven children died in infancy, that of the five who survived their father only one, JOHN<sup>2</sup> (or possibly also his sister Mary<sup>2</sup>) outlived their mother, and that widow RHODA born<sup>13</sup> about 1607-10, lived until 1693 when she would have been eight-three or more years old, outliving JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE thirty-six years. During this time she made

\*The short street still (1939) bearing the name of "Gore" ran through the property<sup>15</sup> of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and his home stood near at hand.

three more marriages and survived all four husbands. Obtainable items bearing on her long life show definite independence and business ability, for she was made executrix by three of her husbands<sup>9,15</sup> and was<sup>20</sup> appointed to help administer the estate of the fourth. She married secondly as his second wife before<sup>16,35</sup> June, 1659, John<sup>1</sup> Remington who was buried at Roxbury<sup>22</sup> June 8, 1667. Thirdly, she became the second wife of Edward<sup>1</sup> Porter of Boston after<sup>17</sup> April, 1675. He died between<sup>17</sup> July 28 and August 3, 1677, and she married fourthly after<sup>17</sup> October, 1677, as his second wife, Joshua<sup>1</sup> Tidd\* of Charlestown<sup>19</sup> who died September 15, 1678, aged seventy-one. The last two matrimonial ventures furnishing RHODA but a year or two of companionship apiece, she lived on thereafter for fifteen years as a widow, dying at Roxbury on August 22, 1693, called<sup>22</sup> "eighty-six" though a deposition of her own<sup>13</sup> in May, 1655, had called her then "about forty-five." At the date last named her testimony pertained to the weighing of fifty quintals\*\* of fish by Chrispin Hooper of Boston for shipment to the Barbadoes. Thirty of the quintals were New England fish and the rest were "new found Land fish" which had been "fyred in the sone." She testified that Hooper himself weighed all the fish except four quintals when he stepped aside to speak to a friend and then RHODA "tooke accompt . . . in his absence. . . ."<sup>13</sup>

As has been stated, RHODA, then Remington, but as executrix of GORE, in December, 1662, mortgaged<sup>39</sup> the GORE home in which she was then living, to settle a debt in England against GORE. Still as Remington and as executrix of GORE, RHODA sold land for £170 in 1674 to Joseph Griggs and Nathaniel Seaver.<sup>15</sup> The description in part referred to Muddy River and to "the Lane which goeth into m<sup>r</sup> Dudley's neck." In this case she retained one acre of salt marsh in the tract and "use of a way to cart off the hay," and until her death nearly twenty years later she still retained that acre.<sup>33,39</sup> In April, 1675, RHODA Remington with her son JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE as a witness sold land at a place called † Squirrels Delight, for £54. These last two deeds were not acknowledged until December, 1677, when she was already the widow RHODA Porter.

After the death of Edward Porter, her third husband, RHODA had quite a bit of trouble<sup>18</sup> with certain servants. In or before January, 1677-8, she had promised to pay £3-6 in money with other damages due in behalf of a Thomas Watts, but having failed to arrange for security from him, she went to court to enforce that point. Apparently she had good reason to question Watts' honesty for the following month she complained against him for stealing goods out of her house. A search warrant enabled an officer to examine the contents of Watts' chest where goods belonging to RHODA to the value of over £3 were found and seized. The court ordered the goods returned to RHODA and required Watts to pay three times their value, as the law then required, as well as costs of court.<sup>18</sup> About a year later our RHODA (already widow Tidd) complained against Elinor Reddish who confessed in court that she had stolen goods from m<sup>rs</sup> RHODA Tidd to the amount of £7-19-7 and from Henry Deering to the amount of twenty-four shillings, seven pence. She was sentenced to be whipped with fifteen stripes and to pay treble damages to each complainant. But since she had no means with which to pay,

\*Joshua<sup>1</sup> Tidd was undoubtedly a brother of our JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD.

\*\*A quintal was an hundred weight.

†Squirrels Delight was near Jamaica Pond toward Brookline (see map, p. 416).<sup>5</sup>

the Court<sup>18</sup> authorized Deering and our RHODA "to make sale of her to any of the English Nation not exceeding Seven yeares". This was attested in May, 1679.

January 27, 1679-80, is the latest date on which RHODA appeared in court, being then seventy or over. At that time as RHODA Tidd but as executrix<sup>20</sup> for Edward Porter, she was attempting to collect a debt due his estate.<sup>18</sup> And finally at the age of perhaps<sup>22</sup> eighty-six she died, at Roxbury on August 22, 1693. Her son JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE was made administrator of her estate and at long last the estate of her first husband JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE "Gentleman"<sup>33</sup> could be closed. JOHN<sup>2</sup> and two other townsmen gave bond of £250 though the appraisers said her estate totaled<sup>33</sup> but £101-3. They said her late dwelling house\* was not worth repairing and it was valued at only £10; the barn was in the same condition, but a "sider mill" in it brought its value to £5; the one acre of salt marsh at Muddy River counted for £10; while a "great Bible and other Books in the house & lent out" were listed<sup>33</sup> at £1-10.

That this family was thoroughly religious is evidenced not only by the upright lives of the parents but also in such records as the following made by Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Eliot relative to their third child: "Obadiah Gore, a child of 10 years, dyed of a consumption w<sup>th</sup> as sweete & gracious exp<sup>r</sup>essions of faith as ev[er] we have heard."<sup>14</sup>

The children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and RHODA (—) GORE, all but one (or possibly two) born in Roxbury but in slightly uncertain order, were<sup>14,22,25,35</sup>

- I. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. perh. in England; named in father's will 1657; m. (—) Milam, prob. Humphrey of Boston, and if so, she m. by 1651 and d. after 1666.<sup>43</sup>
- II. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- III. Obadiah<sup>2</sup>, b. June 27, 1636; d. of consumption May 7 or 12, 1646, aged 10.
- IV. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, b. prob.\*\* abt. 1638; d. July 4, 1692, aged<sup>35</sup> 54; called "Left." m. at Roxbury Aug. 28, 1672, Elizabeth<sup>s</sup> Weld (John<sup>2</sup>, Joseph<sup>1</sup>)<sup>41</sup> b. Nov. 14, 1655. His eldest son John<sup>s</sup> was famous as a student<sup>4,21</sup> at Harvard, graduating in 1706-7 and serving<sup>23</sup> as librarian there. Later he became a ship captain, sailing between Boston and the West Indies. He died on Nov. 12, 1720, of smallpox, on board his vessel, refusing to go ashore for care lest he might expose others to the disease.
- V. Abigail<sup>2</sup>, b. Aug. 5, 1641; d. Apr. 13 or 30, 1642.
- VI. Abigail<sup>2</sup>, bap. May 5 or 7, 1643; d. unm. Oct. 21 or 23, 1671.
- VII. Hannah<sup>2</sup>, b. May 15, bap. 18, 1645; d.<sup>42</sup> July 10, 1686, "aged 42"; m. at Roxbury June 13, 1677, Ralph Bradhurst.
- VIII. Obadiah<sup>2</sup>, bap. Mar. 25, 1648 or 1649; bur. Sept. 3, 1653.
- IX.-X. Twins<sup>2</sup>, bur. unlap. Jan. or June 11, 1651.
- XI. Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, bap. Dec. 31, 1654; "dyed within a short space after".

JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE (*John<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>22</sup> in England on May 23, 1634, died at Roxbury on June 26, 1705, having married there, at the age of forty-nine, on May 31, 1683, SARAH<sup>s</sup> GARDNER (see Gardner, p. 312) who was twenty-eight years his junior (see family tradition, p. 311). At the age of about seventeen, JOHN<sup>2</sup> had become a student at Harvard. His tuition was met by the payment of such marketable

\*In her lonely widowhood she evidently lived in manner greatly reduced from the home she had shared with JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE.

\*\*Samuel<sup>2</sup>, whose birth is not recorded, is frequently called the youngest son in this family, perhaps because of the age of his wife. That placing seems untenable for several reasons: his father's will<sup>9</sup> requested that the estate be held intact (except for settlement of debts) until Samuel<sup>2</sup> reached the age of twenty-three and in December, 1662, Samuel<sup>2</sup> joined his mother in a mortgage deed of the home property to settle a debt<sup>39</sup> of his father in England. If he were the fourth child, he would have been then about twenty-three but otherwise he would have been a minor. Moreover, in 1664, an account was due to Samuel<sup>2</sup> from the estate of Thomas Grocer for supplying a "Coffinne & Raile".<sup>24</sup> Samuel<sup>2</sup> was a carpenter,<sup>35</sup> but if born last in this family would have been only a child in 1664, while if born between 1636 and 1641 he would have been old enough to have built a coffin. This Samuel<sup>2</sup> was the great grandfather of Gov. Christopher<sup>6</sup> Gore of Massachusetts.<sup>35</sup>

produce as a quarter of beef, Indian corn, barley, malt, rye, "a chest of glasse" for the president and by various sums of money.<sup>4</sup> Specific charges against him in the Steward's book,<sup>4</sup> in addition to tuition were for "Candell and wood", "Study rente", "Commons and sizings",\* "beed making", "fyer" and "Shooe mendinge". Apparently he was fined for infraction of the rules or perhaps damage to the property for at one time he was "punished by the psidente 2<sup>s</sup>", was again "punished" by Mr. Dunster ten shillings, and was charged "by detrements."<sup>4</sup> He was a member of the class of 1655 and attended from 1651 through 1654 but he did not<sup>37</sup> graduate. Nothing seems to be recorded of him in Roxbury from 1654 until 1673 and it seems possible that he may have spent some years at sea for a man of his name and age made deposition<sup>17</sup> in Boston, as master of a vessel called the "Mayflower", on November 25, 1665, at the age of thirty-one. If this be really he, it could help to account for his late marriage.

In 1673 JOHN<sup>2</sup> leased for twenty-one years\*\* the property given to the Free School by the will of Thomas Bell in 1671. His lease required that he should teach the school, procure a substitute, or pay £12 a year in corn or cattle.<sup>5</sup> While he is not officially listed among the teachers, the lease<sup>49</sup> itself, dated March 4, 1673, called him "Schoolmaster". An unsigned note covered an agreement between GORE and the Feoffees whereby GORE was to teach "all scholars that shall attend belonging to said Town, whether Latin scholars, writers, readers, or spellers, for the term of a full and compleate yeare. . . ." Some misunderstanding arose and JOHN<sup>2</sup> wrote the officials March 26, 1674, asking for a postponement, adding "I do hereby declare that it shall not be anywise grievous to me, if the Feoffees make choice of another schoolmaster."<sup>49</sup> This was done the next month, so he probably did not teach at all.

His education, however, qualified him also as a surveyor, and remaining records testify to his extended usefulness in that line. In October, 1683, the General Court appointed JOHN<sup>2</sup> as official surveyor<sup>27</sup> to lay out any grants made by that body. In 1684 he laid out four thousand acres of land<sup>46</sup> in what is now northern Windham County, Connecticut, receiving five hundred acres in payment;<sup>29</sup> in 1686 he was paid £3 for eleven days of exploring and surveying<sup>46</sup> farther south in that county; in June, 1687, he surveyed<sup>30</sup> Muddy River (Brookline) with Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Eliot, and Samuel Sewall in attendance who report him as "compassing the land with his plain Table";<sup>30</sup> on September 19, 1687, the royal governor, Andros, ordered<sup>28</sup> him as deputy surveyor to lay out tracts of two hundred and fifty acres and four hundred and five acres in Worcester and a tract eight miles square near Worcester; and the following day ordered him to survey all vacant land east of Worcester and Oxford (see map, p. 618) and between those towns and Marlborough, Wrensham(?) and Mendham† as well as westward from Worcester to the Quinnebaug. In this last case he was to report on the quality as well as the quantity of the land. Then

\*Commons implied the regular meals at the common table and sizings referred to food and drink ordered from the buttery, between meals.

\*\*In 1686 a five hundred year lease<sup>49</sup> was made to JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE of the "mansion house, barns, orchards and Homesteads late belonging to the said Mr. Bell . . ." for £14 per year and about that time several other leases of school lands for the same period were signed but criticism of this practice was keen and legal opinion disapproved. In 1716-7 a suit was instituted against Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> Gore (JOHN<sup>2</sup>) to recover the school lands and break the five hundred year lease. "These leases were finally all cancelled by agreement."<sup>49</sup>

†Wrentham (?) and Mendon (see map, p. 618).

on October 6, 1687, he was ordered to make a survey in what is now Maine.<sup>23</sup> He surely could have carried on no other business during these years. In about 1700 he also surveyed boundaries between Sudbury and Framingham.<sup>46</sup>

In 1677 JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE had given bond<sup>48</sup> as one of the administrators of the estate of Samuel<sup>2</sup> May (JOHN<sup>1</sup>). On May 30, 1686, "SARAH the wife of M<sup>r</sup> JOHN GORE was received to full Comunion" in Roxbury Church by Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Eliot and on November 26 of the same year "M<sup>r</sup> JOHN GORE confessed Christ & was received to full Comunion."<sup>38,44</sup> In 1689 JOHN<sup>2</sup> and his brother Samuel<sup>2</sup> were on a committee to sell<sup>35,38</sup> the old church bell, which was split, toward the purchase of a new one, and that same year they were made two of the four original trustees of the school in western Roxbury founded by Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Eliot which is still (1939) in existence and is now known as the\* Eliot Industrial School.<sup>35</sup> In 1689 when Rev. Eliot made his deed of gift of seventy-five acres of land for this school, he specified<sup>41</sup> that it was "For the maintenance, support and encouragement of a school, and school-master, at that part of Roxbury commonly called Jamaica or Pond Plain, for the teaching and instructing of the children of that end of town (together with such negroes or Indians as may come to said school) and to no other use or purpose under any color or pretence whatever."<sup>41</sup> Another most gratifying task which JOHN<sup>2</sup> performed in 1689 was an aftermath of the rule of the despised royal governor Andros. For early that year when rumor announced the advent of William of Orange as King, the flame of bitterness which had long been smothered, burst forth with violence and Gov. Andros and his party to the number of about fifty were seized and confined, and the elected magistrates who had been serving when Andros arrived in 1686 were reinstated. As town clerk, it was the duty of JOHN<sup>2</sup> to record that on May 20, 1689, the inhabitants of Roxbury voted in favor of this action.<sup>26</sup>

In 1691 JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE proved the will<sup>41</sup> of John<sup>2</sup> Weld which he had witnessed as long before as 1676. Weld was the father-in-law of Samuel<sup>2</sup> Gore. Until 1693 the Roxbury Church had used seats for its attendants but that year members were permitted to build pews<sup>38</sup> and the placing of the pew<sup>1</sup> of JOHN<sup>2</sup> was "by the pulpit stairs."

What was early called the Nipmug (Nipmuck) Country\*\* had been granted to the Massachusetts Bay Colony by the Plymouth Colony in 1635. Roxbury, which had comparatively little territory in which to expand, asked in 1682 for a grant of land seven miles square in the Nipmuck Country upon which to settle some of its people (see map, p. 416). This request was acceded to in 1683 with the provisions that thirty families must settle thereon within three years and that they should "maintain among them an able and orthodox godly minister."<sup>46</sup> Roxbury accepted these terms, and in October, 1684, sent four men to view the land and to recommend an exact location. They reported favorably of the west side of the Quinnebaug River (see map, p. 618) and the Roxbury residents began to discuss excitedly which of them should be "Goers" and which should be "Stayers". A "Goer" was required to be twenty-one by June 10, 1686. In March-April of 1685-6

\*This school now occupies its fourth building, erected in 1834 at 24 Eliot Street, Jamaica Plain and now (1939) functions as an evening school specializing in Arts and Crafts.<sup>15</sup> The "Third Church in Roxbury", organized in 1760, now known as the "Unitarian Church, Jamaica Plain" stands on a part of the land bequeathed by the Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Eliot and is separated from the school only by the graveyard which is on a side street.<sup>15</sup>

\*\*The Nipmuck Country<sup>28</sup> lay in what we know as Massachusetts and over into Connecticut centering in Worcester, Mendon, Sutton, Oxford and into northern Windham County, Connecticut.

a group called<sup>35</sup> the original "Old Thirteen", including JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE,\* volunteered to go ahead and "break up the land", which evidently implied surveying tracts for the various "Goers." The Roxbury grant was to run westward from the Quinnebaug for six miles and to extend north and south for eight miles. This was a hard location in which to attempt a survey, for though as early as 1642 Massachusetts had designated<sup>52</sup> the "two mathematicians" Nathaniel Woodward and Solomon Saffery to establish the boundary between that colony and Connecticut according to the charter, the result which bore the name of "Woodward-Saffery Line" (see map, p. 618) gave Massachusetts a strip six or more miles wide across what is now known as Connecticut. It was a practically unmarked, "unknown, disputed and almost imaginary line, . . . which could not be identified."<sup>46</sup> The boundary between these two colonies was in dispute for more than a century and a half.<sup>29,52</sup> It is not surprising therefore that JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE and his helpers, who spent eleven days in exploring and surveying, but lacking definite land marks and records, placed<sup>29</sup> the southern bounds of their New Roxbury (Woodstock) tract two miles farther south than the offending Woodward-Saffery line itself, so that most of their tract proved ultimately<sup>46</sup> to be in Connecticut. The settlement was called New Roxbury in 1686 but in 1690 became Woodstock. Though JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE held land in Woodstock and also in Pomfret<sup>29</sup> farther south, he retained his residence in his old Roxbury home<sup>35</sup> but some of his descendants made use of these Connecticut lands. An item which undoubtedly pertained to JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE, since his son of that name was still a minor, shows that in April 1703 among a group of emigrants sailing from Liverpool were four<sup>51</sup> who were bound out to "Mr. JOHN GORE" namely John Pelton from Lancashire, aged thirteen with nine years to serve; Easter Deakin of Toxteth Park, Lancashire, aged twenty-two with five years to serve; James Johnson, aged eighteen with seven years to serve; and Ann Linacre of Liverpool, aged thirty-eight with four years to serve.<sup>51</sup> (See Errata Number 14).

JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE served Roxbury<sup>35,46</sup> as selectman and as town clerk<sup>5,26</sup> at least from 1688 (and probably earlier) until his death in 1705. He died intestate and the administration of his estate was granted to his son John<sup>3</sup> who presented a report on its settlement on December 7, 1709. The inventory is said<sup>47</sup> to have shown valuation of £392, including land in Woburn, though others report<sup>35</sup> a total of £611.

The children of JOHN<sup>2</sup> and SARAH (GARDNER) GORE all born in Roxbury were<sup>21,22,25,35,40,44</sup>

- i. Hannah<sup>3</sup>, b.<sup>22</sup> Feb. 14, 1678-9; d. in 1775 aged 87-88; m. at Roxbury June 6, 1711, Samuel<sup>3</sup> Curtis (Isaac<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>42</sup>
- ii. John<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 27, bap. Mar. 2, 1683-4; d. in 1756, aged 72; m. at Boston Oct. 20, 1708, Mary Stedman.
- iii. Sarah<sup>3</sup>, b. Aug. 24, bap. 30, 1685; d. in 1776, aged 90; m. at Roxbury June 3, 1709, James<sup>3</sup> Pierpont (Robert<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>).<sup>42</sup>
- iv. Ebenezer<sup>3</sup>, b. Nov. 7, 1689; d. at Roxbury Nov. 13, 1763, aged 74; m. there Nov. 20, 1712, Susanna Paul (Samuel of Dorchester).<sup>42</sup> In 1739 he signed a petition to keep negro servants off the streets at night.<sup>35</sup>
- v. Abigail<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 15, 1691-2; d.<sup>22</sup> Aug. 12, 1691-2 or 1693.
- vi. ABIGAIL<sup>3</sup>, b. Oct. 26, 1693; d. at Roxbury<sup>22</sup> Jan. 26, 1763, in her 70th yr.; m. April 3, 1718, EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> MAY (see May, p. 418).<sup>48</sup> They were both buried in the Eustis Street Cemetery (see map, p. 275) and the inscriptions<sup>15</sup> on their tomb stones are entirely legible in 1939.

\*In several printed records his name has been erroneously<sup>46</sup> rendered as "John Lord".

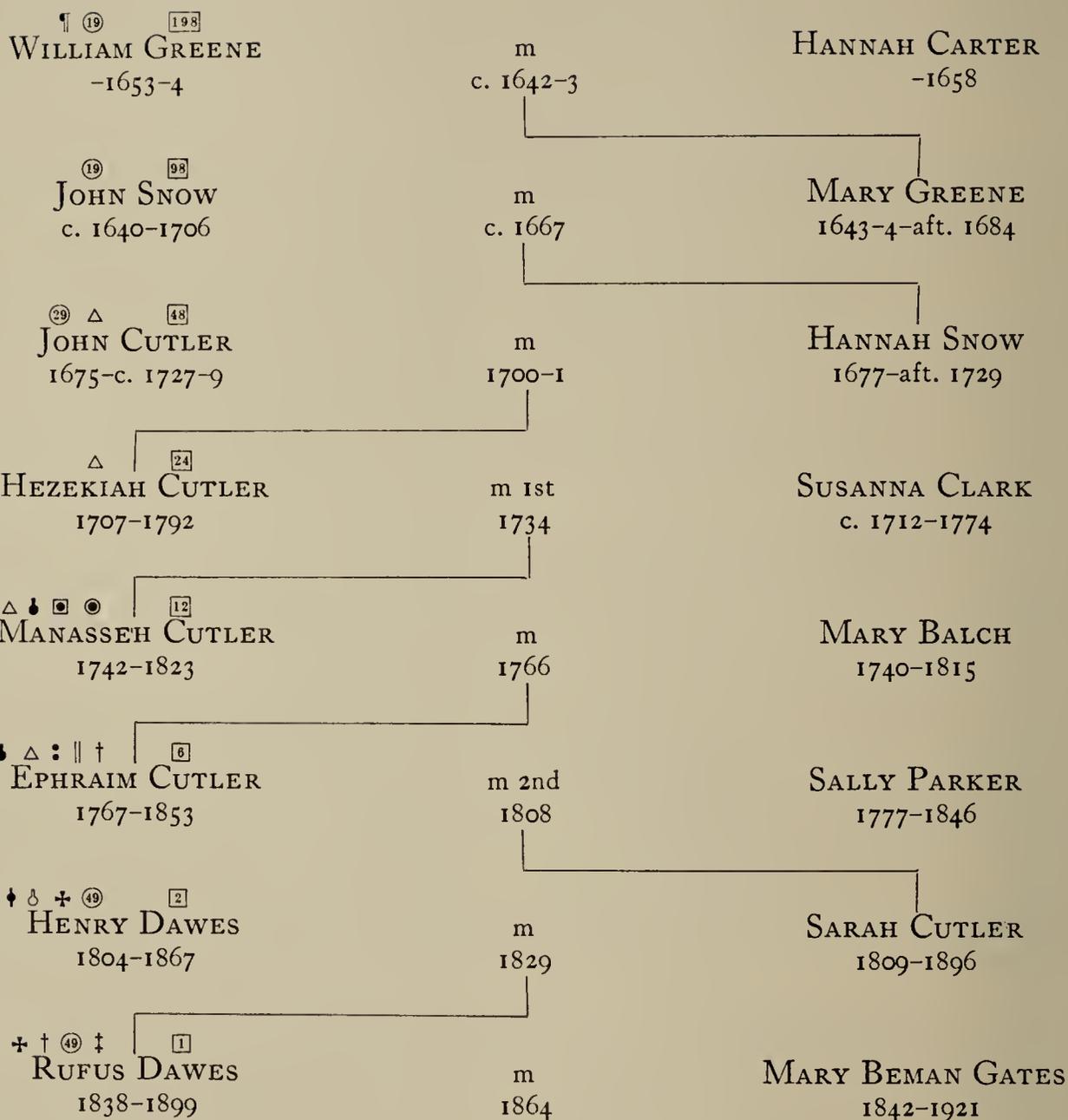
They are numbered (by a late W.P.A. Project) No. 189 and No. 190, and are just behind the front fence to the left of the entrance.<sup>15</sup>

- VII. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 11, 1695; d. Feb. 15, 1695-6.  
 VIII. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, b. May 15, 1697; d. June 9, 1697.  
 IX. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 1, 1699; d. at Roxbury Nov. 29, 1757, aged 58-2-17; m. at Roxbury Feb. 23, 1727, Mary<sup>4</sup> Williams (Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Stephen<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>).<sup>35</sup>

## REFERENCES

1. New England Register, III, 95; History of Roxbury, C. M. Ellis, 1847, p. 119; History of the First Church in Roxbury, W. E. Thwing, 1908, pp. 53, 55-6, 72, 74, 125.
2. Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880, I, 405, 407; New England Register, II, 54; Boston Record Commissioners Report, VI, 5, 7, 11-2, 17-8, 35, 99.
3. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 229, 341-2, 345, 373; II, 67; III, 6.
4. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXXI, 132-4, 237, 259, 275-6.
5. Ellis' Roxbury, pp. 19, 34, 46, 52, 55-7, 68-70, 87.
6. Journal of the House of Representatives of Massachusetts, 1715-7, I, 233.
7. Thomas Lechford's Note Book, 1885, pp. 157-8.
8. Essex Antiquarian, II, 83.
9. New England Register, VIII, 61, 282.
10. B. R. C. R., XXXII, 5, 344-6, 362, 382-4, 423-4; Suffolk Deeds, (published) I, 270-2.
11. Publications of the Southampton (Eng.) Record Society XXXVI, 50, 77.
12. Essex Antiquarian, VII, 35.
13. Suffolk Deeds, (published) I, 135; II, 166.
14. B. R. C. R., VI, 51, 73, 82, 85, 99, 114, 116, 118, 170, 173, 175-6, 178, 180, 186.
15. Suffolk Deeds (published) IV, 91; X, 227-30; Research performed by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass.
16. Early Families of Rowley, G. E. Blodgett, 1933, pp. 319-20.
17. Pope's Pioneers, 1900, pp. 193, 369, 382, 448.
18. Pub. Col. Soc. of Mass., XXX, 881, 894, 1014, 1139.
19. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, p. 945.
20. Research by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Suffolk County Probates, VI, 199.
21. Savage, II, 280-1.
22. Vital Records of Roxbury, I, 146-7; II, 173-4, 533-6, 588, 650.
23. Pub. Col. Soc. Mass., XV, 376-7; XVI, 860.
24. New England Register, XIII, 156.
25. Massachusetts Historical Society Proceedings, Ser. I, XIII, 423.
26. History of Roxbury, F. S. Drake, 1878, pp. 19, 50, 297-8, 321-3.
27. Records of Massachusetts Bay, IV, pt. 2, pp. 517-9, V, 418.
28. Pub. Col. Soc. of Mass., XXI, 293, 303-6.
29. History of Windham Co., Conn., R. M. Bayles, 1889, pp. 27-30, 518-9.
30. Mass. Hist. Soc. Collections, Ser. 5, V, 180-1.
31. Winsor's Boston, I, 419.
32. Plymouth, Norfolk and Barnstable Counties, E. Thompson, 1928, II, 976-8; New England Register, XXXVIII, 62.
33. New England Register, XXXI, 104, 177.
34. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Co., O. A. Roberts, 1895, I, 60-1, 133, 145.
35. History of Woodstock, Conn., C. W. Bowen, 1935, VI, 10-13; History of Wilkesbarre and the Wyoming Valley, O. J. Harvey, 1909, II, 831; History of Stonington, Conn., R. A. Wheeler, 1900, p. 397.
36. Burke's Armorial General, 1884, p. 413.
37. Harvard Graduates, J. L. Sibley, 1873, I, 560.
38. Thwing's Roxbury Church, pp. 53, 55, 72, 74, 125.
39. B. R. C. R., XXXII, 344-6; Suffolk Deeds, (published) I, 270; IV, 91a-92; VII, 32; X, 227-30.
40. B. R. C. R., VI, 99, 138-9.
41. Weld Collections, C. F. Robinson, 1938, pp. 35, 45, 56-9; Savage IV, 457; Tracy Genealogy, S. W. Tracy, 1936, p. 143.
42. Savage, I, 232; III, 259, 372, 433; Curtis Genealogy, S. C. Clarke, 1869, p. 6.
43. New England Register, XXXI, 101; B. R. C. R., IX, 36, 41, 70, 74, 89, 100.
44. Ibid., VI, 99, 138-9.
45. American Genealogist, D. L. Jacobus, X, 15.
46. Bowen's Woodstock, 1926, I, 15-9, 28, 43, 56; Morris Family Register, J. F. Morris, 1887, pp. 36, 172; Bayles' Windham County, pp. 27, 836-7; Annals of Sudbury, Wayland and Maynard, A. S. Hudson, 1891, p. 211; History of Sudbury, A. S. Hudson, 1889, p. 72.
47. Research by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., in Suffolk Co., Probates, I, 300; XIII, 273, 386, file No. 162; Probates, VI, 199; XII, 174, file No. 919; Probate file No. 1736; Probate, XVIII, 420, file No. 1360; Deeds (published) IV, 91a-92; X, 227.
48. May Genealogy, Samuel May, 1878, pp. 2, 4, 142.
49. C. K. Dillaway's History of a Grammar School, 1860, pp. 40-4, 48-54, 58-9, 147-8; Ellis' History of Roxbury, pp. 45-8, 54, 57.
50. New England Register, LXXXII, 151, 157.
51. Ibid., LXV, 50.
52. History of Connecticut, G. L. Clark, 1914, pp. 175-6.
53. Courtesy of Mr. Robert D. Weston, Chairman and Dr. Harold Bowditch, Secretary of the Committee on Heraldry of the New England Historic Genealogical Society.
54. Year Book of Probates, Prerogative Court of Canterbury for the year 1645, 1906-8, IV, 32.
55. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, pp. 4-9, 12, 84-5.
56. Ibid., I, 60-1, 133, 145, 157-8, 161-2, 171, 179-80, 203, 229; II, 100-1, 148-50.

# GREENE



- † Charlestown
- <sup>19</sup> Woburn
- <sup>29</sup> Cambridge Farms (later Lexington)
- Δ Killingly, Conn.
- ♂ Edgartown
- ◻ Dedham
- Hamilton
- ⋮ Waterford, O.

- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♂ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ✕ Malta, O.
- <sup>49</sup> Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## GREENE

**W**ILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE came to New England on an unknown vessel at an unknown date, but by or before 1640, for in that year, he was recorded as an inhabitant of Charlestown.<sup>1</sup> In May, 1640, that town had asked the General Court<sup>3</sup> for additional land “‘to accommodate such useful men as might settle’ here, and form ‘a village for the improvement of such remote lands as are already laid out.’” Consequently, grants were made in May, 1640, and again in October on condition of their being built upon within two years.<sup>3</sup> A committee of Charlestown men was appointed in September to explore the territory and suggest a plan for the town, and during the winter a number of trips were made toward that end. We are told<sup>3</sup> that “The committee was obliged to spend nights without shelter ‘whilst rain and snow did bedew their rocky beds.’” During one exploratory expedition some of the company had sheltered themselves “under the body of a large tree, which lay at a distance from the ground, no sooner was the last of them come from under it, at break of day, than to their amazement it fell; and they were obliged to dig out their provisions, their united strength being insufficient to move it.”<sup>3</sup> Some of the men who had been intending removal to this prospective settlement became discouraged “the way being so plain backward that divers never went forward again.”

But even before the survey was completed, some thirty-one men, mostly residents of Charlestown, met on December 18, 1640, at the home of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Graves and agreed upon and signed a series of “Town Orders”<sup>3</sup> which were to apply to the new village or settlement and one of these signers\* was WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE. Their preamble was similar to the earlier part of the “General Laws and Liberties”, including such phrases<sup>3</sup> as “The free fruition of such liberties and privileges as humanity, civility and christianity calls for as due to every man . . .” and “. . . the tranquility and stability of Christian Commonwealths. . . .” But the practical gist of the matter was that each signer agreed<sup>20</sup> to pay six pence per acre for tracts then laid out, twelve pence per acre for land surveyed later; agreed that all who did not build within fifteen months must give up their lots and none were to sell without permission of the group. All orchards and garden plots were to be well enclosed; and “‘no manner of person’ should entertain ‘inmates either married or other’, more than three days without the consent of ‘four of the Selectmen’ under a penalty of six pence for each day’s offence; and, finally none were to cut young oak timber ‘under eight inches square’ under penalty of five shillings for

\*Other men who signed these orders<sup>3</sup> were FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL, JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD, JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER (THOMAS<sup>1</sup>), Edward<sup>1</sup> Converse (who called John<sup>1</sup> Parker “kinsman”) and James<sup>1</sup> Parker, later of Groton — of whom the last two named were brothers of our JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER.<sup>3</sup>

each offense. Small things, some may think, to follow so high sounding a preamble. But let them not be despised; for such are the fibres of our national tree."<sup>3</sup>

In June, 1641, the General Court extended substantial help to this new group by granting two years immunity<sup>3</sup> from public rates (colony taxes) to Charlestown Village — which is the name the settlement bore until September 8, 1642, when it was incorporated and given the name of Woburn.<sup>3</sup> After this it was, in a civil way, co-equal with its parent town. But even when it was surveyed, built and incorporated it "was still but half founded", for, as Edward Johnson said, it would be "as unnatural for a right New England man to live without an able ministry, as for a smith to work his iron without a fire."<sup>3</sup> However, these villagers were not hasty, for they continued their membership in the Charlestown church for a couple of years and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE even acquired membership at Charlestown<sup>1,4</sup> as late as November 9, 1643. But "after much agitation" [deliberation] and, we are told,<sup>19</sup> after the erection of a meeting house and parsonage, they had invited the neighboring churches to meet and help them organize a church<sup>3,19</sup> on August 14, 1642, a month prior to the incorporation of the town. Three months later, in November, 1642, their minister, the Rev. Thomas<sup>1</sup> Carter was ordained. In view of the trouble which came to Malden Church (see Call, pp. 134-7) as a result of their lay ordination of their own pastor in 1649, it is interesting to note that in Woburn just seven years earlier, a lay ordination had occurred,<sup>19</sup> as there had earlier still at Salem in 1629, at Charlestown in 1630, at Boston and at Newtowne in 1633. In other words, up to 1642 it had been approved Congregational usage.<sup>19</sup> And here at Woburn we are told<sup>19</sup> that the situation had been discussed in advance as differing opinions were arising, and the Woburn church was firm in maintaining the right of lay ordination, "fearing the tendency to 'a dependency of churches and so a presbytery' and they would not allow it."<sup>3</sup> So, though at least one of the magistrates as well as ministers and elders from neighboring churches were present, two of the Woburn members laid their hands upon the candidate's head and said, "We Ordain thee Thomas Carter to be Pastor unto this Church of Christ."<sup>19</sup> Then they asked a visiting elder to lead in prayer.<sup>19</sup> So it was accomplished "without the [official] presence or permission of hierarchy, Protestant or Catholic."<sup>3,18</sup> But evidence is seen in this case of the odd situation of a government made up of church members which in turn attempted to exert civil limitations upon the church. The increasing tendency of civil powers to dominate the church is further seen in the fact that Gov. Winthrop was displeased with this ceremony of ordination, for he held that Woburn had no "members fit to Solemnize such an ordinance" and that it was performed "not so well and orderly as it aught".<sup>3,18</sup> This becomes especially significant in view of the greatly increased disapproval accorded the Malden church a few years later (see Call, pp. 134-7) because they performed the lay ordination<sup>18</sup> of Rev. Marmaduke Matthews.

Capt. Edward Johnson, a contemporary neighbor and personal friend of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE, in his "Wonderworking Providence of New England" tells at length<sup>19</sup> and intimately of the conditions under which our GREENE, CARTER, SNOW and KENDALL ancestors lived. The people of the seacoast settlements spoke of Woburn as a "remote land". It was a "watery swamp" difficult to travel through and covered with "an unknown woods". Johnson wrote that "Every one who could lift a hoe to strike it into the earth aided in raising the first crop; but they had to

stand stoutly to their labors and tear up the roots and bushes which abounded, the first year bearing them, in useful vegetables, a very thin crop" — so thin indeed "that they were forced to cut their bread very thin for a long season", though fish which abounded in the streams helped greatly.<sup>15,19</sup> In February, 1640, the first bridge was laid over the Aberjona River\* and was for years called "Could Bridge" probably because of its being built during severe weather.<sup>15</sup>

There was a considerable delay in establishing the boundaries between Charlestown and Woburn, which were under discussion at least by 1643 and onward. In March, 1646, Woburn decided "to send to the selectmen of Charlestown the following admirable letter, a model of directness of purpose and of Christian courtesy:

"Much Respected and Aintient ffreinds:

Wee are Bould to interupt your present presious Impliments [employments] with Request for Issue [decision] of those things which sartaine of our Beloued Brethren among you were chosen unto, now our humble Request is that they may End it forth with, if other wise they cannot so doe our further Request is that some others uninterested in the things may put a ffreindly Isue to the same, our last Request is that if nether of these will doe then in a brotherly and ffreindly way to petistion to the generall court that wee may not bequeth mator of diferanc to our posterity, thus with hope of a presant answer in witting to our soe Resanabl Request

Wee Remain yours to be commanded  
in all sarius of loue in Christ our Lord."<sup>19</sup>

In March, 1649, the matter of boundaries was still pending and "four of the selectmen of Woburn were chosen to speak with their 'brethern of Charlestown' about 'settling the bounds'", which finally in January, 1651, was accomplished after at least eight years delay.<sup>3</sup> In this connection, mention was made of an outlying tract, now Wilmington (see map, p. 255) lying between present day Reading and Billerica, which was called the "Land of Nod". It is believed<sup>3</sup> that its remoteness from the existing church was the cause of its receiving that odd name, in memory of Cain when he went "from the presence of the Lord."

In the successive divisions of common lands, tracts were frequently named from peculiarities of their terrain,<sup>15</sup> as Waterfield, Rockfield, Linefield, etc. As has been shown, Charlestown Village became Woburn, and its outlying "Waterfield" became Winchester, among whose original owners were Seth Sweetsir, second husband of our ELIZABETH (—) HAYWARD, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL, and Daniel<sup>2</sup> Shepardson (DANIEL<sup>1</sup>).<sup>15</sup>

At an unknown date, but by 1643, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE married, probably at Charlestown, HANNAH<sup>2</sup> CARTER (see Carter, p. 145). She had become a member of Charlestown Church<sup>4</sup> on September 2, 1639, and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was admitted to that organization,<sup>1,4</sup> on November 9, 1643, and was made a freeman<sup>6,9,10</sup> on May 29, 1644. His father-in-law THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CARTER, senior, of Charlestown had received a grant of one lot in what became Woburn, and had purchased an adjacent equal amount — the whole tract totaling one hundred and thirty-five acres. On March 30, 1647, CARTER acknowledged a deed of gift which transferred one half of this tract to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE and he presently deeded the other half to his son Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER, the latter transfer being unfortunately reported as bearing dates of

\*A stream running through the center of Winchester and on into the Mystic River. The Indians of this section were called Aberginny men,<sup>19</sup> a common derivation no doubt.

April 6, 1648, May 3, 1648, and January 20, 1649-50. The land of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE lay to the northwest of, and adjoining that of his brother-in-law CARTER.<sup>1,11,14</sup> After the death of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CARTER in 1652, (his will having made bequests to his widow, his children and to four of his grandsons)<sup>1</sup> his widow MARY and her sons Samuel<sup>2</sup> and Joseph<sup>2</sup> asked the advice of the General Court<sup>11,17</sup> concerning the handling of these legacies to the grandsons. On September 10, 1653, the Court approved of their suggested plan of turning over the £10 bequests to the parents of each of these four minor legatees, plus the acre of ground for each (or the proportionate price for which it sold) — the respective parents binding themselves to meet certain rights of the widow MARY as well as to safely keep the gifts for their children.<sup>17</sup>

Within three or four months of this action, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE was attacked by his final illness and he, calling himself of Woburn, "being sick of Boddy, yet in good & perfect memory" made his will<sup>1,16</sup> on January 6, 1653-4, the day before his death.<sup>5,6</sup> The will specified that his wife HANNAH should have one third of all his movable goods, also one third of the house and land during her life, and made her his executrix to dispose of the remainder of the estate to their children as they became twenty-one or married. It required, however, that if HANNAH should marry again the named overseers, the testator's brother-in-law, JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER, and his friend, Capt. Edward<sup>1</sup> Johnson should have the power "to disspose of my Children & there portions according to there discession." It gave to John<sup>2</sup>, the eldest son, a double share and referred also to the £10 bequest which the grandfather, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CARTER, had made to John<sup>2</sup> Greene. The testator divided his remaining estate equally among his other children "as well sons as daughters".<sup>16</sup> The named overseers were also witnesses to the document and helped to take the inventory of the estate on January 28, 1653-4. On April 4, 1654, Ens. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER made a deposition when he proved the will.<sup>1,16</sup> From this time on JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER and his brothers, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup> and Joseph<sup>2</sup> maintained a careful oversight, trusteeship and probably legal guardianship over these five nieces and nephews.<sup>22</sup> Their mother HANNAH was married again,<sup>1</sup> to a Thomas Brown of Charlestown who was born about 1628 (aged thirty in 1658) and she died<sup>1</sup> presumably at Charlestown in 1658. MARY<sup>2</sup> GREENE and her brothers and sister very likely lived subsequently with their Carter relatives. On April 4, 1671, when they were all grown JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER distributed<sup>11</sup> "their inheritance among them and John<sup>2</sup> Greene acknowledged receipt from his "much respected uncle JOHN CARTER, Senior, of Woburn" of all the estate willed him by his father and also of a part of the estate due to his brother Ebenezer<sup>2</sup>, which he agreed to pass on. Thomas Knowlton of Ipswich receipted for the share due to his wife, Hannah<sup>2</sup> Greene, daughter of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, and JOHN<sup>2</sup> SNOW of Woburn gave a receipt "as of the full of" his wife's portion from "her father WILLIAM GREENE".<sup>11,27</sup>

A most eloquent item<sup>15</sup> is recorded as of a Woburn family, and though it is of a much later date it is too rare to omit. It evidently pertains to the habit of arranging for food and shelter for the aged and indigent and shows that Woburn was debtor to Daniel Reed, jr.

"to boarding Sally priest nine weeks at 2 s[hillings] per week ending ye 5th of March" totaling eighteen shillings. Then is added,

“to her bringing the itch into my family I leave to your generosity, but money should not hire me to have it.”

And the town responded by paying him the eighteen shilling account and also “allowed for the Itch £1-0-0”.<sup>15</sup>

The children of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and HANNAH (CARTER) GREENE, born in Woburn were<sup>1,2,5,6,9,27</sup>

- I. \*MARY<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>1</sup> Jan. 20, 1643-4; d. after<sup>7</sup> 1684; m. by<sup>5,7,27</sup> 1667 JOHN<sup>2</sup> SNOW (see SNOW, p. 554) who signed a receipt in 1671 for her share of her father's estate.<sup>11</sup>
- II. \*\*Hannah<sup>2</sup>, b. Feb. 7, 1646-7; d. at Norwich, Conn. Oct. 24, 1708;<sup>26</sup> m. (record in Ipswich)<sup>12</sup> Nov. 24, 1668, Thomas Knowlton of Ipswich who receipted<sup>11</sup> in 1671 for her share of her father's estate. He was called son of William (Wm.).<sup>26</sup>
- III. John<sup>2</sup>, b. Oct. 1 1649; living 1680, probably dead<sup>6</sup> by 1687; m. at Woburn<sup>5,6</sup> July 3, 1671, Sarah<sup>2</sup> Bateman (John<sup>1</sup> of Boston).<sup>6</sup>
- IV. William<sup>2</sup>, b. Oct. 22, 1651; d.<sup>5,6</sup> Dec. 1, 1717, at Woburn; m. 1st<sup>1,13</sup> by 1674 Mary<sup>3</sup> Felch (Henry<sup>2</sup> Henry<sup>1</sup>) who d. at Woburn June 3, 1676; he m. 2nd<sup>5,6,8</sup> 1677-8 Hannah<sup>2</sup> Kendall (FRANCIS<sup>1</sup>). He was corporal of cavalry in King Philip's War and in June, 1677, was appointed cornet of the Three County Troop.<sup>6,17</sup> Membership in the cavalry corps was encouraged by a rebate on taxes.<sup>25</sup>
- V. Ebenezer<sup>2</sup>, birth not recorded, but probably about 1653; his father's will refers<sup>16</sup> to “sons” in addition to John<sup>2</sup> the eldest; when John<sup>2</sup> Greene receipted to his uncle JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER for his own share of his father's estate, he also receipted for a part of the share of his brother<sup>11</sup> Ebenezer; and it was undoubtedly this Ebenezer<sup>2</sup> who died<sup>1</sup> about Nov. 24, 1675, with administration of his estate given to Thomas<sup>2</sup> Carter and with his estate amounting to £39 being in the hands of JOHN CARTER.† He was doubtless a mariner (probably unmarried) and wages for twelve months and fifteen days were due him for a voyage to France.<sup>1</sup>

\*Some writers<sup>8</sup> erroneously claim that JOHN<sup>2</sup> SNOW married a Hannah Greene, carelessly giving our MARY<sup>2</sup> her mother's name.

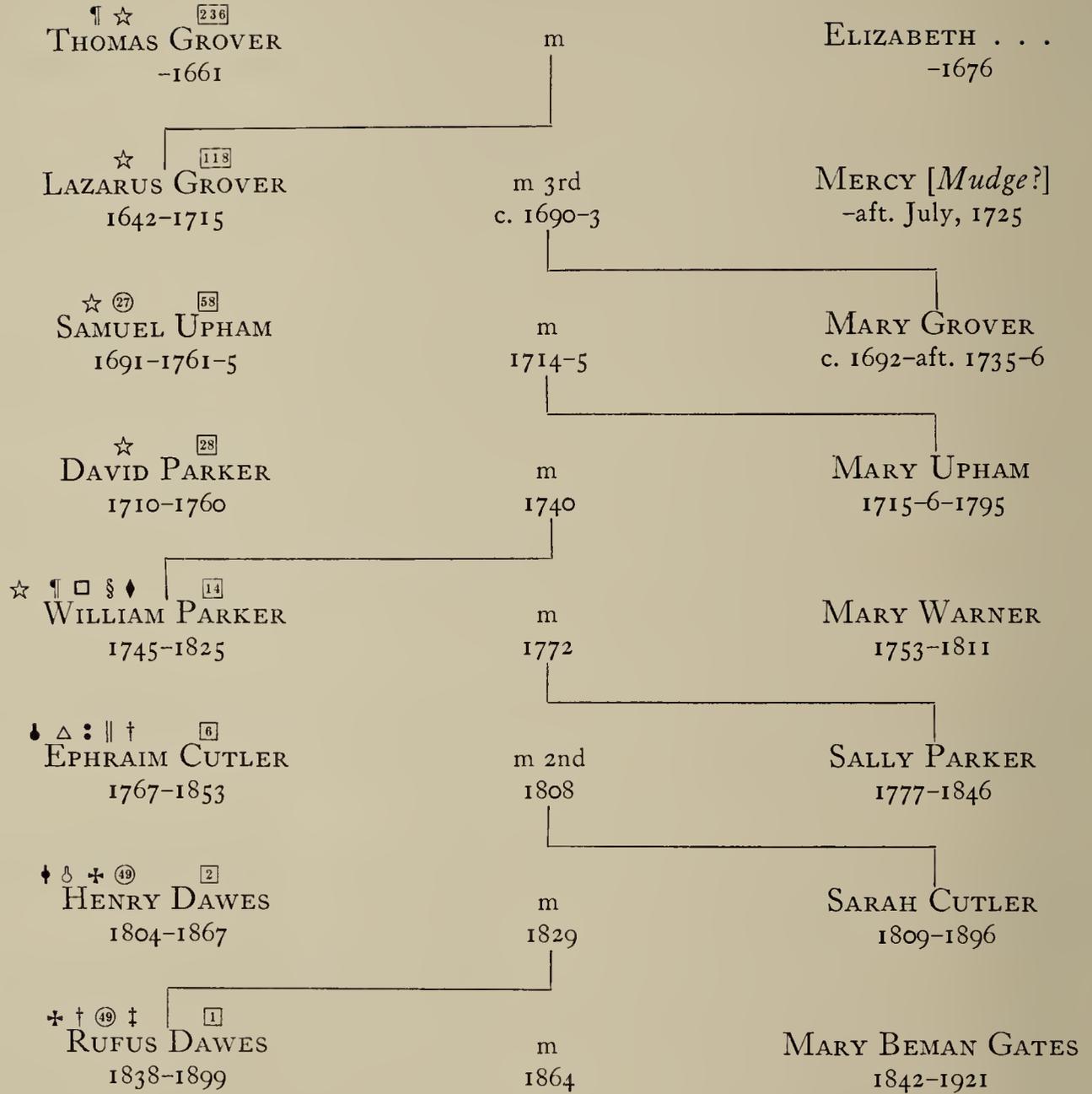
\*\*Hannah<sup>2</sup> Greene (WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) is by some compilations<sup>27</sup> confused with Hannah<sup>2</sup> (Thomas<sup>1</sup> of Malden) and is made to marry Joseph<sup>2</sup> Richardson (Richardson Memorial, J. A. Vinton, 1876, pp. 186-7, Vinton Memorial, p. 381, 395). The fact that Thomas Knowlton receipted for her share<sup>11</sup> of her father's estate is conclusive.

†This would have been either Ebenezer's uncle, Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER or his cousin, JOHN<sup>3</sup> CARTER.

## REFERENCES

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, Mass., T. B. Wyman, 1879, pp. 137, 186-7, 438, 441.</li> <li>2. Vinton Memorial, J. A. Vinton, 1858, p. 394.</li> <li>3. History of Charlestown, Mass., R. Frothingham, 1845, pp. 105-11.</li> <li>4. History of the First Church, Charlestown, Mass., W. I. Budington, 1845, pp. 247-8.</li> <li>5. Vital Records of Woburn, Mass., I, 110, 243; II, 83; III, 116.</li> <li>6. History of Woburn, Mass., S. Sewall, 1868, pp. 74-5, 114, 598, 615-6, 619, 634, 640-1.</li> <li>7. Genealogy of the RICHARD<sup>1</sup> SNOW Family, G. W. Snow, Long Beach, Calif., Mss. deposited at Newberry Library, Chicago, Ill., p. 11.</li> <li>8. History of Lexington, Mass., C. Hudson, 1913, II, 143, 251-2.</li> <li>9. Savage, II, 307; New England Register III, 190; Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony, II, 293.</li> <li>10. New England Register, III, 190.</li> <li>11. Woburn Historic Sites and Old Houses, W. R. Cutter, 1892, pp. 28, 36-7, 39.</li> <li>12. Vital Records of Ipswich, Mass., II, 265; Savage II, 42-3.</li> <li>13. Felch Family, W. F. Felch, 1881, p. 9.</li> <li>14. Boston Record Commissioners' Report, III, 95, 111-2.</li> <li>15. 250th Anniversary of Winchester, Mass., 1890, pp.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>6-13; The Winchester Record, Winchester Historical and Genealogical Society, II, frontispiece, pp. 5, 12, 15, 196.</li> <li>16. New England Register XVI, 74.</li> <li>17. Records of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, III, 329; IV, 176, 404; History of Middlesex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1890, I, 349, 379.</li> <li>18. Budington's History of Charlestown Church, pp. 15, 21, 197-8; Frothingham's Charlestown, pp. 67-8, 110, 122-30; History of Malden, Mass., D. P. Corey, 1899, pp. 126-64.</li> <li>19. Wonder-Working Providence E. Johnson with Introduction by W. F. Poole, 1867, lxxxii-viii, xci-vi.</li> <li>20. Winchester Record, I, 261-2.</li> <li>21. Sewall's Woburn, pp. 61, 126-8; Cantabrigiensis; Parkhurst Genealogy, G. H. Parkhurst, 1897, pp. 10-1.</li> <li>22. Search of Middlesex Co. Records by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Court Records I, 196, 210.</li> <li>23. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 141.</li> <li>24. New England Register, XIV, 358; LXI, 65.</li> <li>25. Hurd's Middlesex Co., Mass., I, 349, 379, 383.</li> <li>26. “Some Ancestral Lines . . .” R. M. Tingley, 1935, p. 191; Vital Records of Norwich, Conn., I, 31.</li> <li>27. The Snow-Estes Ancestry, N. E. Snow, comp. by M. M. Jillson, 1939, I, 5, 54-7, 339-40.</li> </ol> |
|--|---|

# GROVER



- † Charlestown
- ☆ Malden
- Ⓜ Leicester
- Newburyport
- § Allegheny Co., Pa.
- ◆ Meigs Co., O.

- ♠ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ✦ Malta, O.
- Ⓜ Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.

---



## GROVER\*

---

**T**HOMAS<sup>1</sup> GROVER\*\* was resident in or near Charlestown before April, 1642, when his son LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> was born.<sup>1,2</sup> THOMAS<sup>1</sup> either settled on Mystic Side† or removed thereto for such mention as is found recorded of him, consistently calls him of Charlestown or Malden. He appeared not at all in public life, the only items found being the birth<sup>4</sup> at Malden of his daughter Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> in 1652, the death<sup>4</sup> of his daughter Grace<sup>2</sup> in 1658 and his own death there<sup>4</sup> in 1661. The period of his residence there presupposes that he was witness to, if not affected by, the church trouble relative to Rev. Marmaduke Matthews (see Call, pp. 135-6) for though we have no proof that he held church membership, it seems evident that his wife ELIZABETH did so, for she had joined the Charlestown Church<sup>3</sup> on September 10, 1644, and she was one of the thirty-six intrepid wives and mothers who dared on October 28, 1651, to address a petition to the General Court (see Call, p. 136) in behalf of their pastor, announcing the acceptability of his service to them and their strong desire that his "personall & perticul<sup>r</sup> ffaylings" should be overlooked and that permission should be granted for him to continue as their minister.<sup>5</sup> Among the thirty-six women (who were the only signers of this petition) were ELIZABETH (—) GROVER, JOANNA (—) SHEPARDSON CALL, and Ann (—) Bibble whose husband John<sup>1</sup> appears to have been related<sup>8</sup> to the family of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CARTER (see Carter, p. 142). Other women who signed were Mary (Hills) Waite, first wife of Capt. John<sup>1</sup> Waite who married secondly our SARAH (—) PARKER, widow of JACOB<sup>1</sup>; and Rachell (Batchelder) Atwood, first wife of Philip<sup>1</sup> Atwood who married secondly our ELIZABETH (—) GROVER.

On October 8, 1661, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GROVER died, intestate, at Malden, and December 17, 1661, the inventory of his estate was filed by the widow ELIZABETH and the eldest son LAZARUS<sup>2</sup>, who were appointed as administrators.<sup>2</sup> It showed a valuation of over £157 after debts of £34 were paid.<sup>16</sup>

After fifteen years as a widow, ELIZABETH married secondly on April 7, 1675, as his second wife, Philip<sup>1</sup> Atwood whose family, with those of her own son, Thomas<sup>2</sup> Grover, and of our PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM were three of the five or six from Malden which ventured west that very month to form a new settlement in what is now Worcester County. As has been told (see Upham, p. 619) within three months after their arrival on the frontier, and when they would scarcely have completed their new homes, the Indian attacks on nearby towns forced the hurried return of

\*This name was sometimes spelled<sup>14</sup> "Grovier" and a French origin has been claimed for it but with no evidence offered.

\*\*It seems highly probably that the mother<sup>1,2,3</sup> and perhaps one or more brothers of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> emigrated also, for in Charlestown on November 30, 1643, "Ould Goodwife Grover" was admitted to the church and a John Grover lived there as early as 1640.

†Mystic Side was the outlying portion of Charlestown lying north of the Mystic River (see map, p. 255) the major part of which in 1649 was set off as Malden (see Call, p. 133 and Upham, p. 613).

these families to the older communities. The introduction, therefore, of our ELIZABETH into her new family relationship was accompanied by the heavy, tiring work of a double removal and great anxiety,<sup>10</sup> a burden which she bore in common with RUTH (WOOD) UPHAM. ELIZABETH died at Malden<sup>4</sup> in October, 1676.

The known children\* of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH (—) GROVER, born in uncertain order, were<sup>1,2,4,7</sup>

- i. LAZARUS<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- ii. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, birth erroneously recorded as April 1, 1653, but probably occurred April 1, 1643; he<sup>1,2,4,6,7</sup> m. May 23, 1668, Sarah<sup>2</sup> Chadwick (John<sup>1</sup>), and died in 1710, having had<sup>6</sup> Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Mary<sup>3</sup>, Sarah<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Andrew<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>3</sup> and Matthew<sup>3</sup>. His will<sup>16</sup> dated May 17, 1710 and proved Sept. 17, 1711, was witnessed by LAZARUS<sup>2</sup>.
- iii. Grace<sup>2</sup>, d. at Malden,<sup>2,4</sup> May 3, 1658.
- iv. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. at Malden,<sup>4</sup> December 27, 1652; d. middle of March, 1674, and brothers LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> and Thomas<sup>2</sup> were named administrators<sup>1,2</sup> June 16, 1674.
- v. John<sup>2</sup>, b. about 1656-7; d. at Malden,<sup>4</sup> February 19, 1673-4, and brothers LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> and Thomas<sup>2</sup> were named<sup>1,2</sup> administrators June 16, 1674.
- vi. Perhaps<sup>7</sup> Andrew, who d. at Malden,<sup>4</sup> April 24, 1674, two months after his marriage; m. there<sup>4</sup> February 7, 1673, Hannah<sup>2</sup> Hills (Joseph<sup>1</sup>)<sup>7</sup> who was b. March 2, 1657; d. May 30, 1674, at Malden. Within a four month period, her father and mother, as well as her husband and herself and a number of other residents, died<sup>4,7</sup> evidently from some epidemic.

LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> GROVER (*Thomas<sup>1</sup>*) who was born<sup>1,2,7,12</sup> at Boston or Charlestown on April 5, 1642, removed as a child with his parents to Malden where his adult life was spent and where he died in 1715 aged seventy-five.<sup>4</sup> He married there, about 1663-5, as his first wife, Ruth<sup>2</sup> Adams who died at Malden<sup>4</sup> September 27, 1674, married secondly Elizabeth who died at Malden,<sup>4</sup> February 22, 1687-8. He was married thirdly by about 1690-3 to MERCY (—) whose identity is, as yet, only tentatively established\*\* who became the mother of two of his children (see p. 342); who joined him in a deed on March 27, 1700, in transferring two acres in Malden to Obadiah Jenkins, at which time she relinquished her right of dower and her thirds; and who was made a chief beneficiary by his will<sup>17</sup> for her lifetime, along with his eldest son Lazarus<sup>3</sup> (who was apparently an invalid and left in her care).

As has been said, LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> and his mother filed an inventory of the estate of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> in December, 1661, and were appointed administrators of it, from which he, as eldest son, would have had a double share. On December 2, 1674, Thomas<sup>2</sup> and LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> GROVER were made freemen.<sup>12</sup>

In June, 1662, the Malden men had petitioned<sup>10</sup> the General Court for additional land, suggesting Pennycooke (in what is now New Hampshire). The court objected to the location, but agreed to a grant of one thousand acres in what is now Worcester

\*There were a Simon Grover and a Stephen Grover of Charlestown or Malden or both<sup>2</sup> who may very likely have been related to this family perhaps as younger children of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> for Simon applied for freemanship in 1689-90 with Lazarus<sup>2</sup> and Thomas<sup>3</sup>. He had seven children at Malden and he and his wife died there.<sup>2,4</sup> His death occurred on November 17 or 28, 1717, aged<sup>4</sup> 63 (grave stone) or 73; he had married by 1686 Sarah (—).

\*\*In order to discuss the tentative ancestry of MERCY, third wife of LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> GROVER, we must necessarily get ahead of our story somewhat. The significant facts cluster around Jonathan<sup>2</sup> Mudge (*Thomas<sup>1</sup>*) of Malden, who in November, 1715, was a witness to the will of<sup>17</sup> LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> GROVER and who in his own will dated July 10, 1719, and proved August 10, 1719, gave his entire estate<sup>19</sup> of about £50 to "my well beloved Cousins Ebenezer Grover and MARY UPHAM . . . out of the Loue and good will that i bare to them." He also made them joint executors. This document was witnessed by Phineas<sup>4</sup> Upham (grandson of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>) and by a Mary Grover, as had been the will of LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> himself, four years earlier. Since it is recorded<sup>4</sup> that Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> Grover born September 11, 1694, was son of LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> and MERCY and since it is proved herein that MARY (GROVER) UPHAM was his sole heir, she must have been an unrecorded daughter of MERCY, who, herself, must have been sister to the testator, and therefore born Mudge in order that Jonathan<sup>2</sup> Mudge might call these two children born to MERCY, his "cousins," meaning nephew and niece.

County which should be so handled as to furnish money for church expenses, and in May, 1662, directed that it should be surveyed and improved within three years. In May, 1665, Thomas Noyes, the surveyor, reported that the tract had been exactly measured "according to rules of art" and that it lay in the northern part of that county. The survey had been slow of accomplishment, but actual settlement and improvement were slower,<sup>10</sup> and in 1669 complaint was made by the Court because of this; before long, however, allotments were made to persons really intending to remove to the "new plantation at Quansigamug" — the first settlement in Worcester township. A petition signed May 27, 1674, by twenty-nine men who had received lots there included the names of LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> GROVER, Simon, Stephen and Thomas<sup>2</sup> Grover, Philip<sup>1</sup> Atwood and PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM. Of these men,<sup>10</sup> Thomas<sup>2</sup> Grover, Philip<sup>1</sup> Atwood,\* PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM and others were actual settlers in April, 1675, probably with intention of remaining there permanently, but in July, nearby settlements were attacked by the Indians and these families hurriedly left that remote and exposed frontier for the older, stronger settlements, while the men took the field in what we now call King Philip's War. On December 2, 1675, the Indians came to Quansigamug, burned the deserted houses, and no settlement there was again attempted until 1684 and even then none of our forebears were included<sup>10</sup> though their relatives were.

In August, 1675, the constable of Malden was ordered to impress "ten able horses, well shod, with bridles and saddles . . . fit for the Country's service", and his report was

"I have im prest ten horses for the us of the contre a cordin to the tener of the warent";

and those who furnished horses included Thomas<sup>2</sup> Grover, Simon Grover, Stephen Grover and Capt. John<sup>1</sup> Waite who had that very month married SARAH (—) PARKER, widow of JACOB<sup>1</sup>, whom he left at home in September, the succeeding month, while he led a company out against the Indians.<sup>10</sup> While no evidence is seen of ancestral service for us from this family in King Philip's war, they could not have failed to experience the constant fear of Indian attack.

In the year 1674, LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> had had rather extensive duties in connection with the probate court, for the death of his sister Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> and of his brother John<sup>2</sup>, probably from an epidemic in March and April of that year, caused the court to appoint LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> and his brother Thomas<sup>2</sup> on June 16, as administrators of their estates.<sup>2</sup> Then Richard<sup>1</sup> Adams, father-in-law of LAZARUS<sup>2</sup>, signed his will<sup>13</sup> before September 27, 1674, on which date that man's daughter Ruth<sup>2</sup>, first wife of LAZARUS<sup>2</sup>, died. The father Adams' will, which was witnessed by JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM, Thomas Lynde and Philip<sup>1</sup> Atwood, gave to "dafter Ruth Groffer halfe the house paster next to FINAS UPHAMES and to akers of the plantation land next to FINAS UPHAMES land . . . and three akers of salt marsh liing in Charleston boundes . . ." and "on[e] grat pot at my deses" and half of "all my beding and chestes. . . ." "I make my son in-law LASSARUS GROFFER my laful executor of this my will and last testament" and he directed that LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> as executor should confirm to Thomas Lynde certain land which had been bargained for. This was done June 14, 1675, as directed. Richard<sup>1</sup> Adams died on October 6, 1674, only nine days after daughter Ruth<sup>2</sup> — and his will was filed<sup>13</sup> on December 15, 1674.

\*He had married on April 7, 1675, as his second wife, our widow ELIZABETH (—) GROVER.

In the fall of 1681, the selectmen,<sup>10</sup> meeting at the home of Capt. John<sup>1</sup> Waite, appointed November 9 to be set apart for the men of the town to cut and cart wood for the Rev. Cheever, their minister, as a part of his pay. Those assigned to cut the wood included Simon Grover and SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> HAYWARD, while the owners of carts which carried one load each included John<sup>1</sup> Waite "Senr", Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> Hayward, LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> GROVER and Phineas<sup>3</sup> Upham (PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>) while JACOB<sup>2</sup> PARKER was listed under "Carts behinde".<sup>10</sup>

One of the tasks at which LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> must have taken his turn, is suggested by a vote of the selectmen in October, 1684, ". . . for the regulating of disorder in the meeting-house on the Lord's day by boys and youth playing, it is agreed and ordered . . . that all householders or masters of families . . . shall take their turns successively every Lord's day, both be low and in the galires. . . ." <sup>10</sup>

In 1694-5 LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> was made hog-constable or hayward, to see that the hogs were properly yoked and ringed to prevent their doing damage in the meadows.<sup>10</sup> And that same year, when plans were being made to subdivide two thousand acres, apportioning it to the proprietors, it was voted at a town meeting "to jmproue [employ] An artis [surveyor] to lay out ye lots"; that the surveyor should have five shillings per day for his services; "that every man that carrieth y<sup>e</sup> chaine shall haue allowed him Two and twenty penc p<sup>r</sup> day until 2000 accres js layed out"; and ". . . LAZRUS GROUER and JOHN UPHAM doe jngage to carry y<sup>e</sup> chaine jn order to deuid y<sup>e</sup> second thousand accres."<sup>10</sup> As to the drawing of lots, it was "agreed upon by y<sup>e</sup> commitie y<sup>t</sup> . . . euery properioters name shall be writ distintly; and y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> lots be well shufled together; And one man chose by y<sup>e</sup> town: To draw y<sup>m</sup> out of a bag; and y<sup>e</sup> first man y<sup>t</sup> js drawn shall haue y<sup>e</sup> first lot jn y<sup>e</sup> common, begining as aforsaid And so sucksesiuely. . . ." <sup>10</sup> Among the seventy-four proprietors who shared in this division of common land were LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> GROVER, Simon Grover, JOHN<sup>3</sup> UPHAM, the estate of SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> HAYWARD deceased and the estates of JACOB<sup>2</sup> PARKER and Capt. John<sup>1</sup> Waite, both deceased.<sup>10</sup>

In 1702, the town "Voted yat ye meting hous Shall be cutt in two neer y<sup>e</sup> midle and carry off one end twenty-four foots; and close both parts again with a new building by a free contribution."<sup>10</sup> And about 1702 a notable change took place in this family for Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Andrew<sup>3</sup> and Ephraim<sup>3</sup> in November, 1702, bought land<sup>14</sup> in what was then Taunton but in 1710 became Norton and removed there permanently. They built their three houses forty or fifty rods apart, forming a sort of equilateral triangle<sup>14</sup> and to add to the odd situation each of the three had a wife Mary and a daughter Mary. Their houses were over eleven miles from Taunton Church so they attended at Wrentham, only six to eight miles distant until a local church was built.<sup>14</sup> But to revert to Malden, in 1710, among the ninety-six heads of families who were taxed in Malden<sup>10</sup> were LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> GROVER, JOHN<sup>3</sup> UPHAM and THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER.

The \*will<sup>17</sup> of LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> GROVER dated November 7, 1715, and proved January 4, 1715-16, gave all of his estate to his wife MERCY and to his eldest son Lazarus<sup>3</sup> "he not being capable of taking care of himself", during their two lives. After the death of these two, the house and lands were to go to his son Ebenezer<sup>3</sup>. It made bequests to sons Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Andrew<sup>3</sup>, daughter Ruth Paine, daughter Elizabeth

\*This document stipulated that the testator's grand daughter Mary should have liberty to dwell in his house with her grandmother "as long as she will", but he had three grand daughters of that name!

Baldwin, to son Andrew's daughter Mary<sup>4</sup>, son Ephraim<sup>3</sup>, daughter Rebecca "Totman" (Tottingham) and to daughter MARY UPHAM. It made his wife MERCY and son Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> his executors and was witnessed<sup>17,19</sup> by Jonathan<sup>2</sup> Mudge (Thomas<sup>1</sup>), Phineas<sup>4</sup> Upham (grandson of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>) and by one Mary Grover. The inventory of his estate taken on January 9, 1715-16, showed real estate to the amount of £220 and personal estate of £39 value.

The evidence proving the maternity of the various children in this family is quite involved, but is worth attention for the facts are most of them legally proved. As has been stated Lazarus<sup>3</sup> and Thomas<sup>3</sup> are recorded<sup>4</sup> as children of LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> born during the life of his first wife Ruth, who died in 1674. In 1716 Thomas<sup>3</sup> and Andrew<sup>3</sup>, both of Norton,<sup>1</sup> deeded<sup>9</sup> to their brother-in-law William<sup>2</sup> Paine of Charlestown all their share in the rights of their mother Ruth to the estate of her father Richard<sup>1</sup> Adams.<sup>1</sup> In 1717-18 their sister Elizabeth Baldwin, widow, deeded land to Paine which probably was of the same origin though she may have been a child by the second wife. Unrecorded Rebecca (Grover) Tottingham is called<sup>17</sup> daughter by the will of LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> and she and Ephraim<sup>3</sup> Grover who married,<sup>4</sup> respectively in 1709 and<sup>4</sup> 1700 seem more fitly to have been children of the second wife Elizabeth.

One other document is most useful in this mass of evidence, namely the administration<sup>18</sup> of the estate of Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> Grover youngest son of LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> and MERCY who died without issue in 1725 for on July 19, 1725, our SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> UPHAM "weaver of Malden" was appointed administrator with the recorded statement that he had married the sister and sole heir of Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> "excepting a mother who is still alive". And finally, (see note p. 338) bearing upon the tentative identity of third wife MERCY showing that Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> and our MARY<sup>3</sup> were the sole beneficiaries and were called "cousins" by the will<sup>19</sup> of Jonathan<sup>2</sup> Mudge.

The death of widow MERCY was subsequent to July 19, 1725, when the estate of Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> was administered but undoubtedly preceded November 12, 1728, for on that date<sup>18</sup> Thomas<sup>3</sup> Grover, Andrew<sup>3</sup> Grover, Ephraim<sup>3</sup> Grover all of Norton, husbandmen; Elizabeth Baldwin widow; William Paine Jr. and Stephen Paine husbandman of Malden [sons of Ruth (Grover) Paine]; Elias Totman [Tottingham] and Rebecca Totman his wife of Woburn sold for £200 to SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> UPHAM of Malden husbandman all interest in the homestead that Mr. LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> GROVER late of Malden left at his death.<sup>18</sup> So, at last, the home property of LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> came down to his youngest daughter, our MARY<sup>3</sup> by means of her husband's purchase.

The known children of LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> GROVER by his first wife Ruth Adams, born at Malden but in uncertain order were<sup>1,2,4,7</sup>

- I. Lazarus<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 1665; prob. he who applied for freemanship<sup>12</sup> with Thomas<sup>3</sup> on March 22, 1689-90; living but unable to care for himself when his father's will was made.<sup>17</sup>
- II. Ruth<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. October, 1666; d. of small pox in Malden April 11, 1722, ae. 55 yr. 6 mo.; m. there March 9, 1691-2 as his first wife William<sup>2</sup> Paine (Stephen<sup>1</sup>) of Charlestown.<sup>1,4,7</sup>
- III. \*Thomas<sup>3</sup>, b. June, 1671; d. abt.<sup>18</sup> November, 1728; m. at Malden July 29, 1697, Mary Cox. There they had three children; removed 1702 to Norton. Had eight children bap. at Wrentham.<sup>14</sup>
- IV. Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, called<sup>1</sup> "sister of Ruth"; her will dated May 13, 1752, proved November 8, 1756, made a bequest to Samuel Grover, prob. her cousin Samuel<sup>3</sup> (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, THOMAS<sup>1</sup>); m. July 9, 1706, as his second wife Timothy<sup>2</sup> Baldwin (Henry<sup>1</sup>) of Charlestown and Stoneham.<sup>1,7,15</sup>

\*Thomas<sup>3</sup> is erroneously<sup>1</sup> said to have married Sarah (—).

v. Andrew<sup>3</sup>, b.<sup>7,14</sup> October, 1673; "he probably d. about 1751";<sup>14</sup> m. <sup>7,14</sup> about 1697 Mary (—); perhaps m. second by<sup>14</sup> 1734 Elizabeth. Removed about 1702 to Norton.<sup>14</sup>

The next two are the children of LAZARUS<sup>2</sup>, *perhaps* by his second wife.

- vi. Ephraim<sup>3</sup>, b. (—); d.<sup>14</sup> at Norton February 25, 1766; m. at Malden<sup>4,14</sup> 1700 Mary Pratt. Removed to Norton<sup>14</sup> about 1702.
- vii. Rebecca<sup>3</sup>, b. (—); d. about<sup>18</sup> November, 1728; m.<sup>4</sup> at Malden October 18, 1709, Elias or Eliah Tottingham, often called<sup>17</sup> Totman.

The two children of LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> and MERCY (*Mudge?*) GROVER both born in Malden were<sup>4</sup>

- viii. \*MARY<sup>3</sup>, b. prob. about 1692; d. about 1735-6 when her tenth child was born; m. at Malden<sup>4,11</sup> February 17, 1714-15 SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> UPHAM (see Upham, p. 634).
- ix. \*\*Ebenezer<sup>3</sup>, b. at Malden<sup>1,4</sup> September 22, 1694; d.s.p. before July 19, 1725, when his estate was administered<sup>18</sup> by SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> UPHAM who "had married the sister and sole heir" of the deceased, except for his mother who was still living.

\*An analysis of the origin and significance of the names given to the children of SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> and MARY (GROVER) UPHAM follows:

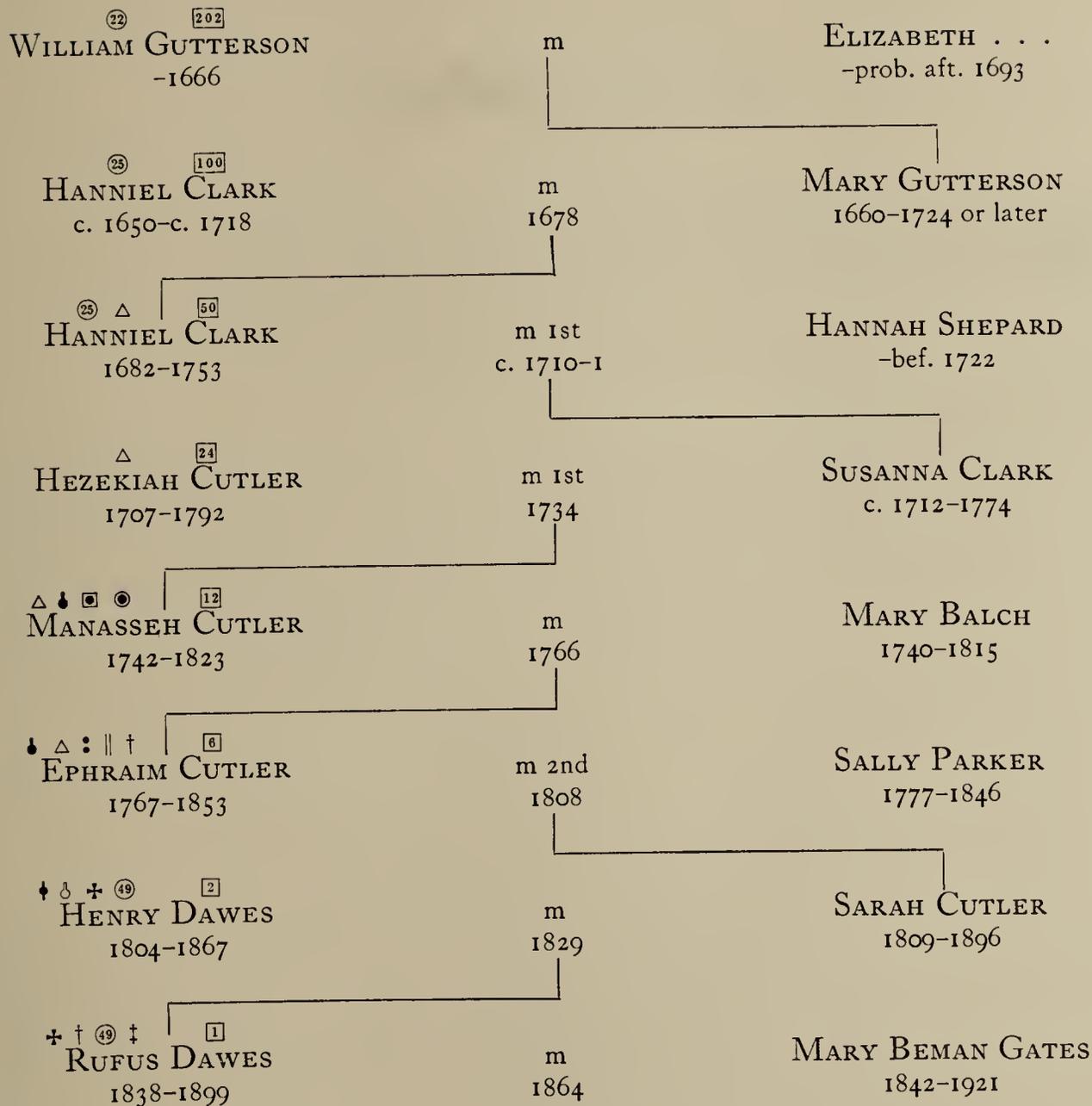
1. MARY<sup>6</sup> UPHAM, named for her mother.
2. Abigail<sup>6</sup> Upham, named for her father's mother.
3. Mercy<sup>6</sup> Upham, named for her mother's mother.
4. Samuel<sup>6</sup> Upham named for his father.
5. Jonathan<sup>6</sup> Upham, named doubtless for Jonathan<sup>9</sup> Mudge, uncle of the mother of these children whose legatee she was.
6. Ebenezer<sup>6</sup> Upham, named for his mother's brother who died unmarried.
7. Jacob<sup>6</sup> Upham, named for his father's brother.
8. Phebe<sup>6</sup> Upham.
9. William<sup>6</sup> Upham.

\*\*Ebenezer<sup>3</sup>, is said<sup>1</sup> to have married at Lyman in 1720 Anne (Wilson) Putt and to have had four children which is disproved as above.

## REFERENCES

1. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, pp. 26, 49-50, 196, 448-449, 721.
2. Savage, I, 14-15, 78; II, 320-1; Pope's Pioneers, pp. 23, 203.
3. History of the First Church, Charlestown, W. I. Budington, 1845, p. 248; New England Register, XXIII, 280-1.
4. Vital Records of Malden, pp. 35-6, 241, 348, 366; New England Register, X, 234-5, 237, 241-2; XII, 85; Malden Historical Society Register, III, 56, 58.
5. History of Malden, D. P. Corey, 1899, pp. 145-6.
6. Burnap Genealogy, H. W. Belknap, 1925, p. 49; History of Reading, L. Eaton, 1874, p. 85.
7. W. R. Cutter's New England Families, 1913, p. 389; Hills Genealogy, W. S. Hills and T. Hills, 1906, p. 261; Swan-Farwell Ancestry, J. C. Frost, 1923, p. 115.
8. Pope's Pioneers, p. 48; New England Register IX, 306-7; LXVI, 270-3; Weymouth, History and Genealogy, III, 4.
9. Wyman's Charlestown, p. 448.
10. History of Malden, D. P. Corey, 1899, pp. 259-60, 300-5, 318, 352, 370-1, 376, 606-7; History of Worcester County, D. H. Hurd, 1889, I, 780; Bicentennial Book of Malden, 1850, pp. 194, 197-9, 215-6; History of Worcester County, W. Lincoln, 1837, pp. 7-8, 11-15, 20.
11. Upham Genealogy, F. K. Upham, 1892, pp. 54, 71, 73, 78, 84.
12. New England Register, III, 347; IV, 267; VII, 28.
13. Wellman Genealogy, J. W. Wellman, 1918, pp. 84-5.
14. History of Norton, G. F. Clark, 1859, pp. 17, 23, 63, 69, 82, 165-6, 221, 287, 298-300, 377, 440-1, especially 82, 165, 440-1; Vital Records of Norton, pp. 65-7, 243-4, 373; Vital Records of Wrentham, p. 103; History of Taunton, S. H. Emery, 1893, pp. 136-7, 140-1.
15. Baldwin Genealogy, C. C. Baldwin, 1881, p. 617.
16. Research by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Middlesex Probates, Administration No. 9989 (II, 51); No. 9990 (XII, 396).
17. Ibid., No. 9932 or No. 9982.
18. Ibid., No. 9974; Middlesex Deeds Vol. 29, p. 68.
19. Mudge Family, A. Mudge, 1868, pp. 177-81, 193-4; Descendants of JOHN UPHAM, F. K. Upham, 1892, pp. 78, 84.

# GUTTERSON



- 22 Ipswich
- 25 Haverhill
- Δ Killingly, Conn.
- ♀ Edgartown
- Dedham
- Hamilton
- Waterford, O.

- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♂ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- † Malta, O.
- 49 Mauston, Wis.
- † Marietta, O.



## GUTTERSON\*

**W**ILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GUTTERSON appeared in Ipswich<sup>1</sup> as early\*\* as 1643 for the will of William Nevill, singleman of Ipswich dated April 15, of that year<sup>4</sup> showed that a partnership existed between them whereby GUTTERSON was to have half the profits and bear half the charges accruing from the team hired of Mr. Bradstreet and the ground hired of Mr. Carner. In April, 1646, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was a witness to the will of Joseph Morse of Ipswich whereon he signed by his mark.<sup>4</sup>

He appears to have been one of three herdsman to keep the Ipswich cows on the north side of the river in 1647 from April to November. The first three weeks all three men were to go with the herd and thereafter two of them constantly and they were to attend at two gathering points one-half hour after sunrise so as to reach the common with the herd one hour after sunrise. They were to "winde a horne before their going out"<sup>12</sup> and were to bring the cattle home about one-half hour before sunset. In 1648 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> subscribed the sum of two shillings to be paid three times a year toward the salary for Maj. Denison while he remained at the head of their military company.<sup>12</sup> In 1649 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was one of the "watch." In May, 1658, thirty-three men of Ipswich, including WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GUTTERSON, petitioned the General Court as to the extent of their voting rights.<sup>14,16</sup> They were then, with the approval of the local freemen, permitted to act as jurymen and to have certain other civic privileges but were not, themselves, freemen.

WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> is supposed to have been a fisherman, though no proof is seen. In 1664 a part of Plum Island (see map, p. 209) was divided as a permanent possession<sup>3,17</sup> among the bona fide settlers of Ipswich in portions commensurate with their former rights of commonage on a community basis — and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GUTTERSON had a share of the island with the others. He died intestate on June 26, 1666, leaving an estate of over £56 and ELIZABETH, his widow, was appointed administratrix<sup>11</sup> in July, 1666. The court ruled that she should have the estate for the support of the five children and should pay each one of them twenty shillings apiece as they came of age. The inventory showed among other things the possession of four cows, a sow and two "shottes," tools, old iron, a musket and sword "and what belongs to it," twelve shillings value in books and *napkins*!<sup>5</sup> She was unquestionably the widow ELIZABETH who married secondly in Haverhill<sup>8</sup> on November 17, 1670, John called Callum, Collins, or Kilham. She bore him a child, Joanna,

\*Also seen as Guttason, Goddason, Godderson.<sup>2</sup> It is surmised from his name and its variants that he may have been a Walloon.

\*\*A statement has been made<sup>18</sup> that an inventory of a William Gutterson was *taken* in 1643 which has caused the assumption that he might have been an earlier generation in this country. However, diligent search<sup>10</sup> has failed to show any such inventory. Consequently we believe<sup>10</sup> that the Nevill estate settled in 1643 which *names* our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> has been misread or misconstrued.

in May, 1672, and Callum died on February 25, 1693-4 being called "husband of ELIZABETH" so she must have died later.

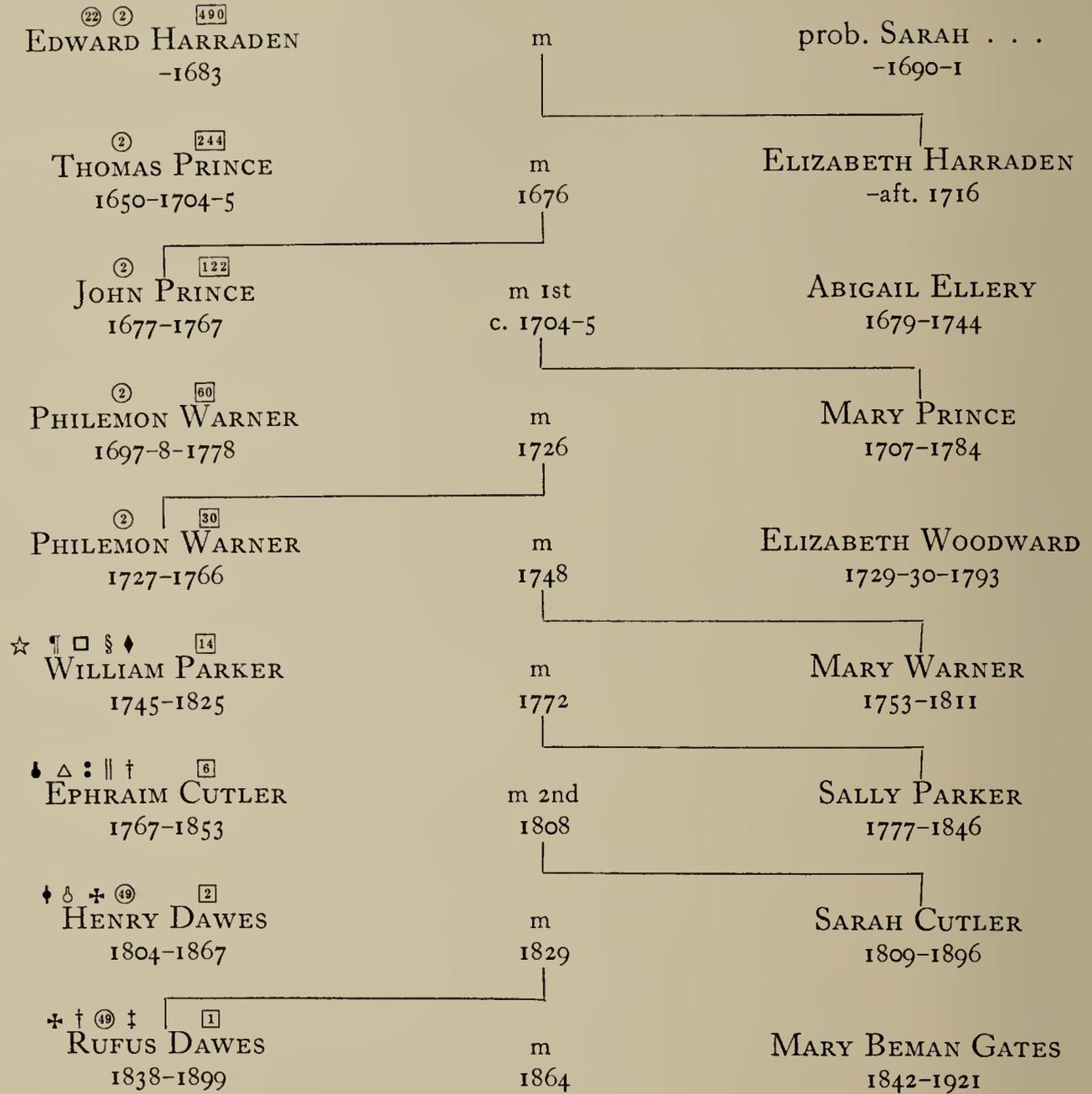
The known children of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH (—) GUTTERSON, all but the first one recorded at Ipswich, were<sup>6,7,10</sup>

- i. Susanna<sup>2</sup>, said<sup>6</sup> to have been b. abt. 1654; d.<sup>9</sup> at Andover Dec. 29, 1710; m. there<sup>9</sup> May 27, 1672, as his first wife Samuel<sup>2</sup> Preston (Roger<sup>1</sup>).<sup>2,11</sup>
- ii. William<sup>2</sup>, b. Sept. 20, 1658; d. at Ipswich Jan. 29, 1659.
- iii. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1659 "aged about 18 in 1677";<sup>15</sup> no further record.
- iv. MARY<sup>2</sup>, b. Aug. 8, 1660; d. after<sup>16</sup> 1718 when she and her eldest son administered her husband's estate; m.<sup>8</sup> at Haverhill Aug. 20, 1678, HANNIEL<sup>2</sup> CLARK (see Clark, p. 180).
- v. John<sup>2</sup>, b. Mar. 24, 1661-2; d. aft. 1700; m. at Andover<sup>9</sup> Jan. 14, 1688-9 Abigail Buckmaster.
- vi. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, b. July 3, 1665; d. aft. Apr. 1701, when her last child was born;<sup>19</sup> m. at Haverhill<sup>8</sup> Nov. 8, 1688, Israel<sup>2</sup> Hendrick (Daniel<sup>1</sup>).<sup>19</sup>

## REFERENCES

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Ipswich in Massachusetts Bay Colony, 1905, T. F. Waters, p. 491.</li> <li>2. Danvers Historical Society Collections, XII, 120.</li> <li>3. Hammatt Papers, p. 122.</li> <li>4. Essex County Probates, I, 25, 53-4; Essex Institute Historical Collections, LI, 62; Pope, p. 326.</li> <li>5. Essex Probates, II, 52.</li> <li>6. Gutterson Family, G. L. Gutterson et al., 1927.</li> <li>7. Vital Records of Ipswich, I, 170; II, 574.</li> <li>8. Vital Records of Haverhill, II, 145.</li> <li>9. Vital Records of Andover, II, 161, 533.</li> <li>10. Research by Mr. E. L. Smith of Brookline.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>11. Essex Institute Collections, XXXVI, 247; LXII, 20.</li> <li>12. Ancient Records of the Town of Ipswich, 1899, pp. 116-7, 125.</li> <li>13. New England Register, VI, 340.</li> <li>14. Putnam's Magazine, 1897, V, 135.</li> <li>15. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, VI, 277.</li> <li>16. Essex Institute Collections, XXVI, 65; XXXVI, 245-7.</li> <li>17. Waters' Ipswich, pp. 69-70.</li> <li>18. Savage, II, 325.</li> <li>19. Hendrick Genealogy, C. T. Hendrick, 1923, pp. 46-9.</li> </ol> |
|--|---|

# HARRADEN



- ② Ipswich
- ② Gloucester
- ☆ Malden
- ¶ Charlestown
- Newburyport
- § Allegheny Co., Pa.

- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- ♠ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- ∴ Waterford, O.
- ∥ Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♠ Morgan Co., O.
- ✦ Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.

---



## HARRADEN\*

---

**E**DWARD<sup>1</sup> HARRADEN, born<sup>1,8</sup> before 1627, had become a resident of Ipswich by or before<sup>1</sup> 1650, for in 1656 he made a \*\*deposition<sup>1</sup> as to a certain row of boundary trees which had been standing since before 1652. He had a wife SARAH of unknown identity whom he may have brought across the water with him. Only a few details of his life in Ipswich have come down to us, namely that on September 23, 1652, he got out a writ of attachment<sup>6</sup> against the ground and garden of Humphrey Griffin of Ipswich for debt; and that on January 14, 1655, EDWARD<sup>1</sup> HARRADEN of Ipswich acquired from Thomas<sup>1</sup> Knowlton, shoemaker of that place, the house and about thirty acres of land earlier owned<sup>6</sup> by his deceased brother William<sup>1</sup> Knowlton. This land, for which HARRADEN was to pay £34 in cattle and wheat, joined on the west what HARRADEN had previously owned, was bounded on the north by Chebacco River and also lay against HARRADEN's creek which flowed into the river adjacent to an island.<sup>6</sup>

But in about April, 1657, EDWARD<sup>1</sup> and his family removed to Gloucester,<sup>6</sup> where the rest of his life was spent, and that year he bought of Robert Dutch his entire property<sup>2</sup> in Gloucester. This included a tract of land on Planter's Neck where Dutch had a fishing stage but the place of HARRADEN's residence and business was probably at the head of Lobster Cove<sup>11</sup> (see map, p. 673). EDWARD<sup>1</sup> apparently had run behind on his payments, perhaps for this property, for in March, 1662, Dutch threatened suit against him for debt, but the suit was soon withdrawn.<sup>6</sup>

With the very careless habit then in vogue, of describing property boundaries in connection with a pile of stones, a grapevine or a fence post, it is surprising indeed that we do not hear of more controversies over boundaries and ownership. But EDWARD<sup>1</sup> managed to become embroiled in one over a meadow which had once belonged to our JOHN<sup>1</sup> COIT but was being claimed, 1665 to 1667, by James<sup>2</sup> Stevens (WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) as well as by EDWARD<sup>1</sup> himself. It was apparently being mowed intermittently by Stevens and by EDWARD<sup>1</sup>, both claimed its ownership, sued each other, in turn, for trespass, calling as witnesses William Lincoln, servant of EDWARD<sup>1</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>2</sup> HASKELL and others, and each plaintiff in turn received his share of verdicts.<sup>7</sup> In one instance after EDWARD<sup>1</sup> and his servant Lincoln had stacked their seasoned hay on his own canoes, tied to his own dock near his own house, Stevens had come with a deputy constable who had approached HASKELL at his work, and according to the legal requirement of an officer of the law in need

\*This name has been furnished with more variants than perhaps any other of early colonial time as will be seen by a listing of sixteen spellings under the vital records.<sup>15</sup> Perhaps the spelling "Hazzardine" is as far-fetched<sup>15</sup> as any. The probability is<sup>11</sup> that EDWARD<sup>1</sup> was the only man of his surname to emigrate.

\*\*While this deposition is quoted<sup>1</sup> as of 1656, an identical statement is recorded<sup>8</sup> as of 1677-8.

of assistance, "had charged him [HASKELL] with his black staff to assist him in his Majesty's name. They went to Goodman HARRIDINE's dock where there were two loads of hay on canoes. Then James Stevens and Anthony Day, the deputy, carried away the hay. . . ." And by the testimony of William Lincoln ". . . for need of the hay Goodman HARRIDINE's cattle were so poor that they could hardly go in the spring . . ." and "EDWARD HARRIDINE was fain to give his cattle wheat for want of hay, and that one of his cattle and four calves died . . ." yet no lasting bitterness seems to have resulted.

In 1672 EDWARD<sup>1</sup> served on a trial jury and in 1678, aged over fifty, he deposed as to a certain line of boundary trees in Ipswich, as has been told.<sup>8</sup> In the meantime, King Philip's War took place and in the company of Capt. Joseph<sup>2</sup> Gardner (THOMAS<sup>1</sup>) two of our Gloucester ancestors fought, EDWARD<sup>1</sup> HARRADEN\* and EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD with over £2 due each one of them<sup>13</sup> on February 29, 1675-6 tho it may have been Edward<sup>2</sup> Harraden, Jr. (see Woodward, p. 670 and Upham, p. 627).

EDWARD<sup>1</sup> HARRADEN died intestate at Gloucester on May 17, 1683 and apparently an epidemic must have been raging for poor widow SARAH lost three members of her family between March 4 and May 17 in 1683, her son Andrew<sup>2</sup> at the age of twenty-two, son Thomas<sup>2</sup> at the age of eighteen and finally her husband at the age of about fifty-six. He left an estate inventoried<sup>4,11</sup> at about £285 and she was appointed administratrix.<sup>11</sup> Though EDWARD<sup>1</sup> has been called a fisherman, the fact that he left<sup>11</sup> nine cows, three oxen, two young bullocks, two yearlings, five calves and other live stock, argues rather that he was occupied in agriculture. The children who survived<sup>4</sup> EDWARD<sup>1</sup> were Edward<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Mary<sup>2</sup>, ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup>, Abigail<sup>2</sup> and Ann<sup>2</sup>.

The fact, also, that James<sup>2</sup> Stevens (WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) who had quarreled with EDWARD<sup>1</sup> about the hay meadow was called upon to inventory the estates of both EDWARD<sup>1</sup> and his son Andrew<sup>2</sup> presupposes that the difference between them as to the meadow was not lasting. And as has been stated elsewhere,<sup>3</sup> the fact that during his thirty-three years of life in the colony EDWARD<sup>1</sup> had avoided "ecclesiastical censure, in a strictly moral and religious community" and had avoided litigation, except about the meadow, makes it "safe to assume that he was a worthy and respectable man."<sup>3</sup> His widow SARAH survived him sixteen years, dying at Gloucester<sup>5</sup> as his widow on May 14, 1699, in her seventieth year.

The children of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> and SARAH (—) HARRADEN, born in slightly uncertain order, most of them at Gloucester (the earlier ones probably at Ipswich), were<sup>1,2,3,4</sup>

- I. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. prob. abt. 1649; d. at Gloucester Sept. 28, 1725, aged abt. 76; m.<sup>5</sup> there July 7, 1668, Abraham Robinson (probably son of Abraham<sup>1</sup>).
- II. Edward<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1650 (by deposition<sup>1</sup> of 1727), d. aft. 1727; m. 1st at Gloucester<sup>5,11</sup> Feb. 5, 1684, Sarah<sup>2</sup> Haskell\*\* (WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) who died there May 14, 1692; m. there as his second wife Oct. 31, 1693, Hannah York<sup>3</sup> (Samuel).<sup>5</sup> He was called seaman when he took the oath of fidelity<sup>8</sup> in Dec. 1677. He had<sup>3,5,11</sup> fifteen children by his two wives.
- III. ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup>, was the second named daughter who survived her father;<sup>4</sup> d. after May 14, 1716,

\*One record<sup>14</sup> shows an "Edward *Hardin* of Cape Ann" as a member of Capt. Joseph<sup>2</sup> Gardner's Company to have been wounded at the Naragansett Fort on December 19, 1675, when Capt. Gardner was killed and our Lt. PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM who succeeded him in command, was fatally wounded. Another rendition is<sup>13</sup> "Edw<sup>d</sup> *Mardin* of Cape Ann" and both items probably refer to our EDWARD<sup>1</sup> HARRADEN tho possibly to his son Edward<sup>2</sup>.

\*\*One compiler had a very different<sup>10</sup> plan of life for Sarah<sup>2</sup> Haskell, but probably an erroneous one.

- when the will of her brother Joseph<sup>2</sup> left her<sup>3</sup> £12; m.<sup>5</sup> at Gloucester Sept. 27, 1676, THOMAS<sup>2</sup> PRINCE (see Prince, p. 513).
- IV. Abigail<sup>2</sup>, d.<sup>4</sup> after June, 1683; said to have been<sup>3</sup> living and unm. in 1716.
- V. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, d.<sup>5</sup> at Gloucester Oct. 28, 1665.
- VI. Andrew<sup>2</sup>, b. at Gloucester on<sup>1</sup> Jan. 13 or<sup>5</sup> Feb. 13, 1658; d. there<sup>5</sup> Mar. 4, 1682-3. Was called husbandman when he took the oath of fidelity<sup>8</sup> in December, 1677.
- VII. \*Ann<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>5</sup> Mar. 2, 1660-1; the fourth named daughter to survive<sup>4</sup> her father; m. at Gloucester<sup>5</sup> Jan. 6, 1685, John<sup>3</sup> Davis (James<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).
- VIII. \*\*John<sup>2</sup>, Capt., b. Aug. 7, 1663, second named son who survived<sup>4</sup> his father; d.<sup>5</sup> at Gloucester Nov. 11, 1724, aged<sup>5</sup> abt. 60 or<sup>5</sup> in his 62nd yr.; m. there Feb. 7, 1693-4. †Sarah<sup>3</sup> Giddings (John<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>).
- IX. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>5</sup> Sept. 8, 1665; d. at Gloucester<sup>5</sup> Apr. 26, 1683, less than two months after brother Andrew<sup>2</sup> and less than a month before his father's death.
- X. †Joseph<sup>2</sup>, b. Aug. 18, 1668, being the third named son<sup>4</sup> to survive his father; d. at Gloucester May 19, 1716, ae.<sup>5</sup> abt. 48; m. there<sup>5</sup> on Nov. 26, 1691, as his first wife, Jane or Jean<sup>3</sup> Giddings (John<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>) (see note on her sister Sarah<sup>3</sup> above); m. 2nd<sup>3</sup> Feb. 1, 1700, Hannah Stevens.
- XI. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>5</sup> July 30, 1670; d. at Gloucester Sept. 3, 1672.
- XII. Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>5</sup> Sept. 11, 1671, the fourth named<sup>4</sup> surviving son of his father; d. at Gloucester Feb. 3, 1725; m. there Jan. 15, 1695-6, Deborah<sup>2</sup> Norwood (Francis<sup>1</sup>).

\*By one authority<sup>3</sup> Ann<sup>2</sup>, as well as Abigail<sup>2</sup>, was still unmarried when their brother Joseph<sup>2</sup> died.

\*\*The inventory<sup>11</sup> of the estate of John<sup>2</sup> included a "sloop named ye Squirrel" valued at £160 which was the vessel which sailed<sup>16</sup> in 1724 with his second son Andrew<sup>3</sup> Harraden as master, when it was taken by the noted pirate<sup>12</sup> Phillips whose lurid career was ended on the said "Squirrel" with the assistance of Capt. Andrew<sup>3</sup> Harraden. A grandson of John<sup>2</sup> Harraden, through John<sup>3</sup> was Nathaniel<sup>4</sup>, the man who became a second husband to our ELIZABETH (WOODWARD) WARNER.

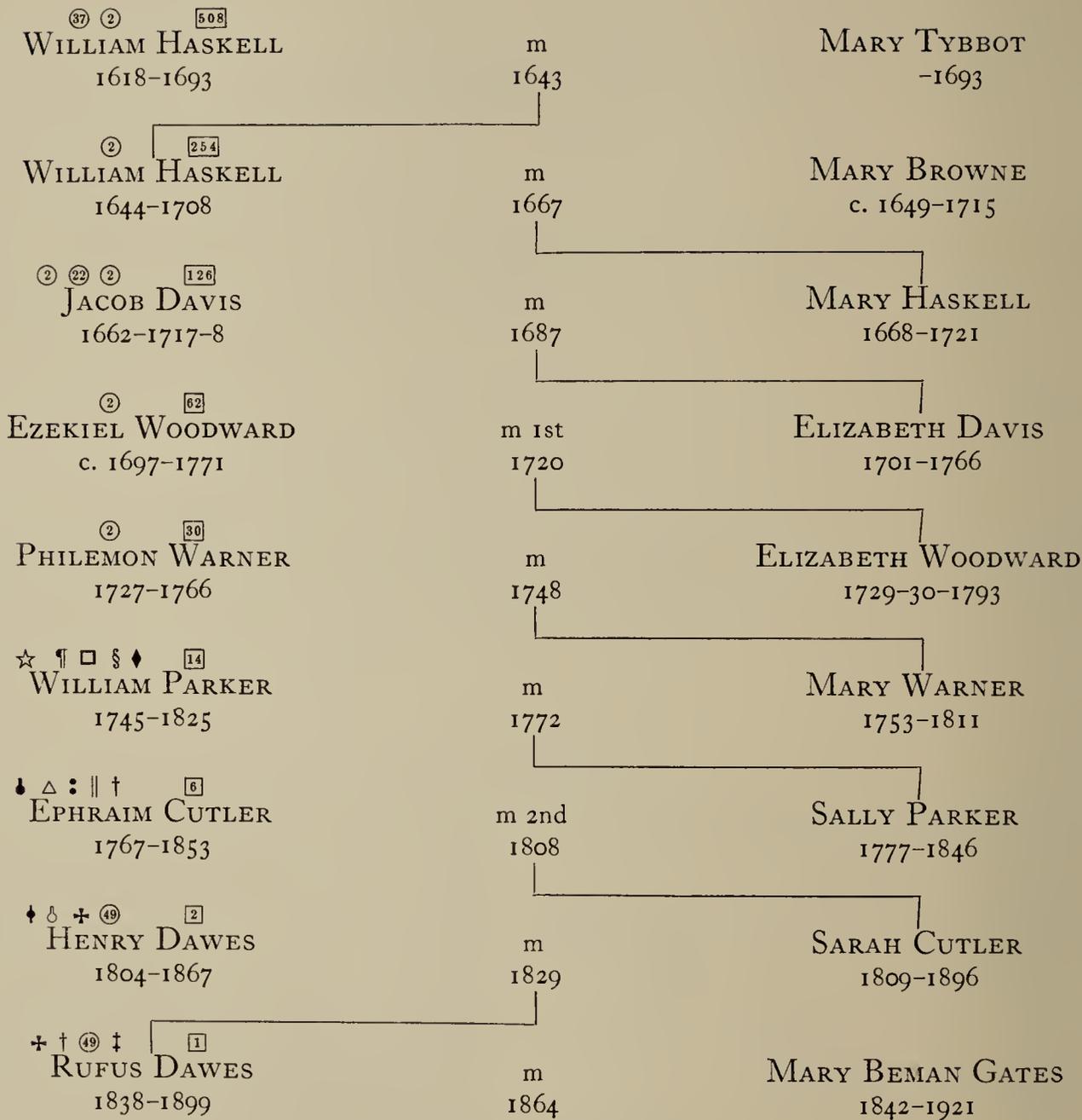
†Sarah<sup>3</sup> Giddings was a great granddaughter of our JOAN (ANTROBUS) LAWRENCE TUTTLE by the first husband of the latter woman.

‡The nuncupative will of Joseph<sup>2</sup> dated May 14, 1716, is said<sup>3</sup> to have given £12 to each of his four living sisters including our ELIZABETH PRINCE.

## REFERENCES

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <p>1. Savage, II, 358; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 213.</p> <p>2. History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, pp. 98, 207.</p> <p>3. Genealogical Register of Several Ancient Puritans, Rev. A. Morse, 1864, IV, 78-9.</p> <p>4. Essex Institute Historical Collections, III, 230.</p> <p>5. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 322, 324-5; II, 259-60, 262; III, 158-60; New England Register, IV, 365; Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXII, 140-1; Giddings Genealogy, M. S. Giddings, 1882, p. 21.</p> <p>6. Records and Files of Essex Quarterly Court, I, 266; II, 359; III, 326-7, 391; VIII, 408, 410.</p> <p>7. Ibid., II, 435; III, 272, 326-7, 345, 383, 390-1, 442.</p> <p>8. Ibid., V, 41, 76, 127, 413; VI, 402, 415.</p> <p>9. Ibid., VIII, 302, 406, 408, 410.</p> <p>10. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXII, 141.</p> <p>11. Notes and Additions to Babson's Gloucester, 1876, I, 31-3.</p> <p>12. Buffalo Historical Society Publications, X, 27-39; The</p> | <p>Islands of Boston Harbor . . . , E. R. Snow, 1935, pp. 335-6; Pirates of the New England Coast, G. F. Dow and J. H. Edmonds, 1923, pp. 310-27; Babson's Gloucester, pp. 286-8.</p> <p>13. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 165-7, 421-2.</p> <p>14. History and Antiquities of Boston, S. G. Drake, 1856, p. 415.</p> <p>15. Vital Records of Ipswich, II, 213, 255; of Gloucester, I, 319.</p> <p>16. History and Antiquities of Boston, S. G. Drake, 1856, pp. 183, 570; Snow's Islands, pp. 17, 133-4, 183, 201, 325-41; New England Register XV, 201; Pirates of the New England Coast, G. F. Dow and J. H. Edmonds, 1923, pp. 310-27; History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, p. 287; Notes and Additions to Babson's Gloucester, 1876, pt. 1, p. 32.</p> |
|--|---|

# HASKELL



(37) Salem  
 (2) Gloucester  
 (22) Ipswich  
 ☆ Malden  
 † Charlestown  
 □ Newburyport

§ Allegheny Co., Pa.  
 ◆ Meigs Co., O.  
 ♣ Edgartown  
 △ Killingly, Conn.  
 ∴ Waterford, O.  
 || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

† Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.  
 ♣ Thomaston, Me.  
 ♣ Morgan Co., O.  
 + Malta, O.  
 (49) Mauston, Wis.  
 † Marietta, O.

---

---



## HASKELL\*

---

**W**ILLIAM<sup>1</sup> HASKELL with his older brother Roger<sup>1</sup> and younger brother Mark<sup>1</sup> emigrated<sup>1</sup> about 1635-6 in the care of their step-father<sup>7</sup> John Stone\*\* and all settled temporarily in the part of Salem called "Cape Ann Side" which became Beverly. His marriage on November 6, 1643, to MARIE or MARY<sup>2</sup> TYBBOT (see Tybbot, p. 609) was recorded<sup>3</sup> in Gloucester where most if not all of the rest of his life was spent. In 1645 his holdings included land on Planters' Neck. There is suggested the possibility that between 1646 and 1656 he may have temporarily resided elsewhere, because following the births of two children recorded at Gloucester in 1644 and 1646, there were three born to this family who failed to be recorded, though subsequent ones are of record. But if he lived elsewhere for a time, he was back in Gloucester by 1656 when his place of residence was on the west side of Annisquam River (see map, p. 673) where he owned several pieces of real estate including a ten acre tract with house and barn which he purchased from Richard<sup>1</sup> Window (see Bennett, p. 88) second husband of our ELINOR (—) BENNETT. Another description places his home as being on the west side of Walker's Creek,† on both sides of which his sons owned land which was still, in 1896, owned by descendants of theirs.<sup>1,4</sup>

WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was a mariner and engaged in the fishing business. In 1672 he deposed that he was about fifty-five years old. In 1679 he was appointed guardian<sup>1</sup> of his nephew Samuel<sup>2</sup> Haskell, son of Roger<sup>1</sup>, deceased. He served repeatedly<sup>5</sup> as deputy to represent Gloucester at the General Court between 1672 and 1685 and during various years as selectman<sup>1</sup> of the town. In March, 1680-1, the General Court named WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> as lieutenant of the train band of Gloucester and he later became<sup>3</sup> its captain. In February, 1681-2, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was one of a group of forty-five men which included also our JOHN<sup>2</sup> PERKINS, "Symon<sup>2</sup> Stacje" (SIMON<sup>1</sup>), THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BURNHAM, DANIEL<sup>2</sup> WARNER and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DODGE who petitioned the King to clear the title of New England lands from the claims<sup>6</sup> of Robert Mason. In 1685

\*Col. C. E. Banks established the English origin of this family for a client of his who has kindly made it public.<sup>7</sup> The parish registers of Charlton-Musgrove, co. Somerset, show that WILLIAM<sup>a</sup> HASKELL, the father, was a church warden there in 1627 and was buried at that place on May 11, 1630. His widow ELINOR married secondly John<sup>1</sup> Stone who brought her and the Haskell children to Salem<sup>7</sup> in 1635 or 1636. The children of WILLIAM and ELINOR (—) HASKELL all baptized at Charlton-Musgrove were<sup>7</sup>

1. Roger bap. Mar. 6, 1613-4; d. June, 1667; m. at Salem Elizabeth Hardy.
2. Cecilie, bap. June 5, 1616.
3. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, bap. Nov. 8, 1618, see above.
4. Mark, bap. Apr. 8, 1621.
5. Dorothy, bap. Nov. 16, 1623.
6. Elizabeth, bap. Apr. 30, 1626.
7. Joan, bap. Mar. 1, 1628-9.

\*\*John<sup>1</sup> Stone and his wife ELLEN lived<sup>7</sup> at Massey's Cove and he kept the ferry there. Later they removed to Beverly.

†This Creek took its name from Henry<sup>1</sup> Walker, stepfather of MARY<sup>2</sup> BROWNE who became the wife of WILLIAM<sup>2</sup> HASKELL.

WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and two others were to advise a widow as to the sale of family land;<sup>6</sup> at an unstated date he was made a deacon of the first church of Gloucester and in 1688 he and the other selectmen<sup>1</sup> fell afoul of the requirements of the royal governor, Andros. Several towns including Gloucester refused to assess the taxes levied upon them by Andros and his Council (see Appendix "B", p. 694) and as a consequence their selectmen were brought before the Superior Court at Salem with a resulting fine of forty shillings each and fees amounting to £3-1.

It seems highly probable that an epidemic visited this family, for on August 16, 1693, wife MARY died<sup>3</sup> and four days later on August 20 "Capt." WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> followed her. His will mentioned his children WILLIAM<sup>2</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Ruth<sup>2</sup>, Mary<sup>2</sup>, Mark<sup>2</sup> and Sarah<sup>2</sup> and his estate<sup>1</sup> amounted to £548.

The children of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and MARY (TYBBOT) HASKELL, all born (probably) at Gloucester, were<sup>1,2,3</sup>

- I. WILLIAM<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- II. Joseph<sup>2</sup>, b. June 2, 1646; d. at Gloucester Nov. 12, 1727, aged 80; m. Dec. 2, 1674, Mary Graves (Mark of Andover).
- III. Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1648; d. ae. abt. 92 in 1740-1; m. at Gloucester Nov. 21, 1677 Mary Riggs (Thomas).
- IV. John<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1649; d.<sup>3</sup> at Gloucester Feb. 2, 1718, aged 69; m. May 20, 1685, Mary Baker.
- V. Ruth<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1654; m. Dec. 2, 1673-4, or 1676 at Beverly Nehemiah Grover (Edmund).
- VI. Mark<sup>2</sup>, b. Apr. 8, 1658; d. at Gloucester Sept. 8, 1691, ae. 33 yrs.; m. there Dec. 16, 1685, Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> Giddings (John<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>).<sup>9</sup>
- VII. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, b. June 28, 1660; d. May 14, 1692; m. as his 1st wife Feb. 5, 1684, Edward<sup>2</sup> Harraden (EDWARD<sup>1</sup>).<sup>10</sup>
- VIII. Elinor<sup>2</sup>, b. May 28, 1663; m. at Gloucester Nov. 12, 1685, Jacob Griggs of Beverly.
- IX. Mary<sup>2</sup>, d. 1737; m. Apr. 30, 1673, Edward<sup>2</sup> Dodge (RICHARD<sup>1</sup>).\*

WILLIAM<sup>2</sup> HASKELL (*William*<sup>1</sup>) was born<sup>3</sup> at Gloucester on August 26, 1644, and died there June 5, 1708, aged sixty-four. He married there July 3, 1667, MARY<sup>2</sup> BROWNE (see Browne, p. 121) who survived him. Very little of detail as to his life has been found. He owned an extensive grist and saw-mill which was probably<sup>1</sup> located in what is now Rockport.

He had twelve children of whom nine became adult. It was probably he and his brother Joseph<sup>2</sup> who became freemen on October 31, 1684, in company with Henry<sup>2</sup> Prentice (HENRY<sup>1</sup>). At his death WILLIAM<sup>2</sup> left an estate of land, buildings and farm stock valued at £666, so his business ability was sufficient to have greatly increased his (probably two-eighths) share of his father's £548 estate!

The children of WILLIAM<sup>2</sup> and MARY (BROWNE) HASKELL, all born in Gloucester, were<sup>1,3,4</sup>

- I. MARY<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 29, 1668; d. of small pox at Gloucester on Nov. 1 or 21, 1721, ae. abt. 53; m. 1st there Sept. 14, 1687, JACOB<sup>3</sup> DAVIS (see Davis, p. 282); m. 2nd there Apr. 15, 1719, as his second wife EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> WOODWARD (see Woodward, p. 674).
- II. William<sup>3</sup>, b. Nov. 6, 1670; d. at Gloucester Jan. 17, 1731, as "Ens."; m. there Sept. 8, 1692 Abigail Davis (prob. Capt. James<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).
- III. Joseph<sup>3</sup>, b. Apr. 20 or 21, 1673; d. at Gloucester<sup>3</sup> Apr. 11, 1718, ae. 43; m. there Mar. 19, 1696 \*\*Rachel Elwell.
- IV. Abigail<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 2, 1675; m. 1st at Gloucester Dec. 27, 1697, Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> Parsons (Jeffrey<sup>1</sup>);<sup>12</sup> m. 2nd there Dec. 20, 1722, Isaac Eveleth.

\*Others claim<sup>2</sup> that she married a William Dodge.

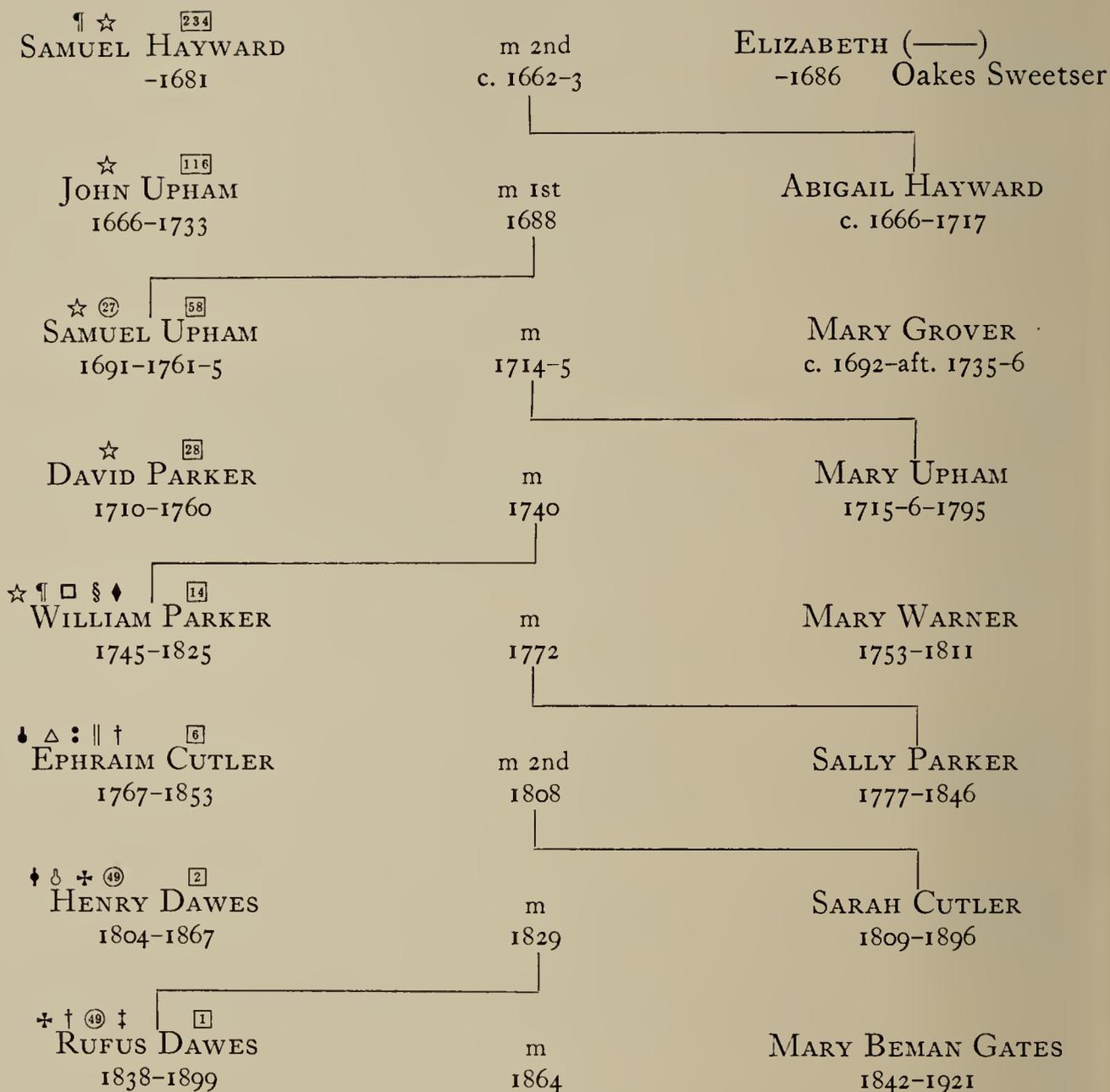
\*\*She married secondly as his third wife our EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> WOODWARD (see Woodward, p. 674).

- v. Henry<sup>s</sup>, b. Apr. 2, 1678; d. in<sup>8</sup> Harvard Apr. 17, 1739, ae. 63; m. at Gloucester Jan. 13, 1703-4, Ruth (prob. York).
- vi. Andrew<sup>s</sup>, b. July 27, 1680; d. Aug. 14, 1680.
- vii. Lydia<sup>s</sup>, b. Sept. 4, 1681; d. Oct. 2, 1734, aged<sup>3</sup> 53; m. Feb. 3, 1704, Ebenezer<sup>2</sup> Parsons (Jeffrey<sup>1</sup>).<sup>12</sup>
- viii. Sarah<sup>s</sup>, b. Feb. 26, 1683-4; d. Feb. 20, 1690-1.
- ix. Elizabeth<sup>s</sup>, b. Apr. 5, 1686; m. 1st at Gloucester Sept. 1710, 27, Thomas Sargent; m. 2nd there June 4, 1740, James Godfrey.
- x. Hannah<sup>s</sup>, b. Oct. 30, 1688; d. Feb. 15, 1690.
- xi. Jacob<sup>s</sup>, b. Jan. 15, 1691; d. at Gloucester Aug. 6, 1756; m. there Dec. 31, 1716, Abigail Marcy or Maxey.
- xii. Sarah<sup>s</sup>, b. Sept. 11, 1692; d. July 10, 1773; m. Dec. 31, 1716, her cousin Daniel<sup>s</sup> Haskell (Joseph<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>).

## REFERENCES

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <p>1. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXII, 134-144.</p> <p>2. Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 218.</p> <p>3. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 329-44; II, 265-6, 556; III, 162, 165, 232.</p> <p>4. History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, pp. 99-100, 179, 210, 213.</p> <p>5. Records of Massachusetts Bay, IV, pt. 2, 507; V, 351, 408, 475.</p> | <p>6. Ibid., V, 309, 336, 494, 543.</p> <p>7. New England Register, LXXXVI, 257-8; History of Salem, S. Perley, 1924, I, 370, 404, 461.</p> <p>8. Vital Records of Harvard, p. 276.</p> <p>9. Giddings Family, M. S. Giddings, 1882, p. 21.</p> <p>10. Genealogical Register, Rev. A. Morse, 1864, IV, 78.</p> <p>11. Dodge Family, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 27.</p> <p>12. Babson's Gloucester, pp. 123-4.</p> |
|--|--|

# HAYWARD



¶ Charlestown  
 ☆ Malden  
27 Leicester  
 □ Newburyport  
 § Allegheny Co., Pa.  
 ◆ Meigs Co., O.

† Edgartown  
 △ Killingly, Conn.  
 ∴ Waterford, O.  
 ∥ Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.  
 † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

† Thomaston, Me.  
 ♂ Morgan Co., O.  
 † Malta, O.  
49 Mauston, Wis.  
 † Marietta, O.



## HAYWARD (*Haieward, Howard*)

SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> HAYWARD\* of Charlestown<sup>2</sup> and Malden<sup>3</sup> married as his first wife, by 1645, Sarah<sup>2</sup> Stower (Nicholas<sup>1</sup>) and on July 9, 1648, they became members of Charlestown Church<sup>5</sup> and evidently retained membership there until at least 1664 for their various children were baptized at Charlestown<sup>5</sup> until that year, even though their births had been recorded at Malden<sup>3</sup> for twelve years past. SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> followed his accomplishment of church membership with the fitting sequel, of application for freemanship<sup>5</sup> on May 2, 1649. Either his home was in the part of Charlestown north of Mystic River, which in 1649 became Malden, or else he removed to that section by 1652-3 for his third child was then recorded<sup>3</sup> at that place, and in 1662 he bought from Joseph<sup>1</sup> Hills forty acres at Malden, which tract was known<sup>6</sup> as "the round O" or "the Round world".\*\* This property was reached by a circuitous route which probably suggested that unusual name for the tract to which it led, and the trail led past a little swamp called Green's Hole which was famous for the snakes it harbored.<sup>6</sup>

Though it may malign him unjustly, SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> is not recorded as holding any office nor indeed as rendering any public service unless the military service<sup>7</sup> in King Philip's War pertained to him instead of to his son of the same name.<sup>7</sup> The terror and anxiety would have been an agony for this family to live through, as well as for all their contemporaries, whether it was the father or the son who participated and who, fortunately, survived.

SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> was, of course, a farmer but he also owned a saw mill even until his death.<sup>12</sup> In 1681 he, or more likely his son Samuel<sup>2</sup> was called upon to cut and cart wood for the minister.<sup>7</sup> The disturbances in the Malden Church (see Call, pp. 135 and Upham, p. 613) could not fail to have affected the Hayward family more or less even while their membership remained in Charlestown and may likely have been the reason SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> left his membership in that church for so long.

Sarah, the first wife of SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> and mother of most of his children, is said to have died† about 1662 and he married,<sup>3</sup> secondly, in 1662-3 ELIZABETH (—) who had married<sup>10</sup> first by 1646 Thomas<sup>1</sup> Oakes of Cambridge and had borne him six children, one posthumous, of whom three survived. This first husband of

\*A Samuel<sup>1</sup> Hayward who is claimed,<sup>2,9,11</sup> probably erroneously, to have been our ancestor sailed<sup>1</sup> for New England on the "Elizabeth" of London in April, 1635, and arrived at Boston in midsummer. He is listed as a carpenter, aged twenty-two and as one who had "brought certificates according to order" that he had conformed to the orders and discipline of the Church of England, and that he was no subsidy man.<sup>1</sup> This was probably the man who married<sup>16</sup> at Gloucester, March 2, 1641 a daughter of Henry<sup>1</sup> Felch and had three sons in 1642 and 1643. Perhaps it was he who had a wife Isabel in Boston and children in 1645, 1646 and 1654. This family would have been partly contemporaneous with ours.

\*\*In manuscript land descriptions, the sign "O" is found and apparently referred to this tract. The will of SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> gave to his son Samuel<sup>2</sup> "the round meadow by the pine swamp".<sup>12</sup>

†The Malden records show the death<sup>3</sup> of a Martha, "wife of SAMUEL HAYWARD" on May 6, 1662, which perhaps should read "Sarah". Or maybe the name is right and the relationship should be that of daughter rather than wife.

hers died at Cambridge<sup>4</sup> in August, 1659, and his will<sup>12</sup> dated September 12, 1658, covering an estate of over £285, made ELIZABETH the sole executrix. If she should marry again she was to have the profit or income from one-third of the real estate during her life and was to have permanently one-third of the "moveables" or personal property<sup>12</sup> of which we will hear again later.

In April, 1661, she did marry again,<sup>10</sup> at Cambridge,<sup>4</sup> becoming the second wife of Seth<sup>1</sup> Sweetser of Charlestown who died there a year later on May 21, 1662, at the age of fifty-six. The will<sup>10,12</sup> of Seth<sup>1</sup> Sweetser signed the day before he died, named his own children, specified that his wife ELIZABETH "shall have all her own estate that I had with her, paying all her own debts out of it which she owed before I had her". It further gave her, after the debts were paid, one-third of his own estate during her life and gave "to my wives three children, forty shillings, that is to say twenty shillings to the sonne [Thomas<sup>2</sup> Oakes] and ten shillings apeece to the daughters" [Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> and Hannah<sup>2</sup> Oakes].<sup>10,12,15</sup>

Following that in 1662-3, ELIZABETH married, thirdly, our SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> HAYWARD and made her future home in Malden. The first child by this third husband was baptized<sup>3</sup> in 1664 at Charlestown where the membership of SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> evidently still remained, and their second child, our ABIGAIL<sup>2</sup>, was baptized in 1666 at Cambridge<sup>4,15</sup> where her mother held membership and from which church, ELIZABETH was dismissed<sup>9</sup> to Malden Church in December, 1667.

After almost twenty years of life with SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> HAYWARD, her third husband, ELIZABETH lost him, also. His will<sup>2,9,12</sup> dated early in March, 1680-1, called him "weak in body" and he died between that and June 20, 1681, when it was probated. The inventory of his estate showed property to the amount of over £635, and to have accumulated such an amount in addition to the rearing of thirteen children argues both thrift and business ability. The will made bequests to his sons Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> and Jonathan<sup>2</sup>, to the children of daughter Hannah<sup>2</sup>, and to his daughters Martha<sup>2</sup>, Mary<sup>2</sup>, Sarah<sup>2</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, Deborah<sup>2</sup> and ABIGAIL<sup>2</sup>. These six daughters were to have £20 apiece, which bequests, beginning with the eldest, were to be paid one each year after the death of his widow and after the youngest son, Jonathan<sup>2</sup>, came of age, which would have been in 1688, so the £20 of our ABIGAIL<sup>3</sup> would not have been due to her until 1694. The will<sup>12</sup> gave to wife ELIZABETH the benefit (income) from the whole estate during her life if she remained his widow, which she did; but if she had married again, her portion would have been the income from one third of the real estate. An item of treble interest incorporated in the will was: "And as for the third part of the moveables [of the estate of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Oakes] which came to me by my wives first husband, I give to my said wife to be disposed of by her to whom she sees good" — and of this even more, presently. SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> HAYWARD made his wife ELIZABETH and his two minor sons (by her) the executors of his will and specified<sup>12</sup> that these two sons with daughter ABIGAIL<sup>2</sup>, also her child, and they "only, shall abide with my wife" — which was probably an excellent method of settling one step-mother problem. He provided future homes for these two minor sons by bequeathing to Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> the family home and to Jonathan<sup>2</sup> the house that Thomas Geofer\* lately lived in. As

\*In Malden no name was even remotely like this except "Grover" which was spelled "GROFFER" in the will of Richard<sup>1</sup> Adams, so it seems fair to assume that SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> HAYWARD had purchased the home once belonging to either our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GROVER or to his son Thomas<sup>2</sup> who had removed in April, 1675, to what became Worcester and had subsequently been driven back by the Indian war (see Upham, p. 620).

an after thought, SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> specified that daughters Sarah<sup>2</sup> and ABIGAIL<sup>2</sup> should each of them have £10 more than the other children. On December 26, 1693, over seven years after the death of widow ELIZABETH and immediately following the death of Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> an agreement was entered into by the heirs\* as to the final division of the estate and at this time JOHN<sup>3</sup> UPHAM signed in behalf of his wife ABIGAIL<sup>2</sup>.

In 1694-5, when over thirty-two hundred acres were distributed among the proprietors of Malden, the estate of SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> HAYWARD, deceased, received a portion.<sup>6</sup>

The widow ELIZABETH, who must have been more than ordinarily capable, since she was trusted to handle the estates of three husbands, had died at Malden on May 12, 1686, and her will<sup>2,9,13</sup> signed the day before her death read in part:

"I ELIZABETH HAWARD, widdow, of Maulden, being weak in body, yet through marcy sound in my understanding and memory doe make ordain constitut this my last will and testamt, in manner following. I give unto my Daughter ABIGALL that third pt. of my first husband Oaks' Estat which he gave me in movables, and if it amount to above twenty pounds then the s<sup>d</sup> ABIGALL is to give to the wife of Samuel Haward Twenty Shillings. . . ."

It was signed by

her mark  
"ELIZABETH ( HAWARD"

So, in spite of the fact that the will of SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> specified that only her own children should live with her, ELIZABETH in her will made a tentative bequest to the wife of her stepson. And our ABIGAIL brought to the home of her husband JOHN<sup>3</sup> UPHAM a total of £40 in addition to whatever her marriage portion had been.

The children\*\* of SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> HAYWARD by his first wife, Sarah Stower, were<sup>2,3</sup>

- i. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, b. May 4, 1646 (Suffolk Records); d. 1797; m. at Malden, March 10, 1670-1, Susanna Wilkinson.
- ii. Hannah<sup>2</sup>, d. bef.<sup>2</sup> March 5, 1680-1; m. at Malden,<sup>3</sup> June, 1666, Isaac<sup>2</sup> Hill (Abraham<sup>1</sup>).<sup>2</sup>
- iii. Martha<sup>2</sup>, b. March 15, 1652-3, at Malden;<sup>3</sup> perhaps she d. there<sup>3</sup> May 6, 1662, being recorded as "wife of SAMUEL".
- iv. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. Aug., 1654, at Malden;<sup>3</sup> m. by 1694 David Fox.
- v. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, b. Feb., 1655-6, at Malden,<sup>3,2</sup> d. Oct. 14, 1717, ae. 62; m. 1680 as fourth wife Samuel<sup>4</sup> Richardson (Samuel<sup>3</sup>, James<sup>2</sup>, Ezekiel<sup>1</sup>).<sup>2</sup>
- vi. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. Sept. 25, 1658, at Malden;<sup>3</sup> d. there<sup>3</sup> Feb. 13, 1660-1.
- vii. Richard<sup>2</sup>, bap. July 22, 1660, at Charlestown;<sup>3</sup> d. before his father.<sup>9</sup>
- viii. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, bap. June 9, 1661, at Charlestown;<sup>3</sup> d. May 12, 1686, at Malden.<sup>3</sup>
- ix. Deborah<sup>2</sup>, bap. July 6, 1662, at Charlestown,<sup>3</sup> living<sup>2</sup> 1715; unm.<sup>12</sup> Dec. 26, 1693.

The children of SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH (—) HAYWARD, all born in Malden, were<sup>3</sup>

- x. Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, bap. June 5, 1664, at Charlestown;<sup>3</sup> d. unm.<sup>2</sup> 1693.
- ix. ABIGAIL<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1665; bap. Sept. 23, 1666, at Cambridge,<sup>4,14,15</sup> d. at Malden<sup>3</sup> Aug. 23, 1717, ae. 52; m. there<sup>3,8</sup> Oct. 31, 1688, JOHN<sup>3</sup> UPHAM (see Upham, p. 632).<sup>8</sup>

\*One of the heirs<sup>12</sup> signing was a William Williams.

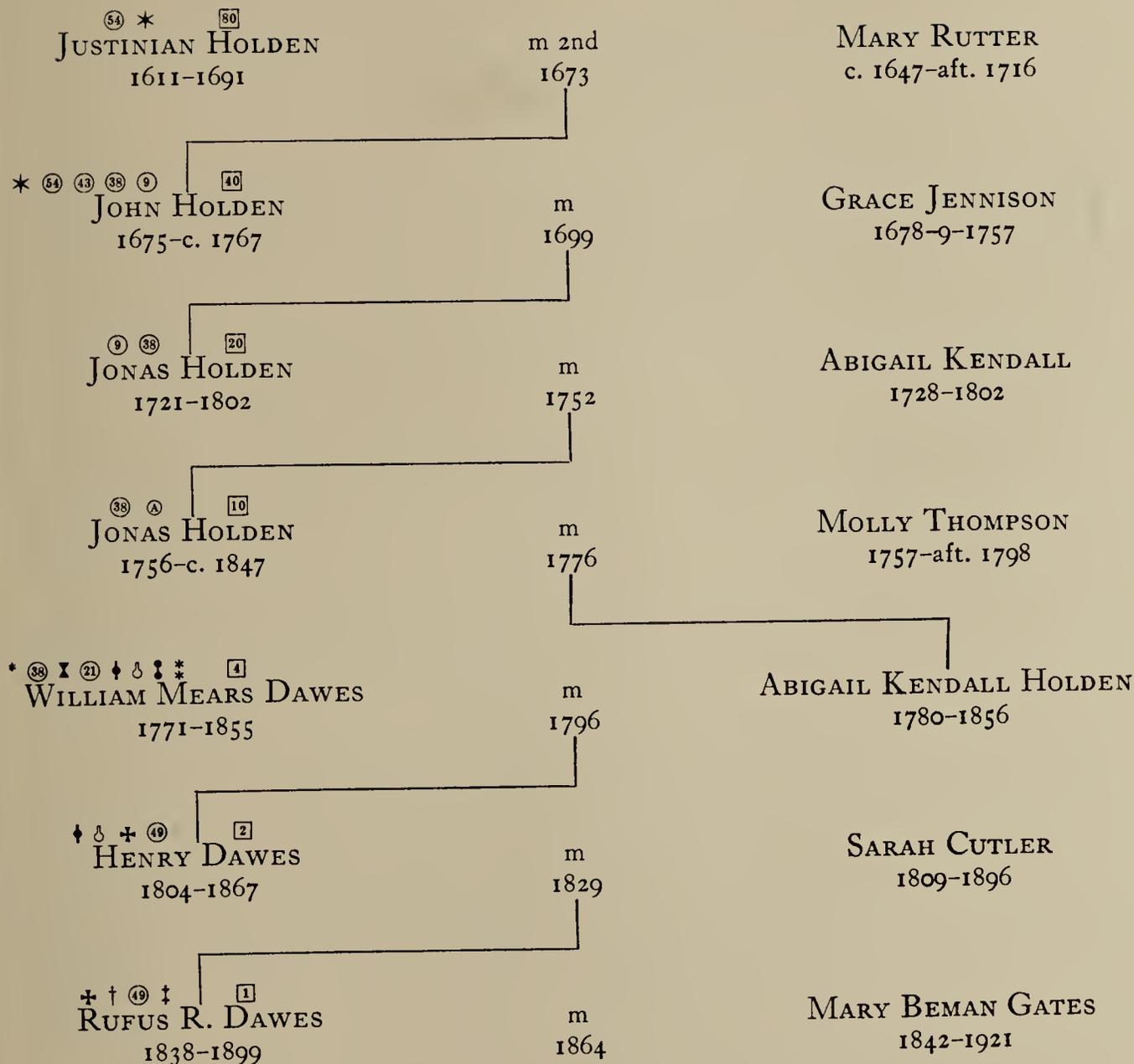
\*\*Tragic loss came to Samuel<sup>3</sup> Hayward (grandson of SAMUEL<sup>1</sup>) and his wife, Elizabeth Waite, in 1738, when the "throat distemper" (diphtheria) became epidemic in Malden, for within sixteen days they lost<sup>3,7</sup> five of their six young children, aged from ten months to ten years. At this same time our SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> and MARY (GROVER) UPHAM lost four children in less than a month.<sup>3</sup>

- xii. Jonathan<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1667; d. at Malden,<sup>3</sup> March 6, 1702, ae. 35; m. there May 14, 1690, Elizabeth Lee [Samuel and Mercy (Call) Lee and granddaughter of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL].<sup>11</sup>
- xiii. Ann<sup>2</sup>, b. March, 1669; d. there<sup>3</sup> Aug. 16, 1669.

## REFERENCES

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 144-6; Founders of New England, S. G. Drake, 1865, p. 21; New England Register, XIV, 307.</li> <li>2. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, pp. 489-90, 500, 810, 911, 921.</li> <li>3. Vital Records of Malden, pp. 43, 251, 353, 384; New England Register, XXV, 342-3.</li> <li>4. Vital Records of Cambridge, I, 375; II, 290, 680.</li> <li>5. History of First Church, Charlestown, W. I. Buntington, 1845, p. 248; New England Register, III, 191; XXIII, 281.</li> <li>6. History of Malden, D. P. Corey, 1899, pp. 91-2, 373, 377.</li> <li>7. <i>Ibid.</i>, 253, 259, 308, 325, 353, 367; New England Register, XLII, 299; XLIII, 278; King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 85, 286, 375; Index of Ancestors, Society of Colonial Wars, 1922, pp. 232, 253.</li> <li>8. Upham Genealogy, F. K. Upham, 1892, pp. 73, 76; Bi-Centennial Book of Malden, 1850, p. 248.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>9. Pope's Pioneers, pp. 224, 438; Savage II, 393-4; Malden Historical Society Register, III, 74; IV, 16-7.</li> <li>10. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, pp. 713, 921; Savage, III, 302; IV, 239.</li> <li>11. Swan — Farwell Genealogy, J. C. Frost, 1923, pp. 132, 144.</li> <li>12. Search of records of Middlesex County, by Mrs. James T. Watts of Washington, D. C.:<br/>Probate File No. 16189, will of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Oakes,<br/>Probate File No. 22037, will of Seth<sup>1</sup> Sweetser,<br/>Probate File No. 11012, will of SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> HAYWARD.</li> <li>13. Suffolk County, Probates, XI, 91, file No. 1553 abstracted by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass.</li> <li>14. History of Cambridge, L. R. Paige, 1877, p. 617.</li> <li>15. Records of the Church of Christ at Cambridge in New England, S. P. Sharples, 1906, pp. 18-9.</li> <li>16. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 314; II, 254; Felch Genealogy, W. F. Felch, 1881, pp. 1, 4.</li> </ol> |
|---|---|

# HOLDEN



\* Cambridge  
 (54) Watertown  
 (43) Weston  
 (38) Sudbury  
 (9) Concord  
 (A) Waitsfield, Vt.

\* Boston  
 (X) Marlborough  
 (21) Fitzwilliam, N. H.  
 † Thomaston, Me.  
 † Morgan Co., O.  
 † Licking Co., O.

\* Ripon, Wis.  
 † Malta, O.  
 (49) Mauston, Wis.  
 † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.  
 † Marietta, O.



## HOLDEN

**J**USTINIAN<sup>1</sup> HOLDEN, son of WILLIAM HOLDEN, was baptized<sup>1</sup> at Lindsey, co. Suffolk, England on October 6, 1611, and in 1634 calling himself twenty-three, with his brother Richard<sup>1</sup> Holden called twenty-five, he embarked<sup>2</sup> for New England the last of April on the "Francis" of Ipswich, from which place they sailed under John Cutting, Master, in company<sup>2</sup> with ROBERT<sup>1</sup> COE, his wife and three children (Dawes-Gates, II, 211). The brothers settled temporarily in Watertown and there JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup>, a carpenter<sup>4</sup> became a land holder in 1642 and on May 10 of that year received forty acres in the seventh division, buying other land in 1649 which he retained until 1660. Still other tracts are recorded to him.

JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup> had married first about 1641 Elizabeth (—) who is said to have been ten years his senior and who died March 18, 1672-3, at Cambridge.<sup>1</sup> A family account<sup>1</sup> states that "JESTENYAN married when he was thirty years old, to a woman who was forty, and lived with her thirty years, and she died. He married again, and had four children which were sons." But that tale which is true in the main, overlooked his three daughters, for JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup> was married secondly in 1673 to MARY<sup>2</sup> RUTTER (see Rutter, p. 538) who was thirty-five or thirty-six years his junior and who bore him four sons and three daughters. MARY testified on April 11, 1692, that she was then forty-five years old.

The early home of JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup> in Watertown<sup>1</sup> was on what is now Grove Street in Belmont and was not sold until 1673, but on March 1, 1653, JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup> had paid £210 to the Nathaniel Sparhawk estate for two hundred ninety-four acres over the line in adjoining Cambridge with a dwelling house and buildings lying north of Fresh Pond and west of the Alewife River<sup>3</sup> in what is now Belmont<sup>1</sup> though he did not at once change his residence. In 1652-3 he served as constable of Watertown; in 1653-4 collected the county and court fees; in 1654 Watertown owed him £1-1-0 for killing a wolf and a fox. That year Richard Brown brought suit against him in a case "a bought a Lamb," and on May 6, 1657, JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup> became a freeman<sup>5</sup> as of Watertown.

By about 1660 he and his wife removed to the Sparhawk property which he had bought in Cambridge, about seven years earlier, which was located near enough to his old Watertown home that his activities are recorded in both towns. For repeatedly Watertown owed him for wood delivered to their pastor and in 1674 owed him for the construction of the minister's home. But in Cambridge in 1662 JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup> was "to sitt in ye foremost seats" in the meeting house; in 1664-5 he received an added grant of ten acres in Cambridge and was entitled to have two cows on the Commons. At a meeting of the Cambridge selectmen in 1664 a peculiarly worded item\* is seen whereby the constables were ordered "to allow

\*Another curious item is found pertinent to 1690 whereby the town treasurer paid £1 for each wolf killed by an Englishman but only half that amount for such as were killed by Indians.

JUST: HOLDEN IO<sup>s</sup> towards a wolfe killed partly in water-Towne, and partly in this." It would be interesting to know on just what basis the locality of that animal's death was divided. Before 1670 JUSTINIAN<sup>t</sup> had purchased<sup>12</sup> several tracts of land in Groton but there is no evidence of his residence there. In 1672 and 1673 he was elected surveyor for Cambridge. In 1679 he called himself about sixty-six years old,<sup>3</sup> and in June, 1681, he petitioned the Court that since he was "disabled by the Providence of God from attending the Countrey service in military exercises by reason of great deafness, & Giddiness in his head beside other infirmities of old age, he being now about 70 years of age; he doth humbly crave of this Honored Court that they would please fully to free him from the said exercises . . ." which was granted — but the odd thing is that men were legally free from such service at the age of sixty in those days.

In 1684 JUSTINIAN<sup>t</sup> received a dividend of fifteen acres beyond the eight-mile limit and between that line and Concord line. There were recorded many conveyances of land by and to him.<sup>1</sup> He made a will on August 12, 1691, which was proved on October 6, 1691, and his death occurred between those dates.<sup>1,3</sup> An inventory of his estate was taken on September 30, 1691, showing a personal estate amounting to £80 including books valued at fifteen shillings and his "armer" valued at £1-16-0. His estate as a whole totaled<sup>3</sup> £1,153 covering two dwelling houses, two orchards, meadow land, etc. It provided for his wife in general terms, making her joint owner with the eldest son, of one of the houses mentioned but to have the use of the whole estate until the youngest child became twelve years old, which would have been in 1698. The daughters were to share the movable estate and certain meadow and the sons were to share the real estate. On May 9, 1694 "Widdow HOWLDIN" was one of many to sign a petition in regard to the placing of the new meeting house. On August 12, 1699, an agreement was drawn up by the four sons that they should each cut and house hay for one cow and supply two loads of wood (annually?) to their mother and to pay to each of their three sisters £6-13-4 when they became eighteen or were married.<sup>1</sup> It appears that without intending to do so, the will of JUSTINIAN<sup>t</sup> really entailed his lands and court action became necessary in 1712 and again in 1728-9 to break that condition and permit the heirs to sell the property.<sup>1</sup> Widow MARY was still living<sup>3</sup> November 12, 1716.

The children of JUSTINIAN<sup>t</sup> and MARY (RUTTER) HOLDEN all born at Cambridge were<sup>1,6,7</sup>

- i. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, b. Apr. 28, 1674; d. at Cambridge 1726; m. abt. 1698 Susanna<sup>3</sup> Shattuck (William<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>9</sup>
- ii. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- iii. Isaac<sup>2</sup>, b. May 26, 1677; d. at Cambridge Mar. 8, 1772; m. abt. 1702-3 Joanna<sup>3</sup> Shattuck (William<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>9</sup>
- iv. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. May 21, 1678-9; d. Jan. 17, 1758; m. by 1704 Samuel<sup>3</sup> Ward (Samuel<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>9</sup>
- v. Grace<sup>2</sup>, b. Aug. 13, 1681; d. at Watertown Nov. 9, 1714; m. there Dec. 17, 1713, as his second wife Benjamin<sup>3</sup> Eddy (Samuel<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>9</sup>
- vi. Joseph<sup>2</sup>, b. Sept. 6, 1683; d. at Westminster Nov. 30, 1768, ae. 84; m. 1st at Watertown, Feb. 17, 1714-5, Abigail<sup>3</sup> Shattuck (William<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>);<sup>9</sup> m. there 2ndly on June 11, 1729, Elizabeth (Dickson) Russell.<sup>7</sup>
- vii. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. May 6, bap. Oct. 24, 1686, at Watertown; d. 1767 "in her eightieth year"; she is said<sup>7</sup> to have m. at Watertown May 31, 1728, Henry<sup>4</sup> Goddin (William<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Henry<sup>1</sup>) but since he was b. 1704, it was more likely her niece Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> (JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup>) born in 1709 who married thus.<sup>10</sup>

JOHN<sup>2</sup> HOLDEN (*Justinian*<sup>1</sup>) was born<sup>6,7</sup> on July 18, 1675, at Cambridge, died probably\* about 1767 and likely at Concord where he had lived from about 1716 until at least 1757. He was married on November 7, 1699, at Watertown<sup>15</sup> by the Rev. Henry Gibbs, and at that gentleman's home, to GRACE<sup>3</sup> JENNISON (see Jennison, p. 373). In land transfers of 1707 and 1709 (including<sup>3</sup> one to SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> PRENTICE of Cambridge) JOHN<sup>2</sup> was called "of Watertown" and he had children recorded there from 1700 until 1711-2 although the family moved west to Watertown Farms (later Weston) probably by January, 1709-10 when his wife GRACE was dismissed from the church at the East End of Watertown to that at Weston.<sup>7</sup>

From the obtainable records pertaining to the birth of his eleven children JOHN<sup>2</sup> must have been a restless man for in addition to the above named places of residence, the birth of his seventh child is of record<sup>11</sup> at Sudbury in 1715 but at its baptism at Weston, later that year, it is said<sup>11</sup> to have been born at Colchester, Connecticut. These two locations must have been but temporary for before 1717 the family was settled in Concord<sup>7</sup> where JOHN<sup>2</sup> had purchased a farm in the southerly part of the township and also a two and a half acre tract at the juncture of two roads, having on it a house, shop and barn. In or before 1723 he and his wife were conducting an inn on this tract located on the Lancaster road, near Nine Acre Corner in the southerly part of Concord.<sup>7</sup> By 1733 he deeded a half interest in the ordinary to his son John<sup>3</sup> and later the other half to son Daniel<sup>3</sup>. In 1735 JOHN<sup>2</sup> was still called "innholder" but by 1736 was called "yeoman" and subsequently but little is known of him<sup>7</sup> except that he appears to have been living in Concord on January 7, 1757, when GRACE died there<sup>11</sup> as "wife to JOHN HOLDEN." In December, 1723, he as "innholder of Concord"<sup>7</sup> with his wife GRACE, had sued<sup>7</sup> her brother Samuel<sup>3</sup> Jennison, executor of the estate of their father SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> JENNISON, for an apportionment of the movables as directed by the will of the last named man, and in October, 1724, the court required the executor to divide the personal property among GRACE and her three sisters Judith<sup>3</sup>, Rachel<sup>3</sup> and Lydia<sup>3</sup> Jennison.<sup>7</sup>

The children of JOHN<sup>2</sup> and GRACE (JENNISON) HOLDEN, the first six born<sup>15</sup> at Watertown and the last four<sup>11,15</sup> at Concord, were:

- i. John<sup>3</sup>, b. June 5, 1700; d. prob. 1757; m. Concord Dec. 29, 1725, Mary Wheeler (Thomas of Sudbury).
- ii. Daniel<sup>3</sup>, b. Apr. 3, 1702; d. Nov. 7, 1782 "ae. 83", Concord; m. there Feb. 15, 1725-6, Anne Jones [Nathaniel and Mary (Redditt)].
- iii. Peter<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 1, 1704-5; d. aft. 1790; m. 1st May 21, 1730, Beulah Dakin; m. 2nd July 14, 1743, Concord, Abigail Jones.
- iv. Grace<sup>3</sup>, b. July 3, 1707; d. Mar. 8, 1724-5, Concord.
- v. Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, b. July 29, 1709; probably she who m. May 31, 1728, Henry<sup>4</sup> Goddin (William<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Henry<sup>1</sup>)<sup>10</sup> rather than her aunt of the same name.
- vi. Josiah<sup>3</sup>, b. Jan. 29, bap. Feb. 16, 1711-2, at Weston; d. Jan. 2, 1800, ae. Concord; m. there Jan. 27, 1742, Hannah Parker.
- vii. Judah (or Judith?)<sup>3</sup>, b. May 5, 1715, recorded at Sudbury<sup>16</sup> but at her bap. in Weston<sup>11</sup> July 30, 1715, aged 3 mo. said to have been b. at Colchester [Conn.].
- viii. Eunice<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 5, 1717, Concord (recorded as of JOHN and Mary — probably erroneously).
- ix. Mary<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 20, 1718-9, Concord; d. Aug. 15, 1801; m. Concord Aug. 26, 1741, John<sup>4</sup> Howe (Elisha<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).
- x. JONAS<sup>3</sup>, see following.
- xi. Abigail<sup>3</sup>, b. Nov. 7, 1723, Concord; d. Feb. 27, 1723-4.

\*This tentative date of death of JOHN<sup>2</sup> HOLDEN is suggested because of the recording there then by his sons of several deeds made long before covering land which had come to them from their father.

JONAS<sup>3</sup> HOLDEN (*John<sup>2</sup>, Justinian<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>11</sup> at Concord July 8, 1721, was buried at Sudbury July 17, 1800, aged 81, having married there on January 28, 1752, ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup> KENDALL (see Kendall, p. 391) of whom it is recorded<sup>28</sup> "February 1, 1802, Old Mrs. HOLDEN wife of JONAS, buried aged 75." She was baptized and she and her husband "owned the covenant" on December 10, 1752. This was often called the "Half-way Covenant" and it permitted the baptism of children. ABIGAIL was not admitted to full communion of the First Parish Church (formerly the West Side Church)<sup>28</sup> until June 10, 1792. JONAS<sup>3</sup> was in military service during the colonial period, enlisting March 10, 1748, and serving first as sentinel under Capt. Phineas Stevens, then as sergeant under Capt. Eleazer Melven<sup>8</sup> being a member of the 2nd Foot Company<sup>17</sup> under Capt. Richardson in April, 1757, and being recorded as ensign<sup>16</sup> in 1768. He evidently instilled patriotism and loyalty into the minds of his children for of his five sons, four served in the Revolution,<sup>17,18,19</sup> the youngest of them enlisting at the age of fourteen. JONAS<sup>3</sup>, a grantee<sup>21</sup> of land on Mill Brook in Sudbury April 3, 1753, was himself a "cordwainer," leather worker or shoemaker as were also his four older brothers. In earlier life he was regularly described in deeds as "cordwainer" until 1773 when he was called "gentleman." That may have meant that he had retired from active life and was a man of substance and leisure for on July 10, 1783, he transferred to his son JONAS<sup>4</sup> for a consideration of £200, three tracts of land in Sudbury with the buildings thereon, including a half interest in his own dwelling. In 1790 he and his wife were living alone<sup>27</sup> in Sudbury though their sons Levi<sup>4</sup> and JONAS<sup>4</sup> junior with their families also lived in that town. But financial misfortune evidently overtook JONAS<sup>3</sup> for in January, 1794, he mortgaged his whole estate in Sudbury and this debt was not discharged during his life time. His will was proved<sup>21,28</sup> March 9, 1803, by his son JONAS<sup>4</sup> in Middlesex County Probate Court, and the mortgage was discharged<sup>8</sup> by his heirs or executor April 5, 1805. The children in this family scattered widely, Abel<sup>4</sup> and Asa<sup>4</sup> to Hanover, New Hampshire and later to New York City, Levi<sup>4</sup> to New Jersey and JONAS<sup>4</sup> to Vermont.

The children of JONAS<sup>3</sup> and ABIGAIL (KENDALL) HOLDEN all born at Sudbury were<sup>16,21</sup>

- I. Abel<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 2, 1752; d. Aug. 3, 1818, in N. Y. Cy.; became captain in Revolution; m. 1st at Sudbury Aug. 27, 1772, Lois<sup>5</sup> Cutler (Asher<sup>4</sup>, Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, JAMES<sup>1</sup>);<sup>22,26</sup> m. 2nd at Waltham July 23, 1777, Thankful Cutting (Richard and Thankful).
- II. \*Levi<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 12, 1754; d. Apr. 9, 1823, in Newark, N. J.;<sup>28</sup> became captain in Revolution; m. Jan. 15, 1778, his third cousin once removed Hannah<sup>4</sup> Plympton (Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Peter<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>, the<sup>22</sup> last named being brother of our ELIZABETH (PLYMPTON) RUTTER.)
- III. JONAS<sup>4</sup>, see following.
- IV. Asa<sup>4</sup>, b. May 10, 1762; d. Aug. 3, 1854, in N. Y. Cy.; served in Revolution at age of 14; m. 1837 Mary (—).
- V. Joel<sup>4</sup>, b. Dec. 5, 1768; d. aft. 1792; m. aft. 1790 Betsey David.

\*A grandson of Levi<sup>4</sup> told an odd story<sup>13</sup> of that man, who had sold a farm he owned at Sudbury and had been paid in gold which he wished to deposit in a Concord bank. The gold being bulky, he placed it in his saddle bags. When he reached the famous "Wayside Inn" he joined a convivial party there for a short time before continuing his trip to Concord. At his arrival there, on examining his saddle bags he found the gold had been stolen and replaced by stones. He threw them out and returned home without mentioning his loss, even to his wife. Three years later the man whom he suspected asked him one day if he had ever found out who took his money three years before. Levi<sup>4</sup> answered, "No, I never found out till now. You are the man." The self-convicted thief was glad to clear himself by<sup>13</sup> refunding. Levi<sup>4</sup> Holden became a member of Gen. Washington's Guard<sup>13</sup> in 1781 and one of the founders of the Society of the Cincinnati in 1783.

JONAS<sup>4</sup> HOLDEN (*Jonas<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Justinian<sup>1</sup>*) was born Aug. 31, 1756, at Sudbury,<sup>8,16</sup> died about 1847 at Waitsfield, Vermont<sup>21</sup> having married at Sudbury<sup>16</sup> December 10, 1776, MOLLY<sup>c</sup> THOMPSON (see Thompson, p. 593). On April 6, 1777, JONAS<sup>4</sup> and his wife "MOLLY" became members<sup>23</sup> of the Rev. Mr. Cook's Church in Sudbury as had been the parents of both of them and even the grandparents of MOLLY. As he grew toward manhood JONAS<sup>4</sup> would have heard constantly discussed, the problems and discontents which preceded and resulted in the American Revolution. As early as 1770 the Sudbury residents showed hearty approval of the decision of the Boston merchants to refrain from importation of English goods on which the offensive tax had been laid. They took a firm stand in 1773-4 with the other New England towns against the use of tea which was seeking forcible entry into the country; and sensing the increasing tenseness, the Sudbury authorities in 1774 formed companies<sup>23</sup> of militia and also of minute-men, who, as the name implies, should hold themselves in readiness to march at a moment's notice.

Though records are found showing that for six months (or more) military supplies were being assembled by Sudbury, yet on March 27, 1775, less than a month before they were called out to active battle a report made as to equipment possessed by several of the Sudbury companies showed the following deficiency:<sup>23</sup>

"Capt. Moses Stone's Company — 92 men of them, 18 no guns. at Least one third part y<sup>e</sup> forelocks unfit for Sarvis others wais un a quipt."

"Capt. Aaron Hayns Company — 60 men weel provided With Arms the most of them Provided with Bayonets or hatchets a boue one quarter Part with Catrige Boxes."

"Capt. Joseph Smith's Company consisting of seventy-five able Bodied men, forty well a quipt, twenty Promis to find and a quipt themselves Emedtly, fifteen no guns and other wais un a quipt."<sup>23\*</sup>

Probably much of this shortage was eliminated before the "Alarm" came on April 19, 1775, when ammunition was furnished each Sudbury man to the extent of one pound of powder and two pounds of balls. But the statement is made<sup>32</sup> that Abijah Pierce of Lincoln, of whose regiment the Sudbury companies were a part, hurried to Concord at the Alarm with only a cane and had to await capture of a musket from the British before he could be armed. The Sudbury company had been meeting weekly for drill, and the roll showing the personnel of the company of minute men under Capt. John Nixon is extant and records the attendance of the members for a period of six weeks from March 13 to April 15, 1775. Abel<sup>4</sup> Holden and his brother JONAS<sup>4</sup> called "jr." (*not senior as has sometimes<sup>20</sup> been erroneously stated*) were members of this company and were present at each drill. Indeed, so keen was the interest in this preparation that of the sixty men (officers and privates) during the six weeks drill but five absences were recorded. And two days after their last drill on April 15, they were aroused between three and four o'clock in the morning by the sound of musket-shot and the ringing bell to hear the news, first broadcast by the swift-riding Paul Revere and WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES, that the British were marching on Concord to destroy the supplies assembled there. Sudbury is distant from Concord about eight miles south and west (see map, p. 42) and the word had been sent from Concord to Thomas<sup>3</sup> Plympton\*\* of Sudbury.

\*Commas inserted by the compiler.

\*\*Member of the Provincial Congress, second cousin of JOHN<sup>2</sup> HOLDEN and soon to become father-in-law of Levi<sup>4</sup> Holden (JONAS<sup>3</sup>).

Captain Nixon's minute men and Capt. Aaron Haynes' militia company promptly assembled at the west meeting house, and marched from the northern part of the township for Concord before sunrise. Other companies from the southern part of Sudbury soon followed until a total of three hundred and two, or about one-fifth of the town's population, had marched to Concord.<sup>23</sup> In Capt. Nixon's company in addition to Abel<sup>4</sup> and JONAS<sup>4</sup> HOLDEN were Asher<sup>5</sup> Cutler (Asher<sup>4</sup>, Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, JAMES<sup>1</sup>) whose sister Lois had married Abel<sup>4</sup> Holden, and Abel<sup>c</sup> Thompson, son of JAMES<sup>b</sup> and MARY (VORCE) THOMPSON, whose sister MOLLY<sup>c</sup> was to marry JONAS<sup>4</sup> HOLDEN within the year. Capt. Nixon's intent had been to enter Concord by way of the old South Bridge over the Sudbury River, but a messenger met them with the warning that the British already held it and that they must circle the town, join the assembled forces at Punkatasset Hill and enter town by the North Bridge (see map, p. 448). So they made this detour, passing the home of Col. James Barrett (west and north of Concord) where muskets and cannon belonging to the colony had that very morning been dropped into hastily plowed furrows, each covered with its succeeding furrow — while ammunition was hidden in the attic in the bottom of casks which *appeared* to be filled with *feathers*. Just before the arrival of the Sudbury men a detachment of the British had searched the Barrett premises and had burned a few wheels and gun carriages — missing entirely the hidden articles. The British searching party, returning to the main body of regulars in the village of Concord, were probably closely followed by the Sudbury men. The distance the latter men had to travel, with the detour they were forced to make, probably precluded the possibility that JONAS<sup>4</sup> HOLDEN and his associates were present when there was fired "the shot heard round the world" though they probably heard it from a distance and they are recorded as having assisted at the harassment of the British retreat, all the way from Meriam's Corner to Charlestown. On that day three of Sudbury's sons suffered, one by a wound and two by death, one of them being Deacon Josiah Haynes aged eighty (see p. 448) who followed the British as far as Lexington and there gave up his life.

For though at their first shot at the North Bridge, the Americans had assumed the offensive, it is an admitted fact that after crossing that bridge there was no further concert of action or military order. "They became almost at one blow an independent people. On the pursuit each man was his own general, chose his own time, his own position, and his own mode of attack."<sup>24</sup> This style of fighting was fearfully hard on the British morale and terribly effective and destructive. The regulars had to march down "Battle Road" with only the protection of flanking parties thrown out at each side; but for the colonists every house, barn, wall, fence and tree was momentary shelter for a sharpshooter who at once hurried on to another shelter for another shot. The British retreat for about a mile was uneventful but at Merriam's Corner<sup>32,33</sup> (see map, p. 42) they were met by the Americans who had come across the fields, including the Sudbury contingent with Abel<sup>4</sup> and JONAS<sup>4</sup> HOLDEN and aged Josiah Haynes (see Thompson, p. 593). From this point until they reached Charlestown about 7 p.m. the harassment of the British was practically continuous and their losses heavy in killed and wounded. They "were driven before the Americans like sheep" and had to "run the gantlet."<sup>24</sup> While there has been criticism, from a purely military point of view, for this guerrilla-like conduct, the training of the colonists in Indian conflicts and their

lack of training of other sort, left them no choice, and it seems fair to claim that the end justified the means.

Even though JONAS<sup>4</sup> did not take a major part in the affairs of April 19, no day of his life could have been more significant to him or his descendants. He served a month at this time<sup>18</sup> and as to further service on his part we know only that as "Ensign" under Capt. Rice he had due him from the town of Sudbury on October 26, 1778, the sum of £53 probably as a bonus for a specified term of service.<sup>17</sup> After the Revolution he became Captain of Militia<sup>16,21</sup> at least from 1787 to 1795 and in 1798 at the birth of his youngest child was recorded as Major.<sup>16</sup> In 1790 he was the head<sup>27</sup> of a family of eleven though probably two of these were relatives or servants. He is said<sup>8</sup> to have become<sup>21</sup> an inn holder in Sudbury by 1791. In March, 1803, JONAS<sup>4</sup> was executor of the estate of his father<sup>21</sup> and was undoubtedly instrumental in, if not wholly responsible for, paying off the mortgage, in April, 1805, which his father had placed on his property eleven years before. In 1805 JONAS<sup>4</sup> bought land in Waitsfield, Washington County, Vermont and with a part of his family moved there that year early enough to be rated for a poll tax.<sup>21</sup> In 1806 he bought a nursery which had been started on the east side of the Mad River and on December 28, 1807, was one of a group signing an agreement for a reorganization of the first religious society (because of a change in the Vermont law) which created the "Congregational Society in Waitsfield" . . . he being chosen to serve as one of its "Prudential Committee" of three.<sup>21</sup> He dealt heavily in real estate in Waitsfield and adjoining Fayston. He is said to have been resident for a time about 1820 in Winchester, Cheshire County, New Hampshire but to have returned to Waitsfield where he died and was buried about 1847.<sup>8,21</sup>

The children of JONAS<sup>4</sup> and MOLLY (THOMPSON) HOLDEN, all born in Sudbury were<sup>8,16,21</sup>

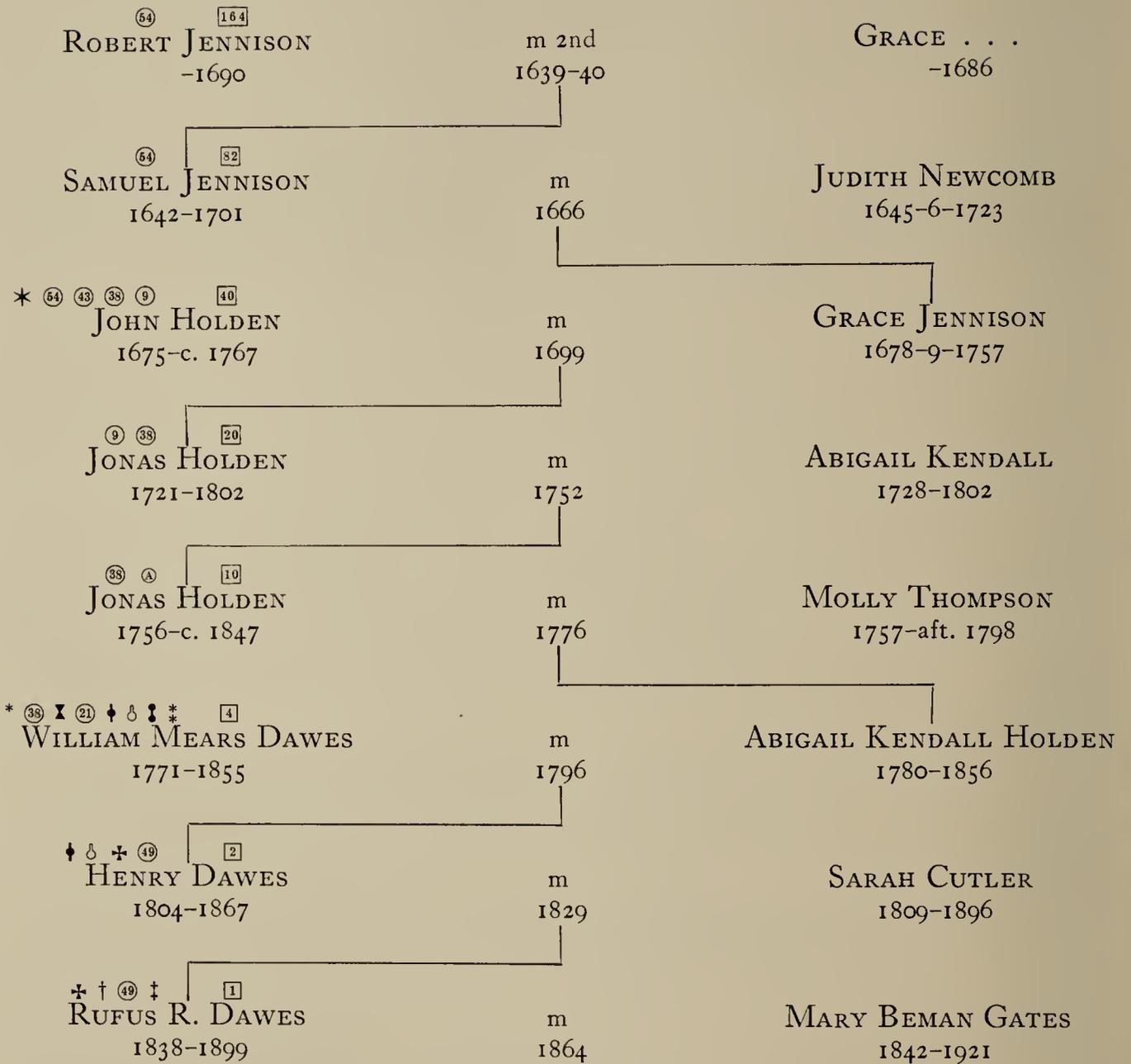
- I. Lewis<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 21, 1777; d. 1870 Waitsfield, Vt.; m. 1st June 21, 1803, at Keene, N. H. Phebe Sawin; m. 2nd June 8, 1829, at Waitsfield Nancy (Kidder) Johnson.
- II. dau.<sup>6</sup>, b. Oct. 27, 1778, d. Nov. 20, 1778.
- III. ABIGAIL ("NABBY") KENDALL<sup>6</sup>, b. Mar. 1, 1780; m. at Sudbury Sept. 26, 1796, WILLIAM MEARS<sup>6</sup> DAWES (see Dawes, p. 47). She died at Hudson, Ohio in Sept. 1856.
- IV. Ruel<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 29, 1781.
- V. John<sup>6</sup>, b. June 12, 1783; was for some years after 1805 a resident of Waitsfield.
- VI. Polly<sup>6</sup>, b. Mar. 18, 1785; m. Dec. 1, 1803, Sudbury, Dr. Charles Ulmer.
- VII. Betsey<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 28, 1787, m. Oct. 2, 1805, Sudbury, Thomas Ruggles<sup>6</sup> Plympton (Ebenezer<sup>4</sup>, Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Peter<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>25,26</sup>
- VIII. William<sup>6</sup>, b. Mar. 17, 1789.
- IX. Sally<sup>6</sup>, b. Apr. 21, 1791.
- X. Nancy<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 8, 1793; d. Apr. 15, 1794.
- XI. Nancy<sup>6</sup>, b. Apr. 19, 1795.
- XII. Fanny<sup>6</sup>, b. July 2, 1798.

## REFERENCES

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Holden Genealogy, Eben Putnam, 1923, I, 47, 57-61.</li> <li>2. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 122-3.</li> <li>3. History of Watertown, H. Bond, 1860, pp. 301-2, 794.</li> <li>4. History of Cambridge, L. R. Paige, 1877, pp. 585-6.</li> <li>5. Records of Massachusetts Bay, IV, pt. 1, p. 461.</li> <li>6. Vital Records of Cambridge, I, 362, II, 202-3, 604.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>7. Holden Genealogy, pp. 57-8, 85-91, 130.</li> <li>8. Ibid., pp. 89, 129-133, 215-222.</li> <li>9. Bond's Watertown, pp. 203, 429; William Ward Genealogy, C. Martyn, 1925, pp. 70, 83; Howe Genealogies, D. W. &amp; G. B. Howe, 1929, I, 6.</li> <li>10. Goding Genealogy, F. W. Goding, 1906, p. 20; Bond's Watertown, pp. 257, 301.</li> </ol> |
|---|--|

11. Vital Records of Concord, pp. 92, 96, 102, 104, 108, 110, 195; Vital Records of Sudbury, p. 72; Vital Records of Weston, pp. 385, 391, 396, 443.
12. Early Records of Groton, S. A. Green, 1880, p. 173.
13. New England Register, LI, 220; New York G. & B. Record, 1899, XXX, 109-14, 141-6; Commander-In-Chief's Guard, C. E. Godfrey, 1904, pp. 185-6.
14. Holden Genealogy, pp. 24-7, 32-6.
15. Watertown Records, II, (pt. 2) 11, 24, 28, 35, 38, 45, 49, 85.
16. Vital Records of Sudbury, pp. 72-3, 218, 311.
17. History of Sudbury, A. S. Hudson, 1889, pp. 342, 364-9, 371-2, 375, 404.
18. Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors, VIII, 104-5.
19. Ibid., VIII, 95-7, 115-7.
20. National Year Book of the Sons of the American Revolution, 1916, p. 251; 1918, p. 277.
21. History of Waitsfield, Vt., with Family Genealogies, M. B. Jones, 1909, pp. 20, 69-70, 110, 170, 344-6.
22. Cutler Memorial, N. S. Cutler, 1889, p. 48.
23. Hudson's Sudbury, pp. 359-65, 368-72, 374-81.
24. Harper's Monthly Magazine, L, 777-804. "The Concord Fight."
25. Family of Plympton in America, 1884, L. B. Chase, pp. 84, 100; Genealogical and Family History of Southern New York, Cuyler Reynolds, 1913, II, 635-6.
26. Vital Records of Wayland, p. 82.
27. Census of 1790 of Massachusetts, p. 155.
28. Research by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Middlesex Probates No. 11694; Records of the First Parish Church (formerly the West Side Church) of Sudbury kept by the Rev. Jacob Bigelow, 2 Vols., copies at New England Society, Boston.

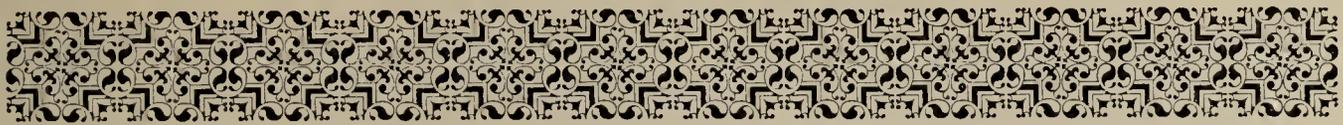
# JENNISON



- ⑤④ Watertown
- \* Cambridge
- ④③ Weston
- ③⑧ Sudbury
- ⑨ Concord
- ④ Waitsfield, Vt.

- \* Boston
- ✕ Marlborough
- ②① Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.
- ♁ Morgan Co., O.
- ♁ Licking Co., O.

- \* Ripon, Wis.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- ✕ Malta, O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## JENNISON\* (*Gemson, Generson*)

**R**OBERT<sup>1</sup> JENNISON, younger brother of Capt. William<sup>1</sup> Jennison\*\* followed him to New England, appearing as a resident of Watertown before April, 1637, when his first child was born there.<sup>5</sup> His first wife† Elizabeth died on October 10, 1638, said to have then been thirty years old and he married secondly in 1639 or early 1640 GRACE whose identity has not been found. ROBERT<sup>1</sup> was evidently a church member for he was made a freeman<sup>10</sup> in May, 1645, in company with our RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS.

He had a six acre home lot<sup>1</sup> in Watertown in the angle where Cambridge Road (the road to Harvard College, now<sup>1</sup> called Mount Auburn Street) and Bank Lane met. This was a little to the east from Mill Bridge, and east of the lowest falls on Charles River, at the head of tidewater.<sup>1</sup> His brother Capt. William, returned permanently to England about<sup>14</sup> 1651 leaving a considerable amount of real estate to ROBERT<sup>1</sup>, and was "of Colchester, Old England" in April, 1657, when ROBERT<sup>1</sup> as his attorney sold two hundred acres of land in Framingham.<sup>1</sup> ROBERT<sup>1</sup> acquired considerable land probably partly by purchase. In 1657 he was fined<sup>16</sup> one shilling because he allowed his porkers too much freedom. The next year he and his son-in-law Richard Bloise contracted to pay £5 per year for the use of the meadow and corn land belonging to "Ould Knop" (Knap), an aged man who was being cared for by the town. In 1671 the town record shows that when the constables gave in an "acount of their rats and fines" there was "loast to ROBERT JENYSON ouer Rated" two shillings four pence.<sup>16</sup> In a deed of August, 1672, he as grantor<sup>1</sup> called himself "yeoman."

Even in the earliest days trees on the town's land could not be cut without permission, and as clearings became more extensive the jealous guarding of the trees would naturally be more evident. But in the later life of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> an odd item is recorded thus:<sup>18</sup>

\*This name was sometimes rendered even as Jinnings.

\*\*William<sup>1</sup> Jennison was a prominent, wealthy and most patriotic man, one of the first settlers at Watertown; was first the Ensign and later Captain of the town's train band and was one of the twenty-four charter members of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company.<sup>14</sup>

†If one may be excused for ignoring the recorded *age* at death of Elizabeth — first wife of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> JENNISON (as one frequently *has* to do because of *proved* facts) the identity of that wife seems evident. The will<sup>7,8</sup> of FRANCES (MOODY) KILBOURN, wife<sup>9</sup> and widow of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> KILBOURN, (Dawes-Gates, II, 509-14) made in 1650 is erroneously quoted<sup>7</sup> as making a bequest to her granddaughter Elizabeth *Spencer* when it should read<sup>8</sup> Elizabeth "Generson" or Geneson<sup>20</sup> meaning Jennison. Elizabeth<sup>9</sup> Kilbourn daughter of that testator was baptized<sup>7</sup> in England on May 12, 1614, but has not been further recorded though her parents and some of their children emigrated in 1635. ROBERT<sup>1</sup> JENNISON of Watertown married by July, 1636, an Elizabeth (—) who bore him a daughter Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Jennison on April 12, 1637, and then died at Watertown on October 10, 1638, *said* to have been aged thirty. If Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Kilbourn is proved to have been that first wife, there is therefore this discrepancy of recorded baptism in 1614 and *reputed* birth about 1608. On the other hand, if JENNISON's first wife Elizabeth is proved to have been born Kilbourn, her motherless daughter Elizabeth born in 1637 and not married until October, 1652, is a perfect pattern for the granddaughter named in the above will of 1650 and no other person of similar name is found at that period.

“At a meeting of y<sup>e</sup> select men at y<sup>e</sup> house of Decon Bright ye: 14: of Decem: 1680 old Father JENISON requesting an old tree that is decaied y<sup>t</sup> stands alitle way from y<sup>e</sup> said JENISONS; y<sup>e</sup> select men left y<sup>e</sup> matter to William Bond senior to act in it: so y<sup>t</sup> if y<sup>e</sup> said tree be ef no use to y<sup>e</sup> Towne y<sup>t</sup> then y<sup>e</sup> said JENISON may have it.”<sup>18</sup>

A very shocking episode came to pass in connection with this family. The circumstances show that ROBERT<sup>1</sup> provided his wife GRACE with a nurse maid to assist her, and that their choice had fallen upon a very unworthy person. One of the innocent victims in about 1646-8 was their own infant and the other was Goody Kendall who had first been the wife and widow of Samuel Holley of Cambridge and who married secondly\* John<sup>1</sup> Kendall. The following record<sup>11</sup> is of 1648 so it must pertain to a child of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> and GRACE who was born after our SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>. The circumstances were related by the Rev. John Hale of Beverly in his “Modest Inquiry into the Nature of Witchcraft.” We may well be thankful that GENINGS (JENNISON) did not know of the persecution accorded Goody Kendall nor did he believe in the victim’s guilt. After reporting various executions for suspected witchcraft the Rev. Mr. Hale records:<sup>11</sup>

“Another suffering in this kind was a Woman of Cambridge, against whom a principal evidence was a Watertown Nurse, who testified, that the said Kendal (so was the accused called) did bewitch to Death a Child of Goodman GENINGS of Watertown; for the said Kendal did make much of the Child, and then the Child was well, but quickly changed its colour and dyed in a few hours after. The Court took this evidence among others, the said GENINGS not knowing of it. But after Kendal was Executed (who also denied her guilt to the Death) Mr. Rich. Brown knowing and hoping better things of Kendal, asked said GENINGS if they suspected her to bewitch their Child, they answered No. But they judged the true cause of the Childs Death to be thus, viz. The Nurse had the night before carryed out the Child and kept it abroad in the Cold a long time, when the red gum was come out upon it, and the Cold had struck in the red gum, and this they judged the cause of the Childs death. And that said Kendal did come in that day and make much of the Child, but they apprehended no wrong to come to the Child by her. After this the said Nurse was put into Prison for Adultery, and there delivered of her base Child, and Mr. Brown went to her and told her, It was just with God to leave her to this wickedness as a Punishment for her Murdering goody Kendal by her false witness bearing. But the Nurse dyed in Prison, and so the matter was not farther inquired into.”

The will<sup>3</sup> of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> JENNISON dated September 15, 1683, with a codicil of April 2, 1687, was proved on October 7, 1690. The inventory of his estate taken<sup>3</sup> July 24, 1690, showing a valuation over £101 stated that he died July 4, 1690. The will<sup>3</sup> itself left his whole estate to his wife during her life, with liberty to dispose of one-third of the movables; left forty shillings to daughter “Mikell” Warren; twenty shillings to son-in-law George Read; forty acres of his farm which had formerly belonged to his brother Capt. William<sup>1</sup> Jennison, to the testator’s grandchild William<sup>3</sup> Jennison, then but seven years old, and made his son SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> sole executor and beneficiary after the death of the testator’s wife GRACE, except for the specified bequests. The death of GRACE occurred on November 26, 1686, so ROBERT<sup>1</sup> added a codicil on April 2, 1687, giving to daughter “Micaell” an additional £5; giving to grandson Robert<sup>3</sup> Jennison, then less than three years old thirty acres of the above farm; and making void his earlier bequest to his son-in-law

\*John<sup>1</sup> Kendall is believed to have been a brother of our FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL of Woburn and of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Kendall of Lynn and Reading.

George Read "for reasons best known to myself."<sup>3</sup> It makes one curious to know just how George had offended!

The known child of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> JENNISON and his first wife Elizabeth, born at Watertown was<sup>1,2,3,5</sup>

- I. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. Apr. 12, 1637; d. Feb. 26, 1664-5, ae. 28; m. at Woburn Oct. 2, 1652, George<sup>2</sup> Read (Reed) son of William<sup>1</sup> and \*Mabel (Kendall) Read (see Kendall, p. 392).

The known\*\* children of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> and GRACE (—) JENNISON both born in Watertown were<sup>1,3</sup>

- II. Michell<sup>2</sup> or Michal, b. Dec. 17, 1640; d. at Watertown July 4, 1713; m. there, 1st, Feb. 10, 1657-8, Richard<sup>2</sup> Bloise (Edmund<sup>1</sup>); m. there, 2nd, July 11, 1667, Capt. John<sup>2</sup> Warren (John<sup>1</sup>).
- III. SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, see following.

SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> JENNISON (*Robert<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>1</sup> at Watertown and it apparently was he who was recorded<sup>3</sup> on December 15, 1642, (though an unsupported claim is made<sup>2</sup> that this first one of the name died young and another of the name was born in 1645). SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> died at Watertown on October 15, 1701, having spent his entire life there. He married there<sup>5</sup> on October 30, 1666, JUDITH<sup>2</sup> NEWCOMB (see Newcomb, p. 460) who outlived him<sup>1</sup> over twenty-one years dying<sup>2</sup> on March 1, 1722-3 at Watertown.

Just here a digression is necessary to correct an error which has stood in print<sup>2</sup> for at least eighty years as to the identity† of JUDITH, wife of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> JENNISON. It came about by a mis-reading of the original records of Watertown wherein the writer gave a preliminary upward stroke to his capital letter "N" which made it appear like an "M" (see illustr., p. 461). Comparison of these letters in the accompanying plate will show how JUDITH "NUCOMBE" easily became "Macombe" but why any compiler should generously add<sup>2</sup> an "r" to his mistaken rendition, is hard to understand. By that act the identity of JUDITH was most effectually hidden.

SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> in 1672 was appointed as one of two hog reeves;<sup>16</sup> he became a church member and was admitted a freeman on October 11, 1682. In deeds he was described<sup>1</sup> both as "yeoman" and "gentleman." His service to the town was varied and extensive. In 1680, 1683-4, 1690 and 1693 he was designated to "perambulate" the bounds of Watertown; was made town clerk in November, 1691, was constable in 1693-5, and in December, 1694, was one of a committee to audit the accounts of the constables from 1687 to the current date. On September 4, 1683, "The cuntry inuoice was perfected and deleuared to the cummitioner SAMUELL JENISON to be caryed to the shiertown‡ as the lawe direckts" and he held a similar position again in 1690.<sup>18</sup>

As town clerk his duties included<sup>18</sup> giving "notis to y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants y<sup>e</sup> next sabath day after exersise to atend the publick meting at: 9 of the clock in y<sup>e</sup> morning at

\*Mabel (Kendall) Read, later a second wife of Henry<sup>1</sup> Sommers, was a sister of our FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL of Woburn and presumably also of John<sup>1</sup> Kendall of Cambridge whose wife was executed for a claimed injury to an infant in this family (vide supra, p. 370).

\*\*They evidently had a fourth, unrecorded child (vide supra, p. 371) who died<sup>11</sup> by or before 1648.

†Grateful acknowledgement must be made of the untiring effort of Mrs. James T. Watts of Washington, D. C. to unearth for the compiler *proof* that JUDITH was born NEWCOMB and to the hearty cooperation of Mr. G. Frederick Robinson, President of the Watertown Historical Society.

‡Shiretown implied the equivalent of a present day county seat.

the meting-houce," issuing "orders to the Suruaiers to take care about mending highways and Bridgses," making, with the assistance of others, the "contry Rate" and arranging for the support of the wife and children of one who was "in the contry saruic".<sup>18</sup> On December 14, 1691, and at several other times, the selectmen met at his home and his duties continued in the line of arranging for reimbursement to those who provided necessaries or medical care for two persons who were "on the town" and going to Charlestown court at various times to represent the town in several matters one of which was "to answare to the presentments . . . against the towne for the defect of the Bridge and for want of agramer Schole".<sup>18</sup> Other tasks which fell to him were "warning out of town" such persons as had not complied with the town regulations or who were undesirables, giving notice of a town meeting to choose "acomisoner to take an invoyce for y<sup>e</sup> cuntory", issuing orders to town officers relative to viewing of fences and "Regulating of swine", preparing the town rate, assigning the collection of it to the constables, arranging payment of town creditors from the receipts thereof and conferring with an inhabitant "concerning his selling of drink in his house contrary to law: and to fore warn him of so doing as he will in cure the penalty of the law".<sup>18</sup> On September 30, 1692, it was "agried . . . that the Clerk shall giue anacompt to the comity of debenters to be discounted out of such solgers wadges", for a portion of soldiers' pay was frequently advanced by a town for the support of their families.<sup>18</sup>

SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> was chosen November 4, 1692, to be moderator of the yearly town meeting and, February 13, following, it was "Vottid y<sup>t</sup> benjamin garfeld SAMUELL GENOSON and William shatuck are impouerid and desiered to mak their application to y<sup>e</sup> honored gouerner and counsell in y<sup>e</sup> behalfe of the town of Wattertown: that y<sup>e</sup> mistake or earors in the inuoyce or asesment: taken in y<sup>e</sup> yeare: 1690: may be mendid and abatid". The personnel and service of this committee were continued on January 26, 1693-4 with instructions to "prosecut the case to the vtmost" at Boston "in the townes behalfe" when, as well as many other times, SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> JENNISON was called "sergeant", though in his later years and at the settlement of his estate he was called "Ensign". He was a selectman<sup>2</sup> in 1691 and was re-chosen to that office on March 24, 1692-3.

His activities were not confined to civic affairs for, on March 6, 1682-3, he was a tithing man; the contributions for the ministry were in 1691 in the hands of himself and William Bond, he was one of the collectors for the same fund in 1693, subscribed to the repair of the meeting house and signed petitions in 1694 and 1696, respectively, relative to the placing of that building and the calling of a minister.<sup>18</sup>

In July, 1694, Sergeant SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> JENNISON was deputized to assist a committee who were to file an information in the Superior Court in behalf of Shubael Child who had been kept in the unheated town prison during the previous winter, because of a temporary mental unbalance, until his feet were frozen and he was permanently crippled thereafter.<sup>18</sup>

SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> made his will<sup>1,3</sup> on November 13, 1700, the inventory of his estate totaling £383 was taken on October 31, 1701, and his will was probated on November 3 following. It gave to wife JUDITH the homestead, both housing and lands and £60; to eldest son Samuel<sup>3</sup> one acre of meadow land in addition to what he had already had; second son William<sup>3</sup> of Sudbury forty acres of land which was doubtless the tract mentioned in the will of ROBERT<sup>1</sup>; to son Peter<sup>3</sup> one half of a farm in Sudbury; to youngest son Robert<sup>3</sup> the housing and lands after the wife's

death; thirty acres of land in Watertown (doubtless from ROBERT<sup>1</sup>) and £10 in money out of the £60 left to wife JUDITH. The oldest daughter Judith Barnard was to have £10 paid to her by Samuel<sup>3</sup>; second daughter Rachel Barron to have £8 paid to her by William<sup>3</sup>; daughter GRACE HOLDEN to have £8 paid to her by Peter<sup>3</sup> and also a brass kettle, while daughter Lydia<sup>3</sup> was to have £20 paid to her at eighteen or at marriage. His five living grandchildren including John<sup>3</sup> Holden (then but five months old) were to have ten shillings each; the four daughters were to eventually divide the movables and wife JUDITH and son Samuel<sup>3</sup> were named executors. JUDITH was sick for eight or nine weeks before her death at Watertown on March 1, 1722-3, and expense for nursing and attendance was listed in the final accounting by Samuel<sup>3</sup> in a citation<sup>3</sup> of the heirs, of whom JOHN<sup>2</sup> HOLDEN was one, on May 9, 1723. Apparently Samuel<sup>3</sup> was dilatory in the completion of his executorship for in December, 1723, JOHN<sup>2</sup> HOLDEN of Concord,<sup>13</sup> innholder and his wife GRACE, daughter and legatee of SAMUEL JENNISON Sr. of Watertown sued her brother Samuel<sup>3</sup> for a division of the personal property ("moveables") between the four daughters of the deceased, viz. Judith, Rachel, GRACE and Lydia, which had been bequeathed to them by their father's will. In October, 1724, the court directed that this distribution should be made.<sup>13,17</sup>

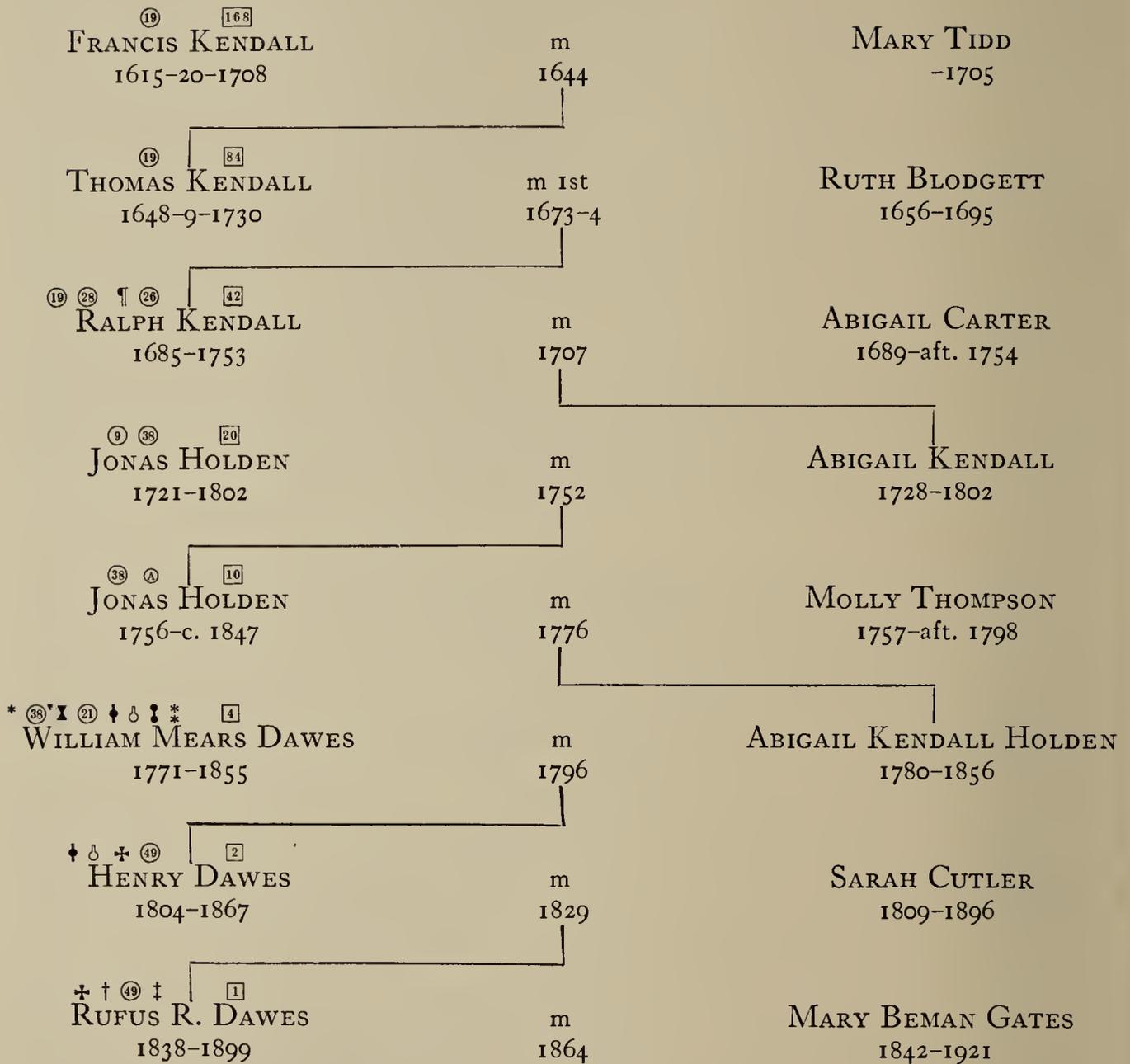
The known children of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and JUDITH (NEWCOMB) JENNISON all born in Watertown were<sup>1,2,3,5</sup>

- I. Judith<sup>3</sup>, b. Aug. 13, 1667; m. 1st Dec. 16, 1692, James<sup>3</sup> Barnard (John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>);<sup>12</sup> m. 2nd, May 30, 1726, as his third wife John<sup>2</sup> Bemis (Joseph<sup>1</sup>).<sup>12</sup>
- II. Mercy<sup>3</sup>, b. Jan. 23, 1669-70; d. Feb. 28, 1671-2.
- III. Rachel<sup>3</sup>, b. Oct. 8, 1671; m. 1st, Mar. 10, 1698-9, Timothy<sup>3</sup> Barron (Ellis<sup>2</sup>, Ellis<sup>1</sup>);<sup>12</sup> m. 2nd, bef. 1721 John King.
- IV. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, b. Oct. 12, 1673; d. Dec. 2, 1730; m. Nov. 2, 1699, Mary<sup>3</sup> Stearns (Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Isaac<sup>1</sup>).<sup>12</sup>
- V. William<sup>3</sup>, twin, b. Oct. 17, 1676; d. in Worcester Sept. 19, 1744; m. Elizabeth Golding.<sup>1</sup> (Peter of Boston).
- VI. Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, twin, b. Oct. 17, 1676; d. bef. father.
- VII. GRACE<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 11, 1678-9; d. at Concord Jan. 7, 1757; was m.<sup>13</sup> Nov. 7, 1699, by the Rev. Henry Gibbs of Watertown to JOHN<sup>2</sup> HOLDEN, p. 362).<sup>13</sup>
- VIII. Peter<sup>3</sup>, b. Oct. 1, 1681; d. at Sudbury Jan. 17, 1722-3; m. Jane (—).
- IX. Robert<sup>3</sup>, b. July 24, 1684; d. in Sutton, 1779; m. by 1719 Dorothy (Thomas) Whittemore, widow of Thomas of Watertown.
- X. Lydia<sup>3</sup>, b. May 18, 1688; m. May 5, 1705, John<sup>3</sup> Traine (John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>12</sup>

## REFERENCES

1. Giles Memorial, J. A. Vinton, 1864, pp. 236-42; New England Families, W. R. Cutter, 1914, II, 851-2.
2. History of Watertown, H. Bond, 1860, pp. 306-8, and errata p. 800.
3. Research by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., in original Watertown Records, and Middlesex County Probates No. 12585 (I, 99-100), No. 12586 (X, 378); Snow-Estes Ancestry, N. E. Snow, comp. by M. M. Jillson, 1939, I, 323-7, 335.
4. Vital Records of Woburn, III, 112, 219.
5. Watertown Records, I, part 3 (V. R.), 5-6, 8, 10, 19, 28-9, 32, 34, 37, 41, 44, 50, 52, 55, 57, 59.
6. *Ibid.*, II, pt. 2, pp. 11, 75.
7. Kilbourn Genealogy, P. K. Kilbourn, 1856, pp. 37, 41-2; Manwaring's Connecticut Probates, I, 133.
8. History of Ancient Wetherfield, H. R. Stiles, 1904, II, 467; Genealogical Column in Hartford Times of Jan. 27, 1940, item by B. L. B.
9. New England Register, LXXX, 313-24.
10. Records of Massachusetts Bay, II, 294.
11. History of Cambridge, L. R. Paige, 1877, pp. 355, 587, 595; Original Narratives of Early American History, XVI, being Narratives of the Witchcraft Cases, 409-10.
12. Bond's Watertown, pp. 15, 17, 21, 455.
13. *Ibid.*, 301, 307; Holden Genealogy, Eben Putnam, I, 88-9; Vital Records of Concord, p. 195.
14. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company . . . , O. A. Roberts., 1895, I, 34.
15. Newcomb Family, J. B. Newcomb, 1874, pp. 445-6.
16. Watertown Records, I, part 1, pp. 53, 55-6, 108, 112.
17. Middlesex Inferior Court of Common Pleas, 1722-30, pp. 22, 46, 53.
18. Watertown Records, II Town Proc. 1900, pp. 2, 13-4, 16, 40, 45-53, 56-60, 63, 65-6, 69, 74, 76, 82, 85, 91, 111.
19. *Ibid.*, II, Town Proceedings, pp. 64, 70, 76, 83, 143-4, 150, 166, 194, 216; Child Genealogy, Elias Child, 1881, p. 503.
20. Study of original document by Mrs. Emily M. Davis, Ellington, Conn.

# KENDALL

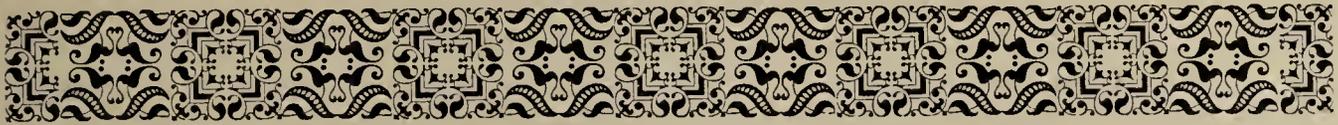


- 19 Woburn
- 25 Lancaster
- ¶ Charlestown
- 26 Kennebec River
- 38 Sudbury
- 9 Concord

- A Waitsfield, Vt.
- \* Boston
- X Marlborough
- 21 Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.
- ♁ Morgan Co., O.

- ♁ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- 49 Mauston, Wis.
- † Malta, O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.

---



## KENDALL

---

**F**RANCIS' KENDALL,\* a miller,<sup>7</sup> arrived<sup>1</sup> in New England in or before 1640 and probably lived temporarily at the home of his married sister\*\* at Charlestown. He was born about 1615-20 as is shown by depositions he made<sup>2,6</sup> in his later life. The earliest recorded evidence of his presence pertains to December 18, 1640, when he with thirty-one other men, most of them of Charlestown, signed the "Town Orders" preparatory to their removal to a hitherto unsettled tract of land granted in May of that year to Charlestown, and which in 1642 was officially named Woburn.

Charlestown vested the title of this new tract in seven men<sup>14</sup> who were empowered to grant land to individuals that houses might be built and a town created. These trustees "were allowed to exercise a certain amount of choice, excluding all who were 'exorbitant and of a turbulent spirit, unfit for civil society.' Each inhabitant received two plots of land — one, the home lot of meadow in the neighborhood of the meeting-house; the other, of 'upland,' further off, to be cleared and tilled. Nearness to the meeting-house was held to enhance the value of a home lot, and those who were less favored in this matter received a larger share. . . ." "Men were not refused for their poverty, but were aided, when poor, in building their houses and in the distribution of land, according to the ability of their helpers [children?]. The poorest had six or seven acres of meadow and twenty-five of upland or about." "Thus was this town peopled to the number of sixty families."

"Not till they came to hopes of a competent number to maintain a minister, did they establish themselves as a separate community; 'it being as unnatural for a right New England man to live without an able ministry, as for a smith to work his iron without a fire'. Not rashly running together, to gather themselves into a church, before they had hopes of attaining an officer to preach the word." The people having provided a dwelling, built at the charge of the town, invited several men in turn to become their pastor, finally acquired the services of Rev. Thomas<sup>1</sup>

\*It is claimed,<sup>23</sup> though without submission of proof, that a John Kendall of England was the father of three (or possibly four, see note p. 371 of Jennison) emigrants to New England, the earliest being<sup>22</sup> Mabel Kendall, born about 1605 who had married in England about 1628 William<sup>1</sup> Reade (see Addendum, p. 392) and emigrated with him and their three eldest children on the "Defence", arriving at Boston in July, 1635, and residing there and later at Woburn. She married secondly, November 21, 1660, as his second wife, Henry<sup>1</sup> Somers. This second husband by his will left substantial legacies to his step-children, and his own heir brought suit, during the course of which, testimony included the statement that FRANCIS' KENDALL was Mabel's brother.<sup>22</sup> Incidentally, her son Israel<sup>1</sup> Reade married his first cousin Mary<sup>1</sup> Kendall (FRANCIS'); her son George<sup>1</sup> Reade married<sup>29</sup> Elizabeth<sup>1</sup> Jennison (ROBERT') and their son William<sup>1</sup> Reade married his father's first cousin Abigail<sup>1</sup> Kendall (FRANCIS').<sup>22</sup>

\*\*Though FRANCIS', as shown, is first recorded in the colony in 1640 and Thomas<sup>1</sup> his brother of Reading in 1642, they may have come over together and have visited their sister in the vicinity of Boston while deciding where they would settle. An item which might lead to knowledge of the English origin of these Kendalls is seen in the will<sup>3</sup> of a William Yonges of Great Yarmouth, co. Norfolk, England, dated in 1611, wherein mention is made of a Frances Kendall as one of the testator's kindred. Moreover, JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD of Woburn (whose daughter married our FRANCIS' KENDALL) acquired the right to one hundred acres in Woburn through the right of a Richard Youngs of London.

Carter and in 1642 welcomed him as their minister with joy. By 1652 the church had increased from the original seven members of 1642, to seventy-four. "In this case civil union came before ecclesiastical. But before the trustees took any steps towards acting on their powers as a corporation, . . ." their church was formed "under a covenant binding its members 'to walk together in the ordinance of the Gospel and in mutual love,' and 'to renounce all errors and schisms and by-ways contrary to the blessed rules revealed in the Gospel.' The seven trustees formed the nucleus of the church as of the township. But the two corporations were distinct. The church never professed to be co-extensive with the town, but only received from time to time such citizens as of free choice attached themselves to it."<sup>14</sup>

During the fall and winter of 1640-1 this new tract was surveyed<sup>11</sup> under great difficulty (see Greene, p. 331) and in February, 1640-1, a bridge was built across the Aberjona River which was ever after called the "Cold Bridge";<sup>12</sup> probably because of the severity of the weather at the time of its construction. The difficulties of clearing and building were great enough that some who at first planned to remove to the new settlement gave up the effort and decided to remain at Charlestown. Of this reversal of plan, the recorder notes<sup>12</sup> that some "being shallow in braynes fell ofe [off] afterwards", but not FRANCIS<sup>1</sup>, nor JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD who later became his father-in-law, nor JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER nor his brother-in-law, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE! Their homes were raised, their farms were cleared and each one of these men carried on in that town till death took them — WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE after fourteen years and FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> after sixty-eight years, being the last but one, of those who had signed the town orders in 1640, to pass out of the picture<sup>14</sup> as he did in 1708. His homestead is said to have been not far from the center of town,<sup>23</sup> and to have been on present Lexington Street near Garden.<sup>23</sup>

In August, 1644, the mother town, Charlestown,<sup>1</sup> and probably also Woburn voted that every family should give one peck of wheat or twelve pence in money "toward the maintenance of the college at Cambridge", and that these donations should be brought in on February 21, 1644-5. But on December 24, 1644, a most eventful day<sup>3</sup> arrived for FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> for then he was married\* to MARY<sup>2</sup> TIDD (see Tidd, p. 398) with whom he spent sixty-one full years of life. We read that the same winter "near the spring, there fell a very great snow".<sup>13</sup> The name of FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> appears on the Woburn tax list<sup>11,23</sup> of 1645 — the earliest one extant — and he early became a church member<sup>12</sup> though the loss of the early church records has hidden from us the date of that ceremony, but on May 26, 1647, he became a freeman<sup>4</sup> while his brother Thomas<sup>1</sup> followed suit one year later.<sup>4</sup> About 1650 FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> built the first KENDALL mill<sup>23</sup> at Woburn which is said to have stood at the junction of present Willow and Lexington Streets "where a part of the dam and mill race are still (1892) to be seen".<sup>23</sup>

Some physical incapacity must have come early to FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> for in 1657, when he was only about<sup>2,6</sup> thirty-seven to thirty-nine, he was released from all "Ordinary

\*At his marriage in 1644 FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> was recorded<sup>6</sup> for some unknown reason, as "KENDALL alias Miles". Perhaps as a consequence of this record a tradition has grown and persisted that FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> had been stolen from a Ralph Miles in England, and brought over to the colony; but this seems quite unlikely since his acknowledged brother Thomas<sup>1</sup> of Reading bore the name of Kendall without an alias. Another theory which is advanced is much more probable, namely, that the parents of FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> may have objected to his leaving England and that he may have sailed under the assumed name of "Miles" to avoid controversy. If that were true, he might have used both his assumed and his actual names at marriage for a complete identification.

Traynings" though the majority of men served until they were at least sixty and often considerably later. In December, 1658, calling himself "about thirty-eight" (though on April 2, 1662, he inconsistently called<sup>2</sup> himself<sup>23</sup> about forty-eight), FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> testified<sup>6</sup> in a law suit brought by Captain Edward<sup>1</sup> Johnson against our ENS. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER (see Carter, p. 145).

The life and thought of FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> encompassed the period covering some of the monstrous charges of witchcraft — one of which concerned, and cost the life of one Goodwife Kendall of Cambridge (who may have been a relative of his); while another resulted<sup>1</sup> in the hanging in 1648 of Margaret Jones of Charlestown.

FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> is called<sup>2</sup> "a town officer", having been a selectman<sup>7,12</sup> during eighteen of the years between 1659 and 1688. In 1667 he headed a committee to divide common land among the proprietors and nearly a dozen years later each member of that committee received a grant of seven acres for their effort in the matter.<sup>7,12</sup> The habit of the selectmen was to meet at nine A. M. on the first Monday of each month and because tardiness on the part of some of them had wasted the time of the others, and had delayed the town's business they made a rule in 1674 that any one of their number who came late should be fined three shillings for the use of the town "unless he were detained by some providence of God, which the majority present should account a sufficient excuse". At the very next meeting Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER was fined six pence so he must have brought a fairly good excuse; and soon after FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> came late and was fined a like sum.<sup>7,12</sup>

The tragedies occurring during King Philip's War filled the public consciousness within the life of FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> and his family, though Woburn suffered but little except as to taxation and the furnishing of soldiers. John<sup>2</sup> Kendall, the eldest son in this family, served actively,<sup>17</sup> especially in the Swamp Fight.<sup>17</sup>

Another thing which would have deeply affected his life and the lives of his sons was the universal fear lest the colony should lose its charter. As early as 1664, at the beginning of the troubles with the home government about the threatened nullification of that document<sup>14</sup> (which the colonists resisted as an infringement of their liberties) a manifesto to the General Court, from Woburn and other towns, subscribed by "very many hands", was received and noted. This was a testimonial of the people, signifying their "content and satisfaction" in the "present government", and offering the services of the towns in assisting and encouraging it. From his fearless attitude on other occasions, it is easy to believe that the name of FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> may have been included there. On through the years FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> and his sons with him must have borne this anxiety, and after the final loss of the charter (see Appendix "B," p. 694) must have been deeply distraught by the many restrictions and injustices put upon them by Andros, but especially so by the threat against their land titles. The Woburn people, repeatedly, though guardedly, showed their irritation and resentment against these conditions. One form of protest which they employed concerned their town meetings which under the charter had been held each month with an election of officers annually. When Andros arrived he ruled that but one town meeting a year might be held, and that should be called not by the town but by his underlings. On this last point, however, Woburn rebelled,<sup>9</sup> called their own meeting for election on February 22, 1686-7, and chose five selectmen, including FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL. Within a fortnight, Andros, or his officers, annulled that election and directed the inhabitants to meet again on March

7 for a new choice. The town met as required, but chose the same men as before. This procedure was repeated, in entirety, the following year, but in 1689 they were happy indeed to be freed from so arbitrary an official. After the downfall of King James and of Andros in 1689 and the accession of William of Orange, the colonists decided to assemble all possible evidence of Andros' objectionable and arbitrary conduct as well as of the colonists' own conduct for presentation in England. To that end, a committee of seven was appointed with Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>) at its head. The great mass of depositions which they gathered on matters both great and small included sworn statements<sup>26</sup> by Capt. Edward<sup>1</sup> Johnson and by FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL, both of Woburn, that because they refused to stultify themselves by admitting that the officials serving under Andros constituted a lawful government, these officers had written out a mittimus committing them to arrest and incarceration under the marshal.

The Kendalls have been a prolific family. FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> had eighty-four or more recorded grandchildren, all but six of whom were born before his death and most of whom were born before his wife's death. Jacob<sup>2</sup> ranked first with twenty-one children to his credit.

After sixty-one years of companionship with her husband FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL, his wife MARY died<sup>6</sup> at Woburn in 1705 apparently after a painful illness, for the will\* of FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> signed on May 9, 1706, specified<sup>19,42</sup> that his three daughters Mary Read, Hannah Greene and "Eunice the wife of my son John Kendall" should have all of his "householde stuff of what sort or kind soever, to be equally devided between them for a requiteall of their great care and pains in nursing there Mother my late wiff in her last sickness". He added that his daughter Mary Read was to have the privilege of claiming and possessing his feather bed if she would reimburse the other two in case it increased her share unduly. His will, written in a fine script covered both sides of a sheet thirteen by seventeen; it had twenty separate articles<sup>7,19</sup> and made bequests to his four sons, to his four living daughters and to the children of his deceased daughter; also to five grandsons and two granddaughters. His land holdings were extensive enough<sup>23</sup> to furnish each of his children with a farm and to provide liberally for the eight named grandchildren beside. His will also made bequests of twenty shillings apiece "in current pay at money price" to each of his eight nieces, daughters of Thomas<sup>1</sup> saying: "and this I do in remembrance of the kindness I had for, and from my said Loving Brother Thomas Kendall Deceased". The will gave to his son John<sup>2</sup> one half, and to sons THOMAS<sup>2</sup> and Samuel<sup>2</sup> one fourth each of his "corne Mill, together with the right of the streams, damms and utencells thereunto belonging . . ." but it particularly specified that if any one of the three joint owners "shall Neglect or Refuse to reparaire, rebuild if ocasion be, and Constantly maintaine, in good reparaire" said mill and appurtenances, then that man's share should immediately revert to the partner or partners who met that necessary expense.<sup>19</sup> THOMAS<sup>2</sup> also received by the will, the land on which his house stood, meadow, woodland and half of his father's interest in a copper mine in Woburn. RALPH<sup>3</sup> KENDALL was one of the five grandsons favored by a bequest of land.

The document gave full evidence that the religious questioning and unrest ex-

\*In the official, recorded copy of the will of FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> the article called "(6ly)" pertaining to his daughter Elizabeth<sup>8</sup> is entirely omitted<sup>67</sup> as a photostat of the original document proves.

perienced thirty odd years before by FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> was entirely a thing of the past. It began:

“In the Name and fear of God Amen, I FRANCES KENDALL of the Town of Woobourne . . . Miller, being by the Grace of God, of sound understanding and perfect memory, yet, stricken in years and expect day-ly My change . . . Make . . . my last Will and Testament, the which let no man presume to alter or change, and first and princple I give my soule to God the father son and holy spirit, three glorious persons, but one infinite and eternall essence, hoping for Salvation, by the Merrits of Jesus Christ alone. . . .”

After completing his bequests, he added:

“And thus having finished by Gods help this my Will as it is expressed and inserted on this and the other side of this sheet of Paper, I exhort and ca $\bar{m}$ and all my Childeren and Grand Childeren to live in the fear of God and in love and peace, and pray God who is the God of Love and peace be with you all amen. . . .”<sup>19,42</sup>

The sons, JOHN<sup>2</sup> and THOMAS<sup>2</sup> were named as executors and the testator's “trusty and well beloved friends “Maj. Jeremiah Swayn of Reading and James Fowle of Woobourne” were desired to be “overseers” and were to have “thirty shillings apeice in currant pay at money price” for that service. FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> signed the will with his mark in a very shaky form, and it was probated after his death<sup>6</sup> in 1708.<sup>19,42</sup>

It is recorded<sup>24</sup> of the descendants of FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> that a curious physical characteristic recurred occasionally by the birth of a child having an extra finger or toe. It is definitely recorded of his daughter Abigail<sup>2</sup> and is frequently referred to in various lines of descent. The statement is made that the peculiarity has survived\* intermittenly “down to the present generation”.<sup>24</sup>

The children of FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> and MARY (TIDD) KENDALL all born in Woburn were<sup>2, 6, 7, 10, 23, 34</sup>

- i. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, b. July 2, 1646; d. about Apr., 1732, aged 86; m. 1st about 1670 an unknown\*\* wife<sup>30</sup> who bore<sup>6</sup> him three children, 1671-8; m. 2nd at Woburn Mar. 29, 1681, Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Comey (David<sup>1</sup>)<sup>31</sup> who d. Dec. 1701; m. 3rd after 1701 Eunice (Brooks) Carter, † daughter of John<sup>1</sup> and widow of Samuel<sup>2</sup> Carter (Rev. Thomas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>11</sup>
- ii. THOMAS<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- iii. MARY<sup>2</sup>, b. Jan. 20, 1650-1; d. at Woburn<sup>32</sup> Jan. 17, 1721-2; m. about 1669 her first cousin Israel<sup>2</sup> Reed (William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>11, 22</sup>
- iv. †Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. Jan. 15, 1652-3; d. after her father;<sup>19</sup> m. 1st Nov. 9, 1675, as his second wife, Ephraim<sup>2</sup> Winship (Edward<sup>1</sup>) of Lexington;<sup>31, 67</sup> m. 2nd June 15, 1698, as his second wife Joseph<sup>3</sup> Pierce (Anthony<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>31</sup>
- v. Hannah<sup>2</sup>, b. Jan. 26, 1654-5; d. after<sup>32</sup> 1699; m. after June, 1676, as his second wife William<sup>2</sup> Greene (WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>).<sup>11</sup>
- vi. Rebecca<sup>2</sup>, b. Mar. 2, 1657-8; d. at Reading<sup>31</sup> Apr. 16, 1690; m. Apr. 25, 1678, Joshua<sup>2</sup> Eaton (Jonas<sup>1</sup>) of Reading.<sup>31</sup>

\*An instance is recorded in the ninth generation<sup>40</sup> from FRANCIS<sup>1</sup>.

\*\*The first wife of John<sup>2</sup> is frequently erroneously stated<sup>7, 40</sup> to have been Hannah<sup>2</sup> Bartlett (Thomas<sup>1</sup> of Watertown) but that woman<sup>30</sup> b. 1642, m. in Watertown Jan. 19, 1667-8, John<sup>2</sup> Kimball (Henry<sup>1</sup>) and died as his widow in 1715.

†It is claimed<sup>44</sup> that Eunice (Brooks) Carter m. 2nd as his second wife James<sup>1</sup> Parker who d. about 1700-1 and then became the third wife of John<sup>2</sup> Kendall, even as he was her third husband.

‡Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> is frequently stated<sup>2, 10</sup> to have married James<sup>3</sup> Pierce (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup> of Charlestown) but that is utterly disproved.<sup>8</sup> The Elizabeth who married this James<sup>3</sup> Pierce was the daughter of Abraham<sup>1</sup> Parker and even her death<sup>32</sup> in 1706 is assigned to Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> above.

- vii. \*Samuel<sup>2</sup>, b. Mar. 8, 1659-60; will dated Dec. 6, 1742, was proved 1749 and called him "of Lancaster, formerly of Woburn"; m. 1st Nov. 23, 1683, at Woburn Rebecca<sup>3</sup> Mixer (Isaac<sup>2</sup>, Isaac<sup>1</sup>); m. 2nd there Mar. 30, 1692, Mary<sup>2</sup> Locke (William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>31</sup>
- viii. Jacob<sup>2</sup>, b. Jan. 25, 1660-1; d. after<sup>7</sup> July, 1717; res. Woburn until 1715-6 and then Billerica;<sup>31</sup> m. 1st at Woburn Jan. 2, 1683-4, Persis Hayward (Haywood); m. 2nd Jan. 10, 1694-5, there Alice (Hassell) Temple,\*\* daughter of Joseph of Concord and Dunstable and widow of Christopher<sup>3</sup> (Abraham<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>) of Dunstable.<sup>7,31</sup>
- ix. Abigail<sup>2</sup>, b. Apr. 6, 1666; d. at Lexington Oct. 12, 1734; m. at Woburn May 24, 1686, her first cousin once removed, William<sup>3</sup> Reed (George<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>22</sup>

THOMAS<sup>2</sup> KENDALL (*Francis*<sup>1</sup>) was born at Woburn January 10, 1648-9 and died there May 25, 1730, aged eighty-one.<sup>2,6,7,10</sup> He married<sup>41</sup> first, at that place, in 1673-4, RUTH<sup>3</sup> BLODGETT (see Blodgett, p. 74) who died<sup>6</sup> on December 18, 1695, two days after the birth of their tenth child and he married secondly at Woburn March 30, 1696, Abigail (Rayner) Broughton† who died December 31, 1716.

Very little is found recorded relative to the life of THOMAS<sup>2</sup>. His farm is said to have adjoined<sup>23</sup> that of his father and since he was called a husbandman undoubtedly farming was his chief concern. He would unquestionably have assisted in guarding the town during the period of King Philip's War though there is no record of his getting out into active service at the Swamp Fight as his brother John<sup>2</sup> did. He would have been cognizant of the contribution to sufferers in King Philip's War, which was sent over from Ireland in 1676, whereby those who endured loss would be reimbursed slightly by gifts of food,<sup>14</sup> meat, malt, butter, cheese, etc. THOMAS<sup>2</sup> and his relatives would have seen the wonderful Newton's comet in the winter of 1680-1. It first appeared on December 10, remained visible until mid-February and is considered to have been the most brilliant of any of which there is an accurate account.<sup>14</sup> Many of the people of that day believed that comets were "nothing but tokens of the displeasure of Heaven" and that there would "be a calamity for every comet, and a comet for every calamity"<sup>14</sup>.

On February 1, 1691-2, the selectmen of Woburn met and chose eleven tithing men for the ensuing year<sup>12,42</sup> at which time THOMAS<sup>2</sup> was named for that office "For y<sup>e</sup> West End of s<sup>d</sup> Towne" which implies that his home was in that vicinity.<sup>12</sup>

These tithing men or "tenth men" were appointed over about nine families, in addition to their own, in their own neighborhood to prevent or break up irregular or vicious habits which might lead to pauperism<sup>12</sup> or confirmed depravity. They were the moral overseers of their own community and must, themselves, have been quite above reproach.

As has been stated, THOMAS<sup>2</sup> received by his father's will<sup>19</sup> a one-fourth interest in the first Kendall mill which had been built by that father about 1650. The document, some parts of which are missing where it has been folded, further specified:

\*An item which presumably pertains<sup>5</sup> to Samuel<sup>2</sup> Kendall since he was a resident of Lancaster, carries with it the erroneous date of 1712 rather than 1752, as is shown by consultation of the original Charlestown record.<sup>52</sup> The selectmen of the last named town notify him that they would like him to care for his mother-in-law Esther Lee and they would pay him for any charge which might arise from the town of Lancaster. Admittedly the will of Samuel<sup>2</sup> Kendall of Lancaster was probated in 1749 but Charlestown may not have known that.

\*\*Alice Hassell married<sup>31</sup> first in Dunstable in 1685 Christopher Temple and bore him three children, 1686-90. On Sept. 2, 1691, her father, mother and brother were slain by the Indians and on Sept. 28 her husband met a like fate.<sup>31</sup>

†She was the daughter of Rev. John Rayner of Dover<sup>23</sup> and widow<sup>39</sup> of Capt. John<sup>2</sup> Broughton (Capt. George<sup>1</sup>) who had been shot down by the Indians on June 29, 1689, on his way to Berwick.

“(2ly) to my son THOMAS KENDALL I give the land his house standeth on, Namely the land of Mine lying on the West side of my Mill pond, and Mill Streame, and also all my land and Meadowland from a Stake Neare the place where the two Brooks Meet and from thence by a [li]ne of Marked trees to the land of James Pierce, bounded westerly by the land of SAMUEL BLOGGET and further my will is that my said son THOMAS KENDALL shall haue free liberty for himself and his heirs to carte [their?] hay of from a piece of Meadow which he formerly [nearly 2 long lines missing] . . . Interest in the Damms Streames and utincells, thereunto belonging, also I do hereby give unto my said son THOMAS KENDALL one half of my Neare Rock Meadow adjoyning to the land of Samuel Walker and also half my Woodlott lott at Rock pond Meadow, and also half my Interest, partnership in the Minerall called the Copper Mine in Wooburne, and also one quarter part of my Right of Herbidage. . . .”<sup>19</sup>

THOMAS<sup>2</sup> and his brother John<sup>2</sup> were made executors of their father’s will.

THOMAS<sup>2</sup> frequently bought and sold land, acquiring some<sup>42</sup> from Joshua Sawyer on January 18, 1687–8; more from Maj. William Johnson in 1688 as well as later;<sup>42</sup> a tract from John Johnson on August 11, 1694, on which his son Samuel<sup>3</sup> Kendall built the mill in 1711 which was still standing<sup>42</sup> in 1884. The indenture preparatory to the building of this second mill was signed first by Samuel<sup>3</sup> then by twenty-three others whose adjacent lands caused them to have an interest in the flowage of the stream. The signature of Samuel<sup>3</sup> implied acceptance of the terms and conditions specified by the others.<sup>42</sup>

In June, 1694, THOMAS<sup>2</sup> purchased seven acres in Woburn from his brother-in-law Israel<sup>2</sup> Read which lot adjoined land of Zachariah<sup>2</sup> Snow (RICHARD<sup>1</sup>).<sup>49</sup> On November 24, 1694, THOMAS<sup>2</sup> and his wife RUTH signed<sup>7</sup> a deed conveying lands to their “brother-in-law” James<sup>2</sup> Simonds who had married Susanna<sup>3</sup> Blodgett, sister of our RUTH. In 1699 Ebenezer<sup>2</sup> Locke mortgaged to THOMAS<sup>2</sup> a house and two lots as security for money borrowed. These lots adjoined<sup>50</sup> property owned by THOMAS<sup>2</sup> KENDALL and by SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> BLODGETT and that man’s son Samuel<sup>3</sup>.

Before 1710 THOMAS<sup>2</sup> sold land which lay at a place called “Corner Hedge” to his son-in-law Joseph<sup>2</sup> Whitemore. And on February 1, 1714, THOMAS<sup>2</sup> deeded to his son RALPH<sup>3</sup> one hundred and twenty acres bounded by the highway to Charlestown from the west end of Woburn, by Thomas<sup>3</sup> Kendall and by Maj. Johnson’s Sawmill brook.<sup>49</sup> This family also did quite well in replenishing the citizenry for THOMAS<sup>2</sup> had sixty recorded grandchildren. It seems as though he may have died suddenly, though aged about eighty-one for he left no will but his sons RALPH<sup>3</sup>, Eleazer<sup>3</sup> and Thomas<sup>3</sup> signed an agreement<sup>44</sup> asking that their brother Samuel<sup>3</sup> Kendall, wheelwright, be made administrator of the estate. This was done and he gave a £300 bond, so the inventory which showed only about £17 valuation must have covered, mainly, the personal property.

The children of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and RUTH (BLODGETT) KENDALL, all born in Woburn and eight of whom were recorded there, were<sup>2,6,7,10,23,34</sup>

- I. Ruth<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 17, 1674–5; m. 1st at Woburn, Nov. 9, 1691, John<sup>4</sup> Walker called “jr.” (Dea. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Capt. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>) who d.<sup>35</sup> Apr. 29, 1699; she m. 2nd in 1710 in Woburn Josiah Wood.<sup>10,23</sup>
- II. \*Thomas<sup>3</sup>, b. May 19, 1677; was “first of the name at Lexington” about 1710–1 and removed<sup>23</sup>

\*On September 30, 1704, Samuel<sup>3</sup> Blodgett deeded land to his nephew Thomas<sup>3</sup> Kendall, junior.<sup>42</sup> On July 1, 1712, when an inventory was taken of the estate belonging to Harvard College, it was shown that Thomas<sup>3</sup> Kendall of Cambridge Farms (Lexington) had in the previous April borrowed £60 and had given the college a mortgage.<sup>42</sup>

- 1745 to Framingham;<sup>20</sup> d. in<sup>47</sup> 1761 after Mar. 2; m. at Boston<sup>23</sup> Nov. 7, 1701, Sarah<sup>3</sup> Cheever (Rev. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Ezekiel<sup>1</sup>)<sup>38</sup> who d. Mar 2, 1761, at Framingham as his wife.
- III. Mary<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 21, 1680-1; d. Nov. 19, 1760; m. at Woburn Feb. 13, 1698-9, Joseph<sup>2</sup> Whitmore (Francis<sup>1</sup>).<sup>35</sup>
- IV. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Lt., b. Oct. 29, 1682; d. at Woburn<sup>21</sup> Dec. 13, 1764, aged 83; m. 1st by 1707 Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Pierce (James<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>) who d.<sup>7</sup> Jan. 10, 1741-2, aged 54; m. 2nd July 23, 1751, at Concord<sup>36</sup> Mehitable (Parker) Hosmer, widow of John<sup>4</sup> Hosmer who had d. Dec. 14, 1733. Mehitable d. at Woburn, Aug. 31, 1755.
- V. RALPH<sup>3</sup>, see following.
- VI. Eleazer<sup>3</sup>, b. Nov. 16, 1687; d. after 1767; m. 1st about 1712 Hannah Rowe, called of Lexington who d. 1761; m. 2nd in 1767 Sarah (—) Angier, called widow<sup>20</sup> of Benjamin<sup>2</sup> (Joseph<sup>1</sup>).<sup>38</sup> Lived for a time at Framingham.
- VII. Probably<sup>7,23,39</sup> Ephraim<sup>3</sup> b. about 1690; d. at Woburn<sup>6</sup> May 15, 1728; m. by 1715 Judith<sup>6</sup> Walker (Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Dea. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Capt. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>). As Judith Kendall of Wilmington, she m. 2nd at Woburn Dec. 23, 1731, Samuel Johnson of Woburn<sup>36</sup> and her brother Samuel Walker became guardian of her three minor Kendall children.<sup>7</sup>
- VIII. Jabez<sup>3</sup>, twin, b. Sept. 10, 1692; d. at Woburn Aug. 14, 1725; m. about 1716 Rebecca (—)
- IX. Jane<sup>3</sup>, twin, b. Sept. 10, 1692; d. aft. June, 1722, m. at Woburn Nov. 27, 1711, or Nov. 3, 1712, Joseph<sup>4</sup> Russell (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>37</sup>
- X. Son d. at birth Dec. 16, 1695, and his mother d. two days later.<sup>6</sup>

RALPH<sup>3</sup> KENDALL (*Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Francis<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>6</sup> at Woburn May 4, 1685, and died in Maine, probably on Arrowsic Island (see map, p. 385), but his death was recorded as of Georgetown,<sup>52</sup> on September 11, 1753. He married at Woburn<sup>6</sup> in May, 1707, ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup> CARTER (see Carter, p. 152) who survived him, dying in or after 1754, probably at Lancaster since in that year being called "of Lancaster" she relinquished her right<sup>69</sup> as the widow of RALPH<sup>3</sup> in some Lancaster property which he had previously sold.

In 1708 when he was about twenty-three and just lately married, he received a bequest of Woburn land by the will of his grandfather,<sup>19</sup> FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> which read "To my grandson RALPH KENDALL, the son of my son THOMAS KENDALL I give my plow lott, in Hodges Hole and also half the plow lott which formerly belonged to Micheale Lippingwell in that place. . . ." RALPH<sup>3</sup> was evidently a lover of land which he dealt in extensively. As early as 1709 he deeded<sup>68</sup> seven acres to his uncle by marriage, William<sup>3</sup> Reade of Cambridge. In 1714 he bought a farm of one hundred twenty acres from his own father, paying £60 down and arranging a mortgage.<sup>68</sup> This became his family home for a time, and here were housed the eight children born in Woburn, though as early as June, 1716, he acquired forty acres of land at Lancaster, in 1718 sold the Woburn homestead to his cousin Samuel<sup>3</sup> Greene (see note, p. 334) and in April, 1719, bought additional tracts of nineteen acres and two hundred twenty-five acres at Lancaster preparatory to a removal to that town.<sup>68</sup> The first mentioned forty acre Lancaster tract was described as being "on the Fall Brook and taking in the Falls". The nineteen acre tract "adjoined land lately purchased" by RALPH<sup>3</sup> and was described as lying upon "Cumbry Creek" against that part of it that lies nearest above where it was designed to set up a saw mill. At the same time he purchased a £20 right in the Lancaster commonage and in all future grants and divisions thereof. His two hundred twenty-five acre tract also lay "at Cumberry."<sup>68</sup>

The removal of this large family to Lancaster in 1719-20 implied a trek of about twenty-seven miles, airline, westward from Woburn, doubtless by ox team, and would have been a task to stagger a modern mother. The packing of household

equipment, food and clothing for the parents and six or seven children — the eldest but twelve years old — would have been a wearying experience and the trip itself with a babe in arms and the other children like steps beyond her, would scarcely fit one for the task ahead of creating a new home at the end of the journey. Samuel<sup>2</sup> Kendall, uncle of RALPH<sup>3</sup>, as well as a number of the younger man's cousins also removed to Lancaster, so they would not have been entirely among strangers.

The two hundred twenty-five acre Lancaster tract (vide supra) was apparently bought as an investment for in 1721 RALPH<sup>3</sup>, with his wife joining him, sold it to three Woburn men including his cousin\* Samuel<sup>3</sup> Greene but two of these three men soon died and the tract was quit claimed back<sup>68</sup> into the hands of RALPH<sup>3</sup>. As time went on he acquired from 1732-9 several different adjoining tracts<sup>69</sup> at Oak Hill (see map, p. 255) on which he had built and occupied a home before July, 1740. He had sold part of his holdings at Oak Hill to his sons, Bezaleel<sup>4</sup> and Jonathan<sup>4</sup> and in 1743 and 1744 sold portions of that property to one Peter Green of Lancaster, these being the latest land transfers recorded<sup>69</sup> to RALPH<sup>3</sup>.

In deeds he was very frequently called a tailor, though occasionally called yeoman and his consistent choice of farm-sized tracts on which to reside, taken into consideration with the size of his family, argues the unquestioned suitability of the occupation of farming for this family. No evidence is seen of public service performed by RALPH<sup>3</sup> and it seems unlikely that he possessed either church membership or freemanship. In 1727 he and his family experienced the excitement<sup>14,48</sup> of "a terrible earthquake" during "a night never to be forgotten." No quake had been felt for sixty-four years till this one came, which extended far beyond the New England territory and was even felt by vessels at sea.<sup>48</sup> He either resided briefly a few miles north of Lancaster, in Lunenburg (which was founded in 1728), or was carelessly recorded<sup>52</sup> as of that place in connection with a Worcester County law suit against him in 1734. A few miles west of present day Clinton (see map, p. 19) is a Kendall Hill and in 1939 two Kendall families lived thereon.<sup>52</sup>

Ordinarily migrations were to the westward as had been that of RALPH<sup>3</sup> from Woburn to Lancaster, but in this family after a residence of over thirty years in Lancaster the reverse became true. After having the birth of six children<sup>43</sup> recorded to RALPH<sup>3</sup> and ABIGAIL at Lancaster from 1721 to 1732 (or more likely 1734), their daughter Keziah<sup>4</sup> called "of Lancaster" married a Sudbury<sup>51,65</sup> man in September, 1745, and removed eastward to that place to live; as time went on the family's two youngest daughters<sup>60,65</sup> ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup> and Eunice<sup>4</sup>, as a result of visiting Keziah<sup>4</sup> no doubt, married Sudbury men as will presently be shown, but the odd point is that in July, 1751, RALPH<sup>3</sup> himself with a part of his family also removed to the east, settling at Charlestown (from which his native Woburn had been set off in 1642, long before his birth). Here the protective custom of "warning out" was employed against him as is proved by three documents:<sup>5,52,61</sup>

Charlestown, 30 Aug., 1751,

"To Mr. James Kettell, one of the constables of Charlestown, greeting.

"In His Majesty's name you are hereby required to warn RALPH KENDALL & Family that they forthwith Depart this Town, the Selectmen refusing to admit them as inhabitants. You are also to enquire from whence they last came and what time they came to

\*Samuel<sup>2</sup> Greene (William<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) was first cousin to RALPH<sup>3</sup> KENDALL on Greene's maternal side, and second cousin to the wife of RALPH<sup>3</sup> on said Greene's paternal side. Moreover RALPH<sup>3</sup> KENDALL and the said Samuel<sup>3</sup> Greene, married sisters (see Carter, p. 145) so they were also brothers-in-law.

this Town. Hereof, fail not & make return thereof under your hand with your doings thereon unto the Selectmen."

By order of the Selectmen,  
Joseph Phillips, Town Clerk.

Charlestown, Oct. 3, 1751,

"By vertue of this warrant, I have warned the within named RALPH and Family forthwith to Depart & likewise made enquiry from whence he last came & how long he has been in this Town he told me he came Last from Lancaster to this town on the first of July Last past.

James Kettell, Constable.

The Charlestown Town Records under date of October 25, 1751, continue:<sup>61</sup>

"Then delivered unto Thaddeus Mason Esq., Clerk of the Court of General Sessions of the Peace, a warrant that so caution be entered at the next Court against RALPH KENDALL & Family."

Joseph Phillips, Town Clerk.

The reason for this custom in early New England is explained thus:<sup>63</sup>

"Warning out operated to free towns of obligation if the persons staid (in spite of the warning), and became poor. The effect of warning out was obviated if the town later voted to admit.

"In Worcester County, from 1737 to 1788, Court Records show 6764 persons warned out from the forty towns, many of whom staid and became prominent citizens. In some towns it seemed to be an almost or quite universal habit."<sup>63</sup>

Presumably RALPH<sup>3</sup> resented this critical attitude for soon thereafter and probably during the fall of 1751 he proceeded with his family to Maine\* and settled on the Kennebec, but in order to furnish a partial background for him there, we must revert to actions a hundred and twenty odd years earlier<sup>58</sup> when the Mayflower people of Cape Cod in 1627 directed Isaac Allerton, who was returning temporarily to England, "to procure a patent for a fitt trading place in ye river of Kenebec." The Pilgrims held the resulting title until 1661 when they sold the grant to Antipas Boyes, Edward Tyng, Thomas Brattle and John Winslow for £400 sterling, it being called the "Kennebec Purchase." Under this latter ownership the tract which extended for fifteen miles each side of the Kennebec, lay idle for eighty-eight years, the title passing to the heirs<sup>58</sup> until in 1749 a one-twenty-fourth share\*\* came into the hands of one Samuel Goodwin of Charlestown from his father John and he being a man of action searched out several heirs. Together on August 17, 1749, they petitioned John Storer, a Justice of the Peace for York County† to call a meeting of the Proprietors of the Plymouth Company's lands, to settle or divide the same, as the majority might agree. Storer issued a warrant directing Goodwin to notify<sup>58</sup> a meeting for September 21, 1749, at the Royal Exchange Tavern at the corner of King (now State) Street and Exchange Lane in Boston. At this first meeting nine were present. At a later meeting held on December 19 Samuel Goodwin and Jabez Fox, of Falmouth, were chosen a committee to employ a surveyor to survey and map the lands embraced in the patent. They engaged John North and four

\*The establishment of the residence of RALPH<sup>3</sup> in Maine and his death there has been the result of search<sup>52</sup> by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass.

\*\*The statement is also made<sup>73</sup> that John Goodwin, the father of Samuel, owned only three-ninety-sixths of the Plymouth Land Company "at the eastward."

†York County was then in the Province of Maine under Massachusetts ownership.

MAINE  
KENNEBEC REGION



1. St. John's Church,  
Pownalsborough  
(on inset map)

2. John Tarp  
3. Kendall (II)  
4. Watt's Fort

5. Meeting House  
6. St. John's Church,  
Georgetown

7. Denny's Fort

named chainmen who worked under the immediate oversight of Samuel Goodwin. The survey was made in 1750-1 and the map which was completed and signed<sup>58</sup> by John North on December 16, 1751, is owned\* by the Maine Historical Society and is claimed to have shown every settler then on the entire tract (see facing plate xxiv, for facsimile of one section).

The group of heirs was known<sup>58</sup> both as the "Plymouth Company" and as the "Kennebec Company." At a company meeting held at the Bunch of Grapes Tavern on King Street in Boston on October 31, 1750, Samuel Goodwin had been directed to continue the survey and a committee was chosen to treat with settlers already on the patent<sup>58</sup> which would have included John<sup>4</sup> Cheney (son-in-law of RALPH<sup>5</sup> KENDALL) as will be shown. On December 18, 1751, it was voted that the conditions for acquiring a grant of land should be that the grantee should build a house thereon eighteen by twenty "and 8-foot stud," should clear and plant five acres of land and should not sell to any but actual settlers until fifty families were settled in the township.<sup>58</sup> The grants seem to have averaged one hundred acres. Incidentally, on September 8, 1750, Indians had attacked Swan Island (see map, p. 385) and had taken thirteen persons captive, several of them from the Whidden family.<sup>58</sup>

To revert to the Kendall family, in connection with this background which we have prepared for them, Keziah<sup>4</sup> with her first husband John<sup>4</sup> Cheney and some of *his* family as well as Keziah's and his first child had migrated to the Kennebec before October 4, 1750, when they, recorded as "from Sudbury,"<sup>55</sup> had a son born there. They also lost their infant daughter, as of Georgetown,<sup>52</sup> on December 28, 1750, (or 1751) aged two years ten months. But their presence formed a nucleus and invitation for those who had just been "warned out" of Charlestown.<sup>61</sup> Circumstances suggest that RALPH<sup>5</sup> brought wife ABIGAIL and children Ruth<sup>4</sup> and Benjamin<sup>4</sup> while the older sons came later. Thus the Cheney family positively had arrived before grants were being made as did probably also RALPH<sup>5</sup> as will be shown. Though no grants have been found to either of these two men, three sons\*\* of RALPH<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Uzziah<sup>4</sup> and Abiathar<sup>4</sup> are definitely stated<sup>59</sup> to have been "among the Plymouth Company Grantees" receiving grants in 1760 and 1764 in Pownalborough.† Of these Benjamin<sup>4</sup> was probably not of age at the time RALPH<sup>5</sup> arrived and Uzziah<sup>4</sup> and Abiathar<sup>4</sup>, both being married, may have been slightly delayed in arrival.

On December 13, 1751, a vote was passed to petition<sup>52</sup> the Court for the formation of a new County for the convenience of the residents on the Kennebec. This petition when completed<sup>64</sup> was signed by four hundred and forty-one men who resided on both sides of the Kennebec river, of whom the eighty-second to eighty-fifth

\*Time has dealt very sadly with this map which is about six feet square. Though it is now carefully mounted many portions of the paper are completely gone. We will show that John<sup>4</sup> Cheney was a resident on the Kennebec before the survey was attempted and that RALPH<sup>5</sup> KENDALL was probably a resident before the map was finished. The failure to find either name is most disappointing but does not lessen the certainty that Cheney's at least was originally included. There is an "...ll", which might have been a part of the name "KENDALL," still to be seen on Arrowsic Island (see facing plate xxiv).

\*\*Two other sons of his, Jonathan<sup>4</sup> and Bezaleel<sup>4</sup>, settled in Maine, Jonathan<sup>4</sup> at North Yarmouth before 1753<sup>52</sup> and a Bezaleel<sup>4</sup> was at Canaan in 1790.

†This locality<sup>72</sup> set off in 1760 as Pownalborough, a part of which became latter-day Dresden, the residence of several of the sons of RALPH<sup>5</sup> KENDALL, was served judicially in 1791-4 by Judge Thomas<sup>6</sup> Dawes (Thomas<sup>5</sup>, Thomas<sup>4</sup>, THOMAS<sup>5</sup>, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) (1757-1825) and by Judge Increase<sup>6</sup> Sumner (Increase<sup>4</sup>, EDWARD<sup>5</sup>, GEORGE<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) both from Boston, when court was held there. Judge Sumner (1734-1810) became Governor of Massachusetts and his sister Elizabeth<sup>6</sup> Sumner became the wife of Charles<sup>5</sup> Cushing (John<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>5</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Matthew<sup>1</sup>) who became sheriff of Pownalborough and because of his ardent patriotism was kidnapped in 1781 and taken prisoner to Penobscot by John Jones, loyalist.<sup>77</sup>



Facsimile of one section of the 1750-1 map by John North. Top right hand insert showing dimly in the center (at the suggested junction of the two arrows) "II" which theoretically was part of the name "KENDALL", which presumably was on Arrowsic Island.



House built in 1707 by JOHN<sup>2</sup> DAVENPORT in the south part of Milton  
(see map, p. 275). Still standing in 1940.

*Courtesy of Miss Margaret Sertermeister, of Milton, a descendant.*



clears one problem which was, at first, puzzling indeed; for a page by page search\* of the Georgetown records disclosed that John<sup>4</sup> Cheney had died\*\* as the result of the accidental discharge of a gun on July 31, 1753, in a garrison house — *tradition* says on Arrowsic Island. Moreover his father-in-law "RALF KENDAL late of Lankister" had died on September 11, 1753, so that both of these men were dead before the petition which they had signed was presented to the General Court.

The exact location of the home of RALPH<sup>3</sup> or of his place of burial has not been found though intensive effort has been made.<sup>52</sup> After his death his sons Jonathan<sup>4</sup>, Uzziah<sup>4</sup>, Abiathar<sup>4</sup>, and Benjamin<sup>4</sup> remained in Maine but widow ABIGAIL and her daughter Ruth<sup>4</sup> evidently returned to Lancaster where some property rights still existed. There on July 11, 1754, ABIGAIL KENDALL called "widow to RALPH, deceased" released to Peter Green her dower right in a tract of over one hundred and thirty-six acres lying at Oak Hill in Lancaster Township (see map, p. 19) which her husband RALPH<sup>3</sup> and their son Jonathan<sup>4</sup> had sold to Green during 1740-4.<sup>69</sup> On May 30, 1756, a Ruth Kendall who was undoubtedly Ruth<sup>4</sup> was baptized<sup>54</sup> and owned the covenant at Lancaster and on November 10, 1757, died there.

Having discussed the general historical background of the Kennebec settlers, it seems constructive to include a summary of the geographical background of the immediate Maine locale of the RALPH<sup>3</sup> KENDALL family which shows us that:

The town ship of Georgetown was founded by John Watts† in 1714 on Arrowsic Island and then included no other territory. But in 1722-4 it was devastated by the Indians and was re-organized in 1738 with greatly enlarged boundaries, taking in [temporarily] Parker's Island (the present Georgetown), what is now Phippsburg and the present towns of Bath, West Bath and Woolwich.<sup>52</sup> This territory was at that time in York County, but in 1760, subsequent to the presence of RALPH<sup>3</sup>, it became Lincoln County and now is a part of Sagadahoc County which was formed as late as 1854. What evidence has been obtainable, is strongly in favor of Arrowsic Island as a place of residence for the RALPH<sup>3</sup> KENDALL family and that of his son-in-law John<sup>4</sup> Cheney for in the 1751-2 petition for a new county the grouping of the family names (see illustr., p. 387) suggests that they either formed one household or were near neighbors. As has been stated, tradition places the death of

\*The vital records are not segregated in any special group of pages in the book of Georgetown records.<sup>52</sup> Nor are they in chronological sequence, so these two deaths had been overlooked hitherto. They occur on opposite pages as though relationship or contiguous residences had a bearing, though chronology might account for their placing.

\*\*The diary of the Rev. Israel Loring, deposited in the Goodnow Library, South Sudbury, amplifies the report<sup>18</sup> of this accident but changes the date from that found in the Georgetown book of records, thus:

Under date of August 18, 1754, Rev. Loring recorded

"Had the news of the sudden death of John Cheney, formerly of this town and of this church who by Drawing a gun out of a Canoe sprung the Cock and it went off and broke his arm close by his shoulder. Some of the shot, as was supposed, went into his body for he died about eight hours after. This account I had by a Letter from his wife Dated at Franfert on Kenneback river Aug. 6, 1754."

†This was John<sup>8</sup> Watts (1669-1717) son of John<sup>1</sup> of Boston. He built<sup>71</sup> a large brick house on the lower end of Arrowsic near to Butler's Cove, "and added flankharts, with mounted cannon for defence." He brought the bricks from Medford and in 1718 the Watts house and another one near the upper end of the Island, occupied by Ebenezer<sup>9</sup> Preble, were the only dwelling houses on Arrowsic, all the rest having been destroyed by the Indians.<sup>71</sup> After the death of Watts, his widow married John Penhallow who lived in the Watts house by 1720. In 1728 Samuel<sup>1</sup> Denny from England settled near the Watts fort and built a block house near Squirrel Point for security (see map, p. 385). In 1756 after the death of RALPH<sup>3</sup> but during the residence on the Kennebec of probably five of his sons, the Indians attacked the Preble home at the northern end of Arrowsic killing the parents and taking three Preble children and other settlers as captives to Canada. Before starting north they "attacked the fort at the lower end of Arrowsic island, but could not carry it. . . ." <sup>71</sup> This would have been either Watts' or Denny's fort. The Kennebec Proprietors planned<sup>58</sup> and built in 1754 a "defensive house" which they named Fort Frankfort and for a time called the settlement Frankfort. Later the defensive house was named Fort Shirley.

Cheney on Arrowsic; actual records place the birth of one Cheney child and the death of a second "at Georgetown" in 1750-1 and the birth of a third "on an Island in the limits of Georgetown" in 1752 or 1754 — which might safely imply Arrowsic. And finally, on the John North map made from the survey of 1750-1 (see plate xxiv, p. 386), on Arrowsic Island where a list of names once appeared, as of nearby residents, which *may have included* those of John<sup>4</sup> Cheney and RALPH<sup>3</sup> KENDALL there is now only an " . . . . .ll" which intrigues one with the *possibility* or *probability* that it was a part of the surname of RALPH<sup>3</sup>. One settlement on Arrowsic was at the southern end of the Island and was then locally known as Newtown. It included the Watts' Fort or Garrison near Green Point (see map, p. 385) and extended southward along the Kennebec River taking in the site of the later meeting house built on Arrowsic in 1763 just north of Butler's Cove. Near this site was the Old Burial place in which there are many unmarked graves. Mr. Edward C. Clarey of Georgetown who is well informed on the history of that locality states that during the Indian troubles around 1750 it was the habit to make burials near to the garrison houses and this Old Burial Ground is little more than a mile below the Watts Garrison, so that if RALPH<sup>3</sup> KENDALL and the Cheney's lived on Arrowsic, as we have reason to believe, RALPH<sup>3</sup> and his son-in-law possibly lie in that old cemetery.

As for the religious life of the RALPH<sup>3</sup> KENDALL family throughout the years, either he or his wife, or perhaps more likely their parents, must have had church membership, for the children born to RALPH<sup>3</sup> and ABIGAIL in Woburn were evidently baptized in infancy, since at least two of them (Jonathan<sup>4</sup> and Keziah<sup>4</sup>) acquired church membership in their adult years without baptism at that time, but early Woburn Church records are lost so we cannot know on whose right they were baptized. The children born to this couple in Lancaster appear not to have been baptized in infancy for three (Ruth<sup>4</sup>, ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup> and Eunice<sup>4</sup>) are recorded as having accepted that rite as adults. It has been theorized that the Lancaster home may have been remote from a church, RALPH<sup>3</sup> may have grown careless, may never have had membership or he may have joined some other religious body. It is stated that Lancaster had a few early Baptists though no such records can now be found. In Maine, religious privileges were but scantily served. In 1734 a Presbyterian Church had been founded whose meeting house was built near Pleasant Cove on the peninsula that is now Phippsburg. It existed\* from 1734 until 1753 or 1754 but during its last two or three years "even a transient ministry failed" and moreover its records are lost. Some aged residents were induced to list the probable members but no reference to RALPH<sup>3</sup> is seen and indeed his death and burial in September, 1753, must have been without benefit of clergy. In 1763 the Georgetown Church was reorganized, was located on Arrowsic Island, and its subsequent records have been well kept but they are too late to pertain to RALPH<sup>3</sup> and they fail to mention his sons. There is a record however that Abiathar<sup>4</sup> and . . . . . Kendall (probably Uziah) of Dresden were Baptists and that Benjamin<sup>4</sup> was an Independent. It is significant that after the return of widow ABIGAIL to Lancaster (vide supra) where the family's longest term of home life had been,

\*We are told that "the departure of the Presbyterian Minister from Georgetown in 1752 left the whole of the territory from the Androscoggin to the St. Croix destitute of a clergyman of any denomination. Two years later a Romish priest made his appearance. . . ."71

and where certain land rights still existed (evidently accompanied by her daughter Ruth<sup>4</sup>) that the said daughter soon asked for baptism and acquired church membership.

No will or administration of an estate of either RALPH<sup>3</sup> or of his widow ABIGAIL has been found in Massachusetts or in Maine and the last date of record for ABIGAIL was July 11, 1754.

The children of RALPH<sup>3</sup> and ABIGAIL (CARTER) KENDALL, the first eight born and recorded in Woburn<sup>6</sup> and the others in Lancaster,<sup>43</sup> were<sup>7,23,34,43,51</sup>

- i. Ruth<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 6, 1706-7, or 1707-8; doubtless d. before 1725 (see below).
- ii. Ralph<sup>4</sup>, b. Dec. 15, 1708; d. at Woburn<sup>6</sup> Dec. 19, 1708 aged four days.
- iii. Peter<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 14, 1710; d. in military<sup>75</sup> service\* before Sept. 6, 1741, when his widow was admitted to Lancaster church; m. at Lancaster<sup>51</sup> Feb. 14, 1733-4, Hepzibah Ruck. They had three sons, Ephraim<sup>6</sup>, Peter<sup>6</sup>, and Levi<sup>6</sup> born 1734-7. Levi<sup>6</sup> had a son Levi<sup>8</sup> b. 1763 who may have been the "Ralph Kendall, heretofore called Levi" who, then of Lyman, York Co., Me., was adjudged<sup>29</sup> "non compos mentis" on Sept. 2, 1822, while his father Levi<sup>6</sup> Sr., was probably the "Levi Kendall, tailor" who bought land of John Tarp (vide infra) "on west side of Kenebec River" Oct. 11, 1763.
- iv. Abigail<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 14, 1712; probably died before 1728 (see below).
- v. Esther<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 14, 1714; no further record.
- vi. Jonathan<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 14, 1717; d. at North Yarmouth, Me., not seen in 1790 census; m. Rebecca; was admitted, without baptism to the N. Yarmouth church on June 24, 1753, having children Huldah<sup>6</sup> and Ralph<sup>6</sup>. Membership of Jonathan<sup>4</sup> was terminated by death but date not given.
- vii. "Bezell"<sup>4</sup> (Bezeleel), b. recorded as Apr. 7, 1717, but this must be an error unless he and Jonathan<sup>4</sup> were twins and the two dates given were of birth and bap. One of similar name was of Canaan, Me. in 1790 (census).
- viii. Keziah<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 12, 1718-9; d. doubtless in Maine, and after July, 1771, when she and John Tarp deeded<sup>53</sup> to her son Ralph<sup>6</sup> Cheney, four and one-quarter acres "below the falls at a certain brook leading into Mast Cove" (see map, p. 19), Georgetown, Me. She, called "of Lankister," was married there<sup>51</sup> (int. June 12, 1745) on Sept. 11, 1745, to John<sup>4</sup> Cheney (John<sup>3</sup>, Peter<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>)<sup>53</sup> called "of Sudbury." She was his third wife and their marriage was recorded at Sudbury<sup>65</sup> as of Sept. 15, 1745, and there she joined the church without local baptism on<sup>52</sup> Oct. 26, 1746 (sometimes given<sup>53</sup> as 1745). She joined Cheney in a deed Nov. 18, 1748. On May 22, 1749, as of Sudbury Cheney for £500 deeded land in Rutland to her brother Abiathar<sup>4</sup> Kendall then called of Lunenburg and between May, 1749, and October 4, 1750, Keziah and Cheney had removed to the Kennebec River in Maine (vide supra, p. 389) where they had two or possibly three children and where John<sup>4</sup> Cheney died as has been told by the accidental discharge of a gun on July 13, 1753, probably on Arrowsic Island. (See text and note, p. 388.) On Nov. 18, 1755, was recorded at Georgetown the intention of marriage between Keziah<sup>4</sup>, then called of Swan Island<sup>67</sup> and John Tarp who had been a resident of what is now Bath (see map, p. 385) since 1750. As "Kezia Tarp, formerly Cheney" she was dismissed at her own request on October 2, 1767, from the Sudbury Church to the Church in Woolwich<sup>46</sup> which had been the earliest organization formed in Georgetown<sup>45</sup> while it incorporated its greater extent. The children of John<sup>4</sup> and Keziah (Kendall) Cheney were<sup>70</sup> (Cheney)
  - (a) Hester, b. at Sudbury, Feb. 7, 1747-8; d. at Georgetown ae. 2 yr. 10 mo. on Dec. 28, recorded both as 1750 and 1751.
  - (b) Ralph, b. in Georgetown, Me., Oct. 4, 1750; m. etc.

\*After fifteen years of peace ". . . in 1740 a recruiting officer<sup>75</sup> drummed for volunteers in Lancaster and succeeded in persuading eighteen or nineteen of her young men to wear the cockade . . ." and join the expedition against Carthagena (a sea port of Colombia in the Caribbean Sea). Among these volunteers was Peter<sup>4</sup> Kendall (RALPH<sup>3</sup>). "Few if any of them ever saw their homes again, giving their lives for the King in a quarrel of doubtful justice, not in the front of victorious battle, but slain by virulent disease after defeat."<sup>75</sup>

- (c) Nathaniel Carter, b. "on an island in the limits of Goergetown, Me." Apr. 2, 1752; m. etc.
- ix. Uziah<sup>4</sup>, b. Apr. 11, 1721, being the first one born at Lancaster; d. in Maine after Aug. 16, 1785, but probably before 1790; being called "of Leominster" he was m. 1st at Lunenburg<sup>56</sup> (int. Apr. 2, 1748, *sic.*) July 6, 1747, by the Rev. David Stearns to Elizabeth "Parce" (Pearce) Jr. of Lunenburg and there had sons<sup>56</sup> Bezaleel<sup>5</sup> and Abiathar<sup>5</sup> born in 1749 and 1750. Uziah<sup>4</sup> followed his father to the Kennebec before 1760 where he was called one of the "Plymouth Company Grantees." He acquired that year lot No. 17 on the eastern side of Eastern River in what was then Pownalboro<sup>59</sup> but is now Dresden. The colonial census of 1766 showed that he lived in a one story framed house<sup>59</sup> with one fireplace but with ten in the family, four males and six females of whom six were under sixteen.
- x. Abiathar<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 22, 1723; d. in Maine aft. 1790; m. 1st at Boston July 11, 1751, Thankful Butler; he was a shingle maker at Boston when he owned a piece of property jointly with Joseph Stevens. Before April, 1760, he had followed his father to Maine and at that time received a grant<sup>29</sup> of land being lot 10 in Pownalborough (now Dresden). He was m. 2nd there<sup>53</sup> on Mar. 6, 1767, to Sybil (Marson) Cheney widow of Elias<sup>5</sup> Cheney who was stepson to Keziah (Kendall) Cheney. In the census<sup>59</sup> of 1766 he had but one male and two females in his family, a one story log house with one fireplace with a brick chimney but with twenty-four square sash of glass. He was chosen<sup>59</sup> as a surveyor of lumber in 1762.
- xi. Ruth<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 9, 1725; undoubtedly she who d. at Lancaster Nov. 10, 1757, having been baptized<sup>54</sup> there on May 30, 1756, and having then become a member of the church there.
- xii. ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup>, b. at Lancaster<sup>43</sup> July 20, 1728. Admittedly no documentary evidence has been found covering this girl's later life and marriage, but search undertaken more than twenty years ago by an outstanding Massachusetts research worker\* led to her conviction that ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup> did marry as we now claim. Subsequent years of exhaustive search, which re-established<sup>52</sup> many hitherto lost facts about this family (including the temporary residence and death of RALPH<sup>3</sup> in Maine) have given no slightest reason to question that earlier belief of the marriage of ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup>, but have strengthened it instead, until now by the weight of cumulative evidence and the elimination of any other possibility we dare finally to claim that ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup> KENDALL *was* married at Sudbury on January 28, 1752, to JONAS<sup>3</sup> HOLDEN (see Holden, p. 363) being "both of Sudbury." Her early residence would of course have been in her father's home in Lancaster but the marriage of her older sister Keziah<sup>4</sup> in 1745 and her subsequent residence in Sudbury gave logical opportunity and reason for both ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup> and Eunice<sup>4</sup> to make the acquaintances in Sudbury which led to their subsequent marriages to two Sudbury men. The breaking up of the Lancaster home of RALPH<sup>3</sup> in July, 1751, his "warning out" from Charlestown during August-October 1751 and his presumed\*\* removal to the Kennebec even yet that fall would have presented a problem to ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup> who would have been reluctant to go so far afield from her fiancé JONAS<sup>3</sup> HOLDEN. She had Kendall cousins in Sudbury and may have lived with them during the few months until her marriage<sup>65</sup> in January, 1752, after which her sister Eunice<sup>4</sup> might have lived with her. There on December 2, 1752, ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup> with her husband JONAS was baptized<sup>66</sup> and "owned the covenant"<sup>†</sup> at the West Side Church which was later called the First Parish Church of Sudbury. For some reason ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup> was not admitted to full communion<sup>66</sup> until June 10, 1792. She died at Sudbury as "Old Mrs. HOLDEN, wife of JONAS" and was buried<sup>66</sup> February 1, 1802, aged seventy-five which coincides more closely than in many cases with the exact birth date. Five and a half months later JONAS<sup>3</sup> followed her.<sup>66</sup>
- xiii. Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, b. Sept. 12, perhaps in 1731 but more likely<sup>62</sup> in 1732; died at Freeport, Me. Feb. 28, 1805. He m.<sup>23</sup> by 1757 at Georgetown, Me., Jenny<sup>3</sup> Rogers daughter of William<sup>2</sup> and Dinah (Rankin) Rogers who came from Dunbarton, N. H. to Georgetown at an early date and settled in what is now Phippsburg, in the section known as Dromore (see map, p. 19).

\*Extant reports from Mrs. Lucy Hall Greenlaw voice this belief.

\*\*Of course it is possible that RALPH<sup>3</sup> did not remove to Maine until the early part of 1752 in which case ABIGAIL<sup>4</sup> could have been married in her father's home and recorded at Sudbury where she was to reside but in such case it would have hurried RALPH<sup>3</sup> to have removed early enough to have met the Maine requirements of signing the petition of 1752.

†The owning of the covenant was otherwise called the "half-way covenant" which paved the way for the baptism of children.<sup>52</sup>

This locality lies across the Kennebec River from Arrowsic Island where the RALPH<sup>9</sup> KENDALL and John<sup>4</sup> Cheney families are believed to have lived. Benjamin<sup>4</sup> had two children recorded in Georgetown of whom the second child but eldest son,<sup>62</sup> William<sup>5</sup>, b. Nov. 19, 1759, eventually acquired the title of "General." In June, 1764, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, as one of the "Plymouth Company Grantees," received lot No. 18 at Pownalboro<sup>59</sup> now Dresden near the holdings of his brothers Uzziah<sup>4</sup> and Abiathar<sup>4</sup> but he removed later to Freeport<sup>62</sup> where he died, his wife died there on April 1, 1808, and there some of his descendants still reside. He had eleven children and one of his descendants, William Converse Kendall still resident in 1939 in Freeport, has accompanied Capt. Bartlett, the arctic explorer on one of his expeditions.<sup>52</sup>

- xiv. Eunice<sup>4</sup>, b. recorded as May 14, 1732, but more likely in 1734; d. in Sudbury April 13, 1770, called "35 years and 10 months"; m. at Sudbury, as his second wife, on Nov. 2, 1756, Jonathan Carter. She was baptized as an adult at Sudbury<sup>74</sup> First Parish on Mar. 14, 1756. She bore Carter five children and was buried<sup>60</sup> in East Sudbury, now Wayland.

### Addendum to KENDALL

Reade (Reed)<sup>22,76</sup>

William<sup>1</sup> Reade, born about 1587, with his wife Mabel Kendall, born about 1605 and married about 1627-8 emigrated to New England on the "Defence" from London in 1635 with three children, arriving at Boston on October 6. They settled first at Dorchester, removed briefly to Scituate, then resided at Muddy River and in 1648 at Woburn. Before 1656 he had returned with his wife and four younger children to England leaving his three married children in New England and in that year he died at Newcastle-upon-Tyne leaving a will dated April 9, 1656. His widow Mabel was appointed on October 31, 1656, at London to handle the estate. She presently returned to the colony and married secondly at Woburn on November 21, 1660, as his second wife Henry<sup>1</sup> Somers (Summers) of that place. He died on November 2, 1675, leaving by his will of October 14, 1675, to wife Mabel the use of his property for life, with permission to sell part of it, if need be; leaving also legacies of twenty shillings apiece to each of her children to the great displeasure of his own son and heir Henry<sup>2</sup> Somers who immediately took the matter to court admitting that he had expected the entire estate. This suit on November 22, 1675, claimed that either the testator or John Wyman who "writt" the will was non compos mentis for using interchangeably the terms "overseer" and "executor" of whom "FRANKISS KENDALL" was one. KENDALL made oath that he saw the will signed and then resigned the executorship. On December 4, 1675, an agreement was reached and signed by (a) widow Mabel (Kendall) Reade Somers; (b) Henry<sup>2</sup> only son and heir of the testator, and his wife Susanna (Carter) Somers; (c) George<sup>2</sup> Read, eldest son of William<sup>1</sup> and Mabel; (d) Ralph<sup>2</sup> Read, second son of William<sup>1</sup> and Mabel; (e) Israel<sup>2</sup> Read, third (living) son of William<sup>1</sup> and Mabel; (f) Francis<sup>1</sup> Wyman, husband of Abigail<sup>2</sup> Reade; (g) Samuel Walker jr., husband of Sarah<sup>2</sup> and by (h) Joseph Winn, husband of Rebecca<sup>2</sup> Reade. This agreement specified that Henry<sup>2</sup> Somers was to receive his father's property but was to pay £6 per year in money or produce for his step-mother's support. He failed to keep his agreement and was before the court for criticism. Among the probate papers on the estate of Henry<sup>1</sup> Somers is a memorandum dated July 15, 1686: "Delivered original will to Samuel Walker and George Reade," (a son and a son-in-law of Mabel's) which may pertain to this immediate situation, for Henry<sup>2</sup> Somers persistently failed in the promised payments to his step-mother and on January 22, 1689-90, Mabel at the

age of about 85 signed a will which gave a token of five shillings apiece to such sons and daughters as might be living at her death but gave all else she had or might expect to have, to her son George<sup>2</sup> Reade, her sole executor "who hath for neere this five years, shewed his filial care of and for me, and doth still say, that during my continuance in this World according to his ability he will provide for me. . . ." The happy status of widow Mabel is suggested by the fact that her will stated that ". . . desiring my loveing Daughter-in-Law, Hannah Read wife to my Son George Read that [she] would after my decease if liveing give some what of my cloathing to my own Daughters such and so much as she shall see meat. . . ." This document was witnessed<sup>40</sup> by SAMUELL<sup>2</sup> BLODGETT Senr.

By a deed of April 4, 1690, widow Mabel transferred some of the Somers property to her son George<sup>2</sup> Reade on the strength of the provision in her husband's will that she might sell of it, if necessary for her needs — and evidently because of the failure of Henry<sup>2</sup> Somers to fulfill his contract. Mabel died at Woburn on June 15, 1690.

The children of William<sup>1</sup> and Mabel (Kendall) Reade, the first three born in England and the others as stated, were<sup>22,76</sup>

- I. George<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1629; d. at Woburn Feb. 21, 1706, ae. 77; m. 1st Oct. 4, 1652, Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Jennison (ROBERT<sup>1</sup>) d. Feb. 22, 1665, Woburn; m. 2nd Nov. 9, 1665, Hannah Rockwell. George<sup>2</sup> had a son William<sup>3</sup> who m. Abigail<sup>2</sup> Kendall (FRANCIS<sup>1</sup>), "his father's cousin," and also had Timothy<sup>3</sup> Reade b. 1678, who m. Persis Kendall.
- II. Ralph<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1630; d. at Woburn Jan. 4, 1712; m. abt. 1654 Mary<sup>3</sup> Pierce (Anthony<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).
- III. Justice<sup>2</sup>, b. Jan. 1633.
- IV. Abigail<sup>2</sup>, bap. at Dorchester Dec. 30, 1638; d. after 1679; m. as 2nd wife Oct. 2, 1650, Francis<sup>1</sup> Wyman, b. 1617, d. at Woburn Nov. 30, 1699, ae. 82.
- V. Israel<sup>2</sup>, b. at Scituate 1642; d. at Woburn June 29, 1711; m. abt. 1669 Mary<sup>2</sup> Kendall (FRANCIS<sup>1</sup>).
- VI. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, d. Nov. 1, 1681 Woburn; m. there Sept. 10, 1662, Ens. and Dea. Samuel Walker Jr. who d. at Woburn Jan. 18, 1703-4, ae. 61.
- VII. Rebecca<sup>2</sup>, bap. at Roxbury Dec. 26, 1647; d. at Woburn 1731; m. abt. 1664 Joseph Winn (Edward and Joanna) who d. at Woburn Feb. 22, 1714-5.
- VIII. Child<sup>2</sup>, d. bef. 1675 but referred to in father's will.

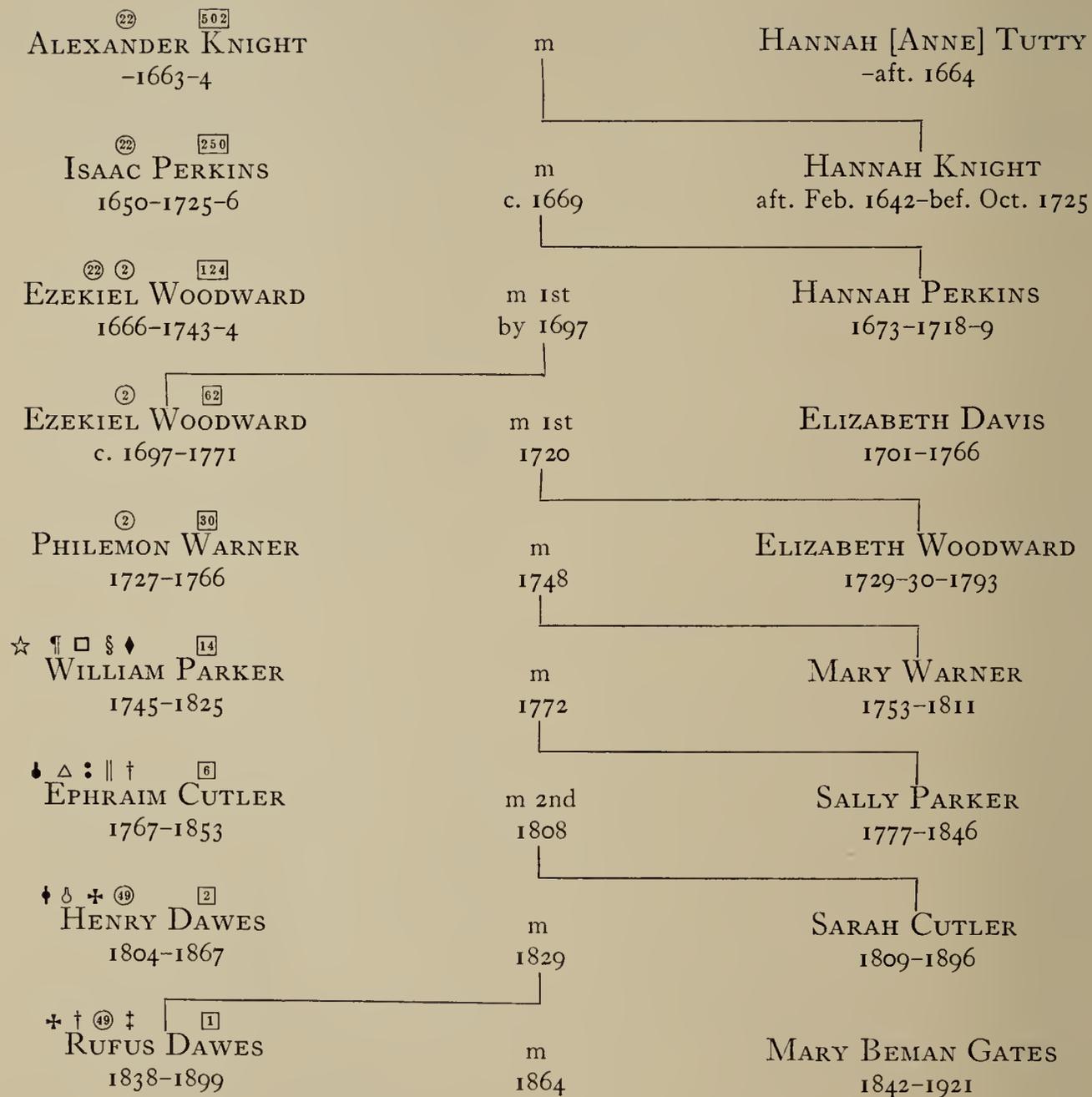
## REFERENCES

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. History of Charlestown, R. Frothingham, 1845, pp. 105-18.</li> <li>2. Savage, II, 9-10; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 266.</li> <li>3. Genealogical Gleanings in England, H. F. Waters, 1901, p. 1411; New England Register, LII, 246-7.</li> <li>4. Records of Massachusetts Bay, II, 295.</li> <li>5. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, p. 569.</li> <li>6. Vital Records of Woburn, I, 138-9; II, 104; III, 151-2, 284.</li> <li>7. New England Register, XXXIX, 17-21, 388 (giving corrections); LV, 443.</li> <li>8. Ibid., XXXVI, 79; LV, 443; Pierce Genealogy, F. B. Pierce, 1882, p. 27; History of Watertown, H. Bond, 1860, p. 394; History of Lexington, C. Hudson, 1868, pt. 2, p. 268; History of Cambridge, L. R. Paige, 1877, pp. 695-6.</li> <li>9. History of Woburn, S. Sewall, 1868, pp. 127-30.</li> <li>10. Ibid., pp. 619-22.</li> <li>11. Ibid., pp. 10-25, 594, 597-8, 616, 632.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>12. Ibid., pp. 37, 39, 45, 49-50, 57-60, 92-3, 122-3, 129, 148-9, 154-7, 175; Vital Records of Woburn, III, notes on 244 and 257.</li> <li>13. The Winchester Record, I, 261-2; Frothingham's Charlestown, pp. 106-8; Wonder Working Providence, E. Johnson, with Introduction by W. F. Poole, 1867, pp. lxxix-xciii.</li> <li>14. History of Middlesex County, D. H. Hurd, 1890, I, 346-52, 389, 414; Frothingham's Charlestown, p. 180; Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1886, IV, 491.</li> <li>15. Hurd's Middlesex County, I, 348; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, I, 38-45; Sewall's Woburn, p. 154.</li> <li>16. Vital Records of Reading, p. 136; History of Reading, L. Eaton, 1874, pp. 93-4.</li> <li>17. History of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 83, 176-7, 264, 276-7, 376.</li> <li>18. Research by Mrs. J. T. Watts of Washington, D. C. in Middlesex County, File No. 13111.</li> <li>19. Ibid., File Nos. 13053, 13112; Sewall's Woburn, pp.</li> </ol> |
|---|--|

- 619-20; New England Register, XXXVI, 79; XXXIX, 17-8; LV, 443.
20. Hudson's Lexington, 1913, II, 336-7.
  21. Epitaphs of Woburn's First and Second Burial Grounds, W. R. Cutler and E. F. Johnson, 1890, pp. 26, 39.
  22. Pope's Pioneers, pp. 380, 440; Reade Family Record, III, 2; V, 2-3; VI, 5; XIII, 4, 11; Giles Memorial, J. A. Vinton, 1864, pp. 238-9; Lane Genealogy, J. H. Fitts, 1902, III, 68-9; Banks' Planters, p. 169; Savage, III, 9, 520; Sewall's Woburn, pp. 631-2; Reed Family, J. W. Reed, 1861, pp. 61-5, 122.
  23. Memorial of Josiah Kendall, O. Kendall, 1884, pp. xii, 1-16, 119-21; Genealogical and Family History of Maine, G. T. Little, 1909, III, 1282-3; Genealogical and Family History of Connecticut, W. R. Cutter, 1911, I, 84-5; Genealogical and Personal Memoirs of Worcester County, E. B. Crane, 1907, II, 424; Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, C. T. Libby, p. 113.
  24. Josiah Kendall Memorial, p. xii; Fitts' Lane Genealogy, III, 68; Kendall Family, W. M. Clemens, 1919, p. 5; Reed Family, J. W. Reed, 1861, p. 122; Pierce Genealogy, F. B. Pierce, 1882, p. 28; History of Westminster, W. S. Heywood, 1893, p. 730-1.
  25. Savage, I, 219; III, 281, 352, 378; Eaton's Reading, pp. 45, 56, 80, 93-4, 97, 101, 103; Goodwin Genealogy, J. J. Goodwin, 1891, p. 725; New England Register, VII, 26; Josiah Kendall Memorial, pp. 1-16.
  26. Prince Society Publications, V, 1868, p. 159.
  27. History of King Philip's War, I. Mather, 1676, Annotated by S. G. Drake, 1862, pp. 160-1; Hurd's Middlesex, I, 351.
  28. Woburn Historic Sites, W. R. Cutter, 1892, pp. 33-4, 39-40.
  29. York County, Me., Probates XXXI, 58; Lincoln County, Me. Deeds, II, 148.
  30. Bond's Watertown, pp. 19, 323; Watertown Records, I, pt. 3, pp. 10, 28; II, pt. 2, pp. 54, 58; Kimball Genealogy, L. A. Morrison and S. P. Sharples, 1897, I, 18-9.
  31. Comey Genealogy, A. H. Bent, 1896, pp. 3-4; History of Billerica, H. A. Hazen, 1883, pt. 2, p. 81; History of Watertown, H. Bond, 1860, pp. 19, 323, 393-4; Wyman's Charlestown, 1879, pp. 438, 726; Savage, I, 133; II, 96; III, 9, 103, 429, 515-20; IV, 597; A Book of Lockes, J. G. Locke, 1853, p. 20; History of Reading, L. Eaton, 1875, p. 64; Vital Records of Dunstable, pp. 88, 193, 218, 234; Vital Records of Reading, pp. 77, 327, 576; Index Register of Kendalls, W. R. Kendall, 1913, p. 25; History of Lexington, C. Hudson, 1913, II, 530-1, 763-4; History of Dunstable Township, C. J. Fox, 1846, pp. 63, 245-6, 250; Chase Genealogy, J. C. Chase & G. W. Chamberlain, 1928, p. 62.
  32. Vital Records of Woburn, I, 110; II, 146, 153.
  33. Wyman's Charlestown, p. 726; History of Groton, Pepperell and Shirley, C. Butler, 1848, p. 421.
  34. Maine Genealogies, G. T. Little, 1909, III, 1282-3.
  35. Middlesex Genealogies, p. 1014; Sewall's Woburn, p. 171; Vital Records of Woburn, III, 291; Paige's Cambridge, p. 685; Hudson's Lexington, II, 752; Whitmore Genealogy, J. W. P. Purdy, 1907, pp. 13, 19; Savage, IV, 526-7.
  36. Vital Records of Woburn, I, 98, 267; II, 104; III, 135, 152; Pierce Genealogy, F. B. Pierce, 1882, p. 28; Hosmer Genealogy, G. L. Hosmer, 1928, p. 33 (partly in error); Vital Records of Concord, pp. 106, 127, 184; Epitaphs from Woburn First and Second Burial Grounds, Cutter & Johnson, 1890, p. 39.
  37. Sewall's Woburn, pp. 159-61, 636; Parker Genealogy, T. Parker, 1893, pp. 42, 49; Vital Records of Woburn, I, 139-40; Russell Genealogy, J. R. Bartlett, 1879, pp. 18, 20.
  38. History of Chelsea, M. Chamberlain, 1908, I, 154; II, 192; Hudson's Lexington, II, 336-7; History of Framingham, W. Barry, 1847, pp. 169, 308-9; same by J. H. Temple, 1887, pp. 458, 614; Vital Records of Framingham, pp. 125-6, 447; Gregory Stone Genealogy, J. G. Bartlett, 1918, p. 148.
  39. Index Register of Kendalls, mss. at Newberry Library, Chicago, W. R. Kendall, 1913; American Ancestors of Winthrop Reed Kendall, W. R. Kendall, 1913, mss. &c.
  40. The Snow-Estes Ancestry, N. E. Snow, comp. by M. J. Jillson, 1939, I, 56, 78, 323-9, 337-40.
  41. Genealogical Bulletin, 1903-4, I, 170; Research by J. G. Bartlett, Middlesex Deeds lib. 14 fol. 212.
  42. Josiah Kendall Memorial, pp. 3, 5, 7, 9-16, 120-1; Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XVI, 417.
  43. Vital Records of Lancaster, p. 48.
  44. Middlesex Probate File No. 13112 by Mrs. Watts.
  45. Maine Historical Society Collections, Ser. 2, VII, 275-300.
  46. Vital Records of Woburn, III, 166, 252; Sewall's Woburn, pp. 177, 625-6, 637-9; A Book of Lockes, J. G. Locke, 1853, pp. 11-4.
  47. Middlesex Probate File No. 13113, Record Vol. 19, 224.
  48. Hurd's Middlesex County, I, 352; History of the First Church of Charlestown, W. I. Budington, 1845, p. 231.
  49. Middlesex Deeds (by Mrs. Watts), XV, 6; XVII, 196, 202.
  50. A Book of Lockes, p. 21; Family Record of Gershom Flagg, N. G. & L. C. S. Flagg, 1917, p. 132; Hudson's Lexington, II, 251-2.
  51. Vital Records of Lancaster, pp. 26, 31, 48, 65, 285, 290, 397.
  52. Research by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass. in Maine and Massachusetts.
  53. Cheney Genealogy, C. H. Pope, 1897, pp. 252-4, 285-6.
  54. Vital Records of Lancaster, pp. 299, 324, 331.
  55. Salem Press Historical and Genealogical Record, E. Putnam, II, 129-30.
  56. Early Records of Lunenburg, W. A. Davis, 1896, pp. 233, 253, 309, 314.
  57. Maine Historical and Genealogical Register, III, 169.
  58. History of Dresden, Me., C. E. Allen, 1931, pp. 46-56, 95, 100-2, 189-92, 215; History of Kennebec County, H. D. Kingsbury and S. L. Deyo, 1892, I, 76-7.
  59. Ibid., 185-6, 196-7, 199, 202, 215, 217, 220, 226, 255, 261, 263-4, 268-9.
  60. Vital Records of Sudbury, pp. 180, 300; Vital Records of Wayland, p. 132.
  61. Charlestown Town Records, VII, 382; Middlesex Co. Court of Sessions Records of 1751.
  62. Maine Historical Society Collections, Ser. 2, VIII, 100, 195.
  63. Warning out in New England, J. H. Benton, 1911, pp. 59-60, 116-20.
  64. Massachusetts Archives, Vol. 116, 263-74.
  65. Vital Records of Sudbury, p. 227.
  66. Mss. Records by Rev. Josiah Bigelow of West Side Church in Sudbury (First Parish Church), II, photostat copy at New England Society.
  67. New England Register LV, 443; Peirce Genealogy, F. C. Peirce, 1880, p. 27.
  68. Middlesex County Deeds (by Mrs. Watts), XVI, 403; XVII, 196, 202; XIX, 254; XX, 63, 296, 300, 424; XXIII, 271; XXV, 737-8.
  69. Worcester County Deeds (by Mrs. Watts); V, 453; XIII, 182, 190, 426, 547-8, 562; XIV, 23; XVIII, 43, 353; XXXV, 121.

70. Cheney Genealogy, 252-4, 285-6; Vital Records of Sudbury, p. 32; the word of Mr. E. C. Clarey of Georgetown, Me., given to Miss E. L. Moffatt; Unpublished Vital Records of Georgetown.
71. Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire; C. T. Libby, 1928-39, pp. 538, 725; Maine Historical Society Collections and Proceedings, Ser. 1, II, 197-207, III, 273-4; Ser. 2, I, 261-94; Ser. 3, I, 406 et seq.
72. Allen's Dresden History, pp. 227-30, 254-5, 327-9, 349-53.
73. Wyman's Charlestown, pp. 417, 422.
74. Mss. Records of the First Parish, Sudbury. (see ref. 66).
75. Military Annals of Lancaster, H. S. Nourse, 1889, pp. 13-4; Hurd's Middlesex, I, 389; History of Worcester County, D. H. Hurd, 1889, I, 21-2.
76. Reade Record No. 5, p. 2; No. 6, p. 5; No. 13, p. 4; Vital Records of Woburn, II, 181; III, 219; Snow-Estes Genealogy, N. E. Snow, comp. by M. J. Jillson, 1939, I, 323-30, 335, 337, 340; Middlesex Probate Files No. 21893, No. 21896; Suffolk Probate No. 750.
77. Dawes Genealogy, pp. 67-8; Maine Historical Society Collections, Ser. 2, VII, 225-53; Descendants of WILLIAM SUMNER, W. S. Appleton, 1879, pp. 14-5, 33.

# KNIGHT



②② Ipswich  
 ② Gloucester  
 ☆ Malden  
 ¶ Charlestown  
 □ Newburyport  
 § Allegheny Co., Pa.

◆ Meigs Co., O.  
 ♣ Edgartown  
 △ Killingly, Conn.  
 ∴ Waterford, O.  
 ∥ Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.  
 † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

† Thomaston, Me.  
 ♀ Morgan Co., O.  
 + Malta, O.  
 ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.  
 † Marietta, O.



## KNIGHT

ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> KNIGHT\* was first recorded<sup>1,6</sup> in the new world at Ipswich in 1635 where he had a land grant<sup>7</sup> on February 20. The record of his marriage has not been found and presumably it occurred in England before his emigration about 1634, though the will\*\* of his father-in-law,<sup>2</sup> WILLIAM TUTTY, of London dated October 10, 1640, referred to "my eldest daughter ANNE, lately married with ALEXANDER KNIGHT of Ipswich in New England beyond the seas", stating that the testator had already given to her "a competent marriage portion", so he left her but ten pounds more, which was to go to said daughter's child, and to be paid her (the child or the mother?) within a year of his decease.<sup>2</sup>

ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> was frequently recorded in Ipswich land records as adjoining other owners,<sup>7,9</sup> and one tract of land which he owned lay on the south side of Heart Break Hill, fronting on the road and running back, up and over the crest. He is shown in January, 1639-40, as having one cow to pasture, and in February, 1641, as having a right to commonage.<sup>7</sup> He must have been a very positive and determined man or a quarrelsome one for he was frequently involved in litigation<sup>8</sup> with his neighbors or the authorities, as for instance: in March, 1649, when he was fined for "offering violence" to Richard Shatswell, though Shatswell was also fined for entering the home of ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> and threatening to carry away a bag; in March, 1651, when ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> sued Theophilus Wilson for defamation; in June, 1651, when five witnesses accused him of lying; and in March, 1654, when he was fined twenty shillings "for carelessness in not preventing fire† after warning."

In September, 1659, ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> sued Thomas Rowell and Robert Collings of Ipswich for breach of contract and forfeiture of bond (as will presently be explained); and in 1662, about a year before the death of ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> Robert Paine sued him for rent due, attaching "a trunk and a parcel of upland and meadow". On June 23, these two litigants Paine and KNIGHT gave their bond to accept the

\*By the word of Philip Vincent who wrote<sup>3</sup> in 1637 "A True Relation of The Late Battell fought in New England between the English and the Pequet Salvages"<sup>3</sup> (published in London in 1638), we have the statement, relative to his contemporary, KNIGHT, that he, ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup>, was formerly an innkeeper in Chelmsford, co. Essex, England, and that when he emigrated he brought Francis<sup>1</sup> Wainwright with him<sup>3,6</sup> as "servant" — though that probably implied only that ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> had paid the younger man's fare and would receive repayment, or certain assistance in return.

\*\*The will<sup>2,4</sup> of WILLIAM TUTTY probated January 9, 1640-1 called himself "of St. Stephens, Coleman Street, London, gen<sup>l</sup>" and its provisions suggest that he was in easy circumstances for he left his (probably second?) wife Anne (—) Tutty (earlier a widow Micklethwait) all of his plate, his household stuff and his seal ring, only directing that his children be permitted to retain for their own, the silver that was given each at their baptism. He had given his eldest son William Tutty a course at Cambridge, had given his daughter HANNAH her marriage portion and by his will provided for seven younger children, including a son John. The latter man, calling himself "citizen and fruiterer of London", made his will on September 3, 1657, leaving £50 to his sister HANNAH KNIGHT of New England and her children. He named three other sisters, one brother, an uncle John Ling and others, and left £100 for the poor.<sup>2,4</sup>

†The fire places in the early homes were built of wood or tree limbs imbedded in clay and were made enormously large for safety. It is told of Mark Quilter, a neighbor to ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup>, that one night some mischievous boys dropped a live calf from his roof down his chimney.<sup>14</sup>

decision of a board of arbitration whose ruling went against ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup>, requiring him to pay<sup>8</sup> £30-4-11. This debt was evidently promptly settled for the inventory of his estate about a year later showed no such obligation and, indeed, showed debts totaling less than four pounds.<sup>5</sup> One court record<sup>8</sup> shows that "ALICKSANDER"<sup>1</sup> had a five rail fence and in 1656 a neighbor's cow jumped over it!

But there is an intriguing mystery about ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup>, as to his exact place of residence at certain dates and the causes of certain existing conditions. For several publications<sup>10</sup> have stated that he was "a poor man",<sup>1</sup> "a pauper",<sup>10,14</sup> and "a helpless pauper"<sup>1</sup> for whom the town in 1657 provided a house sixteen by twelve, costing £6. But there is unquestionably more to the story than that.

To recapitulate: ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> is said to have been an innkeeper in England and to have brought a servant\* to America with him. His wife came of a family financially comfortable and received a bequest from England as late as 1657; and, as will be shown, at his death in 1663-4 ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> left an estate valued at £164-3-11 with less than four pounds of debt,<sup>5</sup> all of which fails to agree with the word "pauper". Certain, as yet, unrelated items may hint at an answer to the problem.

(1) In 1648 his son Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> (doubtless an infant) was alone in the house when his clothes caught fire and he lost his life.<sup>4,6,8</sup> Perhaps the house also burned.

(2) As has been stated, in March, 1654, ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> was fined heavily "for carelessness in not preventing fire after warning".<sup>8</sup> By inference, a fire really occurred. Might it have been his own home? And the fine a double punishment?

(3) The following item, of January 5, 1656, is somewhat puzzling but suggests the lack of a house, for "ALEXANDER KNIGHT, being in the house of Aron Pengry for the p'esent necessity the select men thinke it meet that he should free his [Pengry's?] house agayne by the first of May next".<sup>9</sup>

(4) On February 19, 1656, ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> signed a lease<sup>8</sup> with Thomas Rowell and Robert Collings whereby, for seven years, they were to have the use of all his land in Ipswich except two acres and his house lot, to have the use of two oxen, two plows, cart, sled, yokes and chains. For this they were to plow his two acres and his house lot twice a year, to bring him his fire wood and a load or two of clay (for a chimney) if he needed it, give him sufficient food for three cows and pay him £16. There is nothing said of a house on his home lot but if he needed fire wood he must have had a house at that time and he may have become incapacitated for farm work and have provided thus for most of the family needs. At any rate in September, 1659, he sued these men for breach of contract and forfeiture of bond.

(5) "When ALEXANDER KNIGHT, a poor man, and 'his wife near her time', asked for relief in 1657, JOHN<sup>1</sup> COGSWELL was ordered to admit them to a vacant house, and it was voted that a house be built for them, sixteen feet long, twelve feet wide and seven or eight feet stud, with a thatched roof for which an appropriation of £6 was made."<sup>1</sup> Since logs were free and every one helped at a "raising", that sum would meet many needs. Their only surviving son, Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, was born October 16, 1657, probably in the home temporarily provided for them.

(6) And five years later in 1662, as has been shown, ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> owed over £30 for rent,<sup>8</sup> and paid it. It seems probable, therefore, that he was for a time physically

\*Of this servant, Francis<sup>1</sup> Wainwright, who took part in the Pequot war in 1637, the following story is told:<sup>3</sup> "A pretty sturdy youth of New Ipswich [Massachusetts], going forth somewhat rashly to pursue the salvages, shot off his musket after them till all his powder and shot were spent; which they perceiving, re-assaulted him, thinking with their hatchets to have knocked him in the head; but he so bestirred himself with the stock of his piece, and after with the barrel, when that was broken, that he brought two of their heads (scalps) to the army. . . ."<sup>3</sup>

incapacitated by accident or illness and during that time he certainly had town help, but no proof has been found that he was a pauper.

His death in 1663-4 left widow HANNAH with three young daughters and a son aged six, and she followed the usual custom of the early days by marrying secondly<sup>9,11,13</sup> on November 9, 1664, as his second wife, Robert<sup>1</sup> Whitman of Ipswich. That man was chosen on May 1, 1672, as their guardian by Mary<sup>2</sup> and Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> and he gave security.<sup>11</sup> The date of the death of HANNAH has not been found but her second husband was still resident<sup>12</sup> at Ipswich in Nov., 1679, when he was taxed.

The will<sup>5</sup> of ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> KNIGHT, written by James Chute, one of the witnesses, was dated February 10, 1663-4, and proved March 29 following. If ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> dictated it, he was certainly a very religious man. Its preliminary wording was in part: "I ALLEXANDER KNIGHT the vnprofitable servant of God, weak in body but strong in mind, doe willingly & with a free hart render & give againe into the hands of my Lord God & Creator my spirit, which hee of his fatherly goodnesse gave vnto me . . . And for the portion of these earthly things which God hath lent me I dispose as followeth:" then he gave to his wife HANNAH his house, lot, other goods, most of his marsh and planting land as well as accounts due him. He gave "vnto my eldest Daughter HANNAH KNIGHT at the age of one & twenty years six Acres of marsh and six Acres of planting land" and provided also for his children Sarah<sup>2</sup>, Mary<sup>2</sup> and Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>. His wife HANNAH and William English of Boston were named as his executors and he signed with a mark "O". The inventory of his estate<sup>5</sup> totaled over £164.

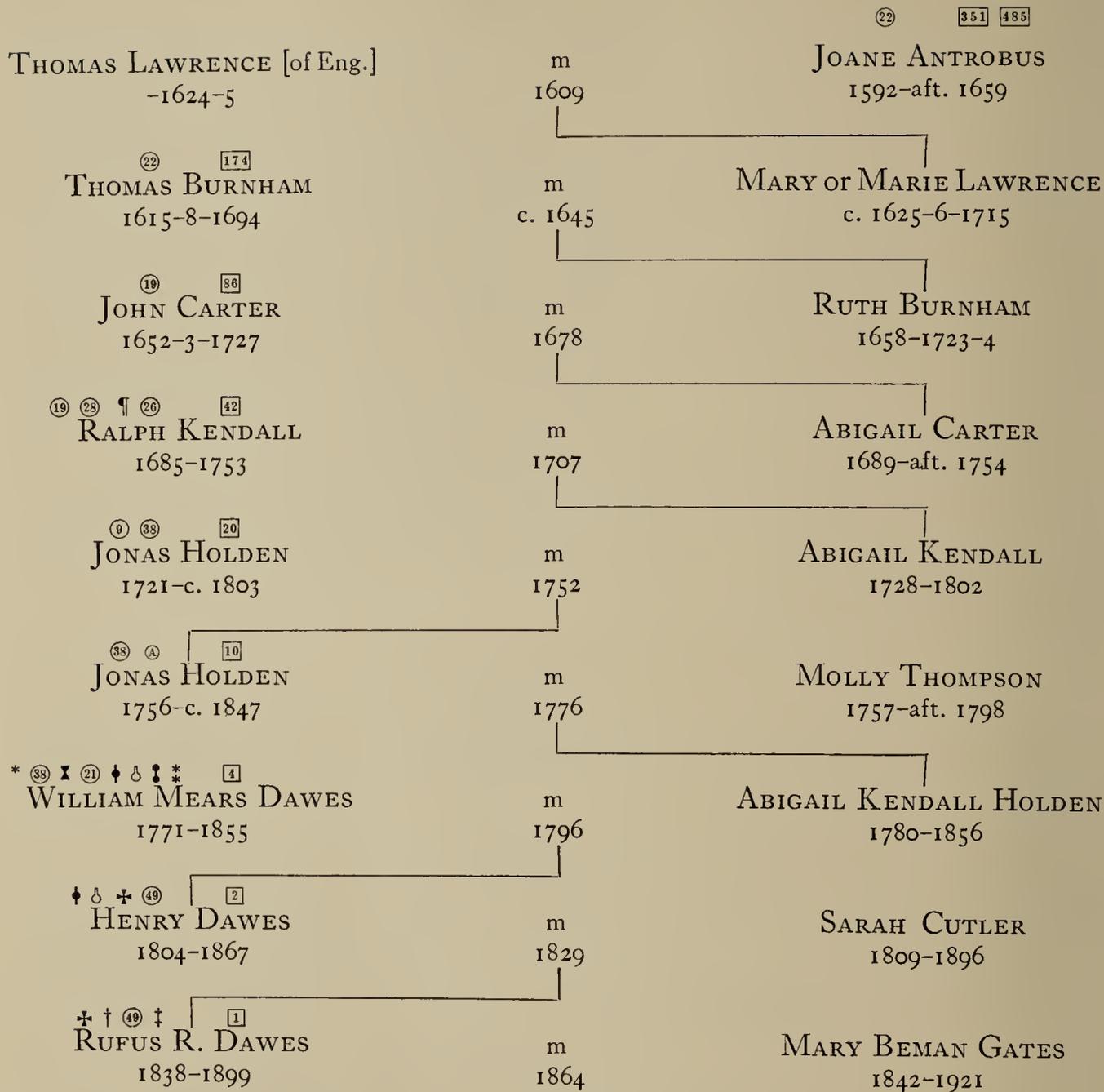
The known children of ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> and ANNE or HANNAH (TUTTY) KNIGHT, born in unknown order, doubtless at Ipswich, were<sup>5,10,11</sup>

- i. HANNAH<sup>2</sup>, called eldest daughter,<sup>5</sup> born after February, 1642, since she was not yet twenty-one at time of her father's will<sup>5</sup> in February, 1663; d. bef.<sup>13</sup> Oct. 26, 1725; m. abt. 1669, ISAAC<sup>3</sup> PERKINS (see Perkins, p. 490). On Feb. 6, 1716, she and her husband deeded to Richard Kimball, land in Ipswich which formerly belonged to her father ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> KNIGHT, formerly of Ipswich.<sup>13</sup>
- ii. Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, burned to death when, being left alone in the house, his clothes caught fire.<sup>4,6,8</sup> The inquest was held April 27, or Mar. 28, 1648.<sup>6</sup>
- iii. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, perhaps she who testified in court in March, 1663, and if so b.<sup>12</sup> abt. 1647.
- iv. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. doubtless before Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> who was but 15 yrs. old when they chose their stepfather as their guardian.<sup>11</sup>
- v. Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, also recorded<sup>9</sup> as "Haniell," probably the youngest child, b.<sup>9,11</sup> at Ipswich Oct. 16, 1657. On May 1, 1672, he and his sister Mary<sup>2</sup> chose their "father-in-law" (stepfather) Robert<sup>1</sup> Whitman, as their guardian.<sup>11</sup>

## REFERENCES

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, T. F. Waters, 1905, I, 23, 373-4, 492; 1917, II, 388-9.</li> <li>2. Genealogical Gleanings in England, H. F. Waters, 1901, pp. 842-3; Pope's Pioneers, Supplement, 1901, p. vii; New England Register, XLVIII, 142-3.</li> <li>3. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, VI, 40-1, being "A True Relation of the late Battell fought in New England; Philip Vincent, pub. London, 1638.</li> <li>4. Ancestry of Katherine Choate Paul, E. J. Paul, 1914, pp. 129, 235-6.</li> <li>5. Probate Records of Essex Co., Mass., I, 439-41.</li> <li>6. History of Ipswich, Mass., J. B. Felt, 1834, pp. 12, 168, 339; History of Essex Co., Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 570, 579.</li> <li>7. Ancient Records of the Town of Ipswich, 1899, pp. 18,</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>23, 55, 71, 92; Hammatt Papers, A. Hammatt, 1854, pp. 191-2, 411-2; Savage, IV, 524.</li> <li>8. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex Co., Mass., I, 143, 162, 213, 224, 338, 415; II, 177, 435-6.</li> <li>9. Ipswich Antiquarian Papers, pp. 92, 150, 154, 171.</li> <li>10. Domestic Life in New England in the 17th Century, G. F. Dow, 1935, p. 2.</li> <li>11. Vital Records of Ipswich, I, 224; II, 261; Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex Co., Mass., II, 262; V, 33.</li> <li>12. Ibid., III, 48-51; VII, 98; VIII, 311; Pope's Pioneers, p. 495; Ancient Records of Ipswich, pp. 105, 108-9.</li> <li>13. Perkins Genealogy, G. A. Perkins, 1889, pt. I, pp. 11, 27-8.</li> <li>14. Ipswich Historical Society Publication, V, 9, 12; IX, 12.</li> </ol> |
|--|--|

# LAWRENCE



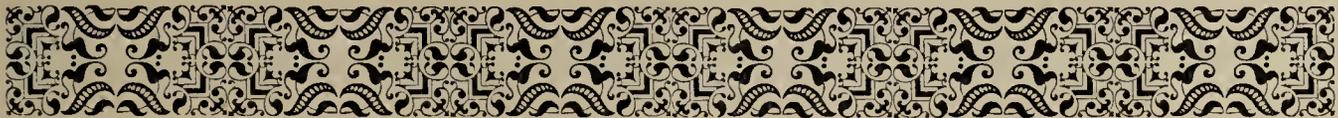
- 22 Ipswich
- 19 Woburn
- 28 Lancaster
- † Charlestown
- 26 Kennebec River
- 9 Concord
- 38 Sudbury

- A Waitsfield, Vt.
- \* Boston
- X Marlborough
- 21 Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.

- ♂ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- \* Malta, O.
- 49 Mauston, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- † Marietta, O.

---

---



---

## LAWRENCE

---

**T**HOMAS LAWRENCE of St. Albans, co. Herts, having married there in 1609 \*JOAN<sup>2</sup> ANTROBUS (see Antrobus, p. 64) died there in 1624-5 leaving five children.<sup>1</sup> His widow married secondly in 1626-8 JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE and bore him four children. JOAN became a member of a party of over twelve persons who embarked in the "Planter" in early April, 1635. The group was composed of widow JOAN (ARNOLD) ANTROBUS aged sixty-five who was the mother of JOAN, jr. aged forty-two, the latter woman's four Lawrence children, her second husband JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE and their four Tuttle children (see Tuttle, p. 601) beside several servants. In this vessel other passengers were our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES and FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> NEWCOMB with his family.<sup>1</sup>

The known children of THOMAS and JOAN (ANTROBUS) LAWRENCE, all born at St. Albans, were (Lawrence)<sup>1,2,3</sup>

- i. Jane<sup>2</sup>, aged 20 in<sup>1</sup> 1635; d.<sup>4</sup> at Ipswich, Mar. 1680; m.<sup>3</sup> at St. Albans, license Feb. 20, 1633-4, George<sup>1</sup> Giddings<sup>4</sup> while JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE, draper, of St. Albans became surety.<sup>3</sup>
- ii. John<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>2,10</sup> July 26, 1618; ae.<sup>1</sup> 17 in 1635; by 1644 he was already<sup>10</sup> a patentee at Hempstead, L. I. and in 1645 a patentee at Flushing, L. I. In 1658 he settled permanently in New York City.<sup>10</sup>
- iii. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>2</sup> 1619-20; prob. emigrated later than the rest of the family. By 1655 he had followed his brothers to Long Island.<sup>10</sup>
- iv. William<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>2</sup> 1622 or ae.<sup>1</sup> 12 in 1635; in 1645 he was a patentee at Flushing, L. I.<sup>10</sup>
- v. MARY<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>2</sup> 1625 or ae.<sup>1</sup> 9 in 1635; d. at Ipswich Mar. 27, 1715, aged<sup>6</sup> 92; m. there abt.<sup>5</sup> 1645 THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BURNHAM (see Burnham, p. 129).

\*JOAN ANTROBUS, daughter of WALTER and JANE (ARNOLD) ANTROBUS, was baptized<sup>2</sup> at St. Albans in 1592; married first at that place in 1609 THOMAS LAWRENCE who died there<sup>2</sup> in 1624-5. She married secondly, probably there, before 1628 JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE.

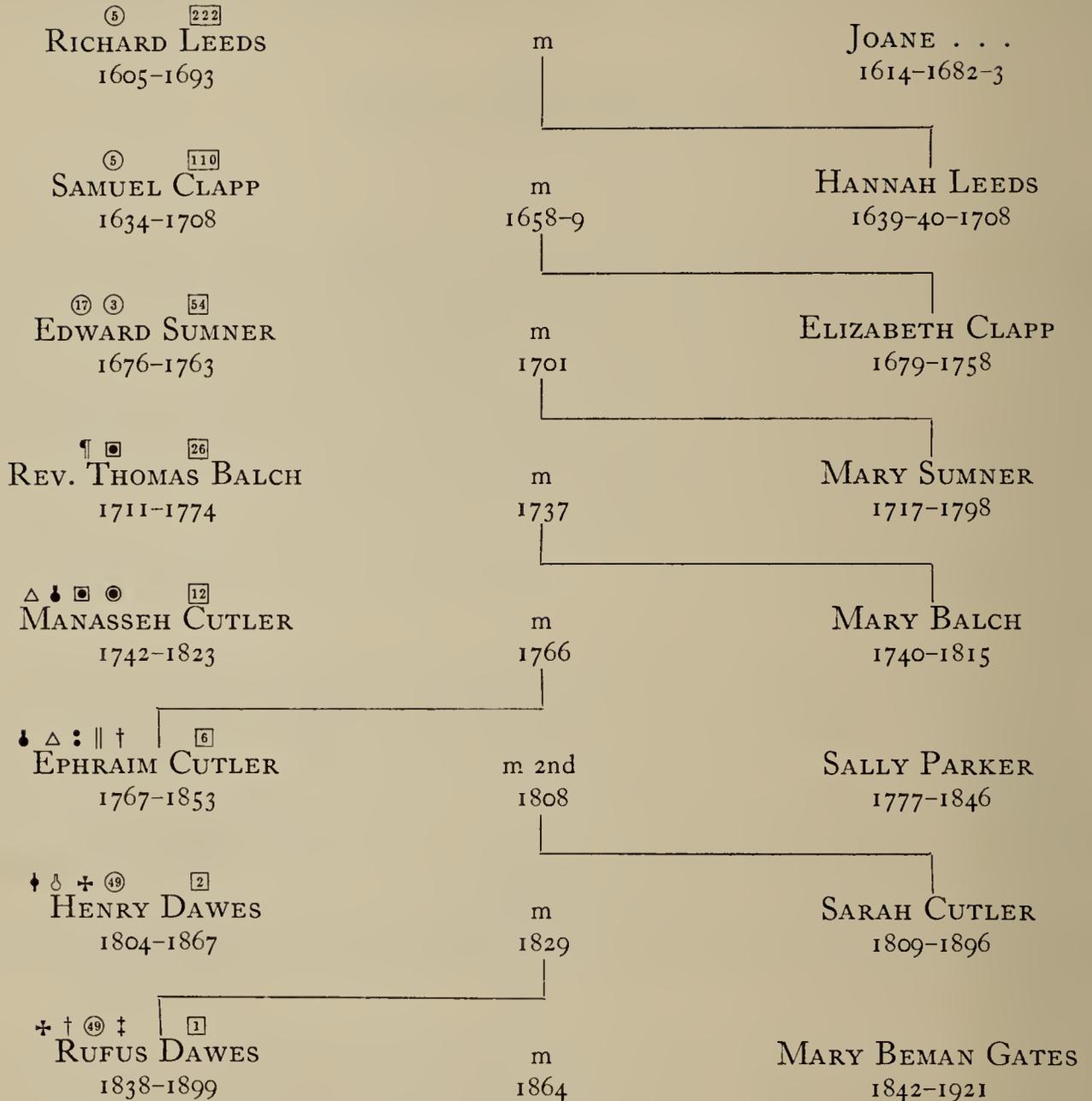
---

### REFERENCES

---

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 140-3.   | 1929, pp. 12-3, 96.                                     |
| 2. Antrobus Pedigrees "The Story of a Cheshire Family", Sir Reginald L. Antrobus, K. C. M. G., C. B., M. A., | 3. Tuttle Genealogy, G. F. Tuttle, 1883, pp. xxv, xxvi. |
|  | 4. Burnham Family, R. H. Burnham, 1869, p. 309.         |

# LEEDS



- (5) Dorchester
- (17) Milton
- (3) Roxbury
- ¶ Charlestown
- Dedham
- Δ Killingly, Conn.
- ♣ Edgartown
- Hamilton

- Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♦ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- † Malta, O.
- 49 Mauston, Wis.
- † Marietta, O.



## LEEDS

**R**ICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS, a mariner\* of Great Yarmouth,<sup>1,2,3</sup> co. Norfolk, England, then called thirty-two years of age, stated on April 12, 1637, before Mr. Thomas Mayhew, the King's Commissioner that he with his wife JOANE aged twenty-three and an unnamed child was "desirous to passe for New England and there to inhabitt and dwell. . ."<sup>1,2,3</sup> At that time two vessels, the "John and Dorothy" of Ipswich, William Andrews, sr., Master, and the "Rose of Yarmouth," William Andrews jr., Master, sailed for the new world and one of them bore RICHARD<sup>1</sup> and his family, arriving at Boston, it is said,<sup>3</sup> on June 8, 1637. They settled in Dorchester<sup>3</sup> at what came to be known as Savin Hill (see map, p. 275) and there had twin boys born in July, 1637. This was early known as "LEED's Lane" and later as Savin Hill Avenue and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON was at first one of its residents<sup>2</sup> as, undoubtedly, was RICHARD<sup>1</sup> whose name it bore.

On March 4, 1634-5, the General Court granted Thompson's Island\*\* (see map, p. 275) to Dorchester forever, if they would pay a yearly rental of twelve pence.<sup>2,11</sup> The early colonists of New England showed one outstanding and most laudable determination, namely that their children should receive opportunity for education, and that it should be (at least comparatively) free to all, as the history of town after town reveals. To this end seventy-one proprietors† of Dorchester on May 30, 1639, voted‡ to lay a tax<sup>2</sup> on the townsmen who held rights on Thompson's Island to the amount of £20 per annum which would pay a teacher so that

\*The claim has been made that RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS settled at Dedham, and also that he was briefly at Salem<sup>5</sup> where presumably he had a land grant. Neither statement seems justified for no one of that name appears on the early Dedham records and the (—) Leeds with a family of four who received three acres of land at Salem<sup>20</sup> about December 25, 1637, was a "plaisterer" while RICHARD<sup>1</sup> was called<sup>1,3</sup> "mariner" at emigration, was to "set forward fishing" in<sup>14</sup> and after 1639 and was called<sup>16</sup> "navigator" in 1656.

\*\*Thompson's Island, the only one of the Bay islands which had a boat harbor, had been acquired in 1619 by William Trevour and was for a time called "Island of Trevour." That man disposed of it to David<sup>1</sup> Thompson, early of London but of Piscataqua, Maine in 1623, who settled upon this island which bore his name about 1626. Thompson died<sup>21</sup> there about 1628 after which his widow and child removed, and the Bay Colony took possession of it and it lay idle until granted to Dorchester.<sup>21</sup> In July, 1631, an order had been passed restraining persons from "putting on cattell, felling wood, raseing slate" on any of the three islands: [ROGER<sup>1</sup>] "CONANT's Island, [later Governor's]; Noddle's Island and Thompson's Island."<sup>23</sup> The house David<sup>1</sup> Thompson built on his island was probably the earliest one built in Boston Harbor. After eventually acquiring possession of the island from Dorchester in 1648 (vide infra), his son John<sup>8</sup> Thompson soon lost it and for the next century and three-quarters it had many owners<sup>23</sup> but about 1832-3 it was purchased by the Boston Farm School Society and has ever since been occupied by the Boston Farm and Trades School. All of its hundred and fifty-seven acres are farmed by the boys who are fortunate enough to be admitted to the school; and the class work carried on fits its graduates to enter the second or third year of high school while the training in mechanical lines is second to none. In 1834 the state transferred Thompson's Island from Norfolk to Suffolk County and placed it under the jurisdiction of Boston, for as long as it continues to be used for charitable purposes. So this island, though lost to Dorchester and her free school back in 1648, has served educational ends of another sort for over a hundred years.

†Among those who favored this plan<sup>2</sup> were WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER and ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP and they also deeded their rights therein to the town in 1641.

‡It is believed<sup>2</sup> that this was "the first public provision made for a free school, in the world, by a direct tax or assessment on the inhabitants of a town."

the town might have a school. It was specified<sup>2</sup> that the master was to undertake to teach "english, latine, and othe<sup>r</sup> tongues, and also writing" ". . . and yt [it] is left to y<sup>e</sup> discretion of the led<sup>rs</sup> & the 7 [select]men for the tyme beeing whethe<sup>r</sup> maydes shalbe taught w<sup>th</sup> the boyes or not."

Presumably by "proprieters" was implied most of the adult males of the town, but such as had no marine interests were permitted to dispose of their rights on the island,<sup>2,14</sup> for on October 31, 1639, the selectmen ordered RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS and two other men to choose their portions and also gave them permission to increase their allotted holdings by the purchase of as much as nine acres apiece from others who were willing to sell. This privilege of purchase granted to LEEDS and the other two men was on condition that the buyers would "set forward fishing and doe satisfie the yeerely rent charge imposed on that Iland toward the mayntanance of a skoole according to the order made to that purpose, and according to the Number of akers they shall make imployment of."<sup>9</sup>

It appears that the collection of this tax from so many individuals became so burdensome that on January 7, 1641, the seventy-one proprietors mentioned above, signed over to the town what amounted to a quit claim deed of their rights on the island.<sup>2</sup> The elders of the church managed and rented the school lands until 1645 when wardens were chosen for that service. Under the latter regime, school was held throughout the year, during eight months of which the hours were from seven in the morning to five in the afternoon, and during the winter, from eight to four, with a two hour nooning, except that every "second day in the weeke between 12 & one of the Clock" the teacher must examine his pupils on what they had learned on the preceding Sabbath. He was to catechize his pupils weekly, to teach them "humane learning and good litterature, & likewyse in poynt of good manne<sup>rs</sup> and dutifull bhauiou<sup>r</sup> towards all, specially there supio<sup>rs</sup>. . . ."<sup>2</sup> Minute instruction was also given<sup>2</sup> as to the permitted use of corporal punishment and the required use of prayer.

Matters became confused in 1648 when John<sup>2</sup> Thompson (David<sup>1</sup>) became of age and claimed the island as the heir of his deceased father (vide supra). The court then acknowledged his rights<sup>9</sup> and nullified their grant of it to Dorchester,<sup>2</sup> whose inhabitants were quite resentful, had a retrial in 1650 and asked for a later retrial, or the grant of another island. As late as 1659 the matter still rankled in the minds of Dorchester men and they directed ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP and one other to again bring the matter before the court, still asking for the return of Thompson's Island, or failing that, requesting the grant of one thousand acres for "the maintenance of o<sup>r</sup> dijng (dying) schoole."<sup>2</sup> The thousand acres "in leiu<sup>e</sup>" of the island was then granted "where they can find it according to law." In November, 1659, the selectmen appointed HENRY<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD (Dawes-Gates, II, 841) to help "serch and stake" out such a tract but about that time he removed to Northampton so no action was taken until December, 1662, when Captain CLAPP, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER and one other were "ordered appointed and intreated to Seeke out a place or places" for the court's grant. But it was nearly one half century later before further action was taken relative to that grant and about sixty years before it was finally completed by the survey of a tract in Worcester County, which eventually became Lunenburg (see map, p. 19). In the meantime the men of Dorchester had spunkily voted to set aside a thousand acres of their own land for their beloved school and

in December, 1662, CLAPP, SUMNER and two others were ordered to lay out this town's grant. In 1663 they located<sup>2</sup> three hundred acres of it at the junction of Dedham and Dorchester lines with the Neponset River but the balance of the town's grant was not laid out until nearly forty years later. This, then, was the early history of what was undoubtedly the first free school in New England though Roxbury soon followed Dorchester's lead. Salem, the earlier settlement, had a private school from 1637 on, and one partially free from 1644 onward<sup>22</sup> and other towns gradually followed suit.

Even as Roxbury men made gifts of money and land to their free school, so did the Dorchester free school profit by the generosity of many townsmen including a gift<sup>25</sup> of £50 from Capt. Robert<sup>1</sup> Keayne in 1636, a gift of £104 by the will<sup>2</sup> of Christopher Gibson in 1674 and of £20 from<sup>25</sup> John Gornell in 1675. Mr. Gibson specified<sup>2</sup> that his gift should be invested in land for school purposes. The sum was laid out in twenty-six acres at Smelt Brook (see map, p. 275) a part of which was sold about 1846 for \$11,000 and a portion was still retained<sup>2</sup> in 1859. And as to loyal service to the school our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER served<sup>2</sup> as one of the feofees to handle the rental of school lands "at their best discretion," from 1662 until 1680. The school probably<sup>2</sup> stood near the corner of Pleasant and Cottage Streets. On March 12, 1640-1, RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS was recorded as owning one five-acre plot which obligated him to build two rods of fence for every three acres he possessed. The fence was to be completed by April 16, 1641, and carried a penalty of sixteen pence per rod for neglect in the matter.<sup>9</sup> About this time RICHARD<sup>1</sup> purchased the town right (or a part of it) which had belonged to John<sup>1</sup> Whitcomb who moved to Scituate and he also joined Jeffrey Turner in acquiring the right which had been held by William Preston who removed to New Haven.<sup>9</sup>

The acquirement of church membership by RICHARD<sup>1</sup> preceded 1645 for in May of that year he became a freeman.<sup>11</sup> In December, 1653, he was present at a church meeting as "one of the brethern",<sup>7</sup> and by 1659 all three of his children had acquired church membership.<sup>7</sup>

In December, 1646, he joined with fifty-four\* other Dorchester residents in agreeing to abide by the decision of three arbitrators from Roxbury as to the amount of fence each one should build and RICHARD<sup>1</sup> was directed to construct three rods, one and one half feet of fence at Captain's Neck (see map, p. 275) and for his twenty acre lot and his Hilly's Neck, twenty-seven and a quarter rods.<sup>9</sup> That year he owned<sup>9</sup> lots on each side of the one which William Blake, sr. sold to John Phillips. In February, 1647-8, RICHARD<sup>1</sup> entered into an agreement with Michael Willis who had removed to Boston, to purchase all of his rights of commons and land in Dorchester and this bargain<sup>16</sup> was closed in April, 1656. In 1652-3 RICHARD<sup>1</sup> bargained<sup>16</sup> with Elizabeth Stoughton, widow of Israel, for about twenty-one acres of marsh and upland and by January, 1654-5, had paid £46 for it, and in April, 1656, he being called "navigator" bought six acres of salt and fresh meadow adjoining his holdings.<sup>16</sup> RICHARD<sup>1</sup> also acquired land\*\* in Northampton (see map,

\*These fifty-four included<sup>9</sup> ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER.

\*\*Original proprietors of any early town (or their heirs in the father's behalf) acquired proportionate additional tracts as often as town lands were subdivided. This meant an eventual ownership by each proprietor, or his family of many scattered plots. In 1637 Dorchester had received from the General Court a "New Grant" of about forty thousand acres running southward to the Plymouth Colony line (see Clapp, p. 161) and in 1696-7 a survey<sup>24</sup> was made of the portion of that tract which became Canton. Of this, lot number forty-six of fifty-seven acres was assigned to RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS deceased, and to his son Benjamin<sup>2</sup> Leeds. It adjoined the lot<sup>24</sup> laid out to SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP (see map, p. 275).

p. 618) to which place his eldest son Joseph<sup>2</sup> removed<sup>17</sup> by or before 1661, remaining<sup>2</sup> until 1673 or later, and at least a part of which land was disposed of by the will of RICHARD<sup>1</sup>. In April, 1677, a Thomas Holman sold for £50 six acres of marsh in Milton,\* bounded on the north by Neponsett River, which he had earlier bought<sup>17</sup> of LEEDS (see map, p. 275) who still held lands in Milton<sup>18</sup> in 1682.

When the colonists came to fear so anxiously the threatened loss of their charter and in 1664 petitioned the General Court to aid in its retention, the name of RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS was found among the Dorchester signers as were<sup>12</sup> also those of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> DAVENPORT, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON and SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP. The public service rendered by RICHARD<sup>1</sup> was not of an outstanding character, but it was practically continuous,<sup>10</sup> in some form or other from at least 1647 until 1670 or later, and was intermittent until 1683 when he would have been<sup>10</sup> about seventy-eight years old. He performed the omnipresent tasks of a viewer of fences, lots, highways, cartways, creeks and fields; he served<sup>10</sup> as supervisor, constable and selectman; was appointed<sup>9</sup> to "goe a p'ambelation" between Roxbury and Dorchester and between Dorchester and Dedham to renew the boundaries, and he assisted in choice of a house for the town to buy,<sup>9</sup> perhaps for the minister. In December, 1671, he and two others "weer nominated and chosen by the towne for to take Care of the repaiering of the meeting hous for the p'resent occasion that we may Comfortably come to gether for the worship of god, and they to be paid out of the towne rate. the glass to be taken care for by the Constable." In 1679 RICHARD<sup>1</sup> was chosen as one of the grand jurors<sup>15</sup> to serve at Suffolk County Court.

The selectmen at a meeting on January 13, 1667-8, ordered<sup>9</sup> that "Whereas ther was latly a Contribution for the Fleete at the kereby [Carrabee?] Ilands" "it shall be brought in to the houses of the two deacons by the fowerth day come three weeks which will be the 5 day of February next and the deacon to take Care for the Conuaying it to Boston and to be alowed out of the same." One custom of the church of that time is portrayed by a recorded item of January, 1673-4, stating that "the Deacon made returne of Seauerall that had not paid their p'portion to the maintenance of the minestry for the yeer 72 and a warant was Issued for the Constables to leuy the same. . . ." The charities aided by RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS and his wife included<sup>9</sup> one shilling and a barrel of corn given for the support of "Stock's child" in 1670, corn and malt to Merrifield in 1673, a barrel of corn<sup>7</sup> for widow Rider in 1689 and a rather extended care of a woman, probably widowed, whose name<sup>9</sup> was Frances Bacon. For a time (probably at several times) this women lived with the family of RICHARD<sup>1</sup> and he repeatedly had sums due him from the town for her care and apparently he made collections in her behalf even while she resided elsewhere. By November, 1674, the town took official cognizance of her destitute condition and ruled that a listing should be made of the families in the town and that she should stay a fortnight at each home, "or longer if the family be willing." The town was to pay<sup>9</sup> for bedding and clothing for her and her child and each householder who kept her was to have three shillings per week and the value of her work. A notation is seen in the records also of six shillings<sup>9</sup> due

\*In 1660 the sixth division of Dorchester lands had been made<sup>18</sup> and in 1662 this district was incorporated as Milton. It was frequently referred to as the "Parallel Lines" and consisted mainly of long narrow lots running (in two tiers) in a southeasterly direction from the Neponset River to or toward the Braintree line (see map, p. 618). Lot number twenty-six of twenty-eight acres bounded on the north by the Neponset River was assigned<sup>18</sup> to RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS.

to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER "for frances Bakons tableing" in 1675-6. When her child was about two years old it was bound out to James<sup>2</sup> Foster (Hopedill<sup>1</sup> of Dorchester) until it should be twenty-one. For the support of it, Foster was to have from the town the sum of £5 at once and if it lived he was to have an added £5.<sup>9</sup> At least as late as 1680 money was still being paid by the town to RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS for "Frank".

The only hint found of criticism of RICHARD<sup>1</sup> occurred in January, 1667-8, when he had fenced in a piece of meadow down by the creek which had been laid out for the landing of hay or corn brought in by boat from remote fields, and the selectmen voted that he "should be spoken with" about it. When he appeared before them he claimed to have believed that it belonged to him and he offered to pay a rental of twelve pence per year for the use of it as long as it remained fenced.<sup>9</sup>

It is interesting to note the "mark" or signature used repeatedly (perhaps always) by RICHARD<sup>1</sup>, for it was formed<sup>9</sup> thus: o|— or —|o. In October, 1678, RICHARD<sup>1</sup> and his son Benjamin<sup>2</sup> joined the other men of Dorchester in taking the oath of allegiance<sup>15</sup> as required by the king.

Of his wife JOANE who died at Dorchester<sup>13,14</sup> on February 9, 1682-3, it has been recorded<sup>2</sup> that she was "in every thing all that adorns a wife, mother and friend." RICHARD<sup>1</sup> stayed on more than ten years, making his will<sup>4</sup> on March 2, 1692-3, and dying<sup>13</sup> March 18 following. He seems to have had a pride in his great age for in his will he said of himself that by the patience of God he was<sup>5</sup> "near an hundred years old" and his gravestone stated that he was about ninety-eight in spite of the fact that by his declaration of age at his emigration<sup>1,3</sup> he would have been only about eighty-eight. His estate was considerable, amounting to over<sup>12,19</sup> £963 and his will which was probated<sup>4</sup> on March 30, 1692-3, made bequests<sup>4,5</sup> to his sons Joseph<sup>2</sup> and Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, to daughter HANNAH CLAPP, gave his Northampton lands to the children of his son Joseph<sup>2</sup> and daughter-in-law Miriam whose early home had been in that town, and made a bequest<sup>14</sup> to his pastor Rev. John<sup>3</sup> Danforth (Samuel<sup>2</sup>, NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>). The graves of RICHARD<sup>1</sup> and of JOANE are side by side in the Upham's Corner Cemetery which is the oldest burial ground in Dorchester. In modern terms<sup>19</sup> it lies at the corner of Columbia Road and Stoughton Street, and is well kept up.

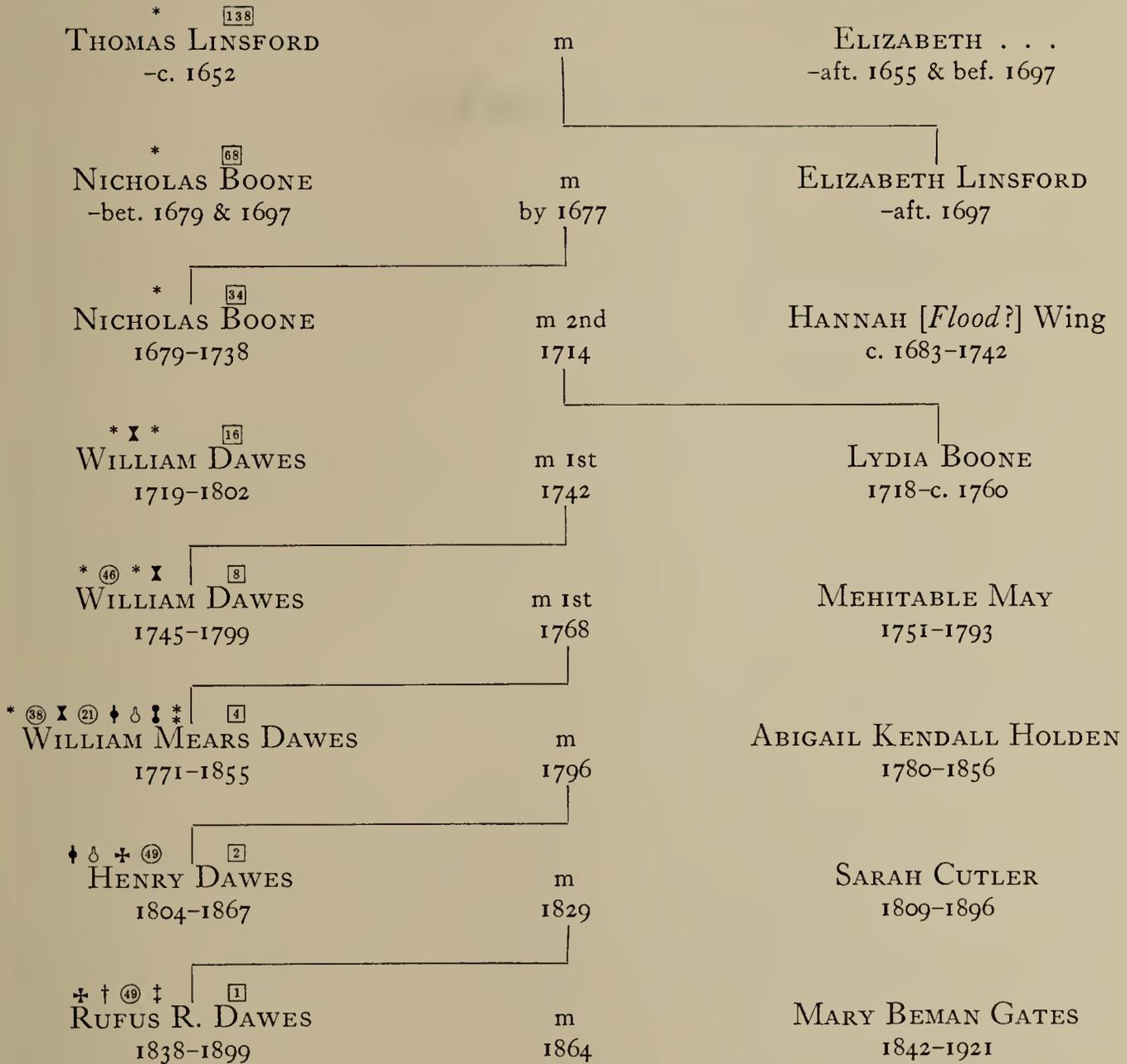
The known children of RICHARD<sup>1</sup> and JOANE (—) LEEDS, the three last ones born at Dorchester, were<sup>1,2,4,5,6</sup>

- I. Child<sup>2</sup>, b. in England<sup>1,4</sup> before 1637; not named in father's will.
- II. Joseph<sup>2</sup>, twin, b. at Dorchester July 14, 1637, bap. there Apr. 4, 1639; d. there<sup>2,12</sup> Jan. 28, 1714-5, ae. abt. 77; m. at Northampton<sup>13</sup> Nov. 8, 1661, Miriam<sup>2</sup> Cooke (Capt. Aaron<sup>1</sup>),<sup>4</sup> granddaughter of our ELIZABETH (CHARDE) COOKE FORD.
- III. Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, twin, b. at Dorchester July 14, 1637, bap. there Apr. 4, 1639; d. there s. p. Mar. 13, 1717-8, ae.<sup>12</sup> abt. 80; m.<sup>13</sup> 1st Sept. 17, 1667, Mary<sup>2</sup> Brinsmade (William<sup>1</sup>); m. 2nd Mercy (—) who d. Aug. 10, 1692; m. 3rd Aug. 11, 1696, Abigail Knight.<sup>4</sup>
- IV. HANNAH<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>5,6</sup> Feb. 6 or 16, 1639-40; d. at Dorchester Oct. 8 or 9, 1708, ae. abt. 68-9; m.<sup>4,13</sup> there Jan. 18, 1658-9, SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP (see Clapp, p. 168).<sup>8,9</sup>

## REFERENCES

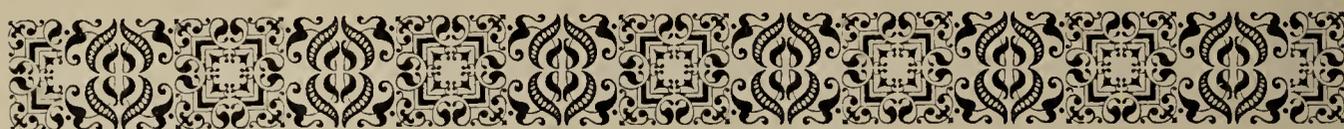
1. Hotten's Emigrant Lists, p. 292.
2. History of Dorchester, Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society, 1859, pp. 53, 72, 126-8, 161-4, 182, 200, 209, 372, 419-36, 556.
3. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 187.
4. Pope's Pioneers of Massachusetts, 1900, p. 283.
5. Savage's Genealogical Dict. III, 74.
6. Records of the First Church at Dorchester . . . 1636-1734, G. H. Ellis, 1891, pp. 149, 151-2, 228.
7. *Ibid.*, 7, 10, 15, 21, 25, 99-100, 149.
8. Clapp Family in America, E. Clapp, 1876, p. 9-11.
9. Boston Record Commissioners Report, IV, 40, 46, 76, 78-9, 104, 145, 147-8, 167, 170-1, 180, 191, 194, 196-7, 201-3, 207, 211-2, 216-7, 240, 244, 254, 297-8.
10. *Ibid.*, see index of above Volume.
11. Record of Massachusetts Bay, I, 139; II, 294.
12. New England Register, V, 89-90, 389-95, 401.
13. B. R. C. R. XXI, 20, 22, 30, 122, 128, 130.
14. Paine Ancestry, S. C. Paine, ed. by C. H. Pope, 1912, p. 123.
15. Publications of Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXX, 971, 1107 being Records of Suffolk Co. Court.
16. Suffolk Deeds, II, 93-7, 248-52; X, 71; XII, 339.
17. History of Northampton, J. R. Trumbull, 1898, I, 107, 147, 179, 572.
18. History of Milton, A. K. Teele, 1887, pp. 15-7.
19. Research by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass.; Suffolk Probates No. 2015, Vol. 13, 150-1.
20. Town Records of Salem, Essex Institute, 1868, I, 103.
21. Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, C. T. Libby, p. 680; New England Register LXIX, 158; B. R. C. R., XXXII, 128-30.
22. History of Salem, S. Perley, 1926, II, 91.
23. The Islands of Boston Harbor, E. R. Snow, 1935, pp. 153-174; Topographical and Historical Description of Boston, N. B. Shurtleff, 1890, pp. 443, 500-1.
24. History of Canton, D. T. V. Huntoon, 1893, pp. 595 and map facing 592.
25. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, O. A. Roberts, 1895, I, 15, 19, 130.

# LINSFORD



\* Boston  
 X Marlborough  
<sup>46</sup> Worcester  
<sup>38</sup> Sudbury  
<sup>21</sup> Fitzwilliam, N. H.  
 † Thomaston, Me.  
 † Morgan Co., O.

† Licking Co., O.  
 \* Ripon, Wis.  
 † Malta, O.  
<sup>49</sup> Mauston, Wis.  
 † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.  
 † Marietta, O.



## LINSFORD

**T**HOMAS<sup>1</sup> LINSFORD of whom but little is known, lived in the “northerly” end of Boston where he had built his house and was established<sup>1,7</sup> therein before October 19, 1652. His death record has not been discovered but he was “deceased” before<sup>1</sup> the year 1655. Were it not for a long drawn out court case beginning forty-two years after the death of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> nothing would be known of this family\* which is not otherwise recorded.

In this court case the litigation involved the house and land once owned by THOMAS<sup>1</sup>. On October 5, 1697, his daughter ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> who had married NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup> BOONE and was residing in Boston, entered “at the Inferior Court of Common Pleas” a claim for a dwelling house and small piece of land which had formerly belonged to her father. The property (see map, p. 30) though variously described by different witnesses, fronted<sup>7</sup> twenty feet on Fishers Street (now a part of Hanover Street) and extended one hundred feet to Back (now Salem Street). The petitioner humbly prayed that her claim might remain on file.

On November 12 at a continued hearing Elizabeth Peck “aged 76 or thereabouts,” and evidently a neighbor of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> during his life testified<sup>1</sup> in court to support the claim of ELIZABETH BOONE to the property. Her testimony showed that THOMAS<sup>1</sup> had been a “labourer,” that he “possessed and improved the land and built a house thereon sometime before 19 October 1652.” It also showed that “THOMAS dwelt in this house a short time and died therein; that his widow ELIZABETH LINSFORD continued to dwell in the said house until about forty-one years ago, about which time she went away for Old England, and that before she went away she was married again to one Huniborn\*\* and she went by the name of ELIZABETH Huniborn. She farther testifieth that she hath known ELIZABETH BOONE from a child to be the reputed daughter of said THOMAS and ELIZABETH LINSFORD, and the only child of them as she knows of to be now living and that the aforesaid house set up and built by said LINSFORD together with an additional building set up since by George Nowell is the same and yet standing in which said Deborah Keen now dwells.”

The next record<sup>6</sup> concerning this case was dated March 4, 1697-8, and was the deposition of Hannah Collier, aged 56-7. The testimony was practically the same as that of Elizabeth Peck, but with two exceptions. First she stated that she saw THOMAS<sup>1</sup> “build the house with his own hands.” Secondly, she made not the slightest mention of a second marriage for ELIZABETH LINSFORD. Another authority<sup>7</sup> gave further details about the THOMAS<sup>1</sup> LINSFORD house, and its subsequent owners.

\*A younger Thomas Linsford who may have been related was an abutter<sup>4</sup> in a deed dated in August, 1673.

\*\*The name Huniborn was early recorded<sup>3</sup> in New England, but the fact that in 1655 in England ELIZABETH was still called<sup>5</sup> “LINSFORD” argues against the second marriage.

This case evidently dragged along indefinitely, for on April 4, 1704, another deponent, Hannah Gording, furnished more evidence in favor of the claimant ELIZABETH BOONE. Hannah's testimony was practically the same as all the others. There is nothing in the Suffolk Court Files<sup>6</sup> now to show that the claim ever was allowed.

A development which promised to lend a very definite historical significance to this house was its sale in July, 1674, for £102 to Marmaduke Johnson, a skillful printer who had been engaged<sup>2</sup> in 1660 by the Corporation in England to come to the colony for three years, which was extended to four to serve at the print shop at Harvard. He then went to England and returned in 1665 with type and a printing press of his own — the third one in the colony. A law then forbade the use of a press in any town other than Cambridge<sup>8</sup> so he set it up there and its first issue was the Bay Psalm Book (probably its sixth edition). In May 1674, Johnson successfully petitioned the General Court to permit him to move to Boston which he did in August of that year and his purchase of the THOMAS' LINSFORD house would have made it the location of Boston's first printing office (which it may have been for a very brief time) if it were not for the death<sup>2</sup> of Johnson on December 25, 1674. John Foster (Hopetill of Dorchester) bought the press and type and early in 1675 opened what is called Boston's first printing office "over against the Sign of the Dove" on Boylston Street.

LINSFORD had died in Boston between 1652 and 1655. His wife ELIZABETH died after October, 1655, probably in England.

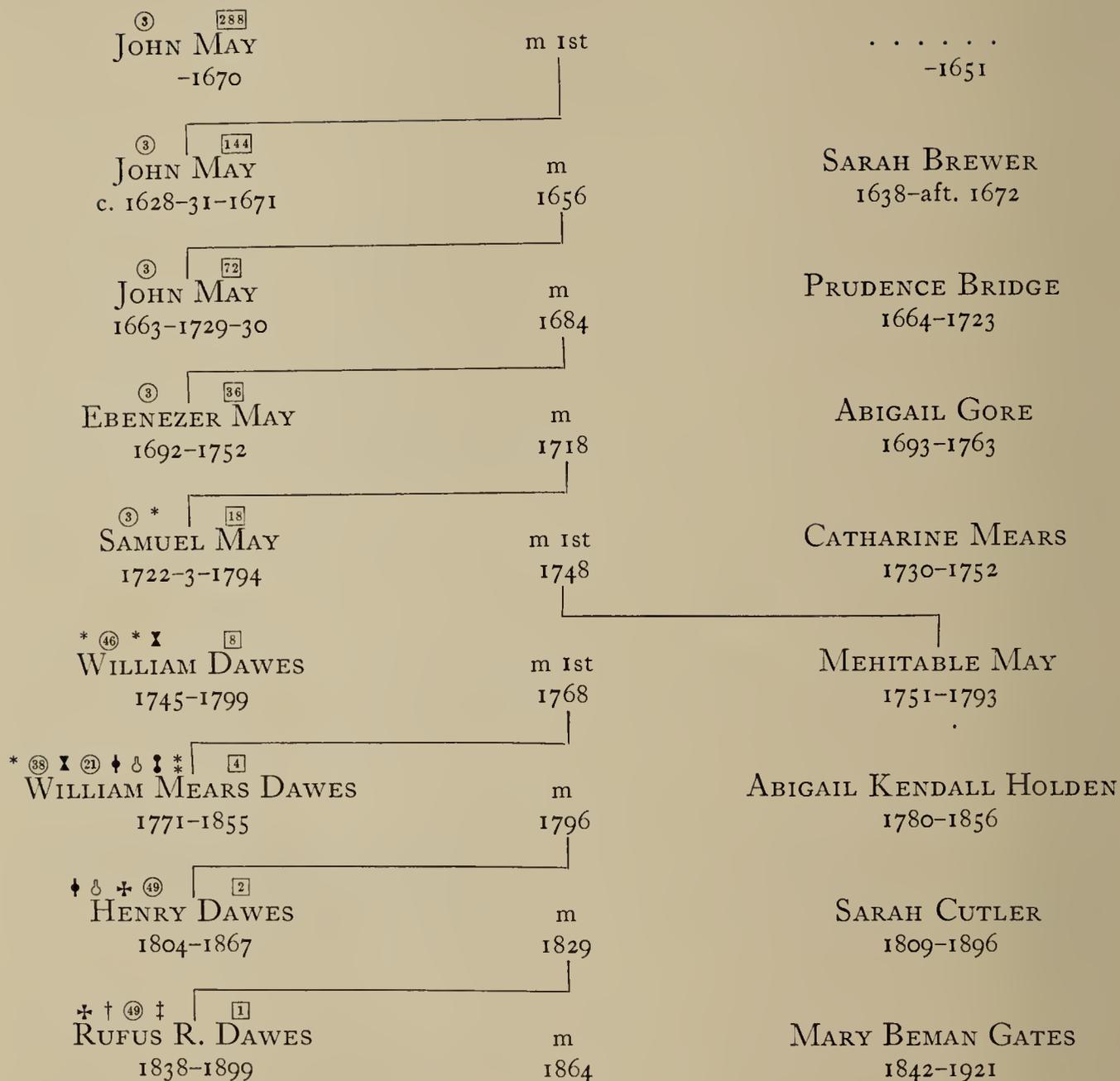
The known children of THOMAS' and ELIZABETH (—) LINSFORD were<sup>1,5,7</sup>

- I. ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup>, b. perhaps in New England; m. by 1677 or earlier NICHOLAS' BOONE (see Boone, p. 96).
- II. John<sup>2</sup>, b. in New England the last of March, 1651; bap., in St. Olave's Church, Hart Street, London,<sup>5</sup> Oct. 1, 1655, as "the son of ELIZABETH LINSFORD;" d. bef. Oct. 5, 1697.

#### REFERENCES

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Massachusetts Archives, VIII: 68-9.</li> <li>2. The Club of Odd Volumes, 1900. Early Boston Booksellers, G. E. Littlefield, pp. 74-6, 89-90.</li> <li>3. New England Register, III, 389; V, 344; Bostonian Society Publication, III, 131.</li> <li>4. Suffolk Deeds, (pub.) VIII, 261.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>5. "American Colonists in English Records", G. Sherwood 1933, 2 ser., p. 155.</li> <li>6. Suffolk Court Files, 3542; 3624, Research by Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass.</li> <li>7. New England Register, LXXI, 91-3.</li> <li>8. Suffolk Deeds (pub.), IX, 282-3.</li> </ol> |
|---|--|

# MAY



- ③ Roxbury
- \* Boston
- ④⑥ Worcester
- X Marlborough
- ③⑧ Sudbury

- ②① Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ♂ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.

- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- ✚ Malta, O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## MAY (*Maies, Mayes, Mays*)

JOHN<sup>1</sup> MAY, born about 1590, emigrated from England with his unnamed wife and their two sons by or before 1640. They settled at Roxbury where JOHN<sup>1</sup> and his wife became members of the church\* and on June 2, 1641, JOHN<sup>1</sup> became a freeman.<sup>10</sup> His house stood<sup>3</sup> at Jamaica Plain<sup>47</sup> on a triangular tract next to Thomas Bell's on Stony River,<sup>11</sup> and he had several other pieces of land, including<sup>3</sup> a six acre plot which he bought of EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE and one of eighteen acres which he bought of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD who was moving to Boston. This last named piece abutted on land belonging to BRIDGE on the south, east and west.<sup>3</sup> JOHN<sup>1</sup> was one of eight men who acquired<sup>13</sup> a tract of salt marsh<sup>13</sup> from Capt. Hugh Pritchard in 1651 which presently became an island<sup>11</sup> at the mouth of Stony River (see map, p. 416) and his two acres there<sup>3</sup> adjoined the portion of marsh acquired by EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE (see Bridge, p. 113). In 1646 the will<sup>14</sup> of Joseph<sup>1</sup> Weld gave £5 in corn to brother JOHN MAY but it undoubtedly implied a brother in the church for he referred to five other men similarly.<sup>45</sup>

On June 18, 1651, JOHN<sup>1</sup> lost his unnamed first wife by death<sup>5</sup> and Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Eliot recorded<sup>2</sup> that "Sister MAYES dyed, a very gracious and savoury christian." Before April, 1660, JOHN<sup>1</sup> had married secondly Sarah (—) of Dorchester, for on April 29, 1660, "Sarah May, being dismissed frō Dorchester, joyned here an aged woman."<sup>2,8</sup> In 1659 JOHN<sup>1</sup> witnessed a deed but apparently he bore no public office.

JOHN<sup>1</sup> was a donor\*\* to the Roxbury Free School (see Bridge, p. 113) on August 1, 1645, as were also JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE, DANIEL<sup>1</sup> BREWER, EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE and PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER with many others. Though he had no small children, he pledged his home for the annual payment of two shillings toward the school's upkeep<sup>11</sup> and in February, 1668, he was one of fifty-eight signatories to an agreement with John Prudden to teach for the coming year.<sup>11</sup> Prudden signed a covenant to "by precept and example, . . . instruct in all scholasticall, morall, and theologicall discipline, the children . . . of those persons whose names are here underwritten, all A B C Darians excepted."<sup>11</sup> Among these signers of 1668, in addition to JOHN<sup>1</sup>, were widow "BRUER", EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE and PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER.<sup>11</sup> On October 25, 1664, JOHN<sup>1</sup> and his son Samuel<sup>2</sup> signed the petition with other Roxbury men, urging<sup>23</sup> the Governor and magistrates to protect their rights and their charter against the threatened annulment (see Appendix "B," p. 694).

JOHN<sup>1</sup> was taken sick in the spring of 1670, for William Parke and Edward Morris deposed<sup>12</sup> that "We whose names are here underwritten being sent for upon the

\*From 1650 this church was served by Rev. Samuel<sup>1</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>) as assistant pastor, until his death in 1674.

\*\*Confusion sometimes arose from the fact that a John Mayo<sup>11</sup> was contemporary in Roxbury with our JOHN<sup>1</sup> who often wrote his name<sup>11</sup> MAYS. This was true in the case of the donors to the school.

Sabbath morning being the 24th of April, 1670 to come unto y<sup>e</sup> House of J<sup>n</sup>o MAYS now deceased hee then being sick yet of a perfect understanding hee said to Us” he wished to dispose of his estate to prevent trouble between his two sons and his wife. Son JOHN<sup>2</sup> was to have all of the carpenter<sup>6,7</sup> tools and half of a lot of land on the east side of Stony River. The testator gave a brass pan to his eldest grandchild who was Mary<sup>3</sup> (JOHN<sup>2</sup>). The rest of his land was given to son Samuel<sup>2</sup> and the household goods were to be divided equally between the two sons after the death of the wife. He asked that EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE should be one of his overseers and directed that his sons JOHN<sup>2</sup> and Samuel<sup>2</sup> should be the executors.<sup>12</sup> JOHN<sup>1</sup> died<sup>2,5,6,7</sup> on April 28, 1670, four days after making this nuncupative will, being “aged about eighty”, and his widow Sarah died a week later on May 5, 1670.

The known children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> MAY and his first wife, both born in England, were<sup>1,6,7,12</sup>

1. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, see following.
11. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, d. at Roxbury July 17, 1677; m. there Jan. or June 7, 1657, Abigail Stanfull (Stansfall) and m. 2nd, Mary (—). He was confirmed<sup>2,3</sup> as a church member May 15, 1658 or 9, and became a freeman in 1660. JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE was one of the administrators of his estate.<sup>13</sup>

JOHN<sup>2</sup> MAY (*John<sup>1</sup>*) born in England about 1628–31, died or was buried in Roxbury<sup>5</sup> September 11, 1671, aged about forty; he married there on November 19, 1656, SARAH<sup>2</sup> “BRUER” (see Brewer, p. 110). On May 15, 1659, SARAH was confirmed<sup>2</sup> as a church member while JOHN<sup>2</sup> was not admitted to full communion<sup>2,8</sup> until May 27, 1660. He inherited half of his father’s land<sup>12</sup> and his carpenter<sup>6,7</sup> tools. On May 30, 1660, as “J<sup>n</sup>o MAJES” he was made a freeman<sup>10</sup> and took the freeman’s oath as did also his brother Samuel<sup>2</sup>. In June, 1661, five men, including JOHN<sup>2</sup> MAY and JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE, bought from the heirs, the Roxbury land and housing formerly owned by Philip<sup>1</sup> Eliot, brother of Rev. John<sup>1</sup>. In September of that year, JOHN<sup>2</sup> MAY and JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE were joined by two others of the above group in selling fifteen of these acres to the fifth man.<sup>13</sup>

There is no evidence seen that either JOHN<sup>2</sup> or his father ever held public office. He appears to have lived on the homestead or a part of it, but he acquired considerably more land than had his father. He owned land<sup>6</sup> at “Norays”, at “Wolomonopog”,\* at Gravelly Point,\*\* beside what he had purchased from Robert Williams, from Goodman Howe and others. Since he received his father’s carpenter tools, and passed them on in his own will, we may assume that his occupation was at least in part that of a builder. He left a considerably larger estate than did his father, yet he died a comparatively young man and only seventeen months after his father’s death, having been blind for several months. He made a will<sup>18</sup> a few days before he died, being “under affliction of body.” It stipulated among other things that “my other two sons, Elisha and Ephraim, shall, if they live, learn some trade, and when they come of the age of one and twenty years, the one to have the land I bought of Goodman Morris, that lyeth by the land of John Boogby, (Bugby) and the other the land I have at Woolamanpogue, the choice of either portion I give to Elisha, with this provision, that, if he choose, he shall pay to my daughter Mariah, if she shall live, four pounds; and Ephraim shall pay to her

\*Wollomonopaug, in the Nipmuck Country, lay across the line<sup>18,20</sup> of present Bristol and Norfolk Counties, and also over the adjacent Rhode Island line (see map, p. 618) in the general vicinity of Rehoboth.

\*\*Gravelly Point at Roxbury ran out into the bay at the mouth of Stony River, toward Cambridge<sup>11</sup> (see map, p. 416).

twenty shillings.”<sup>18</sup> His death left widow SARAH with seven children to care for, the youngest being less than a year old. On April 4, 1672, she acknowledged<sup>13</sup> the signature on the deed of September, 1661, mentioned above, to have been that of her deceased husband. On September 8, 1680, John<sup>2</sup> Watson, (John<sup>1</sup>) and Henry<sup>2</sup> Bowen, son of Griffith<sup>1</sup> (or else his son of the same name), both of Roxbury, were appointed guardians for JOHN<sup>3</sup> MAYS, then aged about seventeen, and for his brothers Elisha<sup>3</sup> and Ephraim<sup>3</sup> then aged about eleven and ten “three sons of JOHN MAYS, sometime of Roxbury, deceased.”<sup>18</sup> Elisha<sup>3</sup> and Ephraim<sup>3</sup>, but infants when their father died, grew to adult years in their Roxbury home, but about 1695 they left the town for what is now Rehoboth, doubtless to settle on the Wollomonopaug land which their father mentioned in his will. This was the first break in the family of SARAH, whose own death date has not been found.

The children of JOHN<sup>2</sup> and SARAH (BREWER) MAY, all born in Roxbury, from one of whom (and *perhaps* even two) we descend, were<sup>1,2,5,6,7,18</sup>

- I. Mary<sup>3</sup>, b. Nov. 7, 1657, (bap. May 29, 1659, as “Sarah”)<sup>2</sup> d. aft. 1700; m.<sup>31</sup> 1st Nov. 4, 1675, Joseph<sup>2</sup> Pepper (Robert<sup>1</sup> of Roxbury) who was slain by the Indians at Sudbury, Apr. 21, 1676, leaving a posthumous child; she m.<sup>31</sup> 2nd Feb. 28, 1677-8, Joshua<sup>2</sup> Seaver (Robert<sup>1</sup> of Roxbury). This girl has been repeatedly assigned,<sup>1,6,7</sup> as husband, John Ruggles, but though Roxbury had five men of that name, she m. no one of them.
- II. Sarah<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 8, bap. 11, 1659; d. at Roxbury Dec. 29, 1712, aged 54 yrs., 3 mo.; she “was admitted to take hold<sup>2</sup> of the covenant” on July 2, 1676; m. at Roxbury, Feb. 24, 1679, Samuel<sup>3</sup> Williams (Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>).<sup>16</sup>
- III. Eleazer<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 12, bap. 16, 1661-2; bur. between June and December, 1662.
- IV. JOHN<sup>3</sup>, see following.
- V. “Mehitabell”<sup>3</sup>, b. May 6, bap. 7, 1665; “took hold of the covenant” on Apr. 24, 1681, and joined Roxbury Church<sup>2,8</sup> in July, 1690.
- VI. \*Naomi<sup>3</sup>, b. May 20, bap. 26, 1667; “took hold of the covenant” on Oct. 2, 1681, and joined Roxbury Church<sup>2,8</sup> in July, 1690.
- VII. Elisha<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 20, bap. 21, 1668-9; d. after<sup>6,18</sup> 1704; m. by 1699 (—)\*\* and had, at Rehoboth, at least three children.<sup>6</sup> He acquired a tract of land at Woodstock, Conn.,<sup>3</sup> as did also his brother JOHN<sup>3</sup>, but is said to have removed with Ephraim<sup>3</sup> to Rehoboth<sup>6</sup> about 1695.
- VIII. Ephraim<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 23, bap. 25, 1670; called “Ensign” he d. at Rehoboth Sept. 25, 1721, in 51st year; m.† there June 19, 1708, Deliverance<sup>3</sup> Peck (Israel<sup>2</sup>, Joseph<sup>1</sup>).<sup>15</sup> He removed from Roxbury to Rehoboth<sup>18</sup> vicinity about<sup>6</sup> 1695.

‡JOHN<sup>3</sup> MAY (*John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>5</sup> at Roxbury on May 11, baptised May 24, 1663, and died there<sup>5</sup> as “Deacon” on February 24, 1729-30, at the age of sixty-seven years, eight months and four days.‡ He was married there<sup>5,7</sup> on June 2, 1684, to PRUDENCE<sup>3</sup> BRIDGE (see Bridge, p. 118). On April 13, 1684, JOHN<sup>3</sup> had been listed<sup>2,8</sup> as among the “young persons, male” who “all did publickly, by y<sup>r</sup> owne consent & desire take hold on the Covenant, wait<sup>e</sup> for more grace”<sup>2</sup> and he

\*It seems wholly possible, perhaps even probable that this Naomi<sup>3</sup> May became the wife of our JOHN<sup>2</sup> DAVENPORT. She was three years younger than JOHN<sup>2</sup>, and of his children three bore given names which occurred also among the near relatives of Naomi<sup>3</sup> May but were utterly unknown at an earlier date among the Davenports, namely Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Ephraim<sup>3</sup> and MEHITABLE<sup>3</sup>. Of these names Naomi<sup>3</sup> May had an uncle Samuel<sup>2</sup>, a brother Ephraim<sup>3</sup> and a sister Mehitable<sup>3</sup>. Naomi<sup>3</sup> May, as is shown, was living<sup>8</sup> in July, 1690, and some NAOMI bore<sup>46</sup> a son to JOHN<sup>2</sup> DAVENPORT in June, 1695. No documentary evidence has been found to either prove or disprove this suggested identity for the wife of JOHN<sup>2</sup> DAVENPORT.

\*\*A widow Rebecca May died<sup>18</sup> at Wrentham (adjoining Rehoboth) on February 13, 1758, in her 85th year which would make her the right age to have been wife to Elisha<sup>3</sup>.

†Ephraim<sup>3</sup> seems to have had an earlier wife than the one recorded above, for a daughter Hannah is assigned to him as being born<sup>17</sup> at Swansea October 1, 1704, or<sup>18</sup> February 12, 1706, with baptism on February 23.

‡The inscription on his grave stone in the Eustis Street Burial Ground is quite legible in 1939 and the map lately made by the W.P.A. assigns the number<sup>26</sup> 190 to this grave.



ROXBURY, MASSACHUSETTS

and PRUDENCE joined the church together<sup>2,8</sup> in May, 1690, though she had become a church member<sup>2</sup> on August 21, 1681, as a "maid." By the will of her grandfather WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON of Dorchester which was proved in 1668 when PRUDENCE was but four years old, she had received ten shillings.<sup>44</sup> The annual subscription which JOHN<sup>1</sup> MAY had made in 1645 toward the Roxbury Free School had been lessened by half about 1674 so that in 1690 JOHN<sup>3</sup> paid only one shilling annually on the homestead which his grandfather had owned and bound. That year he became a freeman<sup>3</sup> and in course of time<sup>6,8</sup> he served the town as selectman.

Before 1711 JOHN<sup>3</sup> had been ordained<sup>8</sup> as a deacon and served in that capacity throughout his life. In 1716 he assisted in dividing<sup>14</sup> the estate of Joseph Griffin. It appears to have been he who acquired lands in\* Woodstock, Connecticut,<sup>3</sup> as did also his brother Elisha<sup>3</sup> and at an unnamed date<sup>3</sup> JOHN<sup>3</sup> MAYS, called Sergeant and his son John<sup>4</sup>, jr. paid £20 for a ten acre tract of meadow in Woodstock which was called Connecticut Meadow or May's Meadow. JOHN<sup>3</sup> never removed from Roxbury but by 1710 his son John<sup>4</sup> had settled at Woodstock;<sup>22</sup> by about 1720 Nehemiah<sup>4</sup> had followed him there and Hezekiah<sup>4</sup> had gone to Wethersfield, while Samuel<sup>4</sup> at an unknown date had settled near Lancaster, and about 1740 Eleazer<sup>4</sup> became a resident of Pomfret, Connecticut. That left, of the sons of JOHN<sup>3</sup>, only EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> and Benjamin<sup>4</sup> as permanent residents of Roxbury. In 1723, calling himself, "Yeoman of Roxbury," JOHN<sup>3</sup> deeded<sup>18</sup> his land at Woodstock to his eldest son John<sup>4</sup>, "for parental love, good affection which he has and does bear unto his son John May of Woodstock for his farther advancement, settlement in the world and other considerations. . . ."<sup>18</sup> That same year, on September 26, 1723, JOHN<sup>3</sup> lost his wife<sup>5</sup> PRUDENCE and he spent the remaining nearly seven years of his life as a widower. In 1727 Judge Samuel Sewall appointed<sup>14</sup> JOHN<sup>3</sup> to help appraise the lands and housing of John<sup>4</sup> Ruggles (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>) of Roxbury who had died March 4, 1716.

JOHN<sup>3</sup> had probably shared his estate with each of the sons who left home at the time of their removal, or their marriage (as it is shown that he did for the eldest), for when he made his will<sup>18,26</sup> November 1, 1729, calling himself "husbandman", he divided most of his Roxbury land between EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> and Eleazer<sup>4</sup> whom he made his executors "enjoining them to receive all debts owing me and pay all just bills and funerall charges." EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> had probably been given a home, perhaps at his marriage, for the will gave to him all the testator's land on that side of Dedham Road, where stood the son's dwelling house, barns, etc. . . . part of the land on the east and lower side of Dedham Road, part of the meadow which lies by Stony River and half of the pasture land lying near Saw Mill Brook. It divided between EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> and Eleazer<sup>4</sup> the woodland and the salt marsh at Gravelly Point, specifying that the salt marsh came to him in part from his father, JOHN<sup>2</sup> MAY, and in part from his wife's father JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE, and that EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> might choose which portion he would prefer. Further, that if any of his children objected to his disposal of the woodland and marsh which had belonged to their mother, and obtained a different disposal, what they received was to be accounted as their portion, and if it exceeded what he had given them, the difference in value was to

\*A record of action<sup>4</sup> which must pertain to JOHN<sup>3</sup> (since others of that name were either dead or even younger than he) occurred on October 29, 1678, when among the men of Roxbury who took the oath of allegiance to the king were "IN<sup>o</sup> MAYES, m<sup>r</sup> IN<sup>o</sup> GORE and PE: GARDNER." Males of sixteen were eligible to take this oath and at this time JOHN<sup>3</sup> would have been nearing that age and his father's death might justify his action, as ostensible head of the family.

be returned to the executors; but if it was not so high, the executors were acquitted from making it up. In addition to his bequests to these two Roxbury sons, he gave to eight other children what would make up the proper share of each, viz., to eldest son\* John<sup>4</sup>, to Samuel<sup>4</sup>, to the heirs of daughter Prudence<sup>4</sup>, to Sarah<sup>4</sup>, to Hezekiah<sup>4</sup>, to Nehemiah<sup>4</sup> (all his Woodstock land), to daughter Mehitable<sup>4</sup> (a room in the house) and to son Benjamin<sup>4</sup>. The will was proved March 9, 1729-30, and the inventory, showing a valuation of £2,015-3-6, was filed March 30, 1730.<sup>6,18,26</sup> The evidence of business ability in this family is clear, for each succeeding generation, in this line of descent at least, showed marked increase of estate.

The children of JOHN<sup>3</sup> and PRUDENCE (BRIDGE) MAY, all born in Roxbury, were<sup>1,2,5,6,7,18</sup>

- I. John<sup>4</sup>, b. Apr. 12, bap. 19, 1685; bur. Oct. 29, 1685.
- II. John<sup>4</sup>, b. Nov. 4 or 23, bap. 28, 1686; d. at Woodstock, Conn. Mar. 1, 1770, aged 83-3-28; m. (recorded at Woodstock) Dec. 18, 1711, Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> Child (Joshua<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>).<sup>21</sup>
- III. Samuel<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 8, 1688-9; was named in his father's will Nov. 1, 1729, prob. then in the vicinity of Lancaster.<sup>6,18</sup>
- IV. Prudence<sup>4</sup>, b. Dec. 29, 1690; d. yng.
- V. EBENEZER<sup>4</sup>, see following.
- VI. Prudence<sup>4</sup>, b. Nov. 29, 1694; d. bef.<sup>37</sup> June 22, 1726; her heirs were mentioned in her father's will Nov. 1, 1729; m.<sup>5</sup> at Roxbury, Dec. 31, 1719, as his first wife, Benjamin<sup>3</sup> Winchester (John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>)<sup>37</sup> of Brookline.
- VII. Hezekiah<sup>4</sup>, b. Dec. 14, 1696; d. at Wethersfield,<sup>27</sup> Conn., Sept. 3, 1783, in 87th yr.; m. there Apr. 27, 1721, Anne<sup>2</sup> Stillman (George<sup>1</sup>). He settled there<sup>18</sup> about 1720.
- VIII. Sarah<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 29, 1698; m. as "of Barrington" at Rehoboth (int. June 18) Oct. 6, 1720, Joseph<sup>3</sup> Allen (Benjamin<sup>2</sup> of Rehoboth, William<sup>1</sup> of Salisbury).<sup>22,39</sup>
- IX. Nehemiah<sup>4</sup>, b. June 28, 1701; d. after 1742; m. Nov. 30, 1726, Mehitable Holbrook, dau. of John and Mary (Cheney) Holbrook. He removed to Woodstock, Conn.<sup>18,21</sup>
- X. \*\*Mehitable<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 27, 1702-3 or 1703-4; m. at Woodstock June 6, 1734, John<sup>4</sup> Bowen (John<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Griffith<sup>1</sup>).<sup>22</sup>
- XI. †Eleazer<sup>4</sup>, b. July 9, 1705; d. at Pomfret, Conn., Feb. 19, 1783; m. 1st at Roxbury Jan. 29, 1735-6, Dorothy Davis (William of Brookline),<sup>19</sup> m. 2nd at Milton Dec. 27, 1750, Abigail Sumner, (George<sup>2</sup>, GEORGE<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>).<sup>38</sup>
- XII. †Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, b. Mar. 1, 1707-8; d. at Roxbury Dec. 8, 1774, aged 67; m. there, 1st, May 4, 1737 or 1738, Mary<sup>4</sup> Williams (Stephen<sup>3</sup>, Stephen<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>).<sup>16</sup> He m. there, 2nd, Oct. 31, 1751, Abigail (Parker) Gore, widow of John<sup>4</sup> Gore (Ebenezer<sup>3</sup>, JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).<sup>6,22</sup>

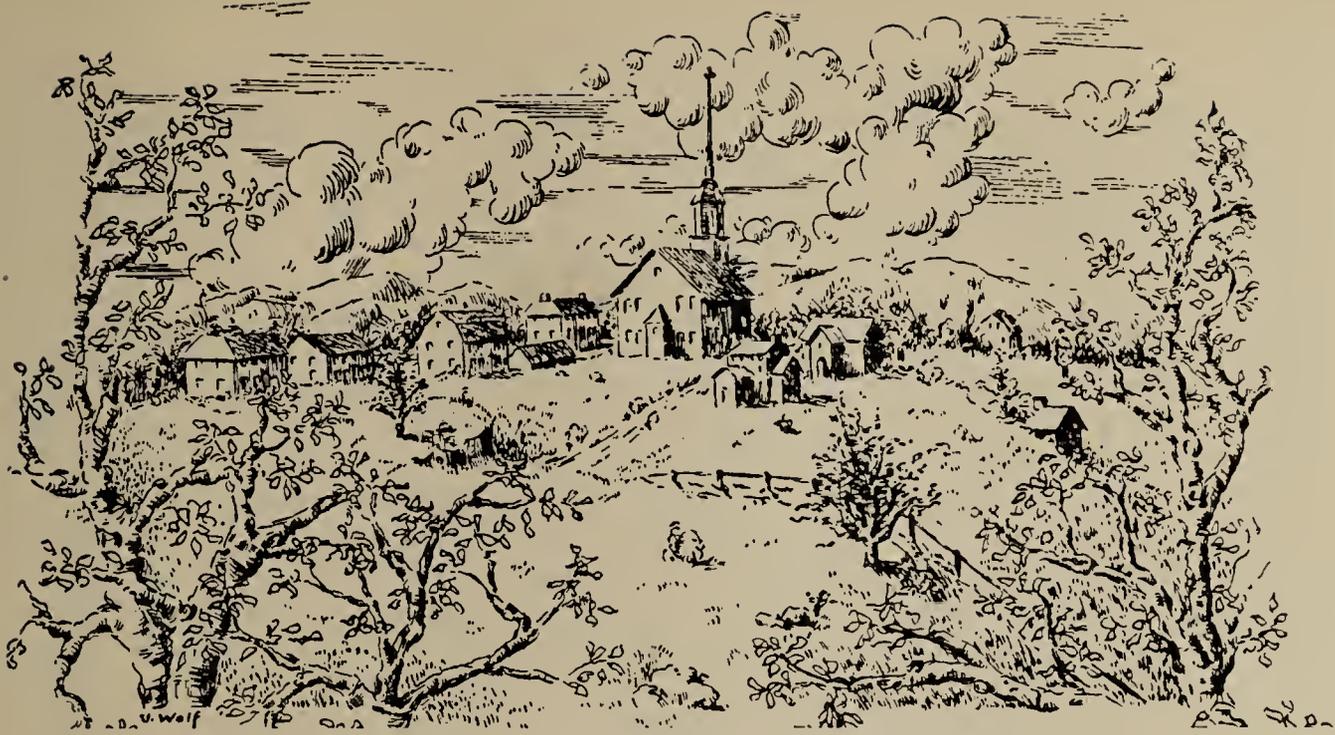
EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> MAY (*John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>5</sup> at Roxbury on October 19, 1692, and died there<sup>5</sup> on May 2, 1752, in his sixtieth year, having married there on April 3, 1718, ABIGAIL<sup>3</sup> GORE (see Gore, p. 328). He joined<sup>2</sup> Roxbury Church on April 5, 1719. This organization<sup>8</sup> was then occupying its second meeting house but in 1740-1 built a larger and very fine new building. In this third Meeting House permission was granted to members to build pews and EBENEZER<sup>4</sup>, called "Ensign" built pew number thirty-two which cost him £22-2-6 (see illustr., p.

\*John<sup>4</sup>, the eldest son, had already received £115 and by the will got about £44 more while the full portion of the other sons came to about £90 apiece.<sup>6,18</sup>

\*\*By her father's will, Mehitable<sup>4</sup>, then unmarried, was given a room in the family home as a part of her portion.<sup>26</sup>

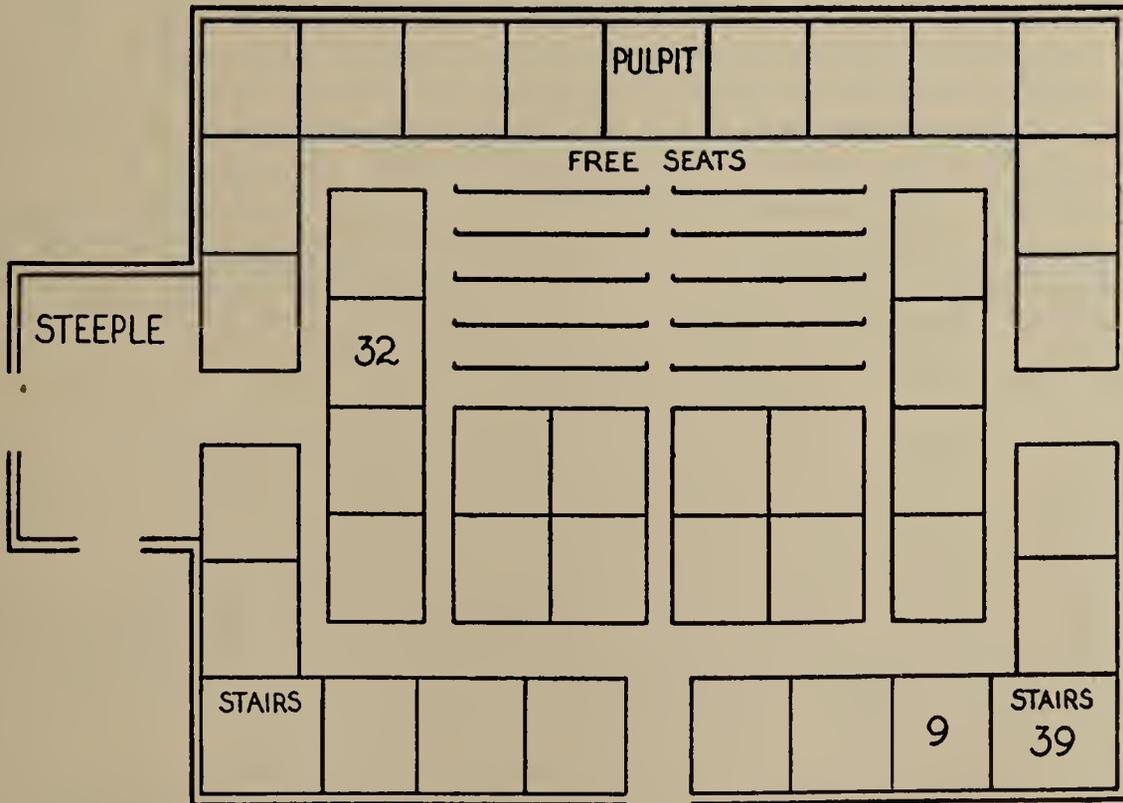
†Eleazer<sup>4</sup> and his wife joined Roxbury Church November 17, 1736. He was remarkable both for his height and weight.<sup>6,18</sup> About 1740 the family removed to Pomfret, Conn.<sup>18</sup>

‡Benjamin<sup>4</sup> joined his nephew Ebenezer<sup>5</sup> (EBENEZER<sup>4</sup>), JAMES<sup>4</sup> MEARS and his son James<sup>5</sup> and twenty others in petitioning the pastor of Roxbury Church in 1757 that they might use some more modern song book than the "Bay Song Book" (see Mears, p. 437).



MEETING HOUSE HILL, ROXBURY

*North*



Floor plan of pews in 3rd Roxbury Meeting House burned Feb. 1743-4, but replaced. Pew 9, EDWARD<sup>s</sup> SUMNER; Pew 32, EBENEZER<sup>t</sup> MAY; Pew 39, JAMES<sup>t</sup> MEARS.

419). In those days foot stoves were still in use, and after the Sabbath meetings on February 26, 1743-4, a fire completely consumed<sup>8</sup> the new church, probably from a foot stove which may have retained live coals or perhaps have become tipped over. The organization sought outside financial help and by 1746 had a fourth building constructed, a duplicate of the burned one, having held their meetings in the Brick School House in the interim. In October, 1754, in memory of their earlier loss, it was "Proposed wheather it be the Desire of this precinct that there shall be no fire brought into this meeting by stoves", and the vote was affirmative;<sup>8</sup> so heavy wraps and more or less of discomfort must have resulted during winter weather. In 1754 a committee was appointed<sup>8</sup> to obtain subscriptions toward the purchase of a new bell for the church, and in 1755, the old bell weighing about two hundred and eighty pounds was sent to England to be recast, with added metal, to provide<sup>8</sup> a bell of five or six hundred pounds.

Little is known of the personal life of EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> except that he continued to live, as had the generations before him, at Jamaica Plain in the western part of Roxbury and much of the land he inherited from his father is still identifiable because of its location<sup>18</sup> on both sides of Dedham road, on Stony River, near Sawmill Brook and the salt marsh at Gravelly Point. As has been stated, he and his brother Eleazer<sup>4</sup> were made executors of the will of their father JOHN<sup>3</sup> in 1730. Since the estate amounted to over £2,000 it argues that these executors were considered careful in business. The fact that EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> was called Ensign implies military service, perhaps in some Indian War. There is neither a will nor an administration recorded for EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> in Suffolk County.<sup>41</sup> He was survived eleven years by widow ABIGAIL who died<sup>5</sup> at Roxbury on June 26, 1763, in her seventieth year. He and his wife were buried in the Eustis Street Cemetery (see map, p. 416) and lie just behind the front fence to the left of the entrance. Many of our ancestors lie in this, the oldest burial ground in Roxbury, which was opposite the JAMES<sup>4</sup> MEARS home. The inscriptions on the stones of EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> and of his widow are quite legible<sup>26</sup> in 1939 and his has been assigned the number 190 while hers bears that of 189 on the map made lately by the W.P.A.<sup>26</sup>

The children of EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> and ABIGAIL (GORE) MAY, all born at Roxbury, were<sup>5,6,18,42</sup>

- I. Ebenezer<sup>5</sup>, b. May 10, 1719; d. prob. at Roxbury Aug. 23, 1776; m. there Mar. 6, 1752, Mrs. Susannah Parker.
- II. Abigail<sup>5</sup>, b. May 12, 1721; d. at Roxbury of smallpox Jan. 1, 1793, ae. 70; m. there Feb. 10, 1746-7, Samuel<sup>5</sup> Williams (Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>).<sup>16</sup>
- III. SAMUEL<sup>5</sup>, see following.
- IV. John<sup>5</sup>, b. Sept. 27 or 28, 1725; d. Jan. 1, 1770; m. Aug. 5, 1762, Mary Blake; res. Boston.
- V. Ephraim<sup>5</sup>, b. Jan. 23, 1727-8; d. May 28, 1797, ae. 69; m. Nov. 23, 1755, Zibiah<sup>4</sup> Cravath.\*
- VI. Moses<sup>5</sup>, b. Feb. 15, 1729-30; d. prob. at Boston July 8, 1798; m. at Roxbury Mar. 13, 1760, Mary Perrin (prob. dau. of Noah and Mary).
- VII. Sarah<sup>5</sup>, b. May 11, 1731; d. Oct. 2, 1761.

\*The Carveth-Craveth-Crevath family of Boston is supposed<sup>36</sup> to have been of Huguenot origin. Ezekiel<sup>1</sup> Craveth had married by<sup>40</sup> 1670 Mercy (Sandys) Mears (see Mears, p. 428) widow of John<sup>8</sup> (ROBERT<sup>1</sup>). Ezekiel<sup>2</sup> Craveth, born 1671, married<sup>44</sup> June 14, 1698, Elizabeth Hooks (William) and their sixth child, John<sup>3</sup> Cravath, born 1707, married<sup>44</sup> May 1, 1733, Zibiah<sup>4</sup> Trott, baptized June 28, 1713, daughter of Thomas<sup>3</sup> (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>) and Zibiah (Royall) Trott of Dorchester. The will of Thomas<sup>3</sup> Trott made in 1760 named his daughter Crevath, grandsons Thomas and Lemuel Crevath and granddaughters Zibiah, Mary and Elizabeth Crevath.<sup>44</sup> Three of these five children married into the May family, two daughters as shown herewith<sup>42</sup> marrying Ephraim<sup>5</sup> and Aaron<sup>5</sup> while Lemuel<sup>4</sup> Crevath, born<sup>18</sup> May 19, 1746, married Catharine<sup>5</sup> May, daughter of SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> by his second wife.

VIII. Aaron<sup>6</sup>, b. May 19, 1733; d. prob. at Boston Nov. 14, 1793 or 1798; m. there July 19, 1761, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Cravath.

SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> MAY (*Ebenezer<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>5</sup> at Roxbury on February 17, 1722-3, and died at Boston on August 9, 1794, aged seventy-one years, five months and twenty-three days. He married<sup>23</sup> at Roxbury<sup>5</sup> November 3, 1748, as his first wife, CATHARINE<sup>5</sup> MEARS (see Mears, p. 438) who died at Boston March 20, 1752. He married secondly at Roxbury<sup>5</sup> on October 4, 1753, Abigail<sup>5</sup> Williams\* who survived him. On May 30, 1742, SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> became a member<sup>8</sup> of the Roxbury Church, being admitted while the organization was briefly using its fine "Third Meeting House" which so soon burned. After the Fourth one was completed about 1746, he was one of several young men who acquired single seats "in the hindermost pew in the front gallery".<sup>8</sup>

After his first marriage SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> removed to Boston and carried on the business of carpentry, eventually working into a lumber and contracting business.<sup>23</sup> His home is said to have been<sup>23</sup> "a square, plain, wooden house on what is now the northerly corner of Washington\*\* and Davis Streets on Boston Neck (see map, p. 30). His home has also been referred<sup>18</sup> to as a "mansion" — perhaps from its size, since SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> had fifteen children of whom ten lived to marry. The home has also been called<sup>23</sup> "Squire MAY's great house" and it was still standing<sup>18</sup> in 1854. In the rear of his home were no streets, as now; but the tide flowing into the South Cove, brought lumber vessels to his wharf which extended across what is now Harrison Avenue at the point where Davis Street enters." Davis Street now covers<sup>18</sup> in part the area of his lumber wharf. The residents of that section were called<sup>30</sup> "South-enders" and a very definite rivalry existed between them and the North-enders, especially in the ranks of the younger generation. Incidentally, it was along this Washington Street and over the Neck to and through Roxbury (see map, p. 416) that WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES rode<sup>30</sup> to warn the colonists that the British were marching, while Paul Revere rode north, the shorter way.

It is said<sup>18,23</sup> of SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> that as an architect he had considerable skill and that he was the principal builder in 1760 of the Episcopal "Old Christ Church"† in old Cambridge,<sup>18,23</sup> which is still standing<sup>26</sup> in 1940, "symmetrical and in good taste" (see plate xxvi, p. 422). He was a man of great energy "and his older children remembered when he would take his tools on his shoulder and walk to Roxbury, even to the (Jamaica) Plain for his day's work."<sup>23</sup>

During the earlier years of his married life, SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> and his family were<sup>18,23</sup> members of the Hollis Street Church (see map, p. 30) of which the Rev. Mather Byles was pastor, but the minister's intense opposition to and ridicule of the "patriotic" movement, of which Boston was headquarters, was so displeasing‡ to SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> and his wife that soon after the Boston Massacre of March 5, 1770, the family withdrew from that church "and united themselves with the Old South Church which more than any other in the town was identified with the popular

\*She was the daughter of Joseph<sup>4</sup> Williams of Roxbury (Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Stephen<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>).<sup>16</sup>

\*\*What is now Washington Street in Boston was first called "The High Street Leading to Roxbury, then became Orange Street and finally Washington. It was laid out as a real road in 1663, then running through a field."<sup>28</sup>

†It stands at the end of Farwell Place next to the Old Burying Ground (see map, p. 416).

‡While no active Revolutionary service has been found accredited to SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> MAY, that is no proof he did not perform such. His life shows plainly where his sympathy and allegiance lay and he is recorded as serving as a juror for a maritime court in Boston in 1782 and is recognized as a patriot.<sup>49</sup>

love of liberty.”<sup>23</sup> It is related of wife Abigail, “a strong and resolute woman, that one day when a British soldier reached his hand into her open window to take something from the table, she quickly shut the window down upon his arm and held it as in a vice, until a messenger to the guard-house brought an officer, who caused the offender to be arrested.”<sup>23</sup>

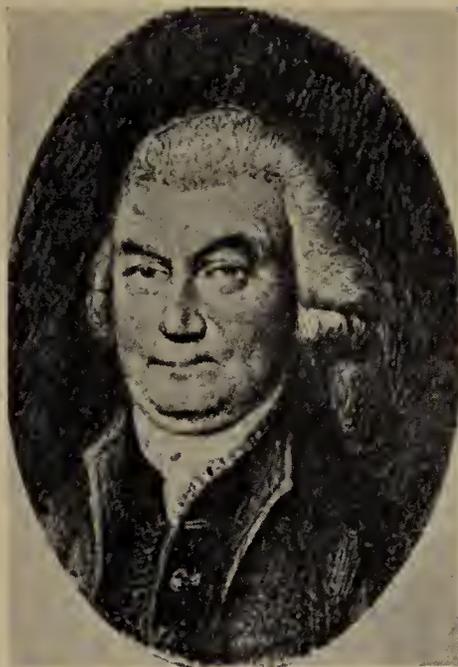
The inconvenience, irritation and menace of residence in Boston became so great during its occupation by the British that SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> removed his family to Pomfret, Connecticut, where both he and his wife had relatives and there they remained until after the evacuation of Boston by the British troops in March, 1776. When the Old South Society obtained the use of King’s Chapel for their own meetings in the autumn of 1777, this family or at least a part of it attended there.<sup>23</sup>

The first directory for Boston, published in 1789, shows the names<sup>28</sup> of SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> MAY as a merchant of Orange (now Washington) Street, of his brothers \*Moses<sup>5</sup> and Aaron<sup>5</sup>, both of Orange Street and of a John May merchant on that street. SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> is said to have been a very generous man, and helpful to the needy. His widow, who bore him thirteen children, of whom nine lived to marry, survived him seventeen years.

His will dated<sup>41</sup> December 3, 1793, was proved on August 26, 1794, when he was called “Esquire”. The inventory of his estate showed a valuation of £2,244 in addition to certain stocks and bonds of uncertain worth. It disclosed the furnishings of the Great Room, Little Room, Kitchen, Front Chamber, Back Chamber, Little Chamber, Garrets and Cellar. Among the many items mentioned were a mahogany desk valued at £7-10; a looking glass, £3; a clock £12; sofa, £7-10-9; leather bottomed chairs £20-14; chest with “draws” 69 shillings; an easy chair, 54 shillings; book case and books £4; brass andirons etc., etc. The estate paid to WILLIAM DAWES a balance due, of £5-0-6. The house and wharf were valued at £825 or the wharf and stores at £800. The will made Joseph<sup>6</sup>, the eldest son, its sole executor; it gave to widow Abigail “the improvement of my mansion house and garden with all other buildings at the place where I now live; the use and income of all personal estate during her widowhood”, and provided for the support of his unmarried minor daughter Sarah<sup>6</sup> and of his minor son Samuel<sup>6</sup>. The will divided his real estate between Joseph<sup>6</sup> and Samuel<sup>6</sup> of whom the former received “the land, wharf, flatts and Buildings thereon between William Marshall’s and the lot which I sold Mr. Lemuel Cravath . . .” while the younger son received the home property after the death of the widow and both brothers were to supply their sister Sarah<sup>6</sup> with \$25.00 in silver annually until her marriage when Samuel<sup>6</sup> was to give her \$300.00 in silver. This suggests the probable approximate provision which had been made for the other daughters as they married. The testator’s daughter MEHITABLE (MAY) DAWES had died only six weeks before his will was made and one of its provisions was that after the re-marriage or death of his widow his personal estate should be divided into nine equal parts of which one part should go to the children of his “late daughter MEHITABLE” and the other parts to his surviving children Abigail<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>6</sup>, Martha<sup>6</sup>, Lucretia<sup>6</sup>, Mary<sup>6</sup>, Sarah<sup>6</sup>, Louisa<sup>6</sup>, and Samuel<sup>6</sup>. Widow Abigail died on December 29, 1811, and on March 16, 1812, a final distribution of the personal estate was made when the nine equal

\*Moses<sup>5</sup> kept a store on Orange (Washington) near Dover to sell British, French and West Indian goods or to trade them for produce from the farms.<sup>18,28</sup>

SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> MAY



*Photo courtesy Edward Dempsey*

Christ church in Cambridge in the planning and construction of which SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> MAY bore a part.

PSALM xxii, xxiii

25 Concerning thee shall be my prayse  
in the great assembly:

before them that him reverence  
performe my vowes will I.

25 The meek shall eat & be suffic'd:

Iehovah prayse shall they  
that doe him seek: your heart shall live  
unto perpetuall aye.

27 All ends of th'earth remember shall  
and turne unto the Lord:  
and trace all heathen-families  
to worship shall accord.

28 Because unto Iehovah doth  
the kingdome appertaine:  
and he among the nations  
is ruler Sovereigne.

29 Earths-fat-ones, eat & worship shall  
all who to dust descend,  
(though none can make alive his soule)  
before his face shall bend.

30 With service a posterity  
him shall attend upon,  
to God it shall accounted bee  
a generation.

31 Come shall they, & his righteousnes  
by them declar'd shall bee,  
unto a people yet unborne,  
that done this thing hath hee.

23 A Psalm of David.

The Lord to mee a shepheard is,  
want therefore shall not I.

3 Hee

PSALME. xxiii, xxxiii.

2 Hee in the folds of tender-graffe,  
doth cause mee downe to lie:

To waters calme me gently leads  
Restore my soule doth hee:

3 he doth in paths of righteousness:  
for his names sake leade mee.

4 Yea though in valley of deaths shade  
I walk, none ill I'le feare:

because thou art with mee, thy rod,  
and staffe my comfort are.

5 For mee a table thou hast spread,  
in presence of my foes:

thou dost annoynt my head with oyle,  
my cup it over-flowes.

6 Goodnes & mercy surely shall  
all my dayes follow mee:

and in the Lords house I shall dwell  
so long as dayes shall bee.

Psalme 24

A psalme of david.

The earth Iehovahs is,  
and the fulnesse of it:

the habitable world, & they  
that there upon doe sit.

2 Because upon the seas,  
hee hath it firmly layd:

and it upon the water-floods  
most solidly hath stayd.

3 The mountaine of the Lord,  
who shall thereto ascende

and in his place of bolynes,

3

who

portions showed a value of \$147.45 each. Samuel<sup>6</sup> signed in behalf of the children of Lucretia<sup>6</sup>, deceased, and his brother and sisters signed for themselves.<sup>41</sup>

The children of SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> and CATHARINE (MEARS) MAY, both born in Boston were<sup>18,19,23</sup>

- I. Mary<sup>6</sup>, b. Dec. 1, 1749; d. Jan. 15, 1750.
  - II. MEHITABLE<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 6, 1751; d. at Boston Oct. 28, 1793, m. there May 3, 1768, WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> DAWES (see Dawes, p. 38).<sup>19,24</sup>
- The children of SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> MAY by his second wife, Abigail<sup>5</sup> Williams, of whom the first five and the last were recorded in Boston (and probably several others born there) were<sup>18,19,23</sup>
- III. Abigail<sup>6</sup>, b. Oct. 13, 1754; d.<sup>25</sup> Jan. 13, 1824, aged 69; m.<sup>18</sup> Dec. 9, 1772, or<sup>19</sup> May 16, 1773, her father's first cousin \*Col. John<sup>5</sup> May (Eleazer<sup>4</sup>, JOHN<sup>3</sup>, JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) who d. in July, 1812, aged 68.
  - IV. Samuel<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 17, 1756; d. Dec. 2, 1762.
  - V. Catharine<sup>6</sup>, b. Sept. 27, 1757; d. s.p. Oct. 4, 1788; m.<sup>19</sup> Dec. 6, 1774, or<sup>18</sup> Jan. 31, 1775, Lemuel<sup>4</sup> Cravath (John<sup>3</sup>, Ezekiel<sup>2</sup>, Ezekiel<sup>1</sup>).<sup>44</sup> See note, p. 420.
  - VI. Joseph<sup>6</sup>, b. Mar. 25, 1760; d. in Boston<sup>25</sup> Feb. 27, 1841, aged 81; m. there<sup>18,19</sup> Dec. 28, 1784, Dorothy<sup>6</sup> Sewall (Samuel<sup>5</sup>, Joseph<sup>4</sup>, Judge Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Henry<sup>1</sup>).<sup>29</sup>
  - VII. John<sup>6</sup>, b. Dec. 3 or 5, 1761; d. Dec. 3, 1762.
  - VIII. Martha<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 23, 1763; d. June 9, 1834; m. Sept. 13, 1785, Judge John<sup>6</sup> Frothingham of Portland, Me., son of John<sup>4</sup> (Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup> of Charlestown).<sup>32</sup>
  - IX. Lucretia<sup>6</sup>, b. Apr. 14, 1765; d. July 15, 1811; m.<sup>19</sup> Mar. 28 or<sup>18</sup> May 1, 1787, Azor G. Archbold (Francis).
  - X. Samuel<sup>6</sup>, b. Apr. 23, 1767; d. Sept. 22, 1768.
  - XI. Mary<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 14, 1769; d. Nov. 20, 1853; m.<sup>19</sup> Aug. 7 or<sup>18</sup> Oct. 2, 1787, Isaac<sup>5</sup> Davenport (Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Samuel<sup>3</sup>, JOHN<sup>2</sup>, THOMAS<sup>1</sup>).<sup>43</sup>
  - XII. Howell<sup>6</sup>, b. Mar. 6, 1771; d. May 21, 1771.
  - XIII. Sarah<sup>6</sup>, b. June 18, 1772; d. at Boston July 12, 1849; m. there<sup>18</sup> Oct. 15, 1797, Capt. John Holland.
  - XIV. Louisa<sup>6</sup>, b. Dec. 14, 1773; d. Jan. 18, 1832; m. Dec. 15, 1793, Benjamin<sup>5</sup> Goddard (John<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>25</sup>
  - XV. Samuel<sup>6</sup>, b. Dec. 4, 1776; d. in Boston Feb. 23, 1870, aged 93 yrs., 3 mo.; m. July 19, 1809, Mary<sup>6</sup> Goddard (Joseph<sup>5</sup>, John<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>25</sup> He was a very capable and successful business man.

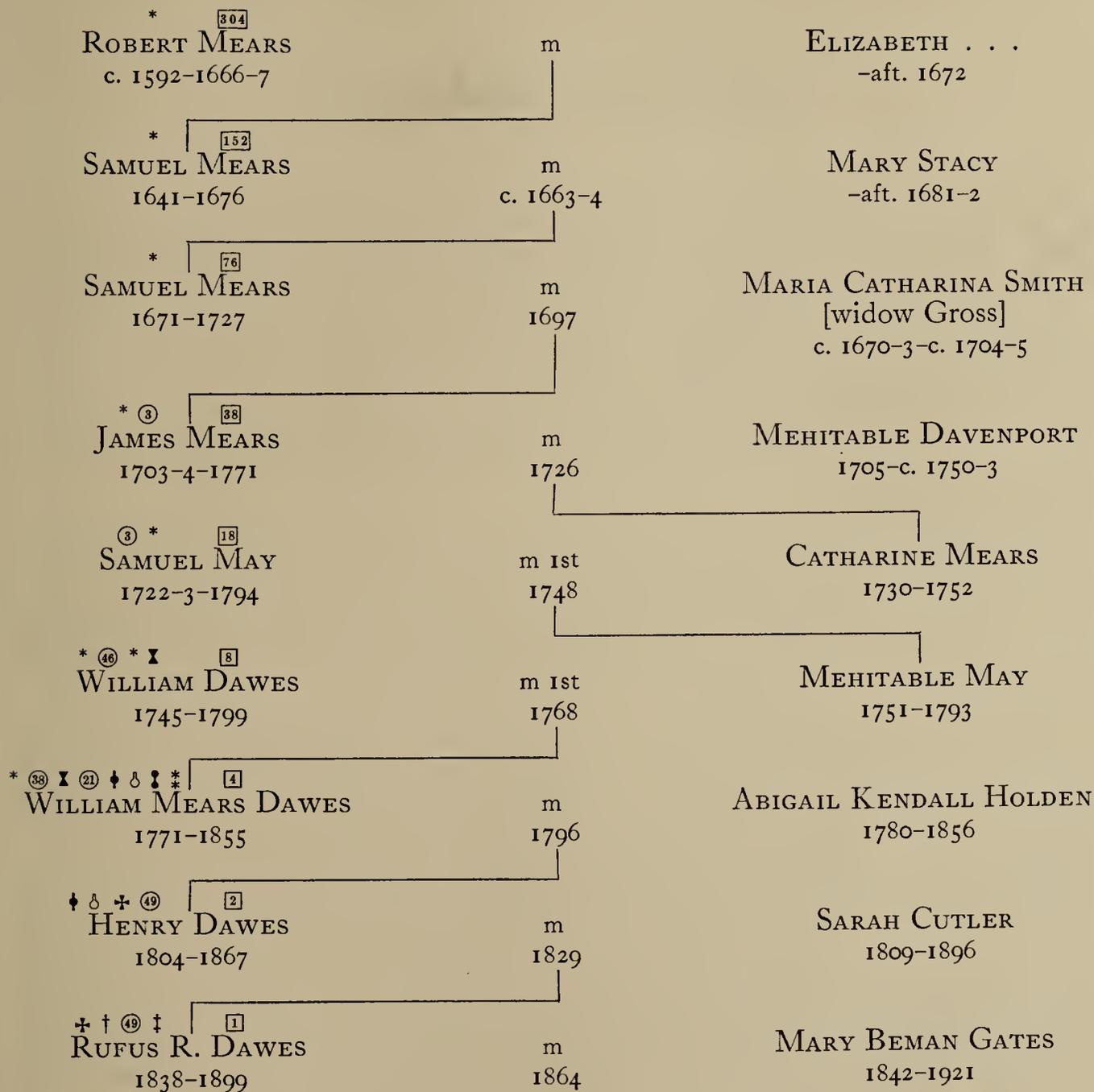
\*Col. John<sup>5</sup> May, born in Pomfret, Conn., in 1748, was a colorful figure. He came<sup>18,33</sup> to Boston as a youth, took part in the Boston Teaparty on December 16, 1773, when the rebels emptied three hundred and forty-two chests of tea into the sea from Griffith's Wharf and served in the Revolution. He made two trips to "the Ohio country" in 1788 and 1789 and is said to have built the first frame house near the present site of Marietta, Ohio.<sup>18,33</sup>

## REFERENCES

1. Savage's Dictionary III, 183-4, 587; Pope's Pioneers of Mass., 1900, p. 308.
2. Boston Record Commissioners Report, VI, 84, 88, 92, 95, 97, 100, 105-8, 122-5, 127-9, 139-41, 175, 177, 179-80, 186.
3. Ibid., VI, 12, 35, 55, 61-2, 65; XXIX, 159.
4. Publications of the Colonial Society of Mass., XXX, 970; Records of Massachusetts Bay, V, 191-4.
5. Vital Records of Roxbury, I, 237-40; II, 274-5, 588, 591.
6. May Genealogy, Samuel May, 1878, pp. 1-5, 120-2; New England Register, XV, 68-9, 71-2; Vital Records of Wrentham, II, 474.
7. "My Ancestors", Lyman May Paine, 1914, pp. 70, 92-7.
8. History of the First Church of Roxbury, W. E. Thwing, 1908, pp. 56, 60-1, 67, 118, 123, 126, 131, 139-42, 149-51, 155.
9. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 151.
10. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 378; IV, pt. 1, 461.
11. History of Roxbury, C. M. Ellis, 1847, pp. 31, 37-9, 56-7, 88, 124; History of the Grammar School, C. K. Dillaway, 1860, frontispiece, pp. 12, 30-2.
12. New England Register, XLVIII, 460.
13. Suffolk Deeds (pub.) I, 144; V, 106; VII, 330-1, 322-3.
14. . . . Parker . . . Ruggles Ancestors and Descendants, J. W. Linzee, 1913, pp. 174-5, 345, 494.
15. Descendants of Joseph Peck, I. B. Peck, 1868, pp. 246-7; Vital Records of Rehoboth, pp. 252, 851.

16. . . . Family of Williams . . . , S. W. Williams, 1847, pp. 33, 35, 288; . . . Robert Williams of Roxbury, H. Williams, 1934, pp. 51, 63, 77, 153, 158.
17. Chaffee Genealogy, W. H. Chaffee, 1909, pp. 44, 67-8; History of Woodstock, Conn., C. W. Bowen, 1930, III, 223.
18. May Gene., pp. 2-16, 51, 58, 60, 70, 84, 142.
19. Ibid., 4-10, 12-16, 51; B. R. C. R. XXIV, 271, 277, 284, 289, 292, 299, 300, 327; XXX, 8, 136, 163, 182, 262, 432, 436, 458.
20. Report on Massachusetts Public Records . . . 1889, p. 252.
21. Child Genealogy, E. Child, 1881, pp. 418-21.
22. Bowen's Woodstock, 1926, I, 4, 60-1; 1930, II, 126, 507; 1930, III, 473; 1932, IV, 149, 215; 1935, VI, 11, 16.
23. New England Register, V, 394; XXVII, 14, 113-21.
24. Dawes Genealogy, H. W. Holland, 1878, p. 82.
25. History of Watertown, H. Bond, 1860, pp. 241-2; Inscriptions of Central Burying Ground, Boston Common, O. Codman, 1917, pp. 109-10.
26. Research by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Suffolk Probates, No. 5918, recorded XXVII, 497, 531; also Roxbury Cemetery.
27. History of Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, I, 286; II, 500.
28. "Boston Notions", N. Dearborn, 1848, pp. 47, 53, 257, maps facing pp. 176, 279, 412.
29. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 5, V, xxx-xxxvi.
30. Crooked and Narrow Streets of Boston, A. H. Thwing, 1920, pp. 40, 78, 242-3.
31. Vital Records of Roxbury, II, 275, 316, 611; Savage, III, 391; Pepper Genealogy, E. C. Landon, 1932, p. 15; Seaver Family, W. B. Trask, 1872, p. 5.
32. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, pp. 381-95.
33. Journal and Letters of Col. John May of Boston, ed. by Rev. R. S. Edes, 1873; New England Register, XXVII, 14-24; XXX, 43-9.
34. Ibid., XXVII, 113-21; Annals of King's Chapel, H. W. Foote, 1896, II, 483-6; The Loyalists of Mass., E. A. Jones, 1930, pp. 76-8; History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, O. A. Andrews, 1879, II, 25-6; May Genealogy, pp. v, 12.
35. History of the Ancient and Honorable . . . II, 132.
36. B. R. C. R. IX, XXIV, XXX see indices.
37. Winchester Notes, Mrs. F. W. Hotchkiss, 1912, pp. 15, 28-9.
38. . . . Descendants of WILLIAM SUMNER . . . W. S. Appleton, 1879, pp. 6, 205.
39. Vital Records of Rehoboth, p. 5.
40. Savage, IV, 13; Pope, p. 400; Early Settlers of Rowley, G. B. Blodgette and A. E. Jewett, 1933, p. 324; B. R. C. R., IX, 118, 236, 243, 246; XXIV, 228, 242; XXX, 16, 54; Suffolk Deeds, IX, 150-1.
41. Search by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Suffolk Probates No. 20328, XCIII, 296; CXI, 312.
42. New England Register, LXXXV, 462.
43. History of Milton, A. K. Teele, 1887, pp. 172, 562-4.
44. William and Anne Robinson, Their Ancestors and Descendants, E. D. Harris, 1890, pp. 1-6, 14-5, 19, 21, 48-9; New England Royalls, E. D. Harris, 1885, pp. 3-10; B. R. C. R., IX, 118, 243; XXIV, 47, 228, 242; XXX, 16, 54, 436; Pope, p. 400; Libby's Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, pp. 347-8.
45. Weld Collections, C. F. Robinson, 1938, pp. 45-40.
46. New England Register, XXXIII, 28.
47. Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, I, 420-2; Annals and Reminiscences of Jamaica Plain, H. M. Whitcomb, 1897, pp. 21, 26, 41-5 and frontispiece.
48. History of Canton, D. T. V. Huntoon, 1893, pp. 214-6.
49. D. A. R. Lineage Book, CLVI, 287-8, No. 155916.

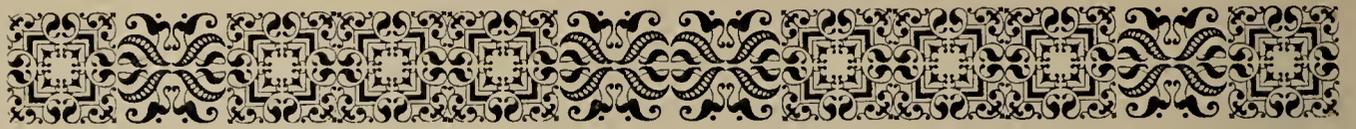
# MEARS



- ③ Roxbury
- \* Boston
- ④⑥ Worcester
- X Marlborough
- ③⑧ Sudbury

- ②① Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ♂ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.

- † Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## MEARS (*Meares*)

**R**OBERT<sup>1</sup> MEARS, born in England about 1592, had married there by 1628 ELIZABETH\* (—) and in 1635 emigrated with her and their two eldest sons on the "Abigail" of London, Richard Hackwell, Master.<sup>1</sup> The passenger list on this vessel for New England was made up between June 4 and July 24, and she sailed from Plymouth, England, as her last port, about August 1 with two hundred and twenty persons, and many cattle aboard. ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MEARS, called husbandman, aged forty-three, his wife ELIZABETH, aged thirty with their two sons, aged six years and three months, respectively, had as fellow passengers<sup>1</sup> EDMUND<sup>1</sup> FREEMAN and WILLIAM<sup>2</sup> POTTER with their respective families (Dawes-Gates, II, 349, 671).

The "Abigail" reached Boston about October 8 infected with smallpox,<sup>1</sup> and considering the more than two month period in which the passengers had lived in cramped, unwholesome quarters, with a limited diet which invariably threatened scurvy, and with the seasickness which would burden the majority taking passage in the small unstable vessels of that day, it does seem as though a threat of smallpox at the end of the voyage would have left them utterly and hopelessly discouraged.

ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MEARS settled permanently at Boston where in December, 1635, he received<sup>7</sup> an allotment of land as one of the "now inhabitants" and in January, 1635-6, was listed as one of the proprietors.<sup>5</sup> It is claimed<sup>6</sup> that he and his wife joined the Boston Church on July 24, 1636, as she really did,<sup>5</sup> but there has been found no evidence that ROBERT<sup>1</sup> became either a church member or a freeman. In his new home he took on the trade of a tailor and was so designated throughout his life. His name is very frequently found in the records as abutting on various properties,<sup>7,9,12</sup> thus showing that he owned a goodly number of pieces of land. One of these is recorded as lying "in the forme of a Tryangle".<sup>7</sup> He had owned at least one dwelling beside the one in which he lived, for in January, 1639-40, he sold to widow Dorothy Bill and her son James "his house and gardenstead under it Wherein they now doe dwell".<sup>7,11</sup> In September, 1648, he purchased from James Penniman two or more properties of which one was a house with spacious grounds

\*It is proved that wife ELIZABETH came from the vicinity of Boughton, Northamptonshire, England, for in May, 1670, after she was widowed, calling herself about sixty-eight, she and James<sup>1</sup> Johnson, aged about fifty-nine, both then of Boston, were witnesses<sup>2</sup> in court. The case concerned Ann (Mattle or Mattly) Douglas, wife of William<sup>1</sup> Douglas of New London, Connecticut, from which place Ann journeyed to Boston to prove in court that she was the sole heir of Thomas Mattle and also of his son, Robert Mattle, both deceased, and both earlier of Ringstead, Northamptonshire, England. By the testimony of widow ELIZABETH MEARES and of James<sup>1</sup> Johnson, they both came from Little Boughton, Northamptonshire and had known Ann there as the daughter of Thomas and sister of Robert Mattle, both deceased, and they had known her ever since her arrival in New England,<sup>2</sup> about 1640, her home having been in Boston until about 1660. There was also a very close association between the Mears and the Oliver families and extensive effort has been made by some students to find evidence tending to place ELIZABETH MEARS, wife of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> among the children of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Oliver but her early residence being identical with that of James<sup>1</sup> Johnson seems, to date, the more significant.

where he made his home for the remainder of his life and divided the tract between his two sons by his will in 1666-7. This property lay on the west side of Court (now Tremont) Street opposite the end of Hanover Street<sup>7,11</sup> (see map, p. 30) and measured<sup>10</sup> eighty-five feet on Tremont and two hundred and eighty-four and one-half feet on the south side which adjoined the grounds of Gov. Endicott with Rev. John Cotton's home next to the south. He also had a grant of forty acres which he sold<sup>13</sup> to William Hibbins before that man's death in 1654. ROBERT<sup>1</sup> frequently witnessed documents and took inventories but no evidence is seen of his holding office or taking part in public affairs which further argues that he lacked church membership and, consequently, the franchise and the right to hold office.

ROBERT<sup>1</sup> and his family would have shared in the extreme excitement,<sup>40</sup> and possibly in the loss, occasioned by Boston's first "Great Fire" which started on January 14, 1652-3, on the north side of State Street and destroyed many homes and their contents, including those of the Rev. John Wilson and of the Selleck, Blackleech and Sheath families. This latter family also lost the lives of three young children. Gov. Winthrop wrote, "It was the most dreadful fire that I ever saw by reason of the barrel of gunpowder which they had in their houses which made men fearful to come near them."<sup>40</sup>

In 1663 the family of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> endured the sorrow of the death of the eldest son\* John<sup>2</sup> at the age of twenty-eight. His will<sup>4</sup> dated September 26, 1663, provided for his wife and for an expected child who was born a month after its father's death. It provided that if his wife married again her next husband should give up "to her child she now goes with . . ." the house and ground the testator was leaving. It made his "dear vnkell, James Johnson" his executor, gave to "my father MEARES my best suit and Cloak, and four Cord of wood, with my Weding hat. To my dear mother MEARS, my Chest of drawers, two paire of sheets, and bed ticking. To my brother SAMUELL MEARS, a pair of blew curtains & my 2d suit and coat to James Meers with my musket and arms." The inventory of his estate totaled over £231 and because his desire as to the disposition of his home was not clear, the court took depositions from several people, including his wife, his mother ELIZABETH and his "uncle" James Johnson. It seemed that the expected child was to have the property when grown and if the widow married again her husband must give it up to that child, but if the widow and child both died, SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and James<sup>2</sup>, brothers of the deceased, were to possess it.<sup>4</sup>

ROBERT<sup>1</sup> was in very comfortable circumstances, leaving an estate<sup>3</sup> valued at over £349. His will dated February 20, 1666, and probated September 10, 1667, called him "aged" and he would have been about seventy-five. He was a considerate man for the document read, "After my funeral charges I Giue vnto my wife ELIZABETH MEERES, my whole Estate, till the day of her death, to bee soly at her disposal, & if need require to sell any part thereof to supply her necessity, & after her decease to bee disposed of. . . ." Then he provided for the heirs (widow and child John<sup>3</sup>) of his deceased son John<sup>2</sup>. It gave "To my sonne SAMUELL MEERS, the house which I now dwell in, & halfe the orchard, & halfe the piece of Ground aboue the Orchard, & the way that goes into the Orchard, which is at the south End, the said house adjoining, the Grounds of the late Esq<sup>r</sup> Gover [Endicott]." He divided various

\*A "Meares" who was probably<sup>38</sup> John<sup>2</sup> (ROBERT<sup>1</sup>) of Boston attended Harvard with the class of 1661 but did not graduate. There are records<sup>38</sup> by the steward during the years 1657-9 showing both debits and credits to "Meares".

other tracts between the two sons SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and James<sup>2</sup> and gave to the latter "my other dwelling house, that is within my yard". The well that was within the yard he bequeathed to both SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and James<sup>2</sup> "to bee as much usefull to one as to the other". After his wife's death the estate was to be divided between these two brothers; he made his "beloved wife, my sole Executrix" with "my beloued Brother James Johnson", one of the overseers, and he signed the document with his mark.

Apparently widow ELIZABETH was a capable person. As early as August, 1641, she and John Oliver had been witnesses to a deed.<sup>13</sup> In 1668 the pasture land of "widdow MEERS" is mentioned<sup>13</sup> and on June 27, 1672, "ELIZABETH MEARES Relict of ROBERT MEARES Late of Boston Tailor" with her son SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and his wife MARY, and with son James<sup>2</sup> and his wife Elizabeth, all of Boston, sold for £30 their pasture near the Mill Pond.<sup>14</sup> On July 24, 1672, widow ELIZABETH again sold land<sup>14</sup> but no subsequent record of her has been found.

The known children of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH (—) MEARS, the first two born in England and the others in Boston, were:<sup>1,3,5,6,8</sup>

- i. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, ae. 6 in 1636;<sup>1</sup> d. before 1641.
- ii. John<sup>2</sup>, b. 1635; d. Nov. 12, 1663, Boston; m. abt. 1660\* Mercy<sup>2</sup> Sandys (Henry<sup>1</sup>)<sup>49</sup> who evidently\*\* m. 2nd by 1670 Ezekiel<sup>1</sup> Carveth and bore him a son<sup>8,18</sup> Ezekiel<sup>2</sup> on July 7, 1671. Presumably they lived in the home of her first husband for a while but on July 10, 1674, with James<sup>2</sup> and SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> MEARS as witnesses,<sup>18</sup> Ezekiel<sup>1</sup> Carveth, in accordance with the requirement of the will of John<sup>2</sup> Mears, deeded or leased<sup>14</sup> the home and furnishings left by John<sup>2</sup> Mears to Sibella (—) Sandys, widow of Henry<sup>1</sup> for the term of eight years for money already disbursed and for future disbursement for the maintenance and education of her grandson, John<sup>3</sup> Mears, son of John<sup>2</sup>, deceased, the said eight years covering the time until the youth would be of age.<sup>14</sup> In October, 1676, young John<sup>3</sup> of Boston asked the court<sup>36</sup> to appoint guardians and the court named his uncle James<sup>2</sup> Mears and Dea. Robert Sanderson. The youth soon went to England and died in London<sup>36</sup> for in Jan. 1677-8, a Samuel Legg who cared for young John<sup>3</sup>, during his sickness and saw to his burial, sued James<sup>2</sup> Mears, the youth's guardian, for £12 which he had advanced.<sup>36</sup> Two great grand daughters of Ezekiel<sup>1</sup> and Mercy (Sandys) Carveth married two sons of EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> MAY<sup>49</sup> (see May, pp. 420).
- iii. Stephen<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>8</sup> December 10, 1637; bap. Dec. 25, 1638; d.<sup>8</sup> Dec. 10, 1661; at age of 18 he testified, then living in Cambridge.<sup>15</sup>
- iv. SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- v. James<sup>2</sup>, b. March 9, bap. Mar. 31, 1644; d.<sup>16</sup> Oct. 8, 1712, aged 69; m. by 1665-6, Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Mellows (Edward<sup>2</sup>, Abraham<sup>1</sup>)<sup>7</sup> and had eleven children. He was called feltmaker and hatter, was prominent in public affairs, owned considerable property<sup>25</sup> and in 1704 sold to the Huguenot Society the land on which they soon built the French Chapel (see map, p. 30). It is a matter<sup>6</sup> of interest that in 1785 this French Chapel passed into the hands of the Roman Catholics and that in it, on November 2, 1788, mass was celebrated for the first time in Boston.<sup>6</sup> In 1689, during Andros' regime,<sup>39</sup> James<sup>2</sup>, made a small contribution toward the erection of a structure in which to hold Church of England services, but in 1699 was one of the founders of the Brattle Street Church (see map, p. 30). He very frequently became surety or bondsman for persons† in litigation.<sup>37</sup>

\*Mercy<sup>2</sup> Sandys, born March 24, 1642, at Rowley,<sup>49</sup> daughter of Henry<sup>1</sup> and Sybil (or Sibella) Sands married as stated above (see May, p. 415) but there has been published another (but untenable) theory as to the second marriage of the widow of John<sup>2</sup> Mears. A Mary Mears, widow<sup>17</sup> of a John Mears (who was by her uncle Thomas Dinsdale, called a daughter of his sister)<sup>17</sup> married William<sup>1</sup> Kent of Boston but two men deposed<sup>17</sup> that this Mary was a widow in 1661, and she is said to have married Kent in 1662, so the John Mears who had been her husband was another man than John<sup>2</sup> (ROBERT<sup>1</sup>) who did not die until 1663.

\*\*After the death of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> MEARS his estate owed<sup>18</sup> a certain sum to his "sister Mercy Carvat."<sup>18 20</sup>

†One case where James<sup>2</sup> Mears became surety for an appearance in Court at the next session, pertained to a man most unfortunately named. One William Dinely died in 1638, and his widow gave birth to a posthumous son whom she most inconsiderately named "Fathergone Dinely", and he it was for whom James<sup>2</sup> Mears was surety.<sup>37</sup>

SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> MEARS (*Robert*<sup>1</sup>) was born<sup>5</sup> at Boston on June 7, 1641, baptized<sup>8</sup> June 13 (at the First Church, where his mother had membership) and died there<sup>20</sup> intestate in April, 1676. He married about 1663-4 MARY<sup>2</sup> STACY\* (see Stacy, p. 560) who survived him, was appointed administratrix for his estate<sup>6,20</sup> and who married secondly before February 13, 1681-2 (—) Fitch. MARY brought to her new home a dower which was increased in 1669 at the death of her mother by "a beade & a blanket & a Couerlide and bollster & a pillow & a payer of Sheatts & a payer of pillowbears & one of my wearing coouttes" [coats?].

SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> MEARS received by his father's will the home earlier occupied by that father and half of various other tracts of land as has been stated. He witnessed a deed 1666-7 from James Johnson to Peter Oliver.<sup>18</sup> He and his wife joined his mother and brother<sup>14</sup> in June, 1672, in disposing of pasture land earlier owned by ROBERT<sup>1</sup> for which they received £30 and he witnessed in July, 1672, the latest known document signed by his mother.<sup>14</sup> He also witnessed the document whereby Ezekiel<sup>1</sup> Carveth turned over the home and furnishings once belonging to John<sup>2</sup> Mears for the benefit of the latter man's son John<sup>3</sup>. SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> was a carpenter and on May 4, 1674, he and his wife MARY sold for £40 to his brother James<sup>2</sup>, acknowledging the transaction November 23 following, one-half of a pasture which he acquired by their father's will.<sup>14</sup>

The life of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> covered the period when several serious problems had to be faced. The threat from England of the loss of the colony's charter (see Appendix "B," p. 694) must have constituted an ever increasing fear, and the threat of annihilation of the whites by the Indians gradually became a dominating menace. Capt. James Oliver's company which was formed<sup>19</sup> in November-December, 1675, in preparation for the Narragansett Campaign during King Philip's War\*\* was made up in part of Boston men and among these SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> served as sergeant. So, like PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM and the rest of the "army of one thousand men" who went out to save the white race in the new land, SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> would have traveled from Dedham Plain (see map, p. 618) where they assembled, down to Wickford, now in Rhode Island. On December 18-20 he would have taken part in that wearying march through the snow to the Narragansett Fort, in the terrible battle which followed and in the heroic but utterly exhausting eighteen mile trip back through ever deepening snow, with the uninjured carrying the dead and severely wounded and supporting those with lesser hurts (see Upham, pp. 623). Most if not all who missed injury in battle were partly frozen before they reached camp. No record is seen of injury to SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and he may have recovered sufficiently from the exposure to take part in the "Hungry March" northward (see Woodward, p. 670) and to briefly continue his military service for the remaining four months of his life<sup>20</sup> for there was due him on June 24, 1676, £2-9 shillings for some period of service in the company of Maj. Savage who had been succeeded in command by Lt. Benjamin Gillam. One can but feel, however, that the death of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>,

\*An item<sup>55</sup> which *may* pertain to the name "Mears" is found in the English will of one Nymphas Stace of Epping, co. Essex under date of February 3, 1668-9, for the unusual given name of "Nymphas" was used not only in England but repeatedly in our Stacy family in New England. The reference is to "Sister Ann Mare" which might be a variant of Mears, suggesting acquaintance between the two families in England as a background for their inter-marriage in New England.

\*\*During and following King Philip's War it became the habit of the colonists to sell as servants the captive Indian women, old men and children and many families made such purchases. In September, 1676, James<sup>2</sup> Mears acquired four such servants, paying £3-10 for two and £2-8 for the other two.<sup>19</sup>

leaving no will and recorded merely as "in April 1676" may have resulted from the hardships of his military service. It left widow MARY with the care of six children<sup>20</sup> of whom but four are recorded and they ranged in age from three to eleven.

On July 19, 1676, administration on the estate of<sup>20</sup> SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> was granted "unto MARY, his relict on behalf herself and six children . . ." and on January 3, 1676-7, the court "Setled MEARES his Estate" of<sup>20</sup> £160 by giving<sup>36</sup> widow MARY and her heirs the whole moveable estate and the use of the house and land until the "eldest Child left by S<sup>d</sup> MEARES come of age, and then a further division to bee made: And the house & land is hereby Secured for the paym<sup>t</sup> of debts; and m<sup>r</sup> William Adams\* and her other surety\*\* for her true administracion are discharged from their bond."<sup>36</sup>

About the time of her husband's death, MARY, alone responsible now for her young children, passed through a most trying experience<sup>41</sup> in the Boston fire of 1676. It started at five o'clock A. M. in a house owned by one Wakefield and occupied by tailor Moors near the Red Lion Inn (see map, p. 30) just north of Richmond Street. An apprentice who had been called before daylight and left alone, fell asleep and his candle set fire to the house. Within four hours, because of a strong wind, forty-six dwellings and various other buildings, including the North Meeting House and the home of Rev. Increase Mather, its pastor had gone up in smoke. To the minister's relief, less than one hundred of his over one thousand books were lost. During this fire, the town employed, probably for the first time, the expedient of blowing up buildings to check its progress, reimbursing the owners for their loss. From 1677 for several years repeated attempts were made by incendiaries to burn the town, and in 1679 ten persons were exiled as suspects.<sup>41</sup> In that year the worst fire, yet endured, visited Boston, destroying one hundred and fifty buildings<sup>42</sup> and a number of vessels. Widow MARY passed through this experience also but may have died before the three or four smaller fires of 1690-1 occurred.

The settlement of the estate of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> MEARS showed that he had owed<sup>18</sup> debts to his brother James<sup>2</sup> and to "his sister Mary Carvat", who was earlier the widow of John<sup>2</sup> Mears and wife then of Ezekiel<sup>1</sup> Carveth. (See May, p. 420).

The only documentary evidence found thus far as to the later life of widow MARY is hinted at in the will of her sister Ann<sup>2</sup> Stacy, dated in February, 1681-2. This woman left to her niece<sup>20</sup> Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> Mears "the beed I lye upon — when she marrieth or at the age of 21 years: only my brother Symon Stase shall have it in Keping: & use it upon ocations tel that time: & if he dye before herr time of Receiving it: then my sister MARYE fitch shall keep it tel her dafter be m . . . ed or at the age of twenty one yeare:" Simon<sup>2</sup> Stacy lived until 1699 so it would have been unnecessary for "sister MARY Fitch" to act as custodian, but we may fitly be grateful for this slight hint as to her later life.

The known children of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> and MARY (STACY) MEARS, all born in Boston, were<sup>5,8,20</sup>

\*Probably her nephew for her sister Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Stacy had a son, William<sup>3</sup> Adams.

\*\*The second surety was Ephraim Savage.<sup>20</sup>

- I. Stephen<sup>s</sup>, b. Nov. 21, 1665; by the will of his grandfather ROBERT<sup>1</sup>, he as eldest child was to receive<sup>3</sup> 40 shillings at his marriage, but no further record of him has been found.
- II. Elizabeth<sup>s</sup>, b. Apr. 9, 1668; she was living on Feb. 13, 1681-2, when by the will of her aunt Ann<sup>e</sup> Stacy she was to receive at 21 or day of marriage that woman's bed and bedding.<sup>20</sup>
- III. SAMUEL<sup>s</sup>, see following.
- IV. Mary<sup>s</sup>, b. Nov. 26, 1673; no further record seen.
- V.-VI. Two other children living in July, 1676.

\*SAMUEL<sup>s</sup> MEARS (*Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>8</sup> in Boston, and recorded\*\* as of May 22, 1671, but perhaps more correctly on May 10, for he died<sup>30</sup> at Malden on May 10, 1727, aged fifty-six, and his son-in-law, Rev. Samuel Dexter, specifically states that the death of SAMUEL<sup>s</sup> occurred on his own birthday.<sup>30</sup> He was married<sup>8</sup> at Boston on December 7, 1697, by Rev. Cotton Mather of the Old North Church to his first wife, MARIA CATHARINA<sup>2</sup> SMITH, the widow Gross† (see Smith, p. 550) who was the mother of all four of his children and who died about 1704-5 when her youngest child, our JAMES<sup>4</sup>, was but an infant. SAMUEL<sup>s</sup> was married secondly in Boston<sup>8</sup> on September 23, 1706, by Rev. Benjamin Wadsworth of the First Church, to Hannah Whale who survived him.

An oil portrait‡ of MARIA CATHARINA SMITH painted, it is said,<sup>45</sup> by her father about 1690-3 is in the possession of the American Antiquarian Society at Worcester (see plate xxx, p. 549).

During the lifetime of SAMUEL<sup>s</sup> the many fires which Boston endured must have made a vivid and lasting impression upon him as on all its inhabitants. Boston's second conflagration called the "Great Fire" occurred<sup>41</sup> about the time of his father's death when SAMUEL<sup>s</sup> was about five years old. In 1679 when he was just eight a more terrible incendiary fire occurred,<sup>42</sup> lasting twelve hours and destroying one hundred and fifty buildings. The years 1690-1, when SAMUEL<sup>s</sup> was a man grown, brought three considerable<sup>43</sup> fires but on October 2, 1711, while SAMUEL<sup>s</sup> and his family lived at Roxbury Gate in the George Tavern (see map, p. 30) another appalling fire visited<sup>44</sup> this long suffering town, leaving one hundred and ten families homeless, the Old Meeting House and the first Town House (see map, p. 30) destroyed and many persons killed or injured. In this fire our NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup> BOONE was a heavy sufferer, and a house belonging either to James<sup>2</sup> Mears or his son of the same name, was blown up to check the progress of the flames, for which

\*Some one of this name, probably this SAMUEL<sup>s</sup> who would then have been about nineteen, served in the 1691 expedition against Canada. Lacking funds to pay for this service, the government<sup>51</sup> was debtor for it until in 1736 grants of land were voted at Huntstown (which in 1765 became Ashfield) and in 1739 were laid out to those who served or to their heirs. Among the proprietors of Huntstown in 1739 was a James Meares who was undoubtedly our JAMES<sup>4</sup> as heir of his father. This James Mears was one of a committee of five chosen on March 17, 1738, to lay out lots and highways which lots varied from fifty acres to sixty-five acres "According to the Goodness or Meanness of the Land"<sup>51</sup> but nothing further is heard of him there so he probably sold his right.

\*\*Though the printed record<sup>8</sup> gives his birth as May 22, it is quite possible that he was born on the tenth and baptized on the twenty-second.

†MARIA CATHARINA SMITH (sometimes recorded<sup>21</sup> as MARIAH or MARY) had married first William Gross of Boston, supposed to have been son of Clement<sup>e</sup> (Isaac<sup>1</sup>) and born 1665-6. This marriage occurred by or before 1693 for on March 19, 1693, as "MARIA KATHRINA Groce" she had joined the Old North Church in Boston<sup>21</sup> and by June 16, 1694, was already a widow and appointed administratrix of the estate of William Gross, deceased, of Boston.<sup>22</sup> As the widow Gross she was taxed<sup>23</sup> in Boston in 1695. She died between<sup>21</sup> February 1703-4 and September 1706.

‡This portrait was presumably passed from the subject's daughter Catharine (Mears) Dexter to her daughter Rebecca (Dexter) Clapp, then to that woman's daughters, Catharine<sup>e</sup> and Rebecca<sup>e</sup> Clapp, who definitely owned it about 1850 (see Smith, chart, p. 550). These sisters died unmarried and the portrait became the property of Catharine<sup>e</sup> (Clapp) Barry, granddaughter of these maiden sisters' brother Richard<sup>e</sup> Clapp, after whose death in Evanston, Illinois her husband Mr. Edmund Barry presented it to the American Antiquarian Society at Worcester.<sup>56</sup>

he was paid £25 for his loss.<sup>44</sup> Lt. Gov. Taylor stated that he saw the reflection of this fire<sup>33</sup> when he was twenty leagues (sixty miles) away.

SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> MEARS, as a beneficiary under the will of his uncle,<sup>20</sup> Simon<sup>2</sup> Stacy, made in 1699, was one of twelve nephews and nieces who were to receive equal shares of the estate after the death of the testator's widow which occurred in 1711.

SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> had grown to manhood<sup>18</sup> at the homestead originally owned by his grandfather ROBERT<sup>1</sup>, and he inherited the south half of that property which adjoined on the south, the one-time home of Gov. John Endicott. In his early married life he continued to live there, but in about 1708-9 he left the old home and resided henceforth for eighteen years or more near to Roxbury Gate.\* In 1709 he sold<sup>18</sup> his share of the homestead to John Stainford, having, in March, 1708, successfully petitioned<sup>12,24</sup> the authorities "for Lycence to Sell strong drinck as an Inholder at the House of M<sup>r</sup> Stephen Minot nigh Roxbury Gate in Boston in the Room, and Stead of John Gibbs who is about to quit his Lycence and remove nigher into the Town and wholly to follow his own perticuler Trade, the w<sup>ch</sup> Petition was granted by the Selectmen."<sup>24</sup> This tavern was called<sup>22</sup> the "George Tavern" and was located just north of the present Lenox Street and the stone marking the Boston-Roxbury line. It still (1939) stands on the west side of Washington, midway between the present Arnold and Ball Streets (see map, p. 30) but the land belonging to George Tavern in the days when MEARS lived there extended south to Arnold Street.

SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> continued\*\* to act as its landlord for eighteen years or more, with only one complaint recorded "as not keeping good Rule & order", that being in 1717 but the selectmen promptly withdrew their complaint and renewed his license to SAMUEL<sup>3</sup>. Many references are found from 1711 to 1723 of the Boston selectmen and town officers meeting at his tavern, especially when they were to assemble once or twice annually with Roxbury selectmen to "run the line and renew the bounds" between the two towns.<sup>24</sup> The George Tavern,<sup>26</sup> at one time called the "St. George", was beautifully located, being "part of an estate of twenty acres, extending to the Roxbury line on the south and across the marshes or Roxbury Flats to the great creek which formed its western boundary. It had orchards, gardens, and a site commanding a view of Boston and its harbor on one side, and Cambridge Bay with the shore of the mainland on the other." It is said to have enjoyed a high reputation for the quality of its entertainment. At times this tavern run by SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> was used as a meeting place for the General Court or other colonial officers,<sup>18</sup> and in 1722 SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> presented an account for £40-17 for "Dining

\*We are told<sup>36</sup> that in the early days the Town Gates on Boston Neck were locked as soon as it grew dark on Saturday, so as to stop all travel, and in 1692-3 the law provided for a fine of five shillings for every person remaining in a public house "drinking or idly spending his time on Saturday night, after the sun is set, or on the Lord's Day, or the evening following." An early description of the Neck and Gates, reads:<sup>57</sup> "Boston Gates were at the line. Boston Neck extended one mile and thirty-nine yards to the fortification, built of brick, with a ditch, where there were two gates, one for foot passengers and one for carriages. They were originally for defence. Those at Roxbury line were probably of similar character, though less strong." A landlord who ran "The George" in 1769 as the Revolution was brewing, changed its name to the "King's Arms" but public opinion soon caused that title to be dropped and the old name restored. George Tavern was burned by the British on Sunday night, July 30, 1775, in retaliation for the destruction of Brown's House (see map, p. 30) a few weeks before.

\*\*In 1714 there was prepared a list<sup>50</sup> of the "Inholders" in Boston, also of the "Comon Victualers", the "Coffee house-keepers" the "Retailers" (of liquor?) and a single "Retailer of Cyder". Among the innholders the name of SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> MEARS is found, which would pertain to the "George Tavern" where he then held forth; among the Retailers, that of Ezekiel<sup>2</sup> Cravath (see May, p. 420) and also of an Elizabeth "Meares", doubtless the widow of James<sup>2</sup> Mears. The odd thing about it is that the wording<sup>50</sup> given is ". . . the Retailers without Doors in Boston . . .", which implied that he might sell to persons who were not guests of his house or inn."<sup>50</sup>

the Representatives Committees and Hire of his House for the Court, etc. etc.", and on September 9 that bill was ordered paid.<sup>24</sup> In 1725 he presented to the Court a bill for £5 for "his Riding Express [hurricdly?] from Springfield & for Horse Hire . . . & for Carrying the Horse back again", which bill was ordered paid<sup>24</sup> on December 15. It is said that in the yard of George Tavern bull baits were a common spectacle.

On July 19, 1726, SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> MEARS, innholder, petitioned for a renewal of his license and for privilege to remove to Dock Square<sup>22</sup> in the business district of Boston. This request was granted, and in this new location and in the building where his uncle James<sup>2</sup> Mears had been innkeeper in 1699-1700 SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> undertook to run the "Sun Tavern" but he died in less than a year. This building bore a tablet<sup>28</sup> (see illustr., p. 434) stating<sup>46</sup> that it was built in 1690 and after the demolition in 1860 of its neighbor, the old "Feather Store" (see map, p. 30) it was the last survivor of the earlier land marks around Dock Square until July, 1912, when it also was torn down to make way for a modern building after having stood for two hundred and twenty-two years. As it was wrecked, its sturdy construction was disclosed, "its great beams and girders were large and numerous enough to hold up a modern sky-scraper, instead of a two-story building. The walls were not only lathed but lined with brick as well. The men engaged in tearing the building down came across an old mirror, stuck between the plaster and the clap-boards of the outer wall. . . ." <sup>20,46</sup>

Sun Tavern\* stood on Corn Court,<sup>22</sup> Dock Square, (see map, p. 30) on one of the busiest corners in the early town<sup>23</sup> and originally it was only about thirty feet from the dock. The view over the water, enlivened by the activities of shipping, must have been one of the main attractions of the place. During its life it had been used as a residence, a tavern, a grocery and a market and was older by half a century than the adjacent famous hall (see map, p. 30) built in 1742 by Peter Faneuil which completely overshadowed it. The house to the left (west) of it bore the address of 26-8 Dock Square. In 1712 the Sun Tavern had been occupied by Thomas Phillips who obtained permission to lay a drain from his cellar across the highway "provided that he do the same with expedition, and make the way good again". The cellar had a fire place of bright red English brick and was probably used as a kitchen. The structure was of wood and in 1887 its oaken joists were well preserved and at that time some of the citizens remembered the old gilded sign, the sun, which formerly hung in front of the tavern.<sup>23</sup>

The will of SAMUEL<sup>3</sup>, covering a considerable property, was dated March 9, 1726, and after a religious preamble<sup>6,13</sup> and direction as to paying his debts and funeral expenses, left<sup>17</sup> to his

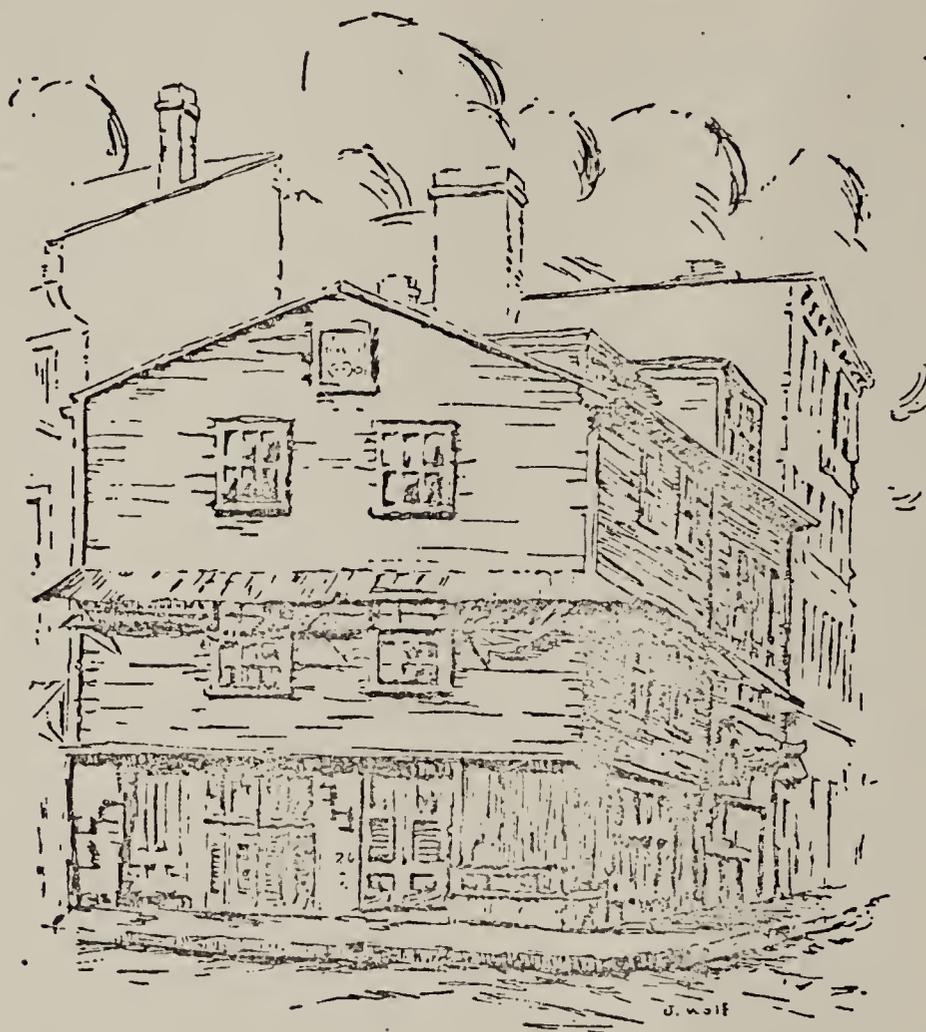
"well-beloved wife Hannah the best bed and furniture [bedding] there unto belonging in the best chamber and all household furniture belonging to said chamber as it is now furnished and set out, with one half part of the household 'Linnen' and the Holland suit of curtains, head cloth and 'Counterpin' and furniture there unto belonging of my wifes own make; also one silver tankard, one Spout Cupp, two pint porringers, a pint

\*In the Boston Gazette of October 25-27, 1729, there appeared the following advertisement, pointing out a further line of interest and service rendered by the early taverns:<sup>32</sup>

"Barber. — To be sold by by Publick Vendue at the Sun Tavern in Boston, on Tuesday next the 30th Instant at 4 of the Clock, P. M. Sundry goods belonging to the Estate of James Wright, Barber, deceased, viz; Wiggs, Hair on the Pipes, . . . and also sundry other Goods."<sup>32</sup>







"SUN TAVERN," BOSTON, BUILT IN 1690  
AND TORN DOWN IN 1912.

Cann, six new fashioned spoons and two wine Cupps, all silver, and my negro woman named Jenny, one brass kettle, one Copper Kettle, several skillets, pots, dishes and kettles [described] one warming pan, a dozen pewter plates, etc. To son-in-law Mr. Samuel Dexter and Katharina, his wife, my only daughter £30 to buy them mourning. The remainder of my estate, both real and personal . . . I . . . bequeath . . . unto my two sons namely Samuel Mears and JAMES MEARS . . . in equal shares."

It made Ezekiel Lewis and John Green his executors.<sup>47</sup> The tankard which he willed to his widow eventually came into the possession<sup>6</sup> of his grandson, James<sup>5</sup> Mears (JAMES<sup>4</sup>).

As will be noticed, his will<sup>6,18</sup> of March 9 antedated his petition for removal<sup>22</sup> to Dock Square on July 19, 1726, and his life after the removal was but brief, for on June 1, 1727, reference is found to the fact that widow Hannah (Whale) Mears was in possession<sup>24</sup> of the Sun Tavern and on July 7 she petitioned for a license to continue in her own name as innholder and to "sell strong drink".<sup>20</sup>

The diary of Rev. Samuel Dexter which states<sup>22</sup> that his father-in-law SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> MEARS "died on his birthday", assures us, in a superior tone, that SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> was "in general, a just honest man and very Charitable for one of his capacity; had a very hard death and I hope has exchanged earth for heaven. My wife has lost a tender loving father and I have lost a very kind bountiful friend". He goes on to furnish<sup>30</sup> details of the last illness of SAMUEL<sup>3</sup>:

"May 10th, 1727. On this Day, ab<sup>t</sup> 8 of y<sup>e</sup> Clock in y<sup>e</sup> Morning, dyed my Wives Father, on his birthday, aged 56 years — some small account of w<sup>ch</sup> I shall here give. On y<sup>e</sup> 14th of Jan<sup>r</sup> last past, w<sup>n</sup> two persons dyed very suddenly, Mr. MEARS was violently seiz'd & fell into a Fitt & his water ran from him as a dying man, but he quickly so far recover'd as to walk ab<sup>t</sup> again, but from y<sup>s</sup> time always seemed dull, & like one in amaze; — ab<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> 15th of February he was seiz'd again with y<sup>e</sup> same Lythargical Trouble, with great strength, & he was brought very low — no Body expected his life, but yet he with w<sup>m</sup> Nothing is Impossible, so far recover'd him y<sup>t</sup> he was able to Walk abroad again & went into y<sup>e</sup> Country hoping to receive Benifit by y<sup>e</sup> change of Air — he seemed sometime more bright & Lively then at others, but frequently visited with y<sup>e</sup> Head ach & dull heavy fits — he had been at Malden something better than a week w<sup>n</sup> he was last seiz'd with y<sup>e</sup> Lythargical Trouble of which he dyed — he was to have come home on fryday May 5th, & his wife went for him, but he was so dull & stupyfied y<sup>t</sup> he did not know her for near an hour, but then came too, so well y<sup>t</sup> he would have her go home & set y<sup>e</sup> house in Order & come to him y<sup>e</sup>sterday, but was never able to speak any thing to her afterwards. Sabbath day Evening we were sent for, & went Early on Monday Morning, and w<sup>n</sup> we came, found him quite Stupyfied & Senseless; if we spake to him he w<sup>d</sup> give us no Answer, excepting 3 times he Answered Yes, w<sup>n</sup> Askt a Question. — Praying with him seem'd to rouse him as much as anything; & thus he lay all Monday, sometimes as if he slept, & w<sup>n</sup> we Judg'd him Awake, not opening his Eyes nor taking any Notice, but, y<sup>t</sup> was a difference in his Breathing. My Wife watch'd with him y<sup>t</sup> Night, & ab<sup>t</sup> two hours before day, y<sup>t</sup> seem'd to be an Alteration in his Breath & Manner of Lying — we Judged he slept no more till he dyed, but was under y<sup>e</sup> Immediate Arrests of Death from y<sup>t</sup> time — he liv'd till wednesday, Eight of y<sup>e</sup> Clock — had a very hard death, & I hope, Exchange'd Earth for Heaven. He was in Gen<sup>l</sup> a just, honest man, & very Charitable for one of his Capacity — he never came to y<sup>e</sup> Ld<sup>s</sup> Table, but Lamented his Neglect very much w<sup>n</sup> he was visited y<sup>e</sup> second time, & had proceeded so far, y<sup>t</sup> if God had given Oppertunity he was to have been received into y<sup>e</sup> Ch<sup>h</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Sabbath before he dyed — y<sup>s</sup> Instance s<sup>hd</sup> be a warning to others not to delay. My wife has lost a tender, loving Father, & I have lost a very kind, bountyfull friend."<sup>30</sup>

The children of SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> and MARIA CATHARINA (SMITH) MEARS, all born in Boston and baptized at the Second (Old North) Church in the right of their mother were:<sup>6,8,21</sup>

- I. Mary<sup>4</sup>, b. Sept. 12, bap. Sept. 18, 1698; not named in her father's will.
- II. Samuel<sup>4</sup>, b. Apr. 10, bap. Apr. 14, 1700; living in 1726 when his father's will was made.
- III. \*Catharine<sup>4</sup>, b. Sept. 25, bap. Sept. 28, 1701; d. June 10, 1797, at Dedham;<sup>22</sup> m. 1st July 9, 1721, at Boston<sup>3</sup> Rev. Samuel<sup>4</sup> Dexter\*\* (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>);<sup>22,29</sup> m. 2nd at Dedham, int. Aug. 21, 1756, Samuel Barnard.<sup>22</sup> Her father's will called her his only daughter.
- IV. JAMES<sup>4</sup>, see following.

\*Incidentally a gift was made through Mr. Walter Humphries of Brookline to Gen. Charles G. Dawes, of a pin ball or cushion, covered with pieces of the wedding gown and street dress of Catharine (Mears) Dexter, Mr. Humphries is the great, great, grandson of the lady whose garments were preserved<sup>26</sup> (see chart, p. 550), the actual donor being his aunt Miss Ann<sup>8</sup> Humphries, born 1846.

\*\*A daughter of Rev. Samuel<sup>4</sup> Dexter married Capt. Lemuel<sup>3</sup> Clapp who in 1761 acquired and in 1767 rebuilt the ROGER<sup>7</sup> CLAPP house of 1633 (see Clapp, pp. 161-2). John<sup>4</sup> Dexter, brother of Rev. Samuel<sup>4</sup> Dexter above, married<sup>22</sup> at Malden in March, 1747-8, as his third wife, Joanna<sup>4</sup>, daughter of our THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and REBECCA (DANFORTH) PARKER. This John<sup>4</sup> Dexter had<sup>53</sup> a fine heavily shaded home on the outskirts of Malden and when Gen. Washington and his staff rode past there in





JAMES<sup>4</sup> MEARS (*Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>8</sup> at Boston on the ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MEARS homestead February 11, and was baptized<sup>21</sup> in his mother's name and right, at the Old North Church on February 13, 1703-4. He lost that mother during his infancy, for his father married again in September, 1706. JAMES<sup>4</sup> died at Roxbury before<sup>15</sup> July 19, 1771, and was buried in the Mears tomb in the old burying ground (see map, p. 416) at the corner of Washington and Eustis Streets. He was married first<sup>5,32,34</sup> at Milton on December 15, 1726, by the Rev. Peter Thacher to MEHITABLE<sup>3</sup> DAVENPORT (see Davenport, p. 278) and secondly at Roxbury<sup>32</sup> on August 1, 1754, to Hannah (Pope) Wardell. As he, in his youth in his father's family, had lived for long at "Roxbury Gate", so, as an adult, he became a resident of Roxbury soon after his marriage and spent his life there. By his father's will JAMES<sup>4</sup> received one half of the residual estate,<sup>47</sup> and since there was in this family, at the period 1690-1739, no other sequence of given names of "Samuel and James" than SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> and JAMES<sup>4</sup> to qualify (1) for the expedition to Canada in 1690 and (2) for the grant of land at Huntstown (Ashfield) in 1739 it was probably our JAMES<sup>4</sup> who qualified as proprietor there in 1739 and was appointed to survey the lots.<sup>51</sup>

About the time of his settling in Roxbury JAMES<sup>4</sup> purchased<sup>26</sup> a house on the east side of Washington Street slightly south of Eustis, (see map, p. 416), which location was first a part of the estate of Samuel<sup>1</sup> Hageborne\* and which house had been built after 1707 of solid oak timbers by Robert Calef. It had a gambrell roof, stood with its end to the street, having its main entrance by a large porch on the south side, and was still in use in 1878 as the Allen furniture store.<sup>26</sup> This was quite a central location\*\* near the church; a little south of his home, JAMES<sup>4</sup> built his tannery which stood until torn down in 1845 to make way for Webster Hall.<sup>26</sup> For JAMES<sup>4</sup>, called a currier, established a tanning business which was carried on by three generations of his descendants, and after that by a man who married into the family.<sup>26,27,33</sup>

The house built about 1710-2, which JAMES<sup>4</sup> purchased and lived in for the rest of his life, had with its earlier owner quite an interesting history. It was built and occupied by Robert Calef who *alone* had the courage during the witchcraft delusion to speak out boldly against the obsession. This laid him liable to the direst results, but "opposing fanatacism with common sense and reason, he was largely instrumental in bringing about a revulsion of thought which he, fortunately, lived long enough to see. He both spoke and wrote against witchcraft, sending his manuscript to England to be printed, for no one here dared to either print or sell it".<sup>26</sup> Even so, Calef acquired the bitterest enmity from some people. Indeed by the order<sup>26</sup> of Rev. Increase Mather, then President of Harvard, this "'wicked book' was

---

the fall of 1775 they stopped for rest and refreshment. "When the party came out to remount their horses, one of the gentlemen accidentally knocked off a stone from one of the walls which ran along from the house to the street . . . Washington remarked to him that he had better replace the stone. The officer having remounted replied, 'No, I will leave that for somebody else to do'. Washington then went quietly and replaced the stone himself, saying as he did so, 'I always make it my rule when visiting a place to leave things in as good order as I find them.'" This incident was related<sup>53</sup> by a son of John<sup>4</sup> Dexter who witnessed the act and conversation, who was then about nineteen and lived until 1842 when he was eighty-six years old.

\*Samuel<sup>1</sup> Hageborne by his will made the earliest bequest toward a free school in Roxbury<sup>54</sup> (see Gore, p. 322).

\*\*This building, still standing<sup>47</sup> in 1939, though very shabby, bore the number "2132 Washington Street" and stood three doors below Eustis on the east side of Washington. From the belfry of the church near the home of JAMES<sup>4</sup> were shown the signals which informed the citizens that the British were evacuating Boston and the siege was over.<sup>26</sup>

publicly burnt in the college yard, the scene of the holocaust being the area between Massachusetts, Harvard, and Stoughton Halls."<sup>26</sup> It was harshly attacked too by Rev. Cotton Mather.<sup>26</sup>

On September 10, 1727, wife MEHITABLE was admitted to full fellowship in the Roxbury Church<sup>31,43</sup> and on January 7 following, JAMES<sup>4</sup> himself became a member while they were housed in their second meeting house. After the building of the third meeting house in 1740-1 acquirement of a church pew implied actual purchase and personal possession and JAMES<sup>4</sup> became owner<sup>48</sup> of pew No. 39 (which stood next to the gallery stairs) at a cost of £19-13-4. The pew of EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER adjoined that of JAMES<sup>4</sup> while EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> MAY had one not far away<sup>26</sup> (see illustr., p. 419).<sup>43</sup> This was under the ministry<sup>31</sup> of Rev. Nehemiah Walter and their fine building burned to the ground "on the Lord's day, Feb. 26, 1743-4, soon after Devine service in the Afternoon. . . ." This loss was believed to have resulted from the use of a foot stove and consequently they were prohibited thereafter.<sup>26</sup> A fourth building identical in size and form<sup>43</sup> was erected in 1744-6. The death date of MEHITABLE, first wife of JAMES<sup>4</sup> MEARS has not been found but it was probably around 1750-3 since he married again<sup>32</sup> in August, 1754.

JAMES<sup>4</sup> MEARS and his son James<sup>5</sup> with Benjamin<sup>4</sup> May (JOHN<sup>3</sup>) and Ebenezer<sup>5</sup> May, brother and son, respectively, of our EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> MAY with twenty other church members wrote a letter to their minister<sup>48</sup> in 1757 relative to the singing in church. These men had wearied of the use of the metrical version of the Psalms in the Bay Psalm Book\* and especially of the slow tedious rendition of the songs. One minister wrote about that time, "I myself have twice in one note paused to take breath". The letter of these twenty-four men read in part:

"Rev. Sr

The New England (Bay) Version of the Psalms, however usefull it may formerly have been, is now become through the natural variableness of Language, not only very uncouth, but in many Places unintelligible; whereby the mind instead of being Raised and spirited in singing The Praises of Almighty God . . . is Damped and made spiritless in the Performance of the Duty. . . ."<sup>31</sup>

and they urged the trial of a more modern song book, which was agreed to.

An item<sup>54</sup> which pertains to JAMES<sup>4</sup> MEARS and to his son of the same name is recorded as of September 11, 1770, when a JAMES MEARS was one of the Feoffes

\*The Bay Psalm Book "was the joint production of John Eliot, Thomas Welde and Richard Mather, and was published in Cambridge in 1640. Rev. Elias Nason describes this book as follows, 'Welde, Eliot and Mather mounted the restless steed Pegasus, Hebrew Psalter in hand, and trotted in hot haste over the rough road of Shemitic roots and metrical psalmody. Other divines rode behind, and after cutting and slashing, mending and patching, twisting and turning, finally produced what must ever remain the most unique specimen of poetical tinkering in our literature.'<sup>31</sup> This, however, seems to have been an overly harsh judgment for while<sup>31</sup> the psalms in metrical form sound unnatural to the modern ear, and some were much less satisfactory than others, some were quite tolerable as to wording, as will be seen from the wellknown twenty-third psalm, reproduced<sup>58</sup> here, in facsimile, from the Bay Psalm Book itself (see plate xxvii, p. 423). This volume has unique value from several points of view. Its text was apparently prepared during 1637-8 by the three reverend gentlemen named above, of whom the Rev. Richard Mather was chief. The book was issued some time in 1640 from the press at Cambridge handled by Stephen Daye, is believed to have been the third piece of printing put out by that press and the earliest surviving example of printing made in British North America. The first specimen from this press was "The Freeman's Oath," a broadside of which no copy is known to exist; the second specimen, but in book form, was an "Almanack" for 1639 prepared by William Peirce "noted mariner — the doyen, in fact, of all New England sailmasters"<sup>58</sup> (see index on his name) but of this publication no copy has been found. The third and much more elaborate production of the Daye press was the "Bay Psalm Book" of which some seventeen hundred copies were printed at a cost of £33, using one hundred sixteen reams of paper valued at £29, and the books sold for twenty pence per copy, furnishing a profit of about £79. Today, in 1940, only eleven copies are known to exist, of which eight are owned by institutions and prices of over \$1,000 have been paid for several of them<sup>58</sup> as much as fifty to sixty years ago.





of the Roxbury Free School who voted to meet on September 20 "at the house of James Mears, Jun<sup>r</sup>, in order to visit said school at three o'clock, afternoon. . . ." <sup>54</sup> The will of JAMES<sup>d</sup> MEARS of Roxbury, Currier, dated June 1, 1769, and proved<sup>20</sup> July 19, 1771, named as executors his son James<sup>s</sup> and Caleb Hayward who was also a witness with Samuel Gridley and Nathaniel Felton. The beneficiaries were the testator's wife Hannah and her three Wardell children; his own son James<sup>s</sup>, the widow and two children of his deceased son John<sup>s</sup> and his granddaughter, MEHITABLE (MAY) DAWES who was to receive £80 three months after the testator's decease.<sup>20</sup> It disposed of an estate of £2,253 including a negro man Plato who was to be free, a silver tankard, much land, etc.<sup>20</sup>

The children of JAMES<sup>d</sup> and MEHITABLE (DAVENPORT) MEARS, born in Roxbury were<sup>32</sup>

- I. Mehitable<sup>s</sup>, b. Oct. 25, 1727; d. before 1769.
- II. Mary<sup>s</sup>, b. Mar. 31, 1729; d. Sept. 18, 1729.
- III. CATHARINE<sup>s</sup>, b. Oct. 14, 1730; d.<sup>35</sup> at Boston Mar. 20, 1752; m.<sup>8,34</sup> at Roxbury<sup>32</sup> (int. Sept. 14) as his first wife, on Nov. 3, 1748, SAMUEL<sup>s</sup> MAY (see May, p. 421).
- IV. \*James<sup>s</sup>, b. Oct. 22, 1731; d. at Roxbury June 6, 1804, aged 73; m. at Boston May 19, 1757, Anna Greateon of Roxbury.<sup>31</sup>
- V. John<sup>s</sup>, b. abt. 1732; d.<sup>32</sup> at Roxbury May 17, 1769, aged 37; m. at Milton 1757 Abigail Minot.<sup>32</sup> His estate was administered<sup>6</sup> by his widow and by his father JAMES<sup>d</sup>.

\*James<sup>s</sup> is said<sup>6</sup> to have inherited the silver tankard which his grandfather SAMUEL<sup>s</sup> had owned.

## REFERENCES

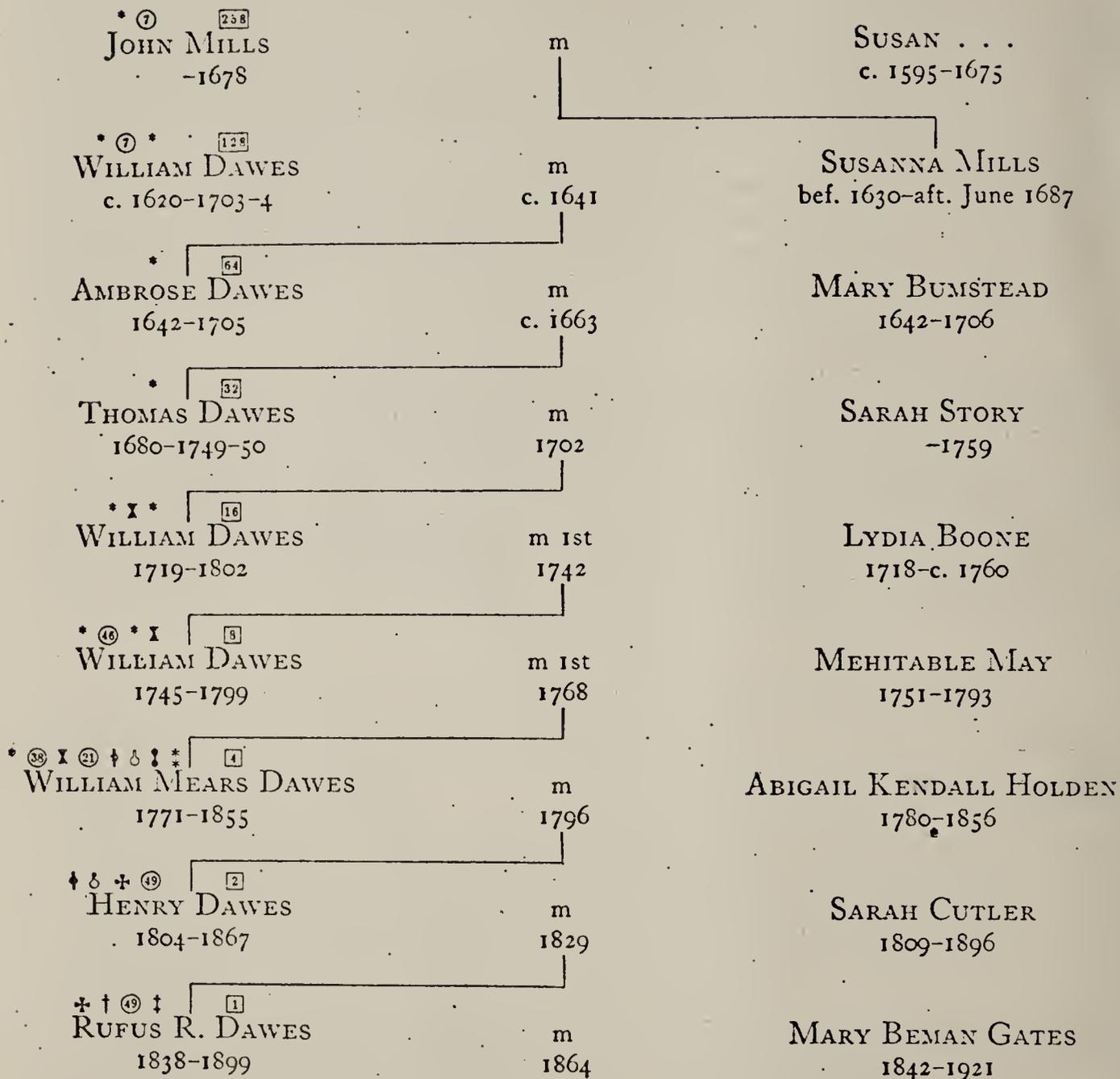
- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 161-6.</li> <li>2. Douglas Genealogy, C. H. J. Douglas, 1879, pp. 55-60, 515-6.</li> <li>3. New England Register, XVII, 345-6.</li> <li>4. Ibid., XII, 153-4.</li> <li>5. Pioneers of Massachusetts, C. H. Pope, p. 310; Savage III, 192-3.</li> <li>6. Genealogical and Personal Memoirs of Boston and Eastern Massachusetts Families, W. R. Cutter, 1908, pp. 1479-80; Catholic Encyclopedia, 1907, II, 704.</li> <li>7. Boston Record Commissioners Report, II, part 1, pp. 22-5, 27, 46, 166, 171, 180, 188; part 2, pp. 4, 13, 21, 26, 112; V, 74, 81-2.</li> <li>8. Ibid., IX, 5-6, 11-2, 17-8, 81, 97, 108, 118-9, 128, 236, 241; XXIV, 5, 22; XXVIII, 13, 119, 289, 316.</li> <li>9. Memorial History of Boston, Mass., J. Winsor, 1881, I, 560; II, XLV-NLVIII.</li> <li>10. Boston Record Commissioners Report, 1880, Gleaner Articles, pp. 52-3, 58-9.</li> <li>11. History and Antiquities of Boston, S. G. Drake, 1856, pp. 235, 250, 512, 518-9, 786, 789, 792, 817.</li> <li>12. The Crooked and Narrow Streets of Boston, 1630-1822, A. H. Thwing, 1920, pp. 92-3, 111, 126-8, 200, 213, 234, map facing p. 228.</li> <li>13. Suffolk Deeds I, 59, 100, 143; II, 87; III, 83; IV, 71, 141; V, 532; IX, 48-9, 150, 170-1.</li> <li>14. Ibid., VI, 317-8, 325-6; VII, 295; IX, 48-9, 150.</li> <li>15. New England Register, VII, 338; XVIII, 332.</li> <li>16. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, pp. 663, 665.</li> <li>17. Suffolk Deeds, V, 340; XII, 18-9; Savage III, 13; New England Register LXVIII, 179; Kent Genealogy, L. V. Briggs, 1898, pp. 299, 301; Ancient and Honorable</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Artillery Company, I, 210; Boston Transcript, Nov. 30, 1921.</li> <li>18. Articles in Boston Transcript of Jan. 15, 1923, Feb. 26, 1923.</li> <li>19. King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 100, 173-7, 182, 480; New England Register XXXVII, 374; XXXIX, 378-83.</li> <li>20. Ibid., LVIII, 91-2; Research by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., in Essex Co. Probates and Deeds; Suffolk Co. Probates No. 807, No. 14966.</li> <li>21. History of the Second Church or Old Church in Boston, Mass., C. Robbins, 1852, pp. 251, 263.</li> <li>22. Dexter Genealogy, O. P. Dexter, 1904, pp. 36-7, 39-4-44.</li> <li>23. Savage, II, 318.</li> <li>24. Boston Record Commissioners Report, VIII, 172; X, 87, 89; XI, 69, 128, 143, 216; XIII, 20, 24, 26, 73, 115, 118, 166; Acts and Resolves of Massachusetts, X, Appendix 5, pp. 118, 548.</li> <li>25. Suffolk Deeds, VIII, 288, 291-3, 319-20; IX, 89, 170-1, 227, 367; XIII, 194; B. R. C. R., see indexes of I, II, VII, VIII, IX, X, XI.</li> <li>26. History of Roxbury, Mass., F. S. Drake, 1878, pp. 84-5, 142-9, 285-7, 350, 369-70.</li> <li>27. Guild Genealogy, C. Burleigh, 1887, pp. 113-5.</li> <li>28. Rambles About Boston, E. G. Porter, 1887, pp. 26-8, 79-82.</li> <li>29. History of Malden, Mass., D. P. Corey, 1899, p. 620.</li> <li>30. New England Register, XIV, 111-2.</li> <li>31. Boston Record Commissioners Report, VI, 105-6, 112; XXX, 356; History of First Church in Roxbury, W. E. Thwing, 1908, pp. 132-3, 139-42, 190, 336-9; New England Register, III, 132-3.</li> <li>32. Vital Records of Milton, p. 150; Vital Records of</li> </ol> |
|---|--|

- Roxbury, I, 243; II, 277, 591.
33. Sewall's Diary, II, 323, 420.
  34. New England Register, XXVII, 113; XXXIII, 28.
  35. May Genealogy, Samuel May, 1878, pp. 8-10.
  36. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXIX, pp. xxxviii-ix; XXX, 750, 780, 879-80.
  37. Ibid., XXIX, 82, 101, 205, 234, 293, 415, 460, 487; XXX, 690, 785, 950, 967; New England Register, II, 79.
  38. Graduates of Harvard University, J. L. Sibley, 1873, I, 577-8; Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXXI, 233, 237-9, 256.
  39. Annals of King's Chapel, H. W. Foote, 1882, I, 89, 94, 137; Records of the Church in Brattle Square, 1902, pp. 5-6, 8.
  40. Winsor's Boston, I, 546; Sewall's Diary in Massachusetts Historical Society Collection, Ser. 5, V-VII, I, 28; History of Boston Fire Department, A. W. Brayley, 1889, pp. 4-7; Thwing's Crooked Streets, p. 18.
  41. Winsor's Boston I, 230-3, 546-550; Thwing's Crooked Streets, p. 18; Brayley's History of Boston Fire Department pp. 12-17.
  42. Winsor's Boston, I, 246; II, 504; IV, 466; Sewall's Diary II, 323; Brayley's Boston Fire Department, pp. 14-7, 20-1; Typographical and Historical Description of Boston, N. B. Shurtleff, 1890, pp. 640-2.
  43. Winsor's Boston, II, 388, 504; Brayley's Boston Fire Department, p. 24; Thwing's Crooked Streets, p. 18.
  44. Winsor's Boston, II, xxxiv-v, 482-4, 504; Brayley's Boston Fire Department, pp. 29-32; Sewall's Diary, II, 323, 330.
  45. "XVIIth Painting in New England", Louisa Dresser for the Worcester, Mass., Art Museum, 1935, pp. 139-40, 171-2.
  46. Issue of Boston Sunday Globe, July 7, 1912.
  47. Research of Suffolk Co. Records by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Suffolk Co. Probates No. 5440, XXV, 344, XXVII, 269, 271.
  48. History of the first church of Roxbury, W. E. Thwing, 1908, pp. 132-3, 139, 140, 338-9.
  49. Savage, IV, 13; Pope, p. 400; Early Settlers of Rowley, G. B. Blodgette and A. E. Jewett, 1933, p. 324; B. R. C. R., IX, 118, 236, 243, 246; XXIV, 228, 242; XXX, 16, 54; Suffolk Deeds, IX, 150-1; May Genealogy, S. May, et al, 1878, pp. 4, 6-7.
  50. New England Register, XXXI, 108-9; History of Canton, D. T. V. Huntoon, 1893, p. 209.
  51. History of Ashfield; F. G. Howes, p. 52; Year Book of the Society of Colonial Wars . . . Massachusetts, 1898, p. 185; History of the Connecticut Valley in Massachusetts pub. by L. H. Everts, 1879, II, 738.
  52. Arts and Crafts in New England, G. F. Dow, 1927, p. 255.
  53. Dexter Genealogy, pp. 43-6.
  54. History of the Grammar School . . . C. K. Dillaway, 1860, pp. 68, 194-5.
  55. New England Register LIV, 346.
  56. Dexter Genealogy, pp. 36-7; Clapp Memorial, E. Clapp, 1876, pp. 259, 274-5.
  57. History of Roxbury, C. M. Ellis, 1847, p. 81.
  58. "The Bay Psalm Book . . . Facsimile Reprint of the First Edition Printed by Stephen Daye at Cambridge, in New England in 1640," pub. 1903 by Dodd, Mead & Company Introduction and 23rd Psalm; "Early American Books & Printing" John T. Winterich, 1935, pp. 25-31.





# MILLS



- \* Boston
- ⑦ Braintree
- X Marlborough
- ④⑥ Worcester
- ③⑧ Sudbury

- ②① Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.
- ♁ Morgan Co., O.
- ♁ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.

- + Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.

---



---

## MILLS (*Milles, Millis*)

---

**J**OHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS\* is believed to have come<sup>1,5</sup> from Lavenham, co. Suffolk, England, in the Winthrop Fleet during the summer of 1630. He brought with him his wife SUSAN (born<sup>4,6</sup> about 1595) and five children, including our SUSANNA<sup>2</sup> and settled first, as did most of the others from that Fleet, in Charlestown earlier called<sup>2</sup> Mishawan.

These people had understood, before their emigration, that food in New England was then plentiful, as indeed some sorts were, so they brought less than they might have done and much of that which came with them, spoiled during the voyage. Suitable provisions for the seven hundred<sup>\*\*</sup> or more who came in the Fleet were therefore very scarce. Scurvy was a common disorder; the immediate living quarters of many were but tents or shacks giving insufficient protection<sup>16</sup> so that much sickness resulted and two hundred or more are said<sup>1,16</sup> to have died between April and December of that year.

We are told<sup>16</sup> that

“The people were compelled to live upon clams and muscles, ground nuts and acorns, and these were obtained with much difficulty in the winter time, and upon these accounts they became much tired and discouraged, especially when they heard that the Governor had his last batch of bread in the oven. And many were the fears of the people that Mr. Pearce, who was sent to Ireland† to fetch provisions, was cast away or taken by pirates; but God who delights to appear in greatest straits, did work marvellously at this time, for before the day appointed to seek the Lord by fasting and prayer, about the month of February or March [1631] in comes Mr. Pearce, laden with provisions; upon which occasion the day of fasting was changed and ordered to be kept as a day of thanksgiving.”<sup>16</sup>

At Charlestown, within a month or two after their arrival, a church body<sup>2</sup> was formed under a large tree<sup>16</sup> on August 27, 1630. The Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Wilson was chosen as their teacher (later their pastor) and Gov. John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop was the first signer, followed by ninety-five (presently one hundred and fifty) others of whom<sup>2</sup> number's thirty-three and thirty-four were JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS and his wife SUSAN. The first recorded<sup>3</sup> baptisms in this church occurred<sup>4</sup> in October, 1630, and pertained to two daughters of JOHN<sup>1</sup>, Joy<sup>2</sup> and Recompence<sup>2</sup>. The usual officers of a church in that early day were a pastor, a teacher, ruling elders, deacons, “and sometimes deaconesses or widows. The functions of the widows as laid down by a quaint writer, were ‘to show mercie with cheerfulness, and to minister to the sick and poore brethern.’ ”<sup>16</sup>

\*By the testimony of the will of JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS, his “predecessors [ancestors] unto the third if not the fourth generation” were ministers.<sup>12</sup>

\*\*Some estimates<sup>21</sup> are that fifteen hundred passengers came over in 1630.

†On the return trip to New England Master Peirce and his vessel the “Lyon” brought two hundred tons of provisions and about twenty passengers including our JOHN<sup>1</sup> PERKINS with his wife and five children, arriving February 5, 1630-1, after a very stormy voyage of sixty-seven days.<sup>20</sup>





Presently the realization of the lack of good springs at Charlestown induced a majority of these early settlers, including JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS and his family, to remove across the Charles River to Boston<sup>16</sup> and in 1632 their church organization (then Congregational) was also moved<sup>9</sup> and became the First Church of Boston, to serve which, assisting their Pastor Wilson, the Rev. John Cotton came from England in 1633. Their meeting house built in 1632 was of stone plastered with clay, covered with a thatched roof.

Following his acquirement of church membership, JOHN<sup>1</sup> made application<sup>4,5</sup> for freemanship<sup>6,7</sup> on October 19, 1630, which was granted<sup>5,7</sup> on March 6, 1631-2. He continued his residence in Boston for about ten years and even afterward was closely associated with the business interests of that town. During that period the General Court gave to Boston in 1634-5 the territory<sup>8</sup> which had been known as Mount Wollaston and this same land was taken from Boston and set off<sup>15</sup> as Braintree in May, 1640. In the meantime, on February 24, 1640, Boston had made grants of land in Mount Wollaston (Braintree) to many men, including JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS on the basis of four acres for each member of a family. JOHN<sup>1</sup> received forty-four<sup>8</sup> acres which presupposes at least two servants or outsiders\* in his family, which became resident<sup>5</sup> in Braintree in 1641. The location of their home is disclosed as being on a hill, near the meeting house,<sup>10</sup> near a brook and approached by a road from the bridge. This road was so steep and rocky that a detour through the land of JOHN<sup>1</sup> was established as is shown in the following record<sup>10</sup> of February, 1657-8:

"The highway lying against JOHN MILLES house how it is layd out into his Lote, —  
 "At JOHN MILLIS house the country high way going up the hill of Rockes being to strait; and therefore presented) the selectmen of the Towne therefore has layd it about foure rods into JOHN MILLES lote which is to two Rockes allmost together, one great rocke and one litle one, and so to a blacke stumpe, and from thence to rune into the high way againe."

Further items bearing on the location and surroundings of that home are seen in the facts that on August 1, 1658, JOHN<sup>1</sup> sold<sup>10</sup> to Thomas Thathson for ten shillings, sixteen rods of land lying next to the meeting house bridge, the line to run from the brook "to the outside of the [Mills?] house and from thence to a stumpe by the brooke" and the purchaser was "to make and maynetayne a sufficient fence (he and his hayes forever) between the said JOHN MILLS" and the grantee. A further description of the terrain shows<sup>10</sup> that as late as December, 1665, a highway was laid out into the Common, passing the lot of JOHN<sup>1</sup>; that it "is layd out from the bridge going up the hill before [in front of?] JOHN MILLES so ranging with a ledge of great rockes on the lower side next the swamp; to lie two rod wid upward from the rockes; and so to goe along to pass through the swamp where themselves [officials] have formerly made it."

We are told that JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS, his wife and son John<sup>2</sup> were recommended by the Boston church to the church at Braintree, but the date<sup>4,17</sup> is given variously as December 5, 1641, and as<sup>6</sup> August 14, 1656. The only item of public service which remains recorded of JOHN<sup>1</sup> is that of town clerk<sup>4,6,10</sup> or clerk of the writs in 1653.

As for the chief business interests of JOHN<sup>1</sup>, they appear to have been two-fold,

\*One of these may easily have been our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES who presently married into the family.

first, as merchant and later as innkeeper. He was frequently a witness<sup>11</sup> to legal documents; had various sizable accounts due to him; was concerned in exporting and importing various commodities; held a power of attorney for different men and qualified as a shipowner and as sales agent of vessels.<sup>11</sup>

In August, 1646, JOHN<sup>1</sup> exported to England, on the vessel "Recovery", of London,<sup>11</sup> twelve chests of earthenware, three chests of glasses,<sup>19</sup> three bales of Indian matts, one box of belts and girdles, two hundred bushels of peas and twenty-three thousand pipe staves — a pipe being a container for wine or oil with the capacity of two hogsheads. The shortage of timber in England for the construction of containers caused many early shipments of products to New England to carry the requirement that the containers should be returned, and the colony presently built up a thriving trade by supplying the mother country with new staves for her coopers.

JOHN<sup>1</sup> and another man had an account of over £400 due<sup>11</sup> them in 1648. In January, 1648-9, JOHN<sup>1</sup> had £93 due him from John Jarvis of Boston which was to be paid in codfish. About that time he acted as agent for two merchants in the Canary Islands in the sale to Nehemiah Bourne of New England<sup>11</sup> of one-sixteenth part of the "good shipp Merch<sup>t</sup> of the burden of three hundd tuns or thereabouts." In February, the next month, JOHN<sup>1</sup> appeared as a one-third owner of the ship "Jane", of one hundred tons capacity which was about to sail<sup>11</sup> for England with a cargo and in October, 1650, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, then called "merchant of Boston", sold\* his one-third share in the "Jane" to Capt. Francis Champernoone, one of the co-owners, for £300. The description of the "Jane" listed in part, "all & singular the s<sup>d</sup> masts, sailes, saileyards, anchors, cables, ropes, cords, guns shott artillery tackle, yronworke apparell, boate & furniture whatsoever to the s<sup>d</sup> ship belonging & appertaiening . . ." On the last named date Champernoone also acknowledged a debt of over £38 due to JOHN<sup>1</sup> which he promised to pay in "Merchantable Codfish at the Isle of Sholes. . . ."

On February 20, 1650-1, JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS signed a receipt<sup>11</sup> at Boston to "Georg Walthan for one pipe & one hogshead of Canary wine . . . for my use, having received the full summe thereof." Considering that a "pipe" was the equivalent of two hogsheads, we will hope that the "use" which JOHN<sup>1</sup> had for it was sale rather than consumption.

No further details of commercial sort have been found recorded of JOHN<sup>1</sup> but in 1658 at the death of Martin Sanders, Braintree's first and only earlier innkeeper JOHN<sup>1</sup> received permission to establish a house for public entertainment. His inn was located<sup>8</sup> on the west side of Hancock Street about two hundred feet south of Canal Street. Presumably the rest of his life was spent in this business for we learn that his son John<sup>2</sup> Mills succeeded the father as innkeeper, continuing so until after 1710. The inn was subsequently known as the Ben Faxon House.

The surname of SUSAN, wife of JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS, has not been learned but she was born<sup>4,6</sup> about 1595 and died in Braintree on December 10, 1675, aged eighty. JOHN<sup>1</sup> himself survived her less than three years, dying there on July 5, 1678, leaving a will dated on January 12, 1677. This document<sup>12</sup> began with a long religious preamble, suggesting that he had been a very devout man. It spoke of

\*Our JOHN<sup>1</sup> DANE was a witness in 1648 to a power of attorney given by JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS and a witness in 1650 to the above sale.<sup>11</sup>





his having "fallen into years"; that he wished "to dispose of that portion of my outward estate which the Lord hath lent me". It referred to John<sup>2</sup> as his only son and made bequests to his daughters Mary Hawkins and SUSANNA DAWES. At the end of the document he expressed an "earnest request" that one of his grandsons "that is capable to Learning be fitted for the ministry, which was the employment of my predecessors unto the third if not to the fourth generation." This desire of his was not fulfilled in the life of any grandson of his, though Edward<sup>3</sup>, one of these,<sup>15</sup> graduated from Harvard in 1685; but a great grandson<sup>13</sup> Jonathan<sup>4</sup> (Capt. John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) graduated in divinity from Harvard in 1723.

The will of JOHN<sup>1</sup> was proved<sup>12</sup> and the inventory presented September 10, 1678, showing an estate valued at £211-7-9.

The children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and SUSAN (—) MILLS, the five first-named born in England (in uncertain order) and the others born in Boston, were<sup>3,4,5,6</sup>

- I. SUSANNA<sup>2</sup>, b. bef. 1630; d.<sup>14</sup> after 1680; m.<sup>14</sup> abt. 1641 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES (see Dawes, p. 12).
- II. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. bef. 1630; living in 1677; m.<sup>4</sup> abt. 1650 James Hawkins of Boston and Braintree.
- III. John<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1623 (?); bap. June 3, 1631; d. at Braintree Feb. 27, 1684-5, ae. 62; m.<sup>21</sup> Apr. 26, 1653, Mary Shove,<sup>22</sup> said to have been a sister of Rev. George Shove of Taunton. She d.<sup>17</sup> Aug. 18, 1711, ae. abt. 80-1. Marshall's Diary called her "a precious saint."
- IV. Joy<sup>2</sup>, bap. at Charlestown in Oct. 1630; d. prob. bef. 1677.
- V. Recompence<sup>2</sup>, bap. at Charlestown in Oct. 1630; d. prob. bef. 1677.
- VI. Jonathan<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>3</sup> at Boston Aug. 30, 1635; d. bef. 1677.
- VII. James<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>3</sup> at Boston June 3, 1638; d. bef. 1677.

## REFERENCES

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 24-8, 77, 81.</li> <li>2. Parker . . . Ruggles Ances. &amp; Desc., J. W. Linzee, 1913, pp. 289-92.</li> <li>3. Boston Record Commissioners Report, IX, 1, 3, 7; Report on Public Records of Mass., 1889, p. 66.</li> <li>4. Savage, II, 382, III, 213.</li> <li>5. Winthrop's Fleet, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 81.</li> <li>6. Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 315.</li> <li>7. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 80, 367.</li> <li>8. History of Braintree and Quincy, W. S. Pattee, 1878, pp. 10, 18-33, 164-6.</li> <li>9. Commemorative Discourse in New South Church, Boston, Dec. 25, 1864, George Ellis, p. 6.</li> <li>10. Records of Braintree, ed. by Samuel Bates, 1886, pp. 8-9, 635-6, 715.</li> <li>11. B. R. C. R., XXXII, 127, 180-1, 200-1, 223, 272-3, 324-6, 331, 372-3.</li> <li>12. Probate Records, Braintree, VI, 254; Research performed by E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass.</li> <li>13. Early New England People, S. E. Titcomb, 1882, pp. 92-3.</li> <li>14. Lineage of the Bowens, E. A. Bowen, 1897, p. 213; Dawes Genealogy, H. W. Holland, 1878, pp. 42, 55.</li> <li>15. Report on Massachusetts Public Records, 1889, pp.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>242, 264.</li> <li>16. Historical Sketch of the First Church in Boston. Rev. W. Emerson, 1812, pp. 12-3, 17; History of the First Church in Boston, A. B. &amp; G. E. Ellis, 1880, pp. 1-3, 6-9, 13-17; Commemoration of the 250th Anniversary of the First Church, p. 12; History of Charlestown, R. Frothingham, 1845, pp. 39-43, 45-8, 67-8.</li> <li>17. Vinton Memorial, J. A. Vinton, 1852, p. 341.</li> <li>18. Sibley's Harvard Graduates, 1885, III, 337.</li> <li>19. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 344; History of Salem, S. Perley, 1926, II, 53-9; Town Records of Salem, I, 80, 94, 107, 214, 225; Essex Institute Historical Collections, VIII, 163; IX, 94; XVI, 1-7; Economic and Social History of New England, W. B. Weedon, 1890, I, 169, 171.</li> <li>20. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 92-3; John Perkins of Ipswich, G. A. Perkins, 1889, pp. 1-2.</li> <li>21. History of . . . The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company . . . , O. A. Roberts, 1895, I, 5, 203; History of the [Roxbury] Grammar School, C. K. Dillaway, 1860, p. 197.</li> <li>22. Suffolk Deeds, XIII, 333.</li> <li>23. Lineal Ancestors of Susan (Mulford) Cory, C. H. Cory, 1937, III, 156.</li> </ol> |
|--|---|

# MOORE

③③ 188 194  
**JOHN MOORE**  
 -1673-4

m 2nd  
 c. 1637-8

**ELIZABETH WHALE**  
 c. 1620-1690

③③ 94  
**BENJAMIN MOORE**  
 c. 1648-50-1729

m 1686  
**DOROTHY WRIGHT**  
 1662-1717

②⑨ 96  
**JAMES CUTLER**  
 1635-1685

m 1665  
**LYDIA MOORE**  
 [widow Wright]  
 1643-1723

③⑤ ③⑥ ③⑧ 46  
**MARK VORCE**  
 1700-3-1755

m 1732  
**PRUDENCE MOORE**  
 1704-aft. 1759

②⑨ Δ 48  
**JOHN CUTLER**  
 1675-c. 1727-9

m 1700-1  
**HANNAH SNOW**  
 1677-aft. 1729

③⑤ 22  
**JAMES THOMPSON**  
 c. 1726-7-1812

m 1754  
**MARY VORCE**  
 1735-1775

Δ 24  
**HEZEKIAH CUTLER**  
 1707-1792

m 1st 1734  
**SUSANNA CLARK**  
 c. 1712-1774

③⑤ Δ 10  
**JONAS HOLDEN**  
 1756-c. 1847

m 1776  
**MOLLY THOMPSON**  
 1757-aft. 1798

Δ † ② ③ ④ 12  
**MANASSEH CUTLER**  
 1742-1823

m 1766  
**MARY BALCH**  
 1740-1815

\* ③⑤ I ② † † † † † 4  
**WILLIAM M. DAWES**  
 1771-1855

m 1796  
**ABIGAIL K. HOLDEN**  
 1780-1856

† Δ : † † † 6  
**EPHRAIM CUTLER**  
 1767-1853

m 2nd 1808  
**SALLY PARKER**  
 1777-1846

† † † † 49 2  
**HENRY DAWES**  
 1804-1867

m 1829

**SARAH CUTLER**  
 1809-1896

† † † 49 † 1  
**RUFUS R. DAWES**  
 1838-1899

m 1864

**MARY BEMAN GATES**  
 1842-1921

- ③③ Sudbury
- ③⑥ Framingham
- Δ Waitsfield, Vt.
- \* Boston
- ✕ Marlborough
- ②① Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.

- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- ②⑨ Cambridge Farms (later Lexington)
- Δ Killingly, Conn.
- ♂ Edgartown, Martha's Vineyard

- Dedham
- ⊙ Hamilton
- Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., O.
- ✕ Malta, O.
- † Marietta, O.





---



## MOORE

---

**J**OHN<sup>1</sup> MOORE was a resident of Sudbury by or before 1642 for on September 1 of that year he bought<sup>14</sup> from Edmund<sup>1</sup> Rice his dwelling house and land on the old north street between Hugh<sup>1</sup> Griffin and Henry<sup>2</sup> Rice in the section<sup>2</sup> that is now Wayland (see map, p. 448). In 1645-6 he bought<sup>7,10</sup> of John<sup>2</sup> Stone (Gregory<sup>1</sup>) "his house-lot, with all other land belonging to the said John Stone that shall hereafter be due to the said John Stone by virtue of his first right in the beginning of the plantation of Sudbury; and also all the fences that is now standing about any part of the said land, and also all the board and shelves that are now about the house, whether fast or loose and now belonging to the said house."<sup>10,14</sup>

JOHN<sup>1</sup> is said to have been a town officer. He very evidently was married first to a wife who died, probably in England, leaving a daughter Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> and a son John<sup>2</sup> whom JOHN<sup>1</sup> in his will designated as his eldest daughter and eldest son. He had married secondly before his arrival at Sudbury and perhaps even before his emigration, ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> WHALE (see Whale, p. 662) who survived him. No especial trade or occupation is recorded relative to JOHN<sup>1</sup> though he is called "yeoman." Items showing the annoyances endured by the early residents of Sudbury include a law passed<sup>14</sup> in 1651 that any resident who "shall take pains by nets, guns line or otherwise, to destroy common offensive blackbirds, whether old or young, that for encouragement therein, they shall be paid for every dozen of heads of those birds that are brought to the public town meeting six pence in the next town rate." The order was to continue five years, and the birds were to be killed in town and by the people of the town. In 1654 a person who killed a woodpecker or a jay might receive one penny and that year the killing of a fox within the town brought a reward of one shilling sixpence.<sup>14</sup> JOHN<sup>1</sup> MOORE made his will<sup>1,3</sup> on August 25, 1668, referring to his "age." It provided for his wife ELIZABETH, gave five shillings each to his "eldest son" John<sup>2</sup> of Lancaster, "eldest daughter" Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> wife of Henry<sup>2</sup> Rice, daughter Mary<sup>2</sup> wife of Daniel<sup>3</sup> Stone, and "youngest daughter" LYDIA wife of JAMES<sup>2</sup> CUTLER "for that I have already paid them their portions" and of LYDIA it added "when I gave her in marriage unto Sam<sup>11</sup> Wright her former husband." It made bequests to his sons William<sup>2</sup>, Jacob<sup>2</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup> and BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup>. He made wife ELIZABETH his executrix and died<sup>1</sup> on January 6, 1673-4. The will was proved<sup>10,15</sup> on April 7, 1674, showing an estate<sup>1</sup> of over £804.

Evidence that ELIZABETH (WHALE) MOORE was not the mother of the two older children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> MOORE is further evidenced by the will of her father PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> WHALE dated January 19, 1675-6, for therein he made bequests<sup>1</sup> to the "four sonnes of my loving daughter ELIZABETH MOORE, viz<sup>t</sup> William, Jacob, Joseph and BENJAMIN." Widow ELIZABETH survived JOHN<sup>1</sup> MOORE sixteen years, dying at Sudbury<sup>5</sup> on December 14, 1690.

The children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> MOORE doubtless by an unknown first wife and quite surely born in England were<sup>2</sup>

- i. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, called eldest daughter by her father's will; d. Aug. 23, 1705, at Framingham;<sup>6</sup> m. at Sudbury<sup>5</sup> Jan. 1, 1643, Henry<sup>2</sup> Rice (Edmund<sup>1</sup>).<sup>4</sup>
- ii. John<sup>2</sup>, called eldest son by father's will; d. at Lancaster before Sept. 23, 1702, when his inventory was taken;<sup>2</sup> m. 1st at Sudbury<sup>5</sup> on Nov. 16, 1654, Ann Smith (dau. of John and Alice) who d. at Lancaster Mar. 10, 1670-1; m. 2nd Judith (—).

The children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH (WHALE) MOORE of whom two were ancestral to us and of whom a part were recorded at Sudbury (and all may have been born there) were<sup>1,2,5</sup>

- iii. William<sup>2</sup>, he bought land<sup>2</sup> in Sudbury in 1664 and sold forty-eight acres to brother BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> in 1679. Died<sup>2,5</sup> at Sudbury Mar. 25, 1688, evidently unmarried.
- iv. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>7</sup> abt. 1641; d.<sup>7</sup> Jan. 10, 1702-3; m. 1st at Sudbury<sup>2,5</sup> on Sept. 8, 1661, Richard Ward of that place who was drowned in the Sudbury River Mar. 31, 1666; m. there<sup>2,5</sup> 2nd Nov. 22, 1667, Daniel<sup>3</sup> Stone (John<sup>2</sup>, Gregory<sup>1</sup>).<sup>7</sup>
- v. LYDIA<sup>2</sup>, b. at Sudbury June 24, 1643; d. there<sup>5,8</sup> Nov. 23, 1723; m. 1st there<sup>5</sup> May 31, 1664, Samuel Wright\* who d. Aug. 21, 1664; m. there<sup>5</sup> 2nd June 15, 1665, JAMES<sup>2</sup> CUTLER (see Cutler, p. 200).<sup>8</sup>
- vi. Jacob<sup>2</sup>, b. at Sudbury Apr. 28, 1645; d. there<sup>2,5</sup> Mar. 23, 1715-6; m. there<sup>2,5</sup> May 29, 1667, Elizabeth Loker (Henry).
- vii. \*\*Joseph<sup>2</sup>, b. at Sudbury Oct. 21, 1647; d. there<sup>2,5</sup> Jan. 2, 1725-6 aged<sup>10</sup> 78-79 years; m. 1st by 1668 Lydia<sup>2</sup> Maynard (John<sup>1</sup> of Sudbury)<sup>11</sup> who d. at Sudbury<sup>5</sup> Nov. 23, 1717; m. 2nd<sup>1</sup> after 1717-8 when Joseph<sup>2</sup> made his will, Ruth (—) who was not provided for by that document, but by a later agreement<sup>1</sup> of his sons Benjamin<sup>2</sup> and John<sup>2</sup>.
- viii. BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- ix. †Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. at Sudbury Jan. 10, 1649; she d. young for her father's will of August 1668 called LYDIA<sup>2</sup> his youngest daughter.

BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> MOORE (*John<sup>1</sup>*) though unrecorded must have been born at Sudbury where the family lived<sup>2</sup> for two generations or more and both<sup>2</sup> December 13, 1648, and<sup>3</sup> January 10, 1649-50, have been suggested as his birth date. He died there on October 29, 1729, having married at the age of about thirty-six or more at Sudbury<sup>5</sup> on November 11, 1686, DOROTHY<sup>3</sup> WRIGHT (see Wright, p. 686) who was twelve or fourteen years his junior and who died there<sup>5</sup> on October 20, 1717. By the will of his father<sup>3</sup> JOHN<sup>1</sup>, made in 1668 and proved in April, 1674, BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> received about a hundred and twenty acres of upland in two pieces one of which adjoined the land of Ens. John<sup>1</sup> Grout; five pieces of meadow land totaling twenty-one and a half acres; and the town right which the testator had formerly bought of Nathaniel Treadway as well as £20 in corn and cattle at price current within one year after the death of widow<sup>3</sup> ELIZABETH. As to military service for BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup>, one of his name who may have been he, served<sup>17</sup> in the first or Mt. Hope Campaign of Philip's War under Capt. Thomas Prentice and had due him £2-3 on August

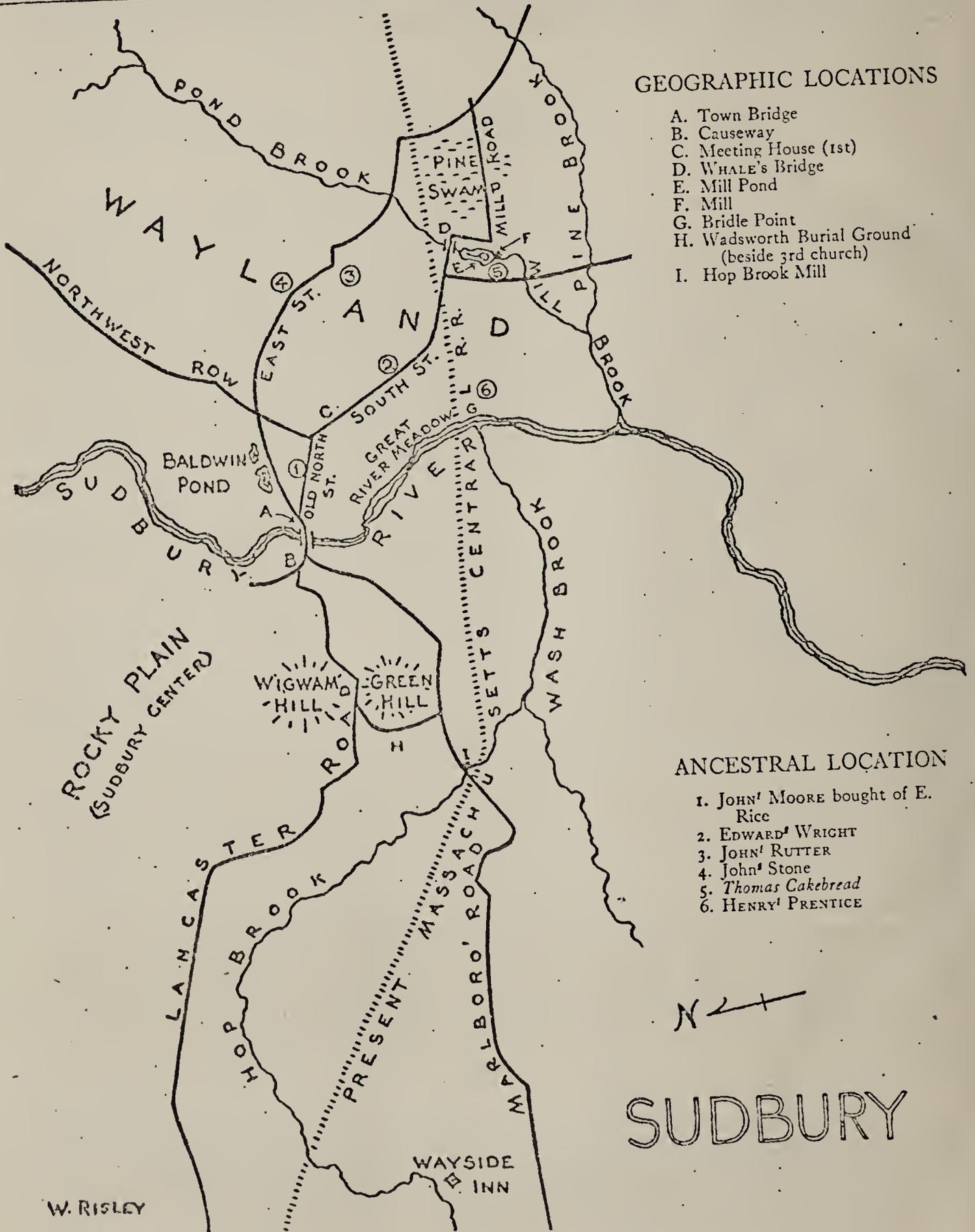
\*Samuel Wright was in all probability<sup>12</sup> a son of widow DOROTHY (—) WRIGHT Blanford and brother of our EDWARD<sup>1</sup> WRIGHT of Sudbury (see Wright, p. 679).

\*\*Joseph<sup>2</sup> Moore is repeatedly recorded<sup>1,2</sup> as having married first, one Lydia "Hayward" and even<sup>3</sup> a Lydia "Axtell," Hayward having been a mis-reading for Maynard and the mother of his wife Lydia was Mary widow of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Axtell who married secondly as his second wife John<sup>1</sup> Maynard of Sudbury. Maynard in his will<sup>16</sup> dated September 4, 1672 called<sup>11</sup> his daughter Lydia "wife of Joseph Moores."

†This recorded birth of a second Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> while the eldest daughter of that name was still living may be an error but instances of two children bearing a given name are not unknown in early records, and in this case the first Elizabeth<sup>1</sup> had long before changed her name by marriage.





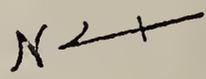


GEOGRAPHIC LOCATIONS

- A. Town Bridge
- B. Causeway
- C. Meeting House (1st)
- D. WHALE'S Bridge
- E. Mill Pond
- F. Mill
- G. Bridle Point
- H. Wadsworth Burial Ground (beside 3rd church)
- I. Hop Brook Mill

ANCESTRAL LOCATION

- 1. JOHN<sup>l</sup> MOORE bought of E. Rice
- 2. EDWARD<sup>l</sup> WRIGHT
- 3. JOHN<sup>l</sup> RUTTER
- 4. John<sup>l</sup> Stone
- 5. Thomas Cakebread
- 6. HENRY<sup>l</sup> PRENTICE



SUDBURY

W. RISLEY

27, 1675. BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> made no claim for loss as a result of the Sudbury Fight<sup>14,17</sup> in April, 1676, but his brother Jacob<sup>2</sup> claimed a loss of £50 and his brother William<sup>2</sup> of £180.<sup>14</sup> Other victims were Widow WHALE and EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT.

BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> has been called<sup>3</sup> "a prosperous farmer" and in January, 1679-80, he bought<sup>18</sup> from his brother William<sup>2</sup> "his now dwelling house" in Sudbury<sup>1</sup> and forty-eight acres of land in four pieces. In 1688 the town stock of ammunition was distributed among the settlers<sup>14</sup> who had agreed "to respond for the same in case it be not spent in real service in the resistance of the enemy" and among those who accepted and signed were BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> MOORE, his brother Joseph<sup>2</sup>, our Lt. EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT and Sergt. JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER. Each one who participated received a little over four pounds of powder, a little over three pounds of shot and thirteen flints.<sup>14</sup>

On June 5, 1700, Capt. EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT sold land to his daughter DOROTHY, calling<sup>3</sup> her "then wife of BENJAMIN MOORE." In 1707 there was under consideration a petition relative to dividing the town<sup>10,14</sup> into two parts or precincts and a removal of the church site. BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> being a resident of the west side opposed<sup>14</sup> the removal. In July, 1715, he and Samuel<sup>3</sup> Wright (EDWARD<sup>2</sup>) were a committee to lay out a highway from the property of John Rice, jr. so that he might pass "to meeting, Market and Mill &c."<sup>14</sup> In February of 1716-7 being called<sup>2,14</sup> "Sergeant" BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> MOORE, he was one of a committee of five to lay out a burying place<sup>14</sup> on the west side of the river and he was one of thirty-six men who made up the "Proprietary" of Sudbury which would have been on the right of Nathaniel Treadway which his father had purchased and willed him. Joseph<sup>2</sup> was another of the thirty-six Proprietaries<sup>14</sup> because of the inheritance of the right of his father JOHN<sup>1</sup> MOORE.

BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> left no will but in 1726 when he had been already nine years a widower, he divided his property<sup>1,18</sup> among his five sons, William<sup>3</sup>, Edward<sup>3</sup>, Peter<sup>3</sup>, Uriah<sup>3</sup>, and Hezekiah<sup>3</sup>, deeding<sup>3</sup> to the eldest, William<sup>3</sup>, "the house I now dwell in, with all buildings and land" in consideration of "his taking care of me during the rest of my natural life and paying £50 to whom I have ordered."<sup>3</sup> He had undoubtedly given their portions to his daughters when they were married.

The children\* of BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> and DOROTHY (WRIGHT) MOORE all born in Sudbury but in uncertain order were<sup>2,5</sup>

- I. Dorothy<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 18, 1687. It was undoubtedly she\*\* who m. before<sup>6</sup> 1706 Caleb<sup>4</sup> Johnson of Sudbury, Framingham and Shrewsbury and died Jan. 25, 1741-2.
- II. Abigail<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 2, 1688; m.<sup>2,5</sup> at Sudbury July 26, 1708 Josial (sic) Brown.
- III. Prudence<sup>3</sup>, b. July 14, 1690; d. yng.
- IV. William<sup>3</sup>, b. abt.<sup>2,3</sup> 1692; d. at Rutland, Dec. 4, 1756, in his sixty-fifth year, then called "Lt."; m. at Sudbury on Jan. 21, 1715-6, Tamar<sup>4</sup> Rice (John<sup>3</sup>, Edward<sup>2</sup>, Edmund<sup>1</sup>).<sup>4</sup>

\*Some writers assign to this family an additional son Benjamin<sup>3</sup> whom they claim married on June 4, 1728, at Sudbury, Zerviah<sup>4</sup> or Zebiah<sup>4</sup> Moore (Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) while other records name the bridegroom as Benjamin Stow and still others claim he was<sup>5</sup> Benjamin Howe.

\*\*A situation that furnishes all *but* proof of the marriage and death of Dorothy<sup>3</sup> Moore born in 1687, is found in the person and family of Caleb<sup>4</sup> Johnson who accepted land in 1730, after the death<sup>5</sup> of BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> MOORE, from four of his sons<sup>1</sup> William<sup>2</sup>, Edward<sup>2</sup>, Hezekiah<sup>2</sup> and Uriah<sup>2</sup> for the care and ultimate burial of their sister Comfort<sup>3</sup> Moore above, which presupposes a relationship with Johnson. Caleb<sup>4</sup> Johnson (Caleb<sup>3</sup>, Solomon<sup>2</sup>, Solomon<sup>1</sup>)<sup>13</sup> who was also born in 1687, who resided in Framingham and in Shrewsbury, had a first wife Dorothy, hitherto unidentified, who bore him nine children, and died at Shrewsbury,<sup>13</sup> January 25, 1741-2, followed by the death of three of their children in less than two months evidently from some epidemic. Caleb<sup>4</sup> married secondly in 1743 Elizabeth Bryant of Sudbury and died<sup>13</sup> about 1766. It is an odd fact that he and Dorothy<sup>3</sup> Moore, his presumed first wife, were both born<sup>19</sup> in Sudbury on Sept. 18, 1687.

- v. Peter<sup>s</sup>, his will was probated<sup>1</sup> in 1770; m. at Sudbury<sup>2,5</sup> on June 10, 1719, Mary Goodenow. They settled in the part of Rutland which became Paxton.<sup>2</sup>
- vi. Edward<sup>s</sup>, m. at Sudbury<sup>2,5</sup> on Feb. 19, 1722-3, Keziah Goodenow.
- vii. Hezekiah<sup>s</sup>, b. Sept. 13, 1696; his will of 1775 was probated<sup>2</sup> in 1794; m. at Sudbury<sup>2,5</sup> June 27, 1728, Mary<sup>4</sup> Haynes (David<sup>s</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Walter<sup>1</sup>).<sup>9</sup>
- viii. Uriah<sup>s</sup>, a physician; his estate was administered<sup>2</sup> in 1746; m. 1st at Sudbury<sup>2,5</sup> Oct. 5, 1721, Abigail<sup>4</sup> Haynes (David<sup>s</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Walter<sup>1</sup>);<sup>9</sup> m. 2nd<sup>5</sup> there Jan. 2, 1742, Parnel Parker who administered his estate.<sup>1,2</sup>
- ix. Comfort<sup>s</sup>, b. Feb. 8, 1702-3; she was unable to care for herself and in 1730 her brothers William<sup>s</sup>, Edward<sup>s</sup>, Hezekiah<sup>s</sup> and Uriah<sup>s</sup> deeded<sup>18</sup> a piece of land to Caleb Johnson of Framingham for him to use for her support and burial. It was undoubtedly she<sup>2</sup> who d. at Shrewsbury on March 30, 1755, "aged<sup>13</sup> between 50 and 60."
- x. PRUDENCE<sup>s</sup>, b. July 22, 1704; d. after 1759; m. 1st at Sudbury<sup>2,5</sup> on Dec. 18, 1732,\* MARK<sup>a</sup> VORCE (see Vorce, p. 644); m. there 2nd on<sup>5</sup> Oct. 18, 1759, Daniel Woodward.\*\*

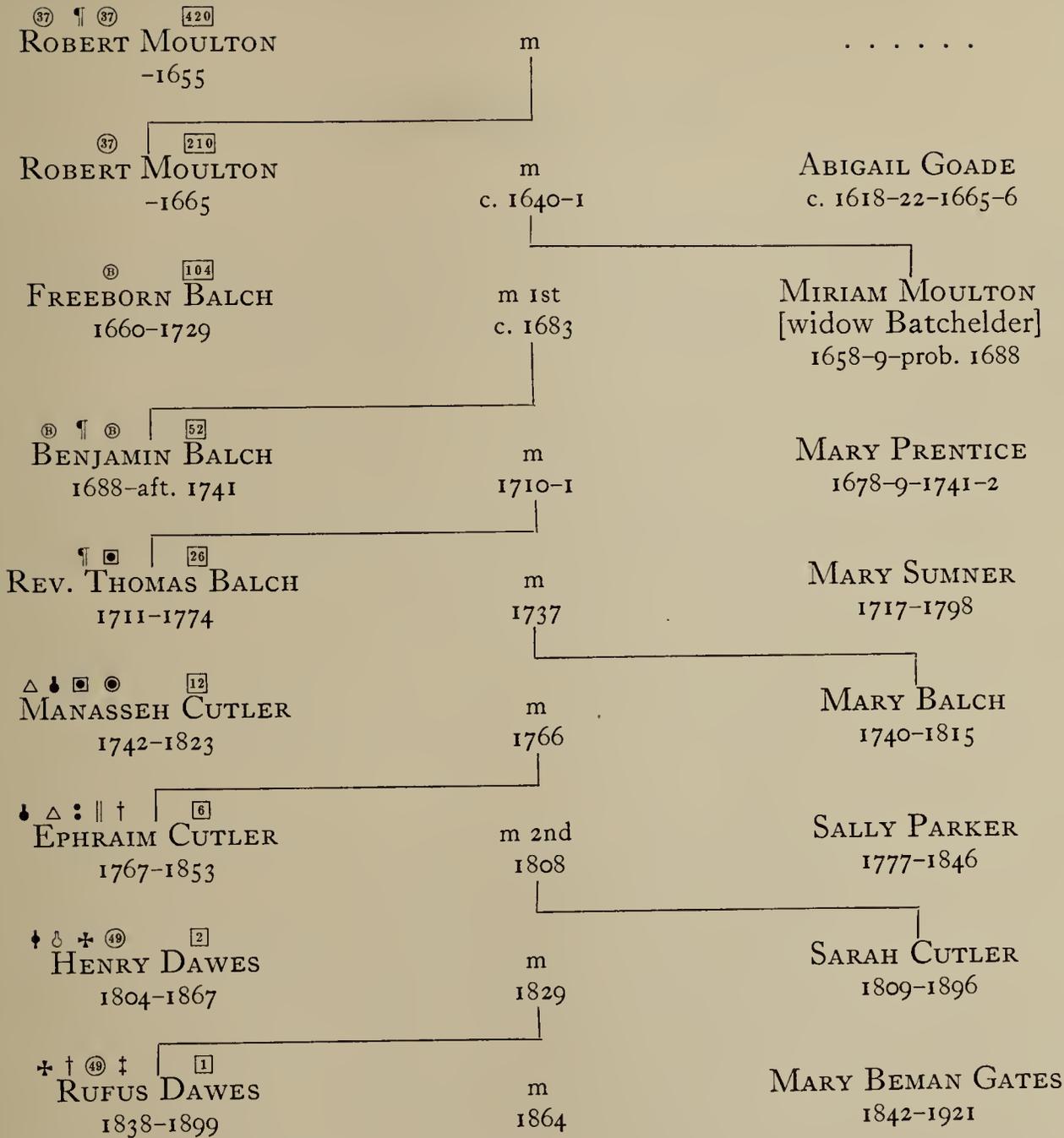
\*The name VORCE in the published vital records of Sudbury is frequently misspelled "Morse" (see p. 644).

\*\*Daniel<sup>4</sup> Woodward (John<sup>s</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>) born about 1695; died between April 11 and June 28, 1760, had married first at Sudbury on August 21, 1716, Sarah<sup>s</sup> Goodenow (Edmund<sup>s</sup>, Edmund<sup>1</sup>) who died on July 20, 1758. Three sons had died young and only two daughters lived to marry, Keziah<sup>6</sup> Woodward to Nathan<sup>4</sup> Loring son of the Rev. Israel<sup>2</sup>, and Susanna<sup>6</sup> Woodward to Israel<sup>4</sup> Moore (Daniel<sup>s</sup>, Jacob<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).

## REFERENCES

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <p>1. New England Register LII, 72-3; LVII, 300-2, 306-8; LVIII, 176-7.</p> <p>2. William Henry Moore and His Ancestry, L. E. and A. L. de Forest, 1934, pp. 319-25, 336-40.</p> <p>3. Hubbard Thompson Memorial . . . , L. K. Stewart, 1914, pp. 189-92; Bullard and Allied Families, E. J. Bullard, 1930, pp. 95-6.</p> <p>4. Rice Family, A. H. Ward, 1858, pp. 5, 17.</p> <p>5. Vital Records of Sudbury, pp. 94-6, 98, 185, 236, 238-9, 279, 316-7.</p> <p>6. Vital Records of Framingham, pp. 124, 460.</p> <p>7. Gregory Stone Genealogy, J. G. Bartlett, 1918, pp. 67, 82, 84.</p> <p>8. Cutler Memorial, N. S. Cutler, 1889, pp. 21-2.</p> <p>9. Walter Haynes and his Descendants, F. and F. M. Haynes, 1929, pp. 60, 66.</p> <p>10. Worcester Society of Antiquity Proceedings, XXIV, 100-113.</p> | <p>11. Pope's Pioneers, p. 308; Savage's Dictionary, III, 186; History of Sudbury, A. S. Hudson, 1889, pp. 47-8.</p> <p>12. Hudson's Sudbury, pp. 45, 56.</p> <p>13. New England Register, LXVI, 236-7; Vital Records of Shrewsbury, pp. 175, 260, 266; History of Framingham, J. H. Temple, 1887, p. 609; History of Framingham, W. Barry, 1847, p. 303.</p> <p>14. Hudson's Sudbury, pp. 41, 51, 117, 121, 130-1, 256-7, 270, 286-7.</p> <p>15. Pope's Pioneers, p. 317.</p> <p>16. Research by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Middlesex Probates, File No. 14851.</p> <p>17. Soldiers of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 81, 224-5.</p> <p>18. Middlesex County Deeds, X, 92; XXVII, 224; XXVIII, 420, 423; XXIX, 107; XLII, 702; VL, 415.</p> <p>19. Vital Records of Sudbury, pp. 79, 91.</p> |
|---|--|

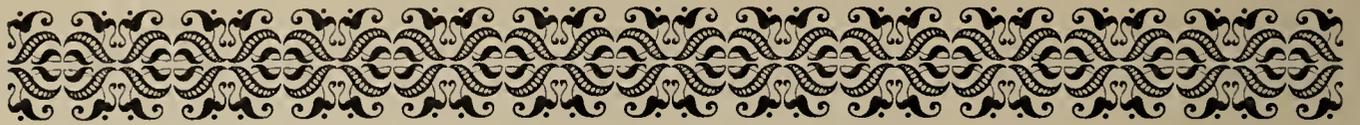
# MOULTON



(37) Salem  
 ¶ Charlestown  
 (B) Beverly  
 □ Dedham  
 △ Killingly, Conn.

♀ Edgartown  
 ● Hamilton  
 : Waterford, O.  
 || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.  
 † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

† Thomaston, Me.  
 ♂ Morgan Co., O.  
 † Malta, O.  
 (49) Mauston, Wis.  
 † Marietta, O.



## MOULTON

**R**OBERT<sup>1</sup> MOULTON, called<sup>3</sup> “a celebrated ship-carpenter,” with his son ROBERT<sup>2</sup> came\* to New England in the Fleet of six vessels<sup>2</sup> which brought over in 1629 probably three hundred and fifty passengers including “the ministers”,\*\* our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DODGE (Dawes-Gates, II, 319) and HENRY<sup>1</sup> HERRICK (ibid., 421).

This Fleet sailed in the early spring of 1629 and the vessels arrived<sup>2</sup> at Salem at different dates during the late spring and early summer. The English Company, acting as financial backers for the settling of Massachusetts Bay Colony, were directly responsible for the coming of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> in the interest of boat building and the sending of five workmen with him. A letter written<sup>4</sup> in London<sup>24</sup> on April 29, 1629, by the English Company to John Endicott of Salem reads in part: “. . . Wee haue sent six ship wrights of whom ROBERT MOLTON is cheif. These mens entertainm<sup>t</sup> is very chargable† to vs; and by agreem<sup>t</sup> it is to bee borne two thirds at the charages of the genall Companie, and the other third is to bee borne by Mr Cradock o<sup>r</sup> Gournor, and his assotiatts interested in a private stock. . . .”<sup>24</sup> So certainly by the early summer<sup>7</sup> of 1629 boat building at Salem should have been in active operation.

Evidence of the economic importance<sup>7</sup> of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> in the eyes of the English Company who engaged and sent him to the colony is seen in the fact that soon after his arrival he addressed the Company personally,<sup>8</sup> over his own signature, instead of through some Colonial official, for under date of September 29, 1629, a letter of his had already reached them, doubtless reporting on his work and the conditions he had found in the new world. On the above date it was recorded that “at the Deputy’s House in London ‘Letters from ROBERT MOULTON, the shipwright and from the cowpers [coopers] and Cleavers of wood were now read.’ To these persons, being in the Plantation, replies were to be sent by the next ships.”<sup>8</sup>

A letter from the English Company to Endicott under date of May 28, 1629, referred to the building of shallops for the fishing business by the six shipwrights, so probably they immediately did somewhat of building at Salem but by 1630 MOULTON is recorded as living at Charlestown.<sup>4,7</sup> There “MOULTON’s Point” was named for him by or before 1631 and in that vicinity Mr. Cradock, his part-time

\*James<sup>1</sup> Moulton, younger brother of ROBERT<sup>1</sup>, also came over<sup>1</sup> but there has been found no evidence of a wife for ROBERT<sup>1</sup> in New England unless the Mary Moulton who joined<sup>7</sup> Salem Church in 1638 was his wife.

\*\*In this Fleet at least three ministers are said to have emigrated,<sup>2</sup> namely the Reverends Francis Higginson, Ralph Smith and Samuel Skelton.

†Being “very chargable” meant costly, expensive. A note states<sup>15</sup> that “a week after the swearing in of the assistants (in London) 30 March, 1629, ROBERT MOLTON, a shipwright, was paid 10<sup>11</sup> apparently earnest-money. On 2 April, it was agreed that he and two or three men were to go to New England. . . .” Six had been sent when, on May 28 a seventh was dispatched.<sup>15</sup>

employer, had a "plantation" and a ship yard on the "Mystic" River<sup>15</sup> of whom it is recorded that "he [Cradock] is at charges of building ships. The last year one was upon the stockes of a hundred Tunne, that being finished, they are to build one twice her burden. . . ."<sup>3</sup> So, undoubtedly, the presence at Charlestown of ROBERT<sup>1</sup>, and of course of his crew of workmen also, was because they were then working for Matthew Cradock and his associates.

The presence of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> in Charlestown, however, seems to have been quite continuous from 1630 to 1635 or perhaps a little later. He became a \*freeman<sup>2,3</sup> on May 18, 1631, which presupposes church membership; was a member of Charlestown's first board of selectmen; was chosen constable of Charlestown and took the constable's oath on April 1, 1634; was a deputy<sup>24</sup> at the first court in 1634 and again<sup>8,17</sup> in 1635 as well as in April, 1637, from Salem.

When the colony began to plan a defence for Boston, with Castle Island as its base and considered building a floating fort of twenty-one by forty feet adjacent to Castle Island, on which cannon would be placed to protect the main channel toward the village of Boston, the General Court on March 4, 1633-4, named<sup>9</sup> ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MOULTON, Capt. William Peirce (see Brewer, p. 108) and Mr. Beecher as a committee. On May 13, 1634, these three men "are desired to treat & bargain with M<sup>r</sup> STEVENS\*\* & M<sup>r</sup> Mayhewe, or with either of them, for the building of the seaffort by the greate,† & the Court promiseth to pforme what bargain they shall soe make for manner & time of payem<sup>t</sup>."<sup>9,24</sup>

In September, 1634, a plan was suggested<sup>3,9</sup> of building a land fortification on the hill at the Point near to ROBERT MOULTON's (MOULTON's Point) at Charlestown but that was also given up.<sup>3</sup> In 1635 the townsmen of Charlestown gave a citizen permission to buy<sup>3</sup> property from ROBERT<sup>1</sup> — probably his home, in preparation for the removal of the MOULTONS to Salem to which place they very soon returned, for on February 20, 1636-7, ROBERT<sup>1</sup> received a grant of one hundred acres at Jeffrey's Creek.<sup>17,19</sup> In March, 1636-7 the court ordered that Salem should refund a tax to ROBERT<sup>1</sup> in these surprising words:<sup>9</sup> "It is thought equall [justice] by the Court that the towne of Salem should repay to Goodman ROBERT MOULTON the money taken of him for the last 1,200£ rate."<sup>9</sup> In April, 1637, ROBERT<sup>1</sup> was chosen<sup>19,24</sup> as a deputy from Salem to the General Court, as he had earlier been chosen from Charlestown, which proves the enviable standing he held where he was best known. In May, 1637, ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MOULTON had also been chosen as an Assistant to the Magistrates, the equivalent to the present day senate of the legislature. In 1636-7 he had served as a selectman<sup>17</sup> of Salem and in June, 1637, an odd situation arose for of a group of twelve men chosen<sup>19</sup> as selectmen of Salem, six were ancestral to us, namely ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MOULTON, JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH (see p. 71), THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER (see p. 303), ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT (Dawes-Gates, II, 221), THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SCRUGGS (ibid., II, 721) and JOHN<sup>1</sup> WOODBURY (ibid., II, 823).

\*At this same time<sup>16</sup> JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH (see p. 70), THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD (see p. 293), JOHN<sup>1</sup> PERKINS (see p. 483), ROGER CONANT (Dawes-Gates, II, 221), MATTHEW<sup>1</sup> GRANT, (ibid., II, 371), HENRY<sup>1</sup> HERRICK (ibid., II, 421) and JOHN<sup>1</sup> WOODBURY (ibid., II, 823) also took the oath of freemanship.<sup>16</sup>

\*\*This was our WILLIAM STEVENS (see p. 562).

†By Webster this unusual term seems to have implied a contract for the building of the floating fort to completeness and the charge for its construction in entirety, for which the court had earlier offered<sup>9</sup> the sum of £10 to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS. Many men had at this earlier date offered subscriptions of various sums of money or quantities of plank, but the plan of a floating fort was dropped.

But late in 1637 ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MOULTON deliberately put himself "beyond the pale" and brought his public life and service to an abrupt end, for *principle's* sake. Ann Hutchinson and her brother-in-law the Rev. John Wheelwright had become disturbing elements in the colony's religious life and Wheelwright had been convicted of contempt and sedition and had been ordered disfranchised and banished while Ann was ordered into exile. A goodly number of the colonists had signed a petition asking for lenience for these offenders and as a consequence in November, 1637, the court gave seventy-five of these signers<sup>7,16</sup> the choice of retracting "their sin" before two magistrates or of being disarmed — and some of them were also disfranchised. In this group were two ancestors of ours, ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MOULTON and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SCRUGGS, who neither of them retracted and who were consequently out of public life thereafter. In being disarmed they faced the necessity of giving up all arms including guns, pistols, swords, powder, shot and match. The order carried a £10 fine for any failure to so deliver, or a similar fine for any one who subsequently borrowed or bought such arms.<sup>16</sup> This ruling would cause an uncomfortable situation if an Indian raid occurred. The government was consistent enough to excuse from personal military training those who were disarmed but required them to pay a tax for the upkeep of the train band.<sup>16</sup> Their punishment evidently included an inhibition against the holding of office and these two men, both of whom had previously held the honor of deputyships to the General Court, served no more in that capacity.<sup>7</sup> The only forms of civic service recorded henceforth as performed by ROBERT<sup>1</sup> was that in November, 1638, he assisted<sup>19</sup> ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT in examining the accounts of two constables and in 1644 and 1647 he served on trial juries.<sup>19</sup>

Incidental items inform<sup>19</sup> us that in 1640 there were four persons in the family of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> (who were probably his son ROBERT<sup>2</sup> and wife who were married about that time; also that in 1640 ROBERT<sup>1</sup>, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER and one other resident furnished a bull apiece to run with the herd and each received twenty shillings for the service.<sup>19</sup> In 1642 the townsmen ordered<sup>4,19</sup> that "the high way by the bridge shalbe laid out through the lotts of goodman MOULTON &c, not round about." This furnished a shorter land route out of Salem than had hitherto been established.<sup>4</sup>

At Salem ROBERT<sup>1</sup> evidently<sup>17</sup> had a shipyard on North River where Boston Street crossed the cove which was later filled in and called Blubber Hollow;<sup>7</sup> other descriptions are that it was "near where Boston Street crossed the branch of North River on the causeway which succeeded the earlier bridge," and that it was beyond<sup>7</sup> Becket Street along North River. His home was probably on lot No. 3 facing<sup>17</sup> on the Harbor of North River.

In July, 1644, the church decided<sup>18</sup> to check up on loafers who failed to attend religious service so they planned that each Lord's day two men should "walke forth in the time of Gods worshippe, to take notice of such as either lye about the meeting howse . . . or that lye at home or in the fields . . ." to present them to the Magistrate, and one Sabbath Emanuel<sup>1</sup> Downing and ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MOULTON were to serve so, while the following Sabbath ROBERT<sup>2</sup> MOULTON and Richard Ingersoll were appointed to the task.<sup>18</sup>

The will of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MOULTON dated at Salem February 20, 1654-5, was proved on June 26, 1655, and his death occurred between these dates. It made his son ROBERT<sup>2</sup> his executor, named his daughter Dorothy Edwards, left his farm to son ROBERT<sup>2</sup> until his grandson Robert<sup>3</sup> became of age when he was to have one-half

of it, with the apple trees, and after his parents' death he was to have the entire farm.<sup>12</sup> The inventory showed property to the value of over £121 including a furnished home in town and another on his farm, a considerable amount of live stock and convenient household furnishings.<sup>12</sup> George<sup>2</sup> Gardner (THOMAS<sup>1</sup>) of Salem was a witness and took part in proving this will.

The known children of ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MOULTON by his unknown wife, both born in England, were<sup>1,2,12</sup>

I. ROBERT<sup>2</sup>, see following.

II. Dorothy<sup>2</sup>, was named<sup>1</sup> in her father's will of February 20, 1654-5 as Dorothy Edwards and by that document she was given twenty marks and two pillobers marked <sup>D</sup>R M. From the fact that no share of household goods was given her, it seems probable that she lived at a distance. That fact, taken with certain circumstantial evidence which will follow, justifies a theory as to her later life which, frankly, has *not* been *proved*. The theory is that Dorothy<sup>2</sup> Moulton probably married first Abraham<sup>2</sup> Finch (Abraham<sup>1</sup>) sometimes suggested as of Watertown but certainly of Wethersfield, Conn. where he died leaving an estate inventoried<sup>21</sup> at £137 on September 3, 1640, a widow and a minor son, whose grandfather Abraham<sup>1</sup> Finch offered on December 3, 1640, to educate the child at his own expense.<sup>21</sup> The claim is made<sup>22</sup> that Abraham<sup>2</sup> Finch was killed by the Indians in April, 1636, that his son Abraham<sup>2</sup> was adopted by the grandfather Abraham<sup>1</sup> Finch and that the widow Dorothy married secondly in 1637-8 John Edwards of Wethersfield who died about December, 1664, after which she married thirdly<sup>23</sup> about 1666 Richard Tousley, removed to Saybrook and died after 1676. Her son Abraham<sup>2</sup> Finch (Abraham<sup>2</sup>, Abraham<sup>1</sup>) became a freeman in 1658, removed with his mother to Saybrook, died unmarried and gave his property to his half-sisters by the name of Edwards. The names of the children whom wife Dorothy bore to her second husband Edwards were John aged 26 in 1664, Esther aged 23, Ruth aged 21, Hannah aged 19, Joseph aged 16 and Lydia. The inventory of the estate of the deceased Edwards totaled £400 and administration was granted<sup>22</sup> to the widow Dorothy (*Moulton?*) Edwards and *her* eldest son John. She was the widow Towsley in 1676.

ROBERT<sup>2</sup> MOULTON (*Robert<sup>1</sup>*) born in England probably about 1615-20, died at Salem in the autumn<sup>3</sup> of 1665 between September 5 and November 28. He had married at Salem about 1640 ABIGAIL<sup>1</sup> GOADE or GOODE (see Goade and Downing, p. 317) who survived him. In January, 1637-8, ROBERT<sup>2</sup> as "Junior" desired<sup>20</sup> the "accommodation of a farme" at Salem and in February he was granted<sup>20</sup> forty acres. The statement has been made<sup>1</sup> that in 1640 he was the rector of a church in Salem but that is certainly an error for the word "rector" then implied the Church of England and the colonists would not have tolerated the establishment of such an organization then. In 1640 probably before his marriage ROBERT<sup>2</sup> joined the Salem church<sup>7</sup> for in that year his fiancée joined it as "ABIGAIL GOOD."

In July, 1644, (*vide supra*) ROBERT<sup>2</sup> was appointed<sup>19</sup> by the church authorities to check up on absentees from the religious service, one Sabbath. In February, 1649-50 he made a request for thirty acres which he claimed had formerly been granted to him. After the death of his son-in-law, Benjamin Bellflower, which occurred on February 24, 1660-1, ROBERT<sup>2</sup> helped to take an inventory of that man's estate on March 16 following, and signed it with his autograph.<sup>25</sup> Next to nothing is recorded of the life of ROBERT<sup>2</sup>.

The will<sup>12</sup> of ROBERT<sup>2</sup> MOULTON, then called senior, was signed on September 5, 1665, and proved in Salem Court on November 28, 1665. It made his wife ABIGAIL his executrix, gave to son Robert<sup>3</sup> and daughter Abigail<sup>3</sup> each £5, to son Samuel<sup>3</sup> his six score acres of land at Reading "buttinge on Ipswich riuer"; to

daughter Hannah<sup>s</sup> "twentie pounds in neate Cattle to be pd at her day of marriage." He gave to his two younger sons John<sup>s</sup> and Joseph<sup>s</sup> the family home, land and meadow after the death of mother ABIGAIL with the requirement that these two sons should give £20 apiece within a year after they came into possession, to the testator's two young daughters "MERIAM<sup>s</sup>" and Mary<sup>s</sup>. His property was inventoried<sup>12</sup> at over £294 with debts of about £20. It was both witnessed and proved by George<sup>2</sup> Gardner and his brother Samuel<sup>2</sup> Gardner (THOMAS<sup>1</sup>).

Only three or four months after the death of ROBERT<sup>2</sup>, his wife ABIGAIL also died, leaving at least four minor children ranging from about eleven to five years of age including our MIRIAM<sup>s</sup> whose life from the age of about seven onward would have been directed by her "Gardients" the two sons of our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER. The will of widow ABIGAIL MOULTON of Salem, dated February 5, 1665-6, and proved March 27, 1666, made her son Robert<sup>s</sup> her executor and four neighbor men including George<sup>2</sup> and Samuel<sup>2</sup> Gardner (THOMAS<sup>1</sup>) were named "ouerseeres of this my will & Gardients to my children tel they Com to Age. . . ." The Gardner brothers were both witnesses and proved the document. ABIGAIL specified certain legacies of live stock, furniture or household goods to each of her eight children and then assigned equal shares of the remainder to the group. In this connection she gave to MIRIAM<sup>s</sup> "one laste sheet" and to Mary<sup>s</sup> "one payre of pillobers" as well as a share each, in the remainder of the estate. The inventory<sup>12</sup> suggests that the sickness of ABIGAIL (and perhaps other members of the family) must have been costly for her inventory amounted to only £246 as against the £294 left<sup>12</sup> by ROBERT<sup>2</sup> a few months earlier.

The children of ROBERT<sup>2</sup> and ABIGAIL (GOADE) MOULTON, all born in Salem but in slightly uncertain order, were<sup>1,4,6,10</sup>

- i. Abigail<sup>s</sup>, bap.<sup>1,10</sup> Dec. 25, 1642, or bap.<sup>3,6</sup> May 22, 1642; m.<sup>14</sup> Feb. 3, 1658-9, Benjamin<sup>1</sup> Bellflower of Reading, a Quaker who died<sup>25</sup> in 1661.
- ii. Robert<sup>s</sup>, bap. June 23, 1644; d. at Salem abt. 1730; m. there July 17, 1672, Mary Cook, dau. of Henry and Judith (Birdsale).
- iii. Hannah<sup>s</sup>, d. at Salem Mar. 20, 1673; m. there<sup>11</sup> May 22, 1666, Capt. Thomas Flint (Thomas).
- iv. Samuel<sup>s</sup>, adm. on his estate<sup>12</sup> granted June 30, 1668, with George<sup>2</sup> and Samuel<sup>2</sup> Gardner (THOMAS<sup>1</sup>) as two of the four administrators.
- v. John<sup>s</sup>, b.<sup>1,10</sup> Apr. 25, 1654-5 or<sup>6</sup> "June 25 [bef. 1656]"; d. 1741 at Salem; m. at Marblehead<sup>11</sup> Sept. 16, 1684, Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Corey (Giles<sup>1</sup>).
- vi. Joseph<sup>s</sup>, b. Jan. 3, 1656-7; living<sup>10</sup> 1708.
- vii. \*MIRIAM<sup>s</sup>, b. Jan. 1658-9; d.<sup>10</sup> abt. 1688; m. 1st at Salem<sup>11</sup> Oct. 8, 1677, Joseph<sup>2</sup> Batchelder (JOHN<sup>1</sup>) lost at sea abt. 1681; m. 2nd in the fall of 1682 FREEBORN<sup>s</sup> BALCH (see Balch. p. 75).
- viii. Mary<sup>s</sup>, b. June 15, 1661; d.<sup>14</sup> bef. Aug. 1693; m. at Salem as his first wife Apr. 7, 1680, William<sup>2</sup> Lord (William<sup>1</sup> of Salem<sup>14</sup>).

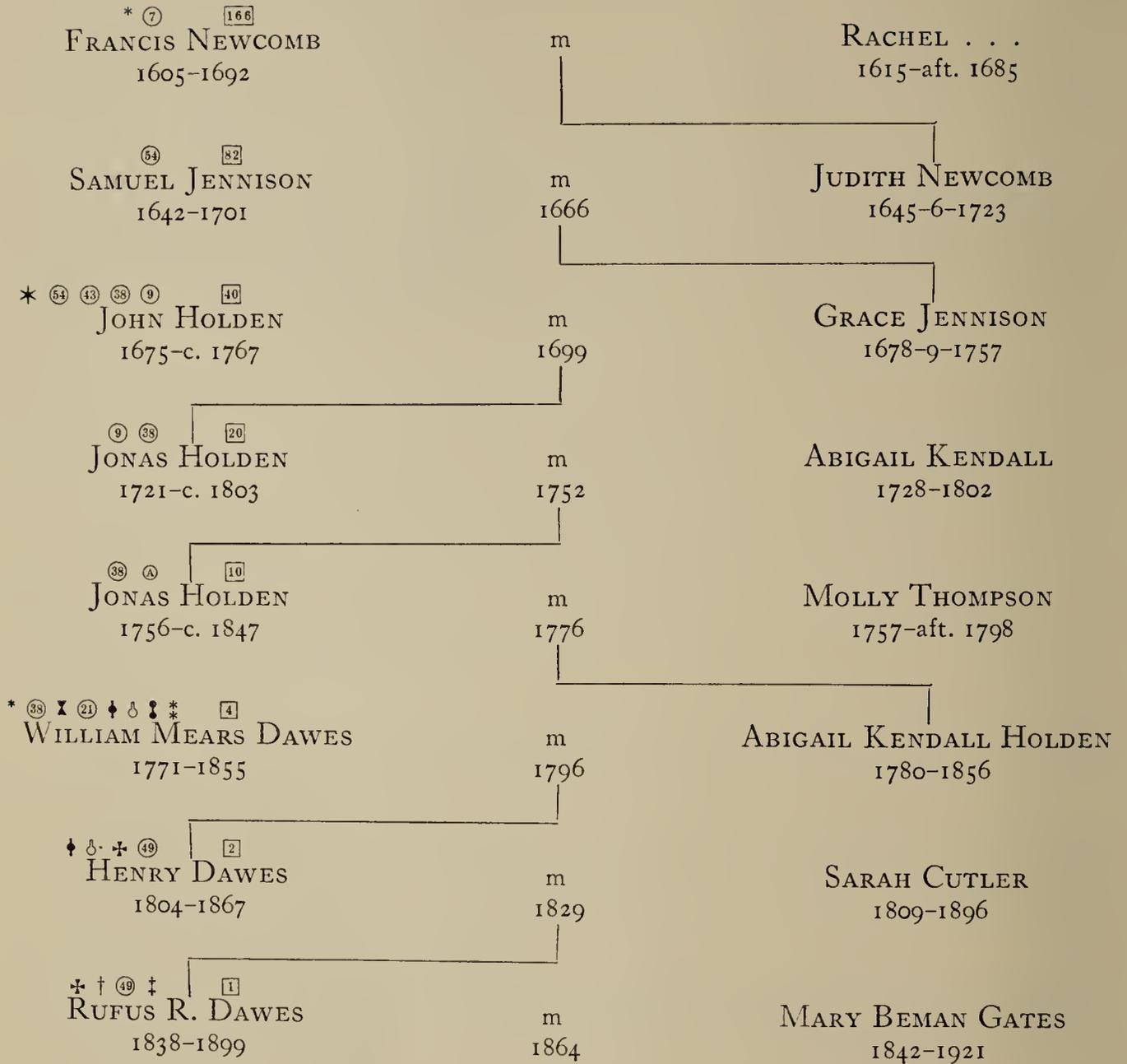
\*By her first husband MIRIAM had two children: (1) Joseph<sup>s</sup> Batchelder, b. July 18, 1678; d. 1790 unm.; (2) Abigail<sup>s</sup> Batchelder, bap. May 17, 1685; m. Dec. 20, 1697, Capt. John Knowlton of Manchester.<sup>10</sup>

## REFERENCES

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Moulton Annals, H. W. and C. Moulton, 1906, pp. 59-63.</li> <li>2. Savage, III, 249; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 322; Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 60-4.</li> <li>3. History of Charlestown, R. Frothingham, 1845, pp. 49-52, 56, 61, 63, 79-80.</li> <li>4. History of Salem, S. Perley, 1924, I, 117, 127, 197-8,</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>313; II, 2-3, 9, 14, 43, 130, 165, 193, 204, 217.</li> <li>5. Balch Families, G. B. Balch, 1897, pp. 18-9; Batchelder Genealogy, F. C. Pierce, 1898, p. 353.</li> <li>6. Vital Records of Salem, II, 90.</li> <li>7. Salem in the Seventeenth Century, J. D. Phillips, 1933, pp. 56, 72, 91, 96, 121-2, 136, 177, 211, 213, 352-3.</li> <li>8. Annals of Salem, J. B. Felt, ed. of 1827, pp. 25, 105,</li> </ol> |
|--|---|

- 111, 171; ed. of 1845, I, 84, 102, 132, 169.
9. Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony, I, 113-4, 116, 120, 124, 193.
10. Some Ancestral Lines . . . Tingley . . . Meyers, R. M. Tingley, 1935, pp. 96-7, 119, 206-7, 253-4.
11. Vital Records of Marblehead, II, 298; and of Salem, IV, 104; V, 250.
12. Essex Probates (pub.), I, 210-1; II, 20, 27-8, 132.
13. THOMAS GARDNER Planter and Some of his Descendants, F. A. Gardner, 1907, pp. 28-9.
14. Savage, I, 161; III, 117; Perley's Salem, I, 117, 307; History of . . . Massachusetts Bay, T. Hutchinson, ed. by L. S. Mayo, 1936, I, 172-3.
15. The Massachusetts Bay Company and its Predecessors, Frances Rose-Troup, 1930, pp. 27-8.
16. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 207, 211-2, 366; Perley's Salem, I, 447.
17. Ibid., I, 136, 197-8, 313 with map facing, 317-9, 352, 424.
18. Ibid., II, 3-4, 9, 14, 43, 130, 165, 193, 204, 217.
19. Town Records of Salem, I, 20, 27, 37, 45, 50-6, 73, 99, 103, 113, 131, 134, 149, 154, 158.
20. Ibid., I, 64, 67, 131, 164, 176; II, 35.
21. Manwaring's Connecticut Probates, I, 11.
22. Ibid., I, 193; History of Wethersfield, H. R. Stiles, 1904, II, 314, 321.
23. Savage, II, 103, 159-60; IV, 315.
24. Chronicles of the First Planters . . . , A. Young, 1846, pp. 161-2.
25. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, I, II, and III, see indices.
26. Ibid., VI, 362-3; Winthrop's Journal, I, 187, 260, 331; Salem in the Seventeenth Century, pp. 96-7.
27. Perley's Salem, I, 379-80; II, 77; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, VIII, 324-5.
28. Frothingham's Charlestown, p. 63; Young's Chronicles, pp. 137, 185, 404.
29. New England Register, XXVII, 29.

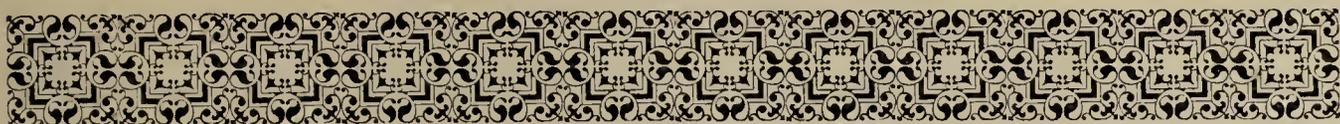
# NEWCOMB



- \* Boston
- ⑦ Braintree
- ⑤④ Watertown
- \* Cambridge
- ④③ Weston
- ③⑧ Sudbury

- ⑨ Concord
- ④ Waitsfield, Vt.
- X Marlborough
- ②① Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.
- ♁ Morgan Co., O.

- ♁ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- † Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## NEWCOMB (*Nucom*)

**F**RANCIS<sup>1</sup> NEWCOMB aged thirty with his wife RACHEL aged twenty and their two older children emigrated<sup>1</sup> to New England in the "Planter," Nicholas Trarice, Master, which sailed from London in April, 1635, in company with our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES, our JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE with his large group, two of whom became ancestral to us, and with Francis<sup>2</sup> Bushnell, his wife and child, son of our FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> BUSHNELL Senior (Dawes-Gates, II, 163).

FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> NEWCOMB settled temporarily in Boston for three or more years and on February 28, 1635-6, RACHEL became a member of Boston First Church.<sup>2</sup> They removed permanently to the outlying tract to the south, then called Mt. Wollaston, which was set off<sup>3</sup> as Braintree on May 13, 1640, but has since acquired the name of Quincy. This removal occurred before 1640 for on February 16, 1639-40, the Boston church sent a committee to inquire after the spiritual state of eleven persons at Mt. Wollaston, probably all removed members, of whom "RACHEL y<sup>e</sup> wife of FRANCIS NEWCOME" was one.<sup>5</sup> In Braintree FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> acquired a number of tracts<sup>5</sup> of land, at least one being near the Iron Works and another tract on the south side of the Monaticut River<sup>5</sup> (see map, p. 159) but it is considered highly probable<sup>5</sup> that he lived\* at or on the "Neck."

Braintree and Lynn were both notable as having established very early within their confines<sup>15</sup> an "Iron Works," and considerable rivalry developed as to which effort was the earlier of the two. With no intent of taking sides, it is safe to record that an English company with a capital of £1,000 was formed about 1643 by John Winthrop, Jr., son of the Governor, to make bar iron from native, bog iron ore at both of these settlements. He headed the company, imported some skilled workmen and supplies, and succeeded in getting from Boston a grant of three thousand acres of land on and near the Monaticut River (see map, p. 159) as an encouragement to the Braintree Works. They were also granted freedom from taxation, and from ordinary trainings and watchings for their workmen as well as a twenty-one year monopoly, if they were successful. This was the earliest manufacturing project undertaken at Braintree and it has been variously stated that the forge "was constructed in the most southerly part of the (present) Hall Cemetery, on the Furnace Brook . . . West Quincy"; that the iron works lay at the border of Milton and Quincy and in both towns; or that it was located on the Monaticut River but the weight of evidence seems to favor the Furnace Brook location. Because of poor management, a scanty supply of ore, etc., the Braintree plant showed very poor returns — indeed pots and pans could be imported from England more cheaply than they could be made here. After Cromwell's Battle of

\*He is said to have lived in the part of Braintree which is now Quincy, Norfolk County.<sup>5</sup>

Dunbar on September 3, 1650, and the resulting influx of Scotch prisoners to the English prisons, some of the English members of the Iron Company conceived the bright idea of shipping some of the prisoners over to work without wage at the Iron Works. This was done and from a shipload which arrived in May, 1651, many were sent to Braintree as well as some to Lynn, the company paying the cost of their passage and, of course, their support. But even this cheap labor could not save the day and the Braintree\* plant was sold as a bankrupt in 1653, lands, forges, buildings and servants. The appraisal of the property showed that the company had earlier acquired eighteen acres of land from Goodman NEWCOMB which was listed at £4-10. Incidentally, a purchase of twenty acres of land made for the Iron Company in September, 1645, was bounded north by the Monaticut River and west by the land of FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> NEWCOMB.<sup>15</sup>

In September, 1645, in 1670, 1672-3, 1674 and 1682 he is recorded as being an abuttor<sup>4</sup> and in at least one case his land adjoined<sup>4</sup> that of JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS. In 1678 FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> served<sup>14</sup> on a trial jury but there is no evidence that he took any noticeable part in public life. As late as March, 1684-5 RACHEL finally transferred<sup>5</sup> her membership from Boston Church to the Braintree Church, but her death is not recorded. FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> died at Braintree on May 27, 1692, with a considerable discrepancy as to age for his gravestone in Hancock Cemetery<sup>3</sup> says "aged 100 years" and the town records<sup>6</sup> say "accounted 100 years old" but the age he claimed at emigration would make him about eighty-seven years old.<sup>1,5</sup>

The children of FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> and RACHEL (—) NEWCOMB, the first two born in England, the third in Boston and the rest at Braintree were<sup>1,5,6</sup>

- i. Rachel<sup>2</sup>, b. 1632-3; emigrated with parents but no further record.
- ii. John<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1634; d. at Braintree, Mar. 21, 1722; m. 1st by 1658 Ruth (—) who d. in June, 1697; m. 2nd Elizabeth who survived him.
- iii. Hannah<sup>2</sup>, bap. at Boston 1st Church Oct. 15, 1637; m. Jan. 8, 1657-8, James Thorp of Dedham.<sup>9</sup>
- iv. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. Apr. 1, 1640; m. Nov. 10 or Dec. 9, 1657, as his 3rd wife Samuel Deering of Braintree.<sup>13</sup>
- v. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, b. June 30, 1643.
- vi. \*\*JUDITH<sup>2</sup>, b. Jan. 16, 1645-6; d.<sup>7</sup> at Watertown on March 1, 1722-3, "an Aged Widow Woman"; m.<sup>7</sup> there on October 30, 1666, SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> JENNISON (see Jennison, p. 371).<sup>10</sup>
- vii. Peter<sup>2</sup> b. May 16 1648; d. at Braintree May 20, 1725; m. there, 1st, June 26, 1672, Susanna<sup>2</sup> Cutting (Richard<sup>1</sup> of Watertown); m. 2nd after 1689 Mary (Phillips) Humphrey daughter of Ens. Richard Phillips (Nicholas of Weymouth) and widow of Jonas Humphrey of the same.<sup>8</sup>
- viii. Abigail<sup>2</sup>, b. July 16, 1651; living 1702 prob. unm.
- ix. Leah<sup>2</sup>, b. July 30, 1654; was dismissed 1684 to church at Groton; m. William Price.
- x. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. Aug. 26, 1658; m. 1st July 3, 1677, as his second wife John Pidge or Pigge of Dedham; m. 2nd Dec. 28, 1695, James<sup>2</sup> Emery (Anthony<sup>1</sup>)<sup>12</sup> "of Barwick," Maine.<sup>9</sup>

\*The Lynn project also closed down a few years later.

\*\*This JUDITH<sup>2</sup> "NUCOMBE" as it was then written (see plate, p. 461)<sup>11</sup> has been erroneously identified as "Macomber" for at least eighty years, but the facsimiles from the original of her own and her brother Peter's marriage records showing the extra upstroke on the "N" explain an easy transition to "MACOMBE" but why any copyist should gratuitously add an "r" is hard to understand.

1 5 5 6

Mary Benjamin Daughter of Samuell  
& Mary Benjamin. Borne by 12 of may  
John Shattuck son of John & Ruth Shattuck.  
Borne by 4<sup>th</sup> of June

Samuell Fenison & Judith Newcomb Joynd in  
Maryage by 30 of october

~~Ruhanah Linn Daughter of Miker &  
Marya Linn. Deceased by 22 of mo~~

Thomas Woodward son of George & Elizabeth  
Woodward Deceased by 7 of september

Samuel Barnard & Abigail Philipe Joynd in  
Maryage by 8 of october

Jonathan Bullard. Son of Jonathan and  
Hester. Borne the 25 of December

William Shattuck Dyed the 14 of august  
Phillip Shattuck son of Phillip and Deborah  
Shattuck borne the 26 of January

Abigail mixer the daughter of Isaac and  
Rebeckah mixer borne by 4<sup>th</sup> of the 9<sup>th</sup> mo

Elizabeth Randall widow Dyed the 24 of  
December aged about 80 years

Samuell Straton Dyed the 25 10<sup>th</sup> mo  
Peter Newcom and Susan Cutting were  
Married the 26 of June

John Applin son of John and Beth Shattuck  
borne by 15 of october

Elsajah Randall son of John and Susan Rand  
Borne the 30 of april

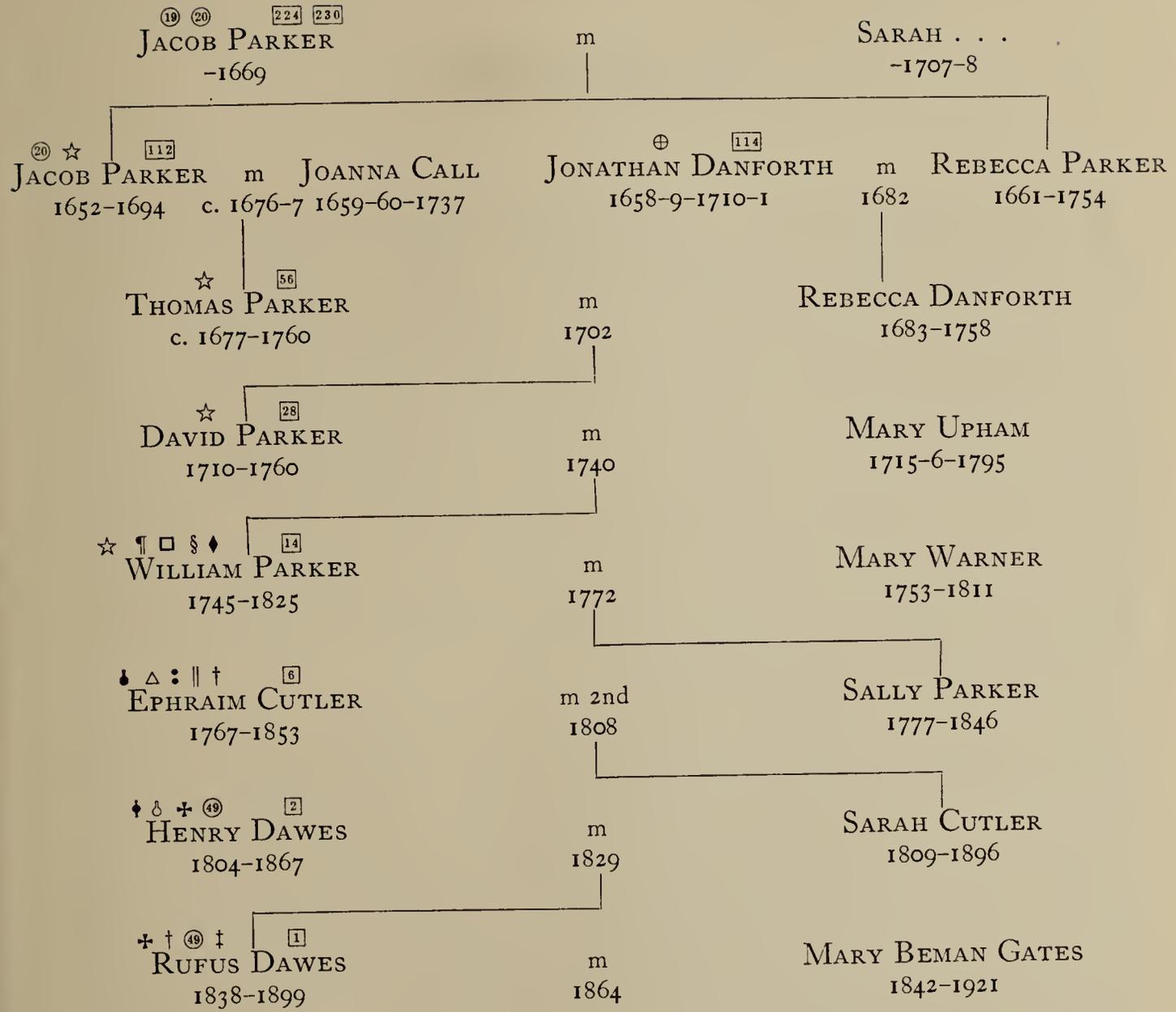
Sary Grant the daughter of Colib and Mary

Facsimile from Original Watertown Vital Records showing  
marriage of Judith Newcomb and of her brother Peter

## REFERENCES

1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 141-3.
2. Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880, I, 571.
3. History of Old Braintree and Quincy, W. S. Pattee, 1878, pp. 11-2, 58, 60, 116, 121, 535.
4. Suffolk Deeds (pub.), I, 62; VI, 202a; IX, 53; XIII, 185, 192, 195.
5. Newcomb Family, J. B. Newcomb, 1874, pp. 445-8.
6. Braintree Records, S. A. Bates, 1886, pp. 630, 641, 659, 716, 718.
7. Watertown Records, I, pt. 3, p. 28; II, pt. 2, p. 75.
8. History of Weymouth, G. W. Chamberlain, 1923, III, 303; IV, 466.
9. Vital Records of Dedham, 1886, pp. 27, 127.
10. Holden Genealogy, Eben Putnam, 1923, I, 88; Giles Memorial, J. A. Vinton, 1864, p. 239; History of Watertown, H. Bond, 1860, pp. 193, 307.
11. Research performed by Mrs. James T. Watts of Washington, D. C. and cooperation by Mr. G. Frederick Robinson, President of the Historical Society of Watertown.
12. Emery Genealogy, Rev. R. Emery, 1890, p. 311.
13. Savage, II, 33; III, 270.
14. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXX, 898.
15. Three Hundred Years of Quincy, D. M. Wilson, 1926, pp. 271-3; History of Norfolk County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1884, pp. 111-2, 117-8; New England Register, I, 377-80; XXXIII, 65; XXXVIII, 265-6; Vinton Memorial, J. A. Vinton, 1858, pp. 463-8; History of Old Braintree and Quincy, W. S. Pattee, 1878, pp. 458-61.

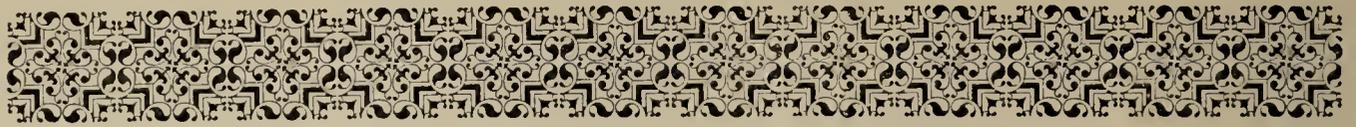
# PARKER



- ①⑨ Woburn
- ②⑩ Chelmsford
- † Charlestown
- ☆ Malden
- Newburyport
- § Allegheny Co., Pa.

- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- ♠ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- ∴ Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

- ⊕ Billerica
- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♠ Morgan Co., O.
- † Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- † Marietta, O.



## PARKER\*

JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER was one of a group which exaggerated the oft repeated tale of "three brothers who emigrated", for four brothers are proved\*\* emigrants and a fifth Parker is undoubtedly another brother. They probably did not all come together, but James<sup>1</sup> Parker was of Woburn<sup>1</sup> in 1640 and married there in 1643 while Abraham<sup>1</sup> married there<sup>1</sup> in 1644. John<sup>1</sup>, Joseph<sup>1</sup>, and JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER also became residents there at unknown dates. In 1652 there occurred the earliest recorded effort toward a settlement at Chelmsford when men of Woburn and Concord petitioned the court for permission to examine the land on the "other side of Concord River" and after due investigation petitioned again on May 19, 1653, for a grant there six miles square. This document, still extant, carried the signature of twenty-nine men<sup>2</sup> including the names of John<sup>1</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>, Joseph<sup>1</sup>, and JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER, while Abraham<sup>1</sup> is said to have actually removed to the tract prior to the petition, as the other four did subsequently. Of these John<sup>1</sup> presently removed permanently to Billerica, and James<sup>1</sup> and Joseph<sup>1</sup> lived at the latter town temporarily before finally settling about 1661 at Groton,<sup>2,30</sup> but Abraham<sup>1</sup> and JACOB<sup>1</sup> lived and died at Chelmsford.<sup>30,33</sup>

Before April 27, 1656, JACOB<sup>1</sup> had joined the Chelmsford Church<sup>6,51</sup> under Rev. John Fiske, which had been formed in November, 1655, by a union with the Wenham organization. In 1658, when thirty-three men of the town petitioned the court for permission to trade with the Indians,<sup>79</sup> Abraham<sup>1</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>, Joseph<sup>1</sup>, and JACOB<sup>1</sup>, were among them, but that request was not granted.<sup>7</sup> The selectmen on February 1, 1667, appointed<sup>8</sup> JACOB<sup>1</sup> as one of a committee of three, to apportion the fence-building to the various proprietors of the Newfield, each owner of a lot of about six acres, being required to build two poles ten feet of fence. The record shows that the majority of owners here had but six acres each, three had twelve, JACOB<sup>1</sup> had seventeen and but two had more than he.<sup>8,18</sup> His home is said to have been near to that of his brother Abraham<sup>1</sup> on the south side of the road to Billerica, near to the present town farm.<sup>7</sup> JACOB<sup>1</sup> became the first town clerk<sup>2</sup> of Chelmsford and

\*Suggestion<sup>50</sup> as to the English residence of the several Parker brothers who emigrated to New England is seen in a letter dated March 2, 1676-7, from Susan (Waite) Redington of England to her brother-in-law and sister, Robert<sup>1</sup> and Mary (Waite) Lord of Ipswich in New England, relative to the settlement of an estate in England. A postscript was added:

"Pray present our kind loves to broth. John [Waite] and wife to whom I canot now write. Pray send me word which of the parkers widows she was."

this being a reference to John<sup>1</sup> Waite of Malden who had married on August 4, 1675, as his second wife, SARAH (—) PARKER, widow of JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER of Chelmsford. This Susan, the writer, and John<sup>1</sup> Waite were two of the children of Samuel and Mary (Ward) Waite of Wethersfield, co. Essex, England.<sup>50</sup>

\*\*A donation for Harvard College was made in November, 1657, by John<sup>1</sup> Parker in behalf of his *brother*<sup>74</sup> James<sup>1</sup>. A court record<sup>16</sup> of 1668 called our JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER a *brother* of John<sup>1</sup> deceased, while in June, 1672, Sarah<sup>2</sup> Parker (JACOB<sup>1</sup>) chose as her guardian<sup>4</sup> her "uncle Abram Parker." This proves these four to have been brothers and the residence and land ownership of Joseph<sup>1</sup> Parker in each of the four towns where James<sup>1</sup> was recorded<sup>1,31,51</sup> argues that he was another member of the family.

served in that capacity until his death,<sup>5</sup> having served also as selectman from 1662 onward.<sup>5</sup> He witnessed the will of Edward<sup>1</sup> Spalding of Chelmsford in 1662.

Evidently JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER performed military service at least in the train band for as late as 1682 when his son JACOB<sup>2</sup> made a sale<sup>19</sup> of the family homestead it was called "formerly the dwelling house of Sergt. JACOB PARKER, deceased, father of the aforesaid JACOB, the grantor." JACOB<sup>1</sup> died at Chelmsford before April 6, 1669, when his widow SARAH was admitted as administratrix.<sup>3</sup> The earliest known tax list<sup>10</sup> shows that in 1671 widow SARAH paid a tax of £1-5-8 for the minister. In June, 1672, she was joined by James<sup>1</sup> Parker of Groton, her brother-in-law, and by James<sup>2</sup> Converse (Edward<sup>1</sup>)\* a relative<sup>53</sup> in a petition<sup>3</sup> to the County Court for a division of the property left by her husband. At this time she listed her eight children, giving the ages of each. The court ordered that the widow should have one fourth, the eldest son JACOB<sup>2</sup> a double share and the others equal shares. Thomas Hinchman became guardian to JACOB<sup>2</sup>, Sarah<sup>2</sup> chose her uncle Abraham<sup>1</sup> Parker as her guardian and he was also appointed guardian of her brother Thomas<sup>2</sup>. Presumably the younger children were in their mother's care. The actual division was made on January 12, 1678, when the widow SARAH received £50, JACOB<sup>2</sup> received £30, Sarah<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Tabitha<sup>2</sup> and REBECCA<sup>2</sup> each received £15. Rachel<sup>2</sup> and Mary<sup>2</sup> each received £15 in lands and Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, £15.<sup>3</sup> So the estate of JACOB<sup>1</sup> amounted to £185 after the living expenses for nine years for a family of nine had been deducted.

In the meantime, widow SARAH had married, secondly, on August 4, 1675, as his second wife, Capt. John<sup>1</sup> Waite of Malden<sup>13,31,50</sup> who was one of the outstanding men of his time. In 1647-8 he had been employed by the Colony to compile the Massachusetts Laws, the first body of laws established by authority in New England and in 1680 he was on a committee to revise these laws. He was a leader of Malden in civil and religious affairs, siding with THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL and JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM in supporting the Rev. Marmaduke Matthews (see Call, p. 136). John<sup>1</sup> Waite served long as a deputy and finally became speaker of the house. Soon after his marriage to our SARAH he left her temporarily to serve in King Philip's War. About 1684 he lost his sight and retired from public life, enduring about nine years of blindness until his death on September 26, 1693, at the age of seventy-five, during which time SARAH was joined in the home and care of her husband by Thomas<sup>2</sup> Waite who had married Mary<sup>2</sup> Parker, her own daughter. Of this son Thomas<sup>2</sup> Waite, it is written "he wrought 9 years in his ffathers service since his ffather was dark."<sup>50</sup> SARAH survived this husband fourteen years, dying at Malden January 13, 1707-8, aged eighty-one and was buried in<sup>59</sup> Bell Rock Cemetery at Malden where a stone commemorating her death bears the inscription<sup>59</sup> "Ye Memory of y<sup>e</sup> Just is blesse<sup>d</sup>."

The children\*\* of JACOB<sup>1</sup> and SARAH (—) PARKER, all (but the first) born in Chelmsford and through two of whom we descend, were<sup>3,12,13,31,33,35,39,51,88</sup>

\*Edward<sup>1</sup> Converse, probably<sup>54</sup> from Shenfield, co. Essex, England, or its vicinity who settled with his family in Charlestown and later in Woburn, by his will,<sup>53</sup> signed in August, 1659, made a bequest to his "Kinsman John<sup>1</sup> Parker", and named that man one of his overseers. Two subsequent facts tighten the bond between these families: (a) Josiah<sup>2</sup> Converse (Edward<sup>1</sup>) assisted JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER in administering<sup>52</sup> the estate of his brother John<sup>1</sup> Parker; and (b) as shown above, after the death of JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER, James<sup>2</sup> Converse joined the widow SARAH in petitioning the court<sup>4</sup> for a settlement.

\*\*After the death of JACOB<sup>2</sup> and Thomas<sup>2</sup>, by means of a deed<sup>38</sup> dated November 5, 1713, Benjamin<sup>2</sup> Parker of Chelmsford called "our brother", acquired from the other heirs their rights to a tract called "Robin Hill meadow" formerly owned by JACOB<sup>1</sup>. The signers were Sarah (Parker) Howard, Stephen and Tabitha (Parker) Pierce and Ebenezer<sup>2</sup> Parker (Thomas<sup>2</sup>) all of Chelmsford; John and Rachel (Parker) Floyd, Thomas and Mary (Parker) Waite and THOMAS<sup>2</sup> PARKER (JACOB<sup>2</sup>) all of Malden; and REBECCA (PARKER) DANFORTH of Billerica — the two men of the third generation signing as representatives of their deceased fathers.<sup>38</sup>

- i. JACOB<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- ii. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>33</sup> Jan. 14, 1653-4; bap. Apr. 19, 1656, and called<sup>51</sup> 2 years old in Apr., 1656; d. at Chelmsford, Sept. 26, 1739, in her 85th year;<sup>33</sup> m. July 1, 1678, as his second wife, Nathaniel<sup>1</sup> Howard of Charlestown and Chelmsford.<sup>12,16</sup>
- iii. \*Thomas<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>33</sup> Mar. 28, 1656; bap.<sup>51</sup> Apr. 19, 1656, and called one year old in Mar., 1657; d. at Chelmsford as sergeant,<sup>33</sup> May 8, 1698; m. there Oct. 21, 1678, Mary<sup>2</sup> Fletcher (William<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>)<sup>34,35</sup> and had at least five children.<sup>33</sup>
- iv. Tabitha<sup>2</sup>, b. Feb. 28, 1658-9; d. Jan. 31, 1741-2; m. Nov. 8 or 18, 1676, Stephen<sup>2</sup> Pierce (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup> of<sup>79</sup> Woburn).<sup>12,16,33</sup> She became the great, great grandmother of Franklin<sup>7</sup> Pierce, 14th President of the U. S.<sup>55</sup>
- v. REBECCA<sup>2</sup>, b. May 29, 1661; d. at Billerica, Mar. 25, 1754, in 94th year; m. first at Billerica on June 27, 1682, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH (see Danforth, p. 265); m. secondly, there, after Jan. 17, 1710-1, as his third wife, Deacon Joseph<sup>2</sup> Foster (Thomas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>14,15,56</sup>
- vi. Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, b. Aug. 8, 1663; d. Apr. 14, 1742; m. Jan. 14, 1690-1, Sarah<sup>2</sup> Howard (Nathaniel<sup>1</sup>).<sup>12,16,33,41</sup>
- vii. Rachel<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>33</sup> Mar. 9, 1664-5, or bap.<sup>51</sup> Mar. 9, 1665; d. aft. 1690; m. bef. 1687, John Floyd, Jr., of Malden and Boston where they had several children.<sup>13,16</sup>
- viii. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. Sept. 8, 1667; d. at Malden,<sup>13</sup> Jan. 6, 1763, in 97th year; m. by 1695, Thomas<sup>2</sup> Waite (Capt. John<sup>1</sup>), her step-brother.<sup>12</sup>

JACOB<sup>2</sup> PARKER (*Jacob*<sup>1</sup>) was born<sup>51</sup> in May, 1652, and doubtless at Woburn since the petition for the grant of land which became Chelmsford was not made<sup>2</sup> until 1652 and was approved in May, 1653. In the fall of 1654 the Chelmsford people suggested to the Rev. John Fiske and his small Wenham congregation that they should join forces, creating thus a stronger church to be settled at the new plantation. On November 13, 1655, this was accomplished with Abraham<sup>1</sup> Parker as a charter member and before April 27, 1656, Joseph<sup>1</sup> and JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER had also become members.<sup>2</sup> A note book kept by the Rev. John Fiske, now in the possession of the Massachusetts Historical Society, corrects Chelmsford Vital Records to show that JACOB<sup>2</sup> was baptized with his sister Sarah<sup>2</sup> and his brother Thomas<sup>2</sup> on April 19, 1656, that he would be four years old in May, 1656, and that on February 1, 1656-7, they three, as well as six children of James<sup>1</sup> Parker and four children of Abraham<sup>1</sup> Parker were included within the meaning and significance of their parents' covenant,<sup>51</sup> that is, were "presented" and accounted as nominal members of the church.

JACOB<sup>2</sup> PARKER died at Malden<sup>9</sup> October 31, 1694, at "the age of forty-two,<sup>13</sup> and was buried\*\* in Bell Cemetery<sup>59</sup> having married<sup>66</sup> at an unrecorded date not later† than May, 1677, JOANNA<sup>2</sup> CALL of that place (see Call, p. 139). After the death of his father, Thomas Hinchman of Chelmsford had been chosen as guardian by JACOB<sup>2</sup>, then aged about seventeen. But in 1674 JACOB<sup>2</sup> was considered one of the able bodied men of Chelmsford depended on for defense, when on September 1, in an account of powder sold to the inhabitants he was charged 1 shilling — 6 pence, that being at the rate of 15 pence per pound.<sup>10</sup> In the summer of 1677, when he was about twenty-five, he was out on military service, probably against the Indians and probably along the coast of what is now Maine, for "in a list of

\*In some quarters this Thomas<sup>2</sup> has been confused with his nephew of the same name, son of JACOB<sup>2</sup>, making him die at the age of one hundred and four. This error was made more possible by the failure of JACOB<sup>2</sup> to have any of his children's births recorded.

\*\*The cemetery at Sandy Bank, later called "Bell Rock" or "Bell Cemetery" still contains<sup>59</sup> the graves and inscribed stones of at least fifteen of our ancestors including four generations of our Parkers (see Call, p. 136).

†THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL in his will of February 28, 1677-8, made a bequest to his grandson, THOMAS<sup>2</sup> PARKER.<sup>61</sup>

names of men wounded at Eastward, sent from Salem, July 4, 1677, are these names: JACOB PARKER of Chelmsford; shot through ye Shoulder, . . ."<sup>11</sup>

For some reason (perhaps to allow the youngest child to reach legal age) the distribution of the estate of JACOB<sup>1</sup> was delayed<sup>4</sup> until January 12, 1678-9, about ten years after his death when JACOB<sup>2</sup> as eldest son received a double share amounting to £30. Before this time he had married\* and all subsequent records of JACOB<sup>2</sup> are found in Malden. There the selectmen appointed November 9, 1681, as the day for the inhabitants to cut and cart wood for Rev. Cheever, as part of his salary. Some, who were slow in doing their share, were listed under the heading "Carts behinde", one of these being JACOB<sup>2</sup> PARKER.<sup>17</sup>

By deed of May 8, 1683, JACOB<sup>2</sup> and his wife JOANNA exchanged property in Malden with Abraham Hill of that place; on May 17, 1682, JACOB<sup>2</sup> and JOANNA for £33 sold to Thomas Hinchman of Chelmsford, his one time guardian, the homestead<sup>79</sup> which had belonged to JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER, deceased, consisting of the house, barn, orchard and pasture, and JONATHAN DANFORTH the grantor's brother-in-law (or that man's father) was one of the witnesses to this deed.<sup>19</sup> On March 13, 1684-5, JACOB<sup>2</sup> and JOANNA deeded other land<sup>19</sup> to a Jacob Hill.

During 1676, JACOB<sup>2</sup> as constable of Malden, paid ten shillings to Robert Calley for "Howsroome" for a year for one of the town's poor.<sup>17</sup> In 1691 JACOB<sup>2</sup> was a Selectman<sup>18</sup> and on a committee to prosecute, in course of law, any of the Charlestown people who should persist in cutting wood on Malden common.<sup>17</sup> In February, 1691-2, he was one of three witnesses to the will<sup>78</sup> of William Larabee of Malden and Charlestown. The estate of JACOB<sup>2</sup> PARKER, deceased, it being listed as pertaining to one of the seventy-four proprietors, received a share in the sixth division of land at Malden which took place in 1694-5, the total amount of the various allotments to the townsmen being thus brought to 3268 acres.<sup>17</sup> In 1697 a tax on the estate of JACOB<sup>2</sup>, deceased, was abated<sup>16</sup> and sometime after his death certain lots were laid out to widow JOANNA. She married secondly<sup>48</sup> at Malden, on April 22, 1696, as his second wife,<sup>66</sup> John<sup>s</sup> Stearns (John<sup>2</sup>, Isaac<sup>1</sup>)<sup>48</sup> and bore him one daughter, Joanna.

Mother JOANNA spent about thirty-three years with this second husband, until his death in October, 1728, and they must have been happy years judging by his tender care for her in a deed of gift, the equivalent of a will, which he signed ten days before his death. It read:

"I give unto my beloved wife JOANNA Stearns, convenient room in my house and a garden spot and convenience to pass and repass to the garden and well and I also give her two cows and a horse and ten sheep to be at her dispose, one of the said cows to be provided for, winter and summer; and the horse to be kept for her service so long as she remains my widow; and liberty for getting firewood upon my land, and to raise one pig. Also I give to my wife all my household goods within doors to be at her disposal, the half to be wholly at her own dispose to whom she pleases, and the other half to be equally divided among my daughters."<sup>49</sup>

JOANNA survived this husband nine years, dying at Malden,<sup>13</sup> December 4, 1737, aged 78, and was buried in Bell Cemetery with others of the Parker family.<sup>59</sup>

The known children of JACOB<sup>2</sup> and JOANNA (CALL) PARKER born in Chelmsford or Malden in unknown order but recorded in neither place were<sup>13,31,39</sup>

\*This is proved by the fact that his son THOMAS<sup>s</sup> was called<sup>20</sup> "about fifteen" in March 1695-6.

- I. \*THOMAS<sup>3</sup>, see following.
- II. \*Jacob<sup>3</sup>, resident in Boston in 1709 and 1738, called both carpenter and bricklayer; probably he who m. at Cambridge<sup>60</sup> Apr. 29, 1708, Ursula<sup>3</sup> Eaton (Benoni<sup>2</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>1</sup>); members of Brattle Street Church; nine children given.<sup>31</sup>
- III. \*John<sup>3</sup>, resident in Cambridge in 1709 and called tailor; probably he who m.<sup>60</sup> at Cambridge, Dec. 20, 1711, Mary<sup>4</sup> Hancock (Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>1</sup>) and died<sup>31</sup> Nov. 2, 1712, aged 22-9-22, which would put his birth about Dec. 22, 1690. She was aunt of John Hancock, Gov. & Signer.<sup>60</sup> She m. 2nd Francis Whitmore.
- IV. \*Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, resident in Dedham in 1709 and in Medford in 1738, and called blacksmith;<sup>40</sup> m. at Medford Apr. 22, 1714; Mary Willis (Stephen);<sup>16</sup> he. d.s.p. there Oct. 26, 1761, and his will signed Mar. 17, 1759, and proved Nov. 16, 1761, mentioned the nine children of his brother, THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER<sup>31</sup> and his niece, Rebecca (Parker) Coffin, daughter of Jacob<sup>3</sup> (JACOB<sup>2</sup>, JACOB<sup>1</sup>).<sup>47</sup>

The daughter of JOANNA (CALL) PARKER by her 2nd husband John<sup>3</sup> Stearns was

Joanna Stearns, b. perhaps<sup>39</sup> abt. 1697; d. at Billerica, Oct. 27, 1719; m.<sup>67</sup> as his first wife by 1716 Christopher<sup>2</sup> Page (Nathaniel<sup>1</sup>) who was born Feb. 6, 1690-1. Her only child, Joanna<sup>3</sup> Page was born at Billerica Aug. 10, 1717, and married, by 1732, Lt. Benjamin<sup>4</sup> Farley (Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Caleb<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>).<sup>67</sup> On April 14, 1738, Benjamin and Joanna (Page) Farley then of Dunstable but later of Hollis, New Hampshire and called "relatives of JACOB<sup>2</sup> PARKER" joined with Jacob<sup>3</sup> Parker of Boston and Benjamin<sup>3</sup> Parker of Medford in selling to THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER of Malden all their rights in land once owned by THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL or JACOB<sup>2</sup> PARKER. So the inclusion of Joanna (Page) Farley as a "relative" quit-claiming, proves by indirection that her hitherto unidentified mother Joanna must have belonged to the family of JACOB<sup>2</sup> PARKER.<sup>67</sup>

THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER (*Jacob<sup>2</sup>, Jacob<sup>1</sup>*) was born, probably at Malden and before February 28, 1677-8, when his grandfather, THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL, provided for him a bequest of £20 in case he lived to the age of twenty-one.<sup>61</sup> He died at Malden July 31, 1760, "aged seventy-nine,"<sup>13</sup> (by his tombstone inscription in Bell Cemetery<sup>59</sup> but probably older, unless he was the second child of that name born to his parents) having married at Billerica,<sup>14,15</sup> on December 31, 1702, his first cousin REBECCA<sup>4</sup> DANFORTH (see Danforth, p. 267). In March, 1695-6, about a month before his mother's second marriage, "THOMAS PARKER, son of JACOB PARKER, late of Malden, deceased, a minor of about fifteen years of age, personally appearing [before the court] made choice of Deacon John Greenland to be his guardian. . . ."<sup>20</sup>

THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER spent his whole life in Malden. As is shown in the note below, two very significant documents bearing on his life are in existence.

By the deed of April, 1738, THOMAS<sup>3</sup> acquired sole right to a considerable amount of ancestral property probably including a house which stood on a hill at the corner of present Ferry and Cross Streets, which was originally of but one or two rooms, is supposed to have been built in the latter part of the seventeenth century and

\*Certain legal documents<sup>39</sup> furnish our only evidence of the children born to JACOB<sup>2</sup> PARKER. (a) John<sup>3</sup> Stearns had married our JOANNA (CALL) PARKER, and on July 9, 1709, they agreed on behalf of their minor daughter, Joanna<sup>4</sup> Stearns that for £15 to be paid to her at marriage or at the age of eighteen by the four sons of JOANNA by her deceased husband, PARKER, they would release all their rights to land owned by their "honorable father", THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL or laid out to JOANNA while she was the widow of JACOB<sup>2</sup> PARKER. These four sons were named as THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER of Malden, Jacob<sup>3</sup> Parker of Boston, Benjamin<sup>3</sup> Parker of Dedham and John<sup>3</sup> Parker of Cambridge. The document carefully excluded the share laid out to LYDIA (SHEPARDSON) CALL, later the wife of Thomas Skinner, who was grandmother to the four grantees.<sup>39</sup>

A second document<sup>67</sup> dated April 14, 1738, concerns three of the four brothers, John<sup>3</sup> being omitted and probably dead. By it, our THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER of Malden acquired "all rights which belonged to our grandfather THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL and our father JACOB<sup>2</sup> PARKER, late of Malden, deceased." There is also mention of "our mother JOANNA Stearns, deceased." It was signed by Jacob<sup>3</sup> Parker of Boston, Benjamin<sup>3</sup> Parker of Medford and by Benjamin Farley and wife Joanna called a "relative" of this family, the said Joanna being daughter of Joanna (Stearns) Page, and granddaughter<sup>67</sup> of JOANNA (CALL) PARKER Stearns.

very likely therefore had been the home<sup>22</sup> of his father, JACOB<sup>2</sup> PARKER. This house was subsequently enlarged and about 1860 was removed to the vicinity of Ashland Street.<sup>22</sup>

On November 30, 1709, THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and his wife REBECCA sold for £36 land which had belonged to his grandfather THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL and which adjoined land then owned by his grandmother LYDIA (SHEPARDSON) CALL, widow Skinner.<sup>61</sup> In 1710 THOMAS<sup>3</sup> consented to the pending settlement<sup>15</sup> of the estate of his deceased father-in-law, JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> DANFORTH. The removal of a highway, in 1729, is described as being through "THOMAS PARKERS land . . . from apost . . . at the south end of y<sup>e</sup> sd PARKERS primmhedg . . . to y<sup>e</sup> north corner of y<sup>e</sup> sd THOMAS PARKERS pastuer".<sup>22</sup> What a pleasure to hear of that "primmhedg"!

The town of Malden was seemingly quite lax about regularly maintaining<sup>22</sup> a school which met the requirements of the law. The earliest record on that subject pertains to their being "presented" before the Grand Jury in December, 1671, for failure to have a schoolmaster in which case they promptly engaged one and Capt. John Waite who was soon to become husband of our widow SARAH (—) PARKER declared in court that "they were now supplied according to law . . .", thus avoiding a fine. Subsequently, in December, 1701, in 1705, in July, 1710, in 1715, 1719 and later, the selectmen were also before the court for failure to satisfactorily provide schoolmasters. In March, 1701-2, the town records named the man who "is chose scool-marstar for y<sup>e</sup> yeer jnsuing To learn Children & youth to Reed and wright and to Refmetick according to his best Skill. And he js to have ten pounds paid him by y<sup>e</sup> town for his pains. The scool js to be free for all y<sup>e</sup> Inhabitants of this town: . . ." <sup>22</sup> Until 1710-1 they had no really educated teacher.

The complaint against the selectmen<sup>22</sup> of Malden in July, 1710, was because they lacked a grammar school which was a legal requirement for a town of a given size and in extenuation thereof they brought in a list of the ninety-six heads of resident families, explaining that many of them were needy and that the group as a whole was unable to support a grammar school, on which evidence the court excused them temporarily. On this list of families resident in Malden in 1710 are found the names of "LAZRAS GROUER", "THO PARKAR" and JOHN<sup>3</sup> UPHAM.

In the earlier years, classes were held in whatever home was convenient, but in 1711-2 a school house was provided. It was "built 20 foots jn length 16 foots wide . . ." with a chimney "nere seven foots between y<sup>e</sup> gams". The building had "two windores, one on y<sup>e</sup> South and y<sup>e</sup> other on y<sup>e</sup> Est" and one "dower of plain Boords".<sup>22</sup>

THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER was a selectman,<sup>18</sup> 1728-30, and during his lifetime he built, and resided in, what his will called a "mansion house" which is said to have been one of the show places of the town<sup>22,27</sup> and which was occupied in 1846 by his great grandson, John<sup>6</sup> Parker (Jacob<sup>5</sup>, DAVID<sup>4</sup>, THOMAS<sup>3</sup>), when another great grandson, Daniel<sup>6</sup> (WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>, DAVID<sup>4</sup>, THOMAS<sup>3</sup>) visited there.<sup>25</sup>

In 1755, wife REBECCA received her share of the estate of her deceased mother,<sup>60</sup> REBECCA (PARKER) DANFORTH; and THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER made his will<sup>21,61</sup> on March 6, 1755, calling himself "yeoman of Malden", but he did not die<sup>13</sup> until July 31, 1760. When he signed the document, his wife REBECCA was living and he made careful provision that while she remained his widow she should have £8 annually, a part of the mansion house and household goods and the use of such money and

bonds as he left. If she remarried, she was to receive twenty-four shillings annually for life<sup>21,61</sup> but she died on December 20, 1758, and was buried in Bell Cemetery,<sup>59</sup> so no part of the division of his estate needed to await her demise. THOMAS<sup>3</sup> had previously shared his means with his sons and had given his daughters their portions at marriage. But his will gave £40 more to Thomas<sup>4</sup> the eldest son, £33-6-8 to each of the three sons, Jacob<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>4</sup> and Benjamin<sup>4</sup> and £13-6-8 to each of his four daughters, Joanna Dexter, Rebecca Bucknam, Rachel Lynde and Esther Harnden. He made his son DAVID<sup>4</sup> sole executor, and beneficiary of all the remainder of the estate, except for dividing the movable (personal) estate among them all. James Hovey, Solomon Townsend and John Waitt witnessed the will of THOMAS<sup>3</sup>. Then a peculiar situation arose for in slightly over two months after his death, his son and executor DAVID<sup>4</sup> PARKER also died,<sup>13</sup> and intestate, on October 4 or 5, 1760. On November 3, 1760, the court appointed the latter man's widow MARY (UPHAM) PARKER\* as administrator of the estate of her deceased husband DAVID<sup>4</sup> which automatically included also the settlement<sup>21,61</sup> of the estate of her father-in-law THOMAS<sup>3</sup>. She gave bond of £500 with Jacob Parker,\*\* house wright, and John Waitt as sureties and on December 1, 1760, filed an inventory which had been taken by her brother-in-law, John<sup>4</sup> Dexter, and Ebenezer Harnden, showing an estate of over £950. This included seventeen notes and bonds and land in Malden, Stoneham and Lynn.<sup>61</sup> On August 6, 1765, widow MARY filed her administrator's account showing among other things that she had paid legacies amounting to over £200 to the brothers and sisters of her deceased husband,<sup>61</sup> DAVID<sup>4</sup> PARKER.

The children of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and REBECCA (DANFORTH) PARKER, all born at Malden, were<sup>13,31</sup>

- I. Rebecca<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 25, 1703; d. yng.
- II. Thomas<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 31, 1705; m. at Malden Apr. 5, 1731, Mary<sup>5</sup> Upham (James<sup>4</sup>, Phineas<sup>3</sup>, PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).<sup>26</sup> They had at least four children.<sup>13</sup>
- III. †Jacob<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 9, 1707-8; living Mar. 6, 1755, when father made his will. Probably he called "housewright" who acted as surety on the bond of his sister-in-law MARY (UPHAM) PARKER when she administered the estate of her husband, DAVID<sup>4</sup> PARKER which included the estate also of his father THOMAS<sup>3</sup>. This Jacob<sup>4</sup> was chosen guardian in 1761 by his nephews, WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> and Jacob<sup>5</sup> and was appointed guardian for Silas<sup>5</sup> Parker.
- IV. DAVID<sup>4</sup>, see following.
- V. John<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 29, 1712; living Mar. 6, 1755, when his father made his will. Perhaps he m. Mary Cutter (Nathaniel of Charlestown) & lived in Windham, Conn.<sup>31</sup>
- VI. Joanna<sup>4</sup>, b. Apr. 18, 1715; d. at Malden,<sup>13</sup> Feb. 28, 1783, ae. 69; m. 1st Dec. 27, 1735, Thomas<sup>5</sup> Lynde (Thomas<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>);<sup>16</sup> m. 2nd there, Mar. 15, 1747-8, as his third wife, John<sup>4</sup> Dexter † (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>).<sup>41</sup> See note, p. 435.
- VII. Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, b. Apr. 10, 1717, probably d. at Malden<sup>13</sup> Oct. 19, 1770, ae. 53; perhaps m. 1st, Jan. 22, 1741-2, at Stoneham, Phebe Green, and 2nd as of Medford<sup>40</sup> but at Malden, June 23, 1768, Tabitha Wilson<sup>13</sup> who d. at Malden Sept. 13, 1775, ae. 58.

\*Some persons have erroneously assumed that the settlement of the estate of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER by a widow MARY implied that he had made a second marriage.

\*\*Doubtless Jacob<sup>4</sup>, her brother-in-law.

†It may have been<sup>68</sup> this Jacob<sup>4</sup> who m. 1st at Malden Sept. 18, 1761, Elizabeth Cheever of Lynn; m. 2nd at that place, Feb. 13, 1777, Rebecca<sup>5</sup> Emerson (Joscph<sup>4</sup>, Edward<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>); and died there of smallpox Jan. 17, 1779. The Jacob who married thus had (1) Thomas (1763-83), (2) Jacob b. 1765, (3) Joshua, (1766-1807), (4) Elizabeth (1769-1841) m. 1789, Asa Tufts.<sup>18</sup>

‡John<sup>4</sup> Dexter who married into the family of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> PARKER was a brother to Rev. Samuel<sup>4</sup> Dexter who married into the family of SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> and MARIA CATHARINA (SMITH) MEARS.<sup>41</sup>

- viii. Rebecca<sup>4</sup> (twin) b. Apr. 10, 1719; living 1759, and perhaps she who died Feb. 1, 1785, at Malden;<sup>13</sup> m. Nov. 12, 1743, Benjamin Bucknam [Samuel and Deborah (Mellin)].
- ix. Rachel<sup>4</sup> (twin), b. Apr. 10, 1719; d. at Malden, Nov. 19, 1801, ae. 82; m. there (int.) Nov. 4, 1741, Jabez Lynde [Joseph and Mary (Sprague)].<sup>13</sup> He was b.<sup>13</sup> Apr. 22, 1719, and d. Oct. 20, 1773, ae. 54.
- x. Esther<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 8, 1721; d. at Malden Dec. 26, 1801; m. there<sup>13</sup> (int.) Oct. 13, 1742, John Harnden [Ebenezer and Rebecca (Allen)].<sup>13</sup>

DAVID<sup>4</sup> PARKER (*Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Jacob<sup>2</sup>, Jacob<sup>1</sup>*) was born at Malden<sup>13</sup> on May 22, 1710, died there October 4 or 5, 1760, aged fifty, being buried in Bell Rock Cemetery as was also his widow, his parents, his grandparents, his great grandmother PARKER and his CALL ancestors as well as many of his wife's ancestors.<sup>59</sup> He married at Malden<sup>13,24,28</sup> (intention June 8), on September 4, 1740, MARY<sup>5</sup> UPHAM (see Upham, p. 636), with the Rev. Joseph Emerson officiating.<sup>13</sup> The home of DAVID<sup>4</sup> must have been near the river for at an annual town meeting in March, 1746-7, there was discussion<sup>23</sup> of repairs needed on the bridge between the property of Benjamin Waite and of DAVID<sup>4</sup> PARKER.

During the life of DAVID<sup>4</sup>, and indeed for many years after, conflict of one sort or another was rife in Malden religious life, often aligning members of a family on opposite sides; and while it originated and centered within the southern group, on frequent occasions residents of northern Malden were more or less involved. In one such case, when a number of the southerners were petitioning the General Court about 1757 on some religious point they acquired the signatures of Jacob<sup>4</sup> and DAVID<sup>4</sup> PARKER and in 1759, Jacob<sup>4</sup> and DAVID<sup>4</sup> were the only taxpayers in Malden bearing the name of PARKER.<sup>23</sup> DAVID<sup>4</sup> had an apprentice aged nineteen and named Samuel Nichols who enlisted May 2, 1758, and served under Capt. Ebenezer Morrow until November,<sup>23</sup> probably as a substitute for DAVID<sup>4</sup>. This young man later married the eldest daughter in this family.<sup>13</sup>

There is but little evidence of participation in public life by DAVID<sup>4</sup>. He inherited the family home by the will<sup>61</sup> of his father THOMAS<sup>3</sup>, dated in March, 1755, and was by that document made sole executor and chief beneficiary of the estate, being bound to pay stated legacies to each of his four brothers and four sisters. But his own death occurred<sup>13</sup> about two months after his father's, and probably suddenly, since he left no will. A month after the death of DAVID<sup>4</sup>, his widow MARY was appointed administratrix of his estate which incorporated also that of his father. Her brother-in-law, Jacob<sup>4</sup> Parker, called housewright, and John Waite were sureties on her bond. The inventory of the combined estates was taken by three friends, showed more than £951 and was filed by widow MARY on December 1, 1760. It showed a list of seventeen notes and bonds amounting to over £140, and land in Malden, Stoneham and Lynn. On the last named date, the Judge of Probate appointed a committee of five to set off her "widow's thirds" to MARY which was recorded as accomplished<sup>61</sup> on November 23, 1761. On this date, Jacob<sup>4</sup> Parker, their uncle, was chosen as guardian by WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> and Jacob<sup>5</sup>, they being "fourteen years and upwards" and he was appointed guardian for Silas<sup>5</sup>, giving bond of £500. At the same time, widow MARY was appointed guardian of Mary<sup>5</sup>, Phebe<sup>5</sup>, Nathan<sup>5</sup>, Esther<sup>5</sup>, Huldah<sup>5</sup>, and Ebenezer<sup>5</sup>, all under fourteen.<sup>61</sup>

High compliment is due widow MARY on her outstanding business capacity, for her husband's death left her a family of eleven children to care for, his own and

his father's estates to settle and beside that she bore him a posthumous son five months after his death.

On August 6, 1765, she filed her administrator's account showing that she had paid over £200 in legacies to the brothers and sisters of her deceased husband DAVID<sup>4</sup>, had paid various outstanding obligations, had paid £4 for the expense of the posthumous child and £10 for "Bringing up" the three youngest children to the age of seven. On August 6, 1765, three Malden men were appointed to divide the real estate among the children<sup>61</sup> — exclusive of the widow's third previously set off. On September 2, 1765, division was made to David<sup>5</sup>, eldest son who received a double share, to Mary Nichols, eldest daughter, Rebecca<sup>5</sup> Parker, second daughter, and to Jacob<sup>5</sup> third son, "when he comes of age". Other children who received their shares in money on or before November 1, 1765, were WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>, Silas<sup>5</sup>, Mary<sup>5</sup>, Phebe<sup>5</sup>, Nathan<sup>5</sup>, Esther<sup>5</sup>, Huldah<sup>5</sup>, and Ebenezer<sup>5</sup>.

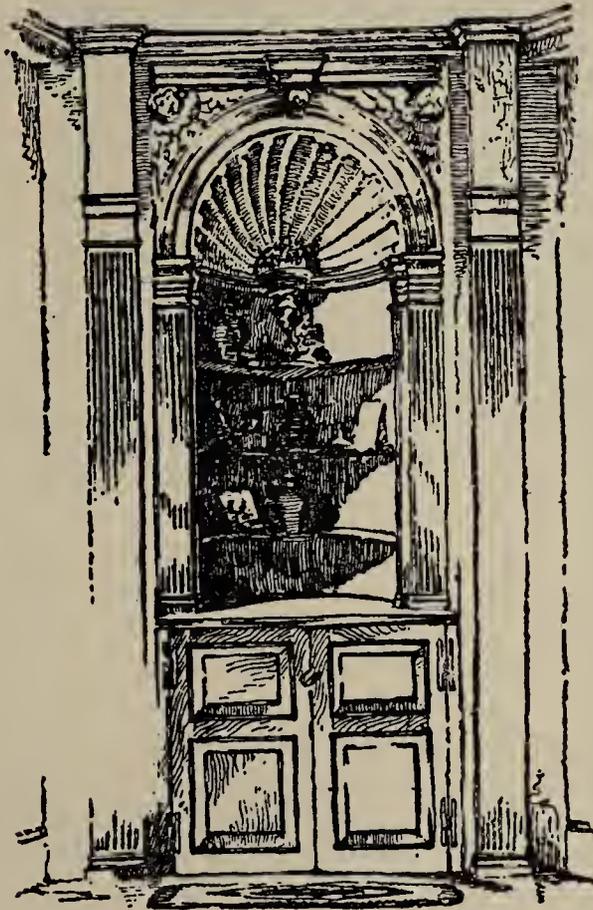
The family in several of its generations showed notable longevity for THOMAS<sup>3</sup> lived to the age of seventy-nine by his tombstone inscription (but he must have been several years older unless he was the second of the name born to his parents) and nine of his ten children survived him. Though DAVID<sup>4</sup> died at the age of fifty, three of his twelve children reached sixty or over, three reached seventy or over and three reached eighty and over.<sup>13</sup> Of the children of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>, at least seven of the twelve were over seventy-five at death.<sup>25</sup>

To revert to MARY, the very capable widow of DAVID<sup>4</sup>, she remained his widow for over thirty-five years, dying of dysentery<sup>25</sup> at Malden on November 25 and being buried the 28th, 1795, at the age of seventy-nine.<sup>13</sup> Her son Jacob<sup>5</sup> writing<sup>25</sup> to his brother WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> of their mother's last illness said "She was brought very low four or five years before she died — not able to walk or stand alone and almost destitute of reason. We endeavored to provide everything for her comfort. Rebecca<sup>161</sup> and Hulda<sup>161</sup> live in that part of the house which was mother's." Her children scattered considerably, Silas<sup>5</sup> to Newburyport, WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> to Newburyport, southwestern Pennsylvania and Ohio. Nathan<sup>5</sup> to New Brunswick and to London, England, and Ebenezer<sup>5</sup> to Savannah, Georgia.<sup>25</sup> In time, the family home, "mansion house," passed into the hands of Jacob<sup>5</sup> Parker (DAVID<sup>4</sup>) and in 1846 his son John<sup>6</sup> resided in it when it was visited by Daniel<sup>6</sup> (WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>, DAVID<sup>4</sup>).

The children of DAVID<sup>4</sup> and MARY (UPHAM) PARKER, all born undoubtedly at Malden, though the five eldest are not so recorded, were<sup>13,25</sup>

- i. Mercy<sup>5</sup>, b.<sup>25</sup> May 26, 1741; m. at Malden<sup>13</sup> Apr. 2, 1762, Samuel Nichols (Samuel and Genevieve).
- ii. Rebecca<sup>5</sup>, b.<sup>25</sup> Nov. 18, 1742; d. unm. at Malden<sup>13</sup> Oct. 12, 1818, ae. 76.
- iii. David<sup>5</sup>, b.<sup>25</sup> May 11, 1744; d. at Malden<sup>13</sup> probably unm. Feb. 8, 1810, ae. 66.
- iv. WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>, see following.
- v. Jacob<sup>5</sup>, b.<sup>25</sup> Dec. 28, 1746; d. at Malden<sup>13</sup> May 25, 1805, ae. 57; m. there as "Jacob jr." May 16, 1769, Lydia Hill [Isaac and Sarah (Haven)].<sup>13</sup> Four children are recorded.<sup>13</sup> Of these, John<sup>6</sup> was resident in the mansion house built by his great grandfather THOMAS<sup>3</sup> when Daniel<sup>6</sup> (WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>) visited Malden in 1846.<sup>29</sup>
- vi. Silas<sup>5</sup>, b. Aug. 6, 1748, at Malden;<sup>13</sup> d. at Newburyport, Dec. 7, 1832, ae. 84; m. 1st at Charlestown, Dec. 3, 1772, Mary Eaton (Jonas);<sup>16</sup> m. 2nd, at Newburyport, Jan. 18, 1810, Mrs. Mary Herbert.<sup>29</sup>
- vii. Mary<sup>5</sup>, b. Mar. 12, 1749-50; d. unm. at Malden<sup>13</sup> Nov. 21, 1819, ae. 69.
- viii. Phebe<sup>5</sup>, b. Dec. 7, 1751; d. at Malden<sup>13</sup> Mar. 14, 1836, ae. 84; m. there May 29, 1800, Thomas Waite.

- ix. \*Nathan<sup>6</sup>, b. Sept. 12, 1753; d.<sup>25</sup> Aug. 22, 1830, ae. 77; m. a Scotswoman who died between 1795 and 1798. He became a merchant of St. John's, Newfoundland and of London, England, before the Revolution. At the height of his career, he was worth £200,000 sterling.
- x. Esther<sup>6</sup>, b. Apr. 30, 1755; d. at Malden<sup>13</sup> Mar. 1, 1785, ae. 30.
- xi. Huldah<sup>6</sup>, b. June 3, 1757; d.<sup>25</sup> June, 1829, ae. 72.
- xii. Ebenezer<sup>6</sup>, b. Mar. 27, 1761; d. Nov. 13, 1823, ae. 62 at Savannah, Ga. where he resided.<sup>25</sup> He m. and left descendants.



“Beaufet” or built-in-corner-cupboard such as WILLIAM<sup>6</sup> had in his home in Newburyport and still in use in 1846 when Daniel<sup>6</sup> Parker visited the place.

WILLIAM<sup>6</sup> PARKER (*David<sup>4</sup>, Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Jacob<sup>2</sup>, Jacob<sup>1</sup>*) was born,<sup>25</sup> but not recorded, at Malden on June 5, 1745, and died November 26, 1825, aged eighty, near Pomeroy, Meigs County, Ohio. He married<sup>24,25,28</sup> January 28, 1772, at Hampton, New Hampshire<sup>25</sup> MARY<sup>7</sup> WARNER (see Warner, p. 657).<sup>62</sup> As has been stated, his father died when WILLIAM<sup>6</sup> was only fifteen and he chose his uncle Jacob<sup>4</sup> Parker as his guardian. At an unknown date, he left home for Charlestown where

\*In his later life Nathan<sup>6</sup> Parker lost heavily by shipwreck<sup>25</sup> and after his return to Boston he lost most of his estate about 1818 by a fire which destroyed an entire block of buildings belonging to him in Court Street, and about 1822 he lost \$30,000 more. The name of his firm in St. John's and London was “Parker, Knight and Bulley, Merchants.”

he served a seven years' apprenticeship,<sup>64</sup> near Bunker Hill, with a cabinet maker, and subsequently followed that trade most of his life.

The fact that his brother, Silas<sup>5</sup> Parker, had settled in Newburyport probably actuated WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> to follow him, after the completion of his apprenticeship. In this town WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> met MARY<sup>7</sup> WARNER, whose father had died<sup>63</sup> in Gloucester in 1766, and whose mother had removed to Newburyport by or before 1770, when one of her children died there.<sup>63</sup> It would be interesting to know whether or not the marriage of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> and MARY was in the nature of an elopement, since it occurred less than a month before her mother's second marriage,<sup>63</sup> and over the line in New Hampshire — though only about ten miles from their home.

In spite of the fact that in 1916 and again in 1918 a certain patriotic society<sup>71</sup> accepted a claim that WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> PARKER served in the Revolution, he positively did not so serve, by the word of one of his granddaughters (1815-1903) who knew him personally, which word is upheld by evidence furnished by his own son Daniel<sup>6</sup>. But his brother Silas<sup>5</sup>, and perhaps others of his brothers, rendered service before and during the Revolution.

A letter of the Revolutionary period and still intact, addressed to MARY (WARNER) PARKER from an aunt at Gloucester discloses the fact that for the greater safety of MARY her husband had removed her from their home at Newburyport to inland Newbury, and that in a section of the latter town<sup>76</sup> called "Brown's Gardens" their eldest son William<sup>6</sup> was born on July 4, 1775.

WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> and his wife were members of the Presbyterian Church at Newburyport under the pastorates of the Rev. Jonathan Parsons and his successor, the Rev. John Murray, and in that town eight of their eleven children were born,<sup>25</sup> three of whom are recorded, and at least one of whom was baptized in the church there.<sup>29</sup>

In Massachusetts, WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> carried on his trade of cabinet maker, even to the extent of employing journeymen and exporting furniture to the West Indies where it found a profitable market. Specimens of his work which are still cherished\* in Ohio and Illinois testify to the excellence of the design, workmanship and fine finish of his products (see facing plate xxviii). His business not only supplied a competency for his family but furnished a surplus from which he purchased in 1787 a share amounting to 1200 or 1500 acres of land in what was then known as the "Ohio Company's Purchase."<sup>72</sup>

In the summer of 1788, the great adventure and trial was undertaken of disposing of their property and most of their household conveniences; of packing clothing and bare necessities for the removal of the parents and eight children\*\* ranging in age from one to fifteen years, over an uncharted course of five or six hundred miles, air line, to an utterly unknown situation. They were accompanied by several neighbor families. The major part of this trip would undoubtedly have been made in covered wagons, but the latter part, over the Alleghanies, which consisted of the equivalent of crossing ten mountain ranges each from 2000 to

\*One piece of walnut furniture which WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> made in the west, probably about 1790-1800, was a candle stand for his daughter SALLY<sup>6</sup>. It has a pedestal base, branching into three legs, and its octagonal top has at the edge a triple inlay of light and dark wood (see facing plate xxviii). This piece is the prized possession of the compiler.

\*\*An added, eleventh, member of the family was William<sup>7</sup> Warner, youngest brother of MARY (WARNER) PARKER whose mind was affected as the result of an early fall and spinal injury.



Three pieces of furniture made by WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> PARKER, cabinet maker.





SOUTHWESTERN PA. & OHIO COMPANY LANDS

- 1. PARKER sites on trip west
- 2. Braddock's Defeat (CUTLER)
- 3. Cox's station (Fort Pennsylvania church where M. CUTLER preached)
- 4. Approximate site of Big Bottom Massacre
- 5. Gravel Bank cemetery
- 6. Old Bailey Home
- 7. "Old Stone House"
- 8. PARKER site on Little Leading Creek
- 9. Approximate site of DAWES farm near Malta, Ohio
- 10. Approximate site of DAWES farm near Alexandria

- F. Athens Township, Ohio
- G. Ames Township, Ohio
- H. National Road

- A. Rostraver Township, Pennsylvania
- B. Duck Creek

Shaded area is the approximate location of the "Donation Tract"

2400 feet above tide level would undoubtedly have been completed by pack horse,\* on horseback or on foot because of the narrowness of the trail. The trip itself was started in the late summer or early fall of 1788. Bad weather and worse roads delayed them beyond their expectation. They probably had planned to go right on through to their Ohio land, but it was late November and snow already on the ground when they reached the Monongahela just two months after Allegheny County was organized<sup>65</sup> and only eight months after the Marietta pioneers had reached the mouth of the Muskingum (see map, p. 475). Moreover, their funds were already expended and rumors were abroad of impending Indian trouble in Ohio. These facts were doubtless the cause of their decision to remain temporarily in Pennsylvania. Undoubtedly, WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> would have anticipated that his trade would furnish him an income as soon as their destination was reached and that money enough to last them through their journey would be sufficient for their needs. And very possibly, from a letter which has been preserved, he had failed to collect all moneys due him in their late home, or had perhaps failed to meet all his obligations. Whatever the cause, their experiences on arrival in what is now Allegheny County, Pennsylvania, were unbelievably hard.

Much of our knowledge of minor details comes from an autobiography<sup>64</sup> written in his later years by a son, Daniel<sup>6</sup> Parker (who was seven years old at the time of removal), and certain of these items will be briefly included here for continuity's sake.

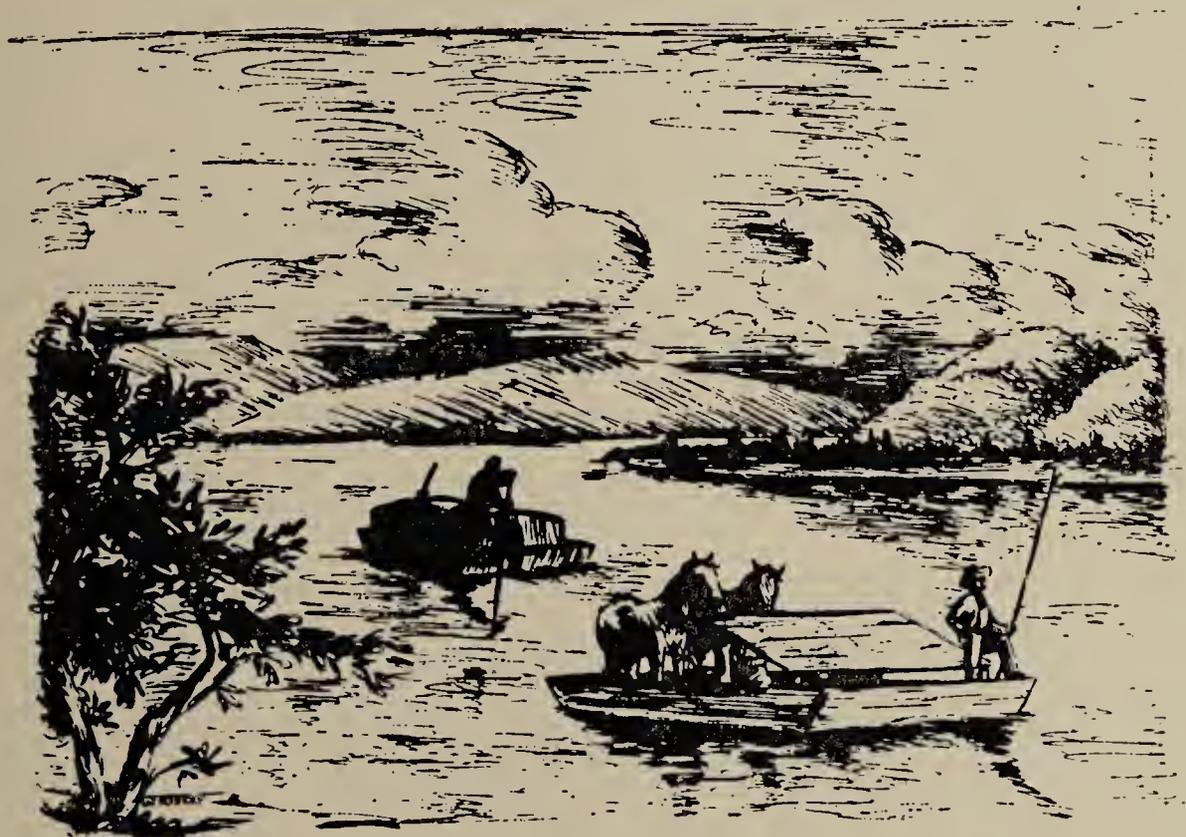
The journey had been made in company with several other families, one named Plumer, and proved to be very tedious and expensive because of bad roads and inclement weather. On arrival at the Monongahela, about twenty miles above (south of) what is now Pittsburgh, they found no unoccupied houses. Their money was gone and the weather wet and cold. WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> did the best thing he could for the moment, by engaging to put a shingled roof on a house (the first such roof in that part of the country) and receiving as partial remuneration the privilege of using, for a month, for his family of eleven, and their goods, an old sheep shed build of round logs, but without chinking, daubing, chimney or floor. The sheep were driven out in order to let the family in. Lacking bedsteads, they erected in the corners, scaffolds made from crotches, poles and clapboards. They scattered bits of clapboards around to keep their feet out of the mud, for when it rained the water ran across the whole enclosure. They built their fire on the ground in the center of the building and their mother, MARY (WARNER) PARKER "was blind for three days, occasioned by the smoke. She was almost heart broken when comparing her condition with what it had been." Can one conceive of cause for more utter despair than such conditions would supply to a woman, especially one who was to be confined within five months? [See also Dawes-Gates II, 273-5].

In addition to the use of the shed, they received as part pay a bagful of "sick wheat"<sup>\*\*</sup> with which they were unfamiliar and which made them all sick before

\*We are told<sup>85</sup> that the first *wagon-load* of merchandise brought over the mountains on the *southern* route (later the National Road, and less mountainous than the northern trail) was transported in 1789 which was the year after WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> and his family arrived.

\*\*Inquiry has been made of the agricultural authorities at Harrisburg, Pennsylvania, University of Illinois and of medical men as to what the term "sick wheat" may have implied. No definite answer has been received, but suggestions are made that the wheat might have been affected by ergot, scab, or some unknown fungus growth or by the presence of cockle seed which is poisonous to humans.

they realized its menace. At the end of the month, they moved to a hut a few miles away which had once been occupied by human beings, but laterly by horses. However, it had chinking, daubing and a chimney and after the manure was cleared out, a floor was discovered. Here they spent the winter, and here a ninth child was added to the family. In 1790 WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> PARKER was listed in the United States Census of Pennsylvania as being resident in Versailles Township with three males over sixteen and seven females. This coincides quite reasonably (see map, p. 475) with the statement<sup>64</sup> of his son Daniel<sup>6</sup> that their first stopping place was



KEEL — OR KENTUCKY — BOATS  
(See Note Page 478)

about twenty miles above (up the river from) Fort Pitt. According to the autobiography<sup>64</sup> of Daniel<sup>6</sup> they lived from 1792-5 on the west bank of the Monongahela opposite McKeesport after which WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> bought about twenty acres in the "Forks of the Yough" eight miles farther up and one mile south of the Yough River where they lived from 1795 until 1802 which would probably imply a placing in Elizabeth Township.

The tentative plan of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> to move onto his Ohio land in the spring of 1789 was altered because of the Indian War which broke out and was continued until the treaty was signed at Greensville in 1795. As a consequence, he and his family

continued to live on rented land here and there in Allegheny County for nearly seven years, and presently with considerable comfort, his sons doing farming while WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> himself worked at his trade, which he also taught to his three older sons as they became adult. During the last three of these seven years, while they lived on the west bank of the Monongahela, opposite McKeesport (see map, p. 475) the Whiskey Insurrection occurred, (see Dawes-Gates II, 270, 551-2); here the whole family, except WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> himself, "were inoculated [infected] and had the small pox." Here also a tenth child was born.

For the people who pioneered into the west, the problem of education for their children must have been a troublesome one, indeed. Undoubtedly, in the earliest days, the mothers, heavily burdened as they were with other duties, would have been the chief if not the sole instructors. That being true of the WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> PARKER family, high credit must be given to the mother MARY for the accurate spelling and unusually good grammatical form displayed in the mass of letters and journals which have survived to the present day from her own pen and the pens of her children. Their penmanship too was far above the average and they were taught to have a discriminating literary taste. In later years EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER wrote<sup>25</sup> of his wife SALLY, daughter of MARY (WARNER) PARKER:

"She is well acquainted with History, Geography, Poetry, Music and indeed she is no contemptible poet herself, and she writes an elegant hand and style. Nor has she neglected the weighty matters of household economy, but is complete mistress of needlework and every art useful in a farmer's family. She left Newburyport at the age of eleven years, since when she has had no advantage of schools but she has had the instruction of an able and willing mother, a woman of dignified manners and easy address, and of an enlightened mind. . . ."<sup>25</sup>

WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> becoming weary of living on other men's land and fearing that Indian trouble might again break out in Ohio, bought a tract of about twenty acres in the "Forks of the Yough," eight miles up (south) from McKeesport (see map, p. 475) and there they lived quite contentedly for seven more years, during which time the eleventh and last child was born. In about 1798, William<sup>6</sup>, eldest son of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup>, left home for Ohio, "reserving six dollars in money to pay for the survey of one hundred acres of Donation\* land on Wolf Creek" in Washington County, Ohio. On October 5, 1799, he addressed a letter to "Hon. MOTHER"\*\*\* at the "Forks of the Yough near to Brown's Ferry" in which he said, ". . . I live with a family in my own house. . . . My Duty\*\* to DADDY and love to all brothers and sisters. I am your very affectionate son, William<sup>6</sup> Parker."

WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> had rented a saw mill in Allegheny County, Pennsylvania on the Youghiogheny, and with his sons had been occupied in building flat boats or "Kentucky boats"† as they were called, for sale to people from the east who

\*The Donation Tract was a tract of 100,000 acres granted the Ohio Company by Congress, provided they would obtain one actual settler upon each 100 acres thereof within five years. Portions not so settled to revert to the government.<sup>65</sup> Subsequently, about 1804, William<sup>6</sup> exchanged that land for the farm near Rutland, Meigs County, on which he spent all his later life.

\*\*The formal manner of address in the early days seems strange to modern ears. A letter written by WILLIAM<sup>6</sup> PARKER to his son-in-law, EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER, was addressed<sup>25</sup> to his "Respectful Son".

†Keel boats or Kentucky boats, or flat boats were fifty to sixty feet long, ten to twelve feet wide, often pointed at both ends, with a long oar and swivel that could be shifted to either end, to act as a rudder. They had no deck but tarpaulin was used in bad weather. Loaded, they floated down the river, but coming up they were poled. Two planks ran side by side along the center of the vessel. The polers placed their shoulders to the end of long poles, pointed with iron, and walked the plank, slowly propelling the vessel against the current.<sup>69</sup>

were on their way down the Ohio to settle, or to people who had produce to ship to New Orleans. [See also Dawes-Gates, II, 271.] John<sup>6</sup> and Daniel<sup>6</sup> believed that their father, now along in years, should remove to his Ohio land, and promised that if he would do so they would remain with and help him until he was comfortably settled. He reluctantly agreed, and they began to build two flat boats, or Kentucky boats, to convey the family and stock down the Ohio River. John<sup>6</sup> was taken suddenly and seriously ill; so William<sup>6</sup> returned from Ohio to help Daniel<sup>6</sup> prepare for and accomplish the removal. The two boats were finished in time for the family to move in the spring of 1802, but shortly before the removal their shop caught fire and was consumed, together with all their tools, "stuff" [stock] and considerable furniture. "This was a great misfortune as the trade was our main dependence. . . ." They floated down the Ohio and arrived at the mouth of Leading Creek (see map, p. 475) on April 11, 1802, nearly fourteen years after leaving their New England home. They found the Ohio River very high and were able to float their boats up the back-water in Leading Creek for six miles to a tiny settlement which became Rutland, and then they had to cut a road six miles farther, following a section line, to find their land. The family remained on the boat while men from Rutland helped them to put up a cabin, into which the family moved as soon as its roof was finished. In three directions the nearest neighbors were twenty or twenty-five miles away, and there was but one family within six miles to the eastward. The territory was an unbroken forest in all its grandeur, a wilderness filled with wild game of all sorts and was frequently visited by Indians.

Here WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> and MARY started once more in the most primitive fashion, as pioneers. Here in Meigs County the remainder of their lives were spent, nine years by MARY and twenty-three by WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> and by the word of their son Daniel<sup>6</sup> they were presently and permanently "comfortably provided for".

The daughters of WILLIAM<sup>5</sup> and MARY all learned to sew and embroider most beautifully — many specimens<sup>25</sup> of their work are still treasured and all of the daughters were expert at spinning and weaving. Linen thread which was spun in her youth by SALLY<sup>6</sup> was later woven, probably by herself or a sister, into sheets which were eventually used in her CUTLER home and are still intact and owned by a proud great granddaughter of hers. One daughter\* of SALLY's wrote,<sup>25</sup> in her later life:

"No memory of my childhood is more pleasant than that of the hours spent beside the loom where a pretty, cheerful, young woman [her mother] sat weaving her web. How I watched, as the treadles rose and fell beneath her small feet, and with what wonder I saw the swift shuttle, impelled by her deft fingers, dart back and forth, in and out of the web."

And a granddaughter\*\* of SALLY (PARKER) CUTLER's wrote in 1916:

"I am eighty years old and my memory goes back to the days of tallow candles made at home, of spinning the yarn, or rather of seeing it done by my mother and aunts, for by the time I was old enough to spin, yarn was bought from factories. I have knit stockings and well remember being taught the art by my own grandmother. . . . Those were days of plain living and high thinking."

\*Julia P.<sup>7</sup> Cutler of Warren and of Marietta, Ohio.<sup>86</sup>

\*\*Jane (Dawes) Shedd.<sup>86</sup>

Some of these outstanding hardships of this family, during the twenty-five or thirty years following their removal into the west, including, as stated, life in winter in a sheep shed without a chimney; cleaning out a horse barn to live in; twelve members of the family having smallpox; three children born under the above conditions; heavy loss by fire; the necessity of grinding corn by hand; a one hundred mile canoe trip down river to buy needed corn and paddling back that distance without it, but still having justice and fairness enough to commend the owner who gave it away to those in greater need and unable to pay. These and many more similar trials furnish ample evidence that pioneering toward the west required an heroic mold of character and endurance. The lack of drainage and the existing sanitary conditions caused an enormous amount of sickness in the "new country". Fever and ague were an ever present threat and burden. Lack of conveniences, as we know them, made life infinitely harder and more dangerous, as when three of Polly (Parker) Shaw's children were badly scalded by a kettle of hot water, falling from the trammel,\* though they did recover. And in spite of all the hardships and privation, seven of the eleven children in this family averaged seventy-nine years at death, and WILLIAM<sup>6</sup> reached eighty.

In this family certain outstanding traits\*\* are strongly evident; especially the deep and enduring family affection and loyalty, and strong religious convictions. The first is evident in every letter remaining to us, between mother and child or between brothers and sisters. The second attribute shows forth also in every one of these letters, in the concern of each generation for their children's religious life and in their regret at the temporary affiliation of John<sup>6</sup> and Daniel<sup>6</sup> as preachers of the Halcyon sect. It is gratifying to have this evidence that the generations of conflict in the early Malden Church which their forbears endured (see Call, p. 135) did not turn the descendants away from religious experience and usefulness.

Repeated evidences<sup>25</sup> are seen in extant letters and documents of many business affairs where EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER, husband of SALLY<sup>6</sup> PARKER was loyally helpful to various members of the family of WILLIAM<sup>6</sup> PARKER, and of their gratefulness to him. A letter written to EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER in December, 1814, by his brother-in-law, William<sup>6</sup> Parker, contained an interesting political reaction relative to the current war. It read in part:<sup>25</sup>

"Our war advocates here are getting very tired of the war. I understand there were fourteen called upon in South Town before they could get two soldiers to march. The principal object among the Democrats now is how they shall get clear of a draught. Some of them are almost willing that the Federalist should have the administration, but I hope the Federalists will be politic enough to let them have a little more rope, and they will soon hang themselves, for it is my opinion that nothing will render the present Administration more unpopular than to lay their own taxes, or otherwise, the taxes to support their own war."

The children of WILLIAM<sup>6</sup> and MARY (WARNER) PARKER were<sup>25,29</sup>

\*An iron hook which held a kettle suspended over an open fire.

\*\*Other attributes were a love of good literature and also of nature. A letter<sup>25</sup> written by MARY (WARNER) PARKER to her daughter SALLY, after the marriage and removal of the latter, said:

"I have not forgot the many pleasant moments we have spent in our retired walks together in the woods, discourses upon religion and friendship, unbosoming our grief and sorrows to each other — what a consolation!"

The voluminous journals<sup>25</sup> of Julia P. Cutler, daughter of SALLY, show forth too the enduring love of nature in her varying moods.

- I. Elizabeth Warner<sup>6</sup>, b. at Newburyport<sup>29</sup> Sept. 21, 1773; d. unm.<sup>25</sup> Jan. 19, 1850, ae. 77. Always called "Aunt Betsey".
- II. William<sup>6</sup>, b. July 4, 1775, at "Brown's Gardens" in<sup>25</sup> Newbury, but recorded at Newburyport; d. Dec. 3, 1855, ae. 80, at Pomeroy, O.; m. May 13, 1802, Betsey<sup>6</sup> Wyatt (Dea Joshua<sup>4</sup>, George<sup>3</sup>, George<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>).<sup>37</sup> Theirs was the first wedding performed in Ames Township and probably the second in Athens County.<sup>44</sup> They settled<sup>43</sup> at Rutland, Meigs Co., O., and the property remained in the family over a century.
- III. SALLY<sup>6</sup>, b. (but not recorded) at Newburyport,<sup>25,45</sup> June 6, 1777; d. June 30, 1846, ae. 69, in Warren Township, Washington Co., O.; m.<sup>28</sup> in Meigs County, O. on Apr. 13, 1808, as his second wife, EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER (see Cutler, p. 221).
- IV. \*John<sup>6</sup>, b. at Newburyport,<sup>25</sup> June 20, 1779; d.s.p. 1849, ae. 70; m. in Washington Co., O.,<sup>36</sup> May 2, 1807, Lucy Cotton; in 1846 living 17 miles from Salem, Columbiana Co., O.
- V. \*Daniel<sup>6</sup>, b. at Newburyport,<sup>25</sup> Aug. 7, 1781; bap. there at the First Presbyterian Church,<sup>29</sup> Aug., 1781; d. Mar. 22, 1861, ae. 80, at "Mt. Hygiene", Clermont Co., O.; m. Oct. 24, 1816, Priscilla (Mulloy) Ring (1793-1874) widow of Benjamin.
- VI. Polly<sup>6</sup>, b. at Newburyport,<sup>25</sup> May 27, 1783; m. Judge Cushing Shaw, b. Aug. 30, 1781, [Benjamin and Elizabeth (Cushing)].<sup>45</sup>
- VII. Nancy<sup>6</sup>, b. at Newburyport,<sup>25</sup> Mar. 13, 1785; d.s.p. Apr. 4, 1861 or 1864, ae. 79, at Salem, O.; m. Stephen<sup>7</sup> Strong (Horatio<sup>6</sup>, Ozia<sup>5</sup>, Phineas<sup>4</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>46</sup> Having no children, he gave his 186 acre farm with its brick house to the town of Salem, O., for a manual labor school for the poor and needy.<sup>46</sup>
- VIII. Susanna<sup>6</sup>, called "Sukey", b. at Newburyport,<sup>25</sup> Mar. 10, 1787; d. July 5, 1815; m. Sylvanus Everts.<sup>25</sup>
- IX. Fanny<sup>6</sup>, b. Mar. 26, 1789, in Allegheny Co., Pa., a little N. E. of McKeesport;<sup>25</sup> m. in Washington Co., O.<sup>36</sup> Apr. 30, 1807, John Fordyce (Samuel and Rhoda, members of the Halcyon Church.)<sup>25</sup>
- X. Ebenezer<sup>6</sup>, b. Dec. 22, 1792, on west bank of the Monongahela, opposite McKeesport; d. Sept. 22, 1873, ae. 80, near Cincinnati, O.; m. Mary Swett (Benjamin of Newburyport).<sup>25</sup>
- IX. Clarissa<sup>6</sup>, b. May 1, 1795, "in the forks of the Youghogheny, eight miles up from McKeesport and one mile south of the river";<sup>25</sup> d. Feb. 24, 1817, ae. 22; m. Peter Shaw; b. Mar. 20, 1788, [Benjamin and Elizabeth (Cushing)].<sup>25,45</sup>

\*Daniel<sup>6</sup> and probably also his brother John<sup>6</sup>, developed a definite mechanical tendency, beyond their cabinet making, for they had designed and manufactured a patented hemp-breaking machine and a washing machine and in 1809-10 Daniel<sup>6</sup>, with Alvin Bingham, traveled over most of Kentucky and Tennessee and even as far south as New Orleans constructing and selling their products, or selling<sup>25,88</sup> "single rights" or "county rights" to manufacture and sell the machines.

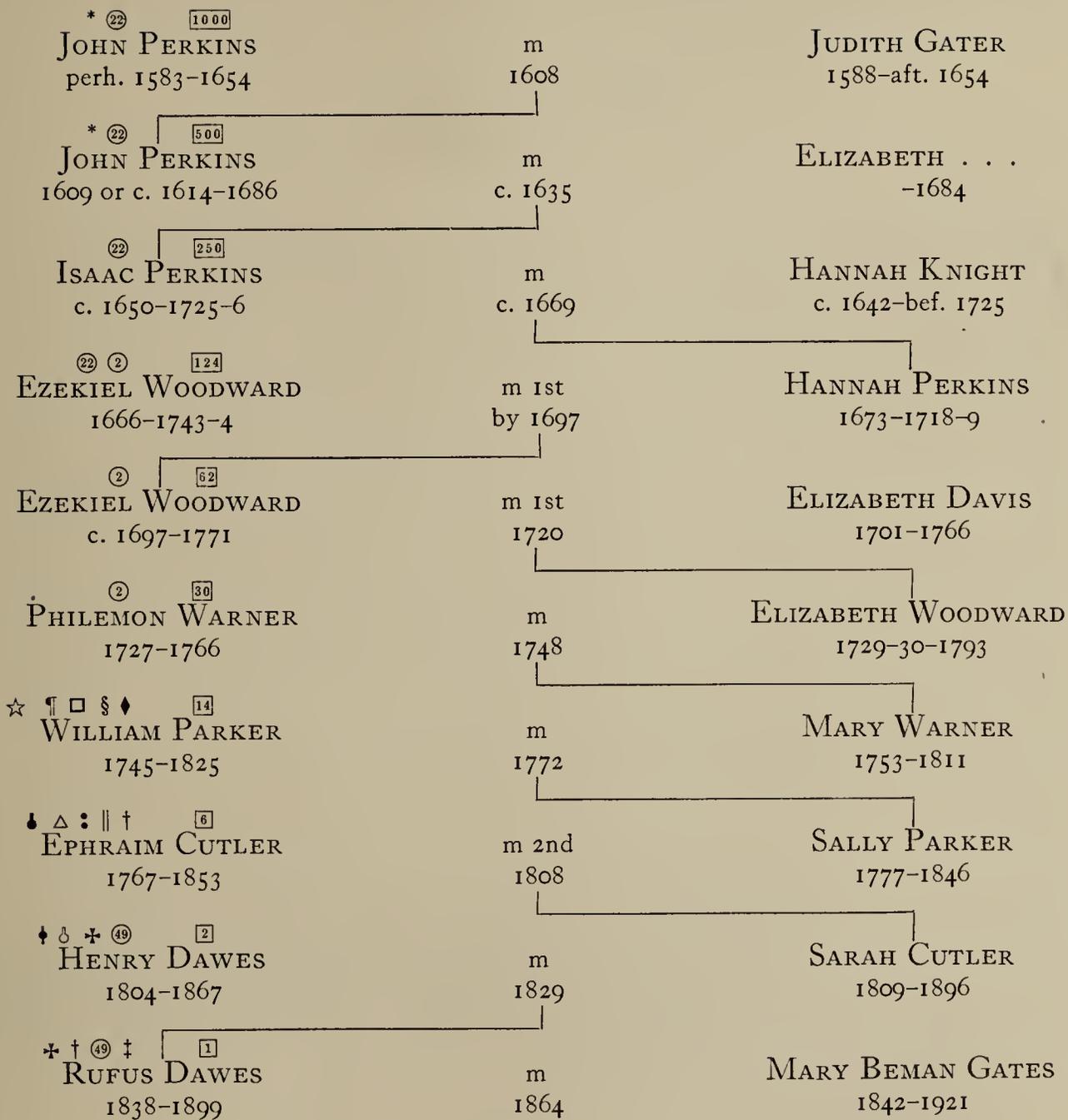
Daniel<sup>6</sup> wrote an autobiography in 1845 at the request of his family and friends from which much vital information has been drawn. He also made a trip to the east in 1846 visiting their old home in Newburyport and on his return wrote a most interesting description of it to his brother William<sup>6</sup>.

## REFERENCES

1. Pope's Pioneers, p. 343; Woburn Vital Records, I, 188; III, 200; Savage, III, 349-51, 353; History of Billerica, Mass., H. A. Hazen, 1883, pt. 2, p. 104.
2. History of Chelmsford, Mass., W. Waters, 1917, pp. 1-3, 7-12, 27-9; Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, III, 290, 301.
3. Middlesex County, Mass., Probate Records, III, 177.
4. Middlesex County, Mass., Court Files, June, 1672.
5. Waters' Chelmsford, Mass., p. 754.
6. Ibid. p. 11.
7. Ibid. pp. 37, 39.
8. Ibid. pp. 57, 836.
9. Hazen's Billerica, Mass., p. 139; New England Register, IV, 66; L, 42.
10. Waters' Chelmsford, Mass., pp. 60, 89-90.
11. Ibid., p. 124; Massachusetts Archives, LXIX, 137.
12. New England Register, XXXI, 111; XXXII, 190.
13. Vital Records of Malden, Mass., pp. 10, 28, 38, 40, 52, 64, 65, 95, 105, 109-12, 163, 209, 244, 247, 262, 276-7, 333, 340, 342, 349, 359-60, 367, 379, 386.
14. Vital Records of Billerica, Mass., pp. 242, 296-7, 349, 361, 381.
15. Danforth Genealogy, J. J. May, 1902, p. 37.
16. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, Mass., T. B. Wyman, 1879, pp. 4, 317, 350, 522, 640, 726-9, 1035.
17. History of Malden, Mass., D. P. Corey, 1899, pp. 259-60, 267, 365, 377, 389.
18. Bi-Centennial Book of Malden, Mass., 1850, p. 212-3.
19. Middlesex County, Mass., Deeds, IX, 20, 224, 226.
20. Middlesex County, Mass., Probate Records, VIII, 825.
21. Middlesex County, Mass., Probate Files, No. 16815.
22. Corey's Malden, Mass., pp. 437, 439-40, 501, 513, 518, 601-9, 614-5, 617-8, 623, 647-8.
23. Ibid., pp. 455, 580, 663, 710.
24. New England Register, XX, 82.
25. Family Records.
26. Upham Genealogy, F. K. Upham, 1892, pp. 78-9, 81, 84.

27. Thompson Genealogy, C. N. Sinnett, 1907, pp. 275-8.
28. New England Genealogies, W. R. Cutter, 1913, II, 833.
29. Vital Records of Newburyport, Mass., I, 5, 293; II, 357, 743.
30. Gleanings from Parker Records, W. T. Parker, 1894, pp. 7, 10-1; History of Groton, Mass., C. Butler, 1848, pp. 281-5.
31. Parkers in America, A. G. Parker, pp. 58-9, 529-35.
32. Genealogies of Boston and Eastern Massachusetts, W. R. Cutter, 1908, III, 1456-7.
33. Vital Records of Chelmsford, Mass., pp. 6, 105-12, 282-7, 377, 406, 419-22, corrected by.<sup>51</sup>
34. Fletcher Genealogy, E. H. Fletcher, 1871, p. 12; Fletcher Genealogy, E. H. Fletcher, 1881, p. 28.
35. Warren, Jackson and Allied families, B. W. Davis, 1903, pp. 52, 65-7, 110.
36. Old Northwest Quarterly, IV, 11.
37. Wyatt Genealogy, A. H. Wyatt, 1921, pp. 10, 16-7.
38. Middlesex Co., Mass., Deeds, XXIX, 259.
39. Ibid., XV, 42; XXXIX, 300.
40. Medford, Mass., Vital Records, pp. 270, 412; Medford Genealogies, W. H. Whitmore, 1855, p. 35.
41. Dexter Genealogy, O. P. Dexter, 1904, pp. 36, 44.
42. History of Washington Co., O., H. Z. Williams, 1881, p. 636.
43. Pioneer History of Meigs Co., O., S. C. Larkin, 1908, pp. 57-9.
44. History of Athens Co., O., C. M. Walker, 1869, pp. 414-5.
45. Cushing Genealogy, J. S. Cushing, 1905, p. 147.
46. Strong Genealogy, B. W. Dwight, 1871, I, 435.
47. Coffin Genealogy, W. S. Appleton, 1896, p. 43; New England Register, XXIV, 305-6; Parkers in America, A. G. Parker, pp. 534-5.
48. History of Watertown, H. Bond, 1860, pp. 455-6; Stearns Genealogy, A. S. Van Wagenen, 1901, pp. 30-1.
49. Middlesex Co., Mass., Deeds, XXVIII, 462.
50. New England Register, XXVI, 82; XXXI, 111, 160-2; XXXII, 189-90; XLI, 283; Waters Gleanings, p. 589, especially Register XXI, 161-2.
51. Massachusetts Historical Society Proceedings, Ser. 2, XII, 324, 329; also 333-7.
52. Peter Parker and Sarah Ruggles, J. W. Linzee, 1913, pp. 540-1.
53. Converse Genealogy, C. A. Converse, 1905, pp. 5-6; Genealogy of the Converse, Wheaton, Edmonds and Coolidge Families, W. G. Hill, 1887, pp. 108-9.
54. The Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 71; The Winthrop Fleet of 1630; C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 66.
55. Pierce Genealogy, T. B. Pierce, 1882, pp. 23, 27; Vital Records of Chelmsford, Mass., p. 287; Parkers in America, A. G. Parker, pp. 532-3.
56. Foster Genealogy, F. C. Pierce, 1899, p. 498; Corey's Malden, Mass., pp. 486-525; Bi-Centennial Book of Malden, 1850, pp. 128-9, 139-42, 195-9.
57. History of Middlesex Co., Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1890, III, 461-9, 478-98, especially 487, 491, 495-7; History of Middlesex Co., Mass., S. A. Drake, 1880, I, 428; II, 116-8, 121-6.
58. Dexter Genealogy, O. P. Dexter, 1904, p. 36; New England Register, XIV, 202.
59. Malden Historical Society Register, II, 63-5, 69; III, 54, 56, 58, 61, 65, 68; IV, 93-4.
60. History of Cambridge, Mass., L. R. Paige, 1877, pp. 531-2, 539, 572; Vital Records of Cambridge, II, 298, 687; Boston Record Commissioners Report, XXIV, 57, 70; XXVIII, 31.
61. Research performed in original records by Mrs. James T. Watts, of Washington, D. C., in Middlesex Co., Mass., Deeds, IX, 224, 226; XV, 42, 569; XXVIII, 462; Probates, Vols. V, 225-7; X, 466, 477; Files No. 16525 to 16529, inclusive, 16815.
62. Posterity of WILLIAM WARNER, Edward Warner (no date, but see Lib. Cong. list of Genealogies, p. 1178), pp. 8-9.
63. Vital Records of Newburyport, Mass., II, 495, 824; Vital Records of Gloucester, Mass., III, 317.
64. Autobiography and letters by Daniel<sup>o</sup> Parker (1781-1867) furnished by his grandsons The Rev. Daniel M.<sup>o</sup> Parker and Dr. J. D. Parker, both of Fayette, Ia.
65. Historical Collections of Ohio, H. Howe, 1889, I, 131.
66. Some Ancestral Lines . . . of Guilford S. Tingley, R. M. Tingley, 1935, p. 63.
67. Vital Records of Billerica, Mass., pp. 141, 381; and of Bedford, Mass., p. 22; Bedford Old Families, A. E. Brown, 1892, p. 26; Hazen's Billerica, part 2, pp. 48, 102, 172; History of Hollis, N. H., S. T. Worcester, 1879, pp. 132, 341, 373; Middlesex County, Mass., Deeds, XXXIX, 300; Parker Family in America, A. G. Parker, p. 533.
68. Emerson Genealogy, B. K. Emerson, 1900, pp. 75, 125; Corey's Malden, Mass., pp. 439-40, 647-8, 769-70, 779.
69. Juniata and Susquehanna Valleys in Pennsylvania, Everts, Peck & Richards, 1886, p. 1248.
70. Statements of Julia Parker Cutler (1815-1903) granddaughter of WILLIAM<sup>o</sup> and MARY (WARNER) PARKER.
71. National Year Book, Sons of the American Revolution, 1916, 1918.
72. New England Register XX, 81-2.
73. Americana; Customs and Fashions of Old New England, Alice M. Earle, 1893, pp. 376-9; Rings, G. F. Kuntz, 1917, pp. 40-8; Jewelry, H. C. Smith, 1908, pp. 294, 364-70.
74. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, 1935, XXXI, 152, 186, 214.
75. Pioneer History of Meigs Co., Ohio, S. C. Larkin, 1908, pp. 40-1.
76. History of Newbury, Mass., J. J. Currier, 1902, pp. 424, 426.
77. "An American Doctor's Odyssey," Victor Heiser, 1936, pp. 177-9; Dictionary of National Biography, X, 759.
78. Felt Genealogy, J. E. Morris, 1893, p. 21; New England Register L, 42.
79. Giddings Genealogy, S. M. Giddings, 1882, pp. 12, 138, 150-67; Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1923, p. 1010.
80. Records of the Columbia Historical Society, 1900, III, 239-40.
81. History of Newburyport, Mrs. E. V. Smith, 1854, pp. 375-6; History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, pp. 429-38.
82. New York Public Library Bulletin, 1922, XXVI, 71-9; Lord Timothy Dexter . . . J. P. Marquand, 1925. Life of Lord Timothy Dexter . . . Including his own writings, "Dexter's Pickle for the Knowing Ones," &c &c. S. L. Knapp, 1858. History of Newburyport . . . J. J. Currier, 1906, I, see index. Dexter Genealogy, O. P. Dexter, 1904, pp. 78-82.
83. Clermont Courier, issue of Sept. 11, 1861.
84. The "Western Spectator," issue of April 12, 1811.
85. History of Allegheny County, Pa., pub. 1889 by A. Warner & Co., pt. 1, pp. 120-2, 125-6; Historical Collections of . . . Pennsylvania, S. Day, 1843, pp. 666-7.
86. "William Dawes . . ." and a Genealogy of the Dawes family, H. W. Holland, 1878, p. 86; Cutler Memorial, N. S. Cutler, 1889, pp. 114-120.
87. Essex Antiquarian, VII, 99.
88. Snow-Estes Ancestry, N. E. Snow, 1939, I, 217-8, 262, 272-3, 278.

# PERKINS



- \* Boston
- <sup>(22)</sup> Ipswich
- <sup>(2)</sup> Gloucester
- ☆ Malden
- ¶ Charlestown
- Newburyport

- § Allegheny Co., Pa.
- ♦ Meigs Co., O.
- ♠ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- ∴ Waterford, O.
- ∥ Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♠ Morgan Co., O.
- ✦ Malta, O.
- <sup>(49)</sup> Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## PERKINS

**J**OHN<sup>1</sup> PERKINS\* said<sup>1</sup> to have come from Hillmorton, co. Warwick with<sup>1</sup> his wife, JUDITH and their children JOHN<sup>2</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, Mary<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup> and Jacob<sup>2</sup> came to New England in the famous "Lyon" with its more famous master, William<sup>1</sup> Peirce sailing from Bristol on December 1, 1630, and arriving at Boston on February 5, 1630-1. As has been told elsewhere (see FORD, p. 295) when Gov. John Winthrop arrived on the "Arabella," the flagship of the Fleet, in June, 1630, and learned of the shortage of foodstuffs in the colony and the need of scorbutics, he commissioned Master Peirce, who had just landed a load of emigrants, to return at once for supplies. This second trip of Peirce's within the year brought two hundred tons of provisions and but a few passengers — perhaps because of lack of space but more likely because of the discomfort and danger of a winter crossing of the Atlantic. Winthrop's Journal records<sup>2</sup> of the vessel that "she had a very tempestuous passage, yet, through God's mercy, all her people came safe, except Way\*\* his son, who fell from the spritsail yard in a tempest, and could not be recovered, though he kept in sight near a quarter of an hour. Her goods also came in good condition."<sup>2</sup>

JOHN<sup>1</sup> settled first at Boston where he and JUDITH soon<sup>3</sup> joined the First church<sup>19</sup> and he became<sup>6</sup> a freeman† on May 18, 1631. He had acquired a certain privilege probably as an aid to the community's food supply, for the Court of Assistants ruled<sup>6</sup> on April 2, 1632, that "noe p'son w<sup>t</sup> soeuer shall shoote att fowle vpon

\*Differing claims are made as to the English origin of this family but absolute proof seems to be lacking. JOHN<sup>1</sup> is said, but without authority, to be from<sup>22</sup> Newent, Gloucestershire. He is also said to have come<sup>1</sup> from Hillmorton, Warwickshire and further, at Hillmorton and vicinity<sup>23</sup> are shown four generations<sup>22,23</sup> of ancestry that fit him nicely and are doubtless his. One of the items there is the marriage of a JOHN PERKYNs on October 9, 1608, to a JUDITH GATOR (see below) said<sup>20</sup> to have been the daughter of Michael and Elizabeth Gator and to have been baptized<sup>20</sup> at Hillmorton on March 19, 1588. Since JOHN<sup>1</sup> brought a wife JUDITH to New England, circumstantial evidence fits beautifully. And if the data from the Hillmorton parish register is bona fide, as it appears to be, the baptismal date<sup>23</sup> for our JOHN<sup>1</sup> is December 23, 1583, son of HENRY and ELIZABETH; and the baptismal dates for his children are<sup>23</sup>

1. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, bap. Nov. 8, 1609 (see p. 000).
2. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, bap. Mar. 3, 1611.
3. Mary<sup>2</sup>, bap. Sept. 3, 1615.
4. Ann<sup>2</sup>, bap. Sept. 5, 1617.
5. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, bap. Apr. 28, 1622.
6. Jacob<sup>2</sup>, bap. Sept. 12, 1624.  
and Lydia in New England<sup>23</sup> (see also p. 486).

It may be an evidence<sup>27</sup> toward verification of "GATER" as the maiden name of JUDITH wife of JOHN<sup>1</sup> PERKINS that in 1669 an Elizabeth Gater was resident in the home of their youngest child Lydia<sup>2</sup> Perkins, wife of Henry<sup>1</sup> Bennet of Ipswich. A quarrel with a neighbor woman caused Elizabeth Gater to be ordered to spend a week in the house of correction but a plea to the court changed the sentence to a fine which Henry<sup>1</sup> Bennet engaged to pay.<sup>27</sup>

\*\*This implies<sup>2</sup> the son of Henry<sup>1</sup> Way of Dorchester though it has been erroneously interpreted<sup>4</sup> as "Way, son of William Peirce, master."

†This was the first time that the freeman's oath, as of Massachusetts Bay, was given and JOHN<sup>1</sup> took it in the company<sup>6</sup> of JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH, ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MOULTON, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD, MATTHEW<sup>1</sup> GRANT, HENRY<sup>1</sup> HERRICK, ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT and JOHN<sup>1</sup> WOODBURY.

Pullen Poynte [Chelsea] or Noddles Ileland [East Boston] but that the s<sup>d</sup> places shall be reserved for JOHN PERKINS to take fowle w<sup>th</sup> netts."<sup>19</sup>

On June 3, 1632, their youngest daughter Lydia<sup>2</sup> was baptized at the First Church of Boston and on November 7, 1632, JOHN<sup>1</sup> with ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT and two others were appointed by the Court to set the bounds between Roxbury and Dorchester.

Before October 1, 1633, JOHN<sup>1</sup> called "sergeant" had evidently, but temporarily, slipped from the "straight and narrow" for on that date he was ordered<sup>9</sup> to carry up forty turfs toward the completion of the earthworks of the fort on Corn or Fort Hill "as a punishment for drunkenness." This is the only hint of criticism found against him at any time.

Late in 1633 JOHN<sup>1</sup> removed with his family to Ipswich where the family home remained, and from that place he was sent as a representative<sup>6</sup> to the General Court in May, 1636. He served the town<sup>16</sup> in various ways, as on trial juries and grand juries as constable, lot layer, selectman, to lay out highways, to settle disputes, to administer estates, etc., being very often associated with JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE in these tasks.<sup>16</sup> He had various grants of land including a small island and about thirty acres at what was called<sup>20</sup> Moore's Point but his home was<sup>4</sup> "near the river, at the entrance to Jeffries neck, on what is now (1889) East Street" (see map, p. 487). In December, 1643, JOHN<sup>1</sup> had three shillings due<sup>16</sup> him at the rate of twelve pence per day for service as a soldier, against the Indians and in 1648 had three shillings due him for killing three foxes.<sup>16</sup> In March, 1650, being above sixty years of age,\* the court freed him from ordinary training. On March 28, 1654, he made his will and though he signed it with a mark there are extant many instances of long hand signatures by him which prove<sup>5</sup> him to have been an educated man. The document provided for wife JUDITH who was made executrix, made bequests to eldest son JOHN<sup>2</sup>, son Thomas<sup>2</sup>, daughters Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, Mary<sup>2</sup> and Lydia<sup>2</sup>, to several grandchildren and gave the home property to Jacob<sup>2</sup> after the death of wife JUDITH.

It is rather interesting to note that when Mr. William B. Weeden was writing his "Economic and Social History of New England," of all the families resident there in the mid-seventeenth century he chose the family and inventory<sup>18</sup> of JOHN<sup>1</sup> PERKINS as a symbol of the simple but "typical household economy." He said "We may comprehend this people better if we take a whole estate and consider it at a glance. JOHN PERKINS, of Ipswich, had a small estate, but he was a typical man; he held town offices and places of trust and was a responsible citizen. His inventory shows the small values and limited amounts of property sufficing to conduct ordinary living in the middle of the seventeenth century," and then he quoted that inventory totaling £250 in 1654. We can add to Mr. Weeden's summary that wife JUDITH reared a family of six children in that home, but considering the multiplicity of modern conveniences and possessions, it is quite staggering to try to imagine how she accomplished that task with such a paucity of equipment! The will of JOHN<sup>1</sup> was proved on September 27, 1654, so his death had occurred at Ipswich between March 28 and September 27 when he was sixty-four to seventy-one years old.<sup>11</sup>

Of his children, Thomas<sup>2</sup> removed to Topsfield; Mary<sup>2</sup>, resident in Salisbury,

\*If the Hillmorton baptism of 1583 (p. 484) really pertains to our JOHN<sup>1</sup>, he was already sixty-seven in 1650.

was unfortunate enough to have been accused and convicted of witchcraft. Her husband, two ministers and over one hundred of her neighbors testifying in her behalf were unable to clear her. Her imprisonment hung on, with execution delayed until the mania was somewhat allayed and she was finally discharged. Jacob<sup>2</sup>, who inherited the homestead, occupied it until August 7, 1668, when it was destroyed by fire through the carelessness of a servant girl.<sup>4</sup> He soon built another house near the site of the first one. But on a Sabbath in 1671 while a gathering of neighbors were holding a religious service in his home<sup>10,20</sup> it was struck by lightning and Jacob<sup>2</sup> and many others "were struck down and his waistcoat was pierced with small holes and he was beaten down as if dead,"<sup>20</sup> yet he recovered and lived nearly twenty years longer.

The children (see note, p. 484) of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and JUDITH (GATER) PERKINS of whom all but the last were born in England, were<sup>1,3,4,5,23</sup>

- i. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- ii. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>23</sup> 1622 or abt. 1616; d. at Topsfield May 7, 1686; m. there abt. 1640 Phebe<sup>2</sup> Gould (Zaccheus<sup>1</sup>).
- iii. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>23</sup> 1611 or abt. 1618; d. before<sup>5</sup> Sept. 18, 1670; m. as his second wife abt. 1640 William<sup>1</sup> Sargent.
- iv. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b.<sup>23</sup> 1615 or abt. 1620; d. at Salisbury Dec. 20, 1700 ae. 80; m. at Ipswich abt. 1636-7 Thomas<sup>1</sup> Bradbury.
- v. Jacob<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1624; d. at Ipswich Jan. 27, 1699-1700, aged 76; m. 1st abt. 1647-8 Elizabeth\* who perhaps d. 1665; m. 2nd, Damaris (—) Robinson.
- vi. Lydia<sup>2</sup>, bap. at Boston June 3, 1632; d. prob. abt. 1672; m. abt. 1650 Henry Bennet of Ipswich.

JOHN<sup>2</sup> PERKINS (*John<sup>1</sup>*) was born\*\* in England and died at Ipswich December 14, 1686, having married about 1635 ELIZABETH whose identity has not yet been learned. He crossed the ocean with his parents at the age of about fifteen (or twenty-one?), lived a couple of years at Boston and removed to† Ipswich with them about 1633. Almost immediately a most exciting and responsible situation faced JOHN<sup>2</sup> as is shown<sup>21,28</sup> by the Rev. Thomas Cobbet's (1608-1685) "Narrative of New England's Deliverances" for he wrote:

"In the first planting of Ipswich, (as a credible man informed me, namely, Quartermaster PERKINS,) the Terrateens or Eeasterly Indians had a design to have cut them off at the first, when they had but between 20 or 30 men, old and young, belonging to the place (and at that instant most of the men gone into the Bay about their occasions, not hearing of any intimations thereof.) It was thus one Robin, a friendly Indian, came to this JOHN PERKINS, then a young man, living then in a little hut upon his father's Island, on this side of Jeofrye's Neck, and told him that on such a Thursday morning, early, there would come four Indians, to draw him to goe down the Hill to the waterside, to truck with them, which if he did, he and all neare him would be cut off: for there were 40 burchen canoues, would lie out of sight, in the brow of the Hill, full of Armed Indians for that purpose: of this he forthwith acquaints Mr. John Winthrop, (junior) who then

\*Called Lovell, daughter of Thomas, and may have been so.

\*\*His birth has usually been supposed to have occurred about 1614 but if the record quoted (p. 484) is dependable as it seems to be, he was five years older than that, having been baptized on November 8, 1609, at Hillmorton, Warwickshire.<sup>23</sup>

†In October, 1631, before Agawam (Ipswich) was settled by the English, a company of the warlike Tarrantines, or Eastern Indians from the eastern coast of what is now Maine came,<sup>21</sup> under the cover of night, and attacked the tribe of Agawam Indians, killing some and taking others captive, in revenge for an earlier fracas between the tribes. So the episode discussed above was probably a follow-up against the local Indians and certainly an attempted elimination of the whites. Either<sup>28</sup> JOHN<sup>1</sup> PERKINS or his son<sup>29</sup> JOHN<sup>2</sup> had been serving as sergeant of the Allied English and Friendly Indians under chief Masconomah of the Agawam tribe in 1631 in the war against the Tarrantines. As is shown above in 1633 JOHN<sup>2</sup> a young man was serving as sergeant.



IPSWICH

A. Stacy's Wharf B. Perkins' Wharf 2a. JOHN<sup>d</sup> PERKINS bought land near here 1. JOHN<sup>d</sup> PERKINS, Sr. 2. JOHN<sup>d</sup> DANE 3. JOHN<sup>d</sup> COGSWELL  
 4. SIMON<sup>d</sup> STACY 5. WILLIAM<sup>d</sup> WARNER 6. ALEXANDER<sup>d</sup> KNIGHT 7. SIMON<sup>d</sup> TUTTLE 8. JOHN<sup>d</sup> DANE (near R. Muzzy) 9. JOHN<sup>d</sup> TUTTLE 10. JOHN<sup>d</sup> PERKINS

lived there, in a howse neare the water, who advised him if such Indians came, to carry it ruggedly towards them, and threaten to shoot them if they would not be gone, and when their backs were turned to strike up the drum he had with him, besides his two muskets, and then to discharge them; that those six or eight young men, who were in the marshes hard by a mowing, haveing theyr guns each of them ready charged, by them, might take the Alarme, and the Indians would perceive theyr plot was discovered: and haste away to sea againe: which was accordingly so acted and tooke like effect: for he told me, he presently after discovered 40 such canoes sheare off from under the Hill, and make as fast as they could to sea. And no doubt but many godly hearts were lifted up to heaven for deliverance, both in that deliverance at Salem, and this at Ipswich."

So in this earliest (known) test of initiative and courage JOHN<sup>2</sup> earned an enviable standing. Drake says<sup>21</sup> that "through the prudent Management of Sergt. JOHN PERKINS" the Tarratines did not dare to land.<sup>21</sup>

As early as 1634 he received a grant of land as well as subsequent grants<sup>17</sup> of which one was six acres of marsh land "lying upon the brook commonly called 'Labor-in-vain'" and near the great river. His house lot of one acre lay by the river and after building a house upon it, he enclosed it with a paleing.<sup>17</sup> Some of his land was beyond the great Chebacco River and he was granted permission to build a weir therein to take alewives beginning in 1636 which fish he agreed to sell to the colonists for fertilizer at five shillings per thousand. This privilege was to run for a seven year period but he soon disposed<sup>4</sup> of land, weir and permit to JOHN<sup>1</sup> COGSWELL. In 1637 he acquired an island on the south side of the Chebacco River as his father had before him. They owned a cow apiece and each had a right to commonage.

It appears to have been JOHN<sup>2</sup> who became a freeman<sup>6</sup> on May 17, 1637. In 1639 he bought<sup>17</sup> a house lot of over one acre which was bounded on the northeast by his father's lot. In 1640 he received a tentative grant of seventy acres beyond Chebacco River, right against his island, with the understanding that if it were needed for another settlement within four years, he would give it up; and the further understanding that he would himself fence or secure it from trespass<sup>17</sup> by cattle or swine which fed on nearby commons. In 1648 JOHN<sup>2</sup> subscribed five shillings toward Maj. Denison's pay and killed two foxes for which he received four shillings; in 1649 he was on a committee of three to treat with Newbury and Rowley.<sup>17</sup>

In 1663 JOHN<sup>2</sup> was<sup>15</sup> chosen as Quarter Master of the military organization of Ipswich and retained the title until his death.<sup>29</sup> He established the first ordinary or inn at Ipswich in 1668 and had a license to draw liquor. He dealt heavily in real estate and was interested in coast fisheries,<sup>10</sup> using, as early as 1645, a part of Little Neck for curing his fish.

In June, 1673, JOHN<sup>2</sup> bound himself to the town in the sum of £100 for entertaining Matthew Hooker, a Jersie man who was to become a tenant on a farm belonging to JOHN<sup>2</sup>; and in November, 1673, he agreed to lay down to the town one-half of the thatch bank at his island — i.e. the bank next to the town.<sup>15</sup> This island ultimately passed to his son Abraham<sup>3</sup>, who acted as his father's attorney in the later years.<sup>26</sup> JOHN<sup>2</sup> gave to Jacob<sup>3</sup> a farm of one hundred acres in Chebacco Parish, gave land to Samuel<sup>3</sup>, a farm in Chebacco to Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> and gave considerable real estate to Luke<sup>3</sup> on condition that he would supply the needs of his mother and of Thomas<sup>3</sup> who was for some reason unable to care for himself.<sup>26</sup> As is shown,

the mother ELIZABETH pre-deceased JOHN<sup>2</sup> but the date of the death of Thomas<sup>3</sup> has not been found.

JOHN<sup>2</sup> was a signer with others in February, 1681-2, of a petition to the King relative to clearing of colony lands from the claims of Robert Mason. His wife ELIZABETH died on September 27, 1684. He had given farms to his sons before his death which occurred<sup>4</sup> at Ipswich on December 14, 1686, so left no will.

This family must have had a streak of the match-making propensity, for what is called<sup>28</sup> a "Romance of Cross Island" (which had earlier belonged to JOHN<sup>2</sup>) took place in his home and, as will presently be shown, our ISAAC<sup>3</sup> at a later date conceived a very definite plan for one of his son's matrimonial affairs (p. 490).

"Cross Island<sup>28</sup> is a gigantic formation near our eastern border, which guards our gateway to the sea. It is a runaway child of Cape Ann; a strayed fragment of the great granite peninsula. Yet it is a finished production of nature, graceful, independent, rising up out of its water bed north of the deep channel, thereby denying any connection with the ledges and quarries of the great cape.

"Very early in the history of our town, in 1637, the town of Ipswich granted this island and the adjoining farm on the point to JOHN PERKINS, Jr."<sup>28</sup>

Cross Island also bore the name<sup>28</sup> of "Daffe Adowne Dille" and was often just "Dilly." About 1672, subsequent to its sale by JOHN<sup>2</sup> and during the ownership of "Dille" by Robert<sup>1</sup> Cross, his son Stephen<sup>2</sup> Cross aspired to the hand of one Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Cheney (John<sup>1</sup>) of Newbury.<sup>28</sup> Perhaps the deed of gift had been lost, for thirteen years later (about 1685) John Kendrick\* aged forty-two made a deposition as follows:

"This Deponent testifyeth and saith that in the year 1672, I, the said Deponent, was at the house of Quartermaster JOHN PERKINS in Ipswich; where was Robert Cross, Sen'r, and widdow Cheney of Newbury, and Stephen Cross, ye sonn of said Robert Cross, and Elizabeth Cheney, daughter of the s'd widdow Cheney; the s'd Robert Cross then desired the s'd widdow to give her daughter Elizabeth in marriage to his sonn Stephen; the s'd widdow would not consent to the same except the said Robert would give his sonn Stephen sum land for to settle upon; the s'd Robert tould the s'd widdow that he had an island in Chebacco river, which he did intend for his sonn Stephen, which he valued to be worth two hundred pounds sterling or theire abouts; the s'd widdow then said unto the said Robert that if he would give his sonn, the s'd Stephen, all that island that shee would then give her dafter, Elizabeth, unto the s'd Stephen in marriage, which he, the said Robert did freely promise to doe and emmediately thereupon the s'd Robert Cross drew a deed of gift to his sonn Stephen of the s'd island and subscribed his hand to it; to the which deed I, the s'd deponent, was one witness, and Quartermaster JOHN PERKINS was the other witness, and upon these terms the said Robert Cross and widdow Cheney agreed and their sonn and daughter, in sum convenient time after, were joined together in matrimoney.

"John Kendrick made oath to the truth of this in court in Ipswich, March 31, 1685."

And in less than a year after this assistance to "Dan Cupid," our Quartermaster JOHN<sup>2</sup> PERKINS died.

The known children of Quartermaster JOHN<sup>2</sup> and ELIZABETH (—) PERKINS, all born at Ipswich were<sup>3,4,10</sup>

- i. John<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1636; d. at Ipswich in 1659; m. abt. 1658, Lydia (—).
- ii. Abraham<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1640; d. at Ipswich Apr. 27, 1722, in his 82nd year by being "run over by

\*John Kendrick had married Lydia<sup>2</sup> Cheney, older sister of Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> above.<sup>28</sup>

- tumbrill which broke many bones across his breast"; m. Oct. 16, 1661, Hannah<sup>2</sup> Beamsley (WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and ANNE of Boston).
- III. Jacob<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1646; d.\* at Ipswich Nov. 26, 1719, in his 74th year; m. 1st, 1667, Sarah Wainwright; m. 2nd 1688-9 Sarah Kinsman (Robert and Mary).<sup>4</sup>
- IV. Luke<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1649; d. aft. 1694; m. 1st Elizabeth Jaques; m. 2nd Sarah (—).
- V. ISAAC<sup>3</sup>, see following.
- VI. \*\*Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1652; m. 1684 Judith (—).
- VII. †Samuel<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1655; d. intestate 1700;<sup>10</sup> m. 1677 Hannah West (dau. of Twifford and Hannah) who<sup>11</sup> d. Aug. 21, 1732.
- VIII. Thomas<sup>3</sup>, unable to care for himself and left to the care of his brother Luke<sup>3</sup> by their father.
- IX. Sarah<sup>3</sup>, living in April, 1683; no further record.

ISAAC<sup>3</sup> PERKINS (*John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>4</sup> at Ipswich about 1650 and died there 1726 having married in about 1669 HANNAH<sup>2</sup> KNIGHT (see Knight, p. 399). Their marriage is not recorded but her parentage is proved almost forty years later when on February 6, 1716, she and ISAAC<sup>3</sup> conveyed to Richard Kimball land in Ipswich<sup>4</sup> "which had formerly belonged to her father ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup> KNIGHT of Ipswich."

ISAAC<sup>3</sup> served<sup>25</sup> in King Philip's War having £1-1-4 due him on July 24, 1676, and fifteen shillings fourpence at a later date.<sup>25</sup>

On March 20, 1683-4, JOHN<sup>2</sup> had deeded<sup>4</sup> to his son ISAAC<sup>3</sup> a farm of one hundred acres in Chebacco Parish "near to what is now (1889) called 'the Falls'" and ISAAC<sup>3</sup> had been living on that farm even earlier. This was one-half of the farm which JOHN<sup>2</sup> had bought of William Wittred† on August 8, 1661, and it was still owned by a grandson<sup>4</sup> of ISAAC<sup>3</sup> in 1790.

In 1692 when the hideous witchcraft<sup>24</sup> mania cursed New England and demanded the lives, among others, of John<sup>2</sup> Procter (John<sup>1</sup>) and his wife, a petition in behalf of the Procters was signed by thirty-two Ipswich men and addressed to the "Honorable Court of Assistants sitting in Boston." The first signer was the Rev. John Wise, bless his heart! (See index on him.) The eleventh and twelfth signers were ISAAC<sup>3</sup> PERKINS and his brother<sup>4</sup> Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, while the Cogswell family was represented by the signatures of William<sup>2</sup> (JOHN<sup>1</sup>), his sons William<sup>3</sup>, Jonathan<sup>3</sup> and John<sup>3</sup> and by John<sup>3</sup> Cogswell (John<sup>2</sup> deceased).<sup>24</sup> This effort did not save the life of John<sup>2</sup> Procter, but it proved the logical minds and outstanding courage of the signers, for they definitely risked their own safety by signing such a document while this superstitious mania was at its height.

As the years passed, ISAAC<sup>3</sup> and HANNAH, his wife, made various land transfers<sup>4</sup> and he wrote a very good hand. One odd plan originated by ISAAC<sup>3</sup> about 1703 pertained to the marriage of his son Isaac<sup>4</sup>, for the father offered the son "£100 or other goods, chatels or lands, equivalent thereunto, in consideration that my sonne Isaac doth marry with Mary Pike of Boston, widow, and now of Ipswich." This was to be paid at the rate of £10 per year from the day and date of their marriage. This sum he offered "for love & good will that I bear to my sonne & in

\*By the Kinsman Genealogy<sup>30</sup> Jacob<sup>3</sup> Perkins is said to have died between November 10 and December 3, 1705, with his will naming wife Sarah and eight children.

\*\*In 1700 Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> sold to Abraham<sup>4</sup> (ISAAC<sup>3</sup>) a part of the Wittred farm (vide infra).

†Samuel<sup>3</sup> had land from his father<sup>10</sup> in Ipswich on which he built in 1674. He served in the Narragansett War.

‡The other half of the Wittred farm was given by JOHN<sup>2</sup> to his son Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> who was in the fishing trade and apparently not interested in farming for he disposed of various small tracts from 1691 to 1703 including one transfer with the temporary and insecure bounds<sup>26</sup> of "a black birch tree, a red oak, a grapevine, a heap of rock & a cherrie tree." He sold to his nephew Abraham<sup>4</sup> (ISAAC<sup>3</sup>) in 1700, a goodly portion of what had been the Wittred farm in Chebacco Parish (later Essex Township) so that the house of Abraham<sup>4</sup> adjoined that of his father.<sup>26</sup>

consideration that the said Pike do proceed in the matter of marriage with my said sonne Isaac." In spite of the paternal matrimonial management, the young people appear to have been both of them agreeable, for Isaac<sup>4</sup> did marry "Pike" as his first wife and she bore him five children, of whom but one lived to marry.<sup>26</sup>

In the later days, ISAAC<sup>3</sup> deeded to his son Jacob<sup>4</sup>, his home property in consideration of a formal legal document providing that Jacob<sup>4</sup> himself or his heirs were to support and care for his mother and father during their lives. This transfer covered the homestead, land and farming stock. Wife HANNAH died at an unknown date but evidently before ISAAC<sup>3</sup> made his will on October 26, 1725, for she was not named therein. The will named sons Abraham<sup>4</sup> and Jacob<sup>4</sup> as executors and they proved the document on February 14, 1725-6, so ISAAC<sup>3</sup> died between those dates.

The children of ISAAC<sup>3</sup> and HANNAH (KNIGHT) PERKINS, all born in Chebacco Parish (now Essex) though recorded at Ipswich, were<sup>4,11</sup>

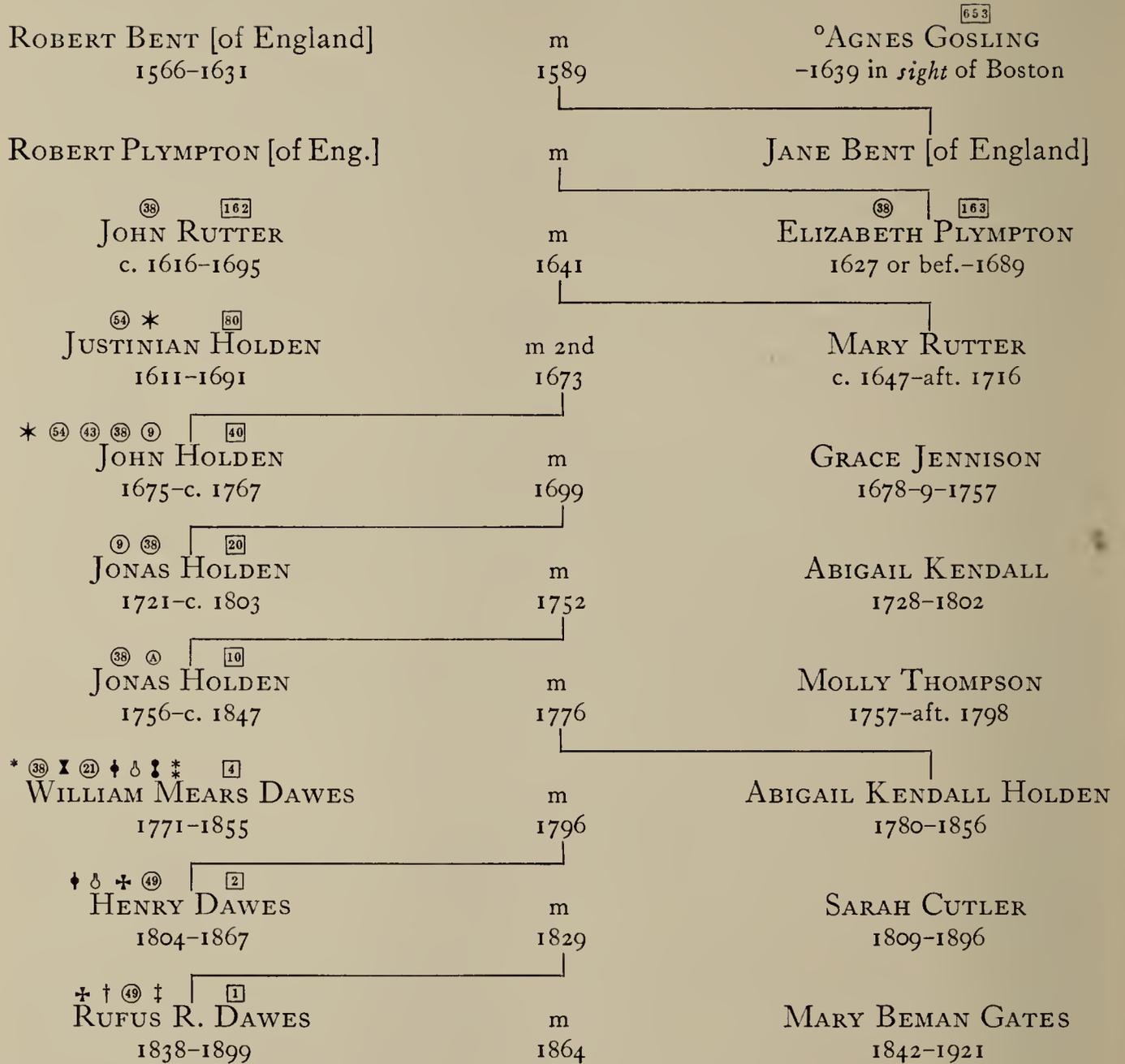
- i. John<sup>4</sup>, b. July 1, 1670; d. yng.
- ii. Abraham<sup>4</sup>, b. Sept. 15, 1671; d. aft. 1732; m. at Ipswich Nov. 6 or 16, 1701, Abigail<sup>3</sup> Dodge (Joseph<sup>2</sup>, RICHARD<sup>1</sup>).<sup>13</sup>
- iii. HANNAH<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 31, 1673; d.<sup>14</sup> at Gloucester Feb. 2, 1718-9, ae. abt. 43; m.<sup>14</sup> about 1700-1 as his first wife EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> WOODWARD (see Woodward, p. 674).
- iv. Isaac<sup>4</sup>, b. May 23, 1676; d. in Boston June 14, 1725; m. 1st at Ipswich<sup>11</sup> June 3, 1703, widow Mary Pike or Pickett; m. 2nd at Boston Oct. 10, 1723, widow Lydia Vifian.
- v. Jacob<sup>4</sup>, b. Nov. 9, 1678; d.<sup>11</sup> "of Chebacco" Mar. 28, 1754; m.<sup>11,12</sup> 1st at Ipswich (int. Sept. 8, 1716) Mary<sup>4</sup> Cogswell (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>); m. 2nd at Ipswich<sup>11,12</sup> Feb. 10, 1728-9, Susannah<sup>4</sup> Cogswell (Jonathan<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) widow of William Butler.
- vi. \*Elizabeth<sup>4</sup>, b. May 29, 1681; prob. d. yng.
- vii. Sarah<sup>4</sup>, b. Mar. 28, 1685; m.<sup>11</sup> at Ipswich (int. Sept. 8, 1716) John Marshall.
- viii. Mary<sup>4</sup>, b. Mar. 27, 1687; d.<sup>11</sup> at Ipswich Jan. 17, 1777, ae. abt. 88; m.<sup>11</sup> at Ipswich (int. Oct. 29, 1709) Jacob Proctor probably nephew of John<sup>2</sup> who suffered as a witch.

\*Apparently<sup>11</sup> ISAAC<sup>3</sup> had two daughters Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> born in 1680 and 1681 who both d. yng.

## REFERENCES

1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 65, 92-3.
2. Winthrop's Journal, I, 57-8; History and Antiquities of Boston, S. G. Drake, 1856, 116-7, 130.
3. Savage, III, 394-6; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 354.
4. The Family of JOHN PERKINS of Ipswich, G. A. Perkins, 1889, pt. 1, pp. 1-31; pt. 2, pp. 1-5; pt. 3, pp. 1-7; Essex Institute Historical Collections, XIX, 217-25; 254-68.
5. Ancestry of C. S. and J. S. Pillsbury, M. L. Holman, 1938, I, 131-3.
6. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 94, 102, 150, 174, 366, 373.
7. The Old Families of Salisbury and Amesbury, D. W. Hoyt, 1897-9, I, 281-4.
8. Ibid., I, 69, 310-1.
9. Topographical and Historical Description of Boston, N. B. Shurtleff, 1890, pp. 164-5.
10. Genealogical and Family History of Central New York, W. R. Cutter, 1912, I, 111-2, 410-1.
11. Vital Records of Ipswich, I, 284-5, 287, 310; II, 644-5, 656.
12. Cogswells in America, E. O. Jameson, 1884, pp. 37, 52.
13. Dodge Family, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 49-50.
14. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 778, 792; III, 333.
15. Hammatt Papers, pp. 244- (with error).
16. Ancient Records of the Town of Ipswich, 1634-1650, 1899, pp. 5, 8-9, 16-7, 21-5, 27, 30, 33-4, 38, 46, 52-6, 58, 60, 68-9, 71, 73, 76, 88, 92, 94, 97, 102-4, 109, 112, 115, 123-4.
17. Ibid., pp. 8, 13-4, 33, 48, 53-4, 60, 71-2, 78, 92, 124-5, 131.
18. Economic and Social History of New England, W. B. Weedon, 1890, I, 217-8.
19. Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880, I, 449, 567.
20. Ancestors of C. D. Bigelow and . . . E. A. Howe . . . , J. C. Frost, 1926, p. 102.
21. History and Antiquities of Boston, S. B. Drake, 1856, p. 130; New England Register, VII, 210-1; The Old Indian Chronicle, S. G. Drake, 1867, p. 25; History of New England, W. Hubbard, 1848, p. 145; Perkins Genealogy, pp. 8-9.
22. Converse Family, C. A. Converse, 1905, II, 831-2.
23. The Perkins Family in ye Olden Times, D. W. Perkins, 1916, pp. 77-81 and note on 82; Perkins Families in the United States in 1790, 1911, D. W. Perkins, pp. 27-35, especially 34.
24. Salem Witchcraft, C. W. Upham, 1867, II, pt. 2, 305-6, Cogswells in America, Jameson, pp. 9, 13, 23-7; Foster Genealogy, F. C. Pierce, 1899, pp. 125-6.
25. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 118, 357, 370.
26. Family of JOHN PERKINS, pp. 22, 25, 29-30, 43-5.
27. Records and Files of the Essex Quarterly Court, IV, 135-6; The Bennet Family of Ipswich, J. M. Bradbury; New England Register, XXIX, 165-6.
28. Ancestry of K. C. Paul, E. J. Paul, 1914, pp. 71-4, 129, 297-9; Cheney Genealogy, C. H. Pope, 1897, pp. 208-9.
29. Ancestry of Lawrence Williams, C. B. Williams, 1915, pp. 143-4.
30. Kinsman Family, L. W. Stickney, 1876, p. 52.

# PLYMPTON and BENT

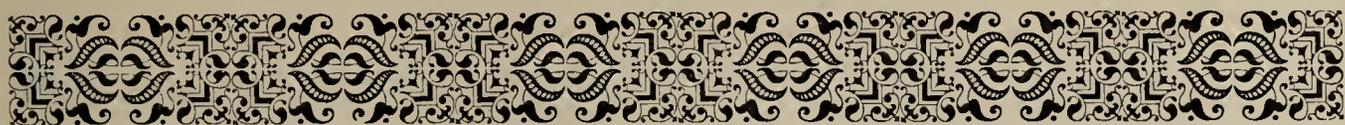


°Of the first two generations named above only AGNES (GOSLING) BENT emigrated.

- Ⓢ Sudbury
- \* Cambridge
- Ⓜ Watertown
- Ⓦ Weston
- ⓐ Concord
- ⓐ Waitsfield, Vt.

- \* Boston
- Ⓜ Marlborough
- Ⓜ Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- Ⓜ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ♂ Licking Co., O.

- \* Ripon, Wis.
- Ⓜ Mauston, Wis.
- Ⓜ Malta, O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## PLYMPTON (*Plimpton*) and BENT

**E**LIZABETH<sup>1</sup> PLYMPTON crossed the ocean in 1639 with her grandmother BENT and though the usual custom in this work has been to discuss only the American Ancestry, a variation is employed here in order to cover several generations of the maternal English ancestry of ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup>. This is done partly because the facts are too involved to be easily handled in the form of notes, but mainly as a memorial to the emigrating grandmother AGNES (GOSLING) BENT in recognition of her courage, venturesome spirit, physical suffering and ultimate disappointment since she died within sight of Boston and the son who had preceded her.

The origin of AGNES has not yet been established but of the Bent family into which she married, we can state that JOHN<sup>a</sup> and EDITH (—) BENT of Penton Grafton, parish of Weyhill, Hampshire, England, had recorded there the baptism of eight children between September 16, 1564, and February 7, 1582,<sup>1,4</sup> of whom ROBERT<sup>b</sup>, the second child and eldest son, is our especial interest. JOHN<sup>a</sup> BENT signed his will June 19, 1588, and it was proved in the Consistory Court of Winton at Winchester, Hampshire, on September 18 following. This document named his wife EDITH and their eight children.<sup>1,4</sup> In 1601 his widow EDITH, who was probably on a visit at Calne, co. Wilts, about twenty-five miles northwest of Penton Grafton, signed her will at the former place on June 15 naming four of her seven children as well as a grandson. The inventory of her estate which called her "of Pynton Grafton" was taken June 19, 1601, and the probate occurred on September 30 following in the Consistory Court of Winton,<sup>1,4</sup> thus showing that her property at least had not been removed.

ROBERT<sup>b</sup> BENT, born in Penton Grafton and baptized September 29, 1566, in Weyhill parish, was married there on October 13, 1589, to AGNES GOSLING, and there one finds the baptismal record of six of their children between March 28, 1590, and July 16, 1602, with proof of one other by means of the will of ROBERT<sup>b</sup>, the father, who was buried there July 29, 1631.<sup>1,4</sup> This document which calls him of Penton Grafton lacked a date, but the inventory of his estate was taken August 30, 1631. The document made his neighbors Peter Noyes (whom we shall mention later) and Henry Tuncks the overseers, and they with Richard Tarrant, minister of Weyhill, were also the witnesses. It made his wife his "executor" and named among others two of his married sisters, five of his seven known children, including son John<sup>c&1</sup> and daughter JANE<sup>c</sup> and a number of his grandchildren. The beneficiaries<sup>3,4,9</sup> included his daughter "JANE<sup>[c]</sup>, the wife of ROBERT PLYMPTON", and their children, Robert, Thomas<sup>t</sup>, William, Jane and ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup> PLYMPTON, and to the last named, our ancestress, it bequeathed "five pounds of good & lawful money of England . . ." "to be paid vnto hir hir day of maridge".<sup>1,4</sup> The wills of

JOHN<sup>a</sup>, of his widow EDITH and of their son ROBERT<sup>b</sup> all portray characters of religious and charitable tendencies, making bequests to the church and the poor before naming their own families.

The subsequent history of this family group depicts to us, mainly, disruption of one sort or another. In April, 1638, the son John<sup>c&t</sup> Bent, called of Penton, with his wife and five children, sailed<sup>1,2</sup> from Southampton for New England on the "Confidence" and on the same vessel went also Peter<sup>t</sup> Noyes of Penton, undoubtedly the "neighbor" who was witness and overseer in 1631 of the will of ROBERT<sup>b</sup> BENT. Noyes took with him<sup>2,7</sup> his children Thomas and Elizabeth and three servants, Robert and Margaret Davis, thirty and twenty-six years, respectively, and JOHN<sup>t</sup> RUTTER (see Rutter, p. 534) aged twenty-two.

From the record of a lawsuit, fourteen years later,<sup>4,5,6,8</sup> in New England in 1652, we learn various pertinent facts, such as that John<sup>c&t</sup> Bent had lived for a time before his emigration in the home of his mother, widow AGNES, at Penton; that about 1638 she had put £80 in the hands of Peter<sup>t</sup> Noyes, overseer in 1631 of her husband's will and now about to emigrate with her son John<sup>t</sup>, to New England. Of this sum, intended doubtless for investment in the new country, £20 belonged to her grandson, Richard<sup>t</sup> Barnes, when he should become of age. We learn further that widow AGNES retained in her own hands sufficient funds to care for herself and "hir 2 grandchildren" (probably ELIZABETH<sup>t</sup> PLYMPTON and her brother Thomas<sup>t</sup> or her cousin Richard<sup>t</sup> Barnes). That either a preconceived plan, made before her son John<sup>t</sup> emigrated, or the report brought back to England late in the fall of 1638 by Peter<sup>t</sup> Noyes, who thus soon returned to get the rest of his family,<sup>7</sup> caused widow AGNES to look forward to a speedy removal to New England. Peter<sup>t</sup> Noyes still held her £80, not yet invested. We learn that her plan for emigration included, in addition to herself and her grandchildren, Thomas<sup>t</sup> and ELIZABETH<sup>t</sup> PLYMPTON, her daughter Agnes<sup>e</sup> (born 1602, married first 1630 Richard Barnes, married secondly, probably as his second wife, Thomas<sup>t</sup> Blanchard) with Agnes' husband and both Barnes and Blanchard children, and that the group intended to travel with Peter<sup>t</sup> Noyes and his family. Since her son John<sup>t</sup> Bent is said to have embarked at Southampton,<sup>1</sup> only about twenty miles from Penton, it causes surprise that widow AGNES with her party should have traveled several times that distance (see map of English Counties, p. 712) to embark at London, from which place the sailing trip would also be much longer. But she may have had relatives there whom she wished to visit, or Peter<sup>t</sup> Noyes, their escort, may have had business requiring his presence there. Whatever the reason, the fact remains that "old Goody BENT [AGNES (GOSLING) BENT] came up from Andeour [Andover, co. Hants, a sizable town three or four miles from Penton Grafton] to London [a trip of about seventy miles] in a waggon with the carryers, And Thomas Blanchard tooke care of her and her goods from Andeour to the ship and she was with Thomas Blanchards family about a month at London. . . ." <sup>4,6,8</sup> Such delay, while increasing most unfortunately the expense of the travelers — especially such as came from a distance — was not unusual,<sup>12</sup> for definite sailing schedules were unknown and the captains frequently awaited suitable weather to start their voyage, regardless of what might attend them later. Moreover, prospective passengers frequently found that ship owners from whom they had engaged passage, had miserably failed to suitably prepare the vessel for sailing by the appointed time and that they must needs be

delayed and on expense while repairs were made — sometimes<sup>12</sup> with the consequent loss of good weather and the necessity of sailing through storms.

In 1652, when the afore mentioned lawsuit<sup>4,5,6,8</sup> occurred, which furnishes us most of this detail, there was filed with the court a receipt made out to Peter<sup>t</sup> Noyes and dated April 12, 1639, showing that the fare for adults between Old and New England was then £5 and that he had purchased for widow AGNES, from her funds in his hands, a passage on the "Jonathan" for herself, for her daughter Agnes (Bent) Barnes Blanchard, for her granddaughter ELIZABETH<sup>t</sup> PLYMPTON and a half fare for her grandson Richard<sup>t</sup> Barnes. Peter<sup>t</sup> Noyes paid<sup>4</sup> more than £25 for freight brought over, of which £1 10sh is said<sup>1</sup> to have paid for the baggage of widow AGNES. In those days, an ocean voyage must have been definitely a thing to dread for the small sailing vessels required from six to twelve weeks<sup>12</sup> to make the trip — and during so long a period they could not hope for continuous favorable weather; the passengers had to carry and cook their own food, and scurvy all too often resulted from the restricted diet; the instability of such small vessels must have caused untold agonies of sea-sickness and frequently contagious disease broke out which claimed victims by the score.

During the lawsuit<sup>4,5,6,8</sup> referred to, testimony was given by various fellow passengers on the "Jonathan" during its trip thirteen years before, and from it we summarize that when the vessel was but fifteen days out of port widow AGNES had the sorrow of losing her daughter Agnes Blanchard who made a nuncupative will and left a son Richard<sup>t</sup> Barnes, by her first husband, and a sick infant (who soon died) by her second husband, Blanchard. The financial condition of Thomas<sup>t</sup> Blanchard was evidently low, partially as the result of the enforced delay in London and of his family's sickness. Of their stay in London, it is recorded "that there was a gathering [collection?] among Christians in England to help him over" and later "at what time his wife dyed in the ship hee was conceived to be very poore and in great necessity by reason of his wives and his childrens Sicknesse, that the passengers made a gathering [collection?] for him in the shippe to helpe to put his child to nurse, his wiues mother [widow AGNES] also being sicke all the while wee were at Sea and wee knew no other man that looked to her but Thomas Blanchard, but there was a maide which was her neece [granddaughter, ELIZABETH<sup>t</sup> PLYMPTON] tended her . . ." and ". . . about the time the ship came to Anchor in Boston Harbor the woman [widow AGNES] his mother in law dyed, and Thomas Blanchard procured to cary her to shore to be buried."<sup>4,5,6,8</sup>

One of the passengers on the "Jonathan" deposed further about widow AGNES that "there was an old woman lay in a cabbine in the shipp w<sup>ch</sup> this depo<sup>nt</sup> doth not remember that shee came forth all the tyme that she was at sea untill she was brought forth to be buried. . . ." <sup>4</sup> And another, referring to her said, ". . . the old weoman what w<sup>th</sup> her age and what w<sup>th</sup> her sicknes, for she was sick all the way. . . ." <sup>4</sup> We are told<sup>1</sup> that the care of widow AGNES by the ship's surgeon cost ten shillings. She was probably buried at Boston but no one knows the spot. And thus ended the life of AGNES (GOSLING) BENT, aged probably seventy or more.

In November, 1648, Thomas<sup>t</sup> Blanchard and Peter<sup>t</sup> Noyes testified on oath<sup>3,4</sup> that they had witnessed the will of widow AGNES which is one of the earliest ones recorded<sup>15</sup> in Suffolk County. It specified that £20 (held in trust from his own father's estate) should go to her grandson Richard<sup>t</sup> Barnes; that £5 (which was

the bequest from her deceased husband ROBERT<sup>b</sup> BENT to their granddaughter on her marriage day) should go to ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup> PLYMPTON; £10 to her son John<sup>1</sup> Bent whom she had hoped to join and £5 to her grandson Thomas<sup>1</sup> Plympton who made the voyage with her. The balance was to be divided between Richard<sup>1</sup> Barnes and ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup> PLYMPTON, and ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup> herself became one of the executors with her uncle John<sup>1</sup> Bent. The inventory of the estate showed £58-6 in money, £2-14 in provisions and "wearinge cloathes" and £10 in other household goods.<sup>15</sup>

As for the life and immediate family of ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup>, she appears to have been the youngest of the five children of ROBERT and JANE (BENT) PLYMPTON, both of whom were living (in England) in 1631. It seems possible that between 1631 and 1638 her parents may have died since she and her brother Thomas<sup>1</sup> were in their grandmother's care by 1639 and probably by 1638 or earlier. She undoubtedly knew JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER in England since he came over in 1638 as "servant" to the Bent's "neighbor" Peter<sup>1</sup> Noyes — to whom her brother Thomas<sup>1</sup> also became "servant". The hardships of the voyage ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup> felt in common with the others, but the tragedy of death and ocean burial of her aunt Agnes and infant cousin, the many weeks of sickness and weakness of her closest friend and guardian, grandmother AGNES, were special burdens laid upon her and upon Thomas<sup>1</sup> Blanchard. They must have been thankful that widow AGNES lived until she could be buried on land, even though it was a strange land.

In the lawsuit of 1652, relative to the voyage of 1639, ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup> PLYMPTON was severally referred to<sup>4</sup> as "a bigg gerle", "a mayde of some stature", "a weake gerle who was a kinsweoman" and "that little helpelesse gerle"; and therein, is seen some difference of opinion<sup>4</sup> as to the proportionate care given to widow AGNES by her son-in-law Thomas<sup>1</sup> Blanchard and by her granddaughter, ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup> PLYMPTON for there were those who criticized the latter but the bequest of a major part of her estate to ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup> seems to reasonably silence question as to her conduct.

Thomas<sup>1</sup> Plympton, who came with his sister, grandmother and the Noyes family, was the only other member of the immediate Plympton family to emigrate and he worked for a time for Peter<sup>1</sup> Noyes as did also JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER who presently became his brother-in-law. In September, 1649, Noyes gave land to Thomas<sup>1</sup> Plympton, "once his servant",<sup>11</sup> and also gave his daughter, Abigail<sup>2</sup> Noyes, as wife. Their first residence was among the early Sudbury settlers at what is now Wayland, but by or before 1659 they had removed to the western side of the river. During King Philip's War (see Upham, p. 619) Thomas<sup>1</sup> Plympton had left home to escort a Mr. Boone and his son to the garrison house<sup>11</sup> but they were ambushed and Thomas<sup>1</sup> was killed April 17 or 20, 1676, (see Rutter, p. 536). The next day, when Sudbury was attacked, his house and barn were burned and other property carried off.<sup>3</sup> His estate was estimated to have lost<sup>14</sup> £130. Among his descendants, several interesting points of contact are recorded, as for instance when his grandson, Thomas<sup>3</sup> Plympton, (Peter<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>) of Sudbury became one of the Provincial Councillors in 1774 and was "a tower of strength to the town in the Revolutionary War";<sup>11</sup> when Thomas<sup>3</sup> gave his daughter, Hannah<sup>4</sup> Plympton, in marriage<sup>10,13</sup> in 1778 to her third cousin once removed, Levi<sup>4</sup> Holden (JONAS<sup>3</sup>, JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup>); and when he gave his daughter, Ruth<sup>4</sup> Plympton, in marriage<sup>10</sup> to Augustus<sup>5</sup> Moore (Augustus<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>). And Thomas Ruggles<sup>5</sup> Plympton married in 1805 his third cousin once removed,<sup>10,13</sup> Betsey<sup>5</sup>

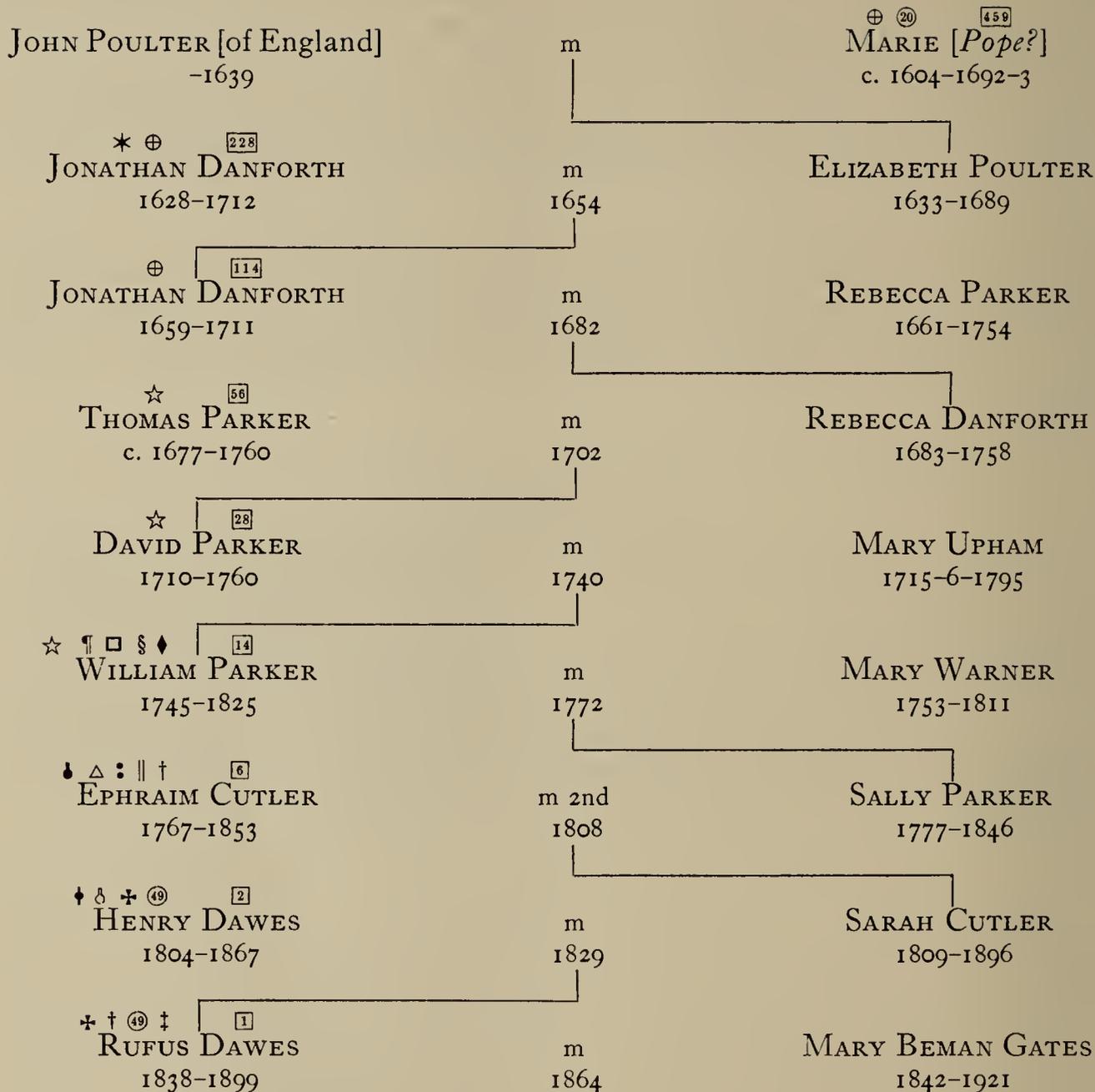
Holden (JONAS<sup>4</sup>, JONAS<sup>3</sup>, JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup>). Evidence of his standing in the community is shown by the fact that to Thomas<sup>3</sup> Plympton of Sudbury was brought, from Concord, the news that the British were marching on that town, and, though as a Provincial Councillor he would probably have been exempt, he started at once to Concord with our JONAS<sup>4</sup> HOLDEN, that man's brother Asa<sup>4</sup> and many other Sudbury men, and during that day "had a bullet put through the fold of his coat".<sup>15</sup> Attention has been called to the fact that twelve Plymptons turned out at the Lexington alarm, leaving no doubt as to where the sympathies of that clan lay.

Presumably our ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup> PLYMPTON lived in the home of her uncle, John<sup>1</sup> Bent, until her marriage at Sudbury<sup>11</sup> on November 1, 1641, to JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER (see Rutter, p. 535). The date of her birth has not been found but she was over twelve at their emigration in 1639 since her grandmother AGNES paid<sup>4</sup> the full fare of £5 for her. She died<sup>10</sup> at Sudbury on May 15, 1689, after nearly forty-eight years of married life.

## REFERENCES

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Bent Genealogy, A. H. Bent, 1900, pp. 9-10, 255-7.</li> <li>2. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 195, 201-2.</li> <li>3. Plympton Genealogy, L. B. Chase, 1884, pp. 57-9; Pope's Pioneers, pp. 333, 364.</li> <li>4. New England Register, III, 267; XXXII, 407-11; XLVIII, 288-9; XLIX, 65-7.</li> <li>5. History of Framingham, Mass., Wm. Barry, 1847, pp. 181-2.</li> <li>6. Putnam's Monthly Historical Magazine, 1893-4, II, 169-70.</li> <li>7. Noyes Genealogy, H. E. Noyes, 1904, I, 15; II, 227-8.</li> <li>8. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex Co. Mass., I, 268.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>9. New York Genealogical and Biographical Society Collections, 1913, VI, being Register of Pedigrees, I, 37.</li> <li>10. Sudbury, Mass., Vital Records, pp. 251, 324.</li> <li>11. History of Sudbury, Mass., A. S. Hudson, 1889, pp. 52, 177-9, 256-7, 360-5, 382; History of Middlesex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1890, II, 386.</li> <li>12. Mather Genealogy, H. E. Mather, 1890, pp. 34-8.</li> <li>13. Holden Genealogy, Eben Putnam, 1923, I, 133, 217, 219-21.</li> <li>14. Soldiers of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 225.</li> <li>15. Hubbard Thompson Memorial, L. K. Stewart, 1914, pp. 59-64, 217-225.</li> </ol> |
|---|---|

# POULTER



\* Cambridge  
 ⊕ Billerica  
<sup>20</sup> Chelmsford  
 ☆ Malden  
 † Charlestown  
 □ Newburyport

§ Allegheny Co., Pa.  
 ♦ Meigs Co., O.  
 ♀ Edgartown  
 △ Killingly, Conn.  
 ∴ Waterford, O.  
 ∥ Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

† Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.  
 † Thomaston, Me.  
 ♂ Morgan Co., O.  
<sup>49</sup> Mauston, Wis.  
 † Malta, O.  
 † Marietta, O.

---



---

## POULTER

---

**J**OHN<sup>a</sup> POULTER, yeoman, of Rayleigh, co. Essex, England, who never saw the new world\* signed his will there<sup>1</sup> on March 18, 1638-9, and his death occurred before May 30, 1639, when the document was probated by his widow and executrix, MARIE<sup>1</sup> POULTER. This will furnishes our only knowledge of the English origin of the family but gives several constructive details. It gave to the testator's mother, MARIE (—) POULTER, forty shillings "to buy her a ring for remembrance"; gave an annuity of twenty shillings for five years to his mother-in-law, MARIE (—) POPE; twenty shillings to his aunt, Anne Hayward, and a like amount to one William Brewster who was one of the witnesses to the will. It further gave to his son, John<sup>2</sup> Poulter, £50 at the age of twenty-one and gave £100 each to his daughters Mary<sup>2</sup> and ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> to be paid to them at the age of twenty-one or at the day of their marriage.<sup>1</sup> The residue of his estate was left to his wife MARIE<sup>1</sup> (Pope?) POULTER whom he designated as the guardian of their children during their minority.

Nothing further is known of JOHN<sup>a</sup>, but his widow MARY<sup>1</sup> with her children, John<sup>2</sup> and ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup>, ventured across the water some time before 1654, in which year the daughter ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> married,<sup>2,5,6,7</sup> in Boston, our JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH, (see Danforth p. 254).

After the mother's arrival here, her life was quite varied, by residence in two or more early towns and as wife of two outstanding men<sup>2,10,11</sup> of the community. Her first marriage in America occurred at an unknown date to Sergt. John<sup>1</sup> Parker, brother<sup>8</sup> of our JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER. This man was resident<sup>9</sup> at Woburn in 1649 and at Billerica, which was originally an outlying part of Cambridge, by 1654, and was one of the foremost men<sup>10</sup> of the latter town. He leased and lived upon the large farm in Billerica which belonged to the church in Cambridge, was the first town clerk of Billerica, the first collector of taxes, built the first meeting house and was the agent of the town, 1656-8 and 1661-2 in locating and disposing of two large grants\*\* of land, one of 8,000 acres and the other of 4,000 acres. His name was

\*Various publications<sup>5,6,7</sup> have confused the father JOHN<sup>a</sup> with the son John<sup>2</sup>, claiming that the father emigrated and died in Billerica, but from the above document<sup>1</sup> that could not have been true. The original statement<sup>7</sup> on which this error has been based is that ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> was "the daughter of Goodman POULTER, deceased, of Billerky", meaning the town of that name in England which was but eight miles from Rayleigh and his residence likely had been between these two towns. The marriage record was probably worded thus because of the bequest which ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> was to receive on her wedding day by the English will of her father.

\*\*The larger of these grants<sup>14</sup> was made by the General Court to permit Billerica to pay off her land obligation to Cambridge. It pertained to unsettled land on both sides of Merrimack River in the vicinity of present Dunstable Massachusetts and northward into what is now New Hampshire. The smaller grant was designed as an aid to the religious body in Billerica, through supplying funds for the salary of the Rev. Samuel Whiting and also for the finishing of their first meeting house, though one thousand acres of it were made over to John<sup>1</sup> Parker and his step son-in-law JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH to reimburse them for their effort in searching out a suitable tract, consonant with the requirements of the grant, and their further effort in surveying it.<sup>14</sup>

recorded in connection with practically every public project until his death on June 14, 1667. In the records, he was frequently called "father-in-law" by JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH and he accorded the title of "son-in-law" to JONATHAN<sup>2</sup>.

John<sup>1</sup> Parker left no children and his estate, which had been large, was insolvent at his death, largely because of his public philanthropies. His brother, JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER, was one of the administrators<sup>11</sup> of his estate. His widow MARY<sup>1</sup> married as her third husband, on April 16, 1674, at Billerica, Thomas<sup>1</sup> Chamberlain of Chelmsford, being his second wife<sup>13</sup> and after eighteen years of life with this third husband in that town she died there<sup>3,10,11</sup> on February 7 or 8, 1692-3, aged eighty-eight. Though her death occurred at Chelmsford, it was also recorded in the vital records of Billerica kept by her son-in-law, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH.

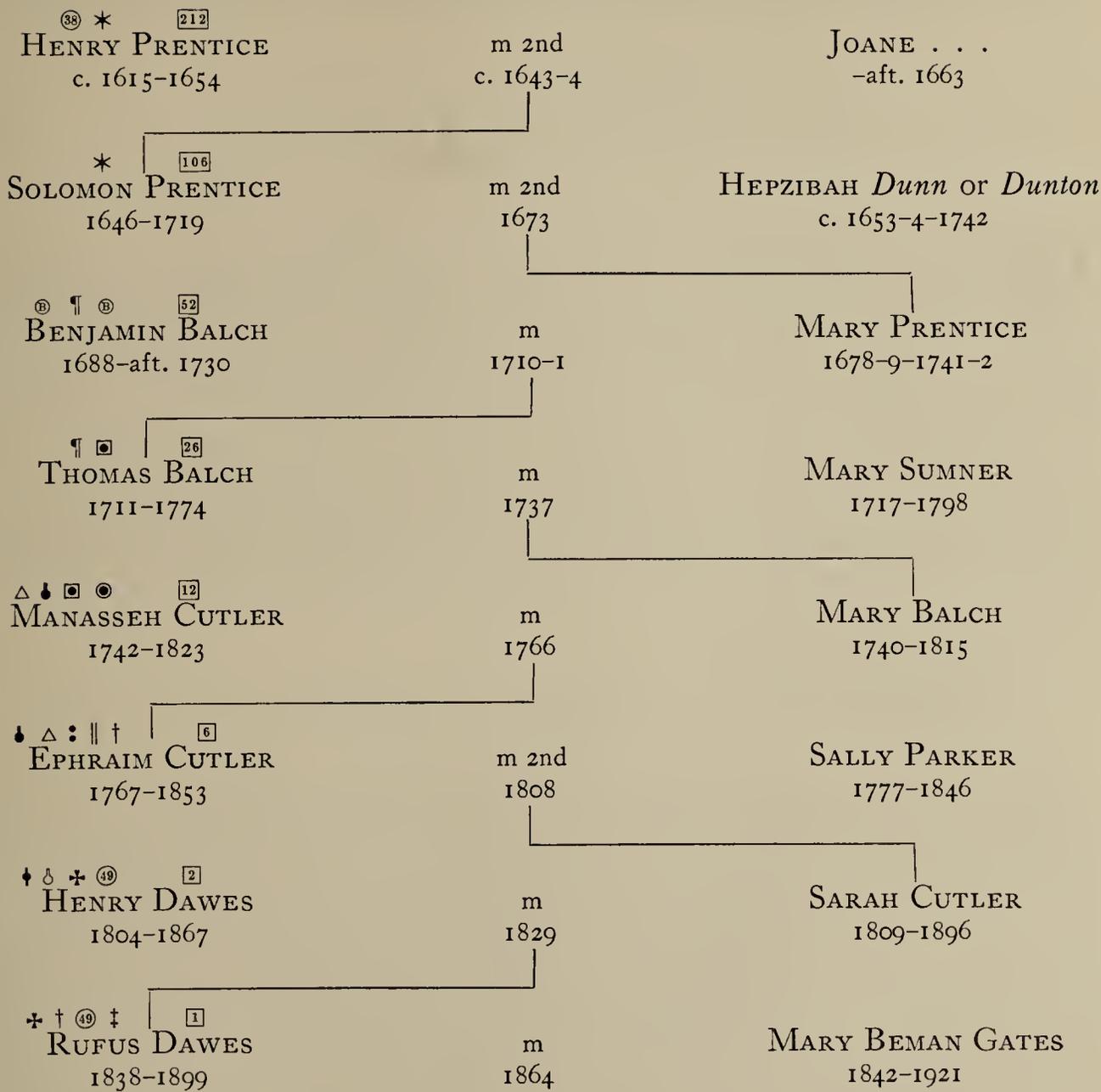
The known children of JOHN<sup>a</sup> POULTER of Rayleigh, England, and his wife, MARY<sup>1</sup> (*Pope?*) POULTER were<sup>2,4,5,9</sup>

- I. Mary<sup>2</sup>, a minor at time of father's will; probably died unmarried.
- II. ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup>, born<sup>2</sup> Sept. 1, 1633, at Rayleigh, co. Essex, Eng.; d. Oct. 7, 1689, in Billerica, aged 56; m.<sup>6,7</sup> in Boston, Nov. 22, 1654, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH (see Danforth, p. 254).
- III. John<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1635 at Rayleigh, Eng.; d. May 20, 1676, at Medford,<sup>2</sup> ae. 41, buried at Cambridge;<sup>12</sup> m.<sup>2</sup> at Billerica Dec. 29, 1662, Rachel<sup>2</sup> Eliot (Francis<sup>1</sup>) niece of the Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Eliot, missionary to the Indians.

#### REFERENCES

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. New England Register LXVI, 180.</li> <li>2. Vital Records of Billerica, pp. 152, 297, 301, 354, 381, 385.</li> <li>3. Vital Records of Chelmsford, pp. 204, 377.</li> <li>4. History of Billerica, H. A. Hazen, 1833, pt. 2, p. 114.</li> <li>5. History of Lexington, C. Hudson, 1913, II, 545.</li> <li>6. Danforth Genealogy, J. J. May, 1902, p. 27.</li> <li>7. Boston Record Commissioners Report, IX, 48.</li> <li>8. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, p. 726.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>9. Pope's Pioneers, pp. 92, 344.</li> <li>10. Hazen's Billerica, pt. 2, pp. 104, 114.</li> <li>11. Ancestors and Descendants of Peter Parker and Sarah Ruggles, J. W. Linzee, 1913, pp. 540-1.</li> <li>12. Vital Records of Cambridge, Mass., II, 700; Cambridge Old Burying Ground Epitaphs, W. T. Harris, 1845, p. 6.</li> <li>13. Chamberlain Genealogy, G. W. Chamberlain, 1897, p. 6.</li> <li>14. Hazen's Billerica, pp. 42-9.</li> </ol> |
|--|---|

# PRENTICE



- (38) Sudbury
- \* Cambridge
- (B) Beverly
- ¶ Charlestown
- ▣ Dedham
- Δ Killingly, Conn.
- † Edgartown
- Hamilton

- Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- † Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- † Malta, O.
- (49) Mauston, Wis.
- † Marietta, O.



## PRENTICE

**H**ENRY<sup>1</sup> PRENTICE, a farmer or husbandman, born<sup>1</sup> probably about 1615 in England, emigrated by or before 1638-9. He is said<sup>2</sup> to have resided first at Cambridge though obtainable records do not verify that statement, and he was at Sudbury<sup>2</sup> by 1639 where he was called "a planter", one of the earliest grantees and settlers and where he had a home lot of four acres at "Bridell Poynt" (see map, p. 448).

In the early days of the settlement of Sudbury a committee was appointed to "lay out lands to the present inhabitants, according to their estates and persons, and their abilities to improve their land,"<sup>13</sup> and by the stated rule for the division of meadow land the unique situation comes to light of a wife receiving a larger portion than her husband:

"To every Mr. of a ffamily, 6 akers;  
to every wiffe, 6½ akers;  
to every child, 1½ akers;  
to every mare, cow, ox or any other cattle that may amount to £20, or so much money,  
3 akers"<sup>2,13</sup>

The share HENRY<sup>1</sup> may have drawn under this apportionment is not evident, but in subsequent divisions he drew (a) an acre and one-half; (b) four acres; (c) two and three-fourths acres; (d) three acres and (e) nine acres.<sup>2</sup> The grant (a) was the "just quantity" on which he was to be rated or taxed "and lieth on the north side of Bridle Point, so called now, and on the other side of the river, and adjoined the brook, the end bounded by marked stakes."<sup>2</sup> In Sudbury since the rank growth of hay in the river meadows was the main source of income the size of a man's meadow grant was decided by the number of cattle he owned and this also decided the proportionate share of common pasturage allowed him. "For every two acres of meadow [owned], one beast [could be put in the common pasture], that is either cow, ox, bull or steer, or heifer to go as one beast and a half, and every six sheep to go for one beast, and that all cattle under a year old shall go without sizing."<sup>13</sup>

HENRY<sup>1</sup> PRENTICE soon removed from Sudbury to Cambridge, some writers<sup>7</sup> say in 1640, and it was certainly by or before 1643 for on May 13 of that year his first wife Elizabeth died<sup>8</sup> at Cambridge. He was soon married secondly to JOANE whose maiden name has not been learned. They both became members of the First Church of Cambridge, probably soon after their marriage, since all their children were baptized there. The church record prepared in 1658, after the death of HENRY<sup>1</sup>, states that "JOANE PRENTICE widow of HENRY PRENTICE deceased is [a] memb. in full Comm [union] as was her Said Husband also. Their children Mary, SOLOMON, Abiah, Samuel, Sarah, Henry [were] all borne & baptized in this Church."<sup>3</sup>

Apparently HENRY<sup>1</sup> felt in 1646 that an injustice had been done him in the impounding of his oxen so he took matters into his own hands for on June 8 he was charged with being "delinquent in the Brea[king] of the order Concerning oxen & for y<sup>e</sup> rescuing of them from y<sup>e</sup> hand of y<sup>e</sup> impound two severall times"<sup>5</sup> . . . but no record is seen of a fine laid against him for this high handed conduct. In a division of land at Cambridge in February, 1648, he was granted more than six acres<sup>4</sup> and that same month he and his wife JOANE, who signed with her mark,<sup>1</sup> deeded part of his Sudbury land to John Goodenow of that town.<sup>7</sup> In February, 1649, the townsmen of Cambridge gave to five men including HENRY<sup>1</sup> PRENTICE and Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>), permission "to fell timber on the Comon for there p<sup>r</sup>sent use in buildin and fenceing."<sup>5</sup> HENRY<sup>1</sup> was made a freeman<sup>2,6</sup> on May 22, 1650, and in June, 1652, he received the grant of lot number eighty-two, containing eighty acres at "Shaw Shine" or Shawsheen<sup>5</sup> an outlying district to the north of Cambridge and toward Billerica and Andover.

HENRY<sup>1</sup> died in Cambridge on June 9, 1654, aged about thirty-nine leaving widow JOANE with six children of whom the eldest was under ten. He left no will and evidently the estate was for the time being left entirely in the hands of widow JOANE for the care of her children. For eight years she bore alone the responsibility of rearing her family and then on July 22, 1662, she married, secondly, as his second wife, John<sup>1</sup> Gibson of Cambridge who was but lately widowed. On October 6, 1663, administration on the estate of HENRY<sup>1</sup> PRENTICE "was granted to JOANE, his relict and widow, and John Gibson, her now husband."<sup>1,18,20</sup> The inventory of his estate taken at this time showed that there still remained a valuation of £54.13.8 including one town right of land at Sudbury. It showed beside several small tracts of land, an orchard and a house with very modest . . . even meagre . . . household equipment, consisting mainly of two beds, two tables, two "chayres," a pail, a stool, a warming pan, a little barrel, a kettle, two iron pots, a porringer, a bowl, a pewter dish, a smoothing iron, considerable bedding, a beetle, wedges, a pair of tongs, a hand saw, a hoe and two cows.<sup>1</sup> The court ordered a division of the property giving the widow JOANE £20 share and dividing the balance among the children of whom SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> the eldest son was to have a double share.<sup>1</sup>

On December 31, 1713, fifty-nine years after the death of HENRY<sup>1</sup> all of his children except daughters Mary<sup>2</sup> and Abiah<sup>2</sup> were living, for on that date in order to clear title sons Samuel<sup>2</sup> and Henry<sup>2</sup>, Nathaniel Hancock in behalf of his deceased wife Mary<sup>2</sup>, and John and Sarah Woodward, children "of our honored father, HENRY PRENTICE, sometime of Cambridge, deceased, quit claim to SOLOMON PRENTICE our beloved brother . . . having received our part of SOLOMON . . ."<sup>1,27</sup>

One interesting relationship bearing back to HENRY<sup>1</sup> PRENTICE is seen through his eldest daughter Mary<sup>2</sup> who became the great grandmother of Gov. John<sup>5</sup> Hancock, the Patriot and signer of the Constitution of the United States.<sup>15</sup>

The date of death of widow JOANE after her second marriage in 1662 has not been found but it has been stated she was living in October, 1663.

The children of HENRY<sup>1</sup> and JOANE (—) PRENTICE, all born at Cambridge (the last three in uncertain order)<sup>1,7,8,9,14</sup> were

1. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. Nov. 25, 1644; d. Sept. 20, 1699, in 56th year at Cambridge; m. there Mar. 8, 1663-4, Deacon Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> Hancock (Nathaniel<sup>1</sup>) and became great grandmother of Gov. John<sup>5</sup> Hancock.<sup>15</sup>

- ii. SOLOMON<sup>2</sup>, see following.  
 iii. Abiah<sup>2</sup>, b. Mar. 22, 1648; d. before Dec., 1713.  
 iv. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1649; m. John Woodward and both were living in 1713.  
 v. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, b. Aug. 3, 1650; living Dec. 31, 1713.  
 vi. Henry<sup>2</sup>, b. abt.<sup>16</sup> 1651-2; d. after Dec. 31, 1713; m. April 7, 1682, Mary<sup>s</sup> Gove (John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>16</sup>  
 With John<sup>1</sup> Watson he lived for twelve weeks among the Natick Indians in 1675-6 and certified to their loyalty to the English.<sup>11</sup> Both he and his brother, SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> served in King Philip's war.<sup>11</sup>

SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> PRENTICE (*Henry<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>8</sup> at Cambridge September 28, 1646, and died there July 24, 1719, in his seventy-third year. He married, first, Elizabeth (—) by whom he had one son. He married secondly by the\* fall of 1673 HEPZIBAH called\*\* "Dunn or Dunton", who was born about 1653-4 and died at Cambridge January 5, 1742, in her eighty-ninth year. A petition<sup>1</sup> dated at Cambridge October 17, 1664, signed by one hundred forty-two men of the town including "SOLOMON PRENTES" and "JEAMES CUTLER" seems to carry in the following words a portent of the Revolution which came to pass over a century later:

"For as much as we have heard that there have been representations made unto his Majesty concerning divisions among us and dissatisfactions about the present government of this colonie; we whose names are under written, the inhabitants and householders of the towne above mentioned, doe hearby testify our unanimous satisfaction in and adhering to the present government so long and orderly established, and our earnest desire of the continuance theirow and of all the liberties and privileges pertaining their-unto which are contained in the charter granted by King James and King Charles the First of famous memory, under the encouredgment and security of which charter we or our fathers ventered over the ocean into this wilderness through great hazards, charges, and difficulties; and we humbly desire our honored General Court would addresse themselves by humble petition to his Majesty for his royall favour in the continuance of the present establishment and of all the privileges theirow, and that we may not be subjected to the arbitrary power of any who are not chosen by this people according to their patent."<sup>7</sup>

Clearer evidence could scarcely be found of the regard they had for their cherished charter rights (see Appendix "B," p. 694).

One of the tragic experiences through which SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> and his brothers and sisters lived . . . and during which hundreds of others died . . . was the so-called King Philip's War. Volumes have been, and still could be, written about that period without running the full gamut of appalling injustice, of monstrous cruelty and of hideous suffering. One of the inexcusable phases bears upon the intolerance a major part of the colonists showed toward the so-called Praying Indians. While a few among these Christian Indians may have been untrustworthy, the very large majority were sincere in their loyalty to the whites and whenever given an opportunity to serve them either as scouts or fighters, the Indians proved their value beyond question. But after King Philip began his campaign of killing and burning, stark unreasoning fear caused many colonists to suspect and malign the Praying Indians, and to demand their removal to some remote place. At this time Henry<sup>2</sup> Prentice and John<sup>1</sup> Watson both of Cambridge, by direction of the authorities dwelt

\*It has been recorded in Cambridge that Thomas<sup>s</sup> Prentice, born June 7, 1674, was the son of the first wife, Elizabeth, but that is an error for in 1742-3 after the death of HEPZIBAH six of the children of Thomas<sup>s</sup> Prentice, deceased, signed<sup>29</sup> a quit claim to their shares in the dower right of HEPZIBAH.

\*\*Diligent effort has been made, but without success, to establish the parentage of HEPZIBAH. She may have been an emigrant. Different theories have been advanced but *proof* is lacking even as to her surname.

with the Natick Indians (see map, p. 275) for about twelve weeks to observe their ways and to report. Of these two men Watson later admitted that he had been bitterly prejudiced against the Naticks before he went among them, but on their return both he and Prentice "certified their obedience to God and their faithfulness to the English,"<sup>7</sup> or as another report has it "gave certificate of their orderly, discreet and religious conduct."<sup>11</sup> In spite of this and every effort of Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Eliot their pastor, of Gen. Daniel<sup>1</sup> Gookin their sponsor, and of other friends, they were all impounded on Deer Island through the bitter winter weather and meanwhile Philip was doing all in his power to exterminate the colonists. Serving<sup>11</sup> from Cambridge in this conflict against Philip were<sup>10</sup> SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> PRENTICE, his brother Henry<sup>2</sup> and our JAMES<sup>2</sup> CUTLER.<sup>26</sup>

SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> spent his whole life in Cambridge as a husbandman or farmer and as a brickmaker, and four of his sons carried on brick making during at least a part of their lives. At the age of twenty-five being called<sup>29</sup> "SALLOMONE PRENTICE" he deposed June 4, 1672, relative to a legal matter, to the effect "that he had mowed several years on land of Richard Eeles . . ."<sup>1</sup> and in or about 1672 SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> bought a house and land on the west side of the Common which was his home throughout his life. Even at an early day many of the towns had very strict rules as to the felling of timber on town land and on May 11, 1674, SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> was "Conuicted before the select men for felling a green walnut" and was fined one shilling, but on March 1, 1676-7, he was granted permission to fell some timber upon "the Rockes" to fence his orchard against the common and in February and April, 1678, he was granted further permission to fell timber enough to erect "a lento 17 foote long" and "a barne 18 foote long."<sup>5</sup> In 1688 he was taxed<sup>7</sup> three shillings two pence and in January, 1691-2, he was recorded as selling four rods of fence to Joseph Cragbone but in the following July he was fined eighteen shillings for a defect in his "fence belonging to the west field."<sup>4</sup>

The public services of SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> were frequent and varied<sup>4,5</sup> since he was hog reeve in 1681 and 1685; was constable in 1682; was either fence viewer or surveyor of the highways for the town in 1678, 1680-1, 1686-7, 1689-90, 1692-7, 1698-9; tithing man 1700 and 1702; and on many committees from 1695 to 1715. A service which pertained probably to SOLOMON<sup>2</sup>, or possibly to his son of the same name, is found of record at Watertown when a committee was appointed "to go on Parambulation with y<sup>e</sup> selectmen of y<sup>e</sup> Adjacent towns, or others of their appointing" who met "Amos Marrit and SOLOMON PRENTICE for Cambridge" on April 29, 1717, and "began at a marke neer Charles River . . ." and later reported that they had "Dun the worke."<sup>28</sup>

As shown by the inventory of the real estate of SOLOMON<sup>2</sup>, his holdings were extensive, including, in addition to his homestead west of the Common, twenty acres and "Two Comons" in the Survey<sup>4</sup> of 1683; the sixty-first lot containing seven and one-half acres in the second "Squadron" in May, 1707; and on the same date the eighty-sixth lot of like extent, in the Ware field as well as the fourth lot containing twelve acres in the third "Squadron towards Bridges Gate."<sup>4</sup> On March 25, 1709, SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> bought<sup>25</sup> of JOHN<sup>2</sup> HOLDEN of Watertown (who was about to remove to Weston, and later to Sudbury) land in Cambridge which may have been a part of the former Sparhawk estate adjoining Fresh Pond on the north.

This family as a whole was quite religious for as we have seen HENRY<sup>1</sup> and his

wife JOANE were church members<sup>1,3</sup> and had their children baptized at Cambridge; SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> and his wife HEPZIBAH were members there<sup>1</sup> and in August, 1697, visited Watertown church, partaking there of the first Lord's Supper administered in the new church; and their five sons who reached adult age were all church members, the youngest, Henry<sup>3</sup> serving as a deacon from 1741 to 1774 when he resigned at the age of eighty. Of the sons of SOLOMON<sup>2</sup>, Stephen<sup>3</sup> had in 1745 subscribed for Rev. Jonathan Edwards' "Life of Rev. David Brainerd"; and by his will signed in 1761 made a bequest to finance preaching to the Indians who had been an especial care to this noted missionary Rev. David<sup>3</sup> Brainerd (Hezekiah<sup>2</sup>, DANIEL<sup>1</sup> BRAINERD, Dawes-Gates II, 129). Stephen<sup>3</sup> Prentice also left a legacy to the Rev. Mr. Sprague of Medford as well as to three nephews of his own who had entered the ministry, namely Rev. Thomas<sup>4</sup> Prentice (Thomas<sup>3</sup>) of Charlestown, Rev. Joshua<sup>4</sup> Prentice (Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>) of Holliston and Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH, son of BENJAMIN<sup>4</sup> and MARY (PRENTICE) BALCH, of Dedham. To each of these nephews he gave £2 or more and to Rev. Joshua<sup>4</sup> he gave also volume one of "William Flavel's\* Works"<sup>1</sup> while our Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH received volume two of that publication.

Referring to the property on the west side of the Cambridge Common which SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> had bought in or about 1672 and on which, near the close of his life, he had built a "newhouse," the following facts become of interest to us since they seem to suggest that he or his contemporaries built so well that the structure was in fair repair even as late as 1883: In the division of the estate of SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> in 1719-20, his son Henry<sup>3</sup> was assigned (a) a £92 share in lands of SOLOMON<sup>2</sup>; (b) the "east half of the house his father lived and died in"<sup>1</sup> with the widow HEPZIBAH retaining the other half, that being the homestead on the west side of the common; and (c) because of four and a half years service rendered his father in the brick yard Henry<sup>3</sup> was to have also a £60 right in the "new house."<sup>1,24</sup> The house in which Henry<sup>3</sup> lived until 1775, when the Continental troops occupied Cambridge, remained standing until 1883 and was, presumably, either the one "lived in" or the one "built by" SOLOMON<sup>2</sup>. It was "built of oak, the walls filled in with brick, the beams showing half way through the ceiling of the rooms . . . a two-story house, about thirty-foot front; the front door in the centre . . . a room each side of the entry; a very wide staircase; chimney a large, old-fashioned one, in the centre of the house; two windows in front below and three above." It stood about forty rods from the Washington elm and next to the parsonage of the "new Shepard church." It was purchased about 1780 by a Mr. Bates whose family occupied it for nearly a century and as late as 1877 (when it was said to be two hundred years old) it was in a good state of preservation.<sup>1,7,14,24</sup>

Further items on the locale of this family<sup>14</sup> include the statements that of the sons of SOLOMON<sup>2</sup>, Solomon<sup>3</sup> resided on the estate of which the Botanic Gardens is a part, at the corner of Garden and Linnaean Streets; that Thomas<sup>3</sup> lived on the westerly side of Garden Street opposite to the Botanic Gardens; and Henry<sup>3</sup> retained throughout his life the inherited homestead on the west side of the Common

\*It seems highly probable that this should read "John Flavel" for this man (1630-1691) was an Oxford student and a very noted nonconformist (Presbyterian) English Minister, who "was a voluminous writer of popular works strongly evangelical in sentiment." A two volume work of his which may be the one referred to above was entitled "The Touchstone of Sincerity, or Trial of True and False Religion."

as well as a large part of the Holden Farm\* bounded south on Fresh Pond and east on Alewife Brook ("now the southeast corner of Arlington"<sup>14</sup>) which he had bought in 1729.

Since the inventory of the estate of HENRY<sup>1</sup> PRENTICE was not taken until nine years after his death we can only infer how much his estate had been depleted by the family up-keep for that period. The £54 balance gives no clue. But it is evident from the extensive estates left by SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> and by each of his five sons that they all had good business ability. The inventory of the estate of SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> who died intestate taken August 13, 1719, and submitted by widow HEPZIBAH and by his son Solomon<sup>3</sup>, who had been named administrators,<sup>29</sup> mentioned<sup>1</sup> "rights in common," a large amount of land, some of it even as far away as Lexington, housing, orchard, etc. His real estate was appraised at £851 and his total property at over £909. The agreement of division between the heirs bore the marks of widow HEPZIBAH (who received a dower of £283) and of her daughter Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, and the signatures of sons Solomon<sup>3</sup>, Stephen<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, (Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> is mentioned as being sick), of daughter MARY BALCH and of Mary (Batson) widow of the deceased Thomas<sup>3</sup>, and now wife of Nathaniel Robbins of Charlestown.<sup>29</sup> The portion received by MARY BALCH from her father's estate was first expected to be £63-13-9 but was finally raised to £70-10-00 and her sisters received like amounts.

On December 31, 1742, and on January 28, 1742-3, documents<sup>29</sup> were signed constituting quit claim deeds to their shares of the dower thirds held by widow HEPZIBAH from the settlement of the estate of her husband SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> PRENTICE in 1719 to the settlement of her own estate in 1742-3 as signed by her son Stephen<sup>3</sup> Prentice and fourteen of her grandchildren<sup>29,30</sup> disposing of their rights, to Henry<sup>3</sup> Prentice, the other surviving son of HEPZIBAH. The identities of some of these grandchildren prove conclusively that Thomas<sup>3</sup> Prentice was the son of HEPZIBAH rather than of the first wife of SOLOMON<sup>2</sup>. Among these grandchildren\*\* was included our THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH.

In the center of the Old Burying Ground in Cambridge, (which adjoins Christ Church†) near the north side and across from the College itself may be seen the lichen-covered gravestones<sup>21</sup> of SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> PRENTICE, of his wife HEPZIBAH, of their daughter MARY (PRENTICE) BALCH and other members of the family. The inscription on HEPZIBAH's stone gives her death as occurring on January 15, 1741 in her 89th year. The gravestone placed for HEPZIBAH is larger than that of her husband SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> and is as clearly legible now in 1940 as though cut but yesterday.

SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> PRENTICE and his first wife Elizabeth are believed to have had but one child<sup>1,8,9,14</sup>

I. Solomon<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1672-3; d. at Cambridge June 25, 1758, aged 84; m. by 1699 Lydia (—)

\*In 1653 JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup> HOLDEN bought<sup>25</sup> two hundred and ninety-four acres with house and outbuildings being the Deacon Nathaniel Sparhawk's estate lying north of Fresh Pond and east on Alewife Brook<sup>7</sup> "now within the limits of Belmont"<sup>25</sup> but then a part of Cambridge. Henry<sup>3</sup> Prentice paid £1,000 for this Holden property to the heirs of Samuel<sup>2</sup> Holden (JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup>).<sup>25</sup>

\*\*Among the signing grandchildren<sup>29,30</sup> of HEPZIBAH through her son Thomas<sup>3</sup> were Thomas<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, Mary<sup>4</sup> who had married Samuel Sprague of Stoneham, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> who had married Matthew<sup>4</sup> Johnson (William<sup>3</sup>, Edward<sup>2</sup>, Edward<sup>1</sup>) of Charlestown and Hepzibah<sup>4</sup> who had married William<sup>3</sup> Badger (Stephen<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>) of Charlestown. Among the grandchildren of HEPZIBAH through her son Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> were Jonas<sup>4</sup>, Solomon<sup>4</sup>, Jr., and Nathaniel<sup>4</sup> as well as Hannah<sup>4</sup> who married Thomas<sup>3</sup> Fessenden (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Nicholas<sup>1</sup>) of Lexington, Tabitha<sup>4</sup> who married Eleazer Russell (Jonathan) of Lexington and two unidentified girls Jane and Mary Brown.<sup>29,30</sup>

†This was the church of which SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> MAY was a builder (see May, p. 421 and plate xxvi, p. 422).

who had ten children and d. Apr. 25, 1758, aged 81. He was administrator, with widow HEPZIBAH, of his father's estate.<sup>1</sup>

The children of SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> and HEPZIBAH (?*Dunton*) PRENTICE (all except the last two recorded as born at Cambridge) were<sup>1,8,9,14</sup>

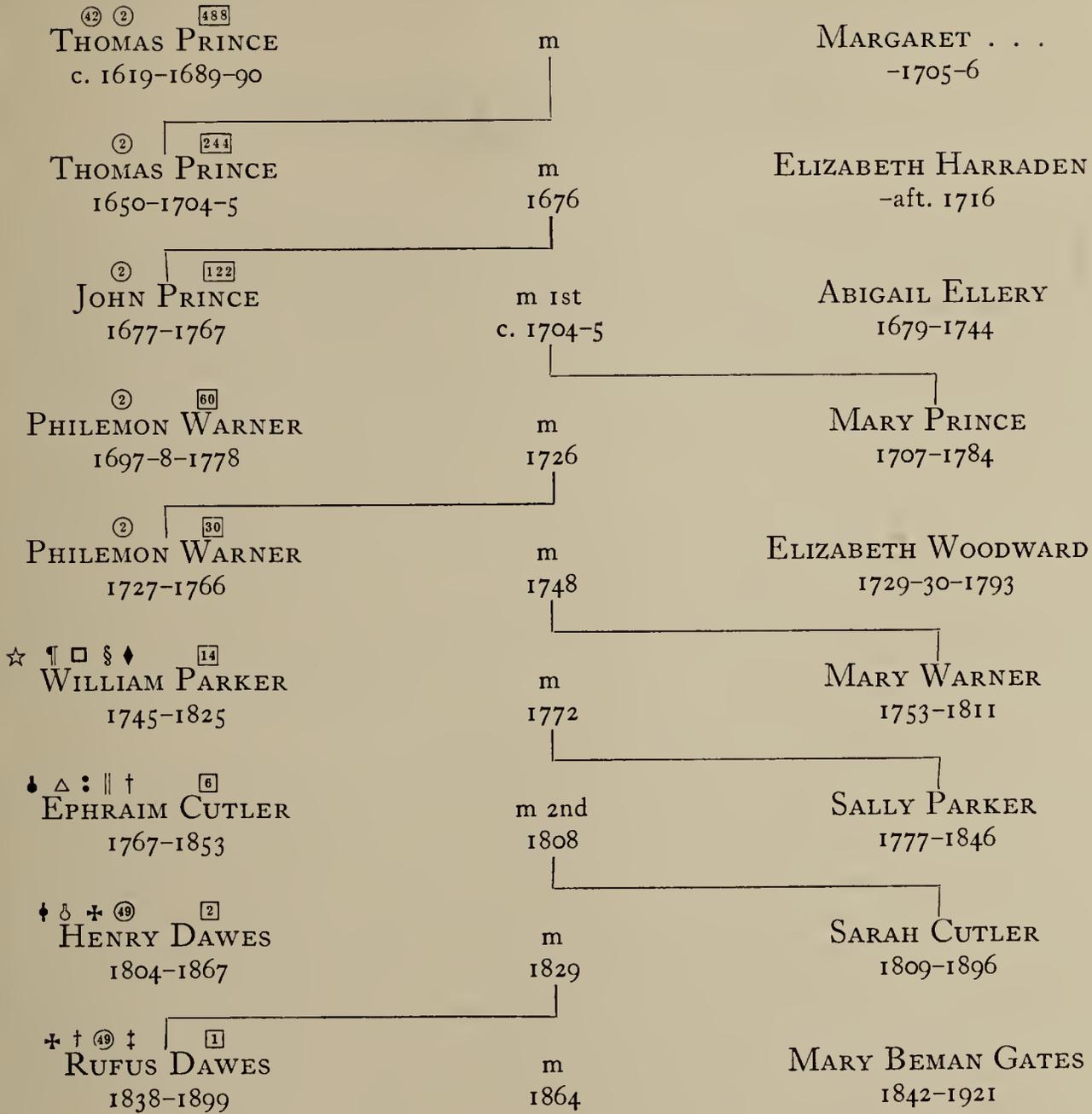
- II. \*Thomas<sup>3</sup>, b. June 7, 1674, at Cambridge as "son of Elizabeth"; d. there December 7, 1709, aged 33-3-12; m. 1st December 23, 1696, Maria Russell who d. May 1, 1701; m. 2nd November 6, 1701 Mary Batson who, in turn, m. 2nd Nathaniel Robbins and 3rdly Samuel Lyon both of Charlestown, and she d. at Cambridge March 2, 1760, in her 84th year, surviving her first husband more than fifty years.
- III. MARY<sup>3</sup>, b. January 4, 1678-9; d. at Cambridge January 28, 1741-2, in her 64th year; m. there January 4, 1710-1, BENJAMIN<sup>4</sup> BALCH<sup>12</sup> (see Balch, p. 76).
- IV. Stephen<sup>3</sup>, b. June 1, 1681; d. after March 19, 1761, probably without issue; m. 1st July 8, 1708, Faith<sup>3</sup> Frost (Joseph<sup>2</sup>, Edmund<sup>1</sup>),<sup>9,19</sup> m. 2nd November 10, 1743, Lydia<sup>4</sup> Prentice (John<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, HENRY<sup>1</sup>).<sup>14</sup>
- V. Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, twin, b. July 20, 1684; d. unm. May 14, 1727.
- VI. Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, twin, b. July 20, 1684; d. September 18, 1688.
- VII. Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, b. October 18, 1689; d. at Cambridge October 24, 1722 or 1723 in his 33rd year; m. abt. 1712 Hannah<sup>3</sup> Wyeth (John<sup>2</sup>, Nicholas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>9,14</sup>
- VIII. Henry<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1693; d. at Holliston<sup>23</sup> October 18, 1778, in his 85th year; m.<sup>22</sup> 1st, September 18, 1718, Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> Rand (William<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>),<sup>17</sup> m. 2nd November 8, 1749, Elizabeth Haley of Boston.
- IX. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, bap. June 12, 1698, at Cambridge;<sup>8</sup> d. yng.<sup>1</sup>

\*Although Thomas<sup>3</sup> Prentice is definitely recorded<sup>8</sup> as "son of Elizabeth", first wife of SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> that cannot be true for six of his children in 1742-3 quit claimed their rights in the estate<sup>29</sup> of HEPZIBAH. In February, 1719-20, the children of Thomas<sup>3</sup> deceased, had guardians as follows: Solomon<sup>3</sup> Prentice was guardian to his nephew Thomas<sup>4</sup> aged 18. Stephen<sup>3</sup> Prentice was guardian to his nephew and niece John<sup>4</sup> and Elizabeth<sup>4</sup> while their mother Mary (Batson) Prentice Robbins was guardian to the younger children Henry<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, and Hepzibah<sup>4</sup>.

## REFERENCES

1. Prentice-Prentiss Genealogy, C. J. F. Binney, 1st ed. 1852, pp. 2-3, 11-19, 58-60, 73, 93, 262-3; 2nd ed. 1883, pp. 2-9.
2. History of Sudbury, A. S. Hudson, 1889, pp. 26, 48-9, 76, 109, 112, 114-5, 150; New England Register, III, 192; LX, 358.
3. Records of the Church of Christ at Cambridge, ed. S. P. Sharples, 1906, pp. 20, 27.
4. Register Book of the Lands and Houses in the "New Towne" (Cambridge,) 1896, pp. 162, 166, 229, 235-6, 245, 249, 252, 275-6, 337, 342, 344.
5. Records of the Town of Cambridge (formerly New-towne), 1901, pp. 53, 85, 98, 219, 233, 240, 243-4, 254, 257, 260, 262, 277, 283, 286-7, 293, 297-8, 300, 303, 314, 317, 323, 328, 343.
6. Records of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, ed. N. B. Shurtleff, 1854, IV, part 1, p. 459.
7. Savage III, 478; History of Cambridge, L. R. Paige, 1877, pp. 59, 74-6, 394n., 399n., 442, 464, 558, 586, 629-31.
8. Vital Records of Cambridge, I, 569-73; II, 315-6, 458, 586, 702-3.
9. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, I, 377; II, 773-4, 816.
10. Society of Colonial Wars, Index of Ancestors and Honor Roll, 1922, p. 383.
11. Soldiers in King Philip's War. G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 58, 272-3, 396.
12. Balch Genealogy, G. B. Balch, 1897, p. 32.
13. History of Middlesex County, S. A. Drake, 1880, II, 357, 360-1, 461-2; ditto by D. H. Hurd, 1890, II, 383, 388, 416-7.
14. Supplement and Index to Paiges' History of Cambridge, M. I. Gozzaldi, 1930, pp. 587-603.
15. History of Lexington, Charles Hudson, 1913, II, 266-8; Hingham Genealogies, 1893, III, 232.
16. Gove Genealogy, W. H. Gove, 1922, pp. 12-3.
17. Rand Genealogy, F. O. Rand, 1898, pp. 17, 27-8.
18. Gibson Genealogy, M. C. C. Wilson, 1900, p. 1.
19. Frost Genealogy, N. S. Frost, 1926, pp. 85-6.
20. Index of Wills of Middlesex County.
21. Epitaphs from Old Burying Ground in Cambridge, W. T. Harris, 1845, pp. 61, 91-2.
22. The Genealogical Magazine, E. Putnam, 1915-6, III, 123.
23. Vital Records of Holliston, p. 344.
24. Genealogical History of Maine, G. T. Little, 1902, IV, 1893.
25. Holden Genealogy, Eben Putnam, 1923, I, 59, 88-9; Genealogies of Watertown, Henry Bond, 1860, p. 794.
26. Cutler Genealogy, N. S. Cutler, 1889, p. 21.
27. Middlesex County, Deeds, XVIII.
28. Watertown, Records II, pt. I, p. 247.
29. Research by Mrs. J. T. Watts, Washington, D. C., Middlesex Probates No. 17974, No. 18014, No. 18027; Middlesex Deeds IV, 417; XLIII, 713-5.
30. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, pp. 45, 560; History of Lexington, C. Hudson, 1913, II, 204, 600.

# PRINCE of Gloucester



- ④② Wenham
- ② Gloucester
- ②② Ipswich
- ☆ Malden
- † Charlestown
- Newburyport

- § Allegheny Co., Pa.
- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- ♠ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- ∴ Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- ✚ Malta, O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## *PRINCE of Gloucester*

**T**HOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE\* born<sup>10</sup> about 1619 arrived in New England by or before 1644 when he is said<sup>2</sup> to have been a temporary resident of Wenham,\*\* removed to Gloucester by 1649 and married about that time MARGARET (—) who survived him fifteen years.<sup>1,3</sup> Gloucester had been incorporated in June, 1642, and then included also all of what is now known as Cape Ann and Rockfort, having been bounded on the north by Ipswich Bay, on the south by Massachusetts Bay and on the west by the townships of Manchester and Essex<sup>8</sup> (see map, p. 209). THOMAS<sup>1</sup> settled “at the Harbor”<sup>1</sup> on what is now Front Street and there his descendants continued to live for more than one hundred years. He also had land in Fisherman’s Field<sup>1</sup> though he himself is called a husbandman. His recorded civic service<sup>10</sup> was very slight, consisting of service on a trial jury in November, 1656, and of membership on coroners’ juries over drowned men in November, 1673, and May, 1681. In March, 1658, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE promised to give 13 shillings four pence toward the salary of a preacher while the pledges of our other Gloucester ancestors WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BROWNE, JOHN<sup>1</sup> DAVIS, JOHN<sup>1</sup> COIT, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> HASKELL and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS ranged from five shillings to £2-10.

It is a well established fact that in communities of seafaring men quarrelsomeness was frequently evident. Unfriendly acts are recorded — even abuse — between neighbors who at other times appear to have been on perfectly good terms. One such case<sup>11</sup> was tried in January, 1656-7, between two families who were ancestral to us, when WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BROWNE was bound in the sum of £40, with two sureties, to answer at the next term of court† for his misdemeanor toward Goodwife PRINCE, and was also bound to good behavior toward her and her husband THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE. He was finally sentenced to lie in prison one week, to pay a fine of twenty marks and to pay the costs of the suit to THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE. It appears that MARGARET had put her name to some “writing” which angered BROWNE and he criticized her harshly, called her offensive names, and prophesied evil for her. MARGARET was in a delicate condition and BROWNE assured her “that her time was but short and the deuce would fech her Away spedilly”; that she would “go to the devil for a New Years gift.”<sup>11</sup> This evidently preyed upon her mind, so that when

\*Various hints of relationship are seen, for THOMAS<sup>1</sup> in his will<sup>2</sup> of 1689 referred to his “cousin Abraham Patch” (grandson of Edmund<sup>1</sup> of Salem and Wenham)<sup>9</sup> whose father Abraham died in about 1674. This Edmund<sup>1</sup> was probably a cousin of our ELIZABETH (PATCH) WOODBURY and also of a Mary Patch (Richard) baptized May 16, 1586, at South Petherton, co. Somerset, who m. there on August 7, 1616, a Thomas Prince who may very likely have been the father of our THOMAS<sup>1</sup>. Thomas<sup>1</sup> Skelling of Wenham, Salem and Gloucester was called brother-in-law<sup>2</sup> by THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE.

\*\*Wenham was a part of Salem in 1638, was then called Enon or Salem Village, but it was incorporated<sup>8</sup> under its own name in 1643.

†At this trial ELINOR (—) BENNETT Window testified<sup>11</sup> before the Court that MARGARET (—) PRINCE wife of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> engaged her daughter, who must have been our ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> BENNET, “for a fortnight to help her when she did lie in” with the child which, as will be shown, died at birth in 1656.

she was delivered, lost her child and almost lost her own life she attributed these misfortunes to BROWNE's conduct, claiming that "before, she was as lusty as any woman in the town" and now most weak.<sup>11</sup> But she had not taken care of herself suitably, for neighbors testified of seeing MARGARET coming from the harbor with a pailful of clay on her head and of remonstrating with her for doing such work in her condition. MARGARET had replied that she "had to, her husband would not, and her [log] house lay open [without chinking]. She had carried three pails and had three more to carry." Another neighbor testified<sup>11</sup> that "he saw THOMAS PRINCE's wife daubing her husband's house two or three weeks before she was in travail with her last child. She reached up over the door to daub with clay." This case furnishes also a vivid contrast between the early practise of mid-wifery and present day obstetrical care, for the neighbor who presided at the delivery testified that she herself was about eighty years old and that when matters went badly for MARGARET and her life seemed threatened, other neighbors were sent for, five testifying that they were present and one of these stated that "there were about a dozen women there who used all means to save the [patient's] life."<sup>11</sup> That should be enough to finish any woman!

In 1660 THOMAS' PRINCE and WILLIAM' BROWNE, erstwhile enemies, were witnesses together<sup>10</sup> in a law suit. In September, 1660, twenty-seven Gloucester men signed a testimonial in defense of a neighbor who had been seriously complained about. Among these signers were THOMAS' PRINCE who signed with his mark, WILLIAM' STEVENS, JOHN' COIT and JOHN' DAVIS who signed their names.<sup>10</sup> Prior to 1661 every dwelling house erected in Gloucester entitled its proprietor to a right<sup>16</sup> in the town's common land.

For some unknown reason "THOMAS PRINCE of Gloster was released from ordinary training"<sup>10</sup> in March, 1664, and in that year he commendably helped to settle a neighborhood controversy out of court,<sup>10</sup> calling himself then "about 45." But as for THOMAS' himself, we find increasingly unhappy evidence against him. He paid for preaching which is good as far as it goes, but his personal conduct left much to be desired. As shown above, he neglected to fill the chinks between the logs so as to keep the home comfortable, but what is even worse, he indulged unduly in liquor. As early as November, 1663, while MARGARET "lay in" for the birth of her last child, Isaac<sup>2</sup>, THOMAS' was away one night at the home of Thomas Verry until nearly midnight and MARGARET became so disturbed that she sent her nurse Mary<sup>2</sup> Davis (JOHN') after him.<sup>10</sup> And in 1671 the evil habit had acquired an even stronger hold on him for in November "THOMAS PRINCE, for being disguised with drink, it being the second or third conviction, was fined, and was bound to appear at the next Ipswich court for abusing his wife. He was also ordered to be fined or whipped for drunkenness at this court."<sup>11</sup> So things had already come to a sorry pass for MARGARET. Apparently THOMAS', like so many others in similar position, had intermittent intentions to mend his ways as is shown by two certain petitions relative to the keeping of taverns in the town. It seems that during the residence of the Rev. Richard Blinman in the town (1642-9) "The harbour was chosen and pitcht vpon as the most convenient place for the Ordinary And there it was kept." At March court 1674 Peter Duncan's license had been renewed "thereby forbidding all other" in Gloucester, but shortly after, a town meeting, illegally called, voted to have a second tavern and in June, 1674, two petitions were presented to the

court protesting against that action. Each of these petitions was signed by ten men and to his credit be it said THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE by his mark signed each one. They incorporated, among others, the following statements:<sup>11</sup>

“Our Towne is growing to a pritty fullnesse of younge people. It will be wee doe Conceiue the easier to order and giue such and preuent extraordinarie expences when the house for selling liquor wine and strong beare is not soe neare the meeting house; which is too apparantly destructiue to the Towne where it is.”

And:

“As allsoe the great inconvenience of haueing a Tauerne soe neare the House of God and seuerall doe say that some doe very much indispose themselues for the worship and seruic of God, besides what disorders on Trayning dayes, vpon that acoumpt might be farther spoken vnto, but wee humbly conceiue that the nessecarie occasions of the Towne and Sabath dayes might be prouided for by pennie beare and cakes and that or such prouision as is equiuelent which no doubt but for the Honored Court will be willing to allow.”<sup>11</sup>

In addition to THOMAS<sup>1</sup> the signers of these two petitions included JOHN<sup>1</sup> DAVIS and John Fitch who became the second husband of MARY (STEVENS) COIT. But as in other cases, innumerable, the good intentions of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE were less strong than the habit which he had formed, for in December, 1675, his misconduct was again before the court and five different witnesses described the depths to which this habit had brought him, as that “THOMAS PRINCE had drunk too much these many years and on May 20 he came home drunk at midnight and used words not fit to be spoken”; that he “was so drunk at his house that he could not stand upon his legs . . .”; that “Goodwife PRINCE complained, weeping . . . concerning her husband’s abuse of her and that she was afraid of her life”; that she “wept very sore so the tears run downe her cheeks.”<sup>11</sup>

Evidence of the lack of freedom of speech which privilege we so greatly cherish is seen in a case which occurred in 1675. One Joseph Gatchell was visiting at the home of Goodman PRINCE and announced it as his opinion<sup>11</sup> that “y<sup>e</sup> Cause of y<sup>e</sup> Judgments of God upon us by Reason of y<sup>e</sup> wars was their murdering of Quakers. . . .” Two others who were present reported the matter to the court and he was “to stand committed until the next lecture day and then to be whipped or pay a fine for speaking reproachfully and contemptuously against this government.”<sup>11</sup>

In 1677 the King demanded that all of the colonists should sign an oath of fidelity. The list of Gloucester men was taken by Sergt. WILLIAM HASKELL and included<sup>10</sup> the names of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE sr., husbandman and THOMAS<sup>2</sup> PRINCE jr. seaman. The town voted in February, 1688, that every householder and every young man over twenty-one who had been born there, was resident and paying taxes there should have a six acre lot, which terms would have included both THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and his three sons.

In spite of his unreasonable use of liquor THOMAS<sup>1</sup> did not die<sup>3</sup> until January 17, 1689–90, at the age of about seventy-one. He left an estate<sup>1</sup> amounting to £153 and his will dated January 14, 1689, made bequests, among others, to son THOMAS<sup>2</sup>, to grandson JOHN<sup>3</sup> and gave to “loving wife MARGARET” his house and the land belonging to it, half of the apples, household goods and cattle during her lifetime.<sup>20</sup> It also specified that each grandchild should have five shillings or a sheep. It made

his sons THOMAS<sup>2</sup> and Isaac<sup>2</sup> his executors and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ELLERY was one of the witnesses.

Widow MARGARET, who must have really felt relieved when THOMAS<sup>1</sup> was safely in his grave, with his unfortunate appetite no longer a menace, was not for long to remain at peace. In September, 1692, when she would have been about<sup>12</sup> sixty-six she was called before the jury on the claim that "she did practise witchcraft\* at Salem upon the body of Elizabeth Booth."<sup>19</sup> A man and three women (who frequently testified in witchcraft cases) witnessed against her that she performed "certaine detestable acts caled sorceries and witchcraft, wickedly mallitiously and feloniously . . . By which said wicked acts the said Elizabeth Booth . . . is tortured, afflicted consumed, pained, wasted and tormented. . . ." <sup>20</sup> And for some strange reason, in the court record the foreman of the jury signed himself "Ignoramus, Robert Payne, foreman."<sup>20</sup> Her son THOMAS<sup>2</sup> PRINCE gave bond on December 15, 1692, for her appearance at the next court. Unfortunately the result of the trial is not stated but presumably she was cleared, for her death at Gloucester did not occur until February 24, 1705-6, when she would have been about eighty.<sup>12,14</sup>

The children of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> and MARGARET (—) PRINCE, all born in Gloucester were<sup>1,2,3</sup>

- I. THOMAS<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- II. John<sup>2</sup>, b. Nov. 12, 1653; not named in his father's will in 1689 but served<sup>5</sup> as of Gloucester in King Philip's War under Capt. Joseph<sup>2</sup> Gardner (THOMAS<sup>1</sup>) in company with EDWARD<sup>1</sup> HARRADEN and EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD; unless Edward<sup>2</sup> Harraden was implied.
- III. Child b. and d.<sup>11</sup> 1656.
- IV. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. July 19, 1658; d. at Gloucester<sup>1,4,6</sup> Mar. 3, 1723, aged 65; m. 1st there Sept. 16, 1675, as his 2nd wife Hugh<sup>2</sup> Rowe (John<sup>1</sup>)<sup>1</sup> and bore him 8 children; m. 2nd Dec. 2, 1702, as 2nd wife Isaac<sup>2</sup> Elwell (Robert<sup>1</sup>).<sup>1,6</sup>
- V. "Jeho"<sup>2</sup>, who received a cow by the will of his father.<sup>20</sup>
- VI. Isaac<sup>2</sup>, b. Nov. 7, 1663; said<sup>6</sup> to have d. unm. bef. 1706; received a grant of land at Kettle Cove in 1679 in recognition of the service of John<sup>2</sup>; was named in his father's will<sup>1</sup> in 1689. On Dec. 18, 1717, his niece Sarah<sup>3</sup> sold all right to his estate.<sup>13</sup>

THOMAS<sup>2</sup> PRINCE (*Thomas<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>1,2,3</sup> at Gloucester on December 24, 1650, — a veritable Christmas gift. He spent his entire life in that one small town, dying there<sup>3</sup> on January 11, 1704-5, at the age of fifty-five, having married there<sup>3</sup> on September 27, 1676, ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> HARRADEN (see Harraden, p. 349). In June, 1666, when he was but fifteen he,<sup>12</sup> as well as his father and mother, was a witness<sup>10</sup> at court as to a reputed engagement between certain men in regard to a fishing voyage. We are told that in 1671 "a whirlwind at Cape Ann passed through the neck of land that makes one side of the harbor, towards the main sea. Its space or breadth was about forty feet from the sea to the harbor; but it went with such violence, that it bore away whatever it met in the way." In 1677 the King required that all the colonists should take an oath of fidelity and in Gloucester THOMAS<sup>2</sup> called seaman,<sup>10</sup> as well as his father and other ancestors, did so.

The occupation of THOMAS<sup>2</sup> as a seaman may have implied definitely the handling of vessels of which many in the early years were employed in carrying to Boston the cord wood cut at Cape Ann, or it may have implied going out on fishing vessels in which case the men were usually paid, in lieu of wages, one-third part of the

\*Some records<sup>19</sup> report the witchcraft trial as being against a *Martha* Prince but it undoubtedly refers to our MARGARET.

fish and oil, while one-third was allowed the owners of the ship and the balance went for food for the crew and equipment for catching and salting the fish.<sup>16</sup>

By his father's will THOMAS<sup>2</sup> received ownership of about three acres of land "which lieth about his house" and about five acres of salt marsh.<sup>20</sup> In 1692 THOMAS<sup>2</sup> gave bond for his mother's appearance at the next term of court.

In 1693 the earliest extant tax list of Gloucester showed for THOMAS<sup>2</sup> fourteen shillings six pence.<sup>16</sup> In 1696 there was talk among the selectmen about finding a school teacher but it was 1698 before results are recorded. Intermittently the town was without a teacher and on several occasions was under criticism by the General Court on that account. One man engaged as a teacher in 1703 was to teach young men to "wright and cypher."<sup>16</sup> The town began in 1697 to discuss the building of a new meeting house — their third — but it was not ready to be raised until May, 1700. The building was to be forty feet square and the town voted "to provide vitls and drink for as many men as the selectmen should think convenient for the raising." The building was quite ambitiously planned, to cost £253 and to be "plaistered with lime and hair." It was ready for occupancy in December, 1700, and a committee of two deacons and three prominent citizens were to assign seats to the inhabitants.<sup>16</sup>

THOMAS<sup>2</sup> as well as his father received a six acre lot in 1688; and in 1704, both resident on the Cape side of the Cut (see map, p. 209) he and his son JOHN<sup>3</sup> were granted lots on the Cape.<sup>16</sup> By the will of his father, THOMAS<sup>2</sup> received a legal transfer of the land on which he lived as well as five acres of salt marsh. THOMAS<sup>2</sup> himself died intestate, leaving an estate<sup>20</sup> of only about £77 and debts of £24. He was then called husbandman rather than seaman. Widow ELIZABETH became administratrix of his estate with Samuel<sup>3</sup> Stevens and her son JOHN<sup>3</sup> PRINCE as sureties and the widow's share came to about £19. The date of the death of ELIZABETH (HARRADEN) PRINCE has not been found and the latest record seen of her is May 20, 1706, at the division of this estate.<sup>20</sup>

The children of THOMAS<sup>2</sup> and ELIZABETH (HARRADEN) PRINCE, all born at Gloucester, were<sup>1,3</sup>

- i. JOHN<sup>3</sup>, see following.
- ii. Mary<sup>3</sup>, twin with JOHN<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 6, 1677; d. bef. her father.
- iii. Thomas<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 18, 1679; d. Jan. 29, 1679-80.
- iv. Edward<sup>3</sup>, b. June 5, 1681; shared<sup>6</sup> in his father's estate; d. bef.<sup>13</sup> Dec. 18, 1717, prob. unm. for then his sister Sarah<sup>3</sup> sold her interest in his estate.<sup>13</sup>
- v. Isaac<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 21, 1683; shared<sup>6</sup> in father's estate; m. at Gloucester<sup>3</sup> Dec. 10, 1730, Honor (Tarr), wife 1st of John Wise, and next of John Wonson.<sup>1,6,7</sup>
- vi. Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, b. Aug. 10, 1685; d. bef. 1690.
- vii. Margaret<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 25, 1687; d. bef. father.
- viii. Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, b. Oct. 17, 1690; shared<sup>6</sup> in father's estate; m. by 1712 Samuel Pattee of Haverhill (prob. son of Peter) and bore him six children.<sup>15</sup>
- ix. Sarah<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1692; shared<sup>6</sup> in father's estate; d.<sup>13</sup> at Southampton, N. H. Apr. 15, 1775, ae. 83; m. at Gloucester, int. Feb. 12, 17. . John<sup>3</sup> Flanders (John<sup>2</sup>, Stephen<sup>1</sup>).<sup>13</sup>
- x. Abigail<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 12, 1694-5; shared<sup>6</sup> in father's estate; m. at Haverhill, Samuel Staples of that place and bore him nine children.<sup>15</sup>

JOHN<sup>3</sup> PRINCE (*Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>*) a twin, was born<sup>3</sup> at Gloucester on December 6, 1677, died there on April 19, 1767, in his ninety-second year<sup>3</sup> having married there as his first wife about 1704-5, ABIGAIL<sup>2</sup> ELLERY (see Ellery, p. 292) who

was the mother of all of his nine children and who died there on December 4, 1744, aged sixty-nine years and nine months.<sup>3</sup> He quite surely married there as a second wife on August 7, 1746, Mary (Wharf) Sayward\* daughter of Nathaniel. JOHN<sup>s</sup> became a mariner and as early as 1713. was master of a sloop<sup>17</sup> as will be shown. In 1730 he bore the title of captain, being accorded it until his death.<sup>3</sup> His concern with civic affairs would naturally be very slight. In 1704 he and his father, being resident on the Cape side, received additional lots there.<sup>16</sup> By the will of his grandfather, JOHN<sup>s</sup> had received one acre of salt marsh and six acres of upland, while the distribution of his father's estate gave him a small amount more of real estate.<sup>20</sup> On April 13, 1713, JOHN<sup>s</sup> PRINCE received a quit claim deed from his brother-in-law John<sup>s</sup> Flanders and his wife Sarah (Prince) to all their right to the estate given by THOMAS<sup>t</sup> PRINCE to Isaac<sup>2</sup> Prince, both of Gloucester, deceased.<sup>13</sup> While on December 18, 1717, this same couple quit claimed, for the sum of £8 paid by JOHN<sup>s</sup> PRINCE, all their right to lands or other estate of THOMAS<sup>t</sup> PRINCE and of THOMAS<sup>2</sup> PRINCE as well as all their right to any estate which might have belonged to their uncle Isaac<sup>2</sup> Prince or to their brother Edward<sup>s</sup> Prince.<sup>13</sup> In 1743 the home of Capt. JOHN<sup>s</sup> PRINCE is shown to have lain between Forestreet and the New or Meeting House Street.<sup>18</sup> About 1721 JOHN<sup>s</sup> and the estate left by his father, both received a share in a division of wood land.<sup>17</sup>

The first school house, which would have presently accommodated the children of JOHN<sup>s</sup>, was built in 1708, classes previously<sup>16</sup> having been held in the meeting house.

In 1713 a Capt. Andrew Robinson of Gloucester had the honor of designing and building a new type of vessel. When a bystander saw it slip off the stocks and glide so smoothly over the water he cried out "Oh, how she scoons!" meaning to skip along the surface of the water and Robinson instantly adopted the term and replied "A scooner let her be!" . . . a name not earlier used.<sup>17</sup> But the history of JOHN<sup>s</sup> is synonymous with the sea and its varied threats and experiences. As early as 1704 two pirates, members of the crew of John Quelch, had landed in Gloucester. They were promptly arrested and taken to Salem jail and that same year Quelch was caught and hung. But the alarm in Gloucester caused the establishment of a watch to guard the town, one man being stationed on Elwell's Neck near Hogskin Cove and another in the Harbor.<sup>17</sup>

But more constant threats to JOHN<sup>s</sup> were the frequent storms and the hostility of the French and Indians along the whole eastern coast as far even as Cape Sable. It was fair for the colonists to anticipate that the conquest of Nova Scotia in 1710 would have freed them of that menace, but it did not. Rev. John White of Gloucester wrote in 1711 "The enemy make fearful depredations upon our poor fishermen at Cape Sable." And a Richard Yorke of Gloucester testified on June 22, 1713 that on the second day of that month "being at Cape Sable in a sloop on a fishing voyage, and being in a harbour called the Owl's Head, with my sloop, and Mr. JOHN PRINCE, of said Gloucester, lying by me with his sloop, there came down to the waterside, about three of the clock in the afternoon, two Indian men dressed in French clothing, with a kind of a white flag on a stick, and called to us and desired us to come on shore, and said they had news to tell us and showed a paper which they said they had from Col. Vetch at Port Royal: . . ." The tale continu-

\*She had married<sup>14</sup> first in 1708 Ebenezer<sup>s</sup> Davis (James<sup>2</sup>, JOHN) and had married secondly in 1734-5 Elder James Sayward.

ing, tells how one man from Yorke's vessel and one from PRINCE's went ashore in a canoe, were greeted with handshakes and protestation of friendliness; were sent back to the boats, by natives, for tobacco and rum. Returning they were accompanied by a third fisherman and the three of them were held prisoner by the lying natives.<sup>17</sup>

In mid-October of 1716 a fleet of about fourteen vessels returning from fishing at Cape Sable were caught and lost in a terrible storm which lasted all one day and night. Four of these belonged to Gloucester,<sup>17</sup> and one of them had as master John<sup>4</sup> Davis (John<sup>3</sup>, James<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>). It is recorded that in 1732 JOHN<sup>3</sup> PRINCE sold a piece of ground eighty-five feet square to a company of eight men of whom he was one and PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> or <sup>5</sup> WARNER, blacksmith, was another.<sup>17</sup> These men had banded together to erect a wind mill and the spot where it stood was called Windmill Hill for over a hundred years.<sup>17</sup>

Certain items which remain to us, bearing on the life and conduct of JOHN<sup>3</sup>, cause a question to arise as to whether he had experienced and survived the small-pox, being thus immune, or whether he ignored the menace and was courageously helpful, for in 1730 "Capt. JOHN PRINCE is paid £2 for what he did to prevent the small pox coming into town, for damage he received in his cloths; and for helping to bury Jacob Row;"<sup>17</sup> And again in 1752 there was a terrible epidemic of that disease at Boston and the officials of Gloucester established a quarantine of sorts against it in the form of a guard at the Cut (see Ellery, p. 288) and at the Battery to prevent boats from landing. On August 24, 1752, "Capt. JOHN PRINCE was paid £2 for attending at the gate near the Cut, in order to prevent the small pox from spreading in the town."<sup>17</sup> The disease appeared also in 1760, 1762 and 1764 in which year our Elder PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> WARNER lost his son John<sup>6</sup> by it.

The last major marine catastrophe of Gloucester men of which JOHN<sup>3</sup> would have been cognizant was in March, 1766, when nineteen vessels left Gloucester for the Great Banks to fish. They met a violent storm and most of them were lost, including not less than forty Gloucester men.<sup>17</sup>

As "Capt. JOHN PRINCE, mariner" he died intestate, leaving a considerable estate which was administered<sup>20</sup> by his son-in-law PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> WARNER. The improved financial condition and the consequent conveniences enjoyed by this family are evident from the fact that his home and the adjacent land for garden, mowing, etc., was appraised at £170 while the entire estate was valued at over £348, and one item of the personal estate was "old silver" to the amount<sup>20</sup> of over £8.

The children of Capt. JOHN<sup>3</sup> and ABIGAIL (ELLERY) PRINCE all born in Gloucester were<sup>1,3,6,7</sup>

- I. Abigail<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 27, 1705-6; d. June 5, 1706.
- II. MARY<sup>4</sup>, b. July 10, 1707; d. at Gloucester Dec. 11, 1784, ae. 77; m. there Nov. 3, 1726, PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> WARNER (see Warner, p. 654).
- III. Elizabeth<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 16, 1709.
- IV. John<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 4, 1711-2; d. Jan. 8, 1718-9, ae. abt. 7.
- V. Abigail<sup>4</sup>, b. June 15, 1714; d. soon.
- VI. Susanna<sup>4</sup>, b. June 27, bap. Aug. 22, 1714; d. May 19, 1716, ae. abt. 1 yr. 10 m.
- VII. Abigail<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 25, 1716; m. at Gloucester<sup>3</sup> Mar. 29, 1735, Elias<sup>4</sup> Elwell (Elias<sup>3</sup>, Josiah<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>).<sup>6</sup> He d. at Gloucester May 14, 1752, ae. 43 and it may be she who m. there int. Oct. 1, 1757, Thomas Sherborn of Boston.

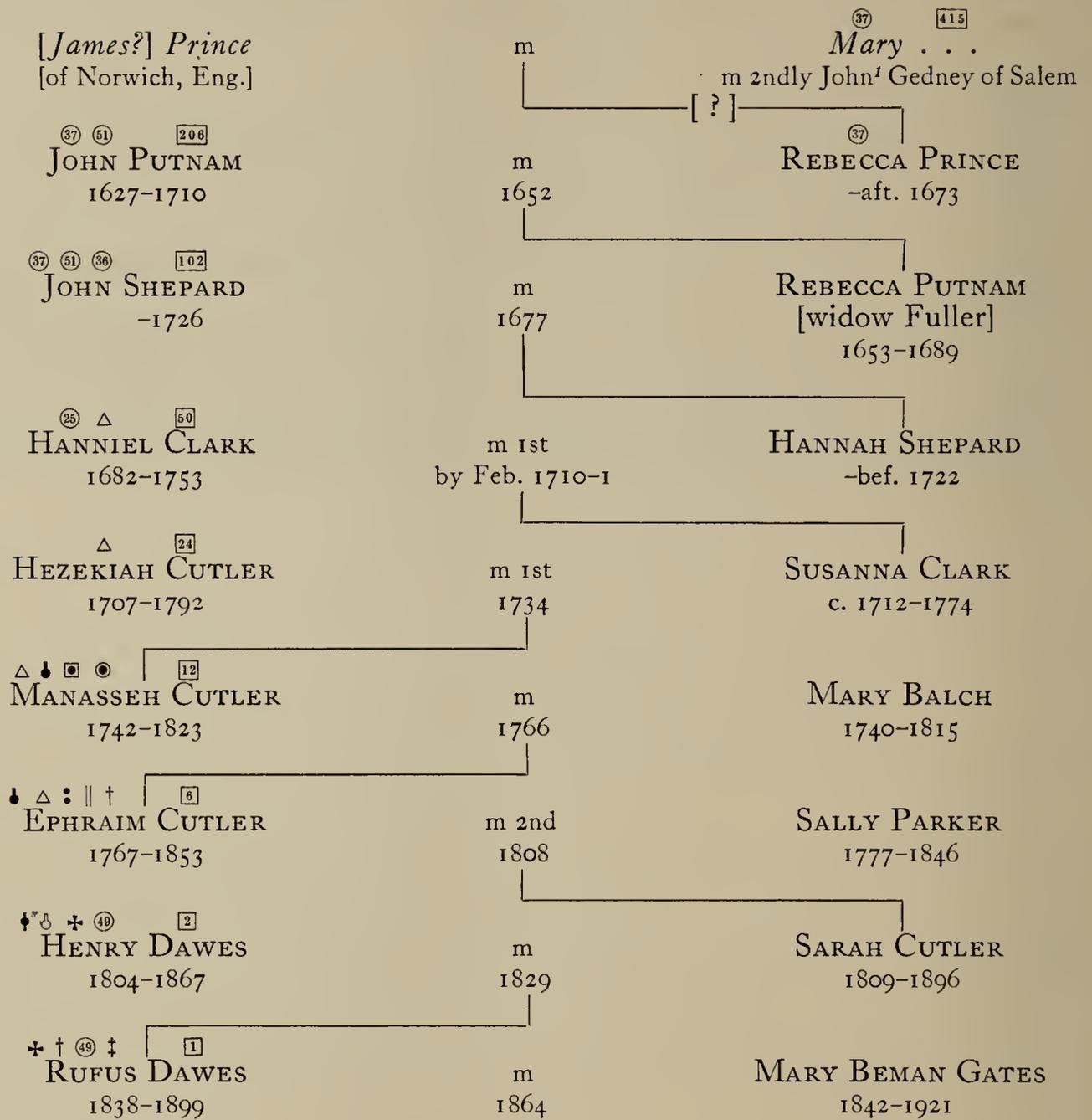
VIII. Isaac<sup>4</sup>, b. Nov. 1, 1718.

IX. Susanna<sup>4</sup>, b. June 12, 1722; d. Mar. 7, 1724-5, ae. abt. 2 yr. 8 m.

## REFERENCES

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, pp. 89, 129-30, 145, 170, 274.</li> <li>2. Savage, III, 488; Pope's Pioneers, p. 375, Addenda, p. ix.</li> <li>3. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 559, 561-2, II, 439-40, III, 250.</li> <li>4. Ibid., I, 606, III, 128; History of Salem, S. Perley, 1926, II, 20.</li> <li>5. History of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 165, 167.</li> <li>6. Babson's Notes and Additions, 1876, I, 23-4, 59, 70, 80.</li> <li>7. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 752, II, 163, 496, 568; Babson's Gloucester, pp. 170, 274.</li> <li>8. History of Essex Co., D. H. Hurd, 1888, II, 1230, 1298, 1302-3.</li> <li>9. New England Register, LXXI, 168-70.</li> <li>10. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex Co., II, 6, 64, 237, 261; III, 137-8, 143, 185-6, 206, 328-9; VI, 402; VIII, 238.</li> <li>11. Ibid., II, 36-8; IV, 441; V, 360-1, VI, 101, 116.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>12. Ibid., III, 328-9.</li> <li>13. Flanders Family, E. F. Dunbar, 1935, p. 53.</li> <li>14. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 752; II, 163, 496, 568; III, 105, 250, 283.</li> <li>15. Vital Records of Haverhill, I, 244, 284; II, 247, 263, 298, 456, 476.</li> <li>16. Babson's Gloucester, pp. 205, 208, 213, 216, 218, 231-4, 237, 272, 377, 380-2.</li> <li>17. Ibid., 208, 233, 238-9, 251-3, 272, 279, 319-21, 325, 346, 352-3, 380-2; Babson's Notes and Additions, 1891, II, 90-3, 114-5, 132.</li> <li>18. Babson Genealogy, G. W. Chamberlain, 1934, pp. 7, 13.</li> <li>19. Putnam's Monthly Historical Magazine, 1899, pp. 203-4; Witchcraft in Salem Village in 1692, W. S. Nevens, 1892, p. 255.</li> <li>20. Search of Essex Co. Records by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Suffolk Files, No. 2676, Probate Records No. 22808, Vol. 304, 241; No. 22809, Vol. 309, 345; Vol. 343, 492; Vol. 344, 88-9.</li> </ol> |
|--|--|

# PRINCE of Salem



- ③⑦ Salem
- ⑤① Salem Village (later Danvers)
- ③⑥ Rowley
- ②⑤ Haverhill
- Δ Killingly, Conn.
- ♂ Edgartown
- Dedham
- Hamilton

- ∴ Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♂ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ✦ Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## PRINCE of Salem

**R**EBECA PRINCE who became the wife of JOHN<sup>2</sup> PUTNAM is identified<sup>1</sup> in the early records merely as the "step-daughter [or daughter-in-law] of John Gedney" of Salem. An intensive study<sup>2</sup> of the name "Prince" in Essex County has crystallized a *belief* that REBECCA was probably a sister of Robert Prince of Salem; and also a *theory* as to her parentage.

Norwich, England, from whence John<sup>1</sup> Gedney came, has a church record of an Easter offering in 1633 or 1634 by John Gedney and an added item that "poor widow *Prince* and children were allowed 3 pence." Gedney came to New England with a wife Sarah and their three children in 1637. Presumably the wife died on the passage or soon after his arrival, for later in 1637 a wife *Mary* Gedney joined Salem church and is *theorized* to have been the aforesaid "widow *Prince*" who had probably preceded him to New England. Gedney kept an inn at Salem and in June, 1651, had young Robert Prince "and others" as servants or assistants. In 1654 not only Robert Prince but persons named\* "Bethia and Lydia" were mentioned as being in his service. Some Bethia became the wife of Joseph Hutchinson and of their daughter Bethia Hutchinson a reference was made<sup>1</sup> to her "grandfather *Gidney*."

Also Robert Prince and REBECCA (PRINCE) PUTNAM both named sons "James," so the *unproved* theory<sup>2</sup> is that Robert, REBECCA and probably Bethia were children of widow *Prince*; that her first husband likely bore the name of "*James*"; and that the second wife of John Gedney, *Mary*, was that widow *Prince*.

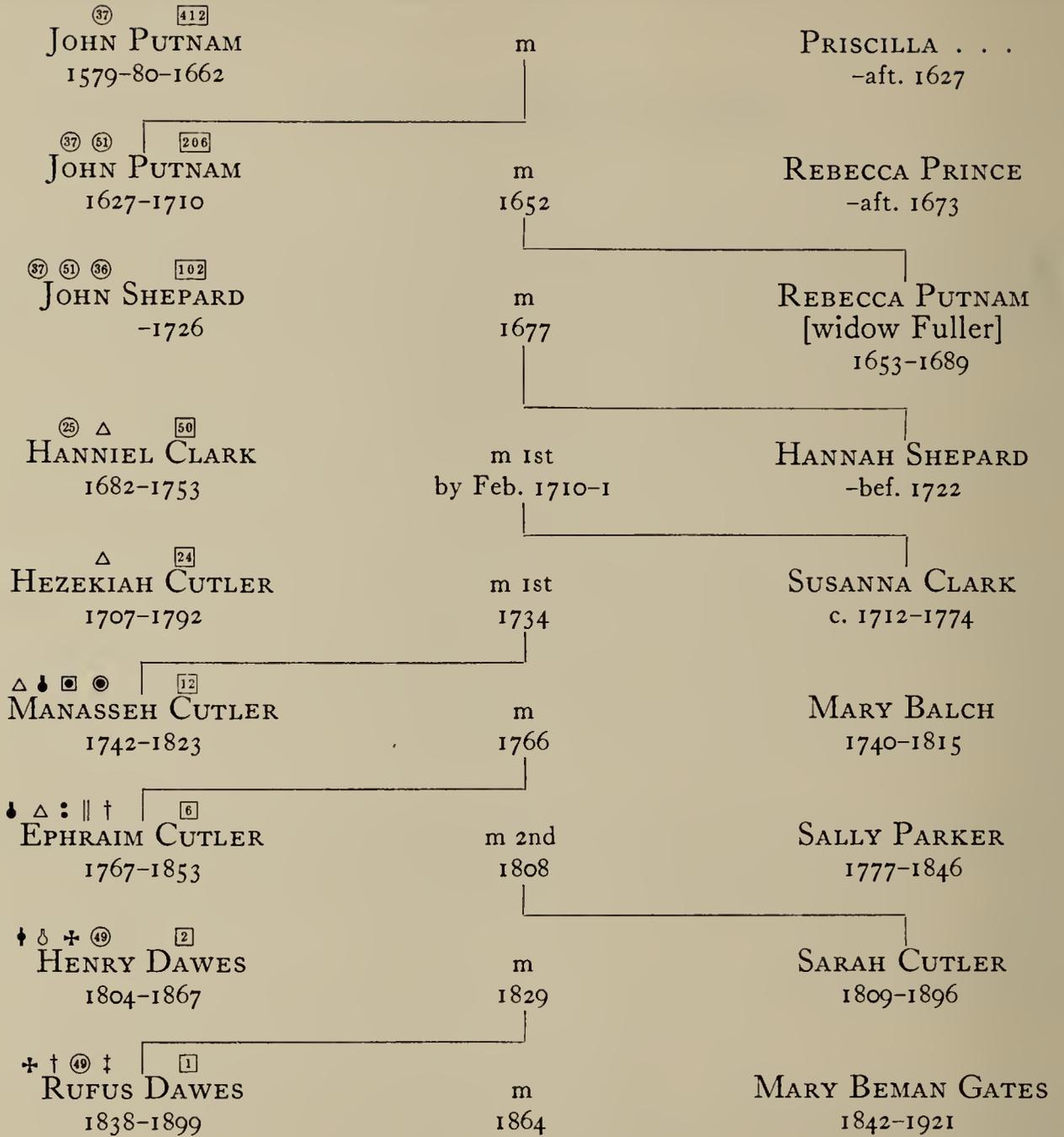
REBECCA PRINCE was married<sup>3</sup> at Salem on September 3, 1652, to JOHN<sup>2</sup> PUTNAM (see Putnam, p. 521).

\*The Bethia was probably<sup>2</sup> a Prince and the Lydia was doubtless Gedney's own daughter.<sup>1</sup>

### REFERENCES

1. The Putnam Lineage, Eben Putnam, 1907, p. 29; Essex Institute Historical Collections, XVI, 242-5.
2. American Genealogist, XIV, 83-6, an article by G. A. Moriarty.
3. Vital Records of Salem, IV, 220.

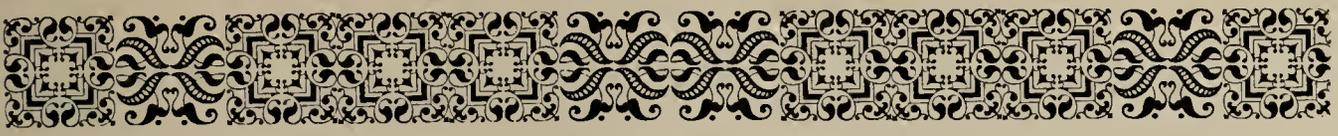
# PUTNAM



- (37) Salem
- (36) Rowley
- (51) Salem Village (later Danvers)
- (25) Haverhill
- Δ Killingly, Conn.
- ♀ Edgartown
- ◻ Dedham
- Hamilton

- Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♂ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- + Malta, O.
- (49) Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.

---



---

## PUTNAM

---

**J**OHN<sup>1</sup> PUTNAM\* from Aston Abbots, co. Bucks, England, emigrated to Salem in 1639-40 with his wife PRISCILLA and four or perhaps six children. Various grants of land were made to JOHN<sup>1</sup> and grants also to each of his three sons. On March 21, 1641, PRISCILLA became a member of Salem Church and on April 4, 1647, JOHN<sup>1</sup> was admitted to membership. In 1644 he and John<sup>1</sup> Hathorne were appointed<sup>2</sup> "to walk forth in the time of Gods worshippe" to take note of loafers, as were also ROBERT<sup>1</sup> and ROBERT<sup>2</sup> MOULTON on other Sabbaths. There is no evidence of his holding office. In 1653 he divided his lands between his sons Thomas<sup>2</sup> and Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, having evidently earlier granted his homestead to his youngest son JOHN<sup>2</sup>. There has been found no record of the death of \*\*PRISCILLA but JOHN<sup>1</sup> died at Salem on December 30, 1662. The statement is made<sup>2</sup> that "He ate his supper, went to prayer with his family and died before he went to sleep." The Putnam family was, for several generations, one of the most successful and wealthiest of Essex County.

The children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and PRISCILLA (—) PUTNAM, all baptized at Aston Abbots, were<sup>1,2</sup>

- i. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, bap. Dec. 20, 1612; admitted to the church at Salem 1643.
- ii. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, bap. Mar. 7, 1614-5; d. at Salem Village May 5, 1686; m. 1st at Lynn Oct. 17, 1643, Ann Holyoke [Edward and Prudence (Stockton)]; m. 2nd at Salem Nov. 14, 1666, Mary (—) Veren widow of Nathaniel.
- iii. John<sup>2</sup>, bap. July 24, 1617; buried at Aston Abbots Nov. 5, 1620.
- iv. Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, bap. Oct. 11, 1619; d. at Salem Village July 23, 1700; m. at Salem Elizabeth Hutchinson [Richard and Alice (Bosworth)].
- v. Sara<sup>2</sup>, bap. Mar. 7, 1622-3; no further record.
- vi. Phebe<sup>2</sup>, bap. July 28, 1624; no further record.
- vii. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, see following.

JOHN<sup>2</sup> PUTNAM (*John*<sup>1</sup>) was baptized<sup>1,2</sup> at Aston Abbots, England, on May 27, 1627, and died at Salem Village (later Danvers) on April 7, 1710, having married at Salem<sup>4</sup> on September 3, 1652, REBECCA PRINCE (see Prince, p. 519) identified as "step-daughter of John Gedney." As a youth, in 1643, JOHN<sup>2</sup> had worked for a time on the farm of Gov. Endicott which was handled most† scien-

\*JOHN<sup>1</sup> PUTNAM was the son<sup>1,2</sup> of NICHOLAS<sup>a</sup> and MARGARET (GOODSPEED) PUTNAM and was baptized<sup>2,3</sup> at Wingrave, co. Bucks, England on January 17, 1579-80, but emigrated from Aston Abbots, co. Bucks. He was called "yeoman" though the statement is made<sup>3</sup> by the Committee on Heraldry of the New England Historic Genealogical Society that JOHN PUTNAM belonged to an armigerous family and the heraldic description assigned is: "Arms: Sable crusily fitchy a stork silver beaked and legged gules. Crest: A wolf's head gules." The description of these arms more properly worded<sup>8</sup> (as given in Burke's General Armory) reads: "Sable crusily fitchée argent a stork of the last, beaked and legged gules. Crest: A wolf's head coupéd gules."

\*\*Wife PRISCILLA has been both claimed and disclaimed to have been a "Gould" and also to have been a "Deacon."

†As early as 1648 Gov. Endicott acquired two hundred and fifty acres of land from Capt. Trask in exchange<sup>6</sup> for five hundred apple trees of three years growth. In 1658 Zaccheus Gould of Topsfield called JOHN<sup>2</sup> his "cousin."<sup>5</sup>

tifically<sup>2</sup> and would have served as the best possible training, agriculturally, for a young man.

On February 26, 1654-5, the selectmen granted<sup>2</sup> thirty acres to JOHN<sup>2</sup>. In 1658, calling himself "Planter" he deeded<sup>2</sup> about twenty acres on the north side of Ipswich river to Robert Prince, his presumed brother-in-law. He was made a freeman<sup>9</sup> in May, 1665. On July 14, 1667, his children REBECCA<sup>3</sup>, Sarah<sup>3</sup>, Priscilla<sup>3</sup>, Jonathan<sup>3</sup>, James<sup>3</sup>, Hannah<sup>3</sup>, and John<sup>3</sup> were all baptized at Salem.<sup>2</sup> In 1668 and again in 1670 JOHN<sup>2</sup> with both of his brothers signed a petition asking that the "Farms" (Salem Village, ultimately the North Parish of Danvers) be allowed to have a minister. In March, 1681-2, JOHN<sup>2</sup> and six other Putnams signed another petition asking to be set apart from Salem. In 1685-6 JOHN<sup>2</sup> signed a deposition calling himself fifty-eight years old and as having lived in Salem for forty-five years. He as well as his brothers acquired a great deal of property as is proved by the fact that in 1683 he paid £8 and his brothers paid even more in taxes and until within a few years of his death<sup>2</sup> he was one of the heaviest tax payers.

JOHN<sup>2</sup> was interested not only in agriculture but as early<sup>6</sup> as 1674, he with Simon Bradstreet (Governor 1679-86 and 1689-92) and Daniel Denison established<sup>2</sup> at Rowley Village, now Boxford, an iron works which was still operating in 1697. JOHN<sup>2</sup> was a deputy<sup>6</sup> to the General Court in 1679, 1680, 1686 and 1691-2 and was a selectman in 1681; but his greatest prominence was in connection<sup>2</sup> with military affairs, religious affairs and with the witchcraft delusion. In 1672 he was called corporal; in King Philip's War served as a private, having<sup>7</sup> £1-8-7 due him on September 23, 1676, under Capt. George Corwin; in October, 1678, was commissioned lieutenant of a troop of horse at the Village and in 1687 and subsequently was called captain.<sup>6</sup>

His life contained much of conflict which his aggressive, determined disposition served to increase though he possessed also many admirable traits to offset certain unlovely ones. A controversy of years standing pertained to the boundary lands between Salem and Ipswich (which later became Topsfield) where JOHN<sup>2</sup> and several of his sons were owners and battled valorously for their rights until in 1728 the matter was smoothed out by the formation of a new township — Middleton. The plea for a settled minister at Salem Village brought the community no peace for many years to come. The Rev. James Bayley (H. C. 1669) who served them as pastor from 1671 to 1680 was unquestionably a fine man and a good pastor and fortunately for him the major part of the inhabitants, including JOHN<sup>2</sup> PUTNAM and his brother Thomas<sup>2</sup> were favorable to him,<sup>6</sup> but a determined minority stirred up trouble until he resigned. In April, 1679, JOHN<sup>2</sup> with his brother Thomas<sup>2</sup> and two others started suit against a neighbor "for slandering our minister Mr. Bayley" and JOHN<sup>2</sup>, his brothers Thomas<sup>2</sup> and Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> with two others made a gift of over forty acres to the minister in 1680 after his resignation.<sup>6</sup> Next they employed as a preacher the Rev. George Burroughs (H. C. 1670) who had formerly preached in Maine and there had endured heavy losses and interrupted work by the repeated Indian troubles. He was engaged by Salem Village in November, 1680, and from the first was heavily handicapped by a hangover of the partisanship which had burdened his predecessor. Indeed in regard to Mr. Burroughs the criticism was greatly accentuated. He was probably hard to get along with. A deposition pertinent to this time (though made nine years later in 1692) reads:<sup>6,10</sup>

"THE DEPOSITION OF JOHN PUTNAM AND REBECCA HIS WIFE. — Testifieth and saith, that, in the year 1680, Mr. Burroughs lived in our house nine months. There being a great difference betwixt said Burroughs and his wife, the difference was so great that they did desire us, the deponents, to come into their room to hear their difference. The controversy that was betwixt them was, that the aforesaid Burroughs did require his wife to give him a written covenant, under her hand and seal, that she would never reveal his secrets. Our answer was, that they had once made a covenant we did conceive did bind each other to keep their lawful secrets. And further saith, that, all the time that said Burroughs did live at our house, he was a very harsh and sharp man to his wife; notwithstanding, to our observation, she was a very good and dutiful wife to him."<sup>6,10</sup>

A further sidelight on the Putnam-Burroughs association occurred in the testimony of a young woman who lived in the Burroughs family about two years. She said "My mistress did tell me that she had some serge of JOHN PUTNAM's wife, to make Mary a coat; and also some fustian of his wife, to make my mistress a pair of sleeves."<sup>10</sup> So kindness was evident at first.

Hannah, the first wife<sup>12</sup> of the Rev. George Burroughs, died at Salem Village in September, 1681. The church was in arrears<sup>10</sup> on the payment of his salary (as was shown at a later date) and the minister had to ask Lt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> PUTNAM for credit on the latter's account at the store of John Gedney "for two gallons of Canary wine, and cloth, &c., . . . for the funeral of Mrs. Burroughs."<sup>10</sup> The Rev. Mr. Burroughs left Salem Village before April, 1683, for at the April term of Court held at Ipswich, a committee of the parish petitioned for relief stating that their pastor had left and they had been without services for four Sabbaths. They asked the Court to require him to attend a hearing and clearing up of the case and "to come to account with them."<sup>10</sup> Burroughs had returned to Maine and an officer was sent to bring him back. At a public meeting on April 24, 1683, he appeared before the inhabitants of Salem Village. It was agreed between them, that on the second, third and fourth days of the following week they should all present their bills. On May 2, therefore, they came together at the meeting house and had just begun the "reckoning" when the town marshal, Henry Skerry, came in, and it developed that Lt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> PUTNAM, wealthy, prominent and powerful as he was, had gotten out a writ of attachment<sup>10</sup> against his former pastor! And that is not all, for the church still owed Burroughs £30 or more and Burroughs did *not* owe the money which PUTNAM was claiming! It is a bit hard to excuse such conduct, and impossible to explain how a man with as many fine qualities as JOHN<sup>2</sup> really had, could stoop to "put over" such an unjust accusation as that!

Sworn depositions assure us<sup>10</sup> that

"the marshall . . . went up to JOHN PUTNAM, Sr., and whispered to him, and said PUTNAM said to him, 'You know what you have to do: do your office.' Then the marshall came to Mr. Burroughs, and said deferentially, 'Sir I have a writing to read to you.' Then he read, the attachment, and demanded goods. Mr. Burroughs answered 'that he had no goods to show, and that he was now reckoning with the inhabitants, for we know not yet who is in debt, but there was his body.' As we were ready to go out of the meeting-house, Mr. Burroughs said, 'Well, what will you do with me?' Then the marshall went to JOHN PUTNAM, Sr., and said to him, 'What shall I do?' The said PUTNAM replied, 'You know your business.' And then the said PUTNAM went to his brother, Thomas Putnam, and pulled him by the coat; and they went out of the house together, and presently came in

again. Then, said JOHN PUTNAM, 'Marshal, take your prisoner, and have him up to the ordinary,\* — that is a public house, — and secure him till the morning.'

(Signed) "Nathaniel Ingersoll, aged about fifty;  
Samuel Sibley, aged about twenty-four."

Another deposition as to the writ of attachment stated<sup>10</sup> that Burroughs asked PUTNAM "what money it was he attached him for." "JOHN PUTNAM answered, 'For five pounds and odd money at Shippen's at Boston, and for thirteen shillings at his father Gedney's, and for twenty-four shillings at Mrs. Darby's,' " and right then JOHN<sup>2</sup> got his "come uppance" for Deacon Nathaniel Ingersoll had the courage to stand up and say to this influential JOHN<sup>2</sup> PUTNAM:

"Lieutenant, I wonder that you attach Mr. Burroughs for the money at Darby's and your father Gedney's, when, to my knowledge, you and Mr. Burroughs have reckoned and balanced accounts two or three times since, as you say, it was due, and you never made any mention of it when you reckoned with Mr. Burroughs."

And then the amazing thing happened for JOHN<sup>2</sup> PUTNAM answered,

"It is true, and I own it."

It developed later (1) that Burroughs had previously handed to PUTNAM a statement of £33-6-8 due him from the parish and had asked for an order of £5 or £6 on Shippen, which JOHN<sup>2</sup> gave him, remarking that it should go for part of the £33-6-8; (2) that on May 24, three weeks after the above meeting "for reckoning," the parish voted to raise by a tax, £15 for the last quarter of a year that Mr. Burroughs preached for them; (3) that on February 22, 1683-4, another vote was taken to raise £15 for Mr. Burroughs and (4) finally in April, 1684, he personally signed an order authorizing Mr. Thomas<sup>2</sup> Putnam to receive from the committee what was *still* due him<sup>10</sup> from the inhabitants of Salem Farms.

So a descendant of Lt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> PUTNAM (as the compiler is) can be both ashamed and proud of his actions. He was evidently not above a shabby fault, but he was honest enough to admit his fault publicly — which could not have been easy for as quick-tempered and obstinate a man as he definitely was. Sad to relate, the Rev. George Burroughs was later one of the unhappy and illegal victims of the witchcraft mania.<sup>6</sup>

The next pastor was the Rev. Samuel Paris who was settled at the Farms in November, 1688, with the approval of JOHN<sup>2</sup> (already called "Captain") but he made himself persona non grata by fostering the witchcraft testimonies and trials — until his wife was threatened, after which his enthusiasm soon cooled! But the church soon wearied of him and had to insist upon his removal. When the life of Rebecca Nurse was at stake from the threat of witchcraft, her husband Francis asked various neighbors to testify in her behalf. This was asking no light favor for in many cases it had involved the personal safety of such signers. But Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> and his wife REBECCA both signed a statement of her good character<sup>10</sup> with thirty-seven others. That accursed witchcraft craze very closely involved some members of the Putnam family and even hung on the edge of the family of JOHN<sup>2</sup>. For Thomas<sup>3</sup>(Thomas<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>), nephew of our Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, had<sup>13</sup> a wife Ann

\*Henry Skerry, marshal, made his report to the court<sup>10</sup> that he had "attached the body of George Burroughs he tendered to me — for he said he had no pay — and taken bonds to the value of fourteen pounds money . . ." and seven men including Burroughs himself and Deacon Nathaniel Ingersoll signed the bond.<sup>10</sup>

(Carr) and a daughter \*Ann<sup>4</sup> Putnam who were in the very thickest of the mire, as was also the husband and father. The wife Ann (Carr) Putnam swore<sup>10</sup> that she had been seen the spectre of Rebecca Nurse afflicting various persons and that the said spectre acknowledged to her that "she had killed Benjamin Houlton and John Fuller and REBECCA SHEPARD." But "the Testimony of JOHN PUTNAM, Sr., and REBECCA his Wife, saith that our son-in-law\*\* John Fuller, and our daughter REBECCA SHEPARD, did both of them die a most violent death (and acting very strangely at the time of their death); further saith that we did judge then that they both died of a malignant fever, and had no suspicion of witchcraft of any, neither can we accuse the prisoner of any such thing."<sup>10</sup> So JOHN<sup>2</sup> and his wife exercised their common sense!

It is stated of Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> that "some years previous to his death he gave his property to his children, always with reservations as to his maintenance. . . ." As early as 1690 he deeded one hundred acres to Jonathan<sup>3</sup> and to James<sup>3</sup> and in 1695 ninety acres to John<sup>3</sup>. His residence was on the farm originally occupied<sup>2</sup> by his father, "now better known as Oak Knoll,† the home of the poet ††Whittier." No will by JOHN<sup>2</sup> is of record, probably because of the various deeds of gift. The diary of the Rev. Joseph Green contains the item "April 7 (1710) Captain PUTNAM buried by ye soldiers." He was laid in what was (1907) the Wadsworth Cemetery but was originally the Putnam burial place and undoubtedly his parents and wife also lie there, though no markers prove it.

The children of JOHN<sup>2</sup> and REBECCA (PRINCE) PUTNAM, all born at Salem Village, were<sup>1,2</sup>

- I. †REBECCA<sup>3</sup>, b. May 28, 1653, bap. at Salem First Church July 14, 1667, with 6 brothers and sisters; d.<sup>4</sup> at Salem Sept. 21, 1689, ae. 37; m. 1st at Salem<sup>4</sup> on Apr. 22, 1672, John<sup>2</sup> Fuller (Thomas<sup>1</sup>). John died on August 26, 1675, and she m. 2nd at Salem<sup>4</sup> Dec. 6, 1677, JOHN<sup>2</sup> SHEPARD (see Shepard, p. 546).
- II. Sarah<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 4, 1654; d. Aug. 2, 1676; m. July, 1672, John Hutchinson [Richard and Alice (Bosworth)].
- III. Priscilla<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 4, 1657-8; d. Nov. 16, 1704; m. Joseph Bailey [John and Eleanor (Emery)].
- IV. Jonathan<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 17, 1659-60; d. Mar. 2, 1739, in his 81st yr.; m. 1st Elizabeth Whipple, d. 1682 (Thomas and Elizabeth); m. 2nd Lydia Potter (Anthony and Elizabeth).
- V. James<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 4, 1661; d. Apr. 7, 1727; m. 1st Sarah (—) d. 1717; m. 2nd Mar. 6, 1719-20, Mary (Read) Rea.
- VI. Hannah<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 2, 1663; d. 1730-1; m. May 17, 1682, Henry Brown (Henry and Abigail).
- VII. Eleazer<sup>3</sup>, b. 1665; d. Jan. 25, 1732-3; m. 1st bef. 1694, Hannah Boardman [Daniel and Hannah (Hutchinson)]; m. 2nd Nov. 14, 1711, Elizabeth Rolfe [Benjamin and Apphia (Hale)].
- VIII. John<sup>3</sup>, b. July 14, 1667; will Jan. 7, 1731-2, proved Mar. 21, 1737; m. Hannah.
- IX. Susanna<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 4, 1670; m. bef. 1695, Edward Bishop (Edward).
- X. Ruth<sup>3</sup>, b. Aug. 1673.

\*The daughter Ann<sup>4</sup> was one of the ring leaders of the "inspired" witnesses against the many victims of the witchcraft trials.<sup>6</sup> (see index).<sup>13</sup>

\*\*John Fuller (. . . -1675) was the first husband of our REBECCA (PUTNAM) SHEPARD.

†"Oak Knoll" was inherited by James<sup>3</sup> and by his son Jethro<sup>4</sup>.

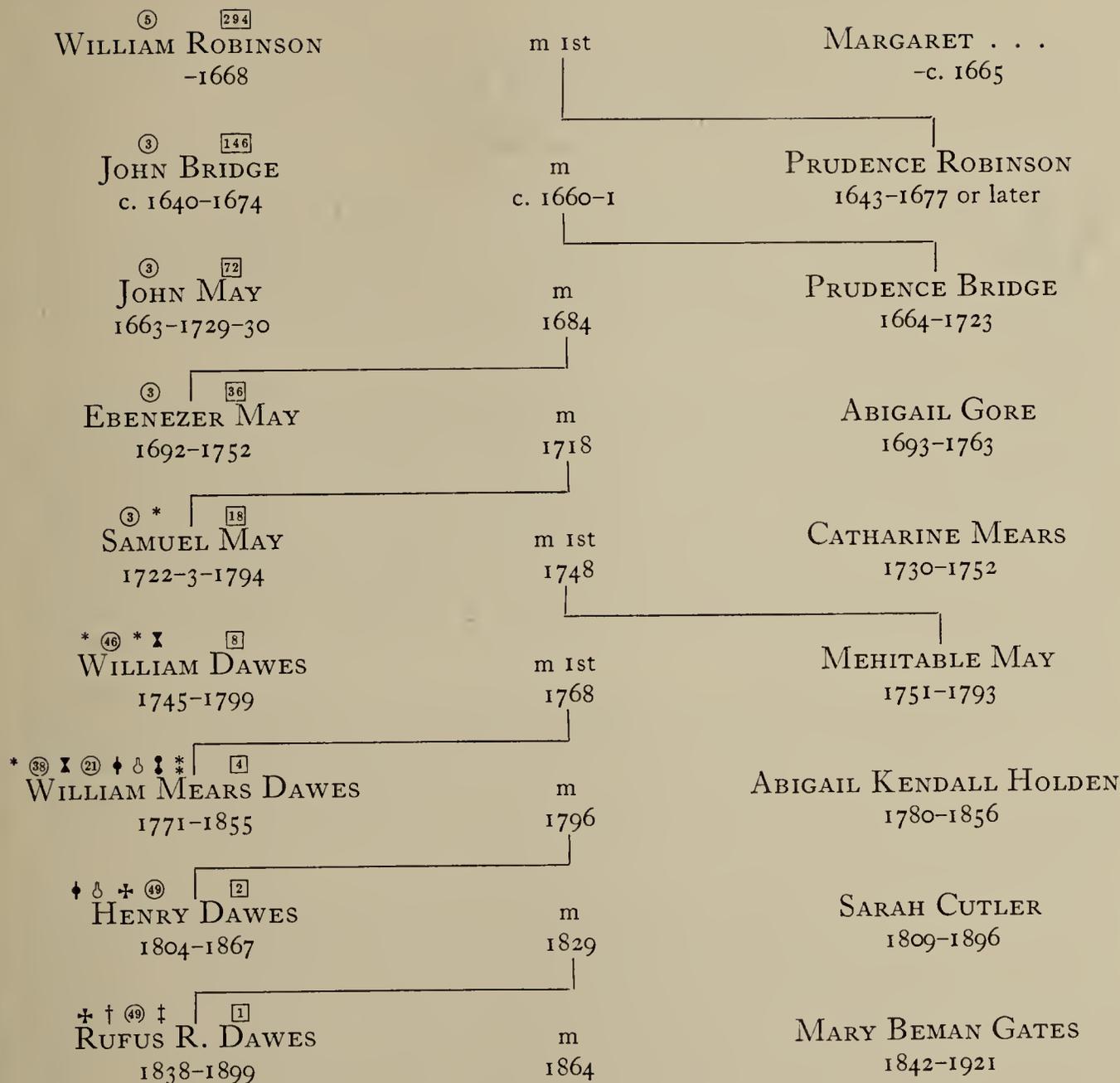
††It is recorded<sup>11</sup> that in 1876 Whittier moved to Danvers where he lived almost to the time of his death with his cousins, the three daughters of Col. Edmund Johnson.

‡The Col. Israel<sup>6</sup> Putnam who removed to Ohio in company with our EPHRAIM<sup>6</sup> CUTLER (see Cutler, p. 223) with his children was a grandson of a first cousin of our REBECCA (PUTNAM) SHEPARD, being himself the son of General Israel<sup>4</sup> (Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).

## REFERENCES

1. History of Salem, S. Perley, 1926, II, 109.
2. The Putnam Lineage, Eben Putnam, 1907, pp. 1-36, 63-73.
3. American Genealogist, XV, 8-15, English Origin of JOHN<sup>1</sup> PUTNAM by G. A. Moriarty; New England Register LXXXII, 150, 154, 162 (though see ref. 8).
4. Vital Records of Salem, II, 211-3, 216-7; IV, 229, 231-3, 300; VI, 169-70.
5. Journal of American History, 1919, XIII, 197-202.
6. Salem Witchcraft, C. W. Upham, 1867, I, 33-5, 40, 155, 157-8, 238-68, 270, 284, 287, 316-7; II, 272, 280, 356-60.
7. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 291.
8. General Armory, Sir Bernard Burke, 1884, p. 830.
9. Records of Massachusetts Bay, IV, pt. 2, 581.
10. Upham's Salem Witchcraft, I, 257-68; II, 272, 280, 356-60.
11. Dictionary of American Biography, 1936, XX, 173-5.
12. Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, C. T. Libby, 1928-39, p. 122.
13. Putnam Lineage, pp. 38-9, 74.

# ROBINSON



- ⑤ Dorchester
- ③ Roxbury
- \* Boston
- ④ Worcester
- ♣ Marlborough

- ③ Sudbury
- ② Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♡ Morgan Co., O.
- ♢ Licking Co., O.

- \* Ripon, Wis.
- \* Malta, O.
- ④ Mauston, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## ROBINSON

**W**ILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON emigrated to New England in or about<sup>1</sup> 1636 and became a member<sup>2</sup> (perhaps<sup>7</sup> in 1638) of the Dorchester Church which was organized August 23, 1636. He married\* at an unknown date, but probably in this country, MARGARET whose surname has not yet been learned.

On September 30, 1639, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, called husbandman, signed a lease<sup>1</sup> from Thomas Hawkins whereby ROBINSON acquired the use of about one hundred acres in Dorchester formerly owned by Roger Ludlow. This lease made up of seventeen different paragraphs or conditions was to run for seven years and provided, among other things, that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was to have a loan, for a year, of £10 and of twenty-five bushels of Indian corn; was to pay half of the taxes; to thatch the uncompleted house on the land, was to improve the land by ditching, fencing, plowing, etc.; was to have one-half of the crops and one-half of the increase of the eight cows, two sows and sixty-eight goats already on the land and the use of the plows and other equipment.<sup>1</sup>

WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was married by or before this time, undoubtedly to MARGARET (—)<sup>4,16</sup> for in June, 1640, his first child was baptized. He became\*\* a freeman<sup>6</sup> on May 18, 1642, in company with THOMAS<sup>1</sup> DAVENPORT and other Dorchester men. In 1643 he had the honor to become a member<sup>7</sup> of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company,† and in 1644 made a trip to England, returning the same<sup>7</sup> or the following<sup>8</sup> year.

The seven year lease entered into in 1639 would have terminated about 1646 and it has been stated that the Breck tidemill built in 1645 on Smelt Brook Creek (see map, p. 275) for grinding corn was sold to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> about 1646. Since that property<sup>11</sup> in 1664 included an adjacent small house with ten acres of land, it seems highly probable that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and his family would have occupied the said house for several years, for in March, 1651, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> paid<sup>4,8,11</sup> £150 to John Phillips who was removing to Boston, for that man's Dorchester property including a dwelling house "neere vnto Naponsett River" with all outhouses, gardens,

\*Because of an ambiguous statement in his will, or rather an evident omission of a word, it has been believed by many that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> had a previous wife Prudence (see p. 531) but careful students<sup>4,16</sup> of this family have discarded the theory.

\*\*In certain<sup>17</sup> publications WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> has been erroneously stated to have removed to Salem for a time but it was another man of the name, with different wife and children who lived at Salem. An odd coincidence is that the William "of Salem" became a freeman<sup>6</sup> on December 27, 1642, only seven months after WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> of Dorchester did so.

†A comparison of the records<sup>7</sup> of the "Honorable Artillery Company of London" with those of its counterpart the "Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts" (see Gore, p. 320) suggests an interesting possibility, namely that some man by the name of William Robinson became a member of the London organization on July 3, 1621, while our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON who emigrated about 1636 joined the Boston society<sup>7</sup> in 1643, and may have been identical with the London member of that name. Our JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE had become a member in 1638 and JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE did so<sup>7</sup> in 1644, as did various other ancestors subsequently (see Gore, p. 320).

orchards, etc., and about one hundred and thirty acres of meadow, upland, etc.<sup>11</sup> In 1656 WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> was first recorded\* as having a grant of land, probably on the right acquired from Phillips, for in 1663 the latter man, then of Boston, asked the selectmen of Dorchester to record to him the divisions drawn<sup>10</sup> by WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> ROBINSON, but delay was then advised and nothing more is heard of the matter. From 1653 onward ROBINSON rendered quite continuous public service of various sorts such as fence viewer, viewer of roads and of land,<sup>9</sup> laying out roads or land,<sup>9</sup> being a rater to lay taxes,<sup>9</sup> a supervisor of highways and constable.<sup>9</sup> In this civil service WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> was repeatedly associated<sup>9</sup> with WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> SUMNER, Lt. ROGER<sup>t</sup> CLAPP and RICHARD<sup>t</sup> LEEDS.

In addition to such regular forms of service, WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> in 1651, by the will of John<sup>t</sup> Holland of Dorchester, was made<sup>13</sup> one of four overseers; in 1652 was made one of two overseers by the will<sup>18</sup> of John Holman of Dorchester; in 1653-4 was owed £4-15-0 for a steer by the estate of John Glover of Dorchester;<sup>15</sup> in 1655-6 was one of two executors of the estate<sup>11,16</sup> of Timothy Jones; in 1659 was directed<sup>10</sup> by the selectmen to inquire how long Thomas Trott (later a respected resident of Dorchester) had been living at "Uncatle" (or Uniquity, now Milton) in the home of Nicholas White — for in those days the entertainment of non-residents without permission brought heavy fines. During the period 1659-61 he witnessed<sup>18</sup> the wills, helped to take inventories or acted as administrator for Mahalaleel Munnings, Andrew Pitcher, both of Dorchester, and of John Pears of Boston.<sup>18</sup> In 1665 and 1667 he witnessed<sup>11</sup> deeds for neighbors and in December, 1666, he served his community in an unusual manner for an Indian had died alone in a wigwam at the edge of town, from smallpox which was such a terrible scourge then. The constables arranged<sup>10</sup> with one John Smith to dig a grave within the wigwam and he, with WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> ROBINSON and an Indian called "Joseph," put the corpse in the grave which Smith then filled up.

But the month of October in 1664 was highly significant in the life of WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> for two reasons: the anxiety of the townsmen of Dorchester about the threatened loss of their colony charter (see Appendix "B," p. 694) crystalized itself into the form of a most stirring petition to the General Court to protect their priceless privileges under that document and one of the hundred and two Dorchester signers\*\* was WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> ROBINSON. In that same month he with his wife MARGARET sold<sup>11</sup> for £96 to Timothy<sup>2</sup> Tileston the "Colony Cooper" a one half interest in their mill which property eventually cost WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> his life. The deed specified the transfer of ten acres of land "with a little house thereon standing, The said Land is bounded wit<sup>h</sup> the tide Mill Creeke Eas<sup>t</sup> wit<sup>h</sup> the high way leading throug<sup>h</sup> the Great Lotts toward neponset mill West . . . also one Moyety or halfe part of a Corne Water mill, as it stands vpon the tide in the Creeke Commonly called smelt Creeke or smelt Brooke, neare a place Commonly Knowne by the name of Captaine's neck, . . . together wit<sup>h</sup> the moyety or halfe part of all those tooles vtensells impliments

\*In 1660 the sixth division of Dorchester lands was made<sup>22</sup> and in 1662 this tract was incorporated as Milton. It was frequently referred to as the "Parallel Lines" and consisted mainly of two tiers of long narrow lots running in a southeasterly direction from the Neponset River to or toward the Braintree line (see map, p. 275). Lot number twenty-one of one hundred and twenty-eight acres bounded on the north by the river was assigned<sup>22</sup> to WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> ROBINSON.

\*\*Other Dorchester men who signed this petition were THOMAS<sup>t</sup> DAVENPORT, SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP, RICHARD<sup>t</sup> LEEDS and WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> SUMNER.

that are in any wise belonging to the sajd mill . . .”<sup>\*</sup> This document<sup>11</sup> was signed by WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> in long hand and by MARGARET with her mark.<sup>8,13</sup> In view of the fact that Timothy<sup>2</sup> Tileston held the position of Colony Cooper, it seems highly probable that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> continued to operate the mill as he had done for years, which would account for his presence and accident there four years later.

The death of MARGARET, wife of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, and undoubtedly mother of his children as will be shown, occurred after October 7, 1664, when she joined him<sup>11</sup> in the sale above to Timothy<sup>2</sup> Tileston of one-half of his mill and before the second marriage<sup>12</sup> of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> to\*\* Ursula (Adams) Streeter Hosier which occurred probably about 1666 for Ursula's previous husband, Samuel Hosier, died<sup>12</sup> July 29, 1665. The married life of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> with Ursula lasted for only about two years for he died in a terrible accident on July 6, 1668. On that day he was caught in the machinery of the mill and as the ministers of Roxbury recorded<sup>14</sup> it “WILLIAM ROBINSON, a brother of the Church of Dorchester, was drawn through by ye cog-wheel of his Mill & was torn in pieces & slain.”

In 1667 the selectmen<sup>10</sup> had ordered WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON and two other men to collect one penny per acre from all of the proprietors of the Great Lots and of Captains Neck “both Vpland Meddow and pastuer and ther with to make two gates the one neere Richard Hals house and the other neere WILLIAM ROBINSONS house . . .” who in this connection owed nineteen pence himself, but more than wiped out this obligation by furnishing for the gate by his house the “yrons 3<sup>s</sup>-6<sup>d</sup> and carting 1<sup>s</sup>-6<sup>d</sup>” which balance was turned over to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> by his son Samuel<sup>2</sup> Robinson, then the constable.<sup>10</sup>

The early habit whereby each original proprietor, or his estate, received its proportionate share of the succeeding subdivisions of town lands operated normally relative to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON, over twenty-eight years after his death when, in 1696-7, a survey<sup>21</sup> of what was called the “Twelve Divisions” in the “New Grant” (now approximately Canton, see Clapp, pp. 160-1) assigned to him and to his son Samuel<sup>2</sup> lot number fifty-two consisting of three hundred and twenty-five acres adjacent to the plantation set off to the Punkapog or Christian Indians (see map, p. 159).

Only one item of alleged misconduct<sup>2</sup> is recorded of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and it was apparently either unjust criticism, exaggeration or was repented of and forgiven, for<sup>14</sup> prior to March 12, 1653-4, he had been admonished in some way by the church but had refrained from coming before that organization for a hearing. This flouting of authority would, of course, only accentuate his offence and on the above date he was excommunicated “for Laciviousnes† upon the Accusation & witnes of

\*We are told<sup>8</sup> that in 1697 Timothy<sup>2</sup> Tileston still owned one half of the mill and presumably Samuel<sup>2</sup> Robinson retained the balance as his inheritance, but it was known<sup>8</sup> for several generations as Tileston's mill — until at least 1851.

\*\*Ursula was a daughter<sup>12</sup> of Henry<sup>1</sup> Adams, having married first Stephen<sup>1</sup> Streeter of Charlestown, secondly Samuel<sup>1</sup> Hosier of Watertown and after the death of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON she married fourthly, July 15, 1673, Griffin Craft of Roxbury.<sup>12</sup>

†It should be remembered that many words bore an entirely different meaning two or three hundred years ago than they do now and the use of the word lascivious above is a definite instance of that fact. The point is proved by the pen<sup>20</sup> of Gov. John Winthrop, born 1588, who, as an adult after his emigration to New England, wrote of the years of his childhood as follows:

“In my youth I was very *lewdly* disposed; inclining unto and attempting (so far as my heart enabled me) all kinds of wickedness, except swearing and scorning religion . . . About *ten years of age*, I had some notions of God; for, in some frightening or danger, I have prayed unto God . . . After I was *twelve years old*, I began to have some more savor of religion . . . Yet I was still very *wild and disolute*; and, as years came on, my lusts grew stronger . . . About *fourteen years of age* . . .”<sup>20</sup>

Mary Atherton\* & her two daughters\*\* sister Holland† Goodwiffe (Wales)\* Weekes\* & Bates‡ & ffor his obstinacie in not heareinge [appearing as required] the church haveinge beffore admonished him.”<sup>2</sup> The facts that no husband of any one of these critical women entered into the matter, that subsequent to 1654 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was increasingly occupied with civic duties and that at his death he was called “a brother of the Church at Dorchester” argues strongly that the trouble was a tempest in a teapot.<sup>14</sup>

The will<sup>4</sup> of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> written in his own hand but without date, without the completion of its last sentence and without signature was accepted for probate because on its reverse side was written:

“Endorst — This Will of our late Deare ffather WILLIAM ROBINSON written on the other side with his owne hand which wee Acknowledge wee doe all agree & Consent to bee allowed & Recorded & made good as wittnes our hands: this: 31: July: 1668.”

This endorsement was signed by widow Ursula (by her mark), by the signatures of sons Samuel<sup>2</sup> and Increase<sup>2</sup> Robinson, and of sons-in-law JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE and Joseph<sup>2</sup> Penniman.<sup>4</sup> The estate amounted to £435-12-6 and administration on it was granted<sup>4</sup> on July 16, 1668, to Increase<sup>2</sup> Robinson, JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE and the other son-in-law. The will made bountiful provision for Ursula during her widowhood, divided the testator's Dorchester property between Samuel<sup>2</sup>, called eldest son, and Increase<sup>2</sup> after the death or marriage of Ursula. It obligated Increase<sup>2</sup> to pay to PRUDENCE BRIDGE of Roxbury and to Waiting Penniman of Braintree £20 each “in corne & Cattle” within two years of the testator's decease; gave £4 to Mary Streeter, Ursula's posthumous daughter by her first husband and gave ten shillings apiece to each grandchild then living except to two who were to have twenty shillings apiece — and there is where the confusion has arisen causing many people to believe that the testator had three wives but more likely brought about by the omission of one word and of punctuation, and by the failure to use the possessive form. The exact wording is:

“. . . Excepting my sonn Increase Eldest sonn, that bears my name, And my daughter PRUDENCE which beares my wiues name, to them two twenty shillings apiece . . .”

The belief of other writers<sup>4,16</sup> and also of the compiler, after weighing all obtainable evidence, is that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> intended it to read:

“. . . Excepting my son Increase's eldest son, who bears my name and my daughter PRUDENCE's daughter, who bears my wife's name . . .” viz., Margaret Bridge who was born in July, 1666.

The children of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and MARGARET (—) ROBINSON all born (undoubtedly) in Dorchester and certainly baptized there, were<sup>2,3,4</sup>

1. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, called “eldest son” and probably that child (leaf torn)<sup>2</sup> bap. June 14, 1640; d. at Dorchester Sept. 16, 1718; m. there abt. 1665 Mary<sup>2</sup> Baker [Richard<sup>1</sup> and Faith (Withington) of Dorchester].<sup>5,19</sup>

\*Mary (Wales) Atherton wife of Humphrey<sup>1</sup> of Dorchester.

\*\*It is claimed that her daughter Isabel married Nathaniel Wales, Jr. and her daughter Mary definitely married Joseph<sup>2</sup> Weeks (George<sup>1</sup>).

†Sister Holland may have been Judith (—) Holland widow of John of Dorchester whose will in 1651 had named WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON as an overseer.<sup>13</sup>

‡James Bates of Dorchester had a wife Alice and died 1655.

- ii. Increase<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>3</sup> Mar. 6, 14 or<sup>2</sup> 13, 1642; named in his father's will and living<sup>4</sup> in Taunton in 1668; m. Feb. 19, 1663, Sarah Penniman,<sup>4</sup> doubtless daughter of James<sup>1</sup> Penniman of Braintree.<sup>5</sup>
- iii. PRUDENCE<sup>2</sup>, bap. Dec. 17, 1643; survived her husband who d. at Roxbury on Aug. 20, 1674; m. abt. 1660-1, JOHN<sup>2</sup> BRIDGE (see Bridge, p. 116).
- iv. Waiting<sup>2</sup>, bap. Apr. 26, 1646; d.<sup>5</sup> Aug. 21, 1690; m. Sept. 25, 1666, Joseph<sup>2</sup> Penniman (James<sup>1</sup>) of Braintree.

## REFERENCES

1. Note-Book kept by Thomas Lechford, 1638-41, pub. 1885, pp. 210-4.
2. Records of the First Church at Dorchester — 1636-1734, G. H. Ellis, 1891, pp. 1-3, 152, 154, 156, 158, 163.
3. Pope's Pioneers of Massachusetts, 1900, p. 388; Savage's Dictionary, III, 554-5.
4. William and Anne Robinson of Dorchester, their Ancestors and Descendants, E. D. Harris, pp. 3-8, 42-5.
5. New England Register, XLIII, 282; Vinton Memorial, J. A. Vinton, 1858, pp. 351-2.
6. Records of Massachusetts Bay, II, 291-2.
7. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, O. A. Roberts, 1895, I, 9, 60-1, 125, 133, 145.
8. History of Dorchester, by Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society, 1859, pp. 72, 88, 102, 132-3, 176-7, 200, 207, 209.
9. Boston Record Commissioners Report, IV, 67, 85, 87, 93-6, 98-104, 108-9, 112, 117-9, 129, 132.
10. Ibid., 88, 97, 115, 137, 140, 147-8, 152.
11. Suffolk Deeds (pub.), I, 186; IV, 186; VI, 1a-1b, 144; VII, 297.
12. Henry Adams — His English Ancestry and Some of his Descendants. J. G. Bartlett, 1927, p. 78; New England Register XXXVI, 162; Streeter Genealogy, M. B. Streeter, 1896, pp. 5-6; History of Watertown, H. Bond, 1860, p. 303.
13. New England Register, IV, 287; V, 393-5, 465.
14. Ibid., XXXIV, 299; B. R. C. R. VI, 207.
15. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXIX, 432.
16. Parker — Ruggles — Ancestry & Descendants, J. W. Linzee, 1913, pp. 456-7.
17. "My Ancestors", Lyman May Paine, 1914, p. 103.
18. New England Register, V, 242, 298; X, 177, 267, 360.
19. Ibid., XVII, 279-80.
20. Life and Letters of John Winthrop, R. C. Winthrop, 1864, I, 51-2, 56-7.
21. History of Canton, D. T. V. Huntoon, 1893, p. 595 and map facing 592.
22. History of Milton, A. K. Teele, 1887, pp. 15-7.





## RUTTER

**J**OHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER, born<sup>1,6</sup> about 1615-6, emigrated<sup>1</sup> in 1638 at the age of twenty-two in the "Confidence" which sailed from London and last from Southampton, being called a "servant" of Peter<sup>1</sup> Noyes of Penton Grafton, Hampshire, England, and of Sudbury in New England. In that vessel there sailed a number of families from co. Hants, including John<sup>1</sup> Bent of Penton, whose niece ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup> PLYMPTON came over in 1639 and on November 1, 1641, became the bride<sup>7</sup> of JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER.

In the early days many emigrants offered their service for a certain period of time to some man of means in return for payment of the cost of their passage, and this probably was the case with JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER, for since he was free to marry<sup>2</sup> in 1641, three years after his arrival, he was evidently not indentured to learn a trade as many younger persons were, or held for a seven year term of service. He was a carpenter<sup>2,3</sup> by trade and settled among the earliest at Sudbury<sup>3</sup> where he was neighbor\* to HENRY<sup>1</sup> PRENTICE, PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> WHALE, JOHN<sup>1</sup> MOORE, widow DOROTHY<sup>1</sup> WRIGHT and her son EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT.

It appears that as each succeeding boat load of new-comers was poured into Boston, Watertown and the other early settlements, the proprietors realized an overcrowding would presently leave them with insufficient land for their own needs, so in the fall of 1637 several men of Watertown petitioned the General Court that there might be land to the westward purchased from the Indians, for a new settlement. In November, 1637, a committee had been appointed to set out a place "by marks and bounds" to accommodate fifty or sixty families "upon the river that runs to Concord"<sup>8,9</sup> (see map, p. 448). Fifty-four home lots of four acres each were staked out on two streets called "the north street" and the "south street" and became Sudbury. We are told that between these streets were laid out the ox pasture, general planting fields, military training field, etc. The requirement of the Court was that at least thirty families should be settled hereon within a year, or the rights of those who had settled would be voided and the tract would be opened to any applicant. These first lots were all on the east side of Sudbury River on the tract later called East Sudbury and now called Wayland, and though few Watertown men actually settled here, many colonists who arrived in 1637-8 became proprietors, including JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER, Peter<sup>1</sup> Noyes (see Plympton and Bent, p. 493) John<sup>1</sup> Bent, Walter<sup>1</sup> Haynes and the three Goodenow families, all of whom came on the "Confidence" together. As time passed, contiguous land south and west was purchased from the Indians, a tract to the west being acquired for £5 from an Indian designated variously as "Cato" and "Goodman", who had

\*Other neighbors<sup>8</sup> were his brother-in-law, Thomas<sup>1</sup> Plympton, his wife's uncle, John<sup>1</sup> Bent and John<sup>1</sup> Grout and *Thomas<sup>1</sup> Cakebread* (see Addendum to Whale, p. 663).

his home on what was long called "Wigwam Hill" and still is mapped as "Goodman's Hill" (see map, p. 448). By 1650 the settlers on the west side of the Sudbury River began to increase rapidly in numbers, building where Sudbury Center and South Sudbury now lie.

The house lot assigned<sup>3</sup> to JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER (see map, p. 448) was "on the north street" (later called East Street), a little westerly from Clay-pit Hill. In a division of lands made in probably 1640, JOHN<sup>1</sup> got three acres by "gratulation of services" performed by him which likely implied carpentering done for the town.

On November 1, 1641, JOHN<sup>1</sup> was\* married<sup>2</sup> to ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup> PLYMPTON (see Plympton and Bent, p. 497) who had followed him across the ocean in 1639 in company with her aged grandmother,<sup>7</sup> and who had probably lived intermediately in the home of her uncle, John<sup>1</sup> Bent. ELIZABETH and JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER had been neighbors and perhaps lovers in old England, and in the new world they lived together almost forty-eight years, until her death<sup>2,7</sup> at Sudbury on May 15, 1689.

In 1640, a church organization was formed in Sudbury and a minister, the Rev. Edmund Brown, was engaged. Then, on February 17, 1642, a contract was entered into between the town and JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER whereby he

"shall fell, saw, hew and frame a house for a meeting-house thirty foot long, twenty foot wide, eight foot between joints, three foot between studs: Two cross dorments [dormer windows?] in the house, six clear story windows, two with four lights apiece, and four with three lights apiece, and to intertie between the studs, which frame is to be made ready to raise the first week in May next. . . . And the town for their part do covenant to draw all the timber to place, and to help raise the house, being framed, and also to pay to the said JOHN RUTTER for the said work six pounds, that is to say, three pound to be paid in corn at three shillings a bushel, or in money, in and upon this twenty-seventh day, of this present month, and the other three pounds to be paid in money, corn and cattle to be prized by two men of the town, one to be chosen by the town and the other to be chosen by JOHN RUTTER, and to be paid at the time that the frame is by the said JOHN RUTTER finished."

JOHN<sup>1</sup> evidently fulfilled his part of the contract, for the next spring it was ordered that "every inhabitant that hath a house lot shall attend [the raising of] the new meeting house, or send a sufficient man to help raise the meeting-house", with the penalty of a fine of two shillings sixpence for default and with May 16 as the raising-day. Later the people were taxed according to the property they owned for the finishing of the house, which included a thatched roof and clap-board walls at a cost of £10, and ultimately, in 1645, a floor.<sup>3</sup>

Casual items relative to the affairs of JOHN<sup>1</sup> show that in 1644 the estate of Thomas King owed JOHN<sup>1</sup> £2 and in 1646 he was to have a "sponge of meadow," a term, now obsolete, which implied "an irregular, narrow, projecting part of a field, whether planted or in grass."<sup>3</sup> In 1651 he promised the town that he would "mend the stocks", an instrument of punishment which was used in Sudbury at least as late as 1722, for in that year the town voted "to bye to [two] pad Locks for y<sup>e</sup> pound and stocks."<sup>3</sup>

JOHN<sup>1</sup> called himself about thirty-seven years old when he testified in 1652 in a

\*One publication<sup>7</sup> claims that JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER (when he would have been about seventy-four years old) married secondly on March 12, 1690, a Hannah Bush but it seems more reasonable that John<sup>2</sup> Rutter married thus (see p. 538). If she has been identified rightly herein as Hannah (Pendleton) Bush, she was born about 1655 and would be about ten years younger<sup>20</sup> than John<sup>2</sup> Rutter.

law suit<sup>6</sup> concerning the inheritance of his wife's cousin, Richard<sup>1</sup> Barnes. In 1655 the meeting-house he had built was replaced with a larger one, and during that same year when the two-mile-grant was being apportioned among the proprietors he received lot No. 36 of one hundred and thirty acres extent<sup>3</sup> in the northwest part of the tract. Apparently he invested extensively in cattle, and was once fined heavily for letting his animals wander too far afield, for a town meeting at nearby Watertown<sup>14</sup> records on October 11, 1664, that

“Sudbury Cattell; to the number of 103, being taken in our Bounds without a keeper & brought to our towne by the hogreiffs (John grought [Grout] & JOHN RUTTER ingaged for the fine: who appeared & made their plea) the towne acordinge to order agreed thay should agree with the hogreiffes; to whome the whole fine (of 6<sup>d</sup> p head was due & so doeinge they ware discharged.”

The standing which JOHN<sup>1</sup> enjoyed in the town is suggested by the following item in the town book in 1666, “We have chosen, constituted and appointed our trusty friends, Mr. Joseph Noyes, Sargeant John Grout and Corporal JOHN RUTTER, to read, issue and determine all matters of difference ensuing about sufficiency of fence.”<sup>3</sup> A rise in his military rank appeared by an item of (probably) 1667 when as “Sergent” JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER he hired the use of the Ashen Swamp Meadow, paying four shillings six pence for the hay it produced but “he was to cut the grass by the 10th of July, or else it shall be lawful for any other man to cut the said meadow.”<sup>3</sup> The extensive lowlands along Sudbury River provided these early settlers with one of their most valuable crops, “the grass growing as high as a man's middle; some as high as a man's shoulders, so that a man may cut three loads in a day. . . .”<sup>3</sup> The settlers were not only able to feed their own stock but also fed cattle from neighboring towns.

The town in 1672 “Ordered that Mr. Peter Noyes, Mr. Joseph Noyes, Sargent JOHN RUTTER, Deacon John Haynes, Thomas Plympton and William Moore\* shall be surveyors for the clearing of the river and are invested with power to call forth men upon the said work.”<sup>11</sup> And JOHN<sup>1</sup> is said to have been serving as a selectman<sup>3,4</sup> in 1675.

Then came the dreadful days of King Philip's War<sup>12</sup> [see Upham, p. 619 and subject index, Dawes-Gates, II, 909] during which Thomas<sup>1</sup> Plympton was killed by the Indians on April 17, 1676. This was a day or two before the so-called “Sudbury Fight” in which a four-hour battle was waged on Green Hill (see map, p. 448) a little northeast of the present village of South Sudbury. Here a large body of Indians ambushed about eighty colonials who had been sent from Boston under Capt. Wadsworth to aid threatened Marlborough but found a greater menace near Sudbury. The whites fought bravely, gradually working their way up Green Hill where they held their own very well for nearly four hours, awaiting darkness which would permit them to make their way to some of the nearby garrison houses. But before dark, King Philip's men set a fire to the windward of Green Hill, which forced the colonials into hurried retreat, during which all but perhaps a score were slaughtered. History shows that from this time on, disaster attended Philip. While but two of the men killed at this battle were Sudbury residents, Philip made others of that town suffer by burning various

\*This was William<sup>2</sup> Moore (JOHN<sup>1</sup>).

buildings and looting the settlers of their possessions<sup>12</sup> for in October, 1676, a petition addressed to the General Court and signed by thirty-four townsmen of Sudbury, including JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER, sr., showed the extent of individual losses which totaled £2,707, and they asked for consideration on two points: first, a portion of the contribution sent from Ireland (for those who suffered at the hands of the Indians) and secondly a remission of the colony taxes which the town owed. In response to this plea, Sudbury was granted £7-4-0 of the Irish fund, to be delivered in meal, oatmeal, malt, butter and cheese and also had the grant of an abatement of £44-10 of their country taxes.<sup>12</sup> In the list of Sudbury losers is seen the name<sup>7</sup> of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Plympton to the amount of £130, and his life (see Plympton and Bent, p. 495), EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT, £100 and Widow WHALE, £24, as well as losses of £180 and £50 respectively for William<sup>2</sup> and Jacob<sup>2</sup> Moore, sons of our JOHN<sup>1</sup> MOORE and of £10 for John<sup>1</sup> Blandford who had married widow DOROTHY<sup>1</sup> WRIGHT.

A matter which deeply concerned every colonist was the unique advantage of their actual possession of their charter and the consequent power to rule themselves, almost as a commonwealth (see Appendix "B," p. 694): This possession and privilege was attacked repeatedly from 1633 onward until in 1684 the charter was nullified and in 1686 Sir Edmund Andros was sent as royal governor-general, to represent King James in, and to rule over, the "Dominion of New England." His régime, running from 1686 to 1689, was replete with restrictions and rulings which were most repugnant to the colonists and were frequently definitely unjust. Following the English Revolution of 1688 which dethroned King James and automatically overthrew Andros and his friends, a committee of seven leading colonists including Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>) was directed to assemble all possible evidence of misrule by Andros, for presentation in England in extenuation of the conduct of the colonists during his incumbency as well as in condemnation of Andros and his clique. A part of this evidence consisted of sworn testimony by John<sup>2</sup> Rutter, son of our JOHN, and by various ancestors of ours.

In 1688, the stock of ammunition owned by the town was distributed among the forty-three heads of families, so that it would be instantly accessible to them in case of an attack on the town, and they "agreed to respond [account] for the same in case that it be not spent in real service in the resistance of the enemy . . ."<sup>3</sup> Among these recipients were "Sargent" JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER, Lt. EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT and BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> MOORE. Most of those named received a little over four pounds of powder and thirty-three pounds of shot beside thirteen flints.

On May 15, 1689, JOHN<sup>1</sup> lost his wife<sup>2</sup> ELIZABETH and survived her only six years. The last public service found of record in his long life (in which case his military title was still accorded him) is dated January 10, 1693-4, "Granted by the town of Sudbury unto Mr. James Sherman, our minister, five acres of meddow or lowland, etc., laid out and staked by marked trees on all sides by Dea. John Haynes and Serj. JOHN RUTTER." In 1889, when Sudbury celebrated the 250th anniversary of its incorporation, Rev. Alfred S. Hudson, noted historian of the town, stated that "Walter Haynes, Peter Noyes, John Blanford, John Bent and JOHN RUTTER, representative men in the Sudbury settlement, were a type of the historic Puritan."<sup>11</sup>

The will<sup>15</sup> of JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER dated on June 6, 1694, and proved in 1695, made

bequests of land to his sons Thomas<sup>2</sup> and Joseph<sup>2</sup> and to his daughter Jane Amsden. It specified that within a year after his decease £4 was to be paid to his daughter MARY HOLDEN widow of JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup> HOLDEN of Cambridge, in good and merchantable corn or cattle at "country's price;" and within two years of his death £4 to be paid to his daughter Rebecca Lawrence of Groton. It made bequests of £2 apiece to two Lawrence grandchildren "in remembrance of their mother, my daughter Hannah deceased. . . ." The witnesses were Jacob<sup>2</sup> Moore, Peter<sup>2</sup> Moore (sons of JOHN<sup>1</sup>) and Peter Noyes, while son Joseph<sup>2</sup> Rutter was named executor.<sup>15</sup> JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER died,<sup>15</sup> doubtless at Sudbury, on May 2, 1695.

The children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH (PLYMPTON) RUTTER, born in Sudbury, but in uncertain order were<sup>2,3,4,15</sup>

- i. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. October 6, 1642; not named in her father's will.<sup>15</sup>
- ii. John<sup>2</sup>, b. February 7 or 9, 1645; d. at Sudbury, June 3, 1692; m. at Sudbury, March 12, 1690, Hannah Bush, who survived him. She was undoubtedly<sup>20</sup> Hannah<sup>s</sup> Pendleton (James<sup>2</sup>, Brian<sup>1</sup>) and widow of a John Bush. She m. again<sup>2</sup> in 1693, James Smith.
- iii. Rebecca<sup>2</sup>, b. February 28, 1647; d. at Groton,<sup>16</sup> Feb. 16, 1724, "aged about 74"; m. Nov. 25, 1677, at Cambridge,<sup>16</sup> Jonathan Lawrence.\* She was given £4 by her father's will,<sup>15</sup> wherein she was called "wife of Jonathan Lawrence of Groton."
- iv. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, b. April 5, 1650; d.<sup>2</sup> after 1703; m. October 15, 1689, Jemima<sup>2</sup> Stanhope (Jonathan<sup>1</sup>), b. June 24, 1665; d. September 28, 1748. He served in King Philip's War and as a result his son Joseph<sup>3</sup> received a grant of land in what is now Westminister, Massachusetts.<sup>5</sup>
- v. MARY<sup>2</sup>, not recorded but named first<sup>15</sup> among the daughters, in her father's will, so born by or before 1647, since she testified<sup>8</sup> April 11, 1692, that she was aged 45; d. after Nov. 12, 1716, when she conveyed to her nephew, John<sup>s</sup> Amsden of Marlborough all her right in the second division of land allotted to her father JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER, sr., deceased. She m. in 1673 as his second wife, JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup> HOLDEN (see Holden, p. 360) who was about thirty-five years her senior.<sup>8,13</sup>
- vi. Joseph<sup>2</sup>, b. May 1, 1656; executor of his father's will in 1695; was "about to start on a journey by sea" when he made his will<sup>15</sup> in Feb. 1702-3; gave £20 to his nephew Joseph<sup>2</sup> Holden "son of my sister by JUSTINIAN HOLDEN of Cambridge, deceased, husbandman;" he d. s. p. by 1703 and his brother Thomas<sup>2</sup> was executor of his estate.
- vii. Jane<sup>2</sup>, birth not recorded, but named for her maternal grandmother; she m.<sup>10</sup> in Cambridge May 17, 1677, Isaac<sup>2</sup> Amsden (Isaac<sup>1</sup>) and d. at Marlborough November 22, 1739, having had<sup>10</sup> at Cambridge children: Elizabeth in 1677, Isaac in 1680; and at Marlborough, John in 1683, Thomas in 1685, Jacob in 1689 and Abraham in 1692, thus naming her first daughter for her mother and her second son for her father, and he it was who acquired the rights of his Aunt MARY<sup>2</sup> above. Her husband Isaac<sup>2</sup> Amsden, called "Uncle," was chosen as guardian<sup>8</sup> in September, 1698, by Grace<sup>2</sup> Holden [JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup> and MARY (RUTTER)].
- viii. Hannah<sup>2</sup>, d. bef. June, 1694; m. [Nathaniel?] Lawrence\*\* and left two children Nath. . . . Lawrence and Hannah Lawrence who were bequeathed £2 apiece by the will of JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER" in remembrance of their mother, my daughter Hannah, deceased."<sup>15</sup>

\*He was probably the son of John<sup>1</sup> Lawrence of Watertown and Groton,<sup>17,18</sup>

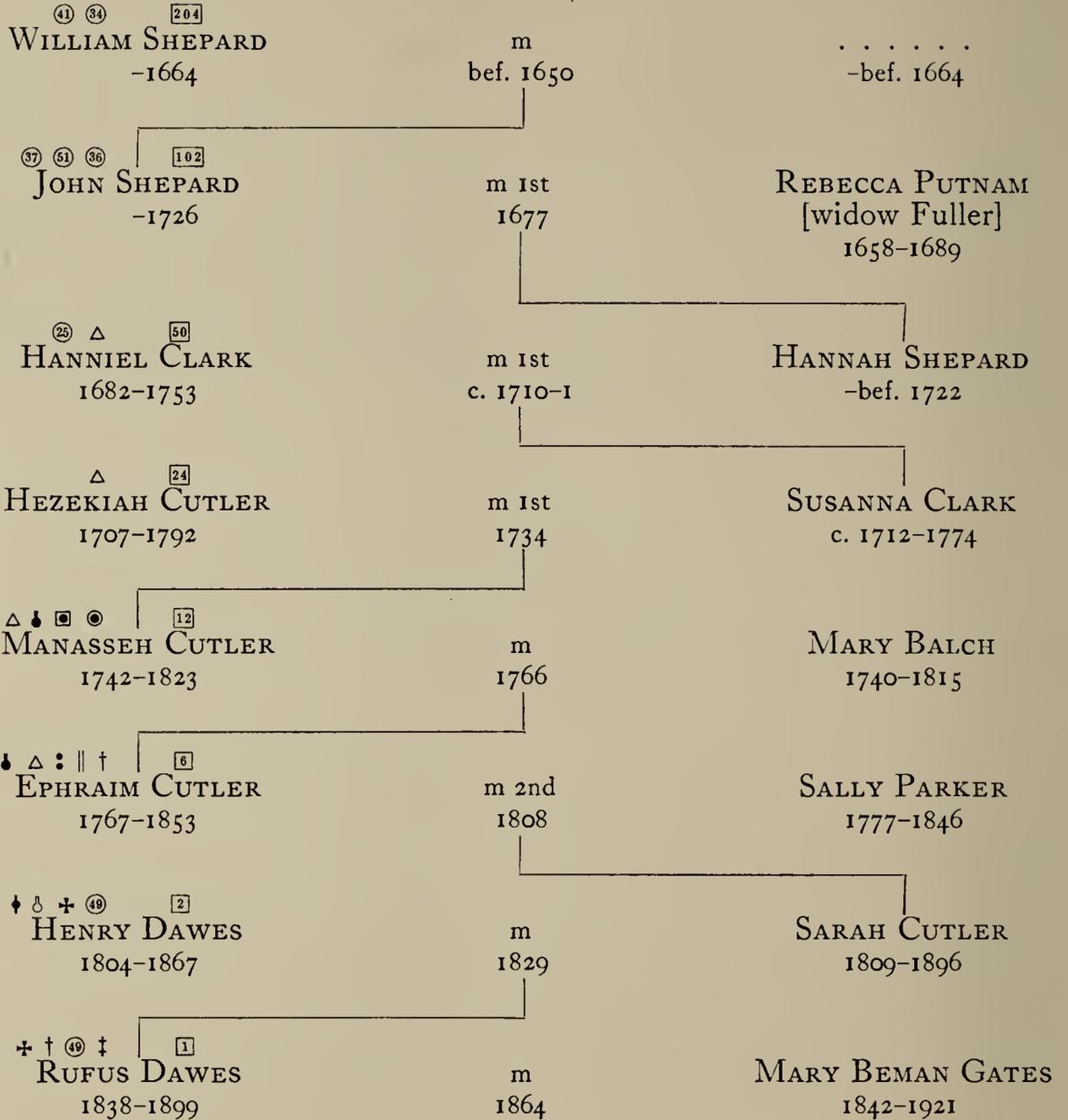
\*\*He was probably Nathaniel<sup>s</sup> Lawrence (Nathaniel<sup>s</sup>, John<sup>1</sup> of Watertown), born in 1661 and probably married about 1684.

## REFERENCES

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 195, 202; New England Register, LX, 358.</li> <li>2. Vital Records of Sudbury, pp. 128-9, 251, 264, 324; Pope's Pioneers, pp. 364, 396; Savage, III, 448, 595; New England Register, VI, 378-9; XVII, 170-1, 254; XVIII, 140-1.</li> <li>3. History of Sudbury, A. S. Hudson, 1889, pp. 25-9,</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>37, 43-4, 75-7, 82, 90, 100-1, 109, 111, 130, 134, 140, 145, 149, 178-81, 189-91, 257, 270-1; History of Middlesex Co., S. A. Drake, 1880, II, 357-8, 461-4; History of Middlesex Co., D. H. Hurd, 1890, II, 378-9, 385-6, 420; Annals of Sudbury, Wayland and Maynard, A. S. Hudson, 1891, pp. 2, 40, 43-4, 63, 65, 91, 93, 110, 126, 202, 211.</li> </ol> |
|---|--|

4. Genealogical and Personal Memoirs of the Families of Boston and Eastern Mass., W. R. Cutter, 1908, IV, 2002.
5. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 170, 172, 419.
6. New England Register, XXXII, 408-10.
7. Plympton Genealogy, L. B. Chase, 1884, pp. 57-9.
8. Holden Genealogy, Eben Putnam, 1923, I, 44, 57-9; Savage, II, 444; History of Cambridge, L. R. Paige, 1877, pp. 479, 586 with its supplement and Index by M. J. Gozzaldi, 1930, p. 655; Middlesex County, Deeds XVIII, 483.
9. Genealogical and Personal Memoirs of Middlesex Co., W. R. Cutter, 1908, I, 235.
10. Vital Records of Marlborough, pp. 10-1, 337; New England Register, XV, 21; Vital Records of Cambridge, I, 14, 20; II, 13; Howe Genealogy, D. W. & G. B. Howe, 1929, I, 10; Savage, I, 50; Paige's Cambridge, p. 479 and Gozzaldi's Index, pp. 12-3; History of Marlborough, C. Hudson, 1862, p. 308.
11. Walter Haynes Genealogy, F. & F. M. Haynes, 1929, pp. 16, 19, 27-8, 34-9, 41.
12. Hudson's Sudbury, pp. 52, 233-58; Hudson's Annals of Sudbury, Wayland, etc., pp. 125-8; New England and Register, XXXV, 218-21; Drake's Middlesex II, 362-7.
13. Early Settlers of Watertown, H. Bond, 1860, pp. 301, 794.
14. Watertown, Town Records, 1894, I, pt. 1, 83.
15. Search of Middlesex Co. by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Probate Files No. 19733, No. 19734, No. 19735.
16. Vital Records of Cambridge, II, 343; Vital Records of Groton, II, 241.
17. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, p. 607.
18. Bond's Watertown, 1860, p. 330; Lawrence Genealogies, Rev. John Lawrence, ed. of 1857, p. 14; ed. of 1869, p. 26; ed. of 1876, p. 15; ed. of 1881, p. 8.
19. New England Register, LVII, 301; Noyes Genealogy, H. E. & H. E. Noyes, 1904, II, 227-32; New England Register, XLVII, 72-3.
20. Vital Records of Sudbury, pp. 29, 179, 264; Pendleton Genealogy, E. H. Pendleton, 1910, pp. 37, 42-3, 703, 767.

# SHEPARD



- |                                    |                           |                                   |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| (41) Taunton                       | Δ Killingly, Conn.        | † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O. |
| (34) New Haven, Conn.              | ♀ Edgartown               | ♣ Thomaston, Me.                  |
| (37) Salem                         | ◻ Dedham                  | ♂ Morgan Co., O.                  |
| (36) Rowley                        | ● Hamilton                | ✚ Malta, O.                       |
| (25) Haverhill                     | ⋮ Waterford, O.           | (49) Mauston, Wis.                |
| (61) Salem Village (later Danvers) | Ames Twp., Athens Co., O. | ‡ Marietta, O.                    |

---



---

## SHEPARD

---

**W**ILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SHEPARD\* called "of Taunton" was the emigrant of that name to whom we trace, and he had evidently crossed the ocean before<sup>2</sup> 1643 for in May or June of that year his father had sent him about £72 worth of supplies in addition to what he brought with him. He was unmarried at that time but before 1650 he had acquired an unnamed wife, and the proof we find on that point is embarrassing to relate,<sup>3</sup> but "truth must be served," so, on May 7, 1650,

"WILLAM SHEPHERD, of Taunton, haueing confessed y<sup>t</sup> hee hath purloyned & stolen certaine goods from his mother in law, was sensured to returne the said goods vnto his said mother in law againe, and to bee whipt at the post; the latter of which accordingly was forthwith performed."<sup>3</sup>

WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> continued to live at Taunton and took the oath of fidelity as of that town<sup>1,3</sup> in 1657 in company with John Hathaway and Thomas Jones. Next to nothing is of record as to his life but his will<sup>4</sup> made in March, 1664, called him a shoemaker of Taunton and made his [wife's?] brother John Hathaway,\*\* his administrator.<sup>4</sup> His property had been left in the house of Thomas Jones of Taunton but WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> died at New Haven. The inventory taken February 27, 1664-5, covered household goods and many articles† "suggesting a shop."<sup>4</sup> This would argue that his wife had died before WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> — but what became of the children intermediately is not shown.

There was considerable delay in the settlement of his estate for as late as February 5, 1666, Edward Preston, attorney<sup>4</sup> on behalf of John Hathaway of Taunton, as administrator of the estate of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SHEPARD "deceased at N.....H:" presented his letter of attorney and a testimony that John Hathaway had been appointed administrator of the SHEPARD estate by the Court of "Newplimouth." It appeared from testimony of Patrick Morran and John Rose that Morran had received the estate according to the inventory (except for what was paid to Rose's

\*The will<sup>2</sup> of a JOHN<sup>b</sup> SHEPARD of Towcester, co. Northampton, England, Mercer, (son of WILLIAM<sup>a</sup> of Fossecut near Towcester) which was proved on June 6, 1646, by his widow FRANCES, referred to his eldest son WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> "now in New England" and "the goods I sent over unto him in May or June, 1643, in a shipp called the Concord . . . amounting to £72 or thereabouts . . ." It gave to son WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> a house in North Barr Street, Banbury if he should return to England, referred to the testator's father-in-law WILLIAM KINGSTON, and showed that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was not then married.<sup>2</sup> This JOHN<sup>b</sup> was a brother of the Rev. Thomas<sup>1</sup> Shepard of Cambridge who would thus have been uncle to our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>.

\*\*Hathaway is called<sup>12</sup> son of Nicholas of Braintree.

†Another suggestion<sup>12</sup> is that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was perhaps a traveling peddler or haberdasher as his properties were many of them "in a Chist that was locked,"<sup>12</sup> but included also ten "weemens" waistcoats (10 sh).<sup>12</sup> This idea suggests, too, a mitigation of the unhappy claim of theft standing against WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> for he might have earlier made gifts to his mother-in-law which presently would have made possible a sale. If he sold them intending to replace them, it might easily have been called theft. The will of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup><sup>12</sup> called John Hathaway "loving brother," asked him to "take care of all I have in Taunton or elsewhere and to dispose of the same to the best advantage of me and my children, and if I die to divide the same among my children equally except that eldest son Samuel shall have a double portion of my land."<sup>12</sup>

wife\* for "attendance on y<sup>e</sup> sd SHEPHEARD w<sup>n</sup> he was sick") and would give bond to produce it.<sup>4</sup>

No record has been found of the birthplace or dates of the children of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and his wife, but what has been learned of them, forty or fifty years later, suggests that their father's unhappy mis-step in early life had caused neither influence or repetition in the lives of his offspring who appear, consistently, as honorable and honored citizens.

An agreement between the living heirs of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SHEPARD made in June, 1705, and four deeds of 1704-5 and 1712-3 established the identity of seven of them born in unknown order as follows<sup>1,12</sup>

- i. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, "eldest son"; d. June 13, 1707; m. July 14, 1673, Mary (Page) Dow dau. of John and Mary (Marsh) Page and widow of John, having lived at Haverhill and Salisbury as well as Hampton, N. H.
- ii. Israel<sup>2</sup>, of Nansmond Co., Va. in 1705.
- iii. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- iv. Solomon<sup>2</sup>, d. at Salisbury July 7, 1731; m. there Aug. 4, 1684, Sarah (Eastman) French dau. of Roger and Sarah Eastman and widow of Joseph.
- v. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, d. prob. aft. Feb., 1732-3; m. June 15, 1675, Abraham<sup>2</sup> Brown (Henry<sup>1</sup> of Salisbury).<sup>12</sup>
- vi. William<sup>2</sup>, m. Oct. 5, 1704, Elizabeth<sup>s</sup> Brown (Abraham<sup>2</sup>, Henry<sup>1</sup>) and resided at Salisbury.<sup>12</sup>
- vii. Mehitable<sup>2</sup>, m. Peter Trobo or Trebby, lived<sup>12</sup> at Newport, R. I. in 1714, [unless the last two were grandchildren!]

JOHN<sup>2</sup> SHEPARD (*William<sup>1</sup>*) called<sup>1</sup> of Salem and Rowley, died<sup>1</sup> at the latter place June 19, 1726, (sometimes given as July 8). He married first at Salem on December 6, 1677, REBECCA (PUTNAM) Fuller widow of John Fuller (Thomas) (see Putnam, p. 525). She died\*\* at Salem September 21, 1689, aged thirty-seven and he married secondly<sup>6</sup> after 1690 but before 1698 Hannah (Green) Acie daughter of Henry and widow of John<sup>2</sup> Acie (*William<sup>1</sup>*). She died at Rowley March 30, 1718, and JOHN<sup>2</sup> SHEPARD married a third widow (int.<sup>5</sup> July 25, 1719) at Ipswich<sup>7</sup> or (int. Aug. 28, 1718) Rebecca (Bradner?) Priar who outlived JOHN<sup>2</sup> nine years.

In 1692 in Rowley JOHN<sup>2</sup> showed his mental attitude toward the witchcraft craze by helping to convey "one Mary Green of Haverhill, a prisoner charged with witchcraft, out of Ipswich Jail, for which act he was bound over to the court"<sup>5</sup> (see map of Essex County p. 209). In 1691 he was called<sup>1</sup> "of Rowley, late of Salem Village, † tailor." By a deed dated February 3, 1710-1, JOHN<sup>2</sup>, then of Rowley transferred to his children John<sup>s</sup> of Haverhill, William<sup>s</sup> of Hampton, N. H., Eleazer<sup>s</sup> of Salem and HANNAH CLARK, land which had been given him "by Capt. JOHN PUTNAM late of Salem" the maternal grandfather of these children. On this same date these four children and HANIEL CLARK (erroneously called "Daniel") husband of HANNAH, deeded to James Rose of Salem this land in Salem "given to us by our honored father JOHN SHEPARD of Rowley by deed bearing even date with this."<sup>1</sup>

The known children of JOHN<sup>2</sup> and REBECCA (PUTNAM) SHEPARD were<sup>1</sup>

\*Mrs. Rose had been<sup>13</sup> Ellen (—) Luddington, widow of William of Malden.

\*\*During the witch craft craze in 1692, and the trial of Rebecca Nurse, one Ann (Carr) Putnam wife of Thomas<sup>s</sup> Putnam (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>), who was a first cousin of our REBECCA (PUTNAM) SHEPARD, claimed that the defendant, Nurse, had admitted killing John<sup>s</sup> Fuller in 1675, first husband of REBECCA, and also of killing REBECCA herself in 1689 (see Putnam, p. 525).<sup>14</sup>

†Salem Village became Danvers.

- i. John<sup>s</sup>, b. at Salem Feb. 2, 1678; m.<sup>s</sup> at Haverhill Feb. 15, 1704-5, Hannah Ayer.  
 ii. William<sup>s</sup>.  
 iii. Eleazer<sup>s</sup>, living 1711;<sup>1</sup> prob. d. unm.  
 iv. HANNAH<sup>s</sup>, m.<sup>1</sup> by Feb. 3, 1710-1, HANNIEL<sup>s</sup> CLARK (see Clark, p. 182).  
 v. Elizabeth<sup>s</sup>, b. abt. 1688; d.<sup>1</sup> at Salem<sup>9</sup> "at Capt. PUTMAN's, Jan. 14, 1690-1, ae. 3."

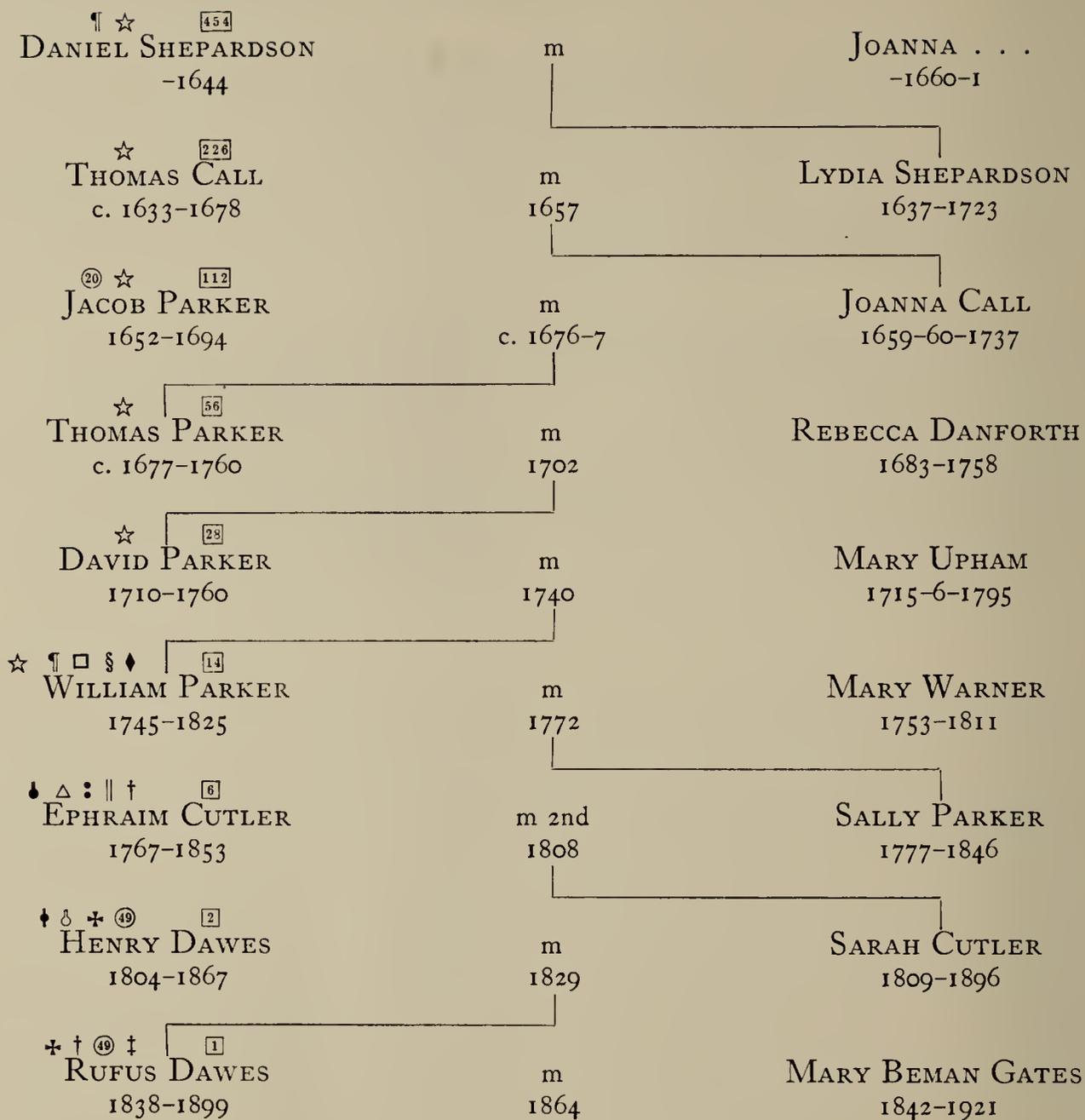
The child of JOHN<sup>2</sup> and Hannah (Green) SHEPARD was<sup>1,10</sup>

- vi. Jonathan<sup>s</sup>, b.<sup>1</sup> May 12, 1698; d. at Haverhill<sup>8</sup> Sept. 12, 1770, ae. 73; m. 1st at Rowley<sup>10</sup> Feb. 5, 1722-3, Mehitable Tenney (Thomas); m. 2nd May 30, 1733, Ruth Johnson; m. 3rd at Andover<sup>11</sup> Sept. 11, 1744, Joanna Barker.

## REFERENCES

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <p>1. Essex Institute Historical Collections, LXIV, 236-40.<br/>         2. History of William Shepard of Fossecut, Northamptonshire, Eng., G. L. Shepard, 1886, pp. 58-60.<br/>         3. Plymouth Colony Records, II, 149; VIII, 187.<br/>         4. Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 412; Ancient Record Series of New Haven, Historical Society, II, 195.<br/>         5. Early Settlers of Rowley, G. B. Blodgett and A. E. Jewett, 1933, pp. 342-3.<br/>         6. Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, C. T. Libby, 1928-39, p. 286.</p> | <p>7. Vital Records of Ipswich, II, 389.<br/>         8. Vital Records of Haverhill, II, 284-5, 470.<br/>         9. Vital Records of Salem, II, 279; IV, 300; VI, 220.<br/>         10. Vital Records of Rowley, pp. 194, 395.<br/>         11. Vital Records of Andover, II, 301.<br/>         12. Ancestry of K. C. Paul, E. J. Paul, 1914, pp. 82-3, 243-8; Old Families of Salisbury and Amesbury, D. W. Hoyt, 1897-9, I, 73-4.<br/>         13. New England Register, LVIII, 72-3.<br/>         14. Salem Witchcraft, C. W. Upham, 1867, II, 356-60.</p> |
|--|--|

# SHEPARDSON



† Charlestown  
 ☆ Malden  
<sup>20</sup> Chelmsford  
 □ Newburyport  
 § Allegheny Co., Pa.  
 ◆ Meigs Co., O.

♣ Edgartown  
 △ Killingly, Conn.  
 ∴ Waterford, O.  
 ∥ Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.  
 † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

† Thomaston, Me.  
 ♂ Morgan Co., O.  
 ✦ Malta, O.  
<sup>49</sup> Mauston, Wis.  
 † Marietta, O.

---



---

## SHEPARDSON

---

**D**ANIEL<sup>1</sup> SHEPARDSON\* who was recorded<sup>1,2</sup> as a resident of Charlestown in 1632 joined the church there on June 8, 1633, and carried on the trade of blacksmithing, than which none was more useful or necessary in that day. He was comfortably supplied with land, possessing seven different tracts in Charlestown<sup>2</sup> in 1638, and in April of that year receiving thirty acres in "Mysticke side". DANIEL<sup>1</sup> is said to have resided<sup>2</sup> at Mystic which later became Malden, and by 1640 some of the Charlestown people had settled there,<sup>11</sup> but at his death he was still called of Charlestown.<sup>3</sup>

One of the tracts which he owned was adjacent to Winter Pond in what was (in 1638) called the Waterfield but which ultimately was divided between Woburn and Winchester.<sup>13</sup> Here his neighbor owners<sup>13</sup> included THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL, and among others who had grants there but did not live on them were JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD, Seth<sup>1</sup> Sweetser\*\* and two sons of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CARTER.†

DANIEL married, at an unknown date, JOANNA (—) who survived him, and who complicated relationships very considerably by marrying secondly as his second wife, our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL, while two of her Shepardson children married a son and a daughter of that man.

DANIEL<sup>1</sup> SHEPARDSON, calling himself of Charlestown, blacksmith, signed his will on July 16, 1644, and died ten days later, on the 26th. It includes<sup>3</sup> these phrases:

"I comit my body to the ground to be buried in the usuall buring place. . . . estate to my wife as long as she liveth; after my wifes decease, my house w<sup>th</sup> garden, three acres of ground in the neck, with my armes & tooles to my sonne daniel, whom I would have brought up in the trade of a smyth . . . the rest of my estate after my wifes decease to be divided between my two daughters LIDIA & Johanna, — wife sole executrix — m<sup>r</sup> Nowell, bro. Heborne\* & bro. Cutler‡ my overseers, 16. 5. 1644.

in presence of  
Increase Nowell  
THOMAS CARTER  
Rice Coles

the marke of  
DANIELL SHEOPARDSON

\*There is a tradition<sup>7</sup> that DANIEL<sup>1</sup> came to America about 1628-9, settling first at Salem and that he was accompanied by a brother John who was soon killed by having a spade thrown at him during a dispute,<sup>7</sup> but no verification of these claims has been seen. A further tradition asserts that one day as DANIEL<sup>1</sup> was working at his forge, a stone fell and crumbled into powder. Believing this to be a sign or omen, he gave to his wife the nails he had been making, instead of selling them. His remark, "They will come in handy some day", was made to come true at his death when they were used to make his coffin.<sup>7</sup>

\*\*See Hayward, page 356.

†In September, 1639, THOMAS CARTER, blacksmith, also of Charlestown, formulated a petition to the General Court (see Carter, p. 143) in behalf of all the blacksmiths within the colony in an endeavor to accomplish a modification in the cost of coal which had been rising rapidly. If his petition proved successful it would have aided DANIEL<sup>1</sup> in his business. A close acquaintance between these men is suggested by the fact that THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CARTER was one of the witnesses<sup>1</sup> five years later to the will of DANIEL<sup>1</sup>.

‡These men were "brothers" in the church, being George Hepburn and Robert Cutler.<sup>2</sup>

If his wife & 3 children dyed hee gave mee, Incr: Nowell his howse, house plot, at the same time before the same witnessess."

For some unknown reason, the inventory of his estate was apparently not taken until May, 1647, about three years after his death, when a total valuation of about £50 was shown,<sup>4</sup> and at that same time the following order of division was recorded:<sup>1,5</sup>

1647  
26 May  
SHEP<sup>R</sup>DSON      "Upon psentm<sup>t</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> will & inventory of DANIELL SHEPARDSON, it is ord<sup>r</sup>ed y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> land should go according to the fathers will to y<sup>e</sup> sonne, or recompense according to value of 21<sup>1</sup> 10 sh<sup>s</sup>; & because y<sup>e</sup> moth<sup>r</sup> hath bene at great charge in educating y<sup>e</sup> sonne three yeares, & is still to be, she should be alowed y<sup>e</sup> tooles, & bellowes, & armes for y<sup>t</sup>; & y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> daught<sup>rs</sup> shall have of what their fath<sup>r</sup> hath given them onely to y<sup>e</sup> value of nyne pounds each of them for their part."<sup>5</sup>

In 1654 as "widow JOANNA SHEPARDSON" she sold<sup>2</sup> land which had belonged to DANIEL<sup>1</sup> in spite of the fact that before October 28, 1651, she had married secondly, as his second wife, our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL. Presumably the use of her former name seemed justified since it was SHEPARDSON land which she then transferred. In October, 1651, thirty-six wives and mothers of Malden, including "JOANNA CALL" had signed a petition<sup>14</sup> to the General Court in favor of the continued service of their minister Rev. Marmaduke Matthews (see Call, p. 136). JOANNA died<sup>8</sup> at Malden on January 30, 1660-1.

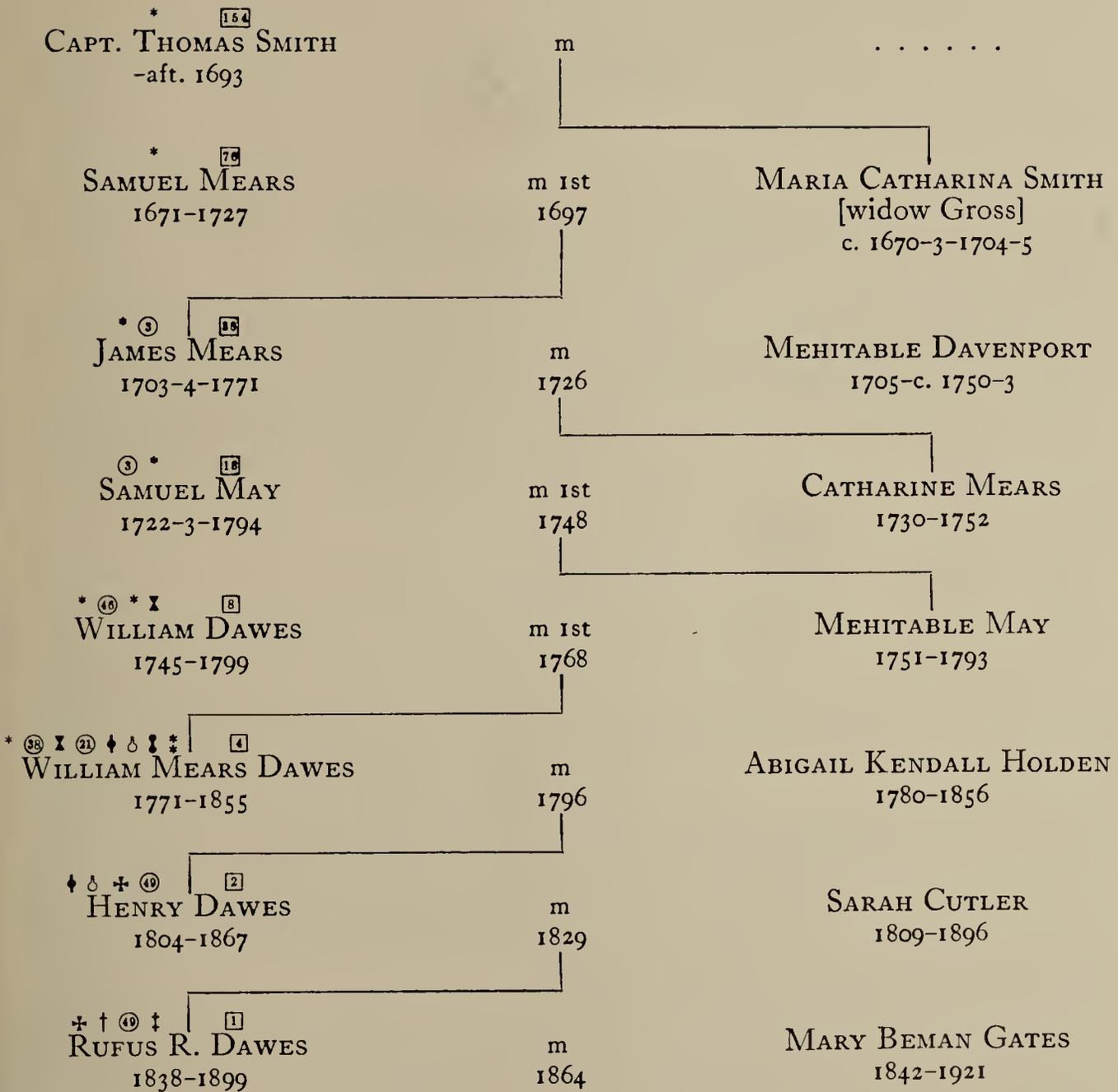
The children of DANIEL<sup>1</sup> and JOANNA (—) SHEPARDSON, born and baptized at Charlestown, were<sup>1,2</sup>

- i. LYDIA<sup>2</sup>, bap. July 24, 1637, on her father's membership; d. December 17, 1723, aged about 87, at Malden;<sup>8</sup> m. first there<sup>8</sup> July 22, 1657, THOMAS<sup>2</sup> CALL (see Call, p. 138); m. secondly after<sup>8</sup> 1678, as his second wife,<sup>11</sup> Thomas<sup>1</sup> Skinner whom she outlived twenty years.<sup>8</sup>
- ii. Daniel<sup>2</sup>, bap. June 14, 1640; perhaps d.<sup>7</sup> March 11, 1691, or d. at Attleborough<sup>10</sup> as "ye aged" August 3, 1723; m. April 11, 1667, at Malden<sup>6,8</sup> Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Call (THOMAS<sup>1</sup>) who was the widow of Samuel<sup>2</sup> Tingley (Palmer<sup>1</sup>).<sup>9</sup>
- iii. Joanna<sup>2</sup>, bap. March 13, 1642; d. after<sup>12</sup> October, 1669; m. November, 1661, at Malden<sup>8</sup> Roger<sup>1</sup> Kennicut; probably removed to Swansea.

## REFERENCES

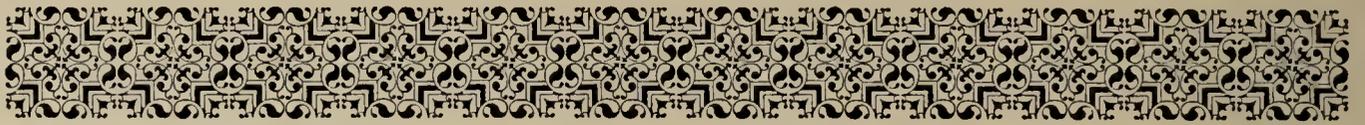
- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Savage I, 330, IV, 77; Pope's Pioneers, p. 412.</li> <li>2. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, Mass., T. B. Wyman, 1879, pp. 166-7, 861-2, 869; History of the First Church of Charlestown, W. I. Budington, 1845, p. 247; History of Malden, Mass., D. P. Corey, 1899, p. 66-8.</li> <li>3. New England Register, VII, 32-3.</li> <li>4. Ibid., XXX, 81.</li> <li>5. Records of Massachusetts Bay, II, 194.</li> <li>6. New England Register, X, 239.</li> <li>7. Old Northwest Genealogical Quarterly, IX, 59-60; History of Royalston, Mass., Lilley B. Caswell, 1917, p. 215.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>8. Vital Records of Malden, Mass., pp. 293, 335.</li> <li>9. Some Ancestral Lines . . . of . . . Guilford Solon Tingley, R. M. Tingley, 1935, pp. 63-5, 378.</li> <li>10. Vital Records of Attleborough, Mass., p. 716.</li> <li>11. History of Charlestown, Mass., R. Frothingham, 1845, p. 120; History of Malden, Mass., D. P. Corey, 1889, pp. 65-6, 70, 435; Bullard and Allied Families, E. J. Bullard, 1930, p. 246.</li> <li>12. Cutter's Worcester County, Mass., Genealogical and Personal Memoirs, 1907, I, 231.</li> <li>13. The Winchester, Mass., Record, II, frontispiece, pp. 12, 15; New England Register, XLVIII, 56-9.</li> <li>14. Corey's Malden, pp. 145-6.</li> </ol> |
|---|---|

# SMITH



- \* Boston
- ③ Roxbury
- ④⑥ Worcester
- X Marlborough
- ③⑧ Sudbury
- ②① Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.

- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ♀ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- † Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- † Marietta, O.



## SMITH

CAPTAIN THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SMITH is our “man of mystery” for neither the place nor date of his birth, place nor date of his death, place nor date of his marriage, nor the name of his wife is known.

A statement made<sup>1</sup> by John Haven<sup>7</sup> Dexter (see chart, p. 550) about 1850 in his compilation on the Dexter Family (which incorporates this SMITH ancestry) reads as follows relative to his great-grandmother\* Catharine (Mears) Dexter:

“Her maternal grandfather was Captain THOMAS SMITH, a mariner — a portrait of whom by himself, may be seen in the hall of the American Antiquarian Society in Worcester; — the portrait of his wife being also there, we believe,\*\* and that of his daughter MARIA CATHARINA, mother of Mrs. Dexter is in possession† of Misses Catharine and Rebecca Clapp, Dorchester.” The notation<sup>1</sup> also calls Capt. SMITH “a great navigator.”

Mr. John Haven<sup>7</sup> Dexter quoted no authority for his statement relative to these portraits which were ancestral to him, as well as to us, but he was sixteen years old before his father died and that father, John<sup>6</sup> Dexter was thirty-nine years old when Catharine (Mears) Dexter, his grandmother, died so it was actual family knowledge to him and may have seemed to have required no referencing. We are told that<sup>3</sup> “the self portrait and presumably that of SMITH’s wife, which has since disappeared, were not owned by the American Antiquarian Society but were the personal property of its librarian Samuel Foster Haven” (great grandson of Catharine (Mears) Dexter named above). The self portrait is now (1940) owned by Edmund B. Hilliard, grand nephew of the librarian S. F. Haven mentioned above and is loaned by him to the American Antiquarian Society from whom a reproduction has been purchased<sup>14</sup> for this volume (see facing plate xxix). The portrait was also on loan<sup>4</sup> in 1939 during the New York World’s Fair, to the Metropolitan Museum of Art in New York City.

So while we *suppose* that Capt. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> lived in Boston, where his daughter married, lived and died, there has been found no evidence of ownership of land, payment of taxes or any other record of him than the material and remaining evidence of the two portraits,<sup>3</sup> his own and his daughter’s (as will be told) to prove that he ever lived.

Students‡ of art<sup>3</sup> have surmised that certain other early portraits may have come

\*This woman was a granddaughter of Capt. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SMITH through our SAMUEL<sup>9</sup> and MARIA CATHARINA (SMITH) MEARS (see Mears, p. 431).

\*\*If the wife’s portrait was at the Antiquarian Society then, it is not now. Nothing is known of its whereabouts.

†Vide p. 431 and chart p. 550.

‡Critical analyses of many early American portraits, have been made<sup>3,13</sup> by experts using X-Ray, Infra-Red, Shadow-graphs, etc. to expose the brush work. The consensus of opinion is that the so-called<sup>8</sup> “self portrait” as well as the one of MARIA (and perhaps several others) were painted by Capt. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SMITH called<sup>3</sup> mariner and navigator.

from his brush. They have believed the portrayal of a naval battle incorporated in his portrait, recorded an action in which Capt. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> himself took part. The victorious vessel<sup>3</sup> flies the British flag, but identification of the sinking vessel has not yet been made. It may have been a pirate or have been using an unknown flag as a disguise. As will be noted, Capt. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SMITH was a well educated man. His painted script is excellent — far above the average of that day. He was a philosophical person as his brief poem proves. He had interesting initiative as his blending of his initials into a monogram shows and his clothing and surroundings bespeak wealth. The coloring of the self portrait is described thus:<sup>3</sup> The subject is

“seated in a red upholstered chair studded with brass-headed nails; . . . gray hair, parted in center . . . blue eyes; dark brown coat, neckcloth with wide border of lace; dark red curtain with red tassel in upper right hand corner of the canvas; in left corner rectangular view of a naval combat, vessels surrounded by rolling clouds of smoke, one bearing at the stern a red flag cantoned with a red cross on a white field and at the mast-head a white and blue pennant, another having at both stern and mast head a flag with three stripes, red, white and blue, horizontally arranged, the red at the top, the white in the center, in the foreground fortifications flying a plain red flag and a red flag with three white crescents; table covered with red cloth in lower left corner on which rests a human skull and a piece of paper inscribed as follows:

‘Why why should I the World be minding  
therein a World of Evils Finding.  
Then Farwell World: Farwell thy Jarres  
thy Joies thy Toies thy Wiles thy Warrs  
Truth Sounds Retreat: I am not sorye.  
The Eternall Drawes to him my heart  
By Faith (which can thy Force Subvert)  
To Crowne me (after Grace) with Glory.  
T. S.’”

This portrait was in very bad condition until 1934 when it was restored and relined by David Rosen.<sup>3</sup> It is twenty-four and three-quarters inches high by twenty-three and three-quarters inches wide.

As for the portrait which Capt. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SMITH painted of his daughter (see facing plate xxx)<sup>14</sup> supposedly<sup>5</sup> about 1690-3 we are told that it portrays her as having dark brown hair, dark brown eyes and eyebrows; a red-brown dress with full sleeve slashed to show a white undersleeve . . . oval gold brooch, pear-shaped silver earring; red-brown background. . . .

The identification of this portrait of MARIA CATHARINA (SMITH) MEARS depends partly upon the word of John Haven<sup>7</sup> Dexter (vide supra) plus the tracing of its ownership from the Misses Catharine<sup>6</sup> and Rebecca<sup>6</sup> Clapp to the present time, and therewith comes to light some odd and interesting circumstances (see chart, p. 550).<sup>12</sup> For one thing, three children of Rev. Samuel<sup>4</sup> and Catharine (Mears) Dexter, five of their grandchildren, etc. became involved in a genealogical tangle viz.: (1) Ebenezer<sup>5</sup> Dexter (1729-1769) became grandfather of Jason Haven<sup>7</sup> Dexter (the man who started the Dexter Genealogy and *told of the three portraits*); (2) Catharine<sup>5</sup> Dexter (1737-1814) married Rev. Jason<sup>4</sup> Haven in whose home at Dedham her mother Catharine (Mears) Dexter died, undoubtedly leaving the self portrait there for her grandson, the librarian who presently owned it (see chart, p. 550); (3) Rebecca<sup>5</sup> Dexter (1739-1823) married as his second wife Lemuel<sup>6</sup> Clapp (see Clapp, p. 550); (4) two of Lemuel<sup>6</sup> Clapp's daughters owned the portrait of

MARIA CATHARINA<sup>2</sup>, etc. Lemuel<sup>5</sup> was descended<sup>2</sup> from our ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP and also from that man's brother-in-law and first cousin, Nicholas<sup>1</sup> Clapp. Another thing that makes Lemuel<sup>5</sup> Clapp notable to us is that in 1767 he purchased the property at 25 Willow Court in Dorchester (see map, p. 275) on which ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP had built his first home in 1633. In 1769 Lemuel<sup>5</sup> enlarged and improved the house and now in 1941 the structure incorporating that original 1633 home is still standing (see Clapp, p. 172 and plates XIII, p. 157). By his will of 1819 Lemuel<sup>5</sup> gave to his youngest daughters Catharine<sup>6</sup> and Rebecca<sup>6</sup> (see chart, p. 173) this old family home while they remained unmarried. Neither of them ever married and Catharine<sup>6</sup> lived until 1872 and in this home (which in part ante-dated the portrait of MARIA CATHARINA SMITH itself by sixty years) that portrait was treasured. After the death of the last aged sister the portrait passed<sup>3</sup> to her niece Catharine<sup>7</sup> Clapp who became the second wife of Deacon Henry<sup>7</sup> Humphries in 1851. From her, in turn, it descended to her nephew and step-son Rev. Charles Alfred<sup>8</sup> Humphries and then to his daughter Catharine Clapp<sup>9</sup> Humphries who became the wife of Edmund D. Barry of Evanston and Chicago. So this portrait of MARIA, ancestral not only to its owner but also to the Dawes brothers and sisters, four of whom lived in Evanston, was treasured in their home town without their knowledge, or the knowledge of its owner that they would have any interest in it. After the death of Mrs. Barry, her husband sent it in 1934 to the American Antiquarian Society at Worcester as a gift.

The only known\* child of Capt. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SMITH, navigator, and his unknown wife was

- I. MARIA CATHARINA<sup>2</sup>, born probably about 1670-3; died at Boston after Feb. 1703-4, and before Sept., 1706, when her husband married again.<sup>10</sup> She married there, first, probably about\*\* 1692-3 William<sup>3</sup> Gross (Clement<sup>2</sup>, Isaac<sup>1</sup>) who was born March 3, 1665, and died before June 16, 1694, when administration<sup>7</sup> on his estate was granted to his widow MARIA CATHARINA. On October 11, 1694, she presented an inventory<sup>7</sup> of his estate amounting to £50. She was m. 2ndly at Boston<sup>3,10</sup> as his first wife on Dec. 7, 1697, by the Rev. Cotton Mather to SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> MEARS (see Mears, p. 431).

\*There is recorded a probably erroneous claim<sup>9</sup> in a highly respected compilation, the Thwing Index, to the effect that our MARIA CATHARINA was a sister of one Thomas Smith "mariner" (who married Rebecca<sup>3</sup> Glover (Habackuk<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>) he being there called<sup>9</sup> son of an older Thomas Smith. No authority is quoted therein and the fact that the recorded older child of Thomas and Rebecca (Glover) Smith is almost contemporary with MARIA herself causes one to fear that the Thomas Smiths have gotten mixed. The marriage of that Thomas Smith "mariner" occurred about 1672 and definitely before<sup>11</sup> February 19, 1673.

\*\*Her first marriage occurred before<sup>6</sup> March 19, 1693, for on that date as MARIA KATHARINA Groce she joined the Second (Old North) Church.

## REFERENCES

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Dexter Genealogy, O. P. Dexter, arranged by H. L. Mills, 1904, pp. 3, 5, 36-44, 58-65.</li> <li>2. Clapp Family in America, E. Clapp, 1876, pp. 11, 212, 224-5, 256.</li> <li>3. XVIIth Century Painting in New England. A Catalogue of an Exhibition Held at the Worcester Art Museum in Collaboration with the American Antiquarian Society July and August, 1934, Louisa Dresser, 1935, pp. 133-40, 172-3. This includes X-Ray Examination, Analysis and Shadowgraph by Alan Burroughs, pp. 165-77.</li> <li>4. "Life," issue of June 19, 1939, p. 26.</li> <li>5. Portraits of the Founders, C. K. Bolton, 1919, I, 3; Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXV, 80-1.</li> <li>6. History of the Second (Old North) Church, C. Robbins, 1852, p. 251.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>7. Suffolk Probates, XIII, 436, 492.</li> <li>8. Every Day Life in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, G. F. Dow, 1935, facing p. 80.</li> <li>9. Research by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass. of Suffolk County Records, with especial reference to the Thwing Index at the Massachusetts Historical Society.</li> <li>10. Boston Record Commissioners Report, IX, 236; XXVIII, 13.</li> <li>11. Ibid., IX, 139; Suffolk Deeds, VIII, 322-4; IX, 206-7; X, 225-7; Glover Memorials and Genealogies . . . , Anna Glover, 1867, pp. 104-7.</li> <li>12. Dexter Genealogy, pp. 60-5; Clapp Family in America, E. Clapp, 1876, pp. 256-9, 271-7.</li> <li>13. Limners and Likenesses, Alan Burroughs, 1936, pp. 12-6, 24; figure No. 10.</li> <li>14. Courtesy of Mr. Clarence S. Brigham of the American Antiquarian Society.</li> </ol> |
|---|--|

Rebecca<sup>5</sup> Dexter m 1768 Capt. Lemuel<sup>5</sup> Clapp: (See Clapp, pp. 172-4 and Chart p. 173).  
 (1739-1823) as his 2nd wife (1735-1819)

Richard<sup>6</sup> Clapp  
 (1780-1861)

m Mary Blake  
 (1784-1875)

□ Catharine<sup>6</sup> Clapp §  
 (1782-1872)

d. unm. at 25 Willow Court

□ Rebecca<sup>6</sup> Clapp  
 (1784-1855)

d. unm. at 25 Willow Court

Clapp m 1830 Dea. Henry<sup>7</sup> Humphries  
 (1850) as 1st wife

□ Catharine<sup>7</sup> Clapp m 1851 Dea. Henry<sup>7</sup> Humphries  
 (1815- ) as 2nd wife (1801- )

Alfred Humphries m  
 (1838- )

Kate J. Mattoon

Dexter Humphries m  
 (1843- )

Maria L. Davis

Ann Humphries ||  
 (1846- )

Catharine C. Humphries m  
 (1873- )

Edmund D. Barry

Walter Humphries ||  
 (1874- )

(Sent to Gen. Charles G. Dawes a pincushion made from wedding dress and traveling dress of Catharina (Mears) Dexter her great great grandmother).

(Owned portrait of our MARIA now given to American Antiquarian Society)

(Told of ownership of portrait and also of persistent spelling of Catharina)

—72 the portrait of MARIA (SMITH) MEARS was owned by Rebecca<sup>6</sup> Clapp at 25 Willow Court, in the ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP genealogy, p. 157) and after their successive owners were the persons marked by □.

Persons marked by □ are recorded as successive owners of the portrait of CATHARINA (SMITH) MEARS.

•Capt. Lemuel<sup>6</sup> Clapp received his surname by descent from Nicholas<sup>1</sup> Clapp but was descended also from a granddaughter of that man's cousin, our ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP. His life and experience and the lives of his descendants furnish most interesting items (see Clapp, pp. 172-4).

||Ann<sup>8</sup> Humphries (1846- ) in her later life made a gift to Gen. C. G. Dawes of a pin-cushion made from pieces of the wedding dress and traveling dress of her ancestress Catharine (Mears) Dexter.

|||Walter<sup>9</sup> Humphries furnished us with the information of the persistent use of the letter "a" in the spelling of Catharina or Catharine even to the present day in many lines.

MARIA CATHARINA<sup>2</sup>, etc. Lemuel<sup>5</sup> was descended<sup>2</sup> from our ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP and also from that man's brother-in-law and first cousin, Nicholas<sup>1</sup> Clapp. Another thing that makes Lemuel<sup>5</sup> Clapp notable to us is that in 1767 he purchased the property at 25 Willow Court in Dorchester (see map, p. 275) on which ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP had built his first home in 1633. In 1769 Lemuel<sup>5</sup> enlarged and improved the house and now in 1941 the structure incorporating that original 1633 home is still standing (see Clapp, p. 172 and plates XIII, p. 157). By his will of 1819 Lemuel<sup>5</sup> gave to his youngest daughters Catharine<sup>6</sup> and Rebecca<sup>6</sup> (see chart, p. 173) this old family home while they remained unmarried. Neither of them ever married and Catharine<sup>6</sup> lived until 1872 and in this home (which in part ante-dated the portrait of MARIA CATHARINA SMITH itself by sixty years) that portrait was treasured. After the death of the last aged sister the portrait passed<sup>3</sup> to her niece Catharine<sup>7</sup> Clapp who became the second wife of Deacon Henry<sup>7</sup> Humphries in 1851. From her, in turn, it descended to her nephew and step-son Rev. Charles Alfred<sup>8</sup> Humphries and then to his daughter Catharine Clapp<sup>9</sup> Humphries who became the wife of Edmund D. Barry of Evanston and Chicago. So this portrait of MARIA, ancestral not only to its owner but also to the Dawes brothers and sisters, four of whom lived in Evanston, was treasured in their home town without their knowledge, or the knowledge of its owner that they would have any interest in it. After the death of Mrs. Barry, her husband sent it in 1934 to the American Antiquarian Society at Worcester as a gift.

The only known\* child of Capt. THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SMITH, navigator, and his unknown wife was

1. MARIA CATHARINA<sup>2</sup>, born probably about 1670-3; died at Boston after Feb. 1703-4, and before Sept., 1706, when her husband married again.<sup>10</sup> She married there, first, probably about\*\* 1692-3 William<sup>3</sup> Gross (Clement<sup>2</sup>, Isaac<sup>1</sup>) who was born March 3, 1665, and died before June 16, 1694, when administration<sup>7</sup> on his estate was granted to his widow MARIA CATHARINA. On October 11, 1694, she presented an inventory<sup>7</sup> of his estate amounting to £50. She was m. 2ndly at Boston<sup>3,10</sup> as his first wife on Dec. 7, 1697, by the Rev. Cotton Mather to SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> MEARS (see Mears, p. 431).

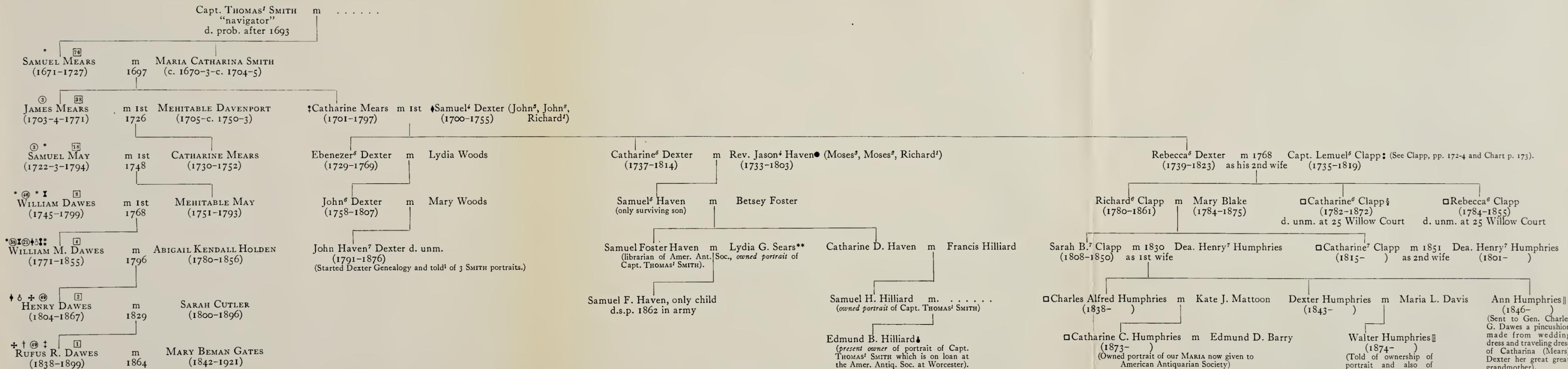
\*There is recorded a probably erroneous claim<sup>9</sup> in a highly respected compilation, the Thwing Index, to the effect that our MARIA CATHARINA was a sister of one Thomas Smith "mariner" (who married Rebecca<sup>9</sup> Glover (Habackuk<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>) he being there called<sup>9</sup> son of an older Thomas Smith. No authority is quoted therein and the fact that the recorded older child of Thomas and Rebecca (Glover) Smith is almost contemporary with MARIA herself causes one to fear that the Thomas Smiths have gotten mixed. The marriage of that Thomas Smith "mariner" occurred about 1672 and definitely before<sup>11</sup> February 19, 1673.

\*\*Her first marriage occurred before<sup>6</sup> March 19, 1693, for on that date as MARIA KATHARINA Groce she joined the Second (Old North) Church.

## REFERENCES

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Dexter Genealogy, O. P. Dexter, arranged by H. L. Mills, 1904, pp. 3, 5, 36-44, 58-65.</li> <li>2. Clapp Family in America, E. Clapp, 1876, pp. 11, 212, 224-5, 256.</li> <li>3. XVIIth Century Painting in New England. A Catalogue of an Exhibition Held at the Worcester Art Museum in Collaboration with the American Antiquarian Society July and August, 1934, Louisa Dresser, 1935, pp. 133-40, 172-3. This includes X-Ray Examination, Analysis and Shadowgraph by Alan Burroughs, pp. 165-77.</li> <li>4. "Life," issue of June 19, 1939, p. 26.</li> <li>5. Portraits of the Founders, C. K. Bolton, 1919, I, 3; Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXV, 80-1.</li> <li>6. History of the Second (Old North) Church, C. Robbins, 1852, p. 251.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>7. Suffolk Probates, XIII, 436, 492.</li> <li>8. Every Day Life in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, G. F. Dow, 1935, facing p. 80.</li> <li>9. Research by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass. of Suffolk County Records, with especial reference to the Thwing Index at the Massachusetts Historical Society.</li> <li>10. Boston Record Commissioners Report, IX, 236; XXVIII, 13.</li> <li>11. Ibid., IX, 139; Suffolk Deeds, VIII, 322-4; IX, 206-7; X, 225-7; Glover Memorials and Genealogies . . . , Anna Glover, 1867, pp. 104-7.</li> <li>12. Dexter Genealogy, pp. 60-5; Clapp Family in America, E. Clapp, 1876, pp. 256-9, 271-7.</li> <li>13. Limners and Likenesses, Alan Burroughs, 1936, pp. 12-6, 24; figure No. 10.</li> <li>14. Courtesy of Mr. Clarence S. Brigham of the American Antiquarian Society.</li> </ol> |
|---|--|

# SMITH RELATIONSHIPS



- \* Boston
- ③ Roxbury
- ④ Worcester
- ⑤ Marlborough
- ⑥ Sudbury
- ⑦ Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ♂ Licking Co., O.
- ♂ Ripon, Wis.
- ♂ Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♂ Marietta, O.
- ♂ Mauston, Wis.
- ♂ Malta, O.

† Catharine<sup>6</sup> Mears, widow of Rev. Samuel<sup>4</sup> Dexter (of Dedham) m. 2ndly in 1756 Samuel Barnard of Salem and after his death in 1762 she lived at Dedham with daughter Catharine (Dexter) Haven. The Rev. Samuel<sup>4</sup> Dexter (1700-1755) H. C. 1720 was ordained in 1724 as the fourth minister of the first church at Dedham. He served until his death in 1755. His term of service at the first church overlapped that of our THOMAS<sup>4</sup> BALCH at South Dedham (now Norwood) from 1736 until 1755.

♂ John<sup>4</sup> Dexter, brother of Samuel<sup>4</sup> Dexter, above, (1705-1790) of Malden m. 3rdly Mar. 1747-8 Joanna (Parker) Lynde, daughter of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and REBECCA (DANFORTH) PARKER.

\*\*The first recorded owner of the self-portrait was Mrs. Haven's grandson, Samuel Foster Haven, librarian of the American Antiquarian Society. Since his only child d.s.p. in the army in 1862, its ownership passed to the Librarian's nephew.

♂ At the ordination of Rev. Jason<sup>4</sup> Haven at Dedham in 1756, the "right hand of fellowship" was given by our Rev. THOMAS<sup>4</sup> BALCH (see Balch, p. 81).

♂ It is believed that the possession of the self-portrait of Capt. THOMAS' SMITH rested in the home of Catharine (Dexter) Haven, his great granddaughter above, where her mother died. Rev. Jason<sup>4</sup> Haven (1733-1803) H. C. 1754, son-in-law of Rev. Samuel<sup>4</sup> Dexter, succeeded him in 1756 serving until 1803 and thus overlapped our Rev. THOMAS<sup>4</sup> BALCH (1711-1774) H. C. 1733 who was pastor at South Dedham (now Norwood) from 1736 until his death in 1774. Rev. Jason<sup>4</sup> Haven also overlapped in period of service our Rev. MANASSEH<sup>4</sup> CUTLER (1742-1823) who studied theology at South Dedham under his father-in-law THOMAS<sup>4</sup> BALCH, 1769-1771, and served Ipswich Hamlet (Hamilton) from 1771 until 1823, being frequently associated in ministerial matters with the Rev. Haven.

§ About 1850-72 the portrait of MARIA CATHARINA (SMITH) MEARS was owned by Catharine<sup>6</sup> and Rebecca<sup>6</sup> Clapp at 25 Willow Court, Dorchester, in the ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP house (see plate xiii, p. 157) and after their death its successive owners were the persons marked by the sign □.

Those persons marked by □ are recorded as having been successive owners of the portrait of MARIA CATHARINA (SMITH) MEARS.

♂ Capt. Lemuel<sup>6</sup> Clapp received his surname by descent from Nicholas<sup>1</sup> Clapp but was descended also from a granddaughter of that man's cousin, our ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP. His life and experience and the lives of his descendants furnish most interesting items (see Clapp, pp. 172-4).

|| Ann<sup>6</sup> Humphries (1846- ) in her later life made a gift to Gen. C. G. Dawes of a pin-cushion made from pieces of the wedding dress and traveling dress of her ancestress Catharine (Mears) Dexter.

|| Walter<sup>6</sup> Humphries furnished us with the information of the persistent use of the letter "a" in the spelling of Catharina or Catharine even to the present day in many lines.







## SNOW

**R**ICHARD<sup>1</sup> SNOW\* was an early resident of Woburn, though not one of the group who signed the "Town Orders" in December, 1640. But before September 8, 1645, he had brought to the town his wife AVIS,\*\* as well as their two older sons, JOHN<sup>2</sup> and James<sup>2</sup>, for on that date he was included in the list of those who were taxed there, in a "rate for the country" (colony tax) which was that town's earliest extant tax list.<sup>2</sup> He received land from the town<sup>2</sup> in 1647-8 — perhaps also earlier. His home lay to the west<sup>4</sup> of the homestead of Joseph<sup>2</sup> Carter (THOMAS<sup>1</sup>).

There is no slightest hint of a derogatory nature found relative to RICHARD<sup>1</sup> or to his family, but on the other hand there is almost nothing of any sort recorded of his life. He evidently took no part in official or public life; no proof is seen of church membership or of the acquirement of freemanship — indeed the vital records even fail to show his death — yet indirect proof is found that he was neither an irreligious nor a careless man, and by careful attention much information about his character may be deduced. As to his religious views, it must be recounted that the General Court had ruled<sup>5</sup> that when a town lacked a pastor they must not allow preaching by a lay brother without going through the procedure of getting the opinion and approval of the elders of four nearby churches, or the permission of the County Court. This was especially hampering to sparsely settled communities; and in the earliest days of Woburn itself, they tried for about two years before they got their pastor, the Rev. Thomas Carter, who was so well liked. But the Woburn men felt, as to the principle of the matter, that in any given town the church organization which had examined and accepted its own members was in a better position to judge of their qualifications than any outsiders would be. So, though the inhibition did not pertain to these men of Woburn since they already had a pastor, they had the courage of their convictions to a sufficient extent to prepare, impersonally, a very lengthy petition to the General Court, couched in the most deferential terms, but explaining how their opinions differed from the decision of the court. Twenty-nine Woburn men† signed<sup>5</sup> that petition on August

\*As to the origin of this family in England, nothing has been proved, but suggestion has been made<sup>3</sup> that possibly a man named Richard Snow who was born<sup>1</sup> in the parish of Barnstaple in co. Devon, England, in 1608, may have been he; and possibly one of this name, aged twenty-eight who on November 20, 1635, received "license to go beyond the seas" along with two hundred and five other men, embarking on the "Expedition" for the Barbadoes,<sup>1</sup> may have been our ancestor. It is well known that frequently emigrants who sailed for the Barbadoes presently continued their journey to New England, and it is a fact that on the "Expedition" there sailed also one William Greene, and that our own RICHARD<sup>1</sup> SNOW and our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> GREENE both appeared early at Woburn and that members of their families intermarried. These fellow voyagers may have been our ancestors.

\*\*This name has frequently, but erroneously, been printed as "Annis".

†"Others who signed<sup>5</sup> were FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL, JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD, and the three Parker brothers Abraham<sup>1</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>, and John<sup>1</sup>, brothers of our JACOB<sup>1</sup>.

30, 1653, and RICHARD<sup>1</sup> SNOW was one of them. It required real moral fibre, and a courage of high degree to put one's name to what amounted to a formal criticism of the highest court in the land, for principle's sake alone, and RICHARD<sup>1</sup> possessed those qualities. Incidentally, this petition for a rescinding of the earlier ruling was not granted,<sup>5</sup> but the document itself has been referred to ever since as the "Woburn Memorial for Christian Liberty" and its signers are called "the bold petitioners."<sup>5</sup>

In the next place, as early as 1642, the very year Woburn was incorporated, the General Court, with careful concern for the religious education of the children and youths of the colony, had passed a law<sup>16</sup> "that all masters of families do once a week (at the least) catechise their children and servants in the grounds and principles of religion", adding that if they are unable to teach thus themselves, the said masters should procure instruction by some one else, so that the young people might be able to answer the questions on the catechism when they were examined by the selectmen or others.<sup>16</sup> This same requirement obtained down through the years. Add to this obligatory religious instruction, the courageous independence of the petition referred to above and the fact that at his death RICHARD<sup>1</sup> SNOW owned two Bibles "and other sermon books"<sup>3</sup> and the trend of his character seems fairly well established. He was undoubtedly hard working and thrifty for when one of the original settlers, George<sup>1</sup> Farley, was removing to Billerica, RICHARD<sup>1</sup> on November 19, 1656, was able to buy that man's home and twenty acres of land. This purchase seems to have included Farley's right to the undivided town land for in a distribution of common lands and timber made as late as 1668, RICHARD<sup>1</sup> received a share,<sup>2</sup> though, as has been stated, he was not an original proprietor. He must have been either ailing or injured in his later life for in 1659 he was dismissed or relieved<sup>6</sup> from ordinary trainings\* "in consideration of his insufficiency to bear arms". So we have the picture of a man of unusual moral courage, of careful attention to military duty, until unknown circumstances prevented, of thoughtful provision for his wife and family as will be shown by his will, with an estate of over £188 at death and with the record of having reared four sons who lived useful, honorable lives. The three older sons married and reared families while his youngest son Zachariah<sup>2</sup> died without issue, either a bachelor or a widower, for his estate was divided among his brothers, nephews and nieces.<sup>3</sup> This Zachariah<sup>2</sup> was one of the thirteen Woburn men<sup>7</sup> in Capt. Davenport's Company, with JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER, at the Great Swamp Fight (see Carter, p. 149), was wounded there<sup>15</sup> and endured that dreadful all-night march back to Wickford (see Upham, p. 627) either staggering wearily through the storm or carried by his comrades — according to the location and severity of his wound. Many years later when land grants were being made to survivors or their heirs, a reminder of this service is seen in the fact that a claim was made by the husband of a granddaughter of James<sup>3</sup> Snow, nephew of him who served,<sup>7</sup> and land in Narragansett Township No. 6, later Templeton, Massachusetts, was granted on the record of Zachariah<sup>2</sup>.

RICHARD<sup>1</sup> SNOW died at Woburn<sup>3</sup> on or before May 5, 1677, having made his

\*"Until 1686 military service in the colony was required<sup>15</sup> of all able bodied men from the age of sixteen upward." "Men of sixty were always found drilling in the ranks and men of seventy-six and even older were active in the ordinary trainings." In England it had been the practice to enlist men in the train band at sixteen and to dismiss them at sixty, and in 1689 that plan came into effect in the colony. The officers often served much later in life.<sup>15</sup>

will<sup>3</sup> on January 30, 1676. It was witnessed by Francis Wyman, Allen<sup>1</sup> Converse and his son Zachariah<sup>2</sup> Converse and was probated on June 19, 1677. It made the widow Avis\* and son Zachariah<sup>2</sup> the executors. It gave to JOHN<sup>2</sup> SNOW "one parcell of land that his house now standeth one and one parcell of meddow that he hath now in possession". It gave land to the three other sons and added:

"I do require that my sons equally do pay to my beloved wife twenty bushells of corne [grain] yearly as followeth; five bushells of wheat and five of ry; and five bushells of barley; and five bushells of Indian corne: and the keeping of two cowes summer and winter yearly: and foure cords of wood yearly . . .".<sup>3</sup>

The inventory of the estate of RICHARD<sup>1</sup> taken May 5, 1677, showed a valuation<sup>8</sup> of over £188.

The children of RICHARD<sup>1</sup> and AVIS (—) SNOW, the last three born at Woburn, were<sup>2,3,6</sup>

- i. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- ii. James<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1642; d. not later than 1711, prob. at Lancaster; m. by 1670-1, and had six children; removed 1704 to Lancaster.
- iii. Daniel<sup>2</sup>, b. Feb. 4, 1645; d. July 18, 1646.
- iv. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, b. May 28, 1647; d. at Woburn Nov. 28, 1717; m. 1st by 1669 Sarah Wilson [John and Hannah (James?)]<sup>21</sup> who d. June 15, 1686; m. 2nd Aug. 9, 1686, Sarah Parker called daughter of John and Joanna Parker of Cambridge.
- v. Zachariah<sup>2</sup>, b. Mar. 29, 1649; d. at Woburn Apr. 14, 1711.

JOHN<sup>2</sup> SNOW (*Richard<sup>1</sup>*) was born about 1640 at an unknown place and spent his life from early childhood until his death,<sup>2,6</sup> on November 25, 1706, in Woburn.<sup>6</sup> He married there by 1667 MARY<sup>2</sup> GREENE (see Greene, p. 335) and in 1671 had occasion to sign a receipt to her uncle Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER for her share of her father's estate.<sup>4</sup> He had received during his father's life, and doubtless at the time of his marriage, land to live upon and meadow and this property was confirmed to him by his father's will<sup>3</sup> in January, 1676. He, in common with his three brothers, was bound to provide food and fuel for their mother. Search in published material has revealed no details of the life of JOHN<sup>2</sup>. He, as well as his father, was evidently one of the pioneers who performed their daily work so unobtrusively that it attracted no comment, did not stand out noticeably, yet such men were the back bone of the colony. So the only way we can approximate an understanding of the conditions he faced is through study of the history of Woburn during the period of his life, with the addition of a few incidents.

Apparently the purveying of sensational tales, regardless of authenticity, is not exclusively a modern fault for about 1660 it was reported<sup>17</sup> in England

"That 18 Turksmen of war [on] the 24 of Jan'y 1659-60 landed at a town [referring to Charlestown, mother of Woburn] three miles from Boston, killed 40, took Mr. Sims minister prisoner, wounded him, killed his wife and three of his little children, carried him away with 57 more, burnt the Town, carried them to Argier [Algiers?] their loss amounting to 12,000 pound — the Turk demanding 8,000 pound ransom to be paid within seven months".<sup>17</sup>

The only discrepancies<sup>18</sup> in the above tale are that Turkish men of war did not raid or burn Charlestown, the Rev. Symmes and others were not kidnapped or

\*Neither the date of the death of widow Avis nor her identity have been found.

held for ransom, none of his family were killed and his children were all adult by 1659-60 instead of being "little".<sup>18</sup> When Josselyn visited the colony and reported this wild English tale to the pioneers it must have created a sensation!

The tragic losses by fire in those days, when every necessity cost such a burden of effort, seem most appallingly heavy, and to our modern minds the methods of fighting fire seem needlessly crude. In this connection, we find a ruling of 1661 which would have had its bearing on every one of our Woburn families, for it was "Ordered that Thomas Brigden, sr., deliver the town buckets to any person . . . upon notice of fire within the town; provided the said Brigden takes care for bringing them to the Meeting House again. And is to be satisfied for his pains and care therein".<sup>17</sup> A home could have burned down while Brigden was searched for or awakened and the church visited.

In October, 1667, twenty-five citizens of Woburn petitioned the General Court "May it please this honorable court to vouchsafe some help to our town of Woburn in dividing a lump of this wilderness earth";<sup>17</sup> and "The selectmen mette the 5. day of Octob. 1674, and agreed on the 15 day of this instant mo. to goe throo the Towne, and ecsamin the familys about Catichising".<sup>16</sup>

RICHARD<sup>1</sup> SNOW would have experienced the earlier anxieties over the threatened loss of their charter (see Appendix "B", p. 694) and JOHN<sup>2</sup> would have felt the injustice of Andros' regime in the greatly increased taxes, the threatened loss of their lands and other strictures.

About 1686 a farmer of Woburn was called to account for his wife's extravagance in dress. He answered, "That he thought it no sin for his wife to wear a silk hood and silk neck [neckerchief?]; and he desired to see an example before him!"<sup>15,17</sup> probably meaning that if it was to be considered a sin, he desired proof of the claim.

Kindly treatment of the aged or infirm is frequently seen in the Woburn records, in the remitting of taxes, in the restoration of land forfeited for non-payment of taxes, or in actual furnishing of food and clothing in cases of need.<sup>16</sup>

Of the seven children of JOHN<sup>2</sup> SNOW, at least four married and reared families of well behaved children. Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> died in young manhood; Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> was probably crippled or ailing for he received his small share of his father's property in money<sup>19</sup> rather than in land which the other sons shared. At the age of fifty-one, Mary<sup>3</sup> was still unmarried;<sup>3</sup> the life of Timothy<sup>3</sup> was spent in Woburn, where he served the military company<sup>15</sup> as sergeant from 1716 until 1737; HANNAH<sup>3</sup> with her husband had removed<sup>14</sup> about 1715 to Killingly, Connecticut, (where some of her Snow relatives later followed her)<sup>15</sup> and the two older sons removed to New Hampshire, John<sup>3</sup>, who became an ensign, settling permanently in what is now Hudson in that state and becoming one of the most useful men of the town until his death in 1735. Zerubbabel<sup>3</sup> evidently lived for a time near Concord, New Hampshire,<sup>20</sup> but apparently returned to Woburn before his death.<sup>6</sup> An interesting tale<sup>20</sup> is told of an experience of his which gave its name to Snow Pond in Concord Township, east of the Merrimack River. Zerubbabel<sup>3</sup> was out hunting and was treed by a pack of wolves just at night. "He fired away at them all the balls he had, and then cut off buttons from his coat and discharged them; but the wolves kept round the tree till broad daylight next morning, when they went off and he escaped," and the nearby pond was given his name.

JOHN<sup>2</sup> SNOW died intestate in November, 1706, and on April 12, 1707, his widow

and children signed<sup>19</sup> an agreement as to the disposition of his property. At his death his estate owed £16 to his eldest son John<sup>3</sup> and £12 to Timothy<sup>3</sup> as though they might have helped to maintain the family. JOHN<sup>3</sup> CUTLER signed the agreement in behalf of his wife HANNAH<sup>3</sup>. By this document, the widow MARY was to use for life all the household stuff and one-third part of the other movables, housing and lands; John<sup>3</sup> was to retain the home and over twenty acres already in his hands on condition that he pay £12 to Timothy<sup>3</sup> and £3 to his sister, HANNAH CUTLER. In view of their payment of certain amounts to the other heirs, Zerubbabel<sup>3</sup> and Timothy<sup>3</sup> were to divide between them, the remainder of the housing and lands, including the widow's third after her death.<sup>19</sup> The description of land includes reference to the Hungry-plain field.

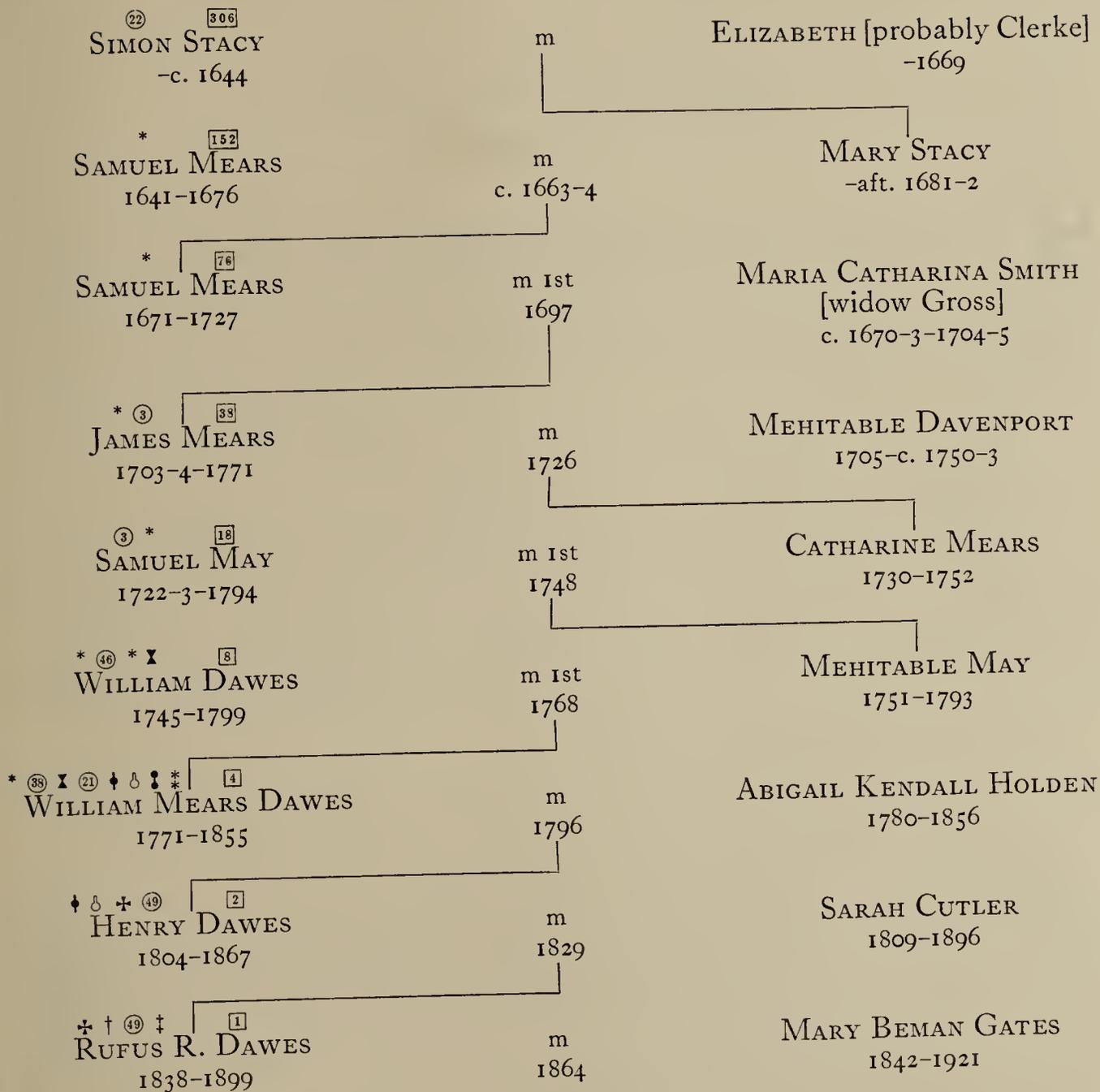
The children of JOHN<sup>2</sup> and MARY (GREENE) SNOW all born in Woburn were<sup>2,3,6,19,22</sup>

- i. John<sup>3</sup>, b. May 13, 1668; rec'd. share of est.<sup>3</sup> of uncle Zachariah<sup>2</sup>; d. at Hudson, N. H.<sup>9</sup> Mar. 21, 1735, called 68-4-3; m. at Chelmsford Feb. 13, 1693-4, Sarah Stevens [John and Elizabeth (Hildreth)], sister of the man his cousin, Sarah<sup>5</sup> (Samuel<sup>2</sup>) married.
- ii. Zerubbabel<sup>3</sup>, b. May 14, 1672; with Samuel<sup>2</sup> Snow he was administrator of estate of Zachariah<sup>2</sup>; d. at Woburn Nov. 20, 1733; m. there Sept. 22, 1697, Jemima<sup>2</sup> Cutler (JAMES<sup>1</sup>).<sup>10,11</sup>
- iii. Timothy<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 16, 1674-5; rec'd. share of est.<sup>3</sup> of uncle Zachariah<sup>2</sup>; d. at Woburn Mar. 4, 1747-8, aged 73-4; m. there Jan. 16, 1705-6, Lydia<sup>4</sup> Pierce (Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>12</sup>
- iv. HANNAH<sup>3</sup>, b. June 6, 1677; she rec'd a share of est. of uncle<sup>3</sup> Zachariah<sup>2</sup>; d. at an unknown date; m. Feb. 6, 1700-1, at Woburn<sup>3,6,10,11,13</sup> JOHN<sup>3</sup> CUTLER (see Cutler, p. 201). It was probably<sup>14</sup> she who m. 2ndly at Killingly Nov. 2, 1736, Deacon Eleazer Bateman.
- v. Mary<sup>3</sup>, b. Aug. 4, 1680; unmarried in 1711 when she shared in the estate<sup>3</sup> of her uncle Zachariah<sup>2</sup>.
- vi. Ebenezer<sup>3</sup>, b. Oct. 6, 1682; d. Feb. 11, 1704, prob. unm.
- vii. Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, b. Nov. 17, 1684; shared in the estate<sup>3</sup> of his uncle Zachariah<sup>2</sup> in 1711.

## REFERENCES

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. New England Register, XIV, 358; Hotten's Emigrants, p. 141; Barnstaple [co. Devon, Eng.] Parish Register, Thos. Wainwright 1903, part 1, p. 50.</li> <li>2. Savage, IV, 138-9; History of Woburn, S. Sewall, 1868, pp. 113, 115-9, 640-1.</li> <li>3. Manuscript Genealogy of the RICHARD SNOW Family compiled by G. B. Snow, Long Beach, Calif., deposited at Newberry Library, Chicago, pp. 3-17.</li> <li>4. Woburn Historical Sites, W. R. Cutter, 1892, pp. 22-3, 37.</li> <li>5. History of Middlesex Co., Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1890, I, 347-8; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, I, 38-45.</li> <li>6. Vital Records of Woburn, Mass., I, 243; II, 180, pt. 2, pp. 29, 38; III, 259-60.</li> <li>7. History of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 170-2, 434-6; Mss. Snow Genealogy; Hurd's Middlesex Co., I, 383, Sewall's Woburn, pp. 113, 115-8.</li> <li>8. Mss. Snow Genealogy, pp. 7-8.</li> <li>9. Vital Records of Chelmsford, Mass., p. 318; History of Hudson, New Hampshire, K. Webster, 1913, pp. 126-7.</li> <li>10. Cutler Genealogy, N. S. Cutler, 1889, p. 21.</li> <li>11. History of Lexington, C. Hudson, 1913, II, 142-3.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>12. Pierce Genealogy, F. C. Pierce, 1882, p. 28.</li> <li>13. History of Woodstock, Conn., C. W. Bowen, 1932, IV, 195.</li> <li>14. Ibid., II, 258; Hudson's Lexington, II, 143; Putnam's Monthly Historical Magazine, 1895, III, 296.</li> <li>15. Hurd's Middlesex, I, 350, 377, 383, 387-8.</li> <li>16. Sewall's Woburn, pp. 49, 59-60, 66-8.</li> <li>17. History of Charlestown, R. Frothingham, 1845, pp. 112-3, 210.</li> <li>18. Savage, IV, 243-4; Pope's Pioneers, p. 444; Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, G. B. Wyman, 1879, p. 927.</li> <li>19. Search of Middlesex Co., Mass., Records by E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Probate File No. 20820, Vol. XI, 190.</li> <li>20. History of Concord, N. H., J. O. Lyford, 1896, I, 138, 143-4; History of Concord, N. H., N. Bouton, 1856, pp. 68, 78, 124, 139, 543; Concord, N. H. Town Records, 1894, App. p. 543; History of Merrimack and Belknap Counties, N. H., D. H. Hurd, 1885, pp. 57, 61-2.</li> <li>21. Genealogical Bulletin, 1903-4, I, 171; Hartwell Genealogy, L. W. Densmore, 1895, p. 35.</li> <li>22. Snow-Estes Ancestry, N. E. Snow, comp. by M. M. Jillson, 1939, I, 1-6, 49.</li> </ol> |
|--|--|

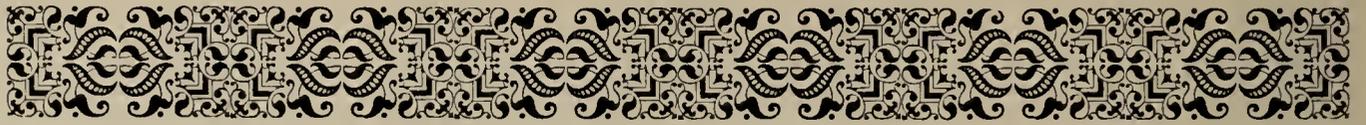
# STACY



- ②② Ipswich
- \* Boston
- ③ Roxbury
- ④⑥ Worcester
- ✕ Marlborough

- ③⑧ Sudbury
- ②① Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- ♂ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ♂ Licking Co., O.

- \* Ripon, Wis.
- \* Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## STACY (*Stace*)\*

**S**IMON<sup>1</sup> STACY,\*\* a resident of Ipswich, must have reached New England with his family as early as 1637 for on March 2, 1637-8, too early for vessels to have arrived that year, as "Goodman STACE", he was assigned<sup>1,3</sup> the use of the house lot adjoining that of our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> WARNER. Considering that at least eight other men on that same day acquired house lots by grant it would be interesting to know why an assignment rather than a grant was made to SIMON<sup>1</sup>. On August 30, 1638, he received a grant of six acres of planting ground<sup>3</sup> between John<sup>1</sup> Whipple and Henry Archer. In 1639-40 he had the right to pasture one cow on the town's common land<sup>3</sup> and in 1641 was called<sup>2</sup> a "commoner", having a proportionate right to the town's undivided lands.

SIMON<sup>1</sup> died about 1644 for on February 27, 1644-5, William<sup>1</sup> Adams, Sr., (whose son William<sup>2</sup> Adams had married Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Stacy) was granted twelve acres of land "near to the Land of the Widdow STACYE".<sup>3</sup> On February 22, 1649, the "Widow STACE was granted one half of a parcel of meadow lying by Mr. Saltonstall's farm."<sup>2</sup> But there have been found no details of the life of SIMON<sup>1</sup>, no will, nor exact date of his death. Indeed, no documentary evidence is seen to link unto him a wife and family. But evidence "beyond a reasonable doubt" acquired by

\*Other variants found include Stacey, Stasie, Stacie, Stacye, etc.

\*\*Assuming that SIMON<sup>1</sup> had removed to New England about 1637 when he was first recorded at Ipswich, it is apparent from the early marriages of four of his children that they must have been born in England. If that be true, the following English record<sup>7,23</sup> may likely pertain to SIMON<sup>1</sup>:

"Simon Stace of Bocking, co. Essex, clothier and Elizabeth Clerke of Theydon Garnon (sic), said county, spinster, daughter of Stephen Clerke, of same, yeoman, [were licensed to marry] at Theydon Mount, co. Essex, 6, Nov. 1620."<sup>7</sup>  
(See map, p. 712.)

Incidentally, the facts that his wife was ELIZABETH and that his daughter MARY<sup>2</sup> named her first son "Stephen" tend to strengthen the probability that the English record, quoted above, pertained to our SIMON<sup>1</sup> and his wife. And a further significant item is the appearance of the unusual given name "Nymphas" [Paul's Epistle to the Collossians IV, 15] used for a grandson of SIMON<sup>1</sup> as well as for later generations,<sup>8</sup> which name is also found in England<sup>9</sup> when "Nymphas Stace" of Epping, co. Essex, mercer, made his will February 4, 1688-9, which was proved May 4 following. It named wife Susanna, children John, Susanna, Mary and Nymphas, brother Joseph Stace, sister Ann (Stace) Mare [might this be Mear, Mears?] widow and had as a witness and overseer friend William Archer of Theydon Garman (sic, see map, p. 712) where Simon Stace above found his wife Elizabeth Clerke.<sup>9</sup>

Three other items which may prove to be pertinent, especially since in so many cases, a group of neighboring or related families emigrated together or at least to a given town, are:

(a) Robert<sup>1</sup> Lord who became so useful a citizen during a long residence in Ipswich, where SIMON<sup>1</sup> and his family lived, was called "kinsman" and "cousin" in 1640 in the will<sup>10</sup> of a John Lord of Sudbury, England, which will also named daughter Elizabeth, wife of William Stacie, the younger, of Bocking, Essex, and their children Ann, Elizabeth and Mary Stacie.<sup>10</sup>

(b) The inventory of the estate of widow ELIZABETH (—) STACY was taken<sup>6</sup> by John<sup>1</sup> Whipple and Thomas Clerke (the same surname as that of an Elizabeth above who married a Simon Stace). And the will<sup>13</sup> of her daughter Ann<sup>2</sup> Stace specified that her "Cuzen John Whipple senior" should be executor of her estate. Just how John Whipple was cousin is not yet learned but he and his brother Matthew<sup>1</sup> Whipple were from Bocking, co. Essex as the will of their father<sup>11</sup> proves.

(c) The will<sup>10</sup> of a Thomas Fitch of Bocking, co. Essex in 1632 made bequests to brother William Stacy, to sister Stracy (sic) and to kinsman Henry Stracy. And a Henry Stacy born about 1621 settled<sup>12</sup> in Essex County, Massachusetts by 1648; while our MARY (STACY) MEARS married secondly (—) Fitch.

(d) William Archer was witness in co. Essex of the Nymphas Stace will.

Therefore every evidence tends to justify the belief that SIMON<sup>1</sup> STACE was an Essex man and that the marriage quoted as of 1620 was probably his.

a study of all contemporary men named "Stacy", Hugh<sup>1</sup>, Henry<sup>1</sup> and John<sup>1</sup>, shows that each of these survived to a much later date, having wives named Jane, Elinor, etc., and having also recorded groups of children with never a "Simon" among them. On the other hand, the widow ELIZABETH (—) STACY is recorded<sup>1</sup> as still retaining the SIMON<sup>1</sup> STACY home lot in March, 1667, and after her death, in November, 1669, her son Simon<sup>2</sup> Stacy sold that property<sup>1</sup> on February 7, 1673, to Thomas Waite. Furthermore, in this SIMON<sup>1</sup> STACY family as traced for five generations, the name "Simon" is found in the male line in each of these generations; and also among the children of two of his daughters is the name "Simon" perpetuated.<sup>4,5</sup>

SIMON<sup>1</sup> must have been successful in a business way for after twenty years of widowhood the possessions of ELIZABETH show many comforts and even luxuries. Late in 1669 she was very ill — perhaps suddenly so, for she dictated a will in the presence of three of her children. It appears to have been written out but it failed of her signature; so the three children took oath as to what their mother's stated wish had been as follows:

"The words of ELIZABETH STACE upon her death beade her Laste will: hauing & Inioying here vnderstanding and memory is as followeth. first I giue my Soule Into the hands of Jesus Christ my blesed Redemer: & my body to be desently Buried in Ipswich Burying place: & for my outward Estate first I giue to my Sonne Simon a bolloke for the buryall of me to my Sonne thomas Stace a gratte bibell & a damaske napkaine: to my dafter Sarah busswell a vellvette cushen. to my dafter Susanah ffrench two Payer of glowes: all these hauing Resayved ther porshones before: Item I giue to my dafter MEORS a beade & a blanket & a Couerlide and bollstor & a pillow & a payer of Sheatts & a payer of pillowbears & one of my wearing Coouttes [coats?]: & to my dafter ane in Considerashon of here staiying with me In my owld aegge & beinge hellpfull to me; for that I giue to here two Cowes and all my other howsalld stufe: MARY MEORS having Resayved a porshon allso befor."

"This we testify to be the Last wille of ELIZABEATH STACE widdowe of Ipswich of the County of Essex as we Resayved them from here owne mouth a day or two befor she dyed.

"Witness: Simon Stace, Sarath Stace, Anne Stace."<sup>2,6</sup>

Their testimony was accepted by the court on November 11, 1669, when "Symon Stace, her son" was appointed administrator of her estate and ordered to bring in an inventory. This listing made by John Whipple and Thomas Clerke (Clark) showed two beds with plentiful bedding, a silver spoon, two chests and a trunk, other furniture, cooking utensils, two spinning wheels, homemade cloth and made up clothing beside a cow, heifer, etc.<sup>6</sup>

During the life of ELIZABETH and at their marriage, three of her daughters had left Ipswich, Sarah<sup>2</sup> and Susanna<sup>2</sup> for Salisbury and MARY<sup>2</sup> for Boston and in 1677, after his mother's death, Thomas<sup>2</sup> removed to Salem, leaving only \*Simon<sup>2</sup> and his unmarried sister Ann<sup>2</sup> in the old home. The will of Ann<sup>2</sup> dated February

\*Evidence of the standing of Simon<sup>2</sup> Stacy is seen in the fact that at the death of Rev. Thomas Cobbett of Ipswich in 1685 "Ensygne Symond"<sup>2</sup> was chosen to see that all things were properly done and to "be careful in the distribution" of favors. For the current idea as to what constituted suitable respect for their minister required quite a ceremony.<sup>22</sup> It was planned "that Deaken Goodhue provide one barril of Wine and half a hundred weight of sugar, and that he send it to Mr. Cobbitts house next second day of the week in the morning, for which he is to have in pay [barter] not money, four shillings by the gallon and six pence a pound for the sugar. That Mr. Rust provide if he can against the funeral, Gloves suitable for men and women, to the value of five or six pounds, not money pay, and some spice and ginger for the syder. That some persons be appointed to look to the burning of the wine and heating of the syder, against the time appointed for the funeral next Monday at one of the clock, and such as will be careful in the distribution."<sup>21</sup>

13, 1681-2, named brother Simon<sup>2</sup>, sisters Sarah<sup>2</sup> and Susan<sup>2</sup> and various "Cuzens" (nephews and nieces) including "Cuzen Elizabeth Mears [to have] the beed I lye upon . . . when she marrieth or at the age of 21 years: only my brother symon stase shall have it in Keping: & use it upon ocations tel that time: & if he dye before herr time of Receiuing it: then my sister MARYE fitch shall keep it tell hur dafter be m. . . . ed or at the age of twenty one year".<sup>13</sup>

Simon<sup>2</sup>, the last representative of this family in Ipswich, died there in 1699. His will was dated October 20, and proved December 4, 1699. It disposed of an estate of over £722, provided for his widow and that after her death his estate should be divided<sup>13,17,24</sup> into twelve equal parts and given to six children of his deceased brother, Thomas<sup>2</sup> Stacy, three children of his deceased sister, Susanna (Stacy) French, two descendants of his deceased sister Elizabeth (Stacy) Adams and to SAMUEL<sup>3</sup> MEARS, son of his sister, MARY (STACY) MEARS Fitch.

The children of SIMON<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH (*Clerke?*) STACY, probably most of them born in England and in uncertain order, were:<sup>6,13,21</sup>

- i. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, d. July 23, 1690, at Salem;<sup>14</sup> was named in his mother's nuncupative will.<sup>6</sup> His own will<sup>13</sup> dated Feb. 9, 1689-90, proved Nov. 25, 1690, named wife Susanna and eight of his eleven or twelve children,<sup>18,19</sup> viz., Thomas<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Simon<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, Mary<sup>3</sup>, and Susannah<sup>3</sup>. He m. Oct. 4, 1653, Susanna<sup>2</sup> Worcester, daughter of Rev. William<sup>1</sup> Worcester whose will<sup>5,15</sup> named her and her daughter Rebecca<sup>3</sup> Stacy. Among their children<sup>19</sup> was also a Nymphas who resided at Salem.
- ii. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1627; d. after Feb. 13, 1681-2; named<sup>6,13</sup> in the wills of her mother and her sister Ann<sup>2</sup>; m. (—) Buswell, probably<sup>13</sup> Capt. William<sup>2</sup> Buswell (Isaac<sup>1</sup>) who died at Salisbury in June, 1699, in his 74th year leaving a widow Sarah who died there Mar. 5, 1708-9, in her 83rd year.<sup>5</sup>
- iii. Susanna<sup>2</sup>, d. Feb. 12, 1687, at Salisbury;<sup>5</sup> named in the wills<sup>6,13</sup> of her mother and her sister Ann<sup>2</sup>; m. by 1653 Joseph<sup>2</sup> French (Edward<sup>1</sup>) of Salisbury.<sup>5</sup>
- iv. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, d.<sup>4</sup> abt. 1655-6; m. by or before 1649 William<sup>2</sup> Adams (William<sup>1</sup>) who died in Jan. 1658-9, leaving three orphan sons.<sup>13</sup>
- v. Simon<sup>2</sup>, b. abt.<sup>20</sup> 1636-7; d.<sup>18</sup> at Ipswich Oct. 27, 1699, aged about 63, and without issue.<sup>13</sup> He was called Ensign in 1685; Lieutenant in 1696 and Captain before he died.<sup>20</sup> He m. Apr. 19, 1659, Sarah<sup>2</sup> Wallis, daughter of Robert<sup>1</sup> of Ipswich, at the settlement of whose estate Simon<sup>2</sup> Stacy was called his "son".<sup>16,24</sup>
- vi. MARY<sup>2</sup>, died after Feb. 13, 1681-2, when by the will<sup>13</sup> of Ann<sup>2</sup> Stacy she was called "my sister MARY Fitch, who had a daughter called "Cuzen [niece] Elizabeth Mears". MARY<sup>2</sup>, called "dafter MARY MEARS" by the nuncupative will of her mother in about November, 1669, was given thereby<sup>6</sup> "a beade & a blanket & a Couerlid and bollstor & a pillowe & a payer of Sheatts & a payer of pillowbears & one of my wearing coouttes [coats?]. . . . having Resayved a porshon allso befor . . ." MARY<sup>2</sup> m. 1st, by or before 1664 SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> MEARS (see Mears, p. 429). She married secondly, before Feb. 13, 1681-2, (—) Fitch.
- vii. Ann<sup>2</sup>, d.<sup>18</sup> at Ipswich Feb. 21, 1681-2,<sup>17</sup> unm. She had cared for her mother during her last years and received most of the household goods.<sup>6,24</sup>

## REFERENCES

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. History of Ipswich, Mass., T. F. Waters, 1905, pp. 92-3, 96-7, map facing p. 338, pp. 339, 493; Parker-Ruggles Ancestry, J. W. Linzie, 1918, p. 431; New England Register, II, 175.</li> <li>2. Hammatt Papers, Abraham Hammatt, No. VII, p. 343-5.</li> <li>3. Pope's Pioneers, p. 429; Ipswich Town Records, 1899, pp. 31, 40, 71, 92, 108, 132.</li> <li>4. Essex Antiquarian, II, 87-8.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>5. Old Families of Salisbury and Amesbury, D. W. Hoyt, I, pp. 80, 166, 368; Vital Records of Salisbury, pp. 108, 535, 566.</li> <li>6. Essex County, Mass., Probates II, 171-2; Records and Files of the Quarterly Court, Essex County, IV, 183, 246-7.</li> <li>7. London Marriage Licenses, 1521-1869, J. L. Chester, II, p. 1273; New England Register LVIII, 91-2.</li> <li>8. Vital Records of Ipswich, Mass., I, 394, II, 405; Vital</li> </ol> |
|--|--|

- Records of Gloucester, I, 672, II, 513, III, 293.
9. New England Register, LIV, 346.
  10. Waters' Gleanings, 1901, pp. 593, 1102-3.
  11. Ibid., pp. 465-7.
  12. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court, Essex Co., Mass. III, 419, Essex Institute Historical Society Collections, IV, 234.
  13. New England Register, LVIII, 91-2, with errata for Massachusetts Historical Society Collection, Ser. 4, I, 5-9.
  14. Vital Records of Salem, Mass., VI, 245.
  15. Essex County, Probates, I, 403-5.
  16. Ibid., II, 387.
  17. Ibid., (not published) CCCIII, (or CCCX) 435; Essex County Deeds, XIV, 26, 28; XVI, 4-6.
  18. Vital Records of Ipswich, Mass., I, 348-9; II, 405, 682.
  19. History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, III, 115.
  20. Essex Institute Historical Collections, IV, 172; Essex County, III, 297; Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, VII, 117, 268; VIII, 165-6.
  21. Genealogical and Personal Memoirs of the Families of Boston and Eastern Massachusetts, W. R. Cutter, 1908, I, 362-3.
  22. Ancestors of Guilford S. Tingley, R. M. Tingley, 1935, pp. 8, 348-9.
  23. Research by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Essex Co. Probates, No. 26069; Essex Deeds, III, 297; IV, 442.

# S T E V E N S

\* (37) (57) (2) [990]  
 WILLIAM STEVENS  
 -aft. 1667

m PHILIPPA . . .  
 -1681

(5) (57) (2) [494]  
 JOHN COIT  
 c. 1630-1662

m MARY STEVENS  
 1652 1639-40-1692

(2) [246]  
 WILLIAM ELLERY  
 c. 1643-1696

m MARY COIT  
 1676 1655-1741-4

(2) [122]  
 JOHN PRINCE  
 1677-1767

m ABIGAIL ELLERY  
 1704-5 1679-1744

(2) [60]  
 PHILEMON WARNER  
 1697-8-1778

m MARY PRINCE  
 1726 1707-1784

(2) [30]  
 PHILEMON WARNER  
 1727-1766

m ELIZABETH WOODWARD  
 1748 1729-30-1793

☆ ¶ □ § ◆ [14]  
 WILLIAM PARKER  
 1745-1825

m MARY WARNER  
 1772 1753-1811

♠ △ ∴ ∥ † [6]  
 EPHRAIM CUTLER  
 1767-1853

m 2nd SALLY PARKER  
 1808 1777-1846

† ♂ ✦ (49) [2]  
 HENRY DAWES  
 1804-1867

m SARAH CUTLER  
 1829 1809-1896

✦ † (49) † [1]  
 RUFUS DAWES  
 1838-1899

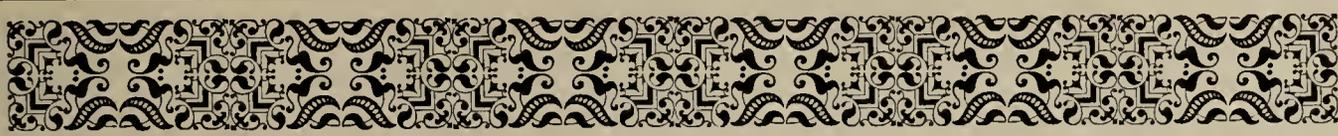
m MARY BEMAN GATES  
 1864 1842-1921

- \* Boston
- (37) Salem
- (57) Marblehead
- (2) Gloucester
- (5) Dorchester
- ☆ Malden
- ¶ Charlestown

- Newburyport
- § Allegheny Co., Pa.
- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- ♠ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- ∴ Waterford, O.
- ∥ Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♠ Morgan Co., O.
- ✦ Malta, O.
- (49) Mauston, Wis.
- † Marietta, O.

---



---

## STEVENS (*Stephens*)

---

**W**ILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS with wife PHILIPPA and probably their son James<sup>2</sup> crossed the ocean on an unknown vessel at an uncertain date but it was prior to 1632 for a letter written by Emanuel<sup>1</sup> Downing in London on January 3, 1632, included the words<sup>2,5,7</sup>

“. . . I enquired what ship carpenters Mr. Winthrop the Governor had with him in New England. I was enformed . . . that the Governor hath with him one WILLIAM STEPHENS a shipwright, soe able a man, as they beleive there is hardly such an other to be found in this kingdome . . . this STEPHENS hath built here manie ships of great burthen, he made the Royal Merchant, a ship of 600 tonns. this man as they enformed me had more regard\* to his substantiall performance, then the wages he was to receive, and soe grew to poverty, whereupon he was preparing to goe for Spayne, where he knew he should have wages answeareable to his paynes, had not some friends perswaded him to N. England, where now he lives with great content; had the State of Spayne obteyned him he should have be'n as a pretious Jewell to them; . . .”<sup>2,15</sup>

We are told<sup>2,17</sup> that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> settled for a time in the vicinity of Boston and in March, 1634, when the colony was first considering the construction of a coast defence, £10 was offered<sup>8</sup> him by the court if he would build a floating fort at Castle Island (see Moulton, p. 453) for which plank and funds had been tentatively subscribed by many men. Apparently WILLIAM showed no eagerness for the task and in May, 1634, the court appointed a committee<sup>8</sup> of three including ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MOULTON, then of Charlestown, “to treat & bargain with M<sup>r</sup> STEVENS & M<sup>r</sup> Mayhewe, or with either of them, for the building of the seaffort by the greate . . .”<sup>\*\*</sup> The fact that the plan was not carried out argues that it was probably considered impracticable.

†WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> built<sup>1</sup> a vessel for Mr. Griffin perhaps in 1633 (but more likely<sup>15</sup> in 1643), removed to the vicinity of Salem by 1636, was a proprietor there<sup>1</sup> by 1636-7, owned one hundred fifty acres at Marblehead<sup>17</sup> on which he was taxed<sup>7,12</sup> January 1, 1637-8, became a member of Salem Church<sup>1</sup> December 29, 1639, and a †free-

\*Winthrop's Journal<sup>6</sup> refers to the building at Salem of a three hundred ton vessel in 1641 and of the construction that year at Boston of a vessel of one hundred fifty tons, adding “The work was hard to accomplish for want of money, etc., but our shipwrights were content to take such pay as the country could make.”<sup>6</sup>

\*\*This term or phrase, by Webster, implies a complete coverage of expense and a completion of construction.

†Reverberations relative to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS across the Atlantic, as of May 13, 1637, are seen<sup>18</sup> in testimony that the “Little Neptune” sailing from London to New England, then to the Canary Island and back to London had occasion for repairs while at New England and Thomas Miller, the master's mate, paid £23 odd to “WILLIAM STEVENS, carpenter, dwelling at Marvell Head in New England for 'nable hoodinge of the said shipp, & for puttinge into her fower beames, six payre of stanovers, and two hookes'.” And in October, 1637, a further hearing brought out the testimony that the master John Daniel had had a ship carpenter named STEVENS living in New England put four or five new beams into the “Little Neptune” and many bolts.<sup>18</sup>

‡Others of our ancestors who became freemen on that same day were<sup>7</sup> WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BROWNE (see p. 120), THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER JOHN<sup>1</sup> BATCHELDER and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> WOODBURY (see Dawes-Gates, II, pp. 97 and 829).

man<sup>1,7</sup> on May 13, 1640. In August, 1637, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> had a grant of land at Cat Cove (see map, p. 673) for a ship yard, which was otherwise described<sup>7</sup> as being eighteen rods long and twelve rods wide, adjoining Hollingsworth's shipyard "on the southeast side of the Neck at its narrowest part" (see map, p. 673). He is variously said<sup>1</sup> to have worked at shipbuilding at this location "for about two years" or "until 1642." Apparently WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and his family lived at Marblehead during the time that his shipyard was at Salem Neck for in about 1639 Salem in granting land to a number of men, offered<sup>7</sup> to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> thirty acres of land "on the forest side, if he stay at Marblehead, and fifty acres in Salem if he should remove thither," with the comment that "Mr. STEPHENS did not afterward live in the town of Salem, but, in 1642 removed to Gloucester"<sup>17</sup> where the remainder of his life was spent. Three of his children had been baptized at Salem.<sup>1</sup>

At Gloucester WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> performed much more of public service than had been recorded of him earlier. He served as a commissioner<sup>9,11</sup> to end small causes\* in 1643, 1647, 1652, 1657; on a trial jury<sup>11</sup> in 1652; on grand juries in 1660 and 1661; was town clerk,<sup>2</sup> selectman for several years,<sup>2</sup> and served as a deputy<sup>9,11</sup> to the General Court to represent Gloucester in 1644, 1653, 1665 and 1666. The first election<sup>9</sup> of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> as deputy was promptly reconsidered by the freemen of Gloucester "(yppon some private drences falleinge out betweene y<sup>e</sup> church & him in y<sup>e</sup> intrime)" and they chose another in his place. When this substitute presented his credentials the Court sent him home and demanded of the Gloucester freemen that they send STEVENS who had first been chosen and that the Court would decide for itself whether he had offended as a member of their body. He was reinstated, by that body, put on a committee to examine the books of Deputy Governor Bellingham, and on another committee to draw up a set of orders for ship carpenters to obey in their dealings with their employers.<sup>9</sup>

WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> lived at<sup>2,10,14</sup> the Cut\*\* (see map, p. 673) for in 1659 there was some controversy between him and the town at the failure to build a bridge across the Cut to his lands† but in 1652 he had also held<sup>11</sup> a neck of land ". . . between the marsh in Annisquam and Chebacco, to the narrow of the neck above the pond." In 1660 he and four others were appointed to view the bounds<sup>9</sup> at Jeffrey's Creek and that year he and twenty-five other residents of Gloucester testified<sup>11</sup> to the good conduct of one John Jackson while resident there. In 1661 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> contracted to build a vessel‡ while in 1662 he was appointed to assist his daughter widow MARY COIT to administer<sup>11</sup> the estate of her deceased husband JOHN<sup>2</sup> COIT.

\*Legal disputes which involved<sup>9</sup> not over twenty shillings.

\*\*His home lot at the Cut<sup>2</sup> consisted of eight acres beside which he had a grant of six acres on Meeting-house Neck but "his standing among the early settlers, and the importance of his aid in promoting the prosperity of the town, are sufficiently indicated by the extraordinary grant he received of five hundred acres of land lying between Chebacco and Annisquam Rivers."<sup>2</sup>

†His great grandson Samuel<sup>4</sup> (William<sup>3</sup>, James<sup>6</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) seems to have inherited<sup>2</sup> the homestead at the Cut.

‡In June of that year,<sup>15</sup> he agreed with "John Brown, for himself and Nicolas and John Balbach of Jarssy, to build 1 new ship of 68 foot long by ye keele, and 23 foot broad from outside to outside, and 9½ foot in ye hold under ye beam; with two decks, forecastle, quarter deck, [and round house 7], ye deck from ye mainmast to ye forecastle to be 5 foot high, with a fall at ye forecastle 15 inches, and a raise at ye mainmast to ye quarter deck of 6 inches. The great cabbins to be 6 foot high. STEVENS was to find<sup>7</sup> timber, plank, trunnels, pitch, tar and oakum, and the hull was to be finished and the vessel launched by the last of July, 1662. "Said Browne and Company" were to find all iron work, carved work and joiner's work in due time, and were to pay said STEVENS three pounds and five shillings per ton of the said ship's burthen, — that is, fifty pounds in goods at Mr. Brown's, Mr. Corwin's or Mr. Price's in Salem, one hundred and fifty pounds in Muscovadus sugar, at two pence per pound, at Barbadoes and one hundred pounds in New English money. As to the charge for building the vessel, at that time the ordinary price was four pounds a tun.<sup>16,17</sup>

In March, 1665, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS was released from training but was required to pay five shillings a year for the use of the military company;<sup>11</sup> in May, 1665, was ordered<sup>9</sup> to draw up a map of the colony; in October, 1665, asked for and received the grant of one hundred acres of land<sup>9</sup> which in 1672 was owned by John Adams. In March, 1666, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was licensed to sell strong liquors and sack for a year.<sup>11</sup> He evidently "grew to poverty" again as he had done long before in England for in 1667 he mortgaged to Francis Willoughby his five hundred acres lying between Chebacco and Annisquam Rivers<sup>2</sup> and never got it back. In 1667 he put certain other property,<sup>2</sup> "a new house and land" into the hands of his sons James<sup>2</sup> and Isaac<sup>2</sup> in trust<sup>2</sup> for their mother PHILIPPA.

It appears that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> must have been of a very determined and perhaps willful, but at least, courageous disposition, for in at least two instances his persistence in a given line of conduct brought the cases to court and to his own detriment. A Thomas Millett had been engaged to preach<sup>11</sup> for the Gloucester church with WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS handling a subscription paper\* which showed a total of about £26, of which WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> himself promised the largest sum, viz., £2 10 sh. As time went on some cause of dissatisfaction arose and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> withheld the list from Millett and apparently either failed to collect or withheld the funds promised. In March, 1657-8, Millett brought suit\*\* and won a verdict<sup>11</sup> over WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>.

The second case<sup>14</sup> was much more serious in its import and evidently became of vital significance in the life of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> for not one further word beyond this suit relative to his actions, life or conduct can be found. We may safely deduce that something (probably of a political or governmental nature) had displeased him; and Babson as well as others<sup>17</sup> call attention<sup>2</sup> to the fact that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was a deputy to the General Court in 1665 when that body nobly resisted the proceedings of the commissioners sent over by the king in 1664 (see Appendix "B", p. 694). Then interference "in the legislation of the colony . . . was justly esteemed to be an infringement of Colonial rights and privileges. It was a grave offence, in those days, to speak evil of rulers; and discretion would have counselled silence: but the honest indignation of our townsman [WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>] spurning all restraint, found utterance in no softened terms of dislike."<sup>2</sup> The warrant served upon him on June 21, 1667, claimed that he "hath uttered diuerse seditious and dangerous speeches of a very high nature against the crowne & dignity of our Sovereigne Lord King Charles the Second"; and testimony before the court by four of his neighbors claimed that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> had said that "he did renounce the government of this patent so far as it concerned Charls Steward and that he cared no more for him than any other man"; that "he refused to hold any office in this colony"; that "he abhorred the name of Charls Steward as a king"; and after this testimony "Mr. STEEVENS owned the foregoing testimony and disowned the jurisdiction of this court over him." The court ordered<sup>14</sup> him to be disfranchised and not eligible to office during the court's pleasure, or to be fined, and to be prisoned for one month." Another rendition<sup>14</sup> omits the suggested alternative and makes his

\*Others of our ancestors who subscribed<sup>11</sup> were THOMAS<sup>1</sup> PRINCE, 13 sh. 4d.; WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BROWNE, 5 sh.; JOHN DAVIS, 15 sh.; JOHN COIT, 10 sh. and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> HASKELL, 18 sh.

\*\*That this case caused no permanent estrangement between WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and Mr. Millett seems evident from the fact that in June, 1659, they were to "exercise their gifts jointly for the edification of the inhabitants"<sup>2</sup> viz. join in holding religious services.

punishment be disfranchisement, a fine of £20 plus costs of £1 10 sh and one month's imprisonment. But one thing seems highly significant — namely, that while he was resting under this severe criticism he was still granted the title of respect, "Mr.," even as had been the case quite continually since 1634. During that year of 1667, as has been stated, he mortgaged his five hundred acres and deeded to his sons, a home for his wife, as though preparing for an exit.

No death record, will or administration of estate is found of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS. He simply dropped out of sight as though, perhaps, remorse or disgust overcame him. The above trial in June, 1667, was followed by a petition in October, 1667, by the wife PHILIPPA, to the General Court and the Court's further correspondence in 1667, 1668 and even as late as 1680. By reading what was written, as well as reading between the lines, it appears that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> must have accepted the imprisonment and then disappeared. Then his stock was distrained for the fine by insolent officials. Presumably local opinion was deeply stirred up against WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> since the magistrates repeatedly refused to follow the suggestion of the General Court by moderating the portion of the punishment which applied only to PHILIPPA and the family. The following correspondence which completes our slight knowledge of the case, shows PHILIPPA to have been mistress of better English than many women of her day:

"The humble petition of PHILLIP[A] STEVENS, wife of WILLIAM STEVENS of Gloucester.

"Whereas it hath pleased the honored court at Salem last, to impose a certain fine upon my husband, for some rash and inconsiderate speeches spoken by him, in reference to his majestie, wh fine could bee not other than very greivous to me and the rest of the family, especially considering our ould age, opportunity in that respect being past wherein we might recover and help ourselves again, either by industry or otherwise: but although this was such an afflixion, as in respect of our age and condition otherwise circumstances, I was ready to think it intollerable; there hath bin in the execution of the sentence, much severity and great afflixion added to the before afflicted, and as I conceive, and not only myself but all our neighbors of the towne, who know and have heard of the business do apprehend, very unconscionable and unchristian carriage in ye prizing of ye cattle, which they had for the fine, being twenty pounds, to exceed thirty, as all that know the cattle doe say, and yt this honored court might have opportunity to ease the oppressed, I speake not at all in reference to the court at Salem, but to those who were the executioners of the sentence. I shall heere make bold to acquaint you with their carriage, in the prizing of the sayd cattle (viz) two very large and good milch cowes at six pounds tenn shillings, two very large oxen at almost four years ould at eight pounds tenn shillings; a great bull about four years ould at five and fifty shillings, a heifer fair with calfe and well grown, at forty five shillings, a two years ould heifer at one pound tenn shillings: — these things I make bould to present to the honored court, humbly requesting that you would be pleased to take it into your consideration, if I may find so much favor, that the fine itself, or some of the fine may be eased, or at least, that I may have reliefe in respect of the extraordinary prize that they have put upon the cattle: — my husband having been absent about three weeks, in which time they came for the fine, and not as yet is hee returned. In this solitary condition, deprived of soe great a part of our livelyhood, necessity one (on) the one hand and confidence in your clemencie towards the afflicted one the other, the former urges, the latter embouldens me to take this opportunity of the prsent session of the court, to prosecute this my petition, hoping that you will please to take it into your serious consideration, soe desiring the Lord to guide you in all your weighty affairs, humbly take my leave."

"At a Generall Court held at Boston the 9th of October 1667."

The court's reply<sup>16</sup> shows both consideration and justice:

"In answer to this petition the court, upon information of the greatnes of the fact, referring to the person against whom it was committed, Judge that the penalty inflicted was rather beneath than above the merit of the offence, and therefore cannot but justify the court that had cognizance of the cause. Yet considering what personall punishment the sayd partyes husband hath already undergonne and also that the payment of such a fine will rather (fall) upon herself and family, who are in this respect innocent, together with the severity of them that executed the sentence, to which may be added the craziness\* of the man in respect of his understanding: — doe therefore order, that the sayd catle so taken be returned to the petitioner in kind, to be to hir proper use & behooffe, for the mayntenance of hirsself and family in hir old age, such necessary charges being deducted as have been expended in the prosecution thereof."

Under date of February 3, 1668, there was recorded:

"There being an order made the last session of this court upon the pet n of the wife of Mr WILLIAM STEVENS of Glosester, that what estate has been taken away from the sd STEVENS by virtue of the order of the county court of Essex, should be restr'd, which said order of the gen ll court hath not hitherto taken effect, by reason the court did not nominate the persons who were intended in the said order. to make such return as afore-said: Upon a further to this court, the court doth hereby order and appoint the next court of that county to see the order of the gen ll court fulfilled, and that the cattle taken away be returned in kind, or otherwise the true value of them as they were sould, necessary charges being deducted. the Deputyes have past this desiring the consent of o r hon rd magists hereto.

"William Torrey. Chair."

but there was the reaction:<sup>10</sup>

"The magists consent not hereto."

And as late as May 19, 1680, the General Court attempted again to arrange for restitution to PHILIPPA but without success<sup>10</sup> for again the notation appears:

"Not consented to by ye Mags."

The last word in this incomplete story is that "PHILLEPE STEEVENS" died<sup>3</sup> at Gloucester on August 3 or 31, 1681 — probably without the helpfulness which the General Court intended and quite certainly with a hurt in her heart because of the continuing critical displeasure of some of her neighbors against an act of which she, personally, was entirely innocent.

The known\*\* children of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and PHILIPPA (—) STEVENS were<sup>1,2,3,7</sup>

- I. James<sup>2</sup>, b. in England, prob. abt. 1630; d.<sup>2,10,14</sup> at Gloucester† March 25, 1697; m. there Dec. 31, 1656, Susanna<sup>2</sup> "Eivleigh" (Eveleth, dau. of Sylvester<sup>1</sup>).<sup>3</sup>
- II. Isaac<sup>2</sup>, bap. at Salem<sup>3</sup> Jan. 2, 1639-40; said<sup>4</sup> to have been living in 1681.
- III. MARY<sup>2</sup>, bap. at Salem<sup>3</sup> Jan. 2, 1639-40; d. at Gloucester Nov. 7, 1692; m. there,<sup>7</sup> 1st, on<sup>3</sup> Sept. 21, 1652, JOHN<sup>2</sup> COIT (see Coit, p. 194); m. there<sup>3</sup> 2ndly on Oct. 3, 1667, John Fitch.
- IV. Ruth<sup>2</sup>, bap. at Salem<sup>3</sup> Mar. 7, 1641-2; d. at Gloucester Aug. 16, 1664; m. there<sup>3</sup> Oct. 7, 1663, Stephen<sup>1</sup> Glover.

\*This phrase suggests a belief on the part of the Court that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was not entirely responsible.

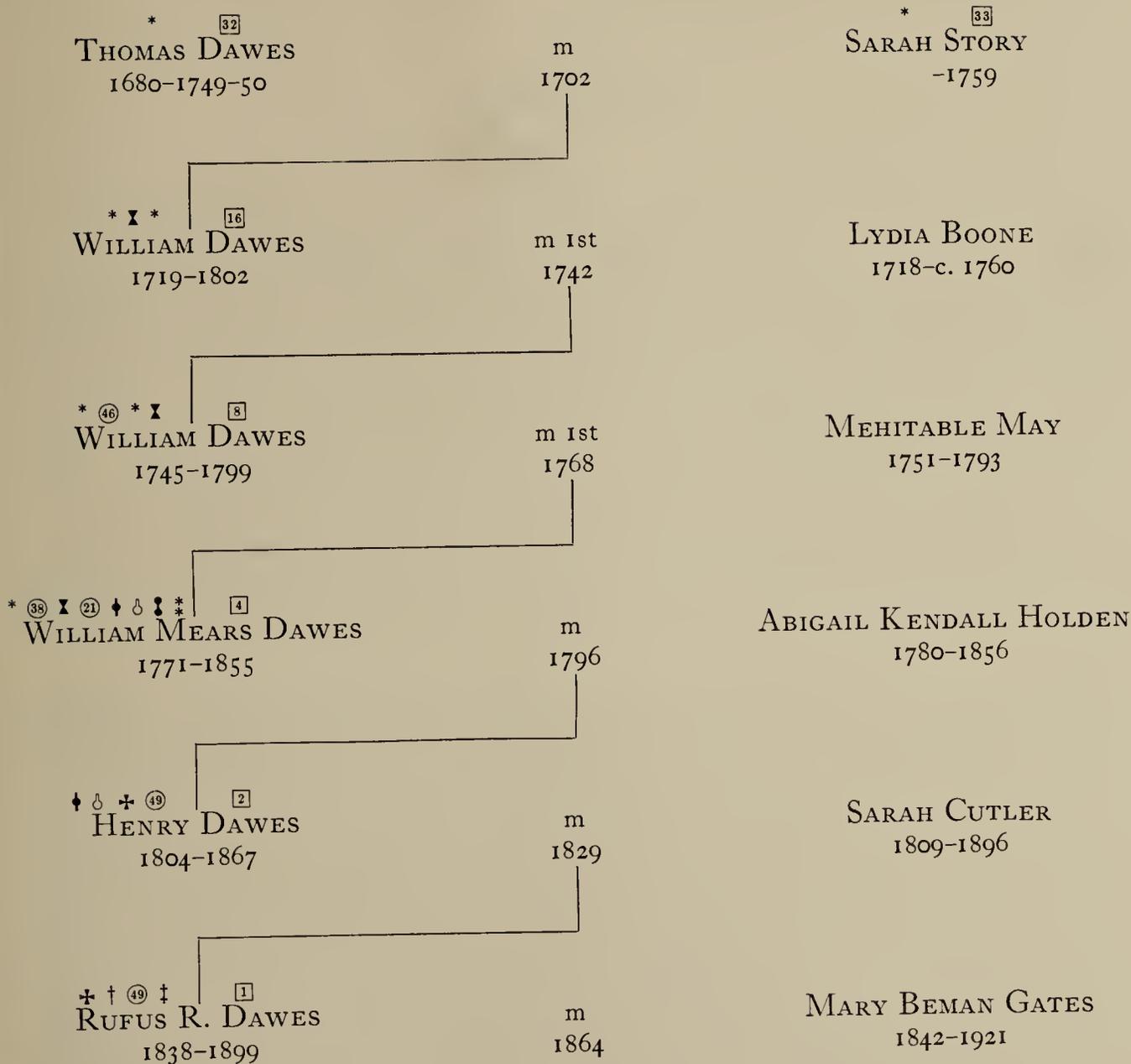
\*\*One publication<sup>4</sup> adds to this recorded list of four children, four others which may have belonged there, but this compiler has found no evidence to that end. They were<sup>4</sup> (1) a William b. abt. 1634, d. June 17, 1654, ae. 20; (2) an Edward b. abt. 1636, living 1697, said to have m. Apr. 10, 1666, a Mary Adams of Ipswich and to have lived in Marshfield; (3) Thomas b. abt. 1644, d. May 10, 1667 ae. 23; and (4) Hannah b. 1646, d. Apr. 7, 1666, ae. 20.<sup>4</sup>

†The Gloucester Vital Records give<sup>3</sup> a James called son of a William as dying Dec. 26, 1687; and some other James died on Sept. 27, 1688. They are not identified.

## REFERENCES

1. Savage, IV, 189; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 433.
2. History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, pp. 164-7, 195.
3. Vital Records of Salem, II, 320; of Gloucester, II, 139, 521, 523; III, 133, 144, 299.
4. Some Ancestral Lines . . . Tingley . . . Meyers, R. M. Tingley, 1935, pp. 349-50.
5. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, VIII, 324-5.
6. Original Narratives of Early American History, VIII, being Winthrop's Journal, II, 24.
7. History of Salem, S. Perley, I, 379-80; II, 2, 77, 358-9, 402.
8. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 113, 120.
9. Ibid., II, 35, 66, 292; III, 2-3, 5-7, 109, 297; IV, pt. 1, 120, 342, 423, 427; IV, pt. 2, 142, 145, 282, 295, 314, 528.
10. Ibid., IV, pt. 2, 353; Notes and Additions to Babson's Gloucester, 1876, I, 75-80.
11. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, I, 247, 250-1, 257, 263-4, 275; II, 38, 63-4, 166, 192, 237, 250, 282, 368; III, 241, 308, 431.
12. History of Marblehead, S. Roads, 1880, p. 13.
13. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XIII, 135-6.
14. Records and Files, II, 66; III, 2-7, 431; Notes and Additions to Babson's Gloucester, 1876, I, 76-7.
15. Babson's Gloucester pp. 188, 200-1, 248-9.
16. Economic and Social History of New England 1620-1789, W. B. Weedon, 1890, I, 162.
17. Trades and Tradesmen of Essex County . . . , H. W. Belknap, 1929, pp. 8-10.
18. High Court of Admiralty Examinations (London) Anglo-American Records Foundation, Inc., 1932, Memorial to Col. C. E. Banks, pp. 63, 188.

# STORY



- \* Boston
- ✕ Marlborough
- <sup>46</sup> Worcester
- <sup>38</sup> Sudbury
- <sup>21</sup> Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- ♂ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.

- ♂ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- ✕ Malta, O.
- <sup>49</sup> Mauston, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- † Marietta, O.



## STORY

**S**ARAH<sup>1</sup> STORY, with her brother Elisha<sup>1</sup>, both unmarried, emigrated to America about<sup>1,2</sup> 1700-1 and settled in Boston where her brother became a cordwainer (shoemaker or leather worker) and SARAH<sup>1</sup> may have kept house for him for a time, but<sup>1,2</sup> on August 2, 1702, she was married by the Rev. Samuel Willard to THOMAS<sup>3</sup> DAWES (see Dawes, p. 28).<sup>1,2,6</sup> She is supposed to have been older than her brother Elisha<sup>1</sup> since her birth is estimated at about 1678-9 and at his death on September 20, 1725, he was called<sup>3</sup> forty-two years old.\* SARAH<sup>1</sup> joined<sup>2</sup> Old South Church on October 31, 1703, and her husband THOMAS<sup>3</sup> DAWES with her brother<sup>6</sup> Elisha<sup>1</sup> Story followed her example<sup>2</sup> on April 18, 1705.

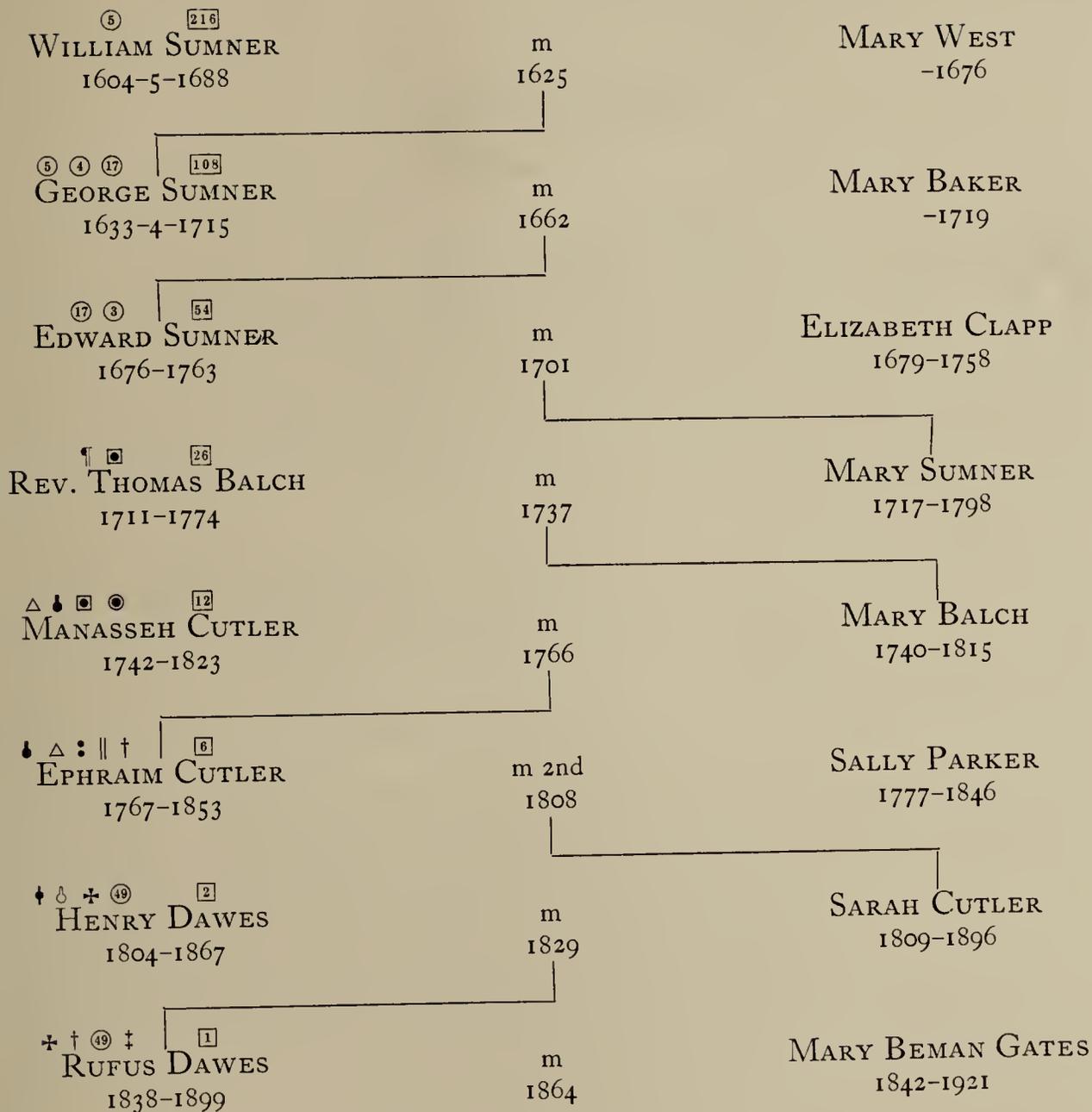
SARAH bore THOMAS<sup>3</sup> DAWES fifteen children between December, 1703, and July, 1724, of whom seven who died young are buried in a tomb which THOMAS<sup>3</sup> built in King's Chapel Burial Ground for his parents AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> and MARY DAWES. After about forty-eight years of life together THOMAS<sup>3</sup> died and nine years later SARAH followed him.

\*Elisha<sup>1</sup> Story married twice<sup>1</sup> and by his second wife Sarah (Cooper) Renouf called<sup>1</sup> sister of Rev. Wm. Cooper of Brattle Street Church and widow of Clement Renouf, Sr., he had a son William<sup>2</sup> Story (1720-1799), the only one to carry on the name and a most patriotic man who was for a time Register of Probate, clerk in the Court of Vice Admiralty<sup>5</sup> etc. This man by two wives had eleven children, of whom at least three served in the Revolution, two others graduated from Princeton into the ministry and the youngest of these bears an especial interest for us, for he was Daniel<sup>9</sup> Story born at Boston July 28, 1756, who after graduation at Princeton studied divinity at New Haven and, becoming interested in Marietta, Ohio, was among the earliest residents there. He had contacted Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER who strongly favored the young man's service in Ohio and wrote a letter to Gen. Putnam introducing him. During Story's early years there he was in the employ of the Ohio Company and was to be furnished his board and four dollars in silver per week in addition to which he was permitted to cultivate church land to increase his pay to the equivalent of five dollars per week. He arrived at Marietta<sup>4</sup> on March 19, 1789, and preached his first sermon the following Sunday, March 22, holding services in the northwest block house of Campus Martius. This phase of religious service was superseded by the organization of a church body on December 6, 1796, and a decision was made the next spring to invite Rev. Mr. Story to serve as their pastor if the people themselves would make provision for his support. In the meantime he had returned to Massachusetts on horseback. On February 5, 1798, when they had acquired subscriptions totaling \$300 they decided to write him a definite call at that salary, which he accepted sixty days later. On May 15, the church empowered Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER of Hamilton, on its behalf, "to join with Mr. Story, in convening an ecclesiastical council, for the purpose of ordaining the said pastor-elect." Accordingly, a council convened at Hamilton August 15, 1798, at which time he was "solemnly ordained as pastor of the church of Marietta and vicinity, in the Northwest Territory of the United States." The ordination sermon was preached by Rev. Isaac<sup>8</sup> Story, brother of the candidate<sup>7</sup> and the charge was given by the Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER. On April 3, 1799, Rev. Daniel<sup>9</sup> Story returned to Marietta two years after he was called, to resume his work as pastor until his resignation on March 15, 1804, because of ill health. He died on March 30 and was buried in the northwest part of Mound Cemetery.<sup>7</sup>

## REFERENCES

1. Essex Institute Historical Collections, I, 297-304.
2. Historical Catalogue of the Old South Church, Boston, 1883, pp. 22-3, 321, 324.
3. New England Register, XV, 305.
4. History of Marietta, Ohio, T. J. Summers, 1903, pp. 68, 73-5, 198-202.
5. Bronsdon and Box Families, L. B. Marsh and H. F. Parker, 1902, pp. 205-8.
6. Dawes Genealogy, H. W. Holland, 1878, pp. 50, 56.
7. History of Washington County, O., pub. by H. Z. Williams & Bro., 1881, pp. 468-9.

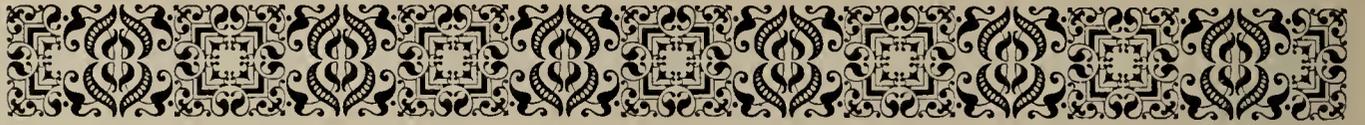
# SUMNER



- ⑤ Dorchester
- ④ Northampton
- ⑪ Milton
- ③ Roxbury
- † Charlestown
- Dedham

- △ Killingly, Conn.
- ♢ Edgartown
- Hamilton
- Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

- ♣ Thomaston, Me.
- ♢ Morgan Co., O.
- ✚ Malta, O.
- ⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## SUMNER

**W**ILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER\* was baptized<sup>2</sup> in the<sup>8</sup> Church St. Edburg at Bicester, Oxfordshire, England, on January 27, 1604-5, was married there<sup>2,8</sup> on October 22, 1625, to MARY WEST and with her and their children (surely three and perhaps even five) emigrated\*\* to New England. He settled at what had been called<sup>7</sup> Mattapan but on September 7, 1630, was renamed Dorchester† where he was considered<sup>4</sup> one of the early settlers, received a grant of land prior<sup>4</sup> to January, 1636, promptly joined the church†† which had just acquired the Rev. Richard<sup>1</sup> Mather as pastor and took the oath of a freeman<sup>6</sup> on May 17, 1637.

The earliest record book of Dorchester<sup>4</sup> shows a date of January 16, 1632-3 (claiming precedence of extant records of any other Massachusetts town) but several leaves at the front of it are missing, thus permanently hiding from us the earliest affairs of the town. Evidence is found<sup>53</sup> that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER had a servant named William Shepard, for in April, 1636, that man was whipped for stealing from his master.

No one of our ancestors was more continually useful‡ to his town and locality

\*WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was the son<sup>2</sup> of ROGER<sup>a</sup> SUMNER who was buried in the church yard<sup>8</sup> of St. Edburg at Bicester December 4, 1608, having married there on November 2, 1601, JOAN FRANKLIN. The nuncupative will of ROGER<sup>a</sup> was made before three witnesses on December 3, 1608. It began with a religious thought, gave his entire estate equally to wife JOAN and son WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> during her life; specified that she should have the "gov<sup>t</sup>ment and rule" over WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> until his majority, when he should receive about £13 in money. It gave a legacy to the testator's brother William and his five children, made JOAN sole executrix and named as overseers the three witnesses and two other men of whom one was a Henry Franklin, probably a relative of the widow. JOAN married, secondly,<sup>2,8</sup> on January 10, 1611, Marcus Brian of Merton, a neighboring parish,<sup>14</sup> and lost him by death in 1620. The date of death of JOAN has not been found, but an indenture made in 1650 pertains to property (perhaps the family home which had been acquired by ROGER<sup>a</sup> in 1597-8 by a lease designated to run for ten thousand years, then had been willed by him in 1608 to his son WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> who sold<sup>2</sup> his right in the property on April 10, 1650, for £70 to one William Swift of Bicester. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> had evidently made a trip to his old home for this document was signed there by both grantor and grantee before four witnesses and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was then called "Yeoman, of Burcester, als. Bissester, Co. Oxon."<sup>2</sup>

An evidence of further relationship is seen in the fact that Thomas<sup>1</sup> Swift of Dorchester who had married in 1634 Elizabeth<sup>9</sup> Capen (Bernard<sup>1</sup>), applied the term "brother-in-law" to both<sup>48</sup> John<sup>2</sup> Capen and to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER in his will<sup>49</sup> made in 1675.

\*\*While they are sometimes stated<sup>1</sup> to have "probably" crossed the ocean in 1630 with Winthrop's Fleet, that is impossible, for GEORGE<sup>2</sup> was born<sup>2</sup> in England February 14, 1633-4, so the emigration of the family occurred during 1634-5, since the earliest mention<sup>6</sup> of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> at Dorchester was on January 4, 1635-6.

†Other early, but temporary, ancestral residents<sup>4</sup> of Dorchester were JOHN<sup>1</sup> GOYT (COIT) who removed to Marblehead, HENRY<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD who removed to Northampton, MATTHEW<sup>1</sup> GRANT, GEORGE<sup>1</sup> HULL and HUMPHREY<sup>1</sup> PINNEY (see Dawes-Gates II, 371, 453, 659) who all took part in the exodus to the Connecticut towns, and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD who went first to Windsor and later to Hartford and to Northampton.

††WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> has been erroneously stated to have joined the Dorchester church in 1652 but that pertained<sup>10</sup> to his son of the same name.

‡It has been written and printed<sup>14</sup> of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER that "he does not, however, appear prominently on its (Dorchester's) records." The compiler takes exception to such a statement, claiming that continuous, unselfish, public service in minor matters argues a loyalty, patience and a finer character than the spot light of occasional high position would have given. Consequently this chapter will report more minutely than most herein, the endless ways in which WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> served his town and time.

than was WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER. The marvel is that he had any time left for the support of his family. His unselfish diligence in public service deserves at least a summary showing its extent. The dates shown are all inclusive: he served<sup>7,25</sup> as a \*rater or assessor in 1645, 1651, 1658-60, 1668-1670; as a \*selectman<sup>5,7,25</sup> in 1637-8, 1647, 1652, 1661-8, 1671-4, 1678-81, 1685-7; as commissioner<sup>26</sup> to end small causes in 1662-73 and 1678-81; as grand juryman<sup>31</sup> in 1673 and 1677; as deputy<sup>26</sup> to the general court in 1654, 1666-70, 1678-81, and 1683-5, as clerk<sup>26</sup> of the town's military company in 1663, and as early as 1640 he had been appointed by the court<sup>11</sup> to evaluate the Dorchester live stock. But his more extensive service was as a surveyor<sup>27</sup> for in those days men familiar with the general terrain and possessing sufficient education to make surveys were constantly in demand "to view" or search for a tract not already assigned, which might fitly accommodate a new settler or the expanding needs of an older one; or "to view" the most suitable location for a road. The next step was to "lay out" these tracts or highways. A further occupation was to locate and mark boundaries between towns or owners. On tasks of this sort, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> is recorded as having been called upon<sup>27</sup> forty-nine times, and doubtless many instances failed to reach the record. He was even called to serve in an advisory way, when others were to do the surveying.<sup>27</sup> In one instance<sup>28</sup> in 1668 he received as remuneration three shillings six pence per day as a surveyor.

WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was also intimately connected<sup>6,28</sup> with the Dorchester school (see Leeds, p. 405), being one of the proprietors (as was also ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP) who agreed in 1639 that a tax\*\* of £20 per year should be collected among them to pay a schoolmaster. As is explained elsewhere, Thompson's Island had been granted them by the General Court in 1634-5, had been dedicated by the town in 1639 for the support of their school and its grant was rescinded in 1648.<sup>6,28</sup> The townsmen rankled under what they considered an injustice and in 1659 directed ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP to ask the court for a return of the island to Dorchester or for a grant of one thousand acres elsewhere. The latter request was acquiesced in and in December, 1662, Captain CLAPP, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER and one other<sup>28</sup> were "ordered appointed and intreated to Seeke out a place or places" for the court's grant. Intermediately, however, the town had set aside one thousand acres of its own land for the support of the school and SUMNER and CLAPP with two others were ordered to decide the location of that tract also, but no evidence of resultant action on their part is known until 1663 when they laid out three hundred acres of the town's own territory at the junction of the Dorchester and Dedham line with the Neponset River.<sup>6</sup> The greater service performed by WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> in connection with Dorchester's school was, however, as one of the two feofees or trustees "for to 'lett and sett' (lease or rent) the school lands at their best discretion"<sup>28</sup> and from this time on until December, 1680, these two men carried the responsibility of handling the school lands to finance the school. Then they asked to "be dismissed of that work and others chosen in ther roome."<sup>28</sup> WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was also appointed in 1666, 1671-2 and 1681 to see about a school teacher and in 1675 he was sent to

\*As rater he was at least once associated with our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON. As selectman he was at least one year in the company of RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS while many years of his service, as selectman, were spent in association with ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP and later with his son SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP.

\*\*The claim is seen<sup>6</sup> that this was the earliest public provision made for a free school by a direct tax or assessment on the inhabitants of a town in this or any other country.

represent the town at the County Court<sup>28</sup> relative to a legacy<sup>6</sup> of £104 left by Christopher Gibson to buy land for the school.

In October, 1678, in keeping with the royal requirement, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> with his sons Roger<sup>2</sup>, Increase<sup>2</sup> and Samuel<sup>2</sup> of Dorchester and GEORGE<sup>2</sup> of Milton, all signed<sup>31</sup> the oath of allegiance.

Evidence of the fairness of Dorchester to the Indians is shown in June, 1665, when WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER and two others were appointed to meet<sup>28</sup> with Josiah Sachem (sometimes called Joseph or Wampatuck) "and to treat with him, to see what the demand of the Indians is; as respecting any of Dorchester Land; and to make full and compleat agreement, if they see thier demands be but reason . . ." He was also named<sup>28</sup> to represent Dorchester at court in 1667, and in 1668 was paid for twelve days' attendance there.

Aside from his items of payment as deputy to the General Court, the only acquisition of any personal sort recorded from the town to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER (and these items were common also to all other inhabitants) were the collection<sup>28</sup> in 1662 of £1 and in 1666 of ten shillings for the killing of two wolves; and for the permission<sup>28</sup> in 1675 to get three loads of "Clopboard" out of the common cedar swamp.

It seems as though the selectmen may have sometimes taken advantage of the willingness of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> to be of service for in 1653 he was appointed by them to keep non-commoners from cutting wood at Squantum's neck<sup>28</sup> (see map, p. 275) and in 1658 he was deputized to notify a Mrs. Goer that she should not use any land in Dorchester for building, haymaking or any other purpose. In 1667 he had the unhappy task of informing<sup>28</sup> Widow Hims who had lately come to town that she was not welcome and must return from whence she came.<sup>28</sup> No task is more undesirable than soliciting funds, but in 1673 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was designated<sup>28</sup> by the selectmen to take a sergeant with him and visit the several squadrons "and take ther Subscriptions" for repair of the Castle (see p. 165) in Boston Harbor, then in charge of Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP. The widow George had been keeping a house of entertainment in Dorchester, but not satisfactorily, for in April, 1680, the County Court required the selectmen to find some "meet person" to keep such a house, but they were unable to find a man willing to undertake it, and so reported. The following January they repeated that report and added that the widow George was willing to continue as innkeeper, if permitted, and that "WILLIAM SUMNER who is one of our selectmen, will engage for one yeer to doe the best he can to inspect into the Gouverment of the house if he be impowered soe to doe by the Hon<sup>rd</sup> Court."<sup>28</sup> Subsequently others relieved him in this matter.

The land holdings of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER included various small tracts<sup>28</sup> in 1635-6 including three acres of fresh marsh<sup>28</sup> next to Goodman FORD, the purchase<sup>2</sup> in September of 1637 of a house, two home lots, a great lot and meadow from Joshua Carter of Dorchester for which WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> paid £28. In that year he was granted his proportionate share in the neck and in the cow pasture,<sup>28</sup> (see map, p. 275) as well as the swamp which was adjacent<sup>28</sup> to his home lot if he would pay his share of the cost of building a "cart bridge over the water." In 1659 when HENRY<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD (Dawes-Gates, II, 844) and other Dorchester men, including GEORGE<sup>2</sup> SUMNER, were planning removal to Northampton WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> purchased<sup>2</sup> from WOODWARD eight acres of his Dorchester land for £14 and on November 14 acknowl-

edgment of the transfer was made by WOODWARD and his wife ELIZABETH. In May, 1662, when Milton was set off from Dorchester WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> owned sixty acres there on which his son GEORGE<sup>2</sup> settled. This was the share assigned<sup>19</sup> to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> when the sixth division of Dorchester lands was made in 1660, and was often referred to as the "Parallel Lines" (see map, p. 275) for the lots were most of them long and narrow, running from the Neponset River in a southeasterly direction to the Braintree line.

In 1667-8 a tax list shows<sup>28</sup> that plow land on the Dorchester neck was assessed at half a penny per acre and that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER had fourteen acres there. This may have been the plot of land at the neck which adjoined land of ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP and which in December, 1674, was in friendly controversy as to the common boundary<sup>28</sup> so that arbitration was requested by CLAPP and agreed to by SUMNER.

What was called<sup>52</sup> the "Twelve Divisions" of the "New Grant" to Dorchester which extended from the Great Blue Hill southward to the Plymouth Colony Line (see Clapp, p. 165) was surveyed in 1696-7 and lots were assigned to the original proprietors of Dorchester or to their estates (see map, p. 275). WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER was already dead about eight years but lot number fifteen, consisting of two hundred forty acres, was allocated to him, to his son Increase<sup>2</sup> and one other man, and an additional lot of one hundred forty-two acres which adjoined Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP's lot, was given to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> — or rather, to his estate. This district eventually became Canton.

The matter of proportionate responsibility for fencing was often in controversy with procrastination sometimes entering in and some such condition must have existed at Dorchester for on March 18, 1637-8, it was ordered that all the home lots and great lots must be sufficiently fenced "agaynst swine and great cattle" by the twenty fifth of that month<sup>28</sup> "on payne of thre shillings for euy (every) goad\* found defectiue." In this case WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> held five acres in both neck and cow pasture and owed in each case two goads, twelve rods of fence. In 1641 the rule was that ownership of each three acres brought requirement to build<sup>28</sup> two rods of fence — doubtless for the common lands, and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> owed two rods. In February, 1646-7, the confusion and disagreement relative to fencing was so great that a plan was made to ask three men from neighboring Roxbury to decide how much each Dorchester man should build "about the grett lotts, the capttins neck the 6 akers lotts" and other lands. Fifty five owners,\*\* including WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER signed this document<sup>28</sup> and he was assigned six rods, thirteen and one-half feet.

The only recorded suggestions of military service found for WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER (though every able bodied man under sixty had to hold himself ready for service in those hard days) are when in December, 1645-6, being called "Sergeant SUMNER," he was chosen as bailiff;<sup>28</sup> his service as clerk<sup>26</sup> of the military company in 1663 and the unusual personal possession of five suits of armor as late as January, 1675-6, which he then turned over to the commissary, probably for use in King Philip's War, and at that time he asked the selectmen to record the following receipt therefor:

\*A goad was about ten feet.

\*\*Others who agreed to abide by the decision of these arbitrators<sup>28</sup> were ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP and RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS.

"17 January 1675 Rec<sup>c</sup> of Mr

WILLIAM SUMNER five Sut of Armor markt one N, one R one Y, one W, and X, I say  
 Rec<sup>c</sup>. by John Faireweather Comisary the head peice belonging to the sute markt R  
 is markt with 4 notches."<sup>23</sup>

One of the matters which must have sunk most deeply into the heart of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was the threatened loss of the colonists' precious charter and in 1664 one hundred and two Dorchester men,<sup>13</sup> including\* WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, prepared and signed a most powerful petition to the General Court<sup>6</sup> urging it to make all possible effort to avoid this document's nullification (see Appendix "B," p. 694).

The hints we find of the benefactions of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> are not numerous but show a helpful sympathy in various directions. One item, in September, 1667, when the selectmen paid him one shilling "toward painters stockings" was puzzling indeed until a further item was found as of 1668 when the selectmen paid two shillings six pence "for a pa shooues" for painter and for making his waistcoat. Apparently this man Painter was quite unattached and of a lazy disposition but by June, 1680, the town had enough of him for an order was sent to Roger Billing, sr. "to discharge the towne of Thomas painter or to giue bond to secure the towne."<sup>28</sup> In 1670 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> subscribed toward the care of "Stock's child" and in 1681 was occupied arranging for the support of "Robt. Stils boy."<sup>28</sup>

As for the religious life in Dorchester and the part of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and his family in it, the covenant of their church was signed<sup>9</sup> on August 23, 1636, and after the signatures of the minister and six organizing men, the names of the members follow in two columns, the men at the left of the page and their wives opposite. The ninth names are those of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER and of his wife "MARIE", he signing by autograph and she by her mark.<sup>9</sup> This certainly seems to imply charter membership within the re-formed church under the leadership of the Rev. Richard Mather. In 1644-5 a plan was made to build a new meeting house on land owned by Robert Hayward and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> with ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP and three others were appointed a committee to lay a tax which would raise £250 for that purpose. This structure was erected<sup>4</sup> in 1645 at the site of the former one at the northerly end of Pleasant Street (see map, p. 275) and is said to have been subsequently moved onto Meeting House Hill. In April, 1652, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and Isaac Jones were called before the church, but evidently on a misunderstanding for further on the record says<sup>9</sup> of it, "nothings". In 1663 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and John Capen were put in charge<sup>28</sup> of the two hundred acres of land laid out for the ministry,<sup>28</sup> and in July, 1664, they two were appointed by the selectmen to fence in the burying place and to collect from John Blake money willed by his father for that purpose.<sup>6,27</sup> A matter of annoyance occurred in the summer of 1665 for three men built<sup>28</sup> a gallery or seat for themselves in the church without permission and protest was voiced by WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP and others. The offenders were told not to occupy it "untill such time as the Town's mind may be fully knowne." In February, 1671-2, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and six other men were appointed as a committee<sup>6,28</sup> to decide upon a place on the Rocky hill to which the present meeting house might be moved or upon which a new one might be built and they were given full power to complete their plan.

\*WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> signed, as in the case of other documents, with his autograph, and our other ancestors who joined him in this petition were SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> DAVENPORT, RICHARD<sup>1</sup> LEEDS and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON.

Perhaps because of the military management of King Philip's war WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> became critical and was under consequent disapproval for on<sup>9</sup> September 5, 1675, "WILLIAM SUMNER appeared before y<sup>e</sup> Church before the Sacrament to give Satisfaction for offensive speches\* uttered against y<sup>e</sup> Comittee of y<sup>e</sup> Milicia," so even the most trusted citizens were not immune to criticism if they offended. At various times there had been discussion<sup>9</sup> and disagreement in the church as to the half way covenant, eligibility for baptism, etc. Some such matters evidently disturbed WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> for we are told<sup>9</sup> that on April 8, 1677, there

"was appointed a day of Humilliation to be kept on our next lectuer day for y<sup>e</sup> Consummating of o<sup>r</sup> renewing y<sup>e</sup> Covenant — but some of the breatheren weer not soe Cleer as to y<sup>e</sup> extent of baptisme.

"The 18 Aprill 77 y<sup>e</sup> sollemn day of fast was observed & after y<sup>e</sup> morning exersiz y<sup>e</sup> Covenant was againe publickly read & the Vote put forth or Called for & the Vote was in the affermative noe man speaking against it. only Bro<sup>r</sup> WILLIAM SUMNER went out of y<sup>e</sup> meeting when it was going to be read & Came not againe in y<sup>e</sup> afternoone."

This goes to show that he had a mind of his own and had to feel convinced before he would acquiesce, but this did not injure his standing in the town for the following November the church appointed him to attend<sup>9</sup> a council at the third church in Boston (Old South) in company with the elders and deacon; in 1679 he was chosen<sup>9</sup> to be a messenger, with expenses paid, to a "Senod" in Boston; in 1681 in company of the elders and deacon he was to invite Rev. John<sup>3</sup> Danforth (Samuel<sup>2</sup>, NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>) to preach at Dorchester and from 1655 through his later days he was repeatedly referred to as "brother SUMNER".

From a purely personal point of view we may summarize that portraits\*\* of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and MARY, his wife, were brought<sup>8,13</sup> to America by them, descended in the line of the eldest son until 1850 when a descendant in the ninth generation attempted to have them restored, and they fell into pieces; that about 1650 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> made a trip to his old home in England (see note, p. 572) and while there sold his inherited property; that about 1659 the family circle was broken by the removal of Roger<sup>2</sup> to Lancaster and of GEORGE<sup>2</sup> to Northampton; that after a life in Dorchester of forty-six years WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER lost his wife MARY by death on June 7, 1676. He lived on in his old home as a widower for twelve years, evidently cared for by servants for he left bequests<sup>49</sup> to two such by his will. His eldest son William<sup>2</sup> of Boston had died; three of his sons had become deacons in the church; Roger<sup>2</sup> and GEORGE<sup>2</sup> had returned from their absences to the westward and were resident at nearby Milton while the two younger sons, and probably also daughter Joan<sup>2</sup>, had removed to far away South Carolina. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> was active in town affairs, almost if not quite, until the time of his death, though his later years must have been embittered by the ruthless dominance of the royal governor, Andros. In December, 1685, a document<sup>50</sup> was signed bearing upon land once owned by Thomas<sup>1</sup> Swift and later by his son of the same name. It bore depositions by WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER who said he was then aged about eighty, by Thomas<sup>1</sup> Tilestone, aged seventy-six and others whose names are familiar.<sup>50</sup>

\*In spite of his criticism of the military, the following January he presented five suits of armor<sup>28</sup> to the commissary as is shown elsewhere. His criticism may likely have been accentuated by the fact that his son Roger<sup>2</sup> Sumner with his family was resident in Lancaster when the Indians raided the town.

\*\*They are said to have borne<sup>8,13</sup> the date of 1623 but 1625, the year of their marriage seems more likely.

WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> made his\* will<sup>49</sup> on March 1, 1688, dividing all his land and housing into six equal parts and giving one part each to his children Roger<sup>2</sup>, GEORGE<sup>2</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Increase<sup>2</sup>, daughter Joan Way and the sixth part to the nine children of his deceased son William<sup>2</sup>. The document<sup>2,49</sup> further specified that all of the movables were to be equally divided among his grandchildren and great grandchildren, those only excepted who were grandchildren through William<sup>2</sup>, who had received real estate. His debts and funeral charges were to be borne by those to whom the housing and land had been given and twenty shillings each were to be given by his son GEORGE<sup>2</sup> to the testator's former servants Rebecca Adams and Anthony Hancock. He named his five living children as joint executors, made Sergt. SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP one of the overseers, and died<sup>12</sup> at Dorchester on December 9, 1688, only about a month short of eighty-three years of age. The inventory of his estate, taken<sup>13</sup> on January 23, 1688-9, showed a valuation of £509-9-11 and the will was proved<sup>2,3</sup> on March 24, 1691-2.

On the reverse of the will of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER was penned<sup>2</sup> by some one of his children:

"Whereas it hath pleased Almighty God in the Way of his holy providence to Take away our honored father by death, WILLIAM SUMNER, the aged, of Dorchester, this ninth day of Desember in the yeare 1688. The Charges of his desente buriall is as followeth

	£	s.	d.
In primise gloues . . . . .	01.	18.	09
in Wine . . . . .	01.	11.	02
It. for the Cofein [coffin]. . . . .	00.	08.	00
It. for diging the graue . . . . .	00.	04.	00
It. for recording his death . . . . .	00.	04.	00
It. for ringing the bell . . . . .	00.	01.	00

[ 4. 6. 11 ]"<sup>22</sup>

The children of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and MARY (WEST) SUMNER (certainly three and probably four of them born at Bicester, Oxfordshire, England) were<sup>2,3,4,8,12,14</sup>

- I. William<sup>2</sup>, "eldest son",<sup>2</sup> b. at Bicester; d. at Boston, Feb. 1675; m. abt. 1650 Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Clement (Augustine<sup>1</sup> of Dorchester).
- II. Roger<sup>2</sup>, bap. Aug. 8, 1632, at Bicester;<sup>2</sup> d. at Milton May 26, 1698, aged 66; m. abt. 1656 prob. at Lancaster Mary<sup>2</sup> Joslin (Thomas<sup>1</sup> of Lancaster).<sup>16</sup> He lived at Lancaster for seventeen years until that town was abandoned in March, 1676, and then at Milton.
- III. GEORGE<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- IV. Joan<sup>2</sup>, said<sup>14</sup> to have been b. at Bicester; d. after<sup>14</sup> 1696; m. prob. as 2nd wife, by 1658-9 Aaron Way<sup>2</sup> of Roxbury and Boston. She bore him five children before his death<sup>15</sup> in 1695 and is said<sup>15</sup> to have removed to South Carolina in 1696 with her two brothers. Her sons Aaron and William Way of Salem in 1724 conveyed<sup>2</sup> all their lands inherited from WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER.
- V. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, b. at Dorchester May 18, 1638; is said to have removed<sup>14</sup> in 1696 to Dorchester, South Carolina,<sup>16</sup> taking most of his children. He m. at Dorchester<sup>12</sup> Mar. 7, 1658-9, Rebecca<sup>2</sup> Staples (John<sup>1</sup> of Weymouth and Dorchester).<sup>16</sup>
- VI. Increase<sup>2</sup>, b. at Dorchester Feb. 23, 1642-3; removed 1696 to Dorchester, So. Car.<sup>16</sup> taking<sup>14</sup> most of his children; m. at Dorchester<sup>12</sup> by Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP on Mar. 26, 1667, to Sarah<sup>2</sup> Staples (John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>16</sup>

\*The date is given<sup>2</sup> elsewhere as June 23, 1681.

GEORGE<sup>2</sup> SUMNER (*William*<sup>1</sup>) was born<sup>2</sup> on February 14, 1633-4, and baptized on March 1, following, at Bicester, England. He died at Milton<sup>17</sup> December 11, 1715, in his eighty-first year, having married at Northampton<sup>14,42</sup> on November 7, 1662, MARY<sup>2</sup> BAKER (see Baker, p. 68) who survived him over three years, dying at Milton<sup>17</sup> on April 1, 1719. During his early life his home would have been at Dorchester with his parents. In 1656, subsequent<sup>10</sup> to May, he and his brother Roger<sup>2</sup> became members of the Dorchester Church and on May 6, 1657, they two completed their citizenship by taking the oath of freemen<sup>11</sup> in company with JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup> HOLDEN.

A slight digression seems suitable just here to explain a certain migration linking Dorchester with remote Northampton (see map, p. 618). The Rev. Richard<sup>1</sup> Mather, who had served the Dorchester Church from 1636 onward, had a son Eleazer<sup>2</sup> who was born there, studied for the ministry at Harvard and in 1658 was invited to preach for the Northampton people on trial. He accepted and in 1658-9, probably because of his presence there, three Dorchester men with their families made the long and dangerous trek through the wilderness to reside at Northampton. These men were William<sup>1</sup> Clark, Henry<sup>1</sup> Cunliffe and our HENRY<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD (see Dawes-Gates, II, 841) who sold at least a part of his Dorchester land to WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER before his removal in 1659. It seems highly probable that GEORGE<sup>2</sup> SUMNER made the trip west with these three families, perhaps to help in driving their stock, for his name appears on Northampton records<sup>34</sup> as of 1659-60, being coincident there with the first appearance of the names of his three townsmen.

As an inkling of what cross country travel meant in those days of unmarked roads, when the compass would have been their only aid, it seems well to quote a brief report<sup>33</sup> of the trip as it pertained to William<sup>1</sup> Clark:

"He moved his family to Northampton in 1659. His wife rode on horseback, with two baskets, called panniers, slung across the horse, carrying one boy in each basket, and one in her lap, her husband, fifty years old, preceeding on foot."<sup>33</sup>

We are told<sup>34</sup> that for the first time, Northampton *sold*\* certain tracts to settlers in 1659-60 and that GEORGE<sup>2</sup> SUMNER was one of the first purchasers at that time, acquiring an eight acre lot, "the first lot on the upland south of Mill River" and eight acres of meadow.<sup>34</sup> His home lot was adjacent to that of our JOSEPH<sup>1</sup> PARSONS whose wife had such an unhappy experience when charged with witchcraft (see Dawes-Gates II, 625).

Here in Northampton GEORGE<sup>2</sup> met and married his wife and they probably returned at once to Dorchester or perhaps may have spent a short time together at Northampton, for an unexplained town ruling<sup>34</sup> made in April, 1665, adjudged the home lots of GEORGE<sup>2</sup> SUMNER and of four other men to be forfeited because of their failure to meet certain unstated requirements of their grants. To the four others, their grants were promptly renewed, with insistence, however, upon the original stipulation; but in the case of GEORGE<sup>2</sup> it was August, 1665, before the court ruled that since the "Town tooke the forfeite" they must make restitution by giving GEORGE<sup>2</sup> what could be spared from the public use.<sup>34</sup>

\*Some of the purchasers paid<sup>34</sup> only the nominal sum of ten shillings. It seems wholly possible that the reason GEORGE<sup>2</sup> purchased land instead of acquiring a proprietor's right, and that he failed to bring his church membership to Northampton, was because of a definite plan to return presently to the east; and his lack of permanent placing may have had a bearing on the forfeit of the land, or, indeed, he may have left Northampton before the forfeit was declared.

If he had not left previously, it would seem as though he would wish to do so under such grudging reparation, but on the other hand the claim is definitely made<sup>19,35</sup> that he had already returned to his father's home about 1662 and had, that year built a home on the Milton\* property which his father had acquired in 1660. So the date of his return eastward is left rather uncertain but both the birth<sup>12</sup> and baptism<sup>10</sup> of his first child in February, 1663-4, were recorded in Dorchester where his church membership had remained. Milton was incorporated in 1662 but the records for nearly eight of its early years have been lost,<sup>32</sup> and the earliest extant tax list pertains<sup>32</sup> to 1674, so an uncertainty as to that town exists on various points. The home built by GEORGE<sup>2</sup> is variously said to have been<sup>35</sup> "on Brush Hill" in the western part of Milton (see map, p. 275), or to have been<sup>19,35</sup> "in the field below the "Ferry\*\* Houses," or "south east of the Ferry houses."<sup>35</sup> At the time of the division of his estate it was described as being "on the south side of the way [road] on Brush Hill. leading to Punkapog." A Dorchester neighbor took up a stray black bull in January, 1665, which GEORGE<sup>2</sup> appraised at thirty-three shillings and though the animal was cried three times, no owner appeared.<sup>50</sup>

It is interesting to note that at Milton in the fall of 1675 during King Philip's War a powder mill<sup>35</sup> had been erected, which is claimed to have been the first one in New England. Milton and Boston men had undertaken this venture and its value to the country was so evident that the General Court ordered that a constant guard should be maintained to protect the property.

In April, 1677, GEORGE<sup>2</sup> was granted liberty,<sup>27</sup> upon his father's account, to take two or three hundred rails off from beyond the sixth division† and the line of the "blew hils."

On October 12, 1673, MARY, wife of GEORGE<sup>2</sup>, had become a member of the church<sup>10</sup> at Dorchester, where the Miltonites attended, until they employed a pastor of their own, and there six of their children were baptized<sup>10</sup> between 1663 and 1679. However, Milton built a meeting house long before they had an organized church body, indeed their *second* meeting house was under consideration as early as 1670-1. They planned to raise £50 for the structure, but that was a task, indeed, in those days of barter, and lack of actual money. Of course logs were acquired for the felling of them and by a vote, six acres of the town timber land was set aside "to By nails and glass for the new meeting house." The plan was that each man could earn his proportion of the £50 tax, by cutting wood from this tract and hauling it to the town landing for shipment to Boston and for each cord so delivered he would be credited with one shilling three pence! That suggests a good bargain for Boston. It was further voted that if the six acres did not suffice, enough more should "be taken as will pay all the Rats [rates] for that building."<sup>35</sup> This meeting house served the town for fifty-eight years, until long after the death of GEORGE<sup>2</sup>

\*Milton was for many years called "Unquety" or "Uncatty" from the Indian name Uncataquissett.<sup>32</sup> The fact that Roger<sup>2</sup> Sumner also settled at Milton by or before 1681 (following his return from Lancaster at its abandonment in 1676) raises a slight uncertainty, when the "old Sumner house" is referred to, for while the home of GEORGE<sup>2</sup> was built much earlier, they were probably both of them on the tract acquired by their father WILLIAM in 1660, and in their later days both of them would have become "old."

\*\*A great great granddaughter of GEORGE<sup>2</sup>, Rhoda Kingsbury married about 1806 Simon Ferry and bore him eleven children of whom the seventh was George Sumner Ferry. Simon bought much of the GEORGE<sup>2</sup> SUMNER estate from the heirs, and lived on it as did also this son of his.<sup>35,36</sup> Some of the estate of GEORGE<sup>2</sup> was, however, retained by other descendants and still occupied<sup>32</sup> by them as late as 1884.

†The sixth division was the equivalent of early Milton and the "blew hils" were its southern boundary (see map, p. 275).

SUMNER. The Milton church organization was completed<sup>35</sup> in April, 1678, at a meeting held in Dorchester Meeting House when twelve men signed the covenant of the new church five of whom, including GEORGE<sup>2</sup> SUMNER had previously been<sup>35</sup> members at Dorchester. The Rev. Peter Thacher became their pastor and on February 23, 1680-1, the five selectmen of Milton of whom GEORGE<sup>2</sup> SUMNER was one, signed a deed<sup>5,7</sup> of gift which they acknowledged in February, 1681-2, transferring twenty acres of the Milton church land to the Rev. Thacher. MARY, wife of GEORGE<sup>2</sup>, with their children, was dismissed<sup>10,17</sup> from Dorchester to Milton Church in 1681. Scattered items from the journal<sup>39</sup> of the Rev. Thacher show that in 1680 GEORGE<sup>2</sup> was one of five men who each brought the pastor two cart-loads of wood; that in 1682 GEORGE<sup>2</sup> did a day's plowing for him; in 1685 sent him two white pigeons and that at various times conferences between these men occurred.

The spirit and custom of the times may be sensed by such items as the following from the Rev. Thacher's journal:

- April 25, 1679 — "Dr. Butler let my blood."  
 April 29, 1679 — ". . . this evening was the first time of our playing at nine pins in our alley."  
 April 30, 1679 — ". . . I paid 5/6 for a pack of nine pins and a bowle."  
 May 7, 1679 — "I bought an Indian of Mr. Checkley and was to pay £5 a month after I received her and £5 more in a quarter of a year."  
 May 14, 1679 — "This night Margaret an Indian servant came to live with me."  
 July 21, 1679 — "I went and prayed with Mrs. Hayward after which she sent me a pot of honey for my cold."  
 Aug. 18, 1679 — "Came home and found my Indian girl had liked to have knocked my Theodora on head by letting her fall, whereupon I took a good walnut stick and beat the Indian to purpose, till she promised to do so no more."  
 Sept. 11, 1680 — (after the arrival of himself and family at Milton) — "Goodman Tucker brought some currant wine and cakes and a loaf of bread. Goodman Crane sent a cheese and an apple pie and some turnips and bread. Young Daniels sent a quart of wine, Mr. Holman a quarter of mutton and some tobacco. Mr. Swift brought us a joint of roast mutton for supper and some beer."  
 Sept. 24, 1680 — "Old Goodman Vose gave me a barrel of cider and some honey."  
 Oct. 5, 1680 — "I rid to Weymouth lecture . . . afterwards we ate some cake & smoked. Mr. Mighell Mr Fiske prayed after which we supped & I came home."  
 Oct. 8, 1680 — "I tried to teach my mare to amble by cross spanning of her."  
 Oct. 11, 1680 — "Jonathan Gulliver killed and dresses us a hog."  
 Nov. 7, 1681 — "Thomas Swift came to live with me I was to give him £12. for a year 4 in money and 8 at the shop."<sup>39</sup>  
 Dec. 12, 1690 — "There hath died in the Town in sixteen months last past 30 men, women & children. 13 of the small pox 17 of other distempers most of them of the fever — and there hath been sixty six visited with the small pox in the Town in about a year." (See Davenport, p. 276 for other items from this journal.)

The journal furnishes evidence<sup>39</sup> also of the deep concern of the people at the threatened loss of their charter, by public meetings, speeches, conferences and fasts by the General Court and elders (see Appendix "B," p. 694).

Four or more Sumner children of the fourth generation were baptized at Milton

between 1693 and 1698 in the right of their grandfather, Lt. GEORGE<sup>2</sup> SUMNER, perhaps because their parents lacked active membership. GEORGE<sup>2</sup> was chosen<sup>17</sup> as a deacon at Milton on May 7, 1699, and ordained as such on July 30 of that year, holding that office until his death.

The public service performed by GEORGE<sup>2</sup> in town affairs included being a selectman<sup>19,35</sup> during the years 1677-93, 1696-9 and 1706-7 all inclusive; being a grand juryman<sup>31</sup> in 1674 and 1677; being Representative to the General Court<sup>35</sup> in 1691-2, 1708-9 and perhaps also<sup>32</sup> in 1703. He was nominated<sup>39</sup> for the office of Ensign in 1683 and became a lieutenant (doubtless of the train band) before 1693; and two of his sons, Samuel<sup>3</sup> and William<sup>3</sup> who took part in Sir William Phipps' Expedition against Quebec in 1690 gave their lives\* in that poorly planned cause.<sup>6,10,30,35</sup>

As early as May, 1682, GEORGE<sup>2</sup> had purchased from Simon Peke and his wife Prudence of Mendon, one half of their house lot in that town and in course of time two of his sons Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> and Joseph<sup>3</sup> removed to that place,<sup>18</sup> while his son EDWARD<sup>3</sup> removed to nearby Roxbury leaving only George<sup>3</sup> and Benjamin<sup>3</sup> to carry on at Milton.

It is stated<sup>35</sup> that in 1710\*\* during the later life of GEORGE<sup>2</sup> SUMNER there was set up in Milton a rolling and slitting mill, "the first one of its kind in the province."<sup>35</sup> In the forge, iron would be made into bars about six feet long, three inches wide and half an inch thick. The slitting mill, by a secret process, would roll a bar into a ribbon and slit it into rods about one quarter inch through, or smaller if desired.<sup>41</sup> These, when sold, were cut by hand into suitable lengths and hammered into nails. It is stated<sup>41</sup> that Judge Peter Oliver, the loyalist, offered a reward to anyone who would obtain for him the secrets of the slitting process and one Hashai Thomas did so by disguising himself and acting the part of a simpleton. And certain it is that at a later date Judge Oliver owned and ran a slitting mill.<sup>41</sup>

GEORGE<sup>2</sup> SUMNER called "Deacon," died intestate<sup>2</sup> on December 11, 1715, leaving an estate<sup>49</sup> of £812 of which the major part was in real estate. Administration was granted in March, 1715-6, to sons George<sup>3</sup> and Benjamin<sup>3</sup> both of Milton, who were given one year to render an account. An agreement was entered into on June 11, 1724<sup>49,55</sup> by the heirs "to the satisfaction of each," wherein the children of Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> were represented by their guardians and whereby EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER received "all the Lands that was our Faither's that lyeth in the Township of Dorchester Devided or Undevided; Excepting two little Lotts in Blew Hill meadow," which George<sup>3</sup> acquired.<sup>55</sup> This share of EDWARD<sup>3</sup> was valued at £31-10. The division of the estate<sup>55</sup> of GEORGE<sup>2</sup> listed also upland on the north side of the way on Brush Hill leading toward Punkapog; the building and land of GEORGE<sup>2</sup> on the south side of the above named way on Brush Hill (see map, p. 275) five acres of salt meadow and three acres beside, in Milton, etc.<sup>55</sup>

Benjamin<sup>3</sup> resided in the family home at Milton and during his occupancy the house burned down, in April, 1748, in the absence of the family so that even their wearing apparel was lost. The house was rebuilt and for sentiment's sake a charred timber salvaged from the first structure was built into the new one.<sup>19</sup>

\*Seven men bearing the name of Sumner and resident in Milton<sup>44</sup> failed to return from that Expedition. Beside these two sons of GEORGE<sup>2</sup>, there were Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> (William<sup>3</sup>); Jazaniah<sup>3</sup> and Samuel<sup>3</sup> (Roger<sup>3</sup>); William<sup>3</sup> (Increase<sup>3</sup>) and one more William Sumner.<sup>6,10,30,35</sup>

\*\*Other dates given<sup>41</sup> for the establishment of the slitting mill vary greatly, as 1650 and 1730 or later.

During the years of widowhood of MARY (BAKER) SUMNER some family trouble<sup>17</sup> came to pass, for in October, 1718, her son George<sup>3</sup> "had his sister M<sup>rs</sup> Elizabeth Sumner" (who seemingly must have been the wife of Benjamin<sup>3</sup> with whom the widow lived in the old home) brought before their minister, the Rev. Peter Thacher, "for scandalizing his owne mother, and represented her as a witch." The minister called in the deacons, witnesses, etc. and found the accused party guilty of a breach of the fifth, sixth and ninth commandments "and she confessed her fault and craued forgiveness of God and of all whome she had offended" and then George<sup>3</sup> "and ye rest reciued satisfaction and so forgaue her, and I (the pastor) was to signify to y<sup>e</sup> Chh. that satisfaction was giuen and taken.<sup>17</sup> So the slandered name of widow MARY was cleared and she died<sup>17</sup> at Milton on April 1, 1719, at the age of seventy-seven, having made a will<sup>49</sup> on August 19, 1717, which was proved<sup>49</sup> on April 20, 1719. It called her the widow of Deacon GEORGE<sup>2</sup> and showed that she had continued to live in the old home with her youngest son Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, to whom she gave a feather [bed?], bolster and two coverlits, two cows, the biggest brass kettle and an iron kettle, a great table, a pair of large andirons, a fire pan, tongs and slice,\* two joint stools and two painted chairs. She gave several small articles to her grandchild Ruth Swinerton, specified that the remainder of the movables should be equally divided "amongst all my children, to every one alike"<sup>49</sup> and signed the document with her mark.

The children of GEORGE<sup>2</sup> and MARY (BAKER) SUMNER, all born at Milton except the first, were<sup>2,8,14,17,20</sup>

- I. Mary<sup>3</sup>, b. at Dorchester<sup>12</sup> Feb. 12, bap.<sup>10</sup> 21, 1663-4; m. bef.<sup>17</sup> 1693 Joseph<sup>2</sup> Swinerton (Job<sup>1</sup>) of Salem Village. He d. 1731-2 and wife Mary survived him.<sup>17</sup>
- II. \*\*George<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 9, bap.<sup>10</sup> Apr. 15, 1666, being about one-quarter year old; d. at Milton Dec. 18, 1732 or 1733; m. abt. 1694 Ann<sup>3</sup> Tucker (Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>).<sup>18</sup>
- III. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, b. Oct. 19, bap.<sup>10</sup> Dec. 20, 1668, being abt. one-quarter year old; was a Sergeant in Capt. Withington's company in the Canada Expedition of 1690, and was one of those lost.†
- IV. William<sup>3</sup>, b. Apr. 7, 1671; was a soldier in the Canada Expedition and lost.†
- v. Ebenezer<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 9, bap.<sup>10</sup> Mar. 15, 1673-4; said<sup>14</sup> to have d. 1721; m. 1st at Mendon Jan. 18, 1705-6‡ Abigail<sup>3</sup> Lovett (James<sup>2</sup>, Daniel<sup>1</sup>).<sup>18</sup> On Dec. 27, 1721, his brother Joseph<sup>3</sup> and Daniel Lovett adm. his estate<sup>2</sup> but in an agreement of the heirs of GEORGE<sup>2</sup> the children of Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> were represented by their guardians.<sup>49</sup>
- VI. EDWARD<sup>3</sup>, see following.
- VII. Joseph<sup>3</sup>, b. Jan. 25, 1678-9, bap.<sup>10</sup> June 22, 1679; d. at Mendon<sup>18</sup> Mar. 6, 1735; m.<sup>14</sup> abt. 1705-6‡ Sarah Lovett and lived at Mendon. She was doubtless the daughter of James<sup>2</sup> Lovett (Daniel<sup>1</sup>).
- VIII. Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 15, 1683; d. at Milton<sup>35</sup> May 28, 1771, in 81st year; m. at Milton<sup>17</sup> May 2, 1706, Elizabeth Badcock, daughter<sup>20</sup> of Samuel and Hannah ("Emes") Badcock.

\*A "slice" was a long handled paddle or shovel used for removing bread or pies from an oven, clinkers from a fireplace or furnace grate, etc.

\*\*Abigail<sup>6</sup> Sumner, daughter of George<sup>3</sup>, married in 1750 as his second wife Eleazer<sup>4</sup> May (JOHN<sup>3</sup>, JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).<sup>14,23</sup>

†The government about 1737-8 gave land grants<sup>44</sup> for service in this expedition and on the right of Samuel<sup>3</sup> above, his nephew Edward<sup>4</sup> (EDWARD<sup>3</sup>) acquired land at what became Ashburnham while on the right of William<sup>3</sup>, his brother Benjamin<sup>3</sup> received land there.<sup>44</sup> One rendition, however, makes EDWARD<sup>3</sup> acquire the land of Samuel<sup>3</sup>, instead of his son of the same name doing so.

‡The Tyler Genealogy, probably erroneously, states that Abigail<sup>3</sup> Lovett's sister Sarah<sup>3</sup>, became the second wife of Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> Sumner instead of marrying his brother Joseph, yet Joseph<sup>3</sup> Sumner with a wife Sarah had six children at Mendon during the time that Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> and Abigail were having their family.<sup>18</sup>

EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER (*George<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*) was born at Milton<sup>17</sup> on August 29, 1676, and baptized at Dorchester the following October 22 at the age of "about five weeks."<sup>10</sup> He died, doubtless at Roxbury (but was not so recorded) in 1763, having married there<sup>21</sup> on September 25, 1701, ELIZABETH<sup>3</sup> CLAPP (see Clapp, p. 172) who died<sup>21</sup> at that place on September 20, 1758.

A number of letters which bear definitely upon the community's health and somewhat upon the lives of EDWARD<sup>3</sup>, his family and near relatives have been preserved and excerpts from them have been published.<sup>54</sup> They had been written during the period 1710-15, from Dorchester, by Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> Clapp (Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, Nicholas<sup>1</sup>) who married on March 17, 1704, his third cousin Hannah<sup>3</sup> Clapp (SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, ROGER<sup>1</sup>). They were addressed to that man's brother Rev. Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> Clapp of Newport, Rhode Island. In August, 1710, he wrote:

" . . . some families ar so many ill that they are hardly abel to help one another. feuer and agues are uery frequent in this town and I hear brother Ebenezer Sumner\* is taken ill . . ." <sup>54</sup>

In February, 1710-I

" . . . I haue heard that the small pox is very mortal at Newport. I shuld be glad to know the certainty of it and I should be more glad to see you my loueing brother if it might be. My dear and loueing wife\*\* has made some good strabury sarrup and she is afraid it will be spoiled before you come to drink it."

In August, 1711, he wrote:

" . . . My wife hath made some good strabery surop for you against you come to see her."

And

" . . . I shall not wright to you about the grate comotions that are now acting in the world, for I suppose you are acquainted with them allready. It is a time when god's Judgments are abroad in the earth, many of our young men are called into the seruise, many are uisited with sickness; at home God has giuen us this year plentifully of the fruits of the earth, but seems to withhold strength to gather it." <sup>54</sup>

In June, 1711, he wrote:

"Of the small peses of money that you sent too my brothers and sisters Children to encorage them to lern good things I haue giuen to brother† John 3; to brother† Jonathan 3; to brother Ebenezer†† Sumner 5; to brother Samuel‡ Clap 3; to brother EDWARD SUMNER 4; to my one [own] children 3:"

In his next letter of November 11, 1711, he added:

" . . . I hope I shall obserue your directions in disposing of what you sent to encorage them [the children] to lern the 8 part of 119 psalm . . ."

On August 3, 1712, after telling of many local deaths, he added:

"We haue ben all of us ill of the feuer and auger this summer but throug gods goodnes all well now; . . ."

\*Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> Sumner (Roger<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) who had married<sup>56</sup> Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> Clapp (Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, Nicholas<sup>1</sup>) sister of the letter writer.

\*\*Hannah<sup>3</sup> Clapp (SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, ROGER<sup>1</sup>) sister<sup>56</sup> of our ELIZABETH (CLAPP) SUMNER.

†John<sup>3</sup> and Jonathan<sup>3</sup> Clapp (Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, Nicholas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>56</sup>

††Ebenezer<sup>3</sup> Sumner (Roger<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) had married Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> Clapp (Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> Nicholas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>56</sup>

‡Samuel<sup>3</sup> Clapp (SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, ROGER<sup>1</sup>), so brother-in-law.<sup>56</sup>

In January, 1712-3

" . . . Thear be diuers families now uisited with the mezels but not many have dyed in this town but in boston a grate many . . ."

And in January, 1715

" . . . the mezels are in some familys amongs us . . . one in brother Samuel Clap family and 2 in brother EDWARD SUMNER family and many other familys in Roxbury."<sup>54</sup>

The occupations of EDWARD<sup>3</sup> were those of fellmonger\* or dealer in pelts, and of glover.<sup>2</sup> After his marriage, if not before, he settled in Roxbury and spent the remainder of his life there. He inherited his father's Dorchester property to the amount of over £31, paid<sup>54</sup> £8 to Preserved<sup>2</sup> Clapp in 1717 for his right in a one hundred twenty acre lot set out<sup>52</sup> in 1696-7 to the estate of Clapp's father, Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup>, in the "Twelve Divisions" of the "New Grant," later called the South Precinct, incorporated in 1726 as Stoughton and now contained in Canton.<sup>54</sup>

At the death of SAMUEL<sup>2</sup> CLAPP in 1708, ELIZABETH wife of EDWARD<sup>3</sup> as one of the three surviving heirs, inherited<sup>24</sup> Dorchester land at Hawes Hill, at Hawkins Brook, at Little Neck, at Powow Point, Calf Pasture and at Purgatory (see maps, p. 275) as well as a half interest in her deceased father's home, orchard, barn, etc. EDWARD<sup>3</sup> had purchased the property and proprietor's right in Roxbury earlier held by James Frissell, sr., and presumably on that right had land laid out to him<sup>31</sup> or <sup>37</sup> in Roxbury's Pine Swamp and in the Pine Island Meadow. As time went on EDWARD<sup>3</sup> acquired many other pieces of real estate including<sup>46</sup> the John Grosvenor home and the Robert Pierpont home\*\* with four and a half acres in Roxbury; land in outlying sections of Dorchester, such as Stoughton; in Spencer, Brookfield, a four hundred thirty-six acre farm in Sutton,<sup>2,43</sup> (all three towns being in Worcester County) as well as land in Woodstock (now Connecticut). Indeed he acquired land by thirty-four different recorded transfers and appeared as grantor by twenty-seven instruments.<sup>49</sup>

EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER appears to have lived in several different localities during his sixty-two years of life in Roxbury. For several reasons, keen interest attaches to more than one of these and considerable effort has been expended<sup>49</sup> to learn as accurately as possible just which items of interest pertain to which house. Correction will be appreciated if error has been made. His earliest residence<sup>49</sup> appears to have been on Parker Street near the corner of Tremont and near the one time home of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and RHODA GORE. But EDWARD<sup>3</sup> early acquired a tract of about twelve acres bounded by present<sup>46</sup> Roxbury, Cabot, Ruggles and Washington Streets (see map, p. 416). In 1713 the family resided on Washington Street a few rods north of Vernon (which would be on the eastern part of said tract), here the son, Increase<sup>4</sup> (father-to-be of a future governor of Massachusetts) was born and from that house the youth attended Roxbury Free School for his early education. EDWARD<sup>3</sup> either acquired with this land, or built thereon, several other houses, for on October 7, 1736, he and ELIZABETH "for love and affection" deeded<sup>49,50</sup> to son Increase<sup>4</sup> a part of their home property and the "new house." This stood on

\*The term fellmonger applies especially to a dealer in sheepskins who separates the wool from the pelts. In one reference to the occupation of EDWARD<sup>3</sup> it has been erroneously rendered<sup>40</sup> as "fishmonger."

\*\*This was earlier the Hugh Pritchard estate and was described as being "west of Stony River and east of the highway to Muddy River" or in other words on Parker Street toward Gravelly Point (see map, p. 416).

the west side of Washington near present Vernon, in it on November 9, 1746, Increase<sup>5</sup>, the future governor was born and in it in 1763 EDWARD<sup>3</sup> himself died. It has been described<sup>46</sup> as an old-fashioned, two-story, gambrell-roofed house with magnificent button woods on either side of the front door, which were cut down about 1820-30; in 1852 the structure, then not far from a hundred and fifty years old, was moved back from the street to make room for the Hall Block, which is still (1939) standing and occupied by the department store of Timothy Smith.<sup>49</sup> Drake referred to it as being<sup>46</sup> one of the few remaining buildings which ante-dated the siege of Boston.

In 1759 EDWARD<sup>3</sup> deeded\* to his daughter Hannah Newman half an acre of land with the buildings<sup>46</sup> thereon "directly opposite to the east end of the house where I now live" and on March 11, 1760, deeded<sup>49,50</sup> to his son Samuel<sup>4</sup> "for love and affection" "the house I now dwell in", a barn, a work house adjoining the barn, "cyder mill" with the building over it and seventeen acres of land. This building was doubtless<sup>49</sup> the one sold with its "orcharding" by Samuel<sup>4</sup> Sumner to his eccentric son Edward<sup>5</sup> Sumner in July, 1771, to which attaches a special interest in the early Revolutionary period. Immediately after the Battle of Bunker Hill when the final advanced line of American works (near George Tavern\*\* on Boston Neck) crossed Washington Street a little south of Northampton Street (see map, p. 30) they were connected by earth works and abatis round the curved shore line to some elevated ground at the corner of what is now Sumner Place and Cabot Street, and some trees in† Edward<sup>5</sup> Sumner's orchard covering a battery on the west side of the highway were cut down, sharpened to points and then were so placed as to protect the portions exposed to attack. Five hundred men and officers constituted the main and picket guard for this line where EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER once lived so peacefully.

On April 7, 1715, EDWARD<sup>3</sup> and his wife ELIZABETH joined Roxbury Church, as various members of their family did later.<sup>37</sup> After the construction of their fine new meeting house in 1740-1 EDWARD<sup>3</sup> acquired the right to build a pew for himself and his family. This was pew number<sup>38</sup> nine, cost him £30-7-7, adjoined that of JAMES<sup>4</sup> MEARS (see illustr., p. 419) and burned when the church was destroyed in February, 1743-4.

EDWARD<sup>3</sup> was definitely interested in education and by or before 1722 had become<sup>40</sup> one of the feoffees of Roxbury Free School‡ (see Bridge, p. 113) and

\*EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER on January 12, 1759, deeded<sup>49</sup> to his daughter MARY BALCH a tract of two hundred twenty acres of land in Stoughton and in that year deeded to sons John<sup>4</sup> and Nathaniel<sup>4</sup> Sumner other land "for love and affection."<sup>49</sup>

\*\*The home of our SAMUEL<sup>5</sup> and JAMES<sup>4</sup> MEARS for many years.

†These fruit trees owned by Edward<sup>5</sup> Sumner may very likely have been planted by his grandfather EDWARD<sup>3</sup>. An unusual tale is told<sup>47</sup> of this Edward<sup>5</sup> Sumner who is described as being thrifty, a farmer and possessed of considerable degree of independence. A young Boston merchant had advertised for silver dollars for shipment to China and Sumner in his working attire visited the counting room to inquire what premium was offered. The merchant unwisely judged him by his clothing and brusquely announced that he did not care to buy less than a hundred at a time, that he had offered three percent, but, sneeringly, "I will pay you six percent for all you have." Sumner, claiming a poor memory, asked that the offer be written out and read to him, so after the signing of the scornful agreement: "Edward Sumner thinks that he has some silver dollars, and I agree to pay him six percent premium for the amount he may have, if over one hundred dollars," Sumner led the merchant out to his wagon where after unloading barrels and baskets of vegetables, he disclosed a large basket of dollars which, with help, he carried into the counting room. But when the merchant offered a check in payment, Sumner assumed the intolerant attitude and declined to accept it, demanding a cash settlement,<sup>47</sup> so the merchant somewhat humbled, bowed to the requirement and sent his clerk to cash the check.

‡Certain interesting facts<sup>45</sup> relative to the Roxbury Free School are: Its founders included JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE, DANIEL<sup>1</sup> BREWER, JOHN<sup>1</sup> MAY, EDWARD<sup>1</sup> BRIDGE and PETER<sup>2</sup> GARDNER, one of its feoffees in 1731-5 or longer was EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER; in 1734,

continued in that position at least through 1735. In November of that year the feoffees, including EDWARD<sup>3</sup>, signed an "Order concerning Wood" which required that

" . . . the parents or masters of each and every child sent to said school, shall either send with said child eight shillings in money or two feet of good wood, and in case they do neither, the master is hereby ordered to suffer no such child to have the benefit of the fire. Provided always that this order shall not extend to any child or children who shall be exempted by the Feoffees by reason of poverty or low circumstances of the parents or master; they applying to the Feoffees for the purpose."<sup>40</sup>

His interest is further shown in the fact that his sons John<sup>4</sup> and Nathaniel<sup>4</sup> graduated at Harvard<sup>14</sup> in 1723 and 1739 respectively. In or before 1753 \*Thomas<sup>3</sup> Baker (Timothy<sup>2</sup>, EDWARD<sup>1</sup>) of Dover, New Hampshire visited his cousin EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER in Roxbury and died there. As has been stated, EDWARD<sup>3</sup> lost his wife in 1758 and spent the remaining five years of his life a widower.

Even as two of the sons of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> SUMNER removed to Lancaster and Northampton, and two of the sons of GEORGE<sup>2</sup> settled in Mendon, so also the sons of EDWARD<sup>3</sup> tried their fortunes far afield, with Edward<sup>4</sup> and Benjamin<sup>4</sup> making their homes in Ashford (now Connecticut), Nathaniel<sup>4</sup> in Dedham and John<sup>4</sup> in Edgartown, leaving only Increase<sup>4</sup>, who became the father of Gov. Increase Sumner of Massachusetts, at Roxbury, and for a part of his life Samuel<sup>4</sup> also there. EDWARD<sup>3</sup> died intestate, perhaps at the home of some one of his children since no record appears at Roxbury. Administration<sup>49</sup> on his estate was granted to his son John<sup>4</sup>, then of Edgartown, on November 11, 1763, and an inventory<sup>2</sup> was taken on May 25, 1764, showing a valuation<sup>49</sup> of over £366.

The children of EDWARD<sup>3</sup> and ELIZABETH (CLAPP) SUMNER, all of them born at Roxbury were<sup>2,8,14,21</sup>

- I. Edward<sup>4</sup>, b. July 16, 1702; d. in 1780; m. bef. 1728 Sarah<sup>4</sup> Eastman (Philip<sup>3</sup>, Philip<sup>2</sup>, Roger<sup>1</sup>)<sup>29</sup> and resided at Ashford, now Connecticut.
- II. Elizabeth<sup>4</sup>, b. Apr. 30, 1704; d. June 19, 1704.
- III. John<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 1, 1705; said<sup>14,43</sup> to have d. at Spencer 1787; m. 1st at Roxbury Nov. 20, 1729, Susanna Stevens (Samuel of Roxbury); m. 2nd Sept. 22, 1738, at Edgartown Jedidah<sup>4</sup> Smith<sup>14</sup> (Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>43</sup>
- IV. Elizabeth<sup>4</sup>, b. Apr. 7, 1708; m. at Roxbury Nov. 30, 1727, \*\* Benjamin<sup>4</sup> Boylston (Peter<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>) of Brookline.<sup>22</sup>
- V. Samuel<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 21, 1710; d. at Ashford, Conn. 1776; m. 1st at Boston June 18, 1741, Abigail<sup>5</sup> Mather (Increase<sup>4</sup>, Cotton<sup>3</sup>, Increase<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>);<sup>22</sup> m. 2nd at Roxbury May 11, 1767,

the year after his graduation from Harvard, our Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> BALCH taught it; in 1740 Nathaniel<sup>4</sup> Sumner (EDWARD<sup>3</sup>) was its teacher following his graduation at Harvard; in 1741 John Newman who became son-in-law of EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER served as teacher; in 1763 Benjamin<sup>6</sup> Balch (Rev. THOMAS<sup>6</sup>) became its teacher following his graduation from Harvard; some other Benjamin Balch served so in 1774 and in 1793 Charles<sup>6</sup> Cutler (Rev. MANASSEH<sup>6</sup>) taught it following his graduation at Harvard.

\*This Capt. Thomas<sup>3</sup> Baker had<sup>51</sup> a most adventurous life, having been among the captives taken by the Indians at Deerfield in February, 1703-4. After their arrival in Canada he and several others attempted an escape but were overtaken, returned and threatened with death at the stake. In the spring of 1705 they made a second attempt which proved successful after the endurance of everything short of death. He married about 1714 as her second husband Margaret<sup>3</sup> (Christine) Otis, daughter of Richard<sup>4</sup>, who had been a captive in Canada since her infancy. They lived in Dover, New Hampshire for long and her husband is said to have died "of the Lethargy" at the home<sup>51</sup> of his cousin SUMNER in Roxbury, who must have been EDWARD<sup>3</sup>.

\*\*Benjamin<sup>4</sup> Boylston had<sup>22</sup> a sister Susanna<sup>4</sup> who married in 1734 John Adams and became mother of President John Adams.

- Mary (Ruggles) Weld, widow of Joseph<sup>6</sup> Weld (Edmund<sup>4</sup>, Edmund<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Rev. Thomas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>23</sup>
- VI. Increase<sup>4</sup>, b. June 9, 1713; d. at Roxbury<sup>21</sup> Nov. 27, 1774, aged 62; m. Oct. 28, 1736, Sarah Sharp [Robert and Susannah (White) of Roxbury]. They were the parents of Increase<sup>6</sup> who became governor of Massachusetts.
- VII. Hannah<sup>4</sup>, b. May 8, 1715; d. Aug. 24, 1796; m. 1st at Roxbury Oct. 27, 1748, Rev. John Newman\* [John and Mary (Marshall) of Gloucester].<sup>43</sup>
- VIII. MARY<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 9, 1717; d. at Dedham Mar. 31, 1798; m.<sup>21</sup> at Roxbury Oct. 11, 1737, Rev. THOMAS<sup>6</sup> BALCH (see Balch, p. 77).
- IX. Nathaniel<sup>4</sup>, b. Apr. 10, 1720; d. at Dedham Dec. 23, 1802; m.<sup>23</sup> there by Rev. THOMAS<sup>6</sup> BALCH on Sept. 5, 1743, Hannah Bullard of Walpole.
- X. Ebenezer<sup>4</sup>, b. June 10, 1722; d. at Dedham (records at Roxbury)<sup>21</sup> Nov. 13, 1745, prob. as a result of the Expedition against Louisburg that year in which he held the office of Lieutenant.
- XI. Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, b. Dec. 29, 1724; d. prob. at Ashford, Connecticut Jan. 27, 1803; m. Oct. 3, 1748 Bridget Perry and lived at Ashford.

\*Rev. John Newman was ordained at Edgartown in July, 1747, with Rev. THOMAS<sup>6</sup> BALCH preaching the ordination sermon. John Newman entered into maritime ventures with his brother-in-law John<sup>4</sup> Sumner and earned the displeasure of his parish.<sup>43</sup>

## REFERENCES

1. Planters of Massachusetts Bay, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 65, 83; The Winthrop Fleet, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 93.
2. New England Register, IX, 297-303, also VIII, 128d-128q, 128i-128j.
3. Savage's Genealogical Dict., IV, 230-2, 241; Pope's Pioneers of Mass., p. 441.
4. History of Dorchester, Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society, 1859 (same paging applies to ed. of 1851 up to p. 244) pp. 29, 38-9, 46, 86-7, 124, 147, 176, 181, 191, 423-9.
5. Ibid., pp. 220, 223, 225-6, 233, 236, 238, 241, 248, 251, 253.
6. Ibid., pp. 53, 185, 195-200, 227-8, 239-40, 256, 268, 419-37; Early Records of Dorchester, W. B. Trask, 1867, p. 22.
7. Collections of the Dorchester Antiquarian and Hist. Soc., II, being Annals of Dorchester, 1846, pp. 9, 15-6, 18-26, 28, 32.
8. Paine Ancestry, S. C. Paine, ed. by C. H. Pope, 1912, pp. 119-20; History of East Boston, Wm. H. Sumner, 1869, pp. 281 and chart facing 291.
9. Records of the First Church at Dorchester . . . 1636-1734, G. H. Ellis, 1891, pp. 1-2, 35-6, 64, 69, 75-6, 83, 85-6, 165.
10. Ibid., pp. 12-3, 20-2, 24, 77, 109-10, 114, 155, 173, 175, 177, 180, 186, 188, 190.
11. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 295, 373; IV, pt. 1, 320, 461; IV, pt. 2, 294, 313, 330, 362, 417, 448, 507; V, 184, 210, 260, 265, 302, 308, 420, 437, 476, 514.
12. Boston Record Commissioners Report, XII, 4, 8, 20, 22, 25, 28, 103, 121.
13. New England Register, V, 393-5, 465-6.
14. . . . Descendants of WILLIAM SUMNER of Dorchester, W. S. Appleton, 1879, pp. 1-3, 5-7, 13-15.
15. Pope, p. 482; Savage IV, 439; B. R. C. R. IX, 89, 101, 105, 125.
16. History of Weymouth, G. W. Chamberlain, 1923, IV, 637; Pope, pp. 104, 264, 431; Savage, II, 572; Early Records of Lancaster, H. S. Nourse, 1884, pp. 31, 39; 104, 106, 257, 269, 315, 320; Ellis' History of Dorchester Church, pp. 13, 109-10, 114, 155.
17. Vital Records of Milton, pp. 56, 174, 244; Milton Church Records, 1678-1754, pp. 1-6, 8, 11-14; History of Salem, S. Perley, 1924, I, 439.
18. Tucker Genealogy, Ephraim Tucker, 1895, pp. 34, 271; Vital Records of Mendon, pp. 167, 393, 500; Tyler Genealogy, W. I. T. Brigham, 1912, I, 25-6, 32.
19. History of Milton, Mass., A. K. Teele, 1887, pp. 16-7, 56, 165, 274-6, 489-90, 577-9, 641-3; Noted Men and Historical Narratives of Ancient Milton, A. K. Teele, 1900, pp. 35, 37.
20. Vital Records of Milton, pp. 3, 85, 174, 204.
21. Vital Records of Roxbury, I, 333-4; II, 385-6, 646.
22. New England Register, VII, 145-8; Lineage of Rev. Richard Mather, H. E. Mather, 1890, p. 110; History of Watertown, H. Bond, 1860, p. 91.
23. May Genealogy, S. May et al, 1878, p. 4; Weld Collections, C. F. Robinson, 1938, p. 98; Vital Records of Dedham, p. 71.
24. Balch Genealogy, G. B. Balch, 1897, pp. 51-2; Clapp Family in America, E. Clapp, 1876, pp. 10-1.
25. B. R. C. R., IV, 24-5, 35, 93, 98, 102, 108, 112-3, 117, 124, 128, 136, 145, 155, 170, 180, 185, 188, 196, 204, 227-8, 235, 250, 258, 275, 281-3, 309.
26. Ibid., IV, 115, 119, 125, 132, 139, 150, 158, 160, 164, 169, 174, 183, 192, 233, 240, 249, 254, 272, 275-8, 280, 313, 319.
27. Ibid., IV, 32, 52, 67, 80, 98, 102, 108, 112-4, 119, 132, 138, 140-1, 146, 152, 157, 164, 168, 185, 191-2, 198-9, 203-4, 211, 213, 218-9, 223, 229, 239, 248, 264-5, 267, 270, 275-8.
28. Ibid., IV, 15, 24, 29, 31, 46, 54, 57, 75-80, 94, 104-6, 112-3, 116, 118-9, 122, 126, 135-6, 143-5, 148, 152, 154, 164, 167, 180, 182-3, 203, 208-10, 249, 251-2, 256-7, 276, 292, 316.
29. History of Woodstock, Conn., C. W. Bowen, 1932, IV, 619.
30. Year Book of the Massachusetts Society of Colonial Wars, 1898, pp. 137, 150-2.
31. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXIX, 347, 457; XXX, 816, 872, 971-2, 1168.
32. History of Norfolk County, D. H. Hurd, 1884, pp. 731-3, 740, 742-3, 749, 757, 963-4, 770.
33. Antiquities . . . of Northampton, S. Clark, 1882, pp.

- 174-5; New England Register, XL, 255-6; History of Dorchester, pp. 116, 192.
34. History of Northampton . . . , J. R. Trumbull, 1898, I, 22, 38-9, 146, 186-7.
35. Teele's History of Milton, pp. 165, 176-7, 197, 215, 221-2, 233-4, 275-6, 280, 367-9, 373-4, 410-1, 489-90, 577; History of Dorchester, pp. 607-10, 620-3.
36. Descendants of WILLIAM SUMNER, p. 16; Hurd's Norfolk Co., p. 757.
37. B. R. C. R., VI, 62, 65, 104-5, 107.
38. History of the First Church in Roxbury, W. E. Thwing, 1908, pp. 130, 139, 260, 307.
39. Teele's History of Milton, pp. 641-5, 647-54, 657.
40. History of the Grammar School . . . , C. K. Dillaway, 1860, pp. 56, 61-2, 142, 195.
41. Economic and Social History of New England, W. B. Weedon, 1890, II, 499, 683; History of . . . Middleboro, Thomas Weston, 1906, pp. 359, 361-2, 377.
42. EDWARD BAKER Genealogy, N. M. Baker, 1867, pp. 7-9.
43. History of Spencer, James Draper, 1860, p. 251; History of Martha's Vineyard . . . , C. E. Banks, 1911, II, Annals of Edgartown, pp. 153-4, 157; III, 450, 465.
44. History of Ashburnham, E. S. Stearns, 1887, pp. 53-5; Year Book of the Massachusetts Society of Colonia; Wars, 1898, pp. 151-2, 154-5; New England Register, XVI, 148-50.
45. Dillaway's Grammar School, pp. 10-2, 185-6, 194-5; Balch Genealogy, p. 67; Cutler Memorial, N. S. Cutler, 1889, p. 87.
46. History of Roxbury, F. S. Drake, 1878, pp. 76, 155, 158, 206, 286, 306-7, 324-5.
47. Ibid., 76, 117, 158, 200-1, 306-7.
48. Pope, p. 443; History of Dorchester, p. 87.
49. Search of documents by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Suffolk Probates No. 1926; Miscellaneous Docket, VI, 94; Suffolk Probates, Nos. 3729, 4169, 13365.
50. Suffolk Deeds (pub.), I, 33; XII, 327-8; XIII, 408; Ibid., (unpub.) LIII, 148; XCIV, 10.
51. Otis Genealogy, W. A. Otis, 1924, pp. 66-70; New England Register, V, 191-5; Savage III, 324; Genealogy of the Descendants of EDWARD BAKER, N. M. Baker, 1867, pp. 13-7; Libby's Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, S. Noyes and W. G. Davis, 1938, pt. IV, pp. 520-1.
52. History of Canton, D. T. V. Huntoon, 1893, p. 594 and map facing 592.
53. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, O. A. Roberts, 1895, I, 122.
54. Clapp Family, pp. 327-8, 379-82.
55. Descendants of WILLIAM SUMNER, pp. 173-4.
56. Ibid., pp. 2-3, 5-6; Clapp Memorial, pp. 11, 202, 210-3.





## THOMPSON

**W**ILLIAM<sup>a</sup> THOMPSON, as the earliest claimed head of our family of that name,<sup>2</sup> is partly traditional,<sup>1</sup> though a man of that name was an early resident of Sudbury where this family continued. The tradition claims<sup>1,2</sup> that he was born about 1685 on the passage over from England but is quite silent as to the names of his parents; that as an adult he settled in Sudbury and while "absent from home, his house was attacked by Indians. His wife and her infant child escaped to the woods, but in her flight she was wounded in the leg by a musket ball, and suffered greatly during the night which she spent hidden in the forest."<sup>1,2</sup>

It is, however, definitely a matter of record<sup>3</sup> that a *William<sup>a</sup> Thompson* of Sudbury presumably this same man was listed on the muster roll<sup>3</sup> of Capt. Samuel<sup>3</sup> Wright\* on June 17, 1724, for several months service and also on a second muster roll in 1724 under the same commander.

The old Thompson house at South Sudbury in which his descendants lived, and perhaps *William<sup>a</sup>* himself, stood just west of the track of the Massachusetts Central Railroad at its junction with the county highway<sup>1</sup> (see map, p. 448).

The children\*\* claimed<sup>2</sup> for *William<sup>a</sup> Thompson* and his wife were<sup>2</sup>

I. John<sup>b</sup>, b. perhaps about 1713; d. after Aug., 1748, but before July 3, 1758, when widow Abigail was made guardian of Benjamin<sup>c</sup> "son of John of Sudbury, deceased;" m. at Sudbury<sup>4</sup> Feb. 26, 1735-6, Abigail<sup>s</sup> Farnsworth (Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Matthias<sup>1</sup>).<sup>5</sup> She was b. in 1713 and d. after 1758.

II. JAMES<sup>b</sup>, see following.

JAMES<sup>b</sup> THOMPSON (*William<sup>a</sup>*) who was definitely our ancestor was born probably at Sudbury and about 1726-7 for he died there<sup>4</sup> March 18, 1812, said to have been<sup>10</sup> aged eighty-five. He married<sup>4</sup> at Sudbury on November 14, 1754, MARY<sup>b</sup> VORCE (see Vorce, p. 645) who died there<sup>4</sup> February 3, 1775. JAMES<sup>b</sup> is definitely but not officially, called a son<sup>1</sup> of *William<sup>a</sup>* and also called a brother of John<sup>b</sup>. On July 27, 1755, he and his wife MARY were admitted to the First Parish Church by the Rev. Mr. Cooke. His occupation was that of wheelwright. In April, 1757, JAMES<sup>b</sup> THOMPSON was a member<sup>14</sup> of the active militia force of Sudbury in the Second Foot Company under Capt. Josiah Richardson and as such took part in one or

\*Capt. Samuel<sup>3</sup> Wright (1670-1740) of Sudbury<sup>14</sup> and Rutland was<sup>3</sup> the son of EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT (Widow DOROTHY<sup>1</sup>, see Wright, p. 680).

\*\*Dr. Thomas Stearns (1785-1844) town clerk of Sudbury from about 1817-1839 was compiling a genealogical register of Sudbury families but died before it was completed. He recorded, incompletely, an early William Thompson (who may have been identical with the *William<sup>a</sup>* above) who had three children baptized at the First Parish Church on July 1, 1711, namely (1) William, (2) Benjamin and (3) Susanna; (4) an Elizabeth baptized on November 25, 1711, and, because of their juxtaposition in the records presumably also the (5) John<sup>b</sup> and (6) JAMES<sup>b</sup> listed above. An Abigail Thompson who conceivably might have been the wife of this *William<sup>a</sup>* is included in the 1714 catalogue of Sudbury church members.

more phases of the old French War. The name of JAMES<sup>b</sup> appears also on a Revolutionary musterroll dated<sup>14</sup> October 26, 1778, under Capt. Rice along with the names of his own son Abel<sup>c</sup> Thompson, of our Ens. JONAS<sup>4</sup> HOLDEN, Abel<sup>4</sup> Holden and of THOMPSON's brother-in-law Reuben<sup>b</sup> Vorce. In September, 1757, he signed, probably as a witness, guardianship papers when Reuben<sup>b</sup> Vorce his young brother-in-law chose<sup>12</sup> Deacon Josiah Haynes\* as his guardian. On April 11, 1760, JAMES<sup>b</sup> was a witness to the signing of the will<sup>12</sup> of his step-father-in-law Daniel<sup>4</sup> Woodward which was proved<sup>12</sup> the following June.

In November, 1760, widow PRUDENCE (MOORE) VORCE Woodward, mother-in-law of JAMES<sup>b</sup> THOMPSON related to the court that her minor son Peter<sup>b</sup> Vorce had enlisted in 1759 and died after his return; that she had been unable to collect his wages and if an administrator of the son's estate would be necessary she petitioned that "ye barrer" of her request, JAMES<sup>b</sup> THOMPSON should be so appointed and in 1760 letters of administration were granted to THOMPSON.<sup>12</sup>

Many land transfers<sup>13</sup> were entered into by JAMES<sup>b</sup>. In August, 1767, he paid £16 to John Cheney of Winchenden for fifty-five acres in that town, where JAMES<sup>b</sup> already owned land, and after holding it for nine years JAMES<sup>b</sup> sold it in November, 1776, to Francis Bridge. In March, 1772, JAMES<sup>b</sup> bought two pieces of land of about six and four acres extent in Sudbury and about five acres in the great river meadow,<sup>13</sup> from Jacob Moore of Sudbury, who was administrator of the estate of David Putnam of that town. JAMES<sup>b</sup> with wife MARY signing with her mark, transferred his ownership in April, 1773, to Jacob Bigelow of Sudbury. In June, 1774, JAMES<sup>b</sup> paid over<sup>13</sup> £26 to Asher Cutler for about fifty-eight rods of land in Sudbury on the west side of the river where THOMPSON's "malt house stood." On August 1, 1777, JAMES<sup>b</sup> paid £162 to Cornelius Wood and his wife for about forty-three acres with a house thereon on the west side of the river. It adjoined land owned by Asher Cutler, sr.\*\* and jr. and by JONAS<sup>3</sup> HOLDEN.

During the period 1778-80 there was much discussion as to the desirability of dividing Sudbury into two towns and after the General Court approved the division there was increasing discussion as to a dividing line, a division of assets and obligations, care of the indigent, etc. JAMES<sup>b</sup> THOMPSON was a member of one committee weighing some of these problems<sup>14</sup> in 1780 and on March 6, 1780, he was chosen<sup>14</sup> Town Clerk and Treasurer of Sudbury, the name retained by the western portion. The eastern town was called East Sudbury until 1835 when it became Wayland.

On February 2, 1784, JAMES<sup>b</sup> mortgaged to William Baldwin for £51 a twenty-three acre tract with a dwelling house, which may have been a portion of the previously named tract, for it abutted on the lands of JONAS<sup>3</sup> HOLDEN, Asher Cutler, sr. and jr. as well as upon lands owned by JONAS<sup>4</sup> HOLDEN, JAMES<sup>b</sup> THOMPSON and by his son Abel<sup>c</sup> Thompson called housewright. It was specified that if the grantor repaid the principal with interest by February 1, 1785, the instrument would be void but the fact that the document was recorded on December 7, 1785, argues that JAMES<sup>b</sup> must have lost the land.<sup>13</sup> On February 2, 1784, the same day as the above mortgage deed, Abel<sup>c</sup> Thompson signed a similar deed to the same

\*Deacon Josiah Haynes (1696-1775) was that hero of the Battle of Lexington<sup>15</sup> who at the age of almost eighty marched to Concord with the Sudbury Company, who crossed the North Bridge and followed the British as they retreated along memorable "Battle Road" toward Boston, doing his share toward the harassment of the regulars during that humiliating trip, and who was killed by an English musket ball somewhere between Fiske Hill and Lexington Common<sup>15</sup> on April 19, 1775.

\*\*Asher<sup>4</sup> Cutler sr. (1713-1786) was son of Thomas<sup>3</sup> (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, JAMES<sup>1</sup>) and his son was Asher<sup>5</sup> (1743-1811).<sup>16</sup>

man for the same term of one year and the same amount of £50. It too named as abutters his father JAMES<sup>b</sup>, JONAS<sup>s</sup> and JONAS<sup>4</sup> HOLDEN. On January 2, 1787, JAMES<sup>b</sup> deeded land in the great river meadow for £31-10 to John Shirley. On June 3, 1788, JAMES<sup>b</sup> still called wheelwright deeded to Thomas Plympton Esq. and to Nathan Loring for £25 "a building in Sudbury known as the Malt House" with the cellar under it and the land whereon it stands. This document was witnessed by Levi<sup>4</sup> Holden and JONAS<sup>4</sup> HOLDEN. Perhaps the last document was a mortgage deed and was paid off, for a deed of April 24, 1797, from JAMES<sup>b</sup> then called "yeoman," being too old for his trade, no doubt, transferred to his youngest son Jedediah<sup>c</sup> for \$333.33 an acre and a half of land with buildings, abutting on land of JONAS<sup>s</sup> and JONAS<sup>4</sup> HOLDEN and on land belonging to JAMES<sup>b</sup> himself, "also a malt house standing near the aforesaid premises . . . reserving the privilege of living in the aforesaid dwelling house and enjoying necessary conveniences therein and privilege of putting hay for one cow in the barn and housing said cow during my natural life. Also reserving privilege of the malt house for purpose of making malt so long as I shall be able to work at the business."<sup>13</sup>

What may have been a clearing or consolidating of title is seen in a deed dated May 12, 1798, whereby for \$33.33 paid by Jedediah<sup>c</sup> Thompson yeoman of Sudbury JONAS<sup>4</sup> HOLDEN Jr. of Sudbury, "Jen<sup>m</sup>," transferred eighteen rods which adjoined holdings of Jedediah<sup>c</sup>. This document was witnessed by Lewis<sup>5</sup> and Ruel<sup>5</sup> Holden.<sup>13</sup>

As has been stated MARY wife of JAMES<sup>b</sup> died at Sudbury in February, 1775, and he lived for thirty-seven years a widower, probably with some of his children, until March 18, 1812. As the deeds above show he was called wheelwright until 1788 when he would have been sixty or over — after which he occupied himself with making malt. On April 14, 1812, Jedediah<sup>c</sup> Thompson of Sudbury petitioned to be appointed administrator<sup>12</sup> of the estate of his father JAMES<sup>b</sup> THOMPSON "who had died within thirty days past leaving no will and no other son than the petitioner." Jedediah<sup>c</sup> gave bond for \$10,000 but the inventory filed July 2, 1812, showed only \$120.00 valuation.<sup>12</sup> Notes due from three men were listed.

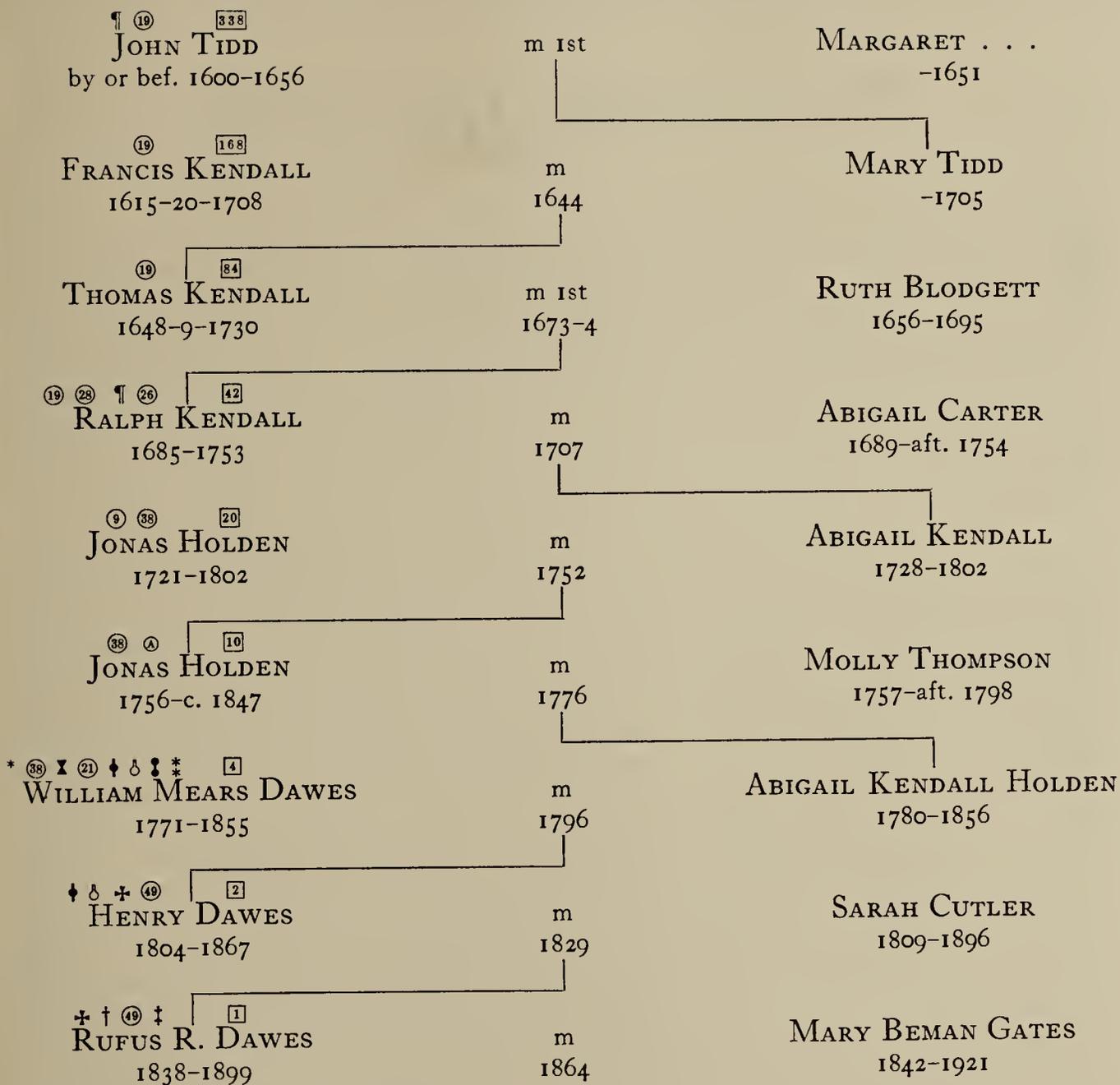
The children of JAMES<sup>b</sup> and MARY (VORCE) THOMPSON all born at Sudbury and baptized at the First Parish Church were<sup>2,4,11</sup>

- i. Abel<sup>c</sup>, b. May 26, bap. July 27, 1755; d. there as Capt. June 19, 1811, ae. 56; one of that name m. there<sup>4</sup> Aug. 25, 1782, Sarah Brown but this Capt. Abel is said<sup>6</sup> to have m. Sarah Martin. He served in the Revolution. Probably he, with Jedediah Vorce who was a resident of Chautauqua Co., N. Y. by 1812-5.
- ii. MOLLY<sup>c</sup>, b. Jan. 17, bap. 23, 1757; d. aft. July, 1798, when last child was b.; m. at Sudbury Dec. 10, 1776, JONAS<sup>4</sup> HOLDEN (see Holden, p. 364).
- iii. Ann<sup>c</sup>, b. Dec. 3, bap. 10, 1758; no further record.
- iv. Lucy<sup>c</sup>, b. June 6, bap. 8, 1760; d. at Lancaster,<sup>7</sup> Dec. 20, 1831, ae. 71; m. in Wayland Dec. 1, 1784, Jotham<sup>6</sup> Brigham (Asa<sup>4</sup>, Jotham<sup>s</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>7</sup>
- v. Prudence<sup>c</sup>, b. Apr. 28, bap. May 20, 1762; d. perhaps at Sudbury<sup>8</sup> Jan. 6, 1813; m.<sup>2</sup> Jan. 21, 1783, Joseph<sup>4</sup> Cutter (Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>).<sup>8</sup>
- vi. Sarah<sup>c</sup>, b. May 23, bap. 27, 1764; no further record.
- vii. Jedediah<sup>c</sup>, bap. Nov. 9, 1766; d. abt. 1814; m. at Sudbury Apr. 21, 1790, Mary Goodenow (John and Martha).<sup>2</sup> She was born in 1766 and died<sup>4</sup> at Sudbury May 23, 1848, ae. 81, 6 mo.
- viii. Nahum<sup>c</sup>, b. Sept. 4, bap. 11, 1768; d. June 11, 1769.
- ix. Elizabeth<sup>c</sup>, bap. Sept. 17, 1771; no further record.

## REFERENCES

1. History of Sudbury, A. S. Hudson, 1889, p. 451.
2. . . . Genealogical and Personal Memoirs . . . of Middlesex County . . . , W. R. Cutter, 1908, IV, 1507.
3. Hudson's Sudbury, pp. 170-1, 298-300.
4. Vital Records of Sudbury, pp. 141-2, 275-6, 327.
5. Farnsworth Memorial, M. F. Farnsworth, 1897, pp. 298-9.
6. D. A. R. Lineage Book, L, 225.
7. Vital Records of Lancaster, p. 365; History of the Brigham Family, E. E. and W. E. Brigham, 1907, p. 196; Vital Records of Wayland, p. 116.
8. Cutter Family in New England, Dr. B. Cutter, revised by W. R. Cutter, 1871, p. 257.
9. Holden Genealogy, Eben Putnam, 1923, I, 219-21.
10. Research by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Rev. Josiah Bigelow's manuscript record of the West Side Church of Sudbury (now called First Parish).
11. Copy of the Records of the First Parish, made by . . . . . filed at the New England Society, pp. 6-7, 35, 38, 47, 49, 51, 53, 56, 59, 61, 64, 67.
12. Research by Mrs. James T. Watts of Washington, D. C., in Middlesex County Probates File No. 22476; No. 25573; No. 22475.
13. Mrs. Watts, Worcester Deeds, LVII, 431; LXXXII, 184; Middlesex Deeds, LXXIV, 307-8; LXXVI, 524; LXXXVIII, 52; XCII, 34; XCVI, 21; C, 31; CXXVI, 377; CXXXI, 230.
14. Hudson's Sudbury, pp. 56, 342, 372, 404, 421, 424.
15. Walter Haynes and his Descendants, F. and F. M. Haynes, 1929, pp. 50-1, 63; The Battle of April 19, 1775 . . . , F. W. Coburn, 1912, pp. 78-86, 112; Hudson's Sudbury, p. 381.
16. Cutler Memorial, N. S. Cutler, pp. 47-8.
17. History of Chautauqua Co., N. Y., A. W. Young, 1875.

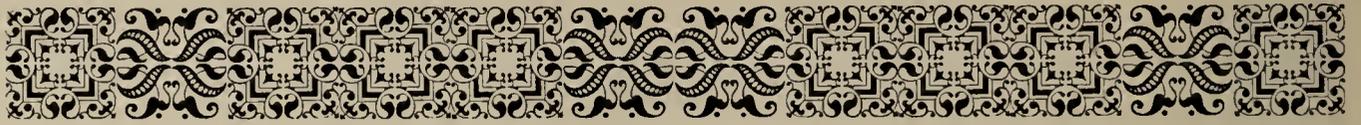
# TIDD



- † Charlestown
- <sup>19</sup> Woburn
- <sup>28</sup> Lancaster
- <sup>26</sup> Kennebec River
- <sup>9</sup> Concord
- <sup>38</sup> Sudbury

- <sup>10</sup> Waitsfield, Vt.
- \* Boston
- ✕ Marlborough
- <sup>21</sup> Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- † Thomaston, Me.
- ♁ Morgan Co., O.

- ♁ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- ✕ Malta, O.
- <sup>49</sup> Mauston, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- † Marietta, O.



## TIDD (*Tydd, Tead, Teed*)

JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD,\* a tailor, born by or before 1600 was a resident<sup>1</sup> of Charlestown by 1637. The vessel in which he emigrated and the date of its sailing are unknown but he probably was accompanied by, or followed by, his wife, MARGARET, and most of his children, who were then nearly or quite adult. Many compilers<sup>1,4,5,8</sup> have claimed that JOHN<sup>1</sup> was he who came to New England in 1637 as a nineteen year old servant under Samuel<sup>1</sup> Greenfield (who settled in Salem) but no man of that age could possibly have daughters marrying in 1641, 1643 and 1644 as our JOHN<sup>1</sup> did. It was doubtless his son John<sup>2</sup> who emigrated at the age of nineteen.

On April 23, 1638, the Charlestown proprietors had land laid out to them<sup>1</sup> "on Mystic side" toward what later became Malden and at that time JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD received lot No. 86 on the basis of a taxable estate of £10-20-0 while Joshua<sup>1</sup> Tidd, his presumed brother, had lot No. 74 on the basis of £5-15-0, but neither of them removed to that locality. As time went on, JOHN<sup>1</sup> acquired<sup>13</sup> at least seven pieces of Charlestown land and probably<sup>6</sup> eight as well as one and three-quarters cow commons — having purchased the three-quarters portion. One of his plots of ground was in the Rockfield at the edge of Waterfield now Winchester,<sup>21</sup> while another six acre lot was in the "ancient line field" along the Mystic River.<sup>21</sup> JOHN<sup>1</sup> must have been fairly prosperous for when Thomas<sup>1</sup> Moulton was removing to Mystic Side JOHN<sup>1</sup> was able<sup>6,23</sup> to purchase his Charlestown home and at another time he was allowed to sell all or a part of his holdings<sup>16</sup> to Nathaniel Hadlock, probably preparatory to the removal to Woburn of JOHN<sup>1</sup> himself.

He is said<sup>6</sup> to have joined the church at Charlestown on March 10, 1639, and that very day his presumed brother Joshua Tidd did so. Affiliation of JOHN<sup>1</sup> with some church (probably Woburn) occurred before May 10, 1643, when he applied<sup>15</sup> for freemanship. In 1640 JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD had the task of "ringing the bell" for church and doubtless for town meetings and the town owed<sup>24</sup> him £1 10sh for the service.

In May, 1640, Charlestown petitioned the General Court<sup>7</sup> for additional land which was granted, and on December 18, 1640, thirty-two men who planned to settle on it signed the "Town Orders" as original proprietors of what in 1642 was named Woburn. JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD, FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL, JOHN<sup>2</sup> CARTER and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>

\*A man<sup>12</sup> named Joshua<sup>1</sup> Tidd, born about 1607, who was in all probability a brother<sup>24,25</sup> of JOHN<sup>1</sup> was at Salem asking admission as an inhabitant in August, 1637, but in that year settled at Charlestown;<sup>1</sup> on March 10, 1639, joined the church there and on May 22, 1639, applied for freemanship. His first wife Sarah joined that church on September 9, 1639, and died October 15, 1677, at the age of seventy-one, after which he married secondly as her fourth husband our much married RHODA who was the wife, first of JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE (see Gore, p. 320) with two other intermediate husbands. Joshua<sup>1</sup> Tidd is said to have lived part of the time in Salem (as Samuel<sup>2</sup> Tidd, son of JOHN<sup>1</sup> surely did) but that seems improbable for he is recorded quite continually in Charlestown, having within its limits a dwelling house and garden, four other pieces of land, one cow common and a salt house near the river — doubtless for curing fish. In 1657 he owned a vessel and traded in furs up and down the coast, being involved that year in a law suit. He died on September 15, 1678, aged seventy-one.<sup>12</sup>

GREENE were among the signers<sup>7</sup> and they very soon removed to this new location where land must be cleared, houses built and the whole process of pioneering gone through with once more. And here the remainder of the lives of each of these men was spent.

JOHN<sup>1</sup> was sergeant of the train band<sup>17</sup> in 1646 and probably<sup>19</sup> in 1643, being "the first citizen of Woburn, named by military title in the records."<sup>6,17</sup> He was taxed<sup>8</sup> for the Country rate (colony tax) on September 8, 1645, (the earliest extant tax list); was chosen surveyor of fences<sup>8,20</sup> in 1646 and selectman<sup>6,8</sup> in 1647. He was on a committee in 1655 to collect the Country rate<sup>6,8</sup> and served as commissioner for the country.

There was an episode in the life of JOHN<sup>1</sup> which intrigues the imagination because of its incompleteness. It has to do primarily with an investment<sup>18</sup> or "adventure" in the Massachusetts Bay Colony about 1628 by a man named Richard Young, cooper of London. And twenty years later JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD\* in some way acquired a right to one hundred acres through this investment of Young's. Either by his own wish or at Young's suggestion, JOHN<sup>1</sup> had petitioned the General Court as to the desired location of this tract but on May 10, 1648, the court replied that it did "thinke it not convenient to alter the ordinary course of satisfaction for adventurers [investors], but that JOHN TED shall take his 100 acres in consid<sup>r</sup>ation of the adventure of M<sup>r</sup> Rich<sup>d</sup> Yonge, where it may be layd out for reasonable conveniency . . ." <sup>18</sup>

In 1653, JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD in common with twenty-eight other\*\* Woburn men<sup>17</sup> showed his mettle and courage by signing a petition to the General Court which dared to express an opinion entirely divergent from a late ruling by that court (see Snow, p. 552). That petition has throughout the years been called the "Woburn Memorial for Christian Liberty" and they who signed it are dubbed "the bold petitioners".<sup>17</sup>

MARGARET, first wife of JOHN<sup>1</sup> died at Woburn<sup>2</sup> in 1651 and he married secondly Alice (—) who survived him and who married<sup>6,20,22</sup> subsequently at Cambridge, on June 11, 1657, William<sup>1</sup> Mann. JOHN<sup>1</sup> must have anticipated some such eventuality for his will<sup>11</sup> dated on April 9, 1656, gave to wife Alice "the house I now dwell in for life or six years after her next marriage". The will also mentioned<sup>11</sup> his son John<sup>2</sup>, who had removed to Lexington and had doubtless received his portion earlier, made bequests to his four Savell grandchildren, to the daughter of his deceased son Samuel<sup>2</sup>, to his grandsons, Thomas<sup>2</sup> Fuller and John<sup>2</sup> Kendall, and made his daughters, MARY<sup>2</sup> and Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> the executrixes<sup>11</sup> of his will which covered an estate amounting<sup>1</sup> to £163. JOHN<sup>1</sup> died at Woburn<sup>2</sup> on† April 24, 1656, and his will was proved<sup>1,6</sup> on November 10, 1656.

The children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and MARGARET (—) TIDD, all born in England, but in unknown order were<sup>1,6,8,9,20,24</sup>

1. Samuel<sup>2</sup>, said<sup>2</sup> to have d. at Woburn in 1651 but really<sup>13</sup> d. by 1642 (probably at Salem) for in that year his widow married again; he had m. by 1641 Sarah (—) by whom he had an only daughter<sup>14</sup> Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, b. at Salem in May, 1642. Widow Sarah m. 2nd, 1642, as his first wife, John<sup>2</sup> Southwick (Lawrence<sup>1</sup>) a Quaker of Salem. She died in 1658, but

\*This action is sometimes<sup>5</sup> erroneously ascribed to Joshua<sup>1</sup> Tidd; and because of the form of the early long-hand "e" the name of JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD often rendered as TEDD has sometimes been rendered as "Todd".

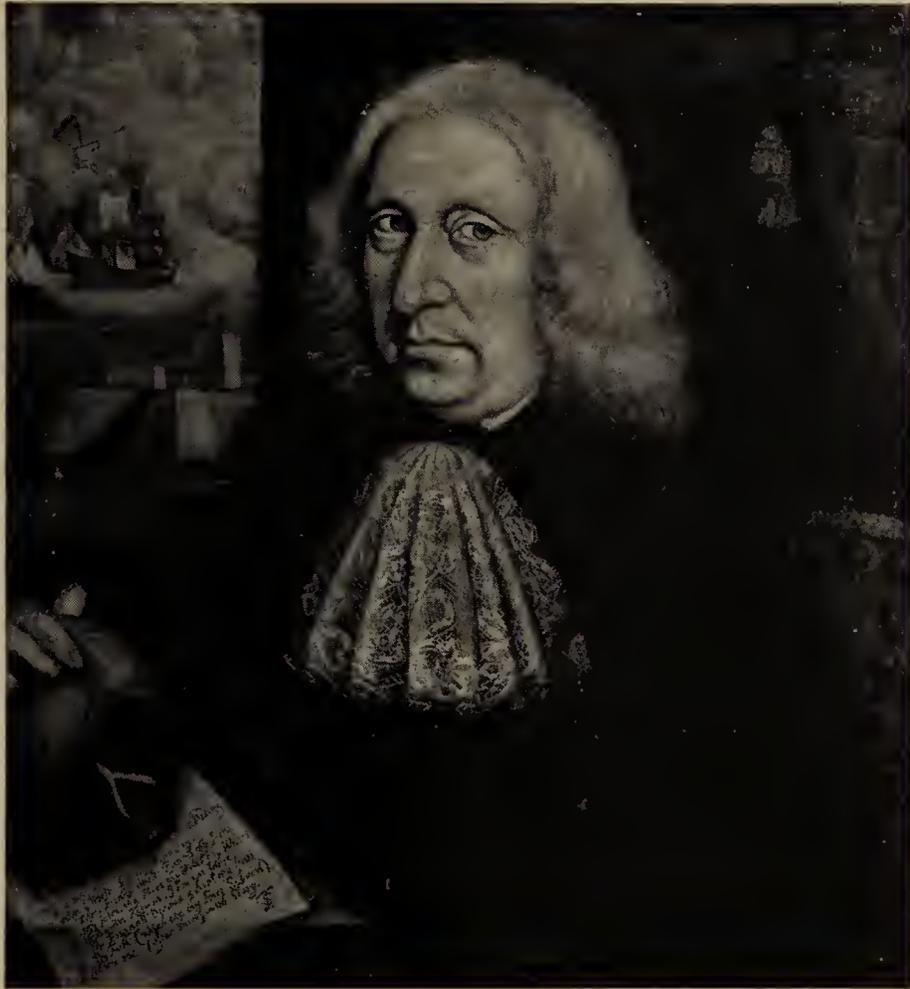
\*\*The list of signers included<sup>17</sup> FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL, RICHARD<sup>1</sup> SNOW and Abraham<sup>1</sup>, John<sup>1</sup> and James<sup>1</sup> Parker, brothers, of our JACOB<sup>1</sup> PARKER who had, himself, not yet appeared on the scene.

†Some publications<sup>1,2</sup> record the death of JOHN<sup>1</sup> TIDD as April 24, 1657, while others<sup>6</sup> give the year as 1656 which is undoubtedly right, since the probate of his estate is recorded as of November, 1656.

- Southwick in his will of 1672 remembered her daughter by giving £4 in cattle to "Elizabeth Giles, alias Tidd".<sup>14</sup>
- II. Hannah<sup>2</sup>, d.<sup>10</sup> June 14 or<sup>9</sup> August 14, 1650, at Braintree; m. by 1641 as his first wife William<sup>1</sup> Savell of that place.<sup>11</sup>
  - III. MARY<sup>2</sup>, d. at Woburn in 1705; m. there<sup>2</sup> Dec. 24, 1644, "FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> KENDALL, alias Miles" (see Kendall, p. 376).
  - IV. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, d. before<sup>15</sup> August, 1684; m. at Woburn<sup>2</sup> June 13, 1643, as his first wife, Thomas<sup>1</sup> Fuller.
  - V. John<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1618-9; doubtless he who emigrated<sup>3</sup> in the "Mary Anne" of Yarmouth as servant aged 19 under Samuel<sup>1</sup> Greenfield. These passengers were examined in England on May 12, 1637, and are said to have arrived at Boston on June 20, which, if true, made an unusually quick voyage. Greenfield settled at Salem as did Samuel<sup>2</sup> Tidd above. John<sup>2</sup> d. at Lexington<sup>6</sup> Apr. 13, 1703; m.<sup>2,4</sup> at Woburn April 14, 1650, Rebecca Wood.

## REFERENCES

1. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, Mass., T. B. Wyman, 1879, p. 945; History of Malden, Mass., D. P. Corey, 1899, pp. 67-8.
2. Vital Records of Woburn, Mass., II, 193; III, 280.
3. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 183; New England Register, XIV, 328; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, I, 101; Hotten's Emigrants, p. 295.
4. History of Lexington, Mass., C. Hudson, 1913, II, 696-7.
5. Savage IV, 265-6, 300.
6. The Todds, The Wheelers, T. Todd, 1909, pp. 43, 57; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, pp. 266, 448.
7. History of Charlestown, Mass., R. Frothingham, 1845, pp. 88, 106-7.
8. History of Woburn, Mass., S. Sewell, 1868, pp. 51, 579, 582, 645; Woburn Historic Sites, W. R. Cutter, 1892, pp. 23, 34.
9. Pope's Pioneers, pp. 179, 266, 401, 448.
10. Braintree, Mass., Records, 1886, p. 637.
11. Peter Parker and Sarah Ruggles Ancestors and Descendants, J. W. Linzee, 1913, pp. 520-1.
12. Pope's Pioneers, p. 448; Savage IV, 265-6; New England Register, III, 96; History of the First Church of Charlestown, Mass., W. I. Budington, 1845, p. 247; Frothingham's Charlestown, pp. 114, 148, 152; Genealogical Advertiser, 1898, I, 90-5; Salem, Mass., Town Records, 1868, I, 56; History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1924, I, 445; Boston Record Commissioner's Report, 1878, III, 43, 47, 50, 52, 54-5, 57-8, 186.
13. Ibid., III, 7, 13, 31, 45, 50, 53-4, 56, 58-9, 68.
14. Vital Records of Salem, Mass., II, 351; Essex Co. Mass., Probates, II, 313; Southwick Genealogy, J. M. Caller and Mrs. M. A. Ober, 1881, pp. 71-3; Pope's Pioneers, p. 448; Perley's Salem, 1926, II, 53; 1828, III, 30.
15. New England Register, III, 190; V, 374; VIII, 151; XIII, 360.
16. Genealogical and Personal Memoirs of Middlesex Co., Mass., Families, W. R. Cutter, 1908, p. 607; Genealogical and Personal Memoirs of Massachusetts Families, W. R. Cutter & M. F. Adams, 1910, pp. 2281-2.
17. History of Middlesex Co., Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1890, I, 348, 379; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, I, 38-45.
18. Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, II, 246; III, 122; John White —, Frances Rose - Troup, 1930, p. 112.
19. Society of Colonial Wars, Index of Ancestors, 1902, p. 783; Year Book, Mass., 1897, p. 229; Year Book, Mass., 1898, p. 363.
20. Bassett-Preston Ancestors, Belle Preston, 1930, pp. 116, 294.
21. Winchester, Mass., Record, 1886, II, frontispiece, & p. 21; New England Register, XLVIII, 56-9.
22. Vital Records of Cambridge, Mass., II, 254.
23. Wyman's Charlestown, pp. 451, 681; Corey's Malden, pp. 68, 81.
24. The Snow-Estes Ancestry, N. E. Snow, compiled by M. M. Jillson, 1939, I, 77-8.
25. Directory of Heads of Families of New England . . . F. R. Holmes, 1923, p. ccxxxv.



Self-portrait of Capt. THOMAS<sup>t</sup> SMITH

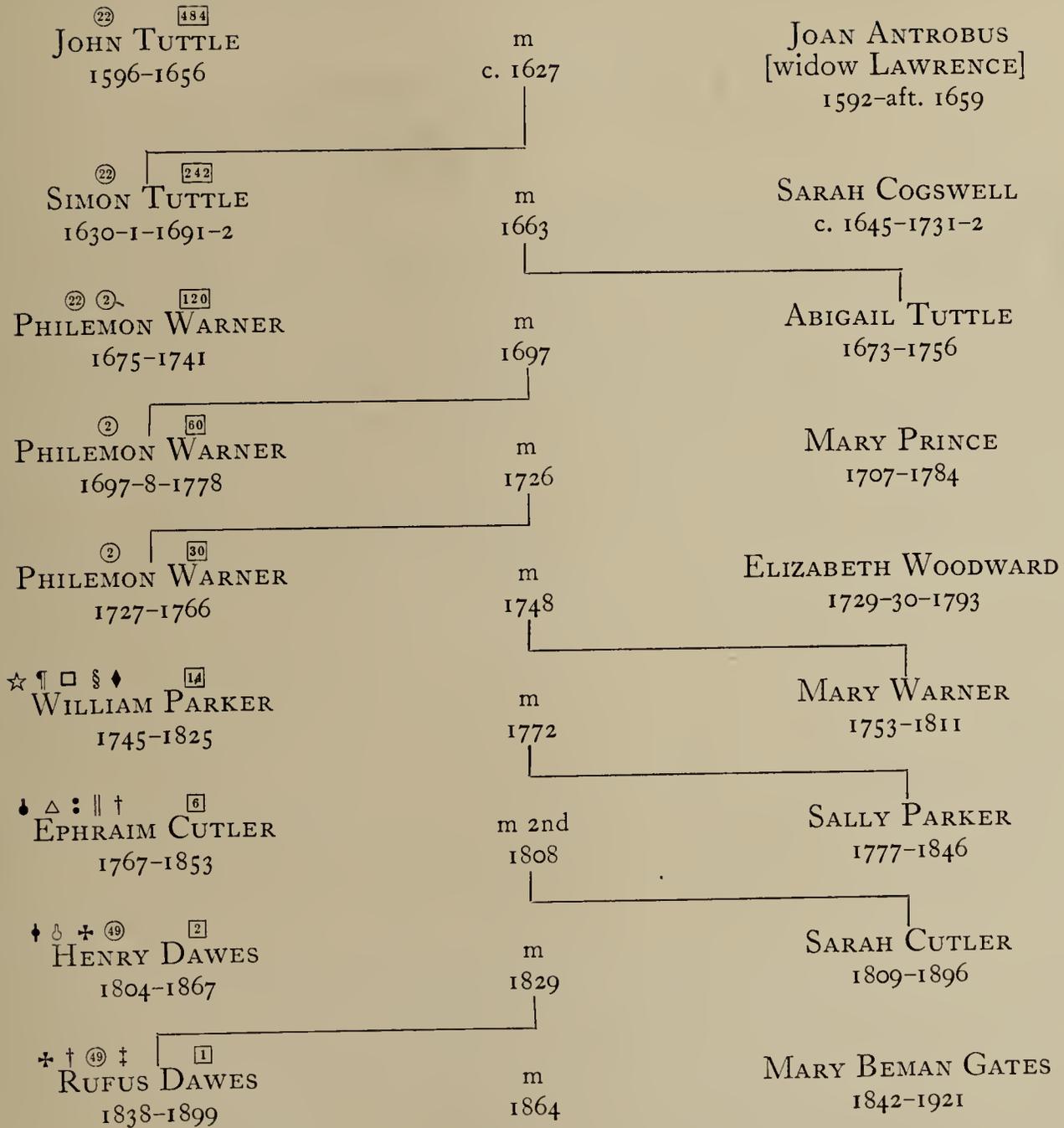
*Courtesy of American Antiquarian Society.*



MARIA CATHARINA (SMITH) MEARS

*Courtesy of American Antiquarian Society.*

# TUTTLE



- (22) Ipswich
- (2) Gloucester
- ☆ Malden
- † Charlestown
- Newburyport
- § Allegheny Co., Pa.

- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- ♠ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- ∴ Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♠ Morgan Co., O.
- † Malta, O.
- (49) Mauston, Wis.
- † Marietta, O.



## TUTTLE (*Tuttel*)

JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE called<sup>1</sup> thirty-nine years old, “mercator of Saint Albans, Hertfordshire,” with his wife JOAN and an immediate party totaling fourteen as well as a number of relatives embarked at London on the “Planter of London,” Nicholas Trerice, Master, in 1635. Others in whom we are interested who sailed at the same time were WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES, FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> NEWCOMB, wife RACHEL with their two older children, and Francis<sup>2</sup> Bushnell (FRANCIS<sup>1</sup>) with his wife and child.<sup>1</sup> The vessel sailed<sup>1</sup> about April 10 and arrived at Boston on July 7, 1635. JOHN<sup>1</sup> settled at Ipswich where he immediately became<sup>7</sup> a proprietor and evidently soon became a church member for on<sup>11</sup> March 13, 1638-9, he took the oath of a freeman. On May 1, 1640, he and four others reported to the General Court on having laid out the “roade wayes for the countrey, in behalfe of Ipswich . . .” between Rowley and Ipswich. In May, 1642, JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE and WALTER<sup>1</sup> TYBBOT with four others reported to the Court on having laid out the bounds between Cape Ann and Ipswich; in March, 1643, JOHN<sup>1</sup> with ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT, JOHN<sup>1</sup> BALCH and five others reported to the Court on having run the bounds between Salem and Ipswich<sup>11</sup> while on March 7, 1643-4, JOHN<sup>1</sup> was present at the General Court as a representative of Ipswich.<sup>11</sup> In 1644 JOHN<sup>1</sup> became a member<sup>12</sup> of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, as his son SIMON<sup>2</sup> did also in 1651. Prior to October 27, 1647, a legal action had taken place between JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE and three Gloucester men,<sup>11</sup> including our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BROWNE, with a result unsatisfactory to the three who were, on the above date, granted permission to appeal the case at the next Quarterly Court at Boston, they giving JOHN<sup>1</sup> notice of at least fourteen days before the trial.<sup>11</sup> Neither the outcome, nor the immediate cause, of this trial is seen. But evidence is at hand of a considerable variety of business interests on the part of JOHN<sup>1</sup>, both in the Colony and across the water. The published Notarial Records of William Aspinwall of Boston<sup>13</sup> show that JOHN<sup>1</sup> was frequently trusted by his neighbors in a legal way, for Aspinwall recorded on July 25, 1647, that he had just made “another” letter of attorney to JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE of Ipswich while in the one month of July, 1649, three outstanding men<sup>13</sup> constituted JOHN<sup>1</sup> their attorney — Adam Winthrop in behalf of his wife the widow Elizabeth (—) Long, James Oliver to collect or sue, and Richard Shotswell to sue for the value of a horse.<sup>13</sup>

And evidence is at hand of a really extensive importing business, for Articles of Agreement<sup>14</sup> were signed on February 16, 1649-50, between JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE merchant called “of Boston” and William Stanley and Peter Legay, merchants of Southampton, England whereby the English firm agreed to furnish to TUTTLE goods to the value of £1,200 sterling, in London on or before March 15 next following, to be transported into New England “at the Adventure” of Stanley, Legay and Co., which sum together with £25 clear profit on every £100 worth was to be paid by

TUTTLE.<sup>14</sup> The main condition seems to have been that the English firm would take orders in the Barbados, and perhaps England too, for many colonial products which were to be furnished by TUTTLE, in payment of the obligation he had assumed.

In November, 1650, a vessel called the "Adventure" reached Boston<sup>14</sup> with its master, Daniel Bradley, and one of his mariners, both bearing letters of attorney from Stanley and Legay, authorizing them to accept from TUTTLE certain merchandise for which they had orders in Barbados. TUTTLE frankly admitted that he had ready for delivery only a part of what they had expected. About this time and perhaps exactly at this juncture, our JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE (whose father RICHARD had died at Southampton about 1644, where GORE himself may have lived or at least have been acquainted) evidently endorsed a note or similar obligation with JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE and his wife JOAN, for presently the three of them were sued by master Bradley and his mariner. TUTTLE offered these men a complete settlement of his obligation if they would accept such merchandise as he had on hand. They refused at the moment<sup>14</sup> but may have come to terms presently for Aspinwall recorded on December 28, 1650, that TUTTLE had shown him "bills of lading aboard the Adventure, Daniel Bradley M<sup>r</sup>" for six hogsheads and twenty-two barrels of mackerel, 1 hogshead and twenty-three barrels of beef and forty kegs of sturgeon consigned for the use of John Woodward & Co. in the Barbados, the value of the cargo being listed at £174-10-0. TUTTLE also showed Aspinwall a second bill of lading of the same date, on the "Dolphin" of thirty-one barrels and eighteen hogsheads of goods, thirty small barrels of oysters, sixty-four "kint" of bass, five tons of "shaken caske" (probably barrel staves) and five bundles of hoops, valued at a total of £167-20-0.<sup>14</sup>

In the meantime in June, 1650, JOHN<sup>1</sup> had received on the "Swallow of London" two bales containing thirty pieces of broadcloth "drest." But the installment of his obligation to the English firm had totaled £487-5-6 and on May 22, 1651, JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE mortgaged his Ipswich home and land holdings to Stanley and Legay. By December 30, 1651, our JOHN<sup>1</sup> GORE, himself, had become their agent in the colony and then had the pleasant task of cancelling<sup>14</sup> the mortgage on the TUTTLE home.<sup>14</sup>

At an uncertain date, but<sup>15</sup> in 1651, JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE returned to the old country and presently established himself at Carrickfergus, Ireland\* where the rest of his life was spent. After his removal from the colony wife JOAN handled a number of business matters herself, showing an unusual business capacity for a woman of that early day. She had her nephew John<sup>2</sup> Tuttle (Richard<sup>1</sup>) of Rumley Marsh (Chelsea) living with her after her husband's departure and also a man servant.<sup>24</sup> JOHN<sup>1</sup>, while in the colony, had furnished goods<sup>15</sup> of some sort to the value of £11 to his son-in-law THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BURNHAM which was to have been paid in malt, but the payment was delayed until after he left the country and until JOAN herself was planning on following him, when BURNHAM rushed around and borrowed the sum in silver for her.<sup>15</sup> The kindness of the friend who made the loan was still unrequited in September, 1670, as the court records show.

JOAN, before she sailed to join JOHN<sup>1</sup>, had completed payment of their obligation

\*His employment was in some way connected with the Irish Treasury as was also that of the man whom Hannah<sup>3</sup> Tuttle presently married.<sup>22</sup>

to Stanley and Legay of England by May 13, 1652, as was acknowledged by Crispin Hooper, then attorney for the English firm.<sup>14</sup> She had also made an agreement<sup>16</sup> with Richard Shatswell, her nephew, on March 18, 1653-4, that he would continue to occupy the TUTTLE home place, have use of the stock, etc., paying £24 annually in corn, with certain other stipulations. She made her son-in-law George<sup>1</sup> Giddings and Joseph<sup>1</sup> Jewett<sup>18</sup> her attorneys to handle her business affairs.<sup>16</sup> Her ocean voyage occurred before the death of JOHN<sup>1</sup> which took place at Carrickfergus on December 30, 1656, at the age of sixty, of which event she wrote back to her children. Indeed three letters<sup>22</sup> from her are on file among the Essex County records, one dated on October 3, 1656, one on April 6, 1657, and a third on March 20, 1657-8, in which she shows herself to have been a deeply religious but sadly disillusioned woman as to her colonial holdings and their care by her attorneys, relatives and friends.<sup>16,22</sup>

JOAN is believed to have died about 1659 but certainly before 1674 when SIMON<sup>2</sup> was the sole survivor of the family.<sup>22</sup>

The children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and JOAN (ANTROBUS) TUTTLE, the first four baptized at St. Albans<sup>3</sup> were

- i. Abigail<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>2,3</sup> Nov. 24, 1628, aged<sup>1</sup> 6 in 1635; d. prob. bef. her father.
- ii. SIMON<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- iii. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>2,3</sup> Sept. 4, 1632, called<sup>1</sup> 2 in 1635; d.<sup>23</sup> aft. Apr. 18, 1670, prob. in New Hampshire; m.<sup>7</sup> Feb. 1, 1653-4, Richard Martin.
- iv. John<sup>2</sup>, bap.<sup>2,3</sup> Mar. 21, 1633-4, called<sup>1</sup> 1 in 1635; d. aft.<sup>22</sup> Apr. 1657, but bef. Apr., 1674, when SIMON<sup>2</sup> was "the only living child."<sup>22</sup>
- v. Hannah<sup>2</sup>, b. prob. at Ipswich; m. in England<sup>22</sup> bet. 1654 and 1657.

SIMON<sup>2</sup> TUTTLE (*John<sup>1</sup>*) was born at St. Albans<sup>2</sup> where he was baptized<sup>2,3</sup> on January 10, 1630-1, and was called four years old<sup>1</sup> at the emigration of the family in 1635. He died at Ipswich<sup>6,7</sup> in January, 1691-2, being buried<sup>19</sup> on the 11th and having married there<sup>7</sup> about 1663 SARAH<sup>2</sup> COGSWELL (see Cogswell, p. 189), who bore him twelve children, and died at Ipswich on January 24, 1731-2, called<sup>6</sup> eighty-six years old, having outlived her husband forty years.

In 1651 when SIMON<sup>2</sup> would have been about twenty-one years old he became a member<sup>12</sup> of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company as his father had been before him. SIMON<sup>2</sup> acquired<sup>19</sup> a share and a half in Plum Island and is said to have lived on Comfort Hill.

Even as in the Bumstead chapter we have recorded the tale of "a suit about a sow" — with historic result — so in this Tuttle chapter we record a suit about a mare — several of them in fact — but with only endless conflict and quarrelsomeness as a result. The basic facts<sup>22</sup> seem to be that Capt. Thomas<sup>1</sup> Lathrop of Salem once owned a mare which strayed away. Eventually, with her colt she made herself at home with various Ipswich families including that of JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE and when Lathrop came to claim her he made them a gift of her colt because of the "trouble and charge" the family had been put to. The colt, then a foal, was given to SIMON<sup>2</sup> and gradually grew up, but it evidently had the wandering habit for before March, 1658-9, it was already claimed by John Hasletine and when SIMON<sup>2</sup> became aware of its presence on Hasletine's property and mounted and rode it away, Joseph Jewett as attorney for Hasletine (though he was also attorney for JOAN, mother of SIMON<sup>2</sup>) brought suit for trespass against SIMON<sup>2</sup> and got a judgment against

him. Mother JOAN was already in Ireland and could not testify personally but by quoting statements made by her, from as much as eight or nine years earlier, not less than ten depositions were made to prove that the colt, now grown, was the property of SIMON<sup>2</sup>, that it had an "E" branded on its shoulder, that it already had a colt of its own and had been kept much of the time on the farm of John<sup>2</sup> Tuttle (Richard<sup>1</sup>) at Rumley Marsh (cousin of SIMON<sup>2</sup>) or at the farm of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BURNHAM, brother-in-law of SIMON<sup>2</sup>.

Evidently Hasletine got possession of the animals again and at the next term of court in September, 1659, SIMON<sup>2</sup> turned the tables, sued Hasletine for trespass and withholding a mare and mare colt and got a verdict for £30 damages if the mare and colt were not delivered at Mr. Baker's within a month.<sup>22</sup> Then there was a second trial with the earlier evidence repeated and additions furnished totaling at least twelve deponents. Apparently Hasletine defied the law for an attachment was served against his house, barn and twenty acres of land. There was more to this fuss than shows at first glance for on October 13, 1659, SIMON<sup>2</sup> TUTTLE got out a writ against Joseph Jewett for imprisonment.<sup>22</sup> And there the tale ends after much was spent in the way of costs and witness fees, when the mare was already called "ould" and her colt itself was about four years old.<sup>22</sup>

After the death of JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE, SIMON<sup>2</sup> as heir, asked the Court<sup>22</sup> for the house and land which had been his father's and received permission to take the estate into his possession temporarily if he gave security to repay the rent he might acquire and to keep the house in repair, the widow's thirds being reserved during her life. The will of JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE had been approved and allowed in Ireland and widow JOAN as executrix sent a letter of attorney bearing date of January 29, 1660, to SIMON<sup>2</sup> that he might handle the estate in Ipswich. On December 10, 1661, the Court consequently allowed that SIMON<sup>2</sup> should act as her attorney.<sup>22</sup> In March, 1662, he brought suit against Richard Shatswell for non-payment of rent.

In 1663 SIMON<sup>2</sup> was one of three who marked the bounds<sup>11</sup> of the Rev. Thomas Cobbett's farm; that year he acknowledged<sup>25</sup> a debt of over £10 which he was unable (or unwilling) to pay and consequently had a brief experience of imprisonment under the debtors' law and about that time received a blow from the fist of one Caleb Kimball who was fined.<sup>25</sup>

In 1670 SIMON<sup>2</sup> in company with his brother-in-law Thomas Clarke Junior, made oath<sup>25</sup> in court that "our father COGSWELL did promise upon marriage that he would give all hee had & what he should more gitt unto his daughters Abigaill and SARAH, and they should have it when hee and his wife dyed." On April 4, 1674, calling himself about forty-three SIMON<sup>2</sup> deposed<sup>22</sup> that he was the only living child of his parents who were both deceased.

We must admit that SIMON<sup>2</sup> appears to have lacked the dependable business qualities, the even temper and perhaps other qualities of fineness which his parents possessed. The fuss about the horses could have been attributed to carelessness and a bad temper but in or before March, 1664, SIMON<sup>2</sup> went altogether too far, as he evidently soon realized and he seems to have been a changed and subdued man after this really serious episode had passed. For he had very freely and publicly criticized the colonial government, the military officials, the laws and law makers, winding up with the statement that it would be better to live in Turkey than in the colony. Some citizens who heard him took immediate issue with him

and presently reported his "seditious and mutinous carriages" to the County Court held at Ipswich which body put him under bond of £200 to appear at the next General Court at Boston with sureties in the amount of £200 more. It ruled that he should be committed to prison until the bond was furnished. Richard Shatswell, whom SIMON<sup>2</sup> called cousin, was one of three signers of that bond. Then was submitted and recorded the following abject apology:<sup>24</sup>

"The humble petition of SYMON TUTTLE

"To the Honored court now sitting at Ipswich Humbly sheweth y<sup>t</sup> wheras your worships have received a complaint against me, I acknowledge the same to be iust and that what I spake was pverse and sinfull, and of a very haynous nature, and therefore I cast my selfe at y<sup>e</sup> feete of your justice and mercy, and if you should censure me acording to the demerritt of my great offence I have noe reason to complaine, what I have spoken I confesse is much of the nature of that which sometimes Shimen spake against david, & I may truly take up his words, y<sup>t</sup> your servants doth know that he hath sinned, and I am hartilye sorry for my soe great Folly and with him I humbly request that your worships would not impute iniquitye to me, neither remember what your servant did perversly speake, against the laws & authority of this country & that I (though unworthy of it) may have the benefitt of your Clemency, and I trust by the helpe of God I shall not alow my selfe heerafter, for ever speake well as of your selves psonally, soe of the laws & government heere established, but stir up others to doe the like, and if I shall ever speake soe vildly againe, I shall never open my mouth to request the like favour, as desireing the very strictnes of iustice ags<sup>t</sup> me; be pleased therfore but this once to pittie me, and pas by this my offence and you shall for ever ingage your poore petitioner to honer you & speake highly of your clemency

SYMON TUTTLE."

The General Court met at Boston on May 18, 1664, and its censure read thus:<sup>11</sup>

"In the case of SYMON TUTTLE, the Court, hauing heard & considered the case, doe finde his offence of a very heynous nature, as returnd from Ipswich Court, yet considering his ingenuous acknowledgment in word & writing, & considering that his sentence to be corporally punished by whipping at Ipswich on a lecture day, not exceeding twenty stripes, or otherwise pay as a fine to the country the some of tenn pounds, and also to find suretjes for his good behaiour in the some of one hundred pounds, vntill Ipswich Court next in March, & then, if there appeare nothing ag<sup>t</sup> him, to be discharged."

And in March, 1665, after a full year of the endurance of public disfavor and a certain amount of personal threat, SIMON<sup>2</sup> was let off with a fine, for the County Court decided that

"SYMON TUTTLE, being referred back by the Genrll. Court to this court, to determine about his great misdemeanor, was fined and was to be a prisoner until it be paid. His bond for good behavior was taken off."<sup>24</sup>

The affair evidently sobered SIMON<sup>2</sup> and did him good for subsequently the only ways in which his name was recorded in the Court records<sup>25</sup> (which overlooked *no one's* faults) was in renewing the marking of bounds between Ipswich, Topsfield and Rowley in 1669, as a witness in several law suits, and as surety for a number of fellow townsmen, so he had become a definitely subdued individual!

As has been stated SIMON<sup>2</sup> was buried at Ipswich on January 11, 1691-2, intestate, and widow SARAH administered the estate<sup>19</sup> which inventoried over £863. In the division of the estate widow SARAH and her son John<sup>3</sup> received one-half of a certain pasture, the lands of the estate having been divided on October 28, 1701, by an agreement between the heirs.<sup>16</sup> Nine of the twelve children of SIMON<sup>2</sup> survived him.<sup>7</sup>

The children of "SYMON"<sup>2</sup> and SARAH (COGSWELL) TUTTLE, all born in Ipswich, were<sup>6,7,19</sup>

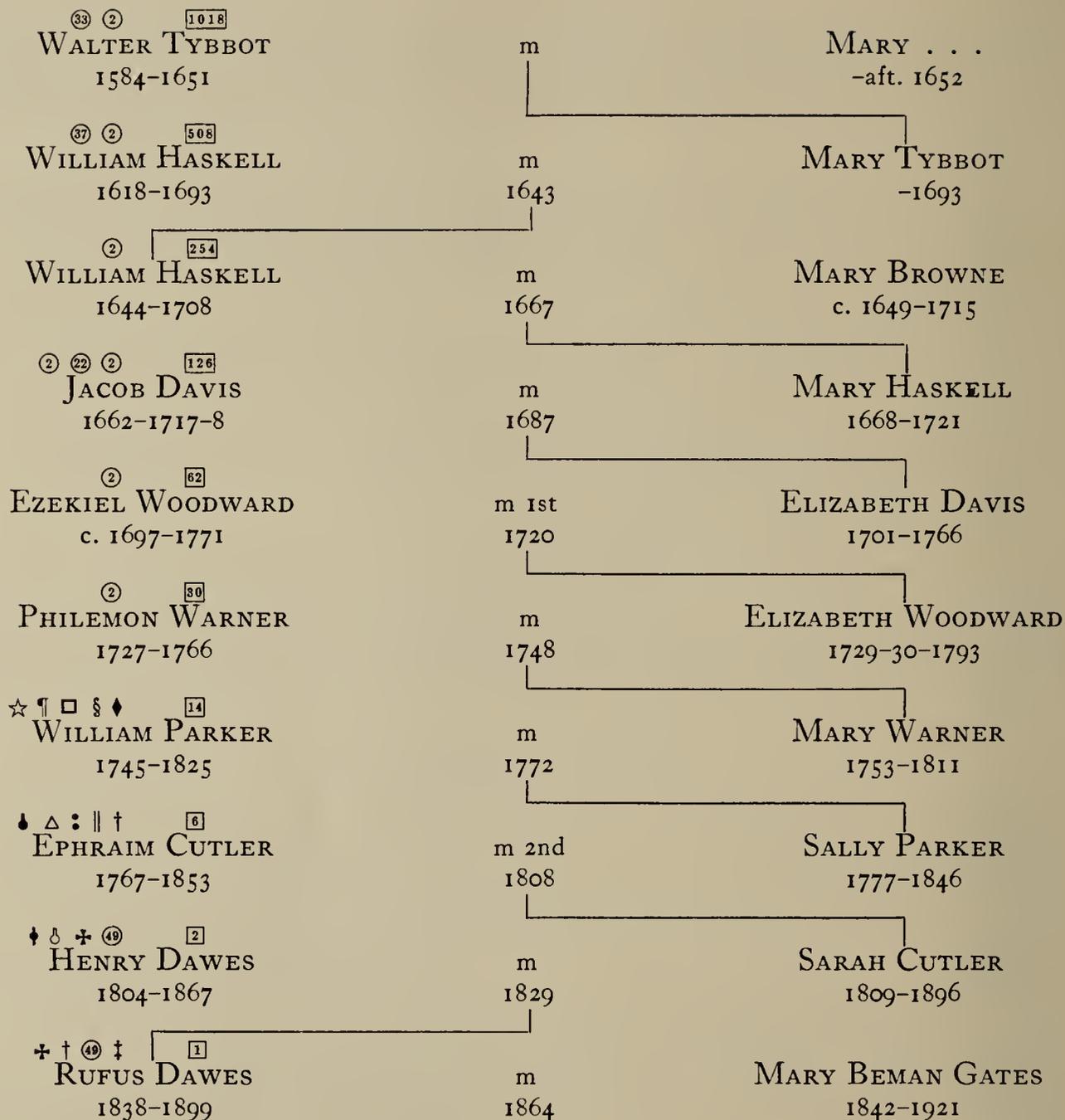
- I. Joanna<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 24, 1664; d. at Ipswich after<sup>17</sup> July 6, 1732, having survived her fourth husband;<sup>17</sup> m. 1st before 1687 Job Bishop (Thomas) a mariner of Ipswich who was lost at sea<sup>17</sup> before Mar. 1690-1; m. 2ndly at Rowley as his 2nd wife on Mar. 5, 1690-1, John<sup>2</sup> Pickard (John<sup>1</sup>);<sup>17</sup> m. 3rd at Rowley or Ipswich on Dec. 17 or 20, 1701, Edmund Potter of Ipswich; m. 4th there on Apr. 14, 1703, John Whipple called "jr." and later "Capt." of Ipswich.
- II. \*John<sup>3</sup>, b.<sup>16,19</sup> Apr. 22, 1666; d.<sup>6</sup> at Ipswich Feb. 26, 1715-6, ae. 48-10-5; m.<sup>6,19</sup> at Ipswich Dec. 3, 1689, Martha Ward. He was referred to on Mar. 31, 1691, by his sister<sup>17</sup> Joanna<sup>3</sup>.
- III. Simon<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 17, 1667; d.<sup>16</sup> after May 6, 1721; m. there<sup>6</sup> Jan. 16, 16[97?] Mary Rogers called dau. of Samuel (Rev. Nathaniel).<sup>8</sup> Removed<sup>16</sup> to Littleton.<sup>20</sup>
- IV. Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, b. Nov. 24, 1670; d. at Haverhill Nov. 29, 1752; m. there<sup>21</sup> Nov. 21, 1693, Capt. Samuel Ayer, jr. of Haverhill.
- V. Sarah<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 3, 1672; m. there Nov. 13, 1699, Samuel Ward of Ipswich.
- VI. ABIGAIL<sup>3</sup>, b. Oct. 7, 1673; d. at Gloucester prob. Sept. 30, 1756; m. at Ipswich<sup>6</sup> Apr. 27 [1697? or<sup>9</sup> 1696] PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> WARNER (see Warner, p. 653).<sup>9</sup>
- VII. Susanna<sup>3</sup>, b. May 7, 1675; d. unm.<sup>6</sup> at Ipswich July 4 or 17, 1737 ae. 61.
- VIII. William<sup>3</sup>, b. May 7, 1677; no further<sup>20</sup> record seen.
- IX. Charles<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 31, 1679; perh. he who d. at Ipswich Oct. 6, 1752; m. there<sup>6</sup> Mar. 22, 1702, Mary<sup>3</sup> Burnham (James<sup>2</sup>, THOMAS<sup>1</sup>).
- X. Mary<sup>3</sup>, b. June 12, 1680; d. prob.<sup>20</sup> bef. 1692.
- XI. Jonathan<sup>3</sup>, b. June 11, 1682; d. prob.<sup>20</sup> bef. 1692.
- XII. Ruth<sup>3</sup>, b. Aug. 16, 1685; m.<sup>16</sup> at Ipswich Sept. 17, 1728, Ezra Rolfe of Bradford.

\*A John Tuttle who was quite surely<sup>9</sup> John<sup>3</sup> (SIMON<sup>2</sup>) had a Bible which had been printed in London in 1599 in which he had written "John Tuttle, his book, God give him grace therein to look, that when the Bell for him doth toul, the Lord may have mercy on his soul, June 1, Annoqua Do. 1707." It is said<sup>9</sup> that he gave the Bible to his daughter Mary<sup>4</sup> Tuttle who became the wife in 1715 of Nathaniel<sup>4</sup> Warner (John<sup>3</sup>, DANIEL<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) who presumably inscribed his own family's record therein.<sup>9</sup>

## REFERENCES

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. The Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 14 <sup>o</sup> -4.  | 225, 227, 230.  |
| 2. Antrobus Pedigrees, Sir Reginald L. Antrobus, K. C. M. G., C. B., M. A., 1929, pp. 12, 96.  | 14. Ibid., XXXII, 344-5, 362, 382-4, 414, 423; Suffolk Deeds (pub.), I, 265-272.  |
| 3. The Herts Genealogist and Antiquary, I, 176, 291; The Parish Registers of St. Albans, 1558-1689 (being a Supplement to the former), W. Briggs, 1897, pp. 63, 65-6, 68.                | 15. Records and Files of Essex Quarterly Court, IV, 287-8; V, 292.  |
| 4. The Giddings Family, M. S. Giddings, 1882, pp. 12-7.  | 16. Ipswich Historical Society, XIX, 15-7, 26-30.   |
| 5. The Burnham Family, R. H. Burnham, 1869, p. 309.  | 17. Early Settlers of Rowley, G. B. Blodgett & A. E. Jewett, 1933, pp. 291-3; Essex Antiquarian, VIII, 124-5; Vital Records of Ipswich, II, 435; of Rowley, p. 372.   |
| 6. Vital Records of Ipswich, I, 372-4; II, 435-6, 511, 698.  | 18. Jewetts of America, F. C. Jewett, 1908, I, 13-7.  |
| 7. The Descendants of William and Elizabeth Tuttle, G. F. Tuttle, 1883, pp. xxxiv-xxxvi (with error); Savage, IV, 350-2; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 466; New England Register, VIII, 164. | 19. Hammatt Papers, pp. 375-7.  |
| 8. The Cogswells in America, E. O. Jameson, 1884, pp. 1, 18-9.   | 20. Records of Littleton, 1900, pp. 485-6.  |
| 9. Posterity of WILLIAM WARNER, E. Warner, 1863, pp. 7-8; New England Register, XX, 67.  | 21. Vital Records of Havershill, II, 313, 348.  |
| 10. New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, III, 121-5; The Thomas Book, L. B. Thomas, 1896, pp. 399-400.   | 22. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, II, 141-3, 171-4, 189, 335, 363-6; III, 95; IV, 249; V, 292; Probate Records of Essex County, I, 277-8. |
| 11. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 308, 375; II, 4, 36, 55, 198; III, 115; IV, pt. 2, pp. 78, 110.   | 23. Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, C. T. Libby, 1928-39, pp. 463-4.  |
| 12. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, O. A. Roberts, 1895, I, 145, 171.  | 24. Records and Files, III, 141-3, 245.   |
| 13. Boston Record Commissioners' Report, XXXII, 113,   | 25. Ibid., III, 150, 218, 222; IV, 150, 249; V, 286, 292, 398; VI, 16, 163, 286, 337; VII, 272, 374.  |
|  | 26. Records and Files, II, 172.   |
|  | 27. Savage, II, 301-2; IV, 61, 351-2; Pope, 198, 409, 466; Hammatt Papers, p. 330; Essex Probate Records, I, 424-8; Wyman's Charlestown, p. 435.                      |

# TYBBOT



- ③③ Marshfield
- ② Gloucester
- ③⑦ Salem
- ②② Ipswich
- ☆ Malden
- ¶ Charlestown
- Newburyport

- § Allegheny Co., Pa.
- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- ♠ Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- ∴ Waterford, O.
- ∥ Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♠ Thomaston, Me.
- ♠ Morgan Co., O.
- ✚ Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## TYBBOT

**W**ALTER<sup>1</sup> TYBBOT born<sup>4</sup> in about 1584, a Welshman, a member of the "Blynman Party," arrived<sup>3</sup> at Plymouth in 1640. We are told<sup>1</sup> that Gov. John Winslow of Plymouth Colony and founder of Marshfield, therein, who often visited England "induced several Welsh gentlemen of respectability to emigrate to America, amongst whom came the Rev. Richard\* Blinman . . ." They are recorded<sup>2</sup> on February 28, 1639-40, as "goon into New England." The theory is that these Welshmen had probably been members of the Rev. Blinman's Church at Chepstow, Monmouthshire. They settled (temporarily) at Green's Harbor<sup>1</sup> which became Marshfield where Gov. Winslow resided and where the Rev. Blinman was invited to serve as pastor. The earliest dated record<sup>5</sup> of them in New England is March 2, 1640-1, when the Rev. Blinman, and five others including our WALTER<sup>1</sup> TYBBOT made application for freemanship as of Plymouth Colony and Blinman was made a freeman there<sup>2</sup> on October 7, 1641. But before they had been a year at Marshfield "there fell out some difference among them which by no means could be reconciled, so as they agreed to part, and he came with his company and sat down at Cape Ann which at this Court (May, 1642) was established to be a plantation and called Gloucester."

Gloucester was, at that time, only a fishing station and fishermen had little time or patience for civic tasks. With this influx of moneyed and educated men, farmers and mechanics, it was natural that they should take on civic and religious control of the settlement and the fact that in May, 1642, it was incorporated and given the name "Gloucester," raises the query as to whether some of them may not have been natives or residents of Gloucester, England.

With their freemanship<sup>4,6</sup> acquired (that of WALTER<sup>1</sup> and two of the other Welshmen on<sup>6</sup> May 19, 1642, as of Massachusetts Bay) the Welshmen were eligible to assist in governmental affairs at Gloucester so it is fitting to find that our WALTER<sup>1</sup> TYBBOT as well as our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS "were chosen to manage the prudential affairs" of Gloucester<sup>3</sup> on March 2, 1641-2, being two of a group of eight. A church was established and served by the Rev. Blinman as pastor. WALTER<sup>1</sup> served as constable<sup>12</sup> in 1643, as selectman in 1643-5, both inclusive, and probably also in later years. On May 3, 1642, WALTER<sup>1</sup> of Gloucester, JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE of Ipswich and seven others signed an agreement<sup>6</sup> relative to the bounds

\*The Rev. Blinman was born 1615 at Chepstow, graduated<sup>2,7</sup> at Oxford in January, 1635-6, preached in Wales and probably at Chepstow. It is both claimed and disclaimed that he was ejected from the church there, but the latest evidence<sup>2</sup> is that ejection did not occur. Winthrop called him "a godly and an able man." Of the friction and break between him and the Marshfield people it is said<sup>7</sup> that the Rev. John<sup>1</sup> Wilson of Boston, in vain endeavored<sup>13</sup> "to appease a broyle between one master Thomas . . . and master Blindman" who "went by the worst." "With his fidelissimi Blinman removed across the Bay to Cape Ann, there gathered a church, became its first ordained minister, and acquired recognition for the settlement from the General Court as the town of Gloucester."<sup>7</sup>

between Cape Ann and Ipswich. In 1647 WALTER<sup>1</sup> was allowed and appointed "to draw wine" at Gloucester, paying twenty shillings per annum rent or license.<sup>6</sup>

The Rev. Blinman was granted permission<sup>3</sup> in 1643 to "cut the heath through and to maintain it . . . and he is to have the benefit of it, himself and his, forever, giving the inhabitants of the town free passage." This permit pertained to the cutting of a passage across the narrow neck (see map, p. 673) between what is now Gloucester Harbor and the Annisquam River and Harbor, thus furnishing a short cut for coastwise trade (see Ellery, p. 288).

But the association of the Rev. Blinman with some of the people of Gloucester was far from happy — especially with the fishermen who were earlier residents than he, who were as a class not especially inclined toward religion and whose occupation itself necessitated that they be fighters. One John Stone\* of Gloucester was tried<sup>8</sup> in August, 1644, "for scandalizing Mr. Blinman . . . charging him with a fake interpretation of the Scriptures . . . also by saying that if an angel from Heaven should preach the same he would not believe it, and there were others of his mind. . . ." The Gloucester fishermen "made Blinman's ministry a turbulent one" and as a result<sup>7</sup> of frequent disturbances, he removed in 1648-50 to New London, Connecticut accompanied by a number of his flock including JOHN<sup>1</sup> COIT with his wife and some of their family. There the Rev. Blinman preached to both English and Indians<sup>7</sup> until 1658 when he made one more removal, to New Haven. As a climax to a troubled life, he returned about 1659 to England and is said to have died at Bristol<sup>3</sup> in 1687.

WALTER<sup>1</sup> TYBBOT did not follow his pastor to Connecticut though a granddaughter of his, Elizabeth (Dike) Hill, did so. WALTER<sup>1</sup> was well-to-do. His will<sup>6,11</sup> dated June 5, 1651, was proved October 19, 1651, following his death at Gloucester on August 14. It made his wife MARY his executrix and provided for her during her life, her property then to revert to his grandson Richard Dicke or Dyke. It made a bequest of £15 to his daughter MARY, gave his clock (an unusual possession at that date) to her husband WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> HASKELL and made bequests to their children; made bequests also to son-in-law Edward or Edmund Clark, to John and Joseph Clark, to Elizabeth Dicke, Elinor Babson (wife of James) and to Zebulon Hill. His will was lost but a sworn copy was accepted by the General Court for record.<sup>6,11</sup>

His widow MARY married secondly at Gloucester<sup>9,10</sup> on April 22, 1652, John<sup>1</sup> Harding of Salem, Gloucester and Weymouth and died at an unknown date.

The known children of WALTER<sup>1</sup> and MARY (—) TYBBOT, both born before emigration were<sup>4,12</sup>

1. Agnes<sup>2</sup>, d. at Gloucester, Feb. 23, 1681-2; m. 1st (—) Dike and had (Dike)
  - (1) Elizabeth, m. at Gloucester Nov. 16, 1651, Zebulon Hill.
  - (2) Richard, b. abt. 1640; d. at Gloucester May 6, 1729, aged abt. 89; m. there Aug. 7, 1667, Rebecca<sup>2</sup> Dolliber (Samuel<sup>1</sup>);
- m. 2nd Edmund Clark of Gloucester and had (Clark)
  - (3) John, "eldest son", d. Jan. 2, 1681, prob. unm.
  - (4) Abigail, b. abt. 1632-3; d. at Gloucester Mar. 8, 1710-1, aged 78-9; m. at Ipswich Sept. 10, 1651, William<sup>1</sup> Sargent called of Gloucester who d. there Feb. 9 or 19, 1715-6 or 1717, aged 93.

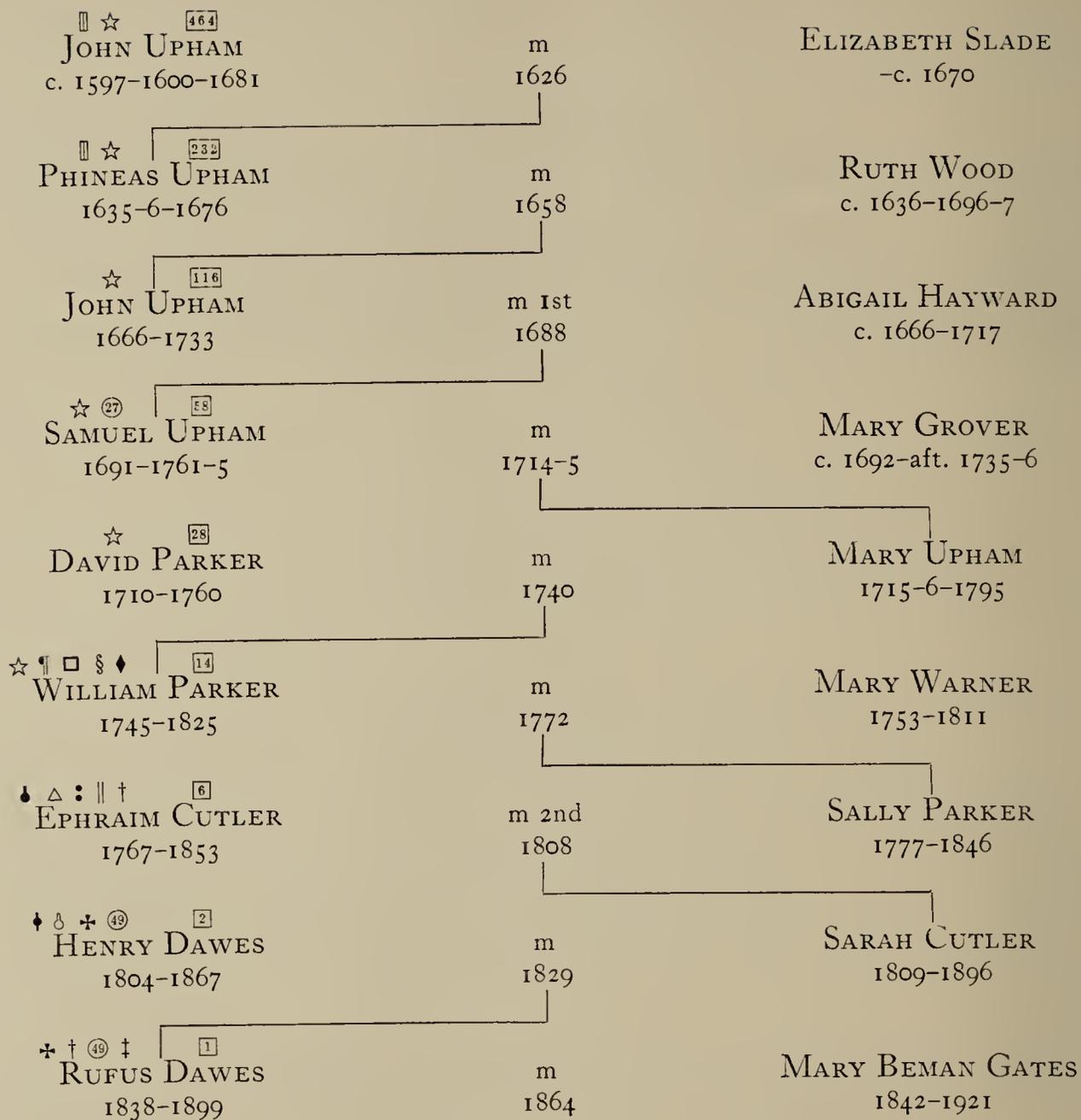
\*Perhaps he was the step-father of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> HASKELL.

- (5) Joseph, b. Nov. 16, 1650, at Gloucester; d. there Nov. 29, 1696; m. there Mar. 27, 1682, Hannah Davis.
11. MARY<sup>2</sup>, d. at Gloucester Aug. 16, 1693; m. there Nov. 6, 1643, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> HASKELL (see Haskell, p. 351).

## REFERENCES

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. New England Register LIII, 234-9; Memoir of the Colony of New Plymouth, F. Baylies, 1866, I, pt. 2, p. 285.</li> <li>2. Calamy Revised, A. G. Matthews, 1934, p. 61; Alumni Oxoniensis, 1891, I, 139.</li> <li>3. New England Register, LIV, 39-40; History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, pp. 7, 380.</li> <li>4. Ibid., p. 173.</li> <li>5. Plymouth Colony Records, II, 8.</li> <li>6. Records of Massachusetts Bay, II, 4, 189, 292; III,</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>107, 109, 290; IV, pt. 1, p. 118.</li> <li>7. The Founding of Harvard University, S. E. Morison, 1935, p. 367.</li> <li>8. Cory Genealogy, C. H. Cory, 1937, I, pt. 2, p. 236.</li> <li>9. Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 212.</li> <li>10. Vital Records of Gloucester, II, 556; III, 309.</li> <li>11. Essex Probates, I, 132-3.</li> <li>12. Savage, IV, 299-300; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 454.</li> <li>13. Babson's Gloucester, pp. 189-92.</li> </ol> |
|--|--|

# UPHAM



|| Weymouth  
 ☆ Malden  
 27 Leicester  
 ¶ Charlestown  
 □ Newburyport  
 § Allegheny Co., Pa.

◆ Meigs Co., O.  
 ♠ Edgartown  
 △ Killingly, Conn.  
 ∙ Waterford, O.  
 || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.  
 † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

† Thomaston, Me.  
 ♂ Morgan Co., O.  
 ✕ Malta, O.  
 49 Mauston, Wis.  
 † Marietta, O.



## UPHAM (*Uppam, Uphame, Uppum*)

**J**OHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM\* was born<sup>3</sup> during part of the reign of Queen Elizabeth about 1597-1600 in the parish of Bicton,\*\* co. Devon, England and there he was married<sup>3</sup> on November 1, 1626, to ELIZABETH SLADE. Three or more children were born to them in their English home and there JOHN<sup>1</sup> and at least two of his sisters (Joane and Sarah) conceived a desire to cross the ocean to New England — perhaps because of having come under the Puritan influence — for the next spring, after their mother's death,<sup>3</sup> they joined a group of about twenty families, called Rev. Joseph<sup>1</sup> Hull's company, in the great adventure of emigration.<sup>1</sup> That this decision was an offense to their father, RICHARD, seems probable from certain phrases in his will, such as: ". . . I give to Sarah Uppam, my daughter in New England, if she write that she hath need of it, that my executrixes may knowe of it under her hand within y<sup>e</sup> term of three years, then my will is shee shall have £5 . . . I give JOHN UPPAM, my sonne in New England, if he come for it, 5 sh . . . I give to Joane Martin, my daughter, if she come for it, 5 sh . . ." So either their defection from the English Church or the dangers of such a journey and place of residence must have caused grief to their father RICHARD, who died five months after their arrival in New England, though they could not have learned of it until navigation opened up the next year.

The vessel of unknown name on which they emigrated sailed from Weymouth, co. Dorset,<sup>2</sup> England, about<sup>1</sup> March 20, 1634-5, and is said to have reached Boston May 5 or 6, having been only about six weeks on the ocean — a much shorter voyage than many. The sailing list which is extant showed Robert Martyn of Batcombe, England, aged forty-four, with his wife, Joane Upham, sister<sup>3</sup> of JOHN<sup>1</sup>, of the same age, JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM, husbandman, aged thirty-five, his wife, ELIZABETH, aged thirty-two, their three children, John<sup>2</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> and Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, aged seven, five and three, respectively, Sarah<sup>1</sup> Upham, aged twenty-six, sister of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and a youth named Graves or Grane, aged twelve. Also on this boat

\*JOHN<sup>(d or 1)</sup> UPHAM was<sup>3</sup> a son of RICHARD<sup>c</sup> UPHAM (JOHN<sup>b</sup>, RICHARD<sup>a</sup>) and his wife MARIA of Bicton. MARIA was buried there on July 26, 1634, and RICHARD<sup>c</sup> was buried on December 19, 1635, having made his will a week earlier. This document was witnessed by a Robert Conant who was also made one of the overseers and who helped to make an inventory of the personal estate which totaled about £60. The eldest son, Thomas<sup>d</sup> Upham, succeeded his father as head of the family and owner of the real estate, having married there<sup>51</sup> on June 15, 1625, a Sarah Slade, probably a relative of ELIZABETH who married our JOHN<sup>1</sup>. The will named the seven other children of whom three unmarried daughters, Susanna<sup>d</sup>, Frances<sup>d</sup>, and Jane<sup>d</sup> were made joint executrixes. Of the other children, our JOHN<sup>1</sup> had married at Bicton, November 1, 1626, ELIZABETH SLADE. Joane<sup>d</sup>, his sister, had married Robert Martyn from Batcombe, co. Dorset; Judith<sup>d</sup>, another sister, had married at Bicton on June 14, 1632, Edward Martyn and Sarah<sup>d</sup> the emigrant was still unmarried.<sup>3</sup>

\*\*It is stated<sup>40</sup> that the records of Holy Trinity Parish show that JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM was at Exeter about eleven miles north-west of Bicton for some months before his emigration. This authority also assigns an added child Phineas<sup>2</sup> baptized September 21, 1634, and buried October 2, 1634, at Bicton.<sup>40</sup>

sailed<sup>1</sup> Angel<sup>1</sup> Hollard and his wife Katherine aged twenty-two of whom the latter some thirty-six years later was to become the second wife of JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM.

Though they landed at Boston, their settlement there as a body would not have been acceptable for Rev. Joseph Hull, and probably at least a part of his party were still favorable to the Church of England, and beside, the existent policy of the colonists was to have the later comers form new towns rather than to overcrowd established ones. So these hundred or more people would have found temporary quarters until the General Court could pass upon a location where they might receive grants of land. On July 2, they were given permission to settle at a location which had formerly been called Wessagusset (Wesaguscus, Wessaguscusset) and which on September 2, 1635, was incorporated and given the name of Weymouth, probably partly in honor of the place of embarkation of the Hull company and perhaps also in honor of the home of the Gorges family, whose party of emigrants had preceded the Hull company as more or less temporary settlers at this same place.

For this particular plantation was unique in that it was second only to Plymouth in its date of first settlement and was the earliest location on Boston Bay to have been (probably) permanently occupied,<sup>4</sup> having been chosen in 1622 as a fishing station by the Thomas Weston party and having been occupied in 1623 by the Gorges company. Both of these ventures had proved unsuccessful but are claimed to have left a part of their personnel so that when the Hull group came in 1635 they would have found a number of families on the ground — perhaps even fifty or seventy-five. But what is still more unusual is the fact that the remnants of the two earlier groups and this third one had differing ecclesiastical tendencies, and had, at least a part of the time, a minister for each group — but only one meeting house.<sup>4</sup>

The Rev. Joseph<sup>1</sup> Hull served his company ministerially for a time and apparently formed a church organization shortly after their arrival for on September 2, 1635, JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM, Rev. Joseph<sup>1</sup> Hull, and three other men who came in their party, applied for freemanship for which church membership was then a necessary preliminary.<sup>2,6</sup> The plan for apportionment of lands at Weymouth specified that six acres should be allotted<sup>4,5</sup> for every "complete person", and three acres for every "half passenger" (under twelve years). On this basis, JOHN<sup>1</sup> received<sup>4</sup> thirty acres.\*

JOHN<sup>1</sup> is recorded as having owned land at Weymouth in its northern part, in a section called "Old Spain", as having had four acres on King Oak Hill\*\* the vicinity of present Commercial Street, two acres in Harris' Range, two acres of salt marsh "with a little island adjoining it called Burying Island" now known as Whale Island and thirty acres in the great lots.<sup>4</sup>

On September 3, 1635, the day after Weymouth was incorporated and named, the General Court instructed the town to send a deputy to represent them, but the tri-party religious situation overlapped into civic affairs, and three men were elected to fill the position in 1636, JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM being chosen by the Hull company, but another than he was seated by the court. However, the town chose<sup>4</sup> him again

\*This would probably have been six acres each for JOHN<sup>1</sup> himself, for his wife ELIZABETH and his sister Sarah, with three acres each for the three children he brought over and another three for PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> who is supposed to have been born on the voyage or soon after arrival.

\*\*His land on "king-oke-hill" was bounded<sup>53</sup> on the north by the land of Richard<sup>1</sup> Webb (see p. 615).

in 1637 for two sessions, but at his own request he was permitted to remain at home<sup>5</sup> from the second. He was elected for the same service for one term in 1638 and served two terms in 1639, the last one being by appointment in the place of a man who had been sent to England by the town<sup>5</sup> as its representative.

On June 5, 1640, JOHN<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH lost their eldest son John<sup>2</sup> by death — the first break in the family circle in the new world. In about November of that year a townsman sued<sup>5,7</sup> JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM and William<sup>1</sup> Smith, who were then holding official positions in Weymouth, because he felt that they had not granted him a fair share of land, but the difficulty seems to have been amicably settled.<sup>5,7</sup> In 1642 JOHN<sup>1</sup> was on a committee of six who treated with the Indians and obtained from them a title to certain land. In 1644 he and one other were empowered by the General Court to “end small causes”<sup>\*</sup> in Weymouth<sup>5</sup> and JOHN<sup>1</sup> served as selectman there in 1643 and 1645–8, the latest date on which his name appears in that town being February 21, 1647–8.

His removal to Malden,<sup>5,8</sup> which was set off from Charlestown in 1649, must have occurred between 1648 and 1650 for on March 22, 1651, he was already a selectman there.<sup>5,9</sup> His lots in Malden were adjacent to those of Richard<sup>1</sup> Adams for in 1653 a road was laid out<sup>9</sup> between them. Only scattering records of Malden prior to 1678 are extant so our knowledge of thirty years of the life of JOHN<sup>1</sup> is necessarily quite incomplete but enough has been saved to show that his standing here, as at Weymouth, ranked high among his associates; that he was quite continuously honored by official positions in church, town and colony, serving as selectman at least in 1651, 1653, 1655, 1657, 1659, 1668, and even presiding<sup>9</sup> at a town meeting in December, 1678, when he was about eighty. He had been appointed,<sup>5</sup> with two others, by the high court to “end small causes” in Malden in 1657, 1659 and 1661; had frequently served his neighbors<sup>9</sup> as a witness to deeds or wills and as a lister of inventories; and he served the Malden Church<sup>\*\*</sup> as deacon for at least twenty-four years.<sup>5</sup>

Certain occasions or actions show forth convincingly the character of JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM. One instance in connection with the Malden Church is earliest hinted at in 1651 when he and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL were two of the five selectmen who, with the constable, Richard<sup>1</sup> Adams, asked the court to replace the acting innkeeper (John Hathorne who had started trouble against their minister, and who later admitted criminal conduct in other matters) by licensing Thomas<sup>1</sup> Skinner (see Call, p. 134). The early people had many of them left England in protest against civic dominance of religious matters, yet already in the colony the court sat in judgment on Malden's choice of and ordination of the Rev. Marmaduke Matthews as their pastor. In May, 1651, JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM, John<sup>1</sup> Waite and others signed a letter to the General Court and in June, 1651, these two men with THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL and six others signed another, in behalf of their minister. And what is more amazing, a document<sup>9</sup> sent to the Court in October, 1651, praising the minister's service and

<sup>\*</sup>This position would approximate our Justice of the Peace.

<sup>\*\*</sup>An unusual form of expression is found<sup>27</sup> regarding the Malden meeting house for which Job Lane, carpenter of that town, contracted in 1658 with the selectmen. He did “promiss and agree to build, erect and finish upp a good strong, Artificial meeting House, of Thirty-three foot Square, sixteen foot stud between joints, with dores, windows, pullpitt, seats, and all other things whatsoever in all respects belonging thereto as hereafter is expressed . . .”; then follows thirteen items of detailed specifications which suggest the opposite of artificiality — and for this job was to receive the sum of £150 “in corne, cord-wood and provisions, sound and merchantable att price currant and fatt catle, on valuacon by Indifferent men . . .”<sup>27</sup>

petitioning for a continuance of it was signed only by women — thirty-six of them.\* But the Court saw fit to ignore the petition, to fine the church £50 and the minister £10 unless within a month he acknowledged his sin (of being ordained by the church he served, instead of requesting ordination by a group of churches, some of whom were avowedly hostile to him). The joke of it is that when the marshal attempted to collect the fine from the minister he found nothing to attach, so the court ordered that “the execution thereof shalbe respited, till other goods appeare besides books.” In October, 1652, the minister’s fine was remitted, as was also £10 of the fine laid on the members.<sup>9</sup> As for these members of the church who had contemned the offending ordination, the court secured the fine laid upon them by holding the estates of three of them liable for its payment, but permitting them to apportion it among a total of ten or eleven members. The estate of Captain John<sup>1</sup> Waite\*\* was one of the three held liable and among the ten who must assist in paying the fine were JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL. In May, 1655, with only a part of the remaining £40 paid, a petition was made to the court, signed by JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL and six others “in w<sup>ch</sup> they humbly acknowledg the offenc they gaue to the Court & seuerall churches about the ordjnation of M<sup>r</sup> Mathewes”, asking that their church might be cleared of the whole debt or that at least John<sup>1</sup> Waite and Joseph Hills might be cleared. This request had an unexpected reply for “The Court doth well approue & accept of the petitio<sup>rs</sup> acknowledgments of their iregular actings in those times, but understanding y<sup>t</sup> much, if not most of the fine being payd for, & y<sup>t</sup> the rest is secured & should long since haue been payd in, the Court doth not thinke meet to graunt the petitiono<sup>rs</sup> request herein”,<sup>9</sup> and in 1658 some part of the fine was still unpaid. However, JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> CALL “had the honor of standing foremost in the struggle between the church and the state; . . . they defended the independence of the church in the election of its officers and in its internal government — an independence which had already been defined and approved by the Body of Liberties and the Cambridge Platform.”<sup>9</sup>

On another line of principle, it is noted that JOHN<sup>1</sup> was apparently not a teetotaler, but neither did he favor excessive use of liquor for while in December, 1653, he voted with the other selectmen requesting that Thomas Skinner, innkeeper, be permitted to sell “Strong waters And Wine to Supplie the necessitys of the Towne and Travellers . . .”,<sup>9</sup> he also voted in 1659, as a selectman, requesting that the innkeeper that year should be licensed to sell strong liquors in the town, “. . . that persons may be prevented from keeping such quantities in their private houses, the abuse whereof have proved of very evil consequence.”<sup>9</sup>

The careful training and protective care given to their children by JOHN<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH commands respect. Their son Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> became a church member and a freeman<sup>14</sup> in 1653, was trained for the ministry and served for a time<sup>14</sup> at Malden and later at Cambridge. Since no evidence is found of his education having been carried on in New England, it has been surmised<sup>9</sup> that he may have been sent to school in England. His parents endured the sorrow of having his life and usefulness terminated at the age of thirty — it is said, from smallpox — and exactly two

\*Our JOANNA (SHEPARDSON) CALL and ELIZABETH (—) GROVER both signed this document but the name of ELIZABETH (SLADE) UPHAM was not included.<sup>9</sup>

\*\*It was this man who in 1675 married as his second wife our SARAH (—) PARKER.

weeks after his marriage had occurred. JOHN<sup>1</sup> graciously deeded land on July 2, 1662, to this son's widow whom he called "my beloved daughter".<sup>5</sup>

As will presently be shown, their second son PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> was a useful citizen and upright man finally giving his life as a result of his military service. And all three of their daughters married and reared useful families, but in her youth their youngest daughter, Priscilla<sup>2</sup>, caused them no slight anxiety, for in 1658, by the time she was sixteen, she had become interested in a roustering rough-neck, nine years her senior, one Paul Wilson\* who would not leave her alone, and JOHN<sup>1</sup> was compelled to ask the court to intervene. No sane father could have approved of Wilson who was often before the court on one charge or another and who boasted to JOHN<sup>1</sup> (by the word of John Martin who used the term "cousin" toward Priscilla<sup>2</sup>) "that if he could get, or had gotten, the affections of a maid, (and he could), as for the maid he would have her — do all her friends or all the men in New England what they can."<sup>9</sup> So the complaint of JOHN<sup>1</sup> was "for violent soliciting of his daughter against his will", and the court admonished Wilson, and bound him in the sum of £10 "y<sup>t</sup> he will no more frequent the Company of Priscilla Vpham, nor by no means whether direct or indirect, make any more addresses unto her without her fathers leave first orderly had & obtained." For at that time the law gave parents the power of disposing of their children in marriage and suitors were required to first gain parents' consent before they addressed, or in any way induced, a maiden.

Incidentally, Priscilla<sup>2</sup> married another man four years later and bore him an even dozen of children.<sup>9,13</sup>

In June, 1660, JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM\*\* legally adopted a lad of twelve who had been brought about 1652 from Barbados "fatherless and friendless" whom he had evidently previously been caring for by direction of the magistrates, with whom he had received only £7 in value<sup>53</sup> and to whom he had already given his own name.<sup>5</sup> This lad creditably took part in King Philip's War<sup>10</sup> after which he resided in Charlestown where he died of smallpox<sup>53</sup> November 25, 1677, aged thirty. This young man's will gave his musket to Phineas<sup>3</sup> Upham, son of Lt. PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> and the rest of his estate was left to his fiance, Elizabeth Mousall (John).<sup>5,8,10,53</sup>

One other action portrays the character of JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM in true colors. His

\*Wilson, at one court appearance,<sup>9</sup> admitted excessive drinking and was fined. A couple of years later in the evening of a public fast day in Charlestown, he helped to pull down and burn fences and to tumble a house into the river, for which he was fined thirty shillings and costs, with an alternative of five stripes. In 1658, he took part in what was probably intended for a charivari for PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> and his bride (vide infra, see p. 617). It seems only fair to add that he later served the country in King Philip's War, married, joined Charlestown Church and reared a large family. It is an odd coincidence that his wife joined Charlestown Church the very day that Priscilla (Upham) Crosswell did so.<sup>54</sup>

\*\*Evidences of unexplained inter-relationships are found<sup>5,16,17</sup> in connection with this family for:

(a) Richard<sup>1</sup> Webb, early of Weymouth<sup>16</sup> and later of Boston, made his will on July 1, 1659, and died the next day. He named his eldest son Joseph<sup>2</sup> (a minor) as his executor and named as overseers Deacon JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM of Malden, Deacon Nicholas<sup>1</sup> Clapp of Dorchester and Lt. ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP of Dorchester and "entreats" them to assist and counsel his children for their best good. This document was witnessed by ROGER<sup>1</sup> and JOAN CLAPP (see Clapp, p. 163) and was presented for probation July 21, 1659, on which day Joseph<sup>2</sup> Webb chose his "uncle UPHAM", Lt. CLAPP and Deacon Clapp as his guardians.<sup>16</sup>

(b) The will<sup>17</sup> of Robert<sup>1</sup> Martyn who had married Joane Upham, sister of JOHN<sup>1</sup>, and had crossed the ocean on the same boat, was signed in May, 1660, and it referred to "Cousin ROGER CLAPP of Dorchester". The will of his widow Joane in 1666 mentioned the children of brother UPHAM of Malden, cousin CLAPP, kinswoman Jane Clapp, sister Smith and kinsman and cousins John<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup> and Jacob<sup>2</sup> Ormsby (sons of Richard<sup>1</sup> Ormsby of Saco, Salisbury, Haverhill and Rehoboth, of whom the first named, John<sup>2</sup> Ormsby, had married in 1664 a Grace Martin).<sup>17</sup>

(c) An added possibility is seen in the will of Richard Webb for he made bequests to an Esther Pierce whom he called daughter-in-law and to her children, Moses and Esther. An Esther Pierce survived her husband William, a mariner of Boston, who died in 1669 leaving a small estate and some children.<sup>5,16,17</sup> And finally our PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM lived at the home of a Mrs. Pierce of Boston prior to his death (vide infra).<sup>29</sup>

wife, ELIZABETH, was mentioned in records in July, 1662, in 1664 and for the last time on December 2, 1670. She died soon after that date, for on August 14, 1671, JOHN<sup>1</sup> was about to marry secondly Katherine, widow of Angel<sup>1</sup> Hollard who had come to New England in the vessel with JOHN<sup>1</sup> and his family. On the above date he signed before witnesses a "deed of disclaim" which read,

" . . . know all whom it may concern That whereas there is a consummation of marriage intended between me, JOHN UPHAM, Sen. of Malden, in New England and Katherine Hollard . . . I the said JOHN UPHAM do hereby wholly disclaim and utterly refuse to receive and take any goods, Estate or appurtenances any way whatsoever belonging to the said Katherine and especially any money, goods, Estates or movables whatsoever that have been formerly or now are anyway belonging to the Estate of her former husband Angell Hollard . . .",

and they were married during that same month of August.<sup>5,15</sup> Almost ten years later, on February 25, 1681, when he was over eighty, or "aged eighty-four," by his grave stone,<sup>5,20</sup> \*JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM died intestate,<sup>5,15</sup> at Malden, having lived a fine useful life. He evidently expressed a wish in behalf of his daughters, for the will of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> referred to legacies of £12 each which were due from him to his three sisters<sup>48</sup> "according to an obligation under his hand."

It is said of JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM that

"through his long life, matured by an experience of thirty-eight years in England and forty-six in this country, in times which drew largely on the intellect and energy of men, appears to have sustained himself well as a strong man and respected citizen, and to have been an efficient co-laborer among those who, in times of peril, laid the foundations of a free state. Actis aevum implet. His descendants, for eight generations, in peace and honor, have lived protected and blessed by the institutions and principles for which he labored; and the effect of his instructions and example, through successive generations, is doubtless not without its influence on them to the present day."<sup>53</sup>

The children of JOHN<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH (SLADE) UPHAM, the first three born in England and the others at Weymouth, were<sup>1,2,3,4,5,8,9</sup>

- i. John<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1628, ae. 7 in 1635; buried June 5, 1640.
- ii. Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1630 ae. 5 in 1635; d. at Cambridge, Mar. 20, 1661-2, aged 30, having m. there<sup>14</sup> only 15 days before on Mar. 5, 1661-2, Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Stedman (John<sup>1</sup>).
- iii. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1632, ae. 3 in 1635; d. Jan. 12, 1705-6, "aged 74"<sup>53</sup> "or about 75" or "aged 76"; m. by 1654, Thomas<sup>1</sup> Welch.<sup>8</sup>
- iv. PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- v. Mary<sup>2</sup>, d. June 27, 1677; m. about 1660-1, as his first wife, John<sup>2</sup> Whittmore (Thomas<sup>1</sup>)<sup>8</sup> who was bap. Feb. 11, 1638-9.
- vi. Priscilla<sup>2</sup>, b. 1642; d. Dec. 8, 1717, aged 75; m.<sup>8</sup> by 1662, Thomas<sup>1</sup> Crosswell and bore him twelve children.

PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM (*John<sup>1</sup>*) was born in 1635-6, some believe during the voyage, or perhaps at Weymouth shortly after their arrival for<sup>4,5</sup> in December, 1671, when he made a deposition<sup>18</sup> he gave his age as thirty-six; moreover on June 12, 1636, at a division of land in that town whereby JOHN<sup>1</sup> had received thirty acres, six acres being allotted for each "complete person" and three for each "half passenger" (under twelve years), it would have implied six acres each for JOHN<sup>1</sup>, wife ELIZABETH and for his sister, Sarah<sup>1</sup> Upham, three acres each for the three children brought

\*The grave stone of JOHN<sup>1</sup> has been reported upon<sup>53</sup> in 1845 and again in 1879 and 1886 as rapidly crumbling and almost illegible.

from England and three more presumably for PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> who had lately arrived as the youngest member of the family. He would have been a youth of about fourteen at the removal of the family to Malden and he was the only son who left descendants. His death, as will be shown, occurred in October, 1676, undoubtedly at Boston, but it is recorded<sup>15</sup> at Malden, his home town. He was married at Malden by the Rev. Richard Russell on April 14, 1658, to RUTH WOOD\* who died there as his widow<sup>15</sup> on January 18, 1696-7, aged sixty, having lived twenty years as a widow.

The earliest item found pertaining to this couple subsequent to their marriage, occurred on April 30, 1658, two weeks after that ceremony and presumably would be rated as a charivari. For we are told<sup>11</sup> that

“Upon the last day of April [1658] in the night at too of the cloke after midnight; There was a noise heard by PHINEHAS VPHAM and his Wife At the side of the house; by which they were awakned out of their sleepe — his wife being awakned first was strucke with agreat feare: Wee heard musicke and dansing which was no smal disturbance to us: And they came harkeing unto our window where wee lay; which they did three times; between which times they danced and played with their musicke: with much laughter.”

Three days later, Paul Wilson (see p. 615), who was haled into court that same year by JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM for paying unwelcome attentions to his young daughter Priscilla<sup>2</sup>, called at the home of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> and acknowledged that he was one of the revelers; and when

“It was farther demanded of him what musicke they had among them; whether it was not a kit, or a Jewsharpe; who answered no, Jt was a Smal Vial; Ading also you could not know us by our Voices, for wee said at our departure nothing, but two of the cloke and a faire morning.”<sup>11</sup>

In 1664 and 1670, JOHN<sup>1</sup> calling himself “yeoman” deeded land to PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> who is said to have also received<sup>18</sup> grants from the town of Malden earlier, as well as later. In December, 1671, when he was thirty-six years old, PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> was constable and he testified

“. . . I being occasionally with our select men, and they having called John Pemberton before them, did reprove him for mis-spending his time and for other misdemeanors . . .”<sup>18</sup>

In 1673 PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> and three others were appointed to survey a road between Cambridge and Malden and frequently he took inventories, witnessed documents, etc. By the will of Richard<sup>1</sup> Adams it is seen that at least four of that man's fields or plots of ground adjoined<sup>21</sup> land of “FINAS UPHAM”.

What promised to become a far-reaching action toward settlement of Massachusetts was initiated<sup>11</sup> in 1662 when a group of Middlesex men applied to the General Court for additional land. As a result they were granted the Plantation at Quonsigamug (Worcester, see map, p. 618). It was not settled upon promptly, probably because of its remoteness, but about 1670 allotments were made to various people who contemplated actual settlement, and in May 1674, thirty-three of these men signed a petition about boundaries. Of these over half were Malden

\*Her identity has not been established in spite of diligent effort. Many writers state that she was the daughter of Edward of Charlestown and this may have been true, but no proof has been found.



men and included LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> GROVER,\* his brother Thomas<sup>2</sup> Grover and PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM. Evidently PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> had been especially interested and useful in the preliminary efforts, for on July 8, 1673, a fifty acre lot was confirmed<sup>52,53</sup> to him by the committee with the recorded explanation that "this they did upon a rule of justice and equity, in consideration of the labor, travel, and activity of the said UPHAM, from time to time, in furthering, advancing, and encouraging the settlement of the plantation." Then when the regular assignment of lots was made in 1674-5, PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> and Philip<sup>1</sup> Atwood, second husband of our ELIZABETH (—) GROVER, received fifty acres apiece "in the west squadron or division on the south side of the Country Road." This was the new road from Marlborough west to the Connecticut River through Northborough, Shrewsbury and Worcester with Quonsigamog "in the middle way between Marlborough and Quabaug" (Brookfield see map, p. 618).<sup>52</sup> By April, 1675, five or six Malden families including PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup> Grover, and his mother ELIZABETH with her new husband were actually resident at this the earliest settlement<sup>11</sup> in what we know as Worcester County and it was referred to as "six or seven houses built after the manner of a town."<sup>52</sup>

So we can dimly picture the tasks which had been performed by mother RUTH (and also by our ELIZABETH, earlier GROVER) of assembling the household goods which must be moved by pack horse, and trekking with PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> and their seven children about forty miles into the wilderness, west of Malden (see map, p. 618) there to live under the sky until buildings of some sort could be raised. Then would follow all the extremities of hard work, inconvenience and danger in their keenest form as land was cleared and a new home created. For these people intended to make this place their home and would have done so were it not for the increasing Indian menace which shortly eventuated in "King Philip's War."\*\* As early as June, 1675, the Indian depredations began in this vicinity and on July 14, only about three months after the arrival of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> and his family at their new placing, the Indians attacked<sup>22</sup> Mendon (see map, p. 618), a settlement to the south; on August 2-4, Brookfield† to the west was wiped out; on August 22, Lancaster to the north was visited, eight persons killed and others taken captive; on September 1, it was Hadley which suffered, and on September 18, Capt. Lathrop's men, the "Flower of Essex", were attacked five miles south of Deerfield, at Bloody Brook<sup>31</sup> and seventy-one or more were massacred.‡ So the hideous tale runs on.

\*Apparently LAZARUS<sup>2</sup> remained permanently in Malden, but several members of the family eventually made use of the grant.

\*\*In discussing this terrible war, the compiler makes no attempt to weigh the rights or excuse the conduct of either natives or colonists. The causes of the conflict were too extensive and deep-seated to belong in a work of this sort. Matters had come to a point where practical extermination of one group or the other was inevitable. Humanity can but deplore the methods and cruelty all too frequently resorted to by both sides. The intention here is merely to show or suggest the suffering and grief which many of our ancestors had to endure because matters had come to this pass.

†As an instance of what scores of towns and thousands of settlers had to endure during King Philip's War, we summarize<sup>29,30</sup> briefly the situation at Brookfield from the forenoon of August 2 until an hour after dark, August 4, 1675. In a certain fortified house were gathered eighty-two persons, including fifty women and children and six severely wounded men, one of whom was dying. During that time they were under the constant fire of about two hundred or more Indians who repeatedly set the house on fire, having burned to the ground all the nearby homes of the settlers. Within the garrisoned house, food supplies were scanty, the well was outside the house, hostile bullets frequently penetrated the very walls, the fumes from the firing of their own guns befouled the already sultry air of those three August days and nights, and two of the wives safely gave birth to a pair of twins apiece — "two sons apiece, who in a month's time (we are told!) brought them all themselves on foot to Boston where they were plentifully relieved out of the church stock there"<sup>30</sup> that being a trip of between sixty and seventy miles!

‡The shocking massacre<sup>31</sup> of Capt. Lothrop's men at the Village of Muddy Brook, subsequently called Bloody Brook, which took the lives of perhaps seventy-six men, of whom sixty-four were buried there in a common grave, brought sorrow

In the meantime, PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> and RUTH with their children, Philip<sup>1</sup> Atwood with our ELIZABETH and the other Malden families, had hurriedly returned to their old home town where PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> had promptly raised a company of thirty-eight fighting men and reported to the authorities for action. He had either previously acquired a commission as lieutenant of a local military company or was promptly accorded it for his broader service, and in September led his men to Mendon. His official report reads:<sup>29</sup>

From Mendum [Mendon], y<sup>e</sup> 1<sup>st</sup>: Octobr :1675

“Honer<sup>d</sup> Gou<sup>r</sup>ne<sup>r</sup> & Counsell.

“These are to certify your worships that Cap<sup>t</sup>. Gorum with myselfe & our Souldiers of both Company<sup>s</sup> are in good health at pres<sup>tt</sup> through mercy;

“And to give your honer an account of our seaverell marches; first we Came to Mendum [Mendon] one the 25th day of the weeke at nightt (sic) being the 24th day of September and one the 25th day we marched from Mendum unto Hassanemissett\* [Grafton] hoping there to have had an Indian for our guide; butt the Indians were all gone from thence; and were thereby disapoynted of our expecttation & one the next day we marched unto Packachoug [Worcester] where we found a feild of good corn and well fenced: which we did think convenient not to destroy: Concluding that for ought we Knew Sum of the neeriest of our Inhabitance would be willing to save itt; butt we could not finde any Indians neither the signe of any being there of late and we marched from thence unto Manchoag\*\* and Chobanamagungamung [Dudley] where we found sum cornfeilds and sum wigwams which Corn and wigwams we burnt and destroyed butt (we did not) finde any of our enimies which was a greate discouragement to us having taken soe much paynes to finde them; then we Returned and marched to an Indian Plantation called Shockebogue\*\* where we Could not finde any Indians butt found a Considerable quantity of Good Corne which we did not destroy butt Reserved itt at the Request of Sum of Mendum who thinke to fetch itt home for there use; and from thence we Came to Mendum one the 30th of Sept<sup>br</sup>: now seeing in all our marches we finde noe Indians verily thinke thatt thay are drawne together into greate bodyes far Remote from those partes:

“If your honers please to send us one any further Service I hope we shall nott be unwilling butt forwarde to doe our uttermost Indeavours with all desiring that you would be pleased to add unto our number seeing that besides the Garrison men which must be left heere in garrison we have butt 30 men besides my Selfe, Capt. Garum being now in his march to Mounthope and If we goe further we desir thatt we may have a Surgeon and some other thatt may be acquainted with the woodes where you Sende us the want of w<sup>ch</sup> hath beene a discouragement to our men: And as for the town of Mendum I am desired to Commend the desolate condition of y<sup>m</sup> unto you<sup>r</sup> honers: Severall of there Inhabitance being removed from them: and those in garrison being butt poore helps in divers respects and in number but 12 men, with their armes very defective.

“The plantation is very Remotte & therefore soe much the more stands in neede of helpe; itt is very Likely to be a prosperous place if itt please God to putt an Ishue to thes troubles and therefore it is the more pittty to have itt deserted by there people: who think it must be If they have nott sum assistance they hope: 20: men well fitted with this one Returned might be sufisient If your honers se Causse; and further they desired to acquainte your honers that y<sup>e</sup> Indians of Hassanamissett [Grafton] which your honers

to some of our people for among these men were Joseph<sup>s</sup> Balch (BENJAMIN<sup>e</sup>, JOHN (see p. 75); Peter<sup>s</sup> Woodbury (Humphrey<sup>s</sup> JOHN<sup>t</sup>, see Dawes-Gates II, 825) Jacob<sup>s</sup> Kilbourne (George<sup>e</sup>, THOMAS<sup>t</sup>, *ibid.*, II, 514)<sup>60</sup> and Josiah Dodge, believed to be a son of WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> DODGE (*ibid.*, II, 323). This company was ambushed and almost entirely wiped out while acting as convoy for about seventeen wagon loads of grain which was being removed from Deerfield, where it had been grown, to Hadley for storage.

\*This name implies<sup>58</sup> “Place of small stones.”

\*\*Indian villages.

apoynted to set down with them have desertted there one town and come nott to that  
at Mendum And soe nott havening any more to troublee your honers with

I Rest your Hon<sup>rs</sup>  
To Command

PHINEHAS UPHAM,  
Liftenantt."<sup>29</sup>

Capt. John Gorum (Gorham) of Plymouth, with whom PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> was associated at Mendon, also wrote a letter to the Governor and Council on October 1, verifying the statements in the preceding letter by PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>, adding that his own men had been in the field for fourteen weeks without finding the enemy Indians and now were about to return to their headquarters. Moreover, long before PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> and his men started out, other units under various commanders had been diligently scouring the forests for the warlike Indians but without success, for the enemy were fiendishly clever in striking from ambush or under cover of night, and then disappearing, as if by magic.

As the above report made by PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> shows, after his first arrival at Mendon, he and his men were sent (see map, p. 618) northwest to Grafton, to Worcester, south to Dudley and back to Mendon within\* seven days.<sup>29</sup> Leaving some of his men there in garrison, PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> with thirty of them was ordered October 1, to report at what had been Brookfield before its destruction, to Capt. John<sup>1</sup> Waite\*\* who has been expected to command a company there under Maj. John Pynchon. Just at this time, however, Pynchon's repeated<sup>30</sup> requests to be relieved of his onerous military duties, for which he felt himself unfitted, were granted, and Capt. Samuel Appleton of Ipswich was made Major in his place by orders carried to him by PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>. So on the arrival of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> at Brookfield with his men and these orders, he was assigned by Maj. Appleton to the company of Capt. Jonathan<sup>2</sup> Poole (John<sup>1</sup> of Reading) with whom he joined forces and marched to Hadley where they arrived October 4, and his association with Poole continued during the fruitless search of the following weeks until the uselessness of this effort<sup>25</sup> in the valley of the Connecticut was evident and the army, except for men in garrisons, was withdrawn, having accomplished nothing, but having suffered enormously.<sup>28</sup> On November 19, 1675, Major Treat, in charge of the Connecticut troops, started home with them, and on November 23rd or 24th Major Appleton started east with most of his Massachusetts and Plymouth men, leaving garrisons in five of the Hampshire County towns, thirty-nine men at Springfield under Pynchon, twenty-nine at Westfield under Captain Aaron<sup>2</sup> Cooke,† twenty-six at Northampton‡ under Lt. William Clarke, thirty at Hadley under Capt. Jonathan<sup>2</sup> Poole and thirty-six at Hatfield under Lt. William Allis. PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> was then free to return temporarily to his family, and for the last time.

The Indians had by now withdrawn from Massachusetts for the winter, con-

\*This represents a trip of eighty-seven miles, air line, to visit the present day towns of these names. The location of the early settlements within these townships might have increased or lessened the distance slightly but the lack of bridges must have greatly increased the distance then traveled.

\*\*He it was who had married two months earlier our SARAH (—) PARKER who would have been anxiously awaiting news of his safety.

†Son of Aaron<sup>1</sup> Cooke, who was himself, stepson of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD and emigrated with him.

‡In Northampton at this time resided our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD who died there on November 28, 1676. JOSEPH<sup>1</sup> PARSONS and his son Samuel<sup>2</sup>, HENRY<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD and JOHN<sup>2</sup> TAYLOR, as well as Preserved<sup>2</sup> Clapp (ROGER<sup>1</sup>) Joseph<sup>2</sup> Leeds (RICHARD<sup>1</sup>) and Aaron Cooke step-son of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> FORD. (PARSONS, WOODWARD and TAYLOR, see Vol. II.)

gregating in the Narragansett Country (see map, p. 618), at what has been called "Fort Canonicus" about three or four miles west of the present village of South Kingston<sup>53</sup> in the middle of an extensive pine and cedar swamp. Realizing the utter failure of the western campaign and the certainty that the coming spring would bring intensified activity by the Indians, the Commissioners\* of the United Colonies met at Boston on November 2, 1675, to plan for the future. The possibility, and desirability, of a winter attack upon the assembled Indians in their rendezvous was weighed against the burden of moving both supplies and men on foot through deep snows and storms and of protecting them in a wilderness, without tents. The decision was practically a declaration of war by a vote,<sup>34</sup> in spite of the obstacles, to raise an army of one thousand picked men beside those lately in the field, to march into the Narragansett Country. They directed Massachusetts to raise five hundred and twenty-seven men or six companies of foot, to be under command of Maj. Appleton; Connecticut to raise three hundred and fifteen men or five companies, to be under Maj. Treat, and Plymouth Colony to raise one hundred and fifty-eight men or two companies, to be under Maj. William Bradford. Gov. Josiah Winslow of Plymouth was made Commander-in-chief. The troops were to be "men of strength corrage and actiuity theire armes well fixed and fitt for seruice, that theire clothing be in all Respects stronge and warme, suitable for the season, That they haue Prouisions in theire Snapsackes for a weekes march from theire Randevoues and supply in a Magaseen appointed for a more Generall seruice."<sup>34</sup> December 2 was set apart\*\* as a day of prayer in the colonies. The Massachusetts and Plymouth forces were to meet in the vicinity of Providence (now Rhode Island) not later than December 10, 1675, and the Connecticut men were to join them there. The Massachusetts troops under Appleton were to be captained<sup>28</sup> by Isaac Johnson,† James Oliver, Nathaniel Davenport, Joseph<sup>2</sup> Gardner (THOMAS<sup>1</sup>) and Samuel Moseley and were to assemble first at Dedham. Of these, Capt. Isaac Johnson was the superior officer of Lt. PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM who probably would have had a short visit at home with his family before appearing at Dedham, for this, his last great service for his country.

On December 4, six officers, namely, Captains Johnson, Oliver and Davenport, with their respective Lieutenants PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM,‡ Edward Tyng and Ephraim Turner addressed to the Governor and Council, "now sitting in Boston", several inquiries, as, whether each commissioned officer might have a horse allowed him at the public expense, and if so, how many more horses would be allowed a company to carry luggage and transport soldiers across rivers? Might each company have a trumpet, and the services of a quarter master? Might every officer and soldier

\*Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>) was<sup>41</sup> one of the Commissioners of the United Colonies<sup>33</sup> in 1652, 1662-4, 1667, 1672-3, 1675, 1678-9, and was President of the Board in 1675 when this momentous problem was faced and also in 1679. The claim is made that his son Thomas<sup>3</sup> Danforth was killed<sup>24</sup> in the Great Swamp Fight which was the direct result of the above decision<sup>41</sup> but the strong probability is that the item should read "Thomas<sup>2</sup> Davenport" son of our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> of Dorchester.

\*\*December 2 was also the day on which the houses in Worcester County, which had been hurriedly vacated by the five Malden families, including PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> and RUTH UPHAM, were all burned. The colonists considered this as evidence of God's displeasure with them.<sup>25</sup> In March, 1678-9, a meeting of lot-holders of destroyed Quonsigamug was held in Cambridge with JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM present, to consider the advisability of rebuilding<sup>52</sup> but it was 1684 before that was done.<sup>4</sup> Though the will of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> left to his three youngest sons his rights at Worcester, none of them seem to have lived there.

†Capt. Johnson had "pitched upon" his brother Humphrey for his lieutenant, but "the Court, choosing whom they pleased, he most readily submitted to the Court's choice of Lieut. UPHAM" but requested that his brother "shall not suffer by his encouragement."<sup>51</sup>

‡In signing this petition,<sup>25</sup> the spelling of his name was "PHYNEHES VPHAM."

have his provision of powder and shot, out of the public stock? And might power to impress such supplies be granted? The reply was that each company might have three horses to be used as its captain should decide. Each company might impress a trumpet. There was to be but one quartermaster for the Massachusetts forces and as to powder and shot the men "must attend their order".<sup>25</sup>

By December 8, the Massachusetts forces were assembled on Dedham Plain and Gen. Winslow, who had been in consultation in Boston, rode with his staff\* to Dedham where early on the morning of the 9th he took over their command, informing them of a proclamation<sup>46</sup> by the Massachusetts Council "that if they played the man, took the Fort, and Drove the Enemy out of the Narragansett Country, which was their great seat, that they should have a gratuity in land besides their wages".\*\*<sup>28</sup>

He ordered an advance, and that day they marched about twenty-seven miles, camping at night at Woodcock's Garrison (situated at the north end of present North Attleboro, see map, p. 618). By evening of December 10, they reached Seekonk where they found the sloop of Richard Smith† of Wickford, Rhode Island, which had sailed to meet them. Gen. Winslow directed his aid, Benjamin Church, and a part of the troops to proceed on the sloop to the intended headquarters at Smith's Landing, Wickford, and to prepare for the arrival of the main body which ferried around to Providence at the head of the bay (see map, p. 618) where they found, and joined, the Plymouth contingent. This combined force marched southward through heavy snow toward the appointed headquarters at Wickford which they reached on December 13. While they awaited the arrival of the Connecticut men, they sent out a number of scouting parties<sup>26</sup> with varying results, taking captives†† and destroying wigwams as opportunity arose. But the most serviceable accomplishment was the accession of an Indian‡ called Peter Freeman who was either in disfavor with, or displeased with, the other natives and who offered to guide the whites to the Indian Fort.

On December fifteenth, the Indians ventured near enough to the army headquarters to burn Bull's Garrison on Tower Hill at Pettaquamscott, in what is now South Kingston Township (see map, p. 918). Of the seventeen whites within,

\*One member of his staff was Benjamin Church (see Dawes-Gates, II) who had been offered, but had declined a captaincy.

\*\*Massachusetts redeemed her promise,<sup>50</sup> but not until 1727-35, by setting aside seven "Narragansett Townships" which were granted to eight hundred and forty claimants, a few being survivors but most of them heirs or assignees. Grants were made as a result of the service of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES, EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD and others.<sup>50</sup>

†This man; accounted as under Connecticut jurisdiction, was infinitely patriotic, useful and self-sacrificing in the service he rendered the army, at their arrival, and at their later return to the camp in the vicinity of his home, and his rights were shamefully neglected as to conservation of his property or recompense for his goods and service (see p. 629).

††Whenever a sale was possible, the Indian captives were sold into servitude,<sup>44</sup> by order of the Council. Some were shipped to the West Indies for sale, especially the men who might again take up arms. In July, 1676, it was ordered that all males who were over fourteen when their captivity began were to be sold out of the country. In August, 1676, a Rhode Island ruling was that all males under five should serve till they were thirty; all who were between five and ten, until they were twenty-eight, and so on, by a scale of gradation until those over thirty must serve for seven years. On December 18, the day before his death at the Swamp Fight, Capt. Davenport had paid £80 for forty-seven captives. In one case, an elderly Christian Indian who had taken the name of "Conscience", specified to whom he preferred to be sold and his wish was granted. The price ranged from £1 or £2 to about £4. Before this war, many of the Christian Indian families resided as servants in white families and one such case was in the home of JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup> HOLDEN. After the death of King Philip on August 12, 1676, and the disintegration of the Indian menace, sales of many Indians occurred, especially females, youths and old men, and on September 23, 1676, James<sup>2</sup> Mears (ROBERT<sup>1</sup>) paid £3-10 for two captives and £2-08 for two others.<sup>44</sup>

‡This Indian's service and guidance literally saved the colonists' army the day of the Fight and they admitted they "could not well have lived without him",<sup>22,25</sup> for time lost in undirected search for the Indian fort in such severe weather and with food running low would have nullified the search and would have cost them the morale, if not the existence, of the army.

only two escaped, and the loss to the army of subsequent partial protection and convenience of the buildings was a serious handicap, for this place had been designated as the rendezvous<sup>26</sup> for the junction of the Connecticut forces with the colonials already assembled at nearby Wickford. On December 17th, the Connecticut troops with one hundred and fifty friendly Indians reached Pettaquamscott and about five o'clock P. M. on Saturday, December 18th, Winslow joined them with the Massachusetts and Plymouth troops from his headquarters at Wickford, and he there took over the command of the largest army ever assembled, up to that time, in New England. As has been stated, it was planned as a force of one thousand, but the addition of a troop of horse raised in Massachusetts and the one hundred and fifty Indians brought by Connecticut, with incidental additions, brought the number close to fifteen hundred.

The weather becoming unsettled and their provisions running low because of their having awaited the arrival of the Connecticut men, caused them to decide to attack the Indian fort or camp the next day. So they cleaned their guns by the light of open fires and, because of the burning of the garrison house, took what rest they could with the snow as both bed and blanket. One participant wrote:

"We lay a thousand in the open Field that long Night. In the Morning, Dec. 19th, Lords Day, at 5 a Clock, we marched . . . through Snow, two or three foot dep,\* and withall an extream hard Frost, so that some of our men were frozen in their Hands and Feet, and thereby disabled from Service."<sup>22</sup>

Starting before daylight their trek was to the west and south "without either Fire to warm them or Respite to take Food save what they could chew in their March". One writer says of it that they endured . . . "very amazing difficulties, enough to have damned any ordinary fortitude, for eighteen miles together." They "came at one a Clock upon the Edg of the Swamp where their Guide assured them they should find Indians enough before Night"<sup>22</sup>

This swamp entirely surrounded an "island" of higher, firm ground of from three to six acres extent which, we are told, was well fortified, first by a clay wall, surrounded by a palisade (tree trunks set upright in the ground and outside of that a thick hedge or perhaps net work of felled trees) almost a rod in width. Wigwams estimated at about five hundred or six hundred and a great but unknown number of Indians (reported as over three to one of the whites) filled the village or fort. But one entrance to the enclosure was planned and that was by way of a long, felled tree over "a Place of Water" where but one man could pass at a time, and it was commanded by block houses or flankers which meant certain death to any white who attempted to enter.

The weakest points in this colonial campaign were that no plan of action or attack had been formulated in advance, and that a shortage of food existed. As they marched, the Massachusetts men were in the van with Moseley's and Davenport's companies leading and Gardner's and Johnson's men next. When they reached the swamp and found the severe weather had frozen and made it passable, without waiting for general orders they plunged in after scattering Indians who had fired on them and then, as decoys, had rushed to the log entrance. But kind Providence, or perhaps more likely, the Indian guide, led them to a rear portion of

\*Other reports say fifteen inches deep, but the return trip would have been through much deeper snow.

the fort where neither palisade nor abattis were completed, and only a log placed four or five feet from the ground barred their entrance, though enflading cross-fire from a block house protected this gap.

These troops were quite untrained and undisciplined from a modern military point of view and we are told by contemporaries that

“The Brunt of the Battel or Danger that lay most upon the Commanders, whose part it was to lead on their several Companies in the very Face of Death, or else all had been lost; so as all of them with great Valour and Resolution of Mind, as not at all afraid to die in so Good a Cause, bravely led on their Men in that Desperate Assault, leaving their Lives in the Place as the best Testimony of their Valour and of Love to the Cause of God and their Country”;<sup>22</sup>

and that

“the attack on the fort exhibited the most obstinate valor on the part of the English. Much no doubt was due to the officers who led the troops to the assault, who were men of no common stamp. Though some had been in service the preceding summer, and had seen hard fighting, they were very little acquainted with systematic war. To their bone and nerve, and not to skill were they indebted for their success, and the soldiers were of the same character. But with more art, and prudence, they would have achieved a victory with less expense of lives.”<sup>25</sup>

To this gap and cross log came first\* the companies of Captains Davenport and Johnson, and at that log Capt. Isaac Johnson gave up his life, as did many others also. Immediately the command of his company devolved upon Lt. PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM. As soon as Capt. Davenport had entered the fort, he received his death wound and Lt. Edward Tyng succeeded him. The fire of the Indians was so deadly that the colonists fell back temporarily, dropping on their faces in the frozen swamp until the fire lessened and fresh men came up, when they attacked again and captured the blockhouse which protected the gap and, step by step, the entire fort. We are told that<sup>22</sup>

“It is usually seen that the Valour of the Soldiers is much wrapped up in the Lives of their Commanders; yet it was often found here, that the soldiers were rather enraged than discouraged by the Loss of their Commanders, which made them redouble their Courage, and not give back after they were entered the second Time, till they had driven out their Enemies”.<sup>22</sup>

No sooner had the soldiers entered the fort this second time than Capt. Joseph<sup>2</sup> Gardner\*\* was killed<sup>26,44</sup> and sometime during the battle which lasted three or more hours, until almost dusk, our PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM then in command of his company, was seriously wounded, and its command devolved<sup>24</sup> upon Ensign Henry Bowen who was a son-in-law<sup>45</sup> of the deceased Capt. Johnson. No detail has been learned as to the manner of injury sustained by PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>, which ten months later proved fatal, but evidence is clear of the suffering which came to him and the other wounded men, as well as to the uninjured, during the following evening and night. For after they had driven out the fighting Indians, the fort was set afire.

\*It is claimed<sup>23,24,35</sup> that John<sup>2</sup> Raymond (JOHN<sup>1</sup>) of Beverly and of Middleboro, was the first man to enter the fort and he, fortunately, survived. He was a member of the company of Captain Joseph<sup>2</sup> Gardner (see note below).

\*\*Capt. Joseph<sup>2</sup> Gardner was the youngest son of our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> of Salem. He had married Ann<sup>2</sup> Downing (Emanuel<sup>1</sup> who was first cousin to our ABIGAIL (GOODE) MOULTON of Salem. In Capt. Gardner's company were listed<sup>44</sup> EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD, John<sup>2</sup> Prince (THOMAS<sup>1</sup>), Lot<sup>2</sup> Conant (Lot<sup>2</sup>, ROGER<sup>1</sup>), Zacheus<sup>2</sup> Perkins (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>), Mark<sup>2</sup> Batchelder (Joseph<sup>1</sup>) nephew of our JOHN<sup>1</sup>, EDWARD<sup>1</sup> HARRADEN (or possibly his son of the same name) and John<sup>2</sup> Raymond (JOHN see Vol. II, 699).

Such interesting side lights are frequently just around a corner that a digression here to inject certain amplifying facts may be excused.<sup>59</sup> Benjamin<sup>2</sup> Church (Richard<sup>1</sup>) of Plymouth and Little Compton was invaluable to the colonies in connection with the Indian problem especially from 1670 onward. He was absolutely fearless, understood the psychology of the Indians, and had an uncanny success in scouting, in parley and in warfare. He adopted the natives' own methods as to combat and capture but was humane rather than vindictive whenever that was possible. He frequently amazed Indians whom he had captured for informational purposes, by sparing their lives and providing for their needs, often turning enemies into loyal friends, but invariably commanding their respect. (See Dawes-Gates, II, 247-53.) At the beginning of this campaign Gen. Winslow had offered him a captaincy which he declined, choosing to go as a "Reformado" or unattached volunteer, though Winslow appointed him as an aide. During the battle for the Indian fort Church stopped three bullets, one of which entered his thigh and splintered his hip bone. In spite of this he remained near enough the actual fighting to urge upon Gen. Winslow a retention and use of the fort. His impulse and plea to Winslow were humane in consideration for the wounded as well as for the weary soldiers, and he further urged their utter lack of food, of which a full winter's supply was stored in the wigwams, which were rendered practically musket-proof by the skins hung within and by the baskets of grain. His judgment as to the wisdom of thus occupying the fort may have been faulty, but to the present day ear sounds fairly safe. Winslow conferred with others, accepted the plan and started to ride into the fort when a certain captain (courteously left unnamed by the record, but by the best authorities believed, and announced, to have undoubtedly been Capt. Samuel Moseley\*) approached, demanded a halt, and we are told, insolently threatened to shoot the horse that Winslow, Commander-in-Chief, was riding if he took another step toward the fort — probably on the theory that the scattered Indians might return and attack them. A certain (unnamed) doctor added his word to the captain's, warning that by the next day the injured would be too stiff to be moved, and threatening, as he looked at the wounded Church, that if he gave such advice he should bleed to death before they would dress his wounds. Winslow, either dominated or convinced, gave in and ordered the burning of the fort and the return of the army to Wickford. Probably jealousy had something to do with the bitterness Moseley showed toward Church, but the former man's insubordination and brutality had more than once brought upon him harsh criticism by his superiors and by the court, with presently, a cessation of his military activity, while in August, 1676, Church with a group of Plymouth men proved his constructive ability as an Indian fighter when he and his party

\*Such a situation and such an attitude by any military man would be absolutely unbelievable if it were not for the fact that authorities who praise Moseley most highly as a brave man and capable soldier, very popular among his men, admit that he was consistently intolerant of orders or restraint by his superiors or even by the Council. "The 'seniority' rule of precedence was strictly adhered to in the colonial army but in active service we find him constantly either disregarding or avoiding it." On one occasion he denounced a major and a general to their faces in most scathing terms, and his "many notorious acts of insubordination and insolence" show that the above conduct toward Winslow was typical of Moseley. Indeed the fanatical prejudice, the inexcusable injustice and brutality of Moseley and the other Indian-haters, especially toward the Christian Indians, during this war increased its severity greatly, and their malicious slandering of the saintly Rev. John Eliot, the noble and upright Gen. Daniel Gookin and the patriotic and loyal Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>), calling them traitors and insulting them on the streets because they expressed sympathy for and confidence in the Christian Indians is one more evidence of the length to which prejudice and fear had led many people, but Moseley was admittedly leader of the hostile fury.<sup>59</sup>

ambushed and killed King Philip and virtually broke the backbone of Indian troubles for the New England Colonies.<sup>59</sup>

As a consequence of this destruction of the Indian fort it became necessary for the uninjured but overweary soldiers to make litters from muskets and saplings to transport about two hundred and ten of their wounded and dead companions for a distance of about fifteen to nineteen miles through a bitter cold night and the ever deepening snow, to Wickford. This required an amazing endurance for the uninjured, who had marched from dawn till high noon through deep snow, had engaged in a desperate life-and-death struggle from noon till sunset and now must add this herculean effort. But for the wounded no words can tell what suffering it entailed, for the insecure footing and frequent falls of their carriers in deep snow and unbroken paths would have meant untold agonies of pain. We are told<sup>22</sup> that many of the injured men died on the way to Wickford, and others soon after arrival, as a result of neglected wounds, the severe cold and storm, or of the rough journey. Leaving but eight of the dead within the fort to deceive the Indians as to the loss endured by the colonists, the column filed out from the smoldering fort into the storm as darkness approached. The fierce blasts of wind and snow and the heavy-laden limbs of trees constantly struck them in the face. Sometimes the carriers, blinded by the storm, faint from hunger and fatigue, stumbled and fell over the snow-covered debris or uneven ground and then heard the agonizing groans of their wounded comrades, who, perforce, fell with them. The main body of men reached Wickford about two in the morning of December 20, but many, including Gen. Winslow with a group of about forty, lost their way and wandered through the storm all night, arriving about seven next morning. After this gruelling experience, about four hundred of the men were disabled and unfit for duty — many of them severely frozen. Even after reaching headquarters their condition was critical because of lack of food but that very night a vessel under Capt. Andrew Belcher arrived from Boston<sup>26</sup> laden with provisions for them. It was probably overdue for a record is seen<sup>28</sup> of payment to men for cutting Andrew Belcher's Sloop out of the ice so that it might go to Narragansett.

Since for PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>, King Philip's War ended just there, subsequent details of the campaign will be discussed under EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD, for he and many others had still to "carry on." But referring back to the trip from Boston into the Indian country, the "army" had found that with snow two or three feet deep, no roads or broken trails and but three horses allowed to each company, their advance into a practically unsettled country had necessitated that the men attempt to carry equipment and supplies enough to last them until a vessel could make the trip from Boston. During the storms of winter the time required for such a voyage would be uncertain indeed and as a consequence, settlers near the line of march and near the army's headquarters had been called upon to assist by personal effort as well as to provide the army with necessities in order that actual hunger, impaired morale and injured health might not jeopardize the whole campaign. This help had been rendered patriotically, freely and to an amazing extent, but payments for such vital aid are recorded as occurring from four to ten years later, after repeated pleas, and then only payment in part.

In 1679 Capt. John Hull and William Crofts were paid for cattle used in the Narragansett Campaign of 1675-6. In 1681 payment was made to William Wood-

cock at whose garrison house they camped on the march south from Boston on December 10-11, 1675, and also to widow Cole whose sheep and cattle they ate at that time. In September, 1677, probably also earlier, and certainly several times later, Maj. Peleg Sanford, of Rhode Island, had been forced to request settlement for the care of the wounded after the Swamp Fight. While he had evidently received partial payment, intermediately, the final settlement to him was not made until 1685, and then was only paid in part.

In August, 1679, the Commissioners of the United Colonies, Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth presiding, voted that "some demands of Mr. Smith and Mr. Sandford are referred to the next meeting", but it was five years later, on September 5, 1684, before record is seen of the matter having been taken up again. Smith had just then written them another plea for settlement, asserting that he and six servants had been occupied in behalf of the army and that he had had

". . . 26 hed of catell killed and eate by the sowders, with 100 gootes att least, and at least 30 fatt hoggs; all the coper, bras and wooden vessells for the armeys use [was] spoyled, stole and lost, to the valew of nere 100<sup>li</sup> sterling; great parte of my post and rayle fences being feched and burnt by the sowders; my oxen and cartt and utinsells being all lost, after the garison went away; and lastly my housing burnt, being of great valewe . . .".

For this service and loss, the Commissioners granted him the munificent sum of £40 to be paid by its apportionment among the three colonies, but even as they did so, they acknowledged "the great charge he was at in maintaining of our soldiers when at his house, several times, and for that he was so greatly serviceable himself".<sup>36</sup>

But a case of more immediate interest to us is that of Maj. Peleg Sanford\* for at his home on the island of Rhode Island (about one half mile south of the present Portsmouth line, in what is now Middletown,<sup>38</sup> (see map, p. 618) PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM was nursed for three months after the Swamp Fight.<sup>36</sup>

Following the laborious return of the army to Wickford during that awful night of December 19-20, thirty-four of the dead were buried in a single grave<sup>42</sup> on December 20 and at least six others soon after. On this grave an apple tree grew, which has always been called the "grave apple tree" and which stood until a gale in September, 1815, blew it down.<sup>42</sup> On December 24th, 1675, twenty-eight of the Massachusetts and Plymouth wounded\*\* were taken<sup>36</sup> by boat from Wickford to the home of Peleg Sanford and on the next day, Christmas day, part of them were shifted to the homes of some of his neighbors, Robert Carr, ex-governor William Brenton and to the garrison. Certain itemized accounts<sup>36</sup> rendered by Sanford permit us to reconstruct the situation there in some degree. Apparently Sanford acted as commissary for the entire group of injured, their doctors and the men who as orderlies attended the sick. Two doctors, John Cutler† and William Hawkins† and perhaps others, were there on duty. Hawkins left in about a month

\*Peleg<sup>2</sup> Sanford (John<sup>1</sup>), born in 1639, became son-in-law of William Brenton, ex-governor of Rhode Island. Sanford was commissioned major in 1679 and became<sup>38</sup> Colonial Governor of Rhode Island in 1680.

\*\*Of these, eight were members of the company of Capt. Johnson to which PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> belonged and these eight wounded are recorded as *being at Rhode Island* on the date of January 6, 1675-6, leading many to erroneously believe that was the date of removal.<sup>38</sup>

†Dr. John Cutler, called<sup>37</sup> "the Dutchman", of Hingham and Boston, was a "chirurgion" and William Hawkins of Boston was earlier recorded as "butcher" and later as "surgeon".<sup>37</sup>

taking a number of wounded with him but some of the doctors and attendants stayed on into February. The injured men remained from three weeks to ten months. Maj. Sanford's surviving accounts show the purchase in behalf of the wounded and their attendants of six hundred and ninety-five pounds of mutton, one hundred and two pounds of salt beef, beside butter, sugar, "mallassas", Indian corn, rum, "bear" (beer), candles, flax (for dressings? bandages?) nineteen cords of wood and two loads beside. Moreover, he advanced money for the burial of four men and for passage of others to their homes, etc.

His first statement was dated in 1675, another on January 26, 1676-7, which totaled over £103 but by December 9, 1679, he listed credits of over £22, leaving a balance of £81. Unrecorded partial payments had probably been made for in May, 1682, Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth, then president of the Board of Commissioners, presented Sanford's claim to the Massachusetts Court who voted to pay their share "of the £60 balance"; and in June, 1682, Plymouth Colony took similar action, adding commendation of Sanford for his outstanding service to the army and country. But Connecticut Colony, which suffered not at all from Indian depredations, though their loss of life in battle was very heavy, were most reluctant to remunerate either Richard Smith of Wickford or Peleg Sanford of Rhode Island. In October, 1684, Connecticut did vote to pay Smith their share of the little £40 he was allowed, and within a year that sum had been paid. But not until May, 1685, did they even consider Sanford's account, and then the secretary of the colony wrote him insolently, questioning its accuracy and referring to certain items with biting scorn, "yet not w<sup>th</sup>standing, seeing possibly you may have shewed kindness to some of our soldiers, they [Connecticut Colony] have agreed to allow you ten pownds if you plice to rest sattsified therewith . . . provided it be done by October Court next . . ." And Peleg, whom we are told<sup>36</sup> was "lame in his hands", acquiesced, and in 1685, almost ten years after the service was rendered, received £10 from Connecticut.

While we have no idea as to the nature of the wound endured by PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>, it would seem serious even though it had not taken his life, for it held him for three months at Sanford's home on Rhode Island before he was fit for removal to Boston. That man's account reads:<sup>36</sup>

"To Left VPHAM, from the 24th Desemb<sup>r</sup> vntell the 14 day of March, & his kinsman\* for diet & Lodging, at 8<sup>s</sup> a weeke a piece, his sister\*\* was also [here] a considerable part of the time, £9:02:0."

It appears that in coast wise travel by boat, passengers must have carried and cooked their own food en route, for when Dr. Hawkins left Rhode Island with a number of wounded he was supplied with "two fatt sheep"; and the following charge by Sanford shows that PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> carried supplies:<sup>36</sup>

"To Lt. VPHAM, 1½ gallons of rum & 15<sup>lb</sup> of mutton, when he went away, 00:11:3."

In leaving for Boston, PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> would have traveled by boat, undoubtedly in the care of his "kinsman". In Boston he spent nearly eight more months of suffer-

\*This kinsman was very likely his eldest son Phineas<sup>3</sup>, then aged seventeen, or possibly a nephew.

\*\*Of his three sisters, it is highly probable that this was the eldest, Elizabeth (Upham) Welch, for her youngest child was then over three years old and several of her children were adult and well able to relieve her of household cares. The other sisters had infants.

ing, but at least he would have had the satisfaction of frequently seeing his wife and children from nearby Malden and his sisters from Charlestown. An added advantage would have been access to the best medical skill of the metropolis.

PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> made a nuncupative will<sup>48</sup> recording his wishes for the division of his estate which was written down at his dictation by Joseph Webb\* and Nathaniel Peirse\* who made oath to that effect on April 3, 1677. It stated that he was sick and at Boston.<sup>53</sup> The court accepted the document and widow RUTH with her eldest son Phineas<sup>3</sup> became the executors, with Capt. John<sup>1</sup> Waite and Lt. (—) Sprague as overseers. The careful provisions for all his near relatives show that his mind was unimpaired and his concern for his dear ones was keen even though some impediment — possibly his wound — restrained him from signing the document. It gave to his beloved wife RUTH one third of the estate for life; to his eldest son Phineas<sup>3</sup> the family home with the land belonging to it and half the stock when he should reach his majority; to Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, the second son, the house and lands which his grandfather JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM “now dwells in,” after the death of that grandfather. It provided that his three other sons, including JOHN<sup>3</sup> “should be disposed of to trades as they grow up fitt to be placed out” and that when they came of age they should have £15 each in cattle with a certain portion of the income from accumulated crops to be paid them by their older brothers. Moreover, they should have equally divided between them their father’s land rights at Lydbury (Quonsigamug, later Worcester) and any Narragansett grants\*\* which might be made to those soldiers who were wounded or lost their lives as a result of the Great Swamp Fight. It gave to daughters Ruth<sup>3</sup> and Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> £20 each to be paid at 18 or marriage by the two elder brothers and provided that if any of the children died, their share should be pro-rated among the others. Ruth<sup>3</sup> did die three months after her father, but the others became adult and married. The will of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> also left legacies to his three sisters, Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, wife of Thomas Welch, Mary<sup>2</sup>, wife of John Whittemore, and Priscilla<sup>2</sup>, wife of Thomas Crosswell. These were legacies of £12 each, “according to an obligation under his hand,” so had probably been specified by JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM.<sup>48</sup>

In early October, 1676, before the twelfth of the month, death released PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> from his ten months of suffering.† His death was recorded<sup>53</sup> as occurring in Boston, which was doubtless the truth, but was also recorded in Malden where he was probably taken for burial, though no stone exists to verify the surmise. There is said, however, to have been an early grave, now sunken, beside the inscription-marked grave of widow RUTH which is probably his resting place.

The following excerpt is self-explanatory:

\*This was Joseph<sup>2</sup> Webb (Richard) who called JOHN<sup>1</sup> UPHAM his “uncle” and chose him as a guardian<sup>16</sup> in 1659. Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> Pierce was the second son of William<sup>1</sup> and Esther (—) Pierce of Boston of whom widow Esther and two of her children were named in the will of Richard<sup>1</sup> Webb, and it was in her home that the last months of the life of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM were spent<sup>28,30</sup> (see note, p. 000).

\*\*Richard<sup>3</sup> Upham acquired a grant because of this service rendered by his father and apparently at least one other of these three sons did so, and assigned the land to Samuel Kneeland.<sup>50</sup>

†A few of the others who are of close interest to us and who served and suffered in King Philip’s War, were JAMES<sup>2</sup> CUTLER, SOLOMON<sup>2</sup> PRENTICE, Thomas<sup>2</sup> Rutter (JOHN<sup>1</sup> and ELIZABETH), WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DAWES, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES, Thomas<sup>1</sup> Plympton, brother of our ELIZABETH (PLYMPTON) RUTTER (who was killed); and by property loss at the Sudbury Fight, Widow ELIZABETH (—) UPSON WHALE, EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT, John<sup>1</sup> Blanford, husband of our DOROTHY (—) WRIGHT and Jacob<sup>2</sup> and William<sup>2</sup> Moore (JOHN)<sup>28,32,47</sup> and so on and on. Indeed there probably was not a family in the country who had not suffered heavily in some manner.

"ORDER OF THE GENERAL COURT."<sup>28</sup>

"October 12, 1676. In answer to the petition of RUTH UPHAM, widdow & relict of the late Left. PHINEAS UPHAM, the Court Judgeth it meet to order, that the bills of charges to chirurgeons, doct<sup>rs</sup> & diet, mentioned in sajd petition, be p<sup>d</sup> by the Treasurer of the country; and in consideration of the long and good service hir husband did for the country, & the greate losse the widdow susteynes in his death, being left with seven small children, & not able to carry on their affaires for the support of himself & family, doe further order the Treasurer to pay unto the sajd widdow tenn pounds in or as money.

	£	s	d
"Items, Treasurer to pay,			
Mr. Chickering* bill . . . . .	2	14	08
Edward Ellis,** Chir . . . . .	2	10	00
Mr. Addington† . . . . .	1	03	05
Dr. Cooke†† . . . . .	1	05	00
Mrs. Peirc‡ for diet . . . . .	4	18	00
To y <sup>e</sup> Widdow . . . . .	10	00	00 <sup>28</sup>

So widow RUTH at the age of about forty mapped out her life anew with the responsibility for seven children, aged from one year to seventeen, resting upon her. Life was not easy in those days, even under the best of conditions and for a woman alone it was doubly hard. To our minds, it seems unthinkable that the loss of husband and father should have brought to her but £10 as assistance in the task before her, though, of course, its buying power was greater then than now. Three months after the loss of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>, death took her eldest daughter and namesake, but the six other children she reared to maturity and to lives of admirable usefulness. Her eldest son became a deacon of Malden and served in many official capacities, and at the death of her youngest son, his pastor called him "a saint indeed".<sup>18</sup> Widow RUTH died at Malden on January 18, 1696-7, at the age of sixty.<sup>15</sup>

The known children‡‡ of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> and RUTH (WOOD) UPHAM, all born at Malden (though only one is so recorded) were<sup>15,18,19</sup>

- I. Phineas<sup>3</sup>, called "Second" and "Deacon"; b. May 22, 1659; d. at Malden Oct. 19, 1720, aged 61; m. abt. 1682-3, Mary<sup>2</sup> Mellins (James of Charlestown).<sup>8,19,20</sup>
- II. Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, b. 1661, d. at Malden Nov. 11, 1717, aged<sup>15</sup> 56; m. by 1685, Sarah Floyd, b. abt. 1661; d. at Malden Oct. 14, 1715, aged 53 yr. 8 mo.
- III. Ruth<sup>3</sup>, b. 1664; d. at Malden Dec. 8, 1676, aged 12.
- IV. JOHN<sup>3</sup>, see following.
- V. Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, m. Oct. 28, 1691, at Malden,<sup>15</sup> Samuel<sup>3</sup> Green (Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup> of Malden).
- VI. Thomas<sup>3</sup>, b. 1668; d. at Wakefield (formerly Reading) Nov. 26, 1735, in 67th year; m. 1st, Apr. 21, 1693, Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> Hovey (John<sup>2</sup>, Daniel<sup>1</sup>); m. 2ndly at Reading, Oct. 2, 1704, Mary

\*John<sup>2</sup> Chickering (Henry) a physician of Charlestown<sup>39</sup> who died on July 28, 1676, before PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> did so.

\*\*Edward Ellis of Boston, surgeon.

†Isaac<sup>2</sup> Addington (Isaac<sup>1</sup>) of Boston who was "bred for a surgeon."<sup>39</sup>

††Elisha<sup>2</sup> Cooke (Richard<sup>1</sup>) of Boston "a physician of good esteem."<sup>39</sup>

‡Undoubtedly Esther, widow of William Pierce of Boston, mariner, who died in 1669 leaving four sons and one daughter. Nathaniel Pierce, one of these sons, with Joseph<sup>2</sup> Webb (Richard<sup>1</sup>) made oath as to the nuncupative will of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM.<sup>29,30</sup> She was the woman related to Richard Webb and possibly also to the Uphams (see note, p. 615).

‡‡It might interest some readers to know that among the descendants<sup>43</sup> of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> four great great grandsons and one descendant in the subsequent generation became members of Congress, representing Massachusetts, New Hampshire and Vermont.

One of these great great grandsons, Joshua<sup>2</sup> Upham, turned Tory or Loyalist during the Revolution, becoming the unhappily noted commander of an English regiment which attacked New London, Connecticut at the time that town was burned. His own son, Charles Wentworth<sup>7</sup> Upham, however, reverted to the earlier traditions of the family, showing outstanding patriotism and loyal service to the New England which his father's forbears had cherished. During the post Revolutionary period his usefulness in both state and national affairs was notable.<sup>57</sup>

Brown who d. 1704; m. 3rdly before 1717 Ruth (Cutler) Smith daughter of Thomas<sup>3</sup> Cutler (John<sup>2</sup> Robert<sup>1</sup>) and widow of John Smith of Charlestown.<sup>19</sup>

vii. Richard<sup>3</sup>, b. 1675; d. at Wakefield May 18, 1734, in 59th year; m. May 19, 1698, Abigail<sup>3</sup> Hovey (John<sup>2</sup>, Daniel<sup>1</sup>).<sup>19</sup> In 1709 he released certain land to his brother Thomas<sup>3</sup> Upham of Malden.<sup>53</sup>

viii-ix. Headstones of two children's graves<sup>20</sup> who must have belonged in this family bear the markings "IU 1683" and "SU 1684." The "I" would doubtless be modernized into "J".

JOHN<sup>3</sup> UPHAM (*Phineas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>*) was born at Malden<sup>15</sup> December 9, 1666, died there June 11, 1733, aged sixty-six, and married at that place as his first wife, on October 31, 1688, ABIGAIL<sup>2</sup> HAYWARD (see Hayward, p. 357), who died at Malden August 23, 1717. He married secondly<sup>15</sup> on May 7, 1718, Tameson Ong who died there as his widow on July 29, 1755. His home was in the northern part of Malden and his entire life was spent there.

In 1693 his brother-in-law Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> Hayward died, unmarried and intestate and an agreement was entered into by the heirs as to the division of his estate.<sup>48</sup> In this matter JOHN<sup>3</sup> UPHAM signed in behalf of his wife ABIGAIL.

In 1694-5 a plan was carried out to divide among the seventy-four proprietors about two thousand acres of common land; that each man's name should be "writ distinctly: and y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> lots be well shuffled together; And one man chose by y<sup>e</sup> town; To draw y<sup>m</sup> out of a bag: and y<sup>e</sup> first man y<sup>t</sup> j<sup>s</sup> drawen shall haue y<sup>e</sup> first lot j<sup>n</sup> j<sup>e</sup> common . . ." <sup>12</sup> Also a committee was appointed to engage an "artis" to lay out the lots and ". . . LAZRUS GROUER and JOHN UPHAM doe jngage to carry y<sup>e</sup> [surveyor's] chaine jn order to deuid y<sup>e</sup> second thousand accres". It was voted that "euery man that carrieth y<sup>e</sup> chaine shall haue alowed him Two and twenty penc p<sup>r</sup> day untill 2,000 accres j<sup>s</sup> layd out". Among the proprietors who shared in this land division were<sup>12</sup> Phineas<sup>3</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> and JOHN<sup>3</sup> UPHAM, three of the sons of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>.

No evidence is seen of the participation of JOHN<sup>3</sup> in public life, but in 1710 he was one of the ninety-six heads of families who bore the tax burden,<sup>12</sup> and in 1713 he and other inhabitants of the northern portion of Malden petitioned for convenient highways from their homes to the meeting house, which request was presently complied with.<sup>12</sup>

In March, 1710-1, JOHN<sup>3</sup> UPHAM and sixteen other residents of the growing town were granted liberty "to set up Stabls: on y<sup>e</sup> Towns Land sumwhare neer y<sup>e</sup> meting hous: To sheltar ther horses on Sabath days . . . prouided no man shall have more than Three foots and half jn breadth for on[e] hors".<sup>12</sup> The life of JOHN<sup>3</sup> and of his children would have been more or less affected by the church controversy which harassed the Maldenites for so many years (see Call, pp. 134-6), and on April 3, 1728, one of the petitions relative to the placing of the meeting house, signed by the north siders carried the names of JOHN<sup>3</sup> UPHAM and of his sons SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> and David<sup>4</sup>.

As has been shown JOHN<sup>3</sup> by his father's will<sup>48</sup> received a third interest in whatever lands might accrue as a result of that man's service in King Philip's War as well as a similar share in the paternal rights at "Consigameg\* alias Lydbury", later Worcester. Richard<sup>3</sup> acquired a tract in a Narragansett grant; and a second

\*Otherwise spelled Quonsigamug, where PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> with several other families built in the spring of 1675 but left because of the Indian menace.

tract awarded for the service of PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>, which may have belonged to JOHN<sup>3</sup>, was disposed of to Samuel Kneeland as assignee.<sup>29,50</sup>

The £20 bequeathed to wife ABIGAIL by the will<sup>62</sup> of her father SAMUEL<sup>1</sup> HAYWARD in March, 1680-1, was, by its terms, not due to her until about 1694, but on December 26, 1693, the heirs signed an agreement as to the final division of the estate (Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> Hayward having recently died) and at this time JOHN<sup>3</sup> UPHAM signed<sup>48</sup> in behalf of his wife, ABIGAIL. In the meanwhile she had received by the will of her mother ELIZABETH about £20 valuation on moveables which had been acquired from the estate of said mother's first husband Thomas<sup>1</sup> Oakes.<sup>61,62</sup>

The will<sup>48</sup> of JOHN<sup>3</sup> UPHAM dated January 15, 1731, and proved June 5, 1733, is of considerable interest. It gave to "Teamsen" (Tamesin) his beloved [second] wife the "best rum in the house; the Liberty of the well saler & oven winter and somer; on (one) cow yearly and every year"; also yearly "8 bushel of injon corn, on boushel on half of ry, 1 hundred waite pork, 60 wate beef, on boushel & on half of malt, 6 pds of flax, 2 pds of coten, 4 cord fier wood, apeles, 1 bar. sider, all this yearly and every year so long as she contenteth in my name but if she marrie,\* my son David to pay her 20 shilens a year & she to quit my estate." However, if she did remarry she was to have "a bed and its furniture, on iron pot, a chest, 3 chears and on skilit, on cow, all these to be at her dispose forever" in addition to the 20 shilens David<sup>4</sup> was to pay her every year after the "deses" of the testator.

To son John<sup>4</sup> he gave £60 of which one half was payable one year after the testator's death and the other half, one year after wife Tamesin's death or remarriage, with the added notation that John<sup>4</sup> had already received £20 and that the testator had brought up his [John<sup>4</sup>] daughter Hannah<sup>5</sup> from childhood and had left her £40 by this will. Son SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> was to have £100 in two payments, as above, as well as "all right to the land which may fall to me through my father's [PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>] servis at Nasergancit." Son Ezekiel<sup>4</sup> received but £1 for he had already received £100 soon after his marriage. Son David<sup>4</sup> was made executor, was to pay the specified legacies and to have "all & singler" the dwelling house and barn, all lands in Malden, the wood-lot in Boston and all of the moveables not otherwise disposed of. Abigail<sup>4</sup> was to have £100 of which £20 would be household goods, £30 paid at testator's "desess" and £50 within three years after the wife's decease or remarriage, with liberty to dwell in the family home "until she shall marre." The witnesses were (a) Phineas Upham [either the testator's nephew Phineas<sup>4</sup> (Phineas<sup>3</sup>, PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>) or that man's son Phineas<sup>5</sup> (1708-38)]; (b) the testator's grand nephew Timothy<sup>5</sup> Upham (1710-81) and (c) Samuel Grover\*\* who had married Sarah<sup>4</sup> Upham (Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>).

That JOHN<sup>3</sup> was a deeply religious man seems evident from a fact brought out by the death of a granddaughter of his, Abigail<sup>5</sup> Upham (SAMUEL<sup>4</sup>), in the epidemic of 1738. For JOHN<sup>3</sup> on his death-bed in 1733 had given her a text to live by, ". . . Those that seek me early shall find me" (Proverbs, VIII, 17) and from that text her funeral sermon was preached.<sup>12</sup>

JOHN<sup>3</sup> and ABIGAIL were buried at Bell Rock Cemetery and their tombstones are inscribed:<sup>20</sup>

\*Tamesin remained the widow of JOHN<sup>3</sup> until her death in Malden in July, 1755.

\*\*This was Samuel<sup>3</sup> Grover (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, THOMAS<sup>1</sup>).

“Here Lyes y<sup>e</sup> Body  
of ABIGAIL  
UPHAM wife to  
JOHN UPHAM  
Aged 52 Years  
Died August  
The 23 1717”

“Here lyes Buried  
y<sup>e</sup> Body of M<sup>r</sup>  
JOHN UPHAM  
Who Died June 11th  
Anno Dom<sup>ni</sup>, 1733, in y<sup>e</sup>  
67th Year of his Age”

The children of JOHN<sup>s</sup> and ABIGAIL (HAYWARD) UPHAM all born at Malden were<sup>15,19</sup>

- i. John<sup>4</sup>, b. Mar. 10, 1690; d. at Malden Mar. 1, 1783, in 94th year; m. 1st at Lynn, Nov. 3, 1727, Sarah Burnal; m. 2ndly at Malden, May 15, 1750, Deliverance Fowle who d. there Apr. 30, 1772.
- ii. SAMUEL<sup>4</sup>, see following.
- iii. Abigail<sup>4</sup>, b. Apr. 12, 1698; by her father's will she was<sup>48</sup> unmarried in January, 1731.
- iv. Ezekiel<sup>4</sup>, b. abt. 1700; d. at Sturbridge Apr. 21, 1783, in 83rd yr.; m. Nov. 17, 1726, Hannah<sup>4</sup> Stearns (Isaac<sup>s</sup>, Isaac<sup>s</sup>, Isaac<sup>l</sup>).<sup>19</sup>
- v. David<sup>4</sup>, b. May 6, 1702; living 1754; m. by 1732-3, Sarah (—). “Both living<sup>18</sup> in Malden in 1754.”

The child of JOHN<sup>s</sup> UPHAM and his second wife Tameson Ong was<sup>15</sup>

- vi. Jacob<sup>4</sup>, b. at Malden Apr. 14, 1719; d. there Sept. 2, 1719.

SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> UPHAM (*John<sup>s</sup>, Phineas<sup>s</sup>, John<sup>l</sup>*) was born at Malden on August 25, 1691, died at Leicester<sup>49</sup> between February, 1761, and May, 1765, and was married at Malden February 17, 1714-5, by the Rev. David Parsons\* to MARY<sup>s</sup> GROVER (see Grover, p. 342).

The earliest record seen of SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> is on July 19, 1725, when he was called “weaver of Malden” and was appointed administrator<sup>48</sup> of the intestate estate of Ebenezer<sup>s</sup> Grover (LAZARUS<sup>s</sup>) of that place, with the statement that SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> had married Ebenezer's sister and “sole heir excepting a mother who is still alive . . .” On November 12, 1728, SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> UPHAM, then called husbandman, acquired<sup>48</sup> “for £200 and other causes” all interest of the other heirs in the homestead that his father-in-law “LAZARUS GROVER late of Malden deceased died seized of.” These heirs were Thomas<sup>s</sup>, Andrew<sup>s</sup> and Ephraim<sup>s</sup> Grover all of Norton, Elizabeth (Grover) Baldwin, widow of Timothy, William Paine Jr.,\*\* Stephen Paine\*\* and Elias Totman of Woburn and Rebecca his wife. In April, 1728, SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> with his father JOHN<sup>s</sup> and brother David<sup>4</sup> signed a petition with many other north-siders, relative to the placing of the meeting house.<sup>12</sup>

Of his family of ten children, SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> and his wife lost five, and four of these died within a month, between August 15 and September 14, 1738. There raged in New England a “Plague of the throat” or “throat distemper” from 1735 onward, and in Malden† it reached its height in 1738. It was malignant but was then believed<sup>12</sup> not to be contagious though it quite surely was what is now known as diphtheria. It swept the country from Pemaquid to North Carolina but our interest

\*The Rev. David<sup>s</sup> Parsons (Joseph<sup>s</sup>) was grandson<sup>47</sup> of our Cornet JOSEPH<sup>l</sup> PARSONS.

\*\*Sons of William and Ruth (Grover) Paine of Charlestown.

†The strange effect of fear on minds which are uninformed, especially along scientific lines, is seen in the popular belief in Malden at the time, that the epidemic [of diphtheria] was the result of a plague of canker worms which ate every green thing in 1738. And a well authenticated case<sup>12</sup> is related wherein a woman who was a diphtheria patient was treated “by an application of crushed millepedessow-bugs and their fellows! She lived, but lost the free use of her voice.”<sup>12</sup>

lies mainly in Massachusetts. In Malden in a little more than three months forty persons died of it, two families burying three children each, two other families, including that of SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> UPHAM burying four each and one family, that of Samuel<sup>2</sup> (SAMUEL<sup>1</sup>) and Elizabeth (Waite) Hayward, burying five children in seventeen days.<sup>12</sup> Phineas<sup>5</sup> Upham (Phineas<sup>4</sup>, Phineas<sup>3</sup>, PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) aged thirty-one, was one of the adults who died leaving a wife and three children — one posthumous. In most of these cases the disease ran its course in about three days.

During this epidemic the minister of Malden, Rev. Joseph Emerson, preached two pertinent sermons, one entitled, "A Word to those that are afflicted very much," "On Occasion of the repeated and multiplied Deaths of Children in many Families in said Town, by the Throat Distemper." The other sermon interests us more directly for it pertained to Abigail<sup>5</sup> Upham, second daughter of SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> and MARY (GROVER) UPHAM, and next in age to our MARY (UPHAM) PARKER (see Parker, p. 471).

This second sermon was entitled, "Early Piety Encouraged, A Discourse occasion'd by the joyful and triumphant Death of a Young Woman of Malden, Who died of the Throat Distemper Sept. 6, 1738. Aetat. 21. With a Dedication to the Children and Youth of said Town." The text of the sermon had been given to the deceased Abigail<sup>5</sup> by her grandfather JOHN<sup>3</sup> upon his death-bed and was<sup>12</sup> the seventeenth verse of the eighth chapter of Proverbs: "I love them that love me; and those that seek me early shall find me". Mr. Emerson said, "She sought the Lord early, and found him", and he urged her example upon the youth of Malden as being "a very remarkable one".<sup>12</sup> So we see in the Upham family consistent Christian character and conduct, and when MARY<sup>5</sup> UPHAM married DAVID<sup>4</sup> PARKER she entered a family whose religious life was also an outstanding characteristic.

In 1746, a troop of horses was in service under Capt. Caleb Brooks of Charlestown with a number of Malden men, including SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> UPHAM, on its roll.<sup>12</sup> This is the only known military service rendered by him, but several of his sons and grandsons served in the Revolution.<sup>56</sup> About 1748-50 Samuel<sup>5</sup>, Jonathan<sup>5</sup> and Ebenezer<sup>5</sup> all removed to Leicester and Jacob<sup>5</sup> to Spencer, leaving only our MARY<sup>5</sup>, out of the ten children, resident at Malden. Sometime prior to 1761 SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> followed his three older sons to Leicester and probably early enough to have experienced a cyclone<sup>47</sup> which did great damage to that town on July 10, 1759, and is vividly described in existing records.

The date of the death of MARY (GROVER) UPHAM is not seen but it was between 1761 and 1765 for the will<sup>49</sup> of SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> UPHAM dated February 4, 1761, at Leicester, calling himself husbandman of that place, gave his entire estate both real and personal "(except household stuff or Indoor moveables)" to his son Samuel<sup>5</sup> (with whom he was probably living) who was named as executor and who was to pay certain legacies to the other heirs. These included £20 to Jonathan<sup>5</sup> and £13-6-8 to Ebenezer<sup>5</sup>, each to be paid in two different payments, within one, two, three and four years respectively after the testator's decease. To Jacob<sup>5</sup> only one shilling because he had earlier had his full share and had receipted for it on April 17, 1753. And finally:

"Item I Give to my Daughter MARY PARKER thirteen pounds Six Shillings and Eight pence to be paid to her or her heirs within one year after my decease by my Executor and

the Reason why I have not Given her more in this my Last will and Testament is because I have Given her Sixty Pound old Tenor at her marriage. Item I Give to my three Sons Samuel and Jonathan and Ebenezer Upham and my Daughter MARY PARKER all my Indoor mooveables or household Goods that I Shall Die Siezed of to be Equally Divided amongst them."<sup>49</sup>

These three sons of SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> signed a statement on May 7, 1765, that

"we y<sup>e</sup> Subscribers, Heirs of y<sup>e</sup> within named SAMUEL UPHAM Dec'd have no objection against the within Written Will being Proved approved and allowed."<sup>19,49</sup>

The children of SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> and MARY (GROVER) UPHAM, all born at Malden, were<sup>15,19</sup>

- I. \*MARY<sup>5</sup>, b. Jan. 16, 1715-6; d. at Malden, as a widow, on Nov. 29, 1795, aged 79 years;<sup>15</sup> m. there (int. June 8, 1740) by the Rev. Joseph Emerson on Sept. 5, 1740, to DAVID<sup>4</sup> PARKER (see Parker, p. 471).<sup>15</sup>
- II. Abigail<sup>5</sup>, b. Mar. 6, 1717-8; d. at Malden Sept. 6, 1738, of diphtheria.
- III. Mercy<sup>5</sup>, b. Jan. 19, 1720-1; d. at Malden, Aug. 17, 1738, aged 17, of diphtheria.
- IV. Samuel<sup>5</sup>, b. Sept. 28, 1722; m. as of Leicester<sup>19</sup> (int. Apr. 19, 1752) May 26, 1752, Martha Tenny of Littleton, and lived in the southern part of<sup>56</sup> Leicester next to his brother Ebenezer<sup>5</sup>. He was executor<sup>49</sup> of his father's will in 1765.
- V. Jonathan<sup>5</sup>, b. Sept. 16, 1724; d. at Sturbridge Mar. 30, 1802, aged 77; m. 1st Mar. 19, 1750-1, at Leicester, Martha Tucker who bore him eleven children recorded in Charlton and Sturbridge, 1752-1777; said to have m. 2ndly (—) Corbin of Charlton<sup>19,20</sup> but no record is seen of that.
- VI. Ebenezer<sup>5</sup>, b. July 8, 1726; d. . . . .; m. as of Leicester (int. Aug. 21) Oct. 28, 1748, Lois Waite of Malden.<sup>56</sup> Lived in southern part of Leicester. Had eleven children recorded<sup>19</sup> there.
- VII. Jacob<sup>5</sup>, b. Apr. 3, 1729; d. at Spencer Apr. 15, 1785, aged 56, fell off of a horse; m. 1st (int. Aug. 4) 1751 at Leicester Sarah Stower who d. at Spencer June 21, 1757; m. 2ndly there (int. Mar. 5) Mar. 22, 1758, widow Zerviah Smith, said to have been born Putnam,<sup>18</sup> but much more likely born Hubbard daughter of Daniel and Dorothy of Worcester. She m. 1st James Smith (James and Dorcas) of Leicester and Spencer who died in service in the French War.<sup>55</sup>
- VIII. Phebe<sup>5</sup>, b. Apr. 6, 1731; d. at Malden Sept. 14, 1738, aged 7 yr. 6 mo. of diphtheria.
- IX. John<sup>5</sup>, b. Oct. 8, 1733; d. at Malden, Sept. 6, 1736, aged 2 yr. 11 mo. (sic).
- X. William<sup>5</sup>, b. Mar. 6, 1735-6; d. at Malden, Aug. 15, 1738, aged 2 yr. 5 mo., of diphtheria (sic).

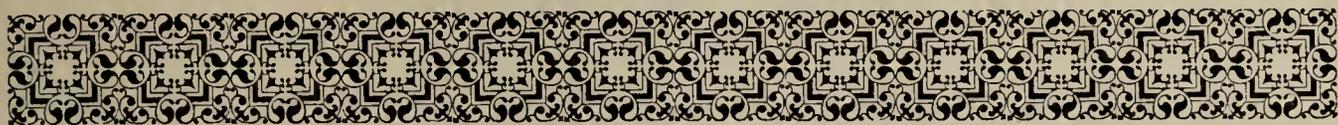
\*Our MARY<sup>5</sup> UPHAM had a second cousin Mary<sup>6</sup> Upham (James<sup>4</sup>, Phineas<sup>5</sup>, PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>) who married in 1731 in Malden Thomas<sup>4</sup> Parker jr. brother of our DAVID<sup>4</sup>.

## REFERENCES

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 128; Hotten's Emigrants, 1880, II, 287.</li> <li>2. Savage, III, 163, IV, 360-1; Pope's Pioneers, 1900, pp. 303, 468.</li> <li>3. Upham Genealogy, F. K. Upham, 1892, pp. 476-8; The Founding of New England, E. Flagg, 1926, pp. 256, 286, 351.</li> <li>4. History of Weymouth, Mass., Weymouth Historical Society, 1923, I, 13-4, 16, 62, 72-5, 81, 87-94, 128-9, 183, 188, 197, 199, 204, 213, map facing 286, 301, 321; Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 56-7.</li> <li>5. Upham Genealogy, pp. 19-31, 33-50.</li> <li>6. New England Register, III, 94.</li> <li>7. Lechford's Note Book, 1855, p. 338.</li> <li>8. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, Mass., T. B. Wyman, 1879, pp. 249, 978-9, 1006, 1022.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>9. History of Charlestown, Mass., R. Frothingham, 1845, pp. 120-9; History of Malden, Mass., D. P. Corey, 1899, pp. 78, 98, 110, 114-7, 123-4, 139, 141, 146, 151, 160-1, 187, 201, 303, 305, 320-1, 328, 339.</li> <li>10. Ibid., pp. 322, 327.</li> <li>11. Ibid., 124, 304-5, 320-1, 474.</li> <li>12. Ibid., 211, 371, 377, 442, 510, 635-41, 688.</li> <li>13. History of Matrimonial Institutions, G. E. Howard, 1904, II, 165-6; Middlesex Co. Court Records, I, 131.</li> <li>14. Vital Records of Cambridge, Mass., II, 399, 771; Boston Record Commissioners' Report, VI, 199; History of Cambridge, L. R. Paige, 1877, p. 673; New England Register, III, 192.</li> <li>15. Vital Records of Malden, Mass., pp. 90-1, 186, 309-10, 384.</li> <li>16. New England Register, VI, 93, IX, 138; Pope's Pioneers, pp. 432, 468, 484; Savage I, 390, IV, 445; History</li> </ol> |
|--|--|

- of Weymouth, IV, 725.
17. Old Families of Salisbury and Amesbury, D. W. Hoyt, 1897, I, 267-8; Pope's Pioneers, p. 303; History of Weymouth, III, 414-5; New England Register, VII, 178; Upham Genealogy, p. 34; Clapp Genealogy, E. Clapp, 1876, pp. xv-xix; Vital Records of Rehoboth, Mass., pp. 271, 848.
  18. Upham Genealogy, pp. 44, 52-78, 84-5, 100.
  19. *Ibid.*, pp. 73-7, 83-5, 99-101; Hovey Family Association, 1913, pp. 22-4; Vital Records of Reading, Mass., pp. 463, 576; Vital Records of Sturbridge, Mass., pp. 130, 382; Vital Records of Leicester, Mass., pp. 94-5, 221; Vital Records of Littleton, Mass., p. 99; Vital Records of Spencer, Mass., pp. 107, 270; Stearns Genealogy, Mrs. A. S. Van Wagenen, 1901, p. 34; Wyman's Charlestown, pp. 258, 664, 876, 978-9; Sawyer-Jewell Ancestry, H. Gates, 1902, p. 357; Vital Records of Wakefield, Mass., p. 331; Vital Records of Charlton, Mass., p. 102.
  20. Malden Historical Society Register, II, 65, 69; III, 58, 65.
  21. Wellman Genealogy, J. W. Wellman, 1918, pp. 85-6.
  22. History of the Indian Wars in New England, being a Narrative of the Troubles with the Indians—Rev. William Hubbard, Annotated by S. G. Drake, 1865, I, 134-57.
  23. *Ibid.*, pp. 146, 148, 155.
  24. History and Antiquities of Boston, S. G. Drake, 1856, pp. 411-5.
  25. Old Indian Chronicle, S. G. Drake, 1867, pp. 178-86, 299-301; History of King Philip's War, Rev. Increase Mather, Annotated by S. G. Drake, 1862, pp. 62-88, 103-13, 247-8; History of King Philip's War, G. W. Ellis and J. E. Morris, 1906, pp. 121-2, 125, 131, 138-57; Indian Wars, E. Hoyt, 1824, pp. 114-8.
  26. History of King Philip's War, Benjamin Church, Annotated by H. M. Dexter, 1865, pp. 48-61, 141-2.
  27. Bi-Centennial Book of Malden, 1850, pp. 123-5.
  28. New England Register, XL, 81-5; King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1906, pp. 75, 146-7, 152-3, 161-3, 172, 178-94, 197, 240, 259, 287-9, 292, 361, 374.
  29. *Ibid.*, pp. 143, 287-9, 420.
  30. History of North Brookfield, Mass., J. H. Temple, 1887, pp. 25, 75-91; History of Hadley, Mass., L. M. Boltwood, 1863, pp. 137-9, 145-57.
  31. Dodge Genealogy, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 15; Balch Genealogy, G. B. Balch, 1897, pp. 10, 18; History of Deerfield, Mass., G. Sheldon, I, 103-8; Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXV, 261.
  32. Cutler Genealogy, N. S. Cutler, 1889, p. 21; Plympton Genealogy, L. B. Chase, 1884, pp. 58-9; Paige's, Cambridge, p. 399; Bodge, pp. 58, 155, 222-5, 431; Dawes Genealogy, H. W. Holland, 1878, pp. 45-6; New England Register, LVII, 300.
  33. Plymouth Colony Records, X, 271, 290, 312, 323, 351-2, 357, 369, 373, 389, 409-10.
  34. *Ibid.*, X, 357-8.
  35. History of Middleboro, Mass., T. Weston, 1906, pp. 80, 335, 652; Hubbard-Thompson Memorial, L. K. Stewart, 1914, pp. 230-1; General Register of Society of Colonial Wars, 1922, p. 391; History of Plymouth County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1884, pp. 949-50; King Philip's War, Bodge, pp. 157, 187; Dawes-Gates Ancestral Lines, II, 699, 705.
  36. Plymouth Colony Records, VI, 118-21, X, 410-2; History of King Philip's War, Benjamin Church, 1865, pp. 60-1, 141-2; Colonial Records of Connecticut, III, 157, 163, 170-1, 342-3; Records of Massachusetts Bay, V, 360.
  37. Savage, II, 384; Bodge, 155, 184; History of Hingham, Mass., Genealogies, II, 149.
  38. Church's King Philip's War, pp. 115, 141-2; Bodge's King Philip's War, p. 163; Upham Genealogy, p. 70.
  39. Savage I, 17, 376-7, 445, 449; II, 113; III, 427-32.
  40. Winchester Notes, F. W. Hotchkiss, 1912, pp. 57-9.
  41. Danforth Genealogy, J. J. May, 1902, pp. 18-9, 21.
  42. Rhode Island Historical Society Collections, III, 90-2.
  43. Upham Genealogy, pp. 116, 123, 136, 181; Biographical Dictionary of the American Congress, 1928, p. 1638; National Cyclopaedia of American Biography, V, 175, VI, 225.
  44. Bodge, pp. 164-7, 174, 182, 193, 405, 479-80; Church, pp. 46, 181-2.
  45. Lineage of the Bowens, E. A. Bowen, 1897, pp. 100, 103.
  46. The Beginnings of New England, J. Fiske, 1889, pp. 237-41; History of New England, J. G. Palfrey, 1885, III, 175-82; Dawes-Gates Ancestral Lines, II, 254.
  47. Parsons Genealogy, H. Parsons, 1912, I, 54; History of Worcester County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1889, I, 690.
  48. Abstract of records by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass., Middlesex Co. Probate Files, 9974, 12164, 23200, 23208; Suffolk Co. Court Records, 1527; Middlesex Co. Deeds, XXIX, 68.
  49. Worcester Co., Mass., Probate File 60652; recorded volume VIII, 535.
  50. Bodge's King Philip's War, pp. 406-41.
  51. Record of My Ancestry, C. L. Newhall, 1899, pp. 116-30.
  52. History of Worcester, W. Lincoln, 1837, pp. 7-12, 14, 29, 32; same, 1862, pp. 15, 18, 33.
  53. Notices of the Life of John Upham, A. G. Upham, 1845, pp. 5-32.
  54. History of First Church, Charlestown, Mass., W. I. Budington, 1845, pp. 249-50.
  55. Upham Genealogy, p. 100; Vital Records of Worcester, Mass., pp. 145, 421-2; History of Leicester, Mass., E. Washburn, 1860, pp. 211, 399.
  56. *Ibid.*, pp. 216, 234, 406-7.
  57. Reminiscences of Worcester, Mass., Caleb A. Wall, 1877, pp. 13, 101-5; Upham Genealogy, pp. 93, 117 et seq., 201 et seq.
  58. American Antiquarian Society Transactions and Collections, 1874, V, 95.
  59. Savage, I, 384; Richard Church Genealogy, J. A. Church, 1913, pp. 16-33; Church's King Philip's War, I, 49-50, 56-9; Bodge's King Philip's War, pp. 39, 65-9, 73-7, 179, 188-9, 197-8, 385-8, 392-403, 461-2.
  60. History of Deerfield ---, G. Sheldon, 1895, pp. 100-110.
  61. Abstract of Middlesex Probates by Miss Moffatt, File No. 1553.
  62. Search of Middlesex Probates by Mrs. J. T. Watts, Washington, D. C., Files No. 11012, No. 16189.





## UPSON

**E**LIZABETH (—) UPSON is the earliest proved forbear in this line. The identity of her husband\* while definitely stated<sup>4</sup> in some publications is not proved as yet. The date of her arrival in New England, of her marriage to (—) UPSON and of the birth of their child HANNAH<sup>2</sup> UPSON are among the unrecorded items of that early day. Evidence will be quoted, however, showing that ELIZABETH married, first, about 1635-7, (—) UPSON, bore this daughter<sup>13</sup> HANNAH<sup>2</sup> about 1637-9 and lost that husband by 1639 for she was married secondly<sup>7</sup> by or before February, 1639-40, to Hugh<sup>1</sup> Griffin of Sudbury and bore<sup>6</sup> him a daughter in November, 1640, as well as others later. Griffin was the first town clerk in Sudbury and seems to have been a kindly man. His life with ELIZABETH extended over about sixteen years until his death at Sudbury on June 21, 1656, leaving her with the care of five young people. His will<sup>7</sup> dated March 6, 1656, and probated December 16 following, proved his kindness toward his stepdaughter by giving to “. . . HANNAH UPSON my wives daughter by her former husband . . .” a fifth of the value of his house and lands, in common with his own four\*\* children, as well as a cow at the date of her marriage or at the age of twenty-one years.<sup>6,7</sup>

As was the frequent habit of widows in the strenuous days of the seventeenth century, ELIZABETH soon contracted<sup>7</sup> a third marriage, in this case becoming the third wife of one who, oddly enough, was already our ancestor through his first wife, namely, PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> WHALE of Sudbury (see Whale, p. 661). This, her last matrimonial venture as well as his was entered into<sup>7,8,9</sup> at Sudbury on November 9, 1657; and they spent eighteen years together before his death<sup>5,8</sup> on February 24, 1675-6.

Even before PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> died the inhabitants of Sudbury had begun to feel insecure as a consequence of the actions and temper of wandering Indians. Following<sup>11</sup> the Great Swamp Fight on December 19, 1675, in which great numbers were slain (see Upham, pp. 621-7), the Indians who survived were scattered widely and being vindictive and desperate, they made a series of retaliating attacks on

\*Two early Upsons, possibly brothers, are found: Thomas<sup>1</sup> in Connecticut<sup>2,5</sup> with a wife Elizabeth and children, Hannah<sup>8</sup> and Stephen<sup>2</sup> among others, all consistently recorded in that state. And a Stephen Upson born about 1612 who emigrated<sup>1</sup> in 1635 at the age of twenty-three on the “Increase” in company with our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BLODGETT (see p. 91), THOMAS<sup>1</sup> KILBOURN and MATTHEW<sup>1</sup> MARVIN (see Dawes-Gates II, 509, 575) and their respective families. This Stephen was listed as a sawyer<sup>1</sup> and arrived at Boston late in July, 1635. By some writers<sup>4</sup> he is claimed as the head of this family, and he may have been so, but careful search of Boston records<sup>15</sup> has failed to disclose a single item about him subsequent to his arrival. If he were the un-named husband of ELIZABETH above, his life tenure in the new country was not over four years.

\*\*The children of Hugh<sup>1</sup> Griffin by his wife ELIZABETH (—) UPSON, all born in Sudbury, were<sup>14</sup>

- i. Abigail<sup>8</sup> Griffin, b. Nov. 3 or 16, 1640; d. Nov. 17, 1660.
- ii. Sarah<sup>8</sup> Griffin, b. Nov. 20, 1642; d. after 1681; m. May 11, 1674, Jonathan<sup>8</sup> Stanhope (Jonathan<sup>1</sup>).
- iii. Shemuel<sup>8</sup> Griffin, b. Jan. 9, 1644; d. after his father.
- iv. Jonathan<sup>8</sup> Griffin; b. June 22 or Sept. 22, 1647; probably he who d. at Sudbury Feb. 2, 1685; m. there Oct. 25, 1676, Mary Long.<sup>14</sup>

various Massachusetts towns (see map, p. 448). On February 10, 1676, half of Lancaster was burned and forty-two white captives were taken, including the Rowlandson family. On March 26, Marlborough was attacked and later it was wiped out. On April 21, 1676, Sudbury itself was attacked. Thus, soon after the beginning of her third widowhood, ELIZABETH lived through the shocking experience of the "Sudbury Fight" (see Wright, p. 681). In this battle "King" Philip himself was in command of probably a thousand warriors. They attacked Sudbury about five or six o'clock in the morning and bitter fighting continued until nearly nightfall, accompanied by the burning and looting of all unoccupied buildings from which the settlers had crowded into the fortified garrisons. Only two residents of the town lost their lives but about fifty or sixty men were killed from among the military units which hurried to the assistance of the settlement, for companies had come from Marlborough, Concord, Watertown, and even Charlestown.<sup>11</sup> The thoughts and actions of ELIZABETH as the endless hours of that terrible day dragged on can only be imagined. It is easy to believe that the safety of her daughter, HANNAH (UPSON) WRIGHT and other near relatives was uppermost in her mind and that she probably assisted the men by loading the guns as the women usually did.

On October 11, 1676, a petition to the General Court, signed by thirty-four residents of Sudbury,<sup>11</sup> recounted the facts of the Indian attack, the monetary loss resulting, and asked, among other favors, for abatement of the taxes earlier assessed against them. Four days later a list was made up being "An Accompt of the Losse sustained by several Inhabitants of y<sup>e</sup> towne of Sudbury by y<sup>e</sup> Indian Enemy y<sup>e</sup> 21<sup>st</sup> Aprill 1676" whereby thirty-three individuals showed a total loss of £2,707. Of this, widow ELIZABETH, called "Widd. WHALE", bore £24 and her son-in-law EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT reported a loss of £100. The generous courtesy of "divers Christians in Ireland" who sent a ship load of supplies for the relief of those who suffered from the Indians during King Philip's War, brought its kindly message of helpfulness (though but little material aid) to ELIZABETH, for Sudbury received from it an apportionment of supplies to the amount of £7 4 s to be divided among twelve families consisting of forty-eight persons. This cargo contained meal, oat-meal, wheat, malt, butter, and cheese; and of these the malt was to be considered as having a value of 18 shillings per ball, the butter sixpence, and the cheese four pence per pound.<sup>12</sup>

Widow ELIZABETH (—) UPSON Griffin WHALE died at Sudbury<sup>8</sup> on November 8, 1688, having out-lived her third husband thirteen years.

The only child of (—) UPSON by his wife ELIZABETH, born probably at Boston or Sudbury was<sup>7,13</sup>

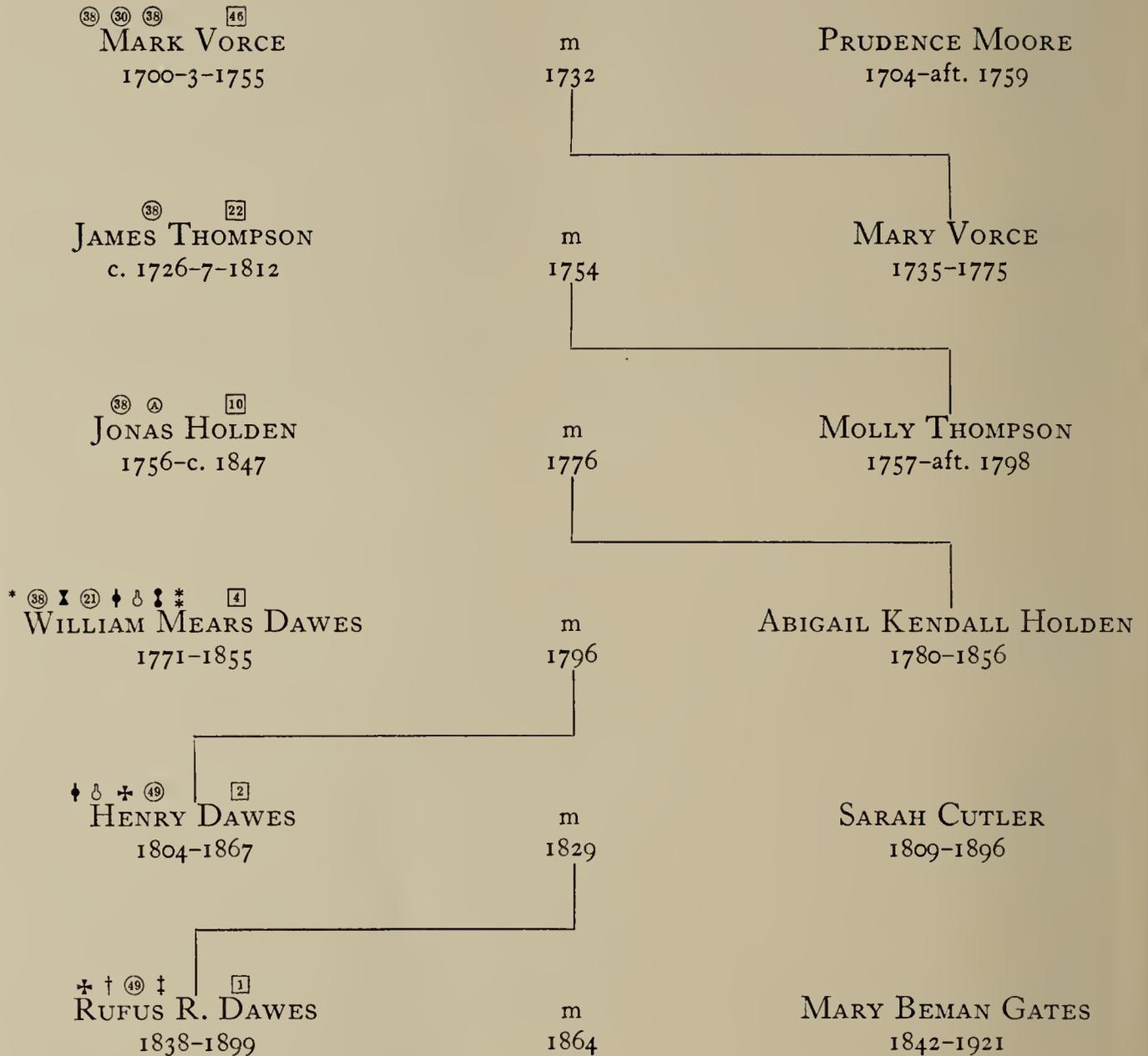
1. \*HANNAH<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1637-9, being<sup>7</sup> under 21 in March, 1656; d. at Sudbury<sup>10</sup> on May 18, 1708, at the age of abt. 70; m. there<sup>3,4,7,8</sup> on June 18, 1659, EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT (see Wright, p. 680).

\*The name of HANNAH<sup>2</sup> has, in printed statements, been taken in vain an amazing number of times, making her appear as Hannah<sup>2</sup> Axtell (Thomas<sup>1</sup> of Sudbury). This is because at marriage<sup>8</sup> she was recorded as "EPSON" and some one unfamiliar with early handwriting had rendered<sup>16</sup> that as "Axtell", while other writers had copied and re-copied the error.

## REFERENCES

1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 148-151; Savage, IV, 362; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, VIII, 260-1; Founders of New England, S. G. Drake, 1865, pp. 26-7; New England, S. G. Drake, 1865, pp. 26-7; New England Register XIV, 311-2.
2. Savage, IV, 362; Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XIV, 41; John Lee Genealogy, L. and S. F. Lee, 1897, pp. 145-6.
3. Pope's Pioneers, p. 468; New England Register, XIV, 311-2.
4. Hubbard Thompson Memorial, L. K. Stewart, 1914, pp. 301-3, 322, 340.
5. Savage, IV, 36, 362, 493; Lee Genealogy, 145-6.
6. Pope's Pioneers, pp. 200-1; Annals of Sudbury, Wayland, and Maynard, Mass., A. S. Hudson, 1891, p. 199.
7. Hubbard Thompson Memorial, pp. 302, 322, 340; Newton Genealogy, E. N. Leonard, 1915, p. 514.
8. Pope's Pioneers, p. 488; History of Sudbury, A. S. Hudson, 1889, pp. 34, 53; Vital Records of Sudbury, Mass., pp. 192, 208, 290, 329; Annals of Sudbury, Wayland, etc. p. 203.
9. Vital Records of Sudbury, Mass., pp. 157, 192, 208, 290, 329.
10. Ibid., 331; Savage, IV, 655; History of Framingham, Mass., W. Barry, 1847, p. 449.
11. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1906, pp. 33-7, 215-6, 218, 220-31; Hudson's Sudbury, Mass., pp. 211-58; New England Register, XXXV, 219.
12. Ibid., II, 245-50, 398-9.
13. Hudson's Sudbury, Mass., p. 34; Annals of Sudbury, Wayland, etc., p. 199.
14. Vital Records of Sudbury, pp. 60, 136, 207-8, 270, 308, 326; Savage IV, 163.
15. Search of early Boston records by Miss Eva Moffatt, Allston, Mass.
16. Savage IV, 655; Pope, 516; New England Register, LIII, 227, 359; Correspondence 1899 between Prof. S. K. Axtell, Kalamazoo, Mich. and Freeman C. Goodnow, Cambridge, Mass.

# VORCE



- (38) Sudbury
- (30) Framingham
- (A) Waitsfield, Vt.
- \* Boston
- X Marlborough
- (21) Fitzwilliam, N. H.
- ‡ Thomaston, Me.

- ♁ Morgan Co., O.
- ♂ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- (49) Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Malta, O.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## VORCE

**M**ARK<sup>a</sup> VORCE, our earliest *proved* ancestor of this family name, was born about 1700-3 and was baptized in the First Parish of Sudbury on August 22, 1714, as a servant<sup>1</sup> of Benjamin<sup>3</sup> Wight of Sudbury. This man Wight was the son of Henry<sup>2</sup> and Jane (Goodenow) Wight of Dedham and grandson of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Wight of that place. Benjamin<sup>3</sup> Wight had come to Sudbury in early life to be near his mother's relatives, he married here, and stayed until his death in 1739. He had only daughters of whom one, Experience<sup>4</sup> Wight became the wife of Capt. Josiah Richardson under whom our JAMES<sup>b</sup> THOMPSON fought in 1757. Jonathan<sup>3</sup> Wight, brother of Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, had removed from Dedham to Wrentham (see map, p. 618) and lived near a family called *Force* (see Addendum to Vorce, p. 647) whose descendants, as the years went by, frequently changed the name,<sup>16</sup> either by accident or intention, to *Vorce*\* and in that Wrentham Force family were a Mark Sr. born about 1670-4 and a Mark Jr. born 1703. Failing utterly to find any more likely origin for our MARK<sup>6</sup> VORCE than this Mark Force Jr., every possible effort has been made, but thus far without success, to prove or disprove his or their identity\*\* on the theory that Benjamin<sup>3</sup> Wight might easily have visited his brother Jonathan<sup>3</sup> in Wrentham and, lacking a son of his own, have induced young Mark Force to come to Sudbury in his employ.

As for the life of our MARK<sup>a</sup> VORCE, subsequent to his baptism in August, 1714,

\*Another name where "F" and "V" were used more or less interchangeably was Fales.

\*\*An analysis of the problem as it stands, may help some reader to produce a conclusive answer to this uncertainty. The situation is this:

A *Mark<sup>3</sup> Force* Sr. (see Addendum, p. 647) born probably around 1670-4 was one of many men, including his brother Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, who acquired from a Dorchester committee in 1698, land which lay "beyond Wrentham." Dorchester in the early days was the most extensive township in the Bay Colony, being about thirty-five miles from north to south (see map, p. 618 and Clapp, page 156). Boundaries changed so frequently and unaccountably that it may be this same land which "*Mark Fors*" called of Dorchester sold in 1711 to a Wrentham man and described as being "in Wrentham." Therefore we have *Mark Force* Sr. called of Dorchester and also of Wrentham where three different women married *some Mark Force*. Of these, *Mark* Sr. undoubtedly married the first two women and he may have also married the third for his death date has not been found. If the third wife *was* his, *Mark* Jr. is unquestionably our ancestor.

The known facts are<sup>10</sup> that *Mark Force* Sr. married first, at Wrentham on October 13, 1698, *Deborah<sup>2</sup> Maccane* (William<sup>1</sup> and Ruth) who was born in Wrentham in May, 1674.

The children of *Mark* Sr. and *Deborah (Maccane) Force*, all born in Wrentham were<sup>10</sup>

- i. Dorothy<sup>3</sup>, b. July 7, 1699.
  - ii. William<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 22, 1700-1 who m. there on May 17, 1727, Abigail Ware.
  - iii. Mark<sup>3</sup> Jr., b. Apr. 19, 1703. *Was it he or his father* who m. Apr. 19, 1736, *Mary Connwall* who died at Wrentham as "wife of Mark" on Jan. 30, 1740-1?
  - iv. Ebenezer<sup>3</sup>, b. Apr. 19, 1705.
  - v. Richard<sup>3</sup>, b. Oct. 23, 1707; m. 1st Hannah Hyde; m. 2nd 1744 Rhoda West, Res. Brookfield.<sup>16</sup>
- Mark Force* Sr. m. 2nd at Wrentham on Mar. 29, 1709, Sarah Hills and had by her
- vi. Ezekiel<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 1, 1709-10; m. June 25, 1735, Elizabeth Ruggles.

Query: Did *Mark Force* Sr. also marry in 1736 (when he would have been about sixty-six) a third wife *Mary Connwall* who died as the wife of a *Mark* on January 30, 1740-1? If he did so marry, it leaves *Mark* Jr. free to become "servant" to Benjamin<sup>3</sup> Wight of Sudbury and to marry as will be shown. If *Mark Force*, Jr. really married *Mary Connwall*, he is none of ours!

as a servant of Benjamin<sup>s</sup> Wight of Sudbury, we know that he was in military service<sup>11</sup> as "MARK VOICE" in 1725 under Capt. Samuel<sup>s</sup> Wright (EDWARD<sup>2</sup>), but nothing more of his life has been learned until 1730 when on September 25, being called MARK VORCE "cordwainer of Framingham",\* he paid<sup>6</sup> £15 to John Eveleth and his wife Hannah for one and a half acres of land in Sudbury "on the westerly side of Sudbury River near to Timber Swamp and on the northerly side of Lancaster Road." The following month on October 13, 1730, MARK made a further purchase<sup>6</sup> of over five acres of adjacent land which joined the easterly part of Rocky Plain. He evidently soon returned to Sudbury where he was married<sup>1</sup> by the Rev. Israel<sup>s</sup> Loring on December 18, 1732, to PRUDENCE<sup>s</sup> MOORE (see Moore, p. 450).

And just here a digression must explain a deplorable error in the recording<sup>12</sup> of this family in the published Vital Records of Sudbury for on the original manuscript an "M" has, in various instances, been written over the "V" of Vorce items so that when publication occurred, sometimes one of these letters was perpetuated and sometimes the other was used. For instance, our MARY<sup>b</sup> is recorded as being born as "Morse" but is married as "VORCE"; and when MARK<sup>a</sup>, himself, marries he is recorded as "Morse" but when his widow PRUDENCE marries a second time she is called "VORCE." The items on MARK<sup>a</sup> and his family in that volume are utterly unreliable but an exhaustive search<sup>12</sup> of *original* manuscripts such as deeds, probates, church records, etc. established VORCE as the only form ever used.

On November 11, 1733, less than a year after they were married, MARK<sup>a</sup> and PRUDENCE owned the covenant<sup>1</sup> in the First Parish Church and that day their eldest child was baptized.<sup>1</sup> In 1734 though resident in Sudbury MARK<sup>a</sup> still held property in Framingham<sup>13</sup> on which he was taxed. In November, 1739, being called of Sudbury he sold<sup>6</sup> ten acres of land there for £100 to William<sup>4</sup> Rice (Jonathan<sup>s</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, Edmund<sup>1</sup>); in 1741 being called "cordwainer of Sudbury" he and wife PRUDENCE sold five acres of Sudbury land<sup>6</sup> for £30 to Daniel Putnam with Josiah and Experience (Wight) Richardson acting as the witnesses. Nothing of detail has been learned of the years as they passed, until the Rev. Mr. Loring's diary recorded on July 29, 1754, the burial of his daughter-in-law Kezia (Woodward) Loring when he named the bearers at the funeral as Mr. Plympton, Mr. VORCE, Mr. Maynard, Mr. Willis, Mr. Tower and Mr. Eames. In spite of his ability to act in this capacity, MARK<sup>a</sup> had evidently been ailing for a considerable time for other entries from the diary<sup>7</sup> inform us that on March 9, 1755, a contribution which totaled £25 lacking one shilling was taken up (probably at the church) for the VORCE family. Under date of March 24, 1755, the diary reads:

"This day visited M. V. [initials *only*, given]. Found him in great distress of Mind as well as body. Told me that in his younger years he used to pray in secret but thro' vain company-keeping, left it. Now shockt with the thoughts of Eternity, had sent for me to direct him in the great matter of his Eternal Salvation. [A prayer followed.]"

The diary closes the story\*\* on May 17, 1755, with:<sup>7</sup>

"Saturday The Last night about the middle of it Dyed MARK VORCE who has been Labouring under a lingering consuming Sickness and of a Long Continuance. Man dieth & giveth up the Ghost and where is he?"

\*Framingham was early called Sudbury Farms<sup>11</sup> and the settlers were considered "out dwellers" of Sudbury.

\*\*A manuscript record gives the name of MARK VORCE on a Colonial War list of 1755 but his death in May, 1755, following extended illness precludes any such service on his part though service may have been expected of him.

There is no evidence of a will or an administration so MARK<sup>a</sup> probably left little or nothing beyond a home. Widow PRUDENCE was left with the care of her three younger children, our MARY<sup>b</sup> being already married. On September 21, 1757, her son Reuben<sup>b</sup> being in his eighteenth year made choice<sup>6</sup> of Deacon Josiah Haynes\* as his guardian. Bond of £500 was filed and JAMES<sup>b</sup> THOMPSON signed as a witness or bondsman.

On October 18, 1759, widow PRUDENCE became the\*\* second wife<sup>2</sup> of Daniel Woodward of Sudbury whose will was dated April 11, 1760, and he died before June 28 following. It mentioned wife<sup>6</sup> PRUDENCE and the estate she had brought with her at the time of her marriage but it made bequests only to the testator's Loring grandsons, children of Kezia (vide supra); to the testator's daughter Susanna Moore and her son and to the testator's sons-in-law Israel Moore\*\* and Nathan Loring.\*\* JAMES<sup>b</sup> THOMPSON was a witness.<sup>6</sup> Poor PRUDENCE was heavily burdened during those days, for in 1759 her youngest son Peter<sup>b</sup> Vorce called of Rutland had enlisted in the Provincial service at the age of seventeen and after his return in 1760 had died before June 30, when she as widow PRUDENCE Woodward explained to the Probate Court<sup>6</sup> that she had been unable to collect wages due him and asked direction, adding that if an administrator was to be appointed she would suggest for the position her son-in-law JAMES<sup>b</sup> THOMPSON and on June 30, 1760, this appointment was made<sup>6</sup> with William Rice† and Nathan<sup>4</sup> Loring as sureties on THOMPSON'S £500 bond. The death date of widow PRUDENCE has not been found, nor any record of her subsequent to June, 1760.

The known†† children of MARK<sup>a</sup> and PRUDENCE (MOORE) VORCE all born in Sudbury and baptized in the First Parish (earlier called the West Side) Church were<sup>1,2</sup>

- I. Reuben<sup>b</sup>, b. Aug. 9, bap. Nov. 11, 1733; d. Dec. 19, 1736.
- II. MARY<sup>b</sup>, b. Dec. 27, 1735, bap. Jan. 4, 1736; d. at Sudbury<sup>3</sup> Feb. 3, 1775; m. there<sup>3</sup> Nov. 14, 1754, JAMES<sup>b</sup> THOMPSON (see Thompson, p. 591).
- III. Ann<sup>b</sup>, b. Dec. 12, 1737, bap. Jan. 22, 1738; d. in Stow<sup>4</sup> Jan. 29, 1824, aged 86 y., 1 m., 17 d. having lived thirty-four years a widow. She was married at Sudbury by the Rev. Israel Loring on Jan. 7, 1761, to Benjamin<sup>4</sup> Tower (Ambrose<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>4</sup>
- IV. †Reuben<sup>b</sup>, b. Jan. 12, bap. 14, 1739-40; d. after Oct., 1778, when he entered service<sup>11</sup> under Capt. Rice; m. at Sudbury<sup>2</sup> May 15, 1766, Mary<sup>5</sup> Rice (William<sup>4</sup>, Jonathan<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, Edmund<sup>1</sup>).<sup>5</sup>
- V. Peter<sup>b</sup>, b. July 26, bap. Aug. 1, 1742; he enlisted in the Provincial service in 1759, as a minor, and after his return home he died unmarried before June 30, 1760.

\*See note, p. 592 of Thompson on Deacon Josiah<sup>4</sup> Haynes (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Walter<sup>1</sup>).<sup>14</sup>

\*\*The first wife of Daniel Woodward was Sarah<sup>3</sup> Goodenow (Edmund<sup>2</sup>, Edmund<sup>1</sup>) whom he married in 1716. They had no sons but their daughter Kezia married Daniel<sup>4</sup> Loring (son of the Rev. Israel<sup>3</sup>) and their daughter Susanna married Israel<sup>4</sup> Moore (Daniel<sup>3</sup>, Jacob<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).<sup>15</sup>

†This was doubtless William<sup>4</sup> Rice (1709-1780) whose daughter Mary<sup>5</sup> soon married<sup>5</sup> Reuben<sup>b</sup> Vorce.

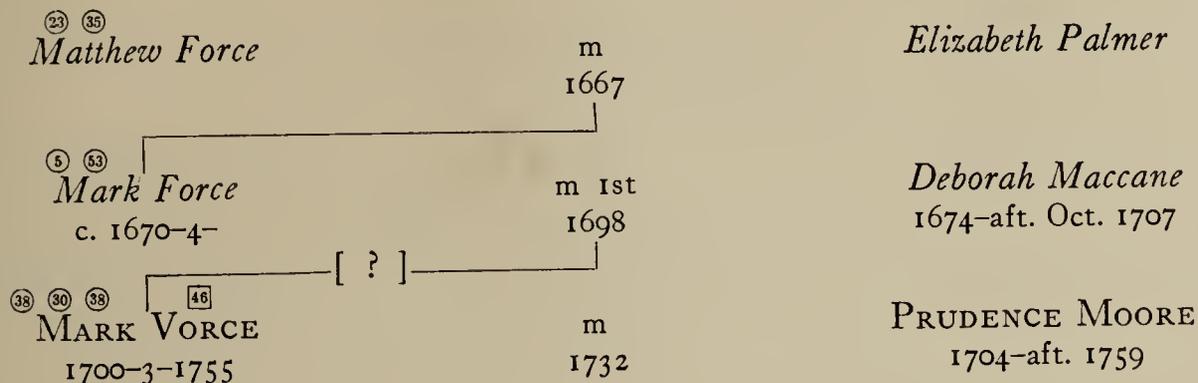
††A girl who bore the name of Prudence Vorce and married a Jedediah Noble born probably in 1729, seemingly should have belonged to this family<sup>8</sup> and may have been an unrecorded child. MARY<sup>b</sup> VORCE after her marriage to JAMES<sup>b</sup> THOMPSON, as above, named a son "Jedediah." A John Vorce called of Southborough married by or before 1767 and was a reasonable age to have belonged here. A Jedediah Vorce settled<sup>17</sup> in Ellery, Chautauqua Co., N. Y. by 1815.

‡Reuben<sup>b</sup> and his wife owned the covenant<sup>6</sup> in Sudbury under the Rev. Mr. Cook in March, 1767, as his sister MARY<sup>b</sup> and her husband JAMES<sup>b</sup> THOMPSON had done on July 27, 1755.

## REFERENCES

1. Report by Mrs. James T. Watts, Washington, D. C. on the (Mss.) First Parish Records of Sudbury, pp. 8, 22, 24-6, 28, 31, 220, 223-4, 226, 229.
2. Vital Records of Sudbury, pp. 98, 145, 236, 240, 275, 278-9, 317.
3. *Ibid.*, pp. 275, 278, 327.
4. Tower Genealogy, C. Tower, 1891, pp. 124-5; Vital Records of Stow, p. 261.
5. Rice Family, A. H. Ward, 1858, p. 83.
6. Mrs. Watts' report on Middlesex Probate Records File No. 23387; No. 23388; No. 25573; Middlesex Deeds, XLI, 435; XLII, 713; XLIII, 182-3.
7. Mrs. Watts' report on Diary of Rev. Israel<sup>o</sup> Loring covering the period 1753-1757.
8. Noble Genealogy, L. M. Boltwood, 1878, p. 727.
9. Savage's Dictionary, IV, 543; Vital Records of Sudbury, pp. 148, 152, 286, 330.
10. Vital Records of Wrentham, I, 91; II, 299, 447.
11. History of Sudbury, A. S. Hudson, 1889, pp. 157-60, 300, 404.
12. Errors in Vital Records of Sudbury, pp. 98, 240, 278-9 &c established by Mrs. Watts.
13. History of Framingham, J. H. Temple, 1887, p. 732.
14. Walter Haynes and his Descendants, F. and F. M. Haynes, 1929, pp. 50-1, 63.
15. New England Register, LVII, 365.
16. Vital Records of Brookfield, pp. 87, 218-9, 313, 425, 485, 539.
17. History of Chautauqua Co. N. Y., A. W. Young, 1875, pp. 314, 555, 557.

Addendum to Vorce



(23) Gravesend, L.I.  
 (35) New York City  
 (5) Dorchester

(53) Wrentham  
 (38) Sudbury  
 (30) Framingham

Matthew<sup>1</sup> Force,\* theoretically of French descent, lived at Gravesend, Long Island in 1669-71 and in New York City "on Broadway below Rector Street in 1675-8"; he was married in April, 1667, to Elizabeth Palmer, daughter of Col. John Palmer. The children of Matthew<sup>1</sup> and Elizabeth (Palmer) Force were<sup>1</sup>

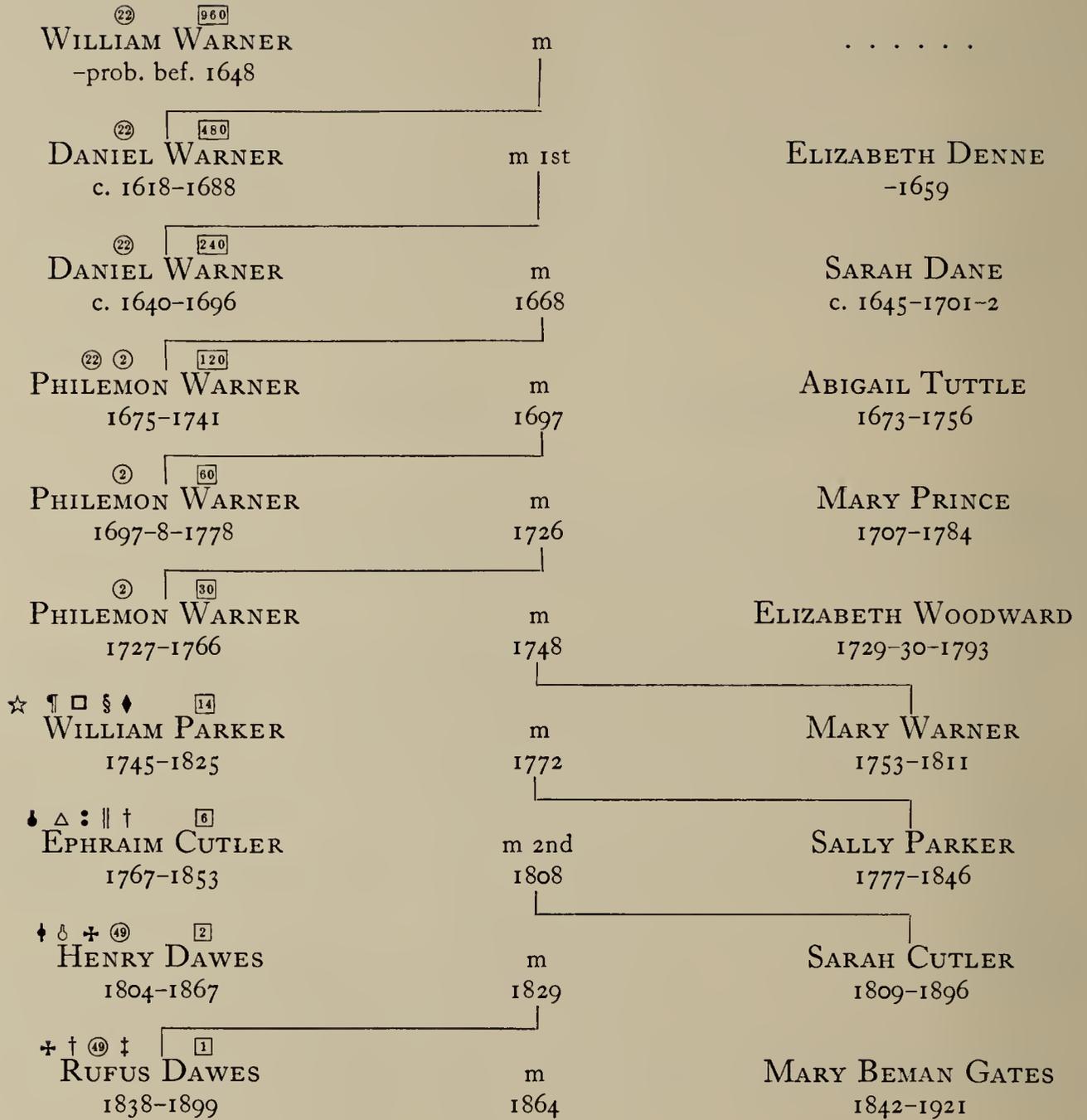
- I. Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, b. prob. abt. 1668; he had a wife Elizabeth whom he married about 1688-9 who bore him seven children<sup>3</sup> in Wrentham, Massachusetts from 1690 to 1708; in 1712 a Benjamin Force of "Donheiter [Dorchester?] Suffolk Co., Massachusetts Taylor,"<sup>2</sup> paid £300 for three tracts of land<sup>2</sup> in Woodbridge, New Jersey. In August, 1734, a Benjamin Force of Woodbridge made his will, naming four of the seven children born at Wrentham, the eldest of whom was still living in New England. The will was proved<sup>2</sup> in November, 1734.
- II. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1670; married about 1693 Hannah (—); was living in Westchester Co., N. Y. in 1698 but removed about 1713 to Woodbridge, N. J. He had two daughters and four sons, Obadiah<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Isaac<sup>3</sup> and William<sup>3</sup>. Probably it was he "of Woodbridge" who died in June, 1736, when administration on his estate was granted<sup>2</sup> to his widow Mary.
- III. Matthew<sup>2</sup>, b. prob. abt. 1672; m. at Woodbridge Jan. 7, 1696, Sarah Morris and had one son and two daughters, one of whom died young.
- IV. Mark<sup>2</sup>, b. prob. abt. 1674; m. first at Wrentham<sup>3</sup> on Oct. 13, 1698 Deborah Maccane who died after October, 1707; m. secondly at Wrentham on March 29, 1709, Sarah Hills; and either he or his son of the same name married at Wrentham on April 19, 1736, a Mary Connwall who died there on January 30, 1740-1, as the "wife of Mark." See note, p. 645 for the children of Mark<sup>3</sup> and the problem we face. The Vosburgh manuscript assigns MARK<sup>3</sup> to us, giving him a wife PRUDENCE — as our MARK really had — and the children born in Sudbury (see p. 645) but quotes no authority or proof for the statement.

\*Material of this family<sup>1</sup> was gathered by Mr. R. W. Vosburgh of Staten Island, N. Y. for Stewart Hartshorn Esq. Mr. Vosburgh died in 1931 and after the death of Mr. Hartshorn his widow presented what is termed the "Force Manuscript Collection" to the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society.

REFERENCES

1. Force Manuscript Collection in Library of the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society, consulted by Miss E. L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass.
2. New York Genealogical and Biographical Records, LIII, 166; New Jersey Archives, Ser. 1, XXX, 182.
3. Vital Records of Wrentham, I, 90-1; II, 299, 447.

# WARNER

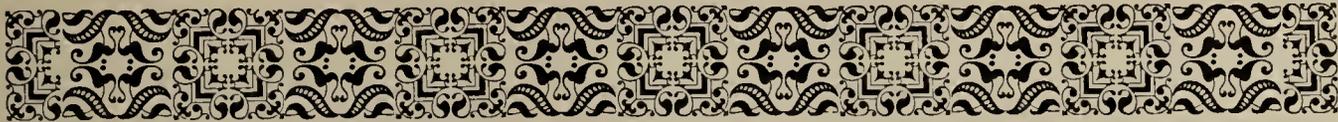


② Ipswich  
 ② Gloucester  
 □ Newburyport  
 ☆ Malden  
 † Charlestown  
 § Allegheny Co., Pa.

◆ Meigs Co., O.  
 ♠ Edgartown  
 △ Killingly, Conn.  
 ∴ Waterford, O.  
 || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.  
 † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.

† Thomaston, Me.  
 ♂ Morgan Co., O.  
 + Malta, O.  
 ④ Mauston, Wis.  
 † Marietta, O.

---



---

## WARNER

---

**W**ILLIAM<sup>1</sup> WARNER\* who emigrated to New England probably<sup>14</sup> in 1635 with three children who were nearly or quite grown, settled in Ipswich where he was first mentioned<sup>13</sup> in 1636-7. At that time he received the grant of a house lot of about one acre extent situated<sup>1,3,18</sup> on the Mill Street (see map, p. 275) where he was named as an abuttor to several of the early residents including<sup>15</sup> SIMON<sup>1</sup> STACY. He also received a six-acre planting lot about fourteen acres of meadow and a ninety-seven acre farm.<sup>15,18</sup> The belief is that he died in or about 1648 for in that year his name was omitted from the tax list.<sup>15</sup> On May 2, 1638, a man called William Warrener (who was probably our WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) was made free,<sup>20</sup> which presupposes church membership.

The children of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> and ABIGAIL (BAKER) WARNER, all born in England were<sup>1,15</sup>

- i. John<sup>2</sup>, bap. Sept. 9, 1612, at Boxted; d. prob. before 1615.
- ii. Abigail<sup>2</sup>, bap. June 2, 1614, at Boxted; d. at Ipswich July 22, 1671; m. at St. Botolph's, Colchester, co. Essex Thomas<sup>1</sup> Wells of Ipswich who died there Oct. 26, 1666. His will<sup>38</sup> dated in July, 1666, specified that his wife Abigail should have, among other things, "half the pewter that was her own father's." The widow Abigail made her will the day of her death and her step-mother Faith Warner was one of the witnesses.<sup>3</sup>
- iii. John<sup>2</sup>, b. abt. 1616; d. at Hadley abt. 1692; m. at Ipswich, Mar. 10, 1655, Priscilla Symonds (Mark of Ipswich).<sup>1</sup> They removed about 1665 to Brookfield and when it was destroyed in 1675, to Hadley.<sup>5</sup>
- iv. DANIEL<sup>2</sup>, see following.

DANIEL<sup>2</sup> WARNER (*William<sup>1</sup>*) called<sup>15</sup> "husband man" was born in England about 1618 and died<sup>2</sup> at Ipswich September 9, 1688. His first wife whom he may have married in England, was<sup>3</sup> ELIZABETH DENNE the mother of all of his children. She died at Ipswich<sup>2</sup> on November 1, 1659, and he married<sup>1,2</sup> there secondly on July 1, 1660, Faith (—) Brown,\*\* (widow of Edward of Ipswich) who died on<sup>1</sup> June 10 or<sup>2</sup> November 10, 1679. The third wife of DANIEL<sup>2</sup> to whom he was married<sup>1,2</sup> on June 1, 1686, when DANIEL<sup>2</sup> himself would have been sixty-eight, was widow† Ellen Jewett of Rowley who survived him.<sup>8</sup>

\*WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> WARNER was called<sup>14</sup> "of Boxted," co. Essex, England and he had married, probably there, about<sup>14,15</sup> 1611 an ABIGAIL BAKER who may have died in England. This ABIGAIL had a sister Sarah Baker who married<sup>19</sup> first at Boxted on October 20, 1614, Richard<sup>1</sup> Lumpkin (1582-1642) of Boxted, England and Ipswich, New England. After the death of Lumpkin his widow Sarah married secondly at Ipswich about 1655 as his second wife Simon<sup>1</sup> Stone. Her will dated March 25, 1663, made bequests to her "kinsmen" John<sup>2</sup> Warner, DANIEL<sup>2</sup> WARNER and Thomas<sup>1</sup> Wells (husband of her niece Abigail<sup>2</sup>) and named the three of them as her executors.<sup>14</sup> Both the Warner and Wells families were called<sup>21</sup> "people of consideration among the first settlers."

\*\*The claim is made<sup>16</sup> that widow Faith was born a Lord, sister of Robert<sup>1</sup> Lord of Ipswich. She had married first about 1617 Edward<sup>1</sup> Brown of Ipswich. DANIEL<sup>2</sup> WARNER had given bond (perhaps at his marriage to Faith) for £11-10 to this second wife<sup>15</sup> Faith, which she in her will of June, 1669, bequeathed to her son John<sup>2</sup> Brown.<sup>15</sup>

†She was<sup>8</sup> an Ellen Pell, maid to Atherton Hough, wife first of John<sup>1</sup> Boynton, then wife of Maximilian<sup>1</sup> Jewett, and thirdly wife of DANIEL<sup>2</sup> WARNER.

In 1640 DANIEL<sup>2</sup> and John<sup>2</sup> Warner each had a cow,<sup>18</sup> so they were presumably at the heads of families; in 1641-2 DANIEL<sup>2</sup> had a right to commonage<sup>18</sup> and on June 2, 1641, became a freeman<sup>15</sup> of Ipswich. In January, 1646-7, he promised voluntary carting toward the building of the cart bridge, in addition to the usual requirement of two days work apiece on the local roads.<sup>18</sup> That year, with JOHN<sup>1</sup> TUTTLE and THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BURNHAM, DANIEL<sup>2</sup> was one of six surveyors.<sup>18</sup> On February 7, 1647-8, he was chosen<sup>15,22</sup> one of two constables and that year was therefore to assist in collecting the local tax. In 1648-9 he subscribed two shillings annually toward the salary of Maj. Denison, their military leader. In 1650 and 1654 he served on grand juries, in the latter case with JOHN<sup>2</sup> DANE. In January, 1654-5, DANIEL<sup>2</sup> entered into a contract<sup>15</sup> with his aunt Sarah (Baker) Lumpkin Stone of Watertown and her then husband Simon<sup>1</sup>, that DANIEL<sup>2</sup> should acquire his aunt's Ipswich house lot of about two acres, her six acre planting lot and her hundred and fifty acre farm at the Pine Swamp, in return for which DANIEL<sup>2</sup> should "forthwith build a good and sufficient house" on the house lot in which Sarah and her husband might spend the remainder of their lives, "with a mayde servant." DANIEL<sup>2</sup> further agreed to pay his aunt £4 per year in "good and merchantable wheat, barley & Indian corne" during her life and to continue a payment of £3 annually if her husband survived her.<sup>15</sup>

In 1658 DANIEL<sup>2</sup> was<sup>22</sup> one of the seven selectmen and that year served on the grand jury. In June, 1660, he had the sad task of serving on a jury of inquest over the death of his nephew Daniel<sup>3</sup> Warner (John<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>). Their inquiry showed that Samuel<sup>3</sup>, brother of the deceased, had been tapping a tree (perhaps for maple sap?) and a second tree leaning against the first, was dislodged, fell and struck Daniel<sup>3</sup> on the head "and as we conceue . . . did breake his scull and [made] a hoale on the side of his forehead wch we conceiue was his death."

In July, 1662, DANIEL<sup>2</sup> sold<sup>15</sup> to Thomas Lovell about sixteen acres of meadow a part of which had earlier belonged to his father, and in September, 1665, at a lawsuit over damage caused by some one's hogs, DANIEL<sup>2</sup> and SIMON<sup>1</sup> STACY appraised the damage done and signed their report to the court in longhand.

A DANIEL WARNER who was undoubtedly DANIEL<sup>2</sup> (since the designation of "jr." was omitted) served<sup>22</sup> on trial juries in 1669, 1670, 1673, 1674 and 1676, and on a grand jury in 1680. In 1669 the selectmen chose<sup>22</sup> four men including DANIEL<sup>2</sup> to take care of the commons on the north side of the river; in 1678 DANIEL<sup>2</sup> was a selectman and in 1677-8 he was chosen a tythingman<sup>15</sup> as were also<sup>22</sup> his brother-in-law Robert<sup>1</sup> Lord, JOHN<sup>1</sup> COGSWELL and JOHN<sup>2</sup> DANE. In 1675 DANIEL<sup>2</sup> deeded to his daughter Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> and her husband the northeast end of his "now dwelling house," half of the benefit of the pasture and half of the fruit of the orchard, with the understanding that after the death of DANIEL<sup>2</sup> the ownership of the dwelling and outhouses should revert to the young people, provided the son-in-law Edmund Heard should pay at or before the death of DANIEL<sup>2</sup> the sum of £30, viz. £10 each to William<sup>3</sup> Warner and to daughters Abigail<sup>3</sup> and Susannah<sup>3</sup> and should secure the commonage Heard had bought from Henry Archer, to Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> Warner.<sup>15</sup>

In February, 1681-2, forty-five Essex County men signed a petition<sup>39</sup> to the English King that the claim of Robert Mason to Gloucester and Cape Ann territory should be adjudicated and the annoyance to the settlers there of Mason's con-

tentious claim should be relieved. Among the signers were DANIEL<sup>2</sup> WARNER, JOHN<sup>2</sup> PERKINS, "SYMON<sup>1</sup> STACJE", THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BURNHAM, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> HASKELL, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> DODGE (Dawes-Gates, II, 319) James<sup>2</sup> Stevens (WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) and Henry Walker, third husband of our MARY (—) Robinson BROWNE.<sup>39</sup>

It is notable that in spite of the frequent appearances of DANIEL<sup>2</sup> WARNER in court as witness or more especially as juror, that he was present in a controversial character in only two instances, in both of which cases justice was *obviously* on his side. For (1) in 1665 John<sup>2</sup> Warner became assignee<sup>22</sup> of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Wells and DANIEL<sup>2</sup> WARNER in a case of debt\* against John Fuller in which case the parties agreed on a settlement; and (2) in 1669 DANIEL<sup>2</sup> got out a writ against\*\* Josiah Clark who had borrowed<sup>22</sup> a horse which he had not returned.

†DANIEL<sup>2</sup> made his will<sup>1</sup> on September 7, 1688, two days before his death. He gave "to his sons DANIEL and John each that part of his Pine Swamp farm of which they were already in possession, according to the division which they had made between them, DANIEL to have in his part 'the swamp we call Poplar Swamp'." He divided his marsh and Plum Island land between DANIEL<sup>3</sup> and John<sup>3</sup> and gave also to DANIEL<sup>3</sup> "the most part of a house lot . . ." (see p. 652). He provided for his wife Ellen, his son William<sup>3</sup>, daughters Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, Abigail<sup>3</sup> and Susanna<sup>3</sup> as well as making bequests to his grandchild Nathaniel<sup>4</sup> (Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>) then aged twelve and his grandchild Daniel<sup>4</sup> (William<sup>3</sup>) then aged eight. The inventory of the estate left by DANIEL<sup>2</sup> amounted to over £707 of which his house, barn and orchard with twenty-one acres of land counted for £160 and the farm on which DANIEL<sup>3</sup> and John<sup>3</sup> lived was valued at £200. After the death of his legatee Nathaniel<sup>4</sup> in 1697 all the heirs of DANIEL<sup>2</sup> joined on February 28, 1698, in conveying to Michael Farley that youth's legacy, viz. John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>3</sup> and Abigail (Warner) Dane, Edmond and Elizabeth (Warner) Heard, and the children of DANIEL<sup>3</sup>, deceased, namely Daniel<sup>4</sup>, PHILEMON<sup>4</sup>, Sarah<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>4</sup> and Mercy<sup>4</sup>.

The children of DANIEL<sup>2</sup> and ELIZABETH (DENNE) WARNER all born in Ipswich were<sup>1,2,3</sup>

- I. DANIEL<sup>3</sup>, see following.
- II. John<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1642; d. at Ipswich<sup>2</sup> Apr. 10, 1712; m. 1st Apr. 20, 1665, Hannah<sup>2</sup> Batchelder (Joseph<sup>1</sup>); m. 2nd abt. 1691 Mary (—) Prince.
- III. William<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1645-6; d. in Wethersfield, Conn.<sup>6</sup> on Feb. 28, 1714, in his 69th yr.; m. there in 1667 or 1670 Hannah<sup>2</sup> Robbins dau. of John<sup>1</sup> and Mary of Wethersfield, Conn.<sup>6</sup>
- IV. Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, d. at Ipswich Apr., 1684; m. there Nov. 24 or<sup>7</sup> 29, 1673, Hannah<sup>2</sup> Boynton (John<sup>1</sup>).<sup>7</sup> He left a son Nathaniel<sup>4</sup> who received a bequest in his grandfather's will.
- V. Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, b. abt. 1648; d. at Ipswich in 1724 in her 77th year;<sup>2</sup> m. there<sup>2</sup> Sept. 26, 1672, Edmond Heard.
- VI. Abigail<sup>3</sup>, named in father's will; m. at Ipswich Dec. 27, 1671, John<sup>3</sup> Dane (JOHN<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).
- VII. Susanna<sup>3</sup>, named in father's will, but d.<sup>1</sup> Nov. 20, 168[8?]<sup>2</sup> or bef. 1698; m. at Ipswich<sup>2</sup> in Jan., 1674, John Brewer.
- VIII. Symon<sup>3</sup>, b. June 6, 1658; d. June 11, 1658.

\*This was very likely in connection with the settlement of the estate of Sarah (Baker) Lumpkin Stone whose will had made these three men her executors.

\*\*This man was probably he who was nephew of our EDWARD<sup>1</sup> CLARK (see Clark, p. 179).

†DANIEL<sup>2</sup> was almost invariably called "sr." during his life for at the time of his death there were three of his descendants of the same name living in Ipswich, his son DANIEL<sup>3</sup> (c.1640-1696); his grandson Daniel<sup>4</sup> (DANIEL<sup>3</sup>) born 1671; his grandson Daniel<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>) born 1672; and even a nephew of his, Daniel<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>) born in 1661.

DANIEL<sup>3</sup> WARNER (*Daniel<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>2</sup> at Ipswich about 1640, died there<sup>2</sup> November 24, 1696, having married there<sup>2</sup> on September 23, 1668, SARAH<sup>3</sup> DANE (see Dane, p. 248) who survived him.

As has been stated, DANIEL<sup>3</sup>, eldest son of DANIEL<sup>2</sup> received<sup>1</sup> a half of his father's "Pine Swamp Farm" where he already lived and half of the father's marsh and Plum Island land. In addition he received "the most part" of a house lot,\* the description of which shows how temporary and insecure land descriptions\*\* frequently were in those days; for we are told it was "formerly Robert Crane's, next to Edm. Bridges, bounded by Edm. Heard's land, on a straight line from a stump of a post within a pole fence at the street, to two posts that stand together in a corner next Mr. Norton's land, half of which I intended to have given John, but understand that DANIEL hath paid him for it."

DANIEL<sup>3</sup>, quite uniformly called "jr.", became involved in his youth as a witness in a law suit in 1657 because he had furnished a piece of paper to one Edmond Bridges who wrote a note upon the paper during the sermon at Rowley and was consequently fined.<sup>23</sup> In 1664 DANIEL<sup>3</sup> and his brother John<sup>3</sup> made deposition about the sudden death of a horse which had been borrowed and used by goodman Bridges. On April 12, 1674, DANIEL<sup>3</sup> and his wife SARAH "took the covenant."<sup>1</sup> In November, 1679, when subscriptions were being taken for the elder's salary DANIEL<sup>2</sup> gave eight shillings four pence and DANIEL<sup>3</sup> gave ten shillings five pence. In September, 1682, DANIEL<sup>3</sup> took the freeman's oath.<sup>23</sup> He evidently belonged to the train band for he was identified<sup>1</sup> as "Ensign."

He died at the age of about fifty-six, was survived by five of his ten children and by his wife SARAH. At his death two of his children were minors and two of their maternal uncles were commissioned<sup>1</sup> as their guardians, John<sup>3</sup> Dane for John<sup>4</sup> Warner and Philemon<sup>3</sup> Dane for Mercy<sup>4</sup> Warner. DANIEL<sup>3</sup> is said<sup>1</sup> to have left the lot in Ipswich, which he inherited (see p. 653) to his sons PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> and John<sup>4</sup>; it is said also that PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> lived on it until 1710 when he removed to Gloucester and sold his portion to Jonathan Prince but that John<sup>4</sup> was still resident on his half in 1717. Its location was on Market Street between Peabody's Brook and the railroad station of later days. The estate of Ensign DANIEL<sup>3</sup> inventoried at over £527 and his eldest son Daniel<sup>4</sup> administered it, giving in settlement to his sister Sarah<sup>4</sup> £44 in money; to PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> one-half of the house lot in Ipswich and the shop adjoining which their father DANIEL<sup>3</sup> had built; to the guardian of John<sup>4</sup> the other half of the house lot and to the guardian of Mercy<sup>4</sup> a cash settlement. As eldest son he probably took for his own the farm at Pine Swamp for tradition says he lived there and he agreed to support his mother, widow SARAH, who died at Ipswich<sup>2</sup> on December 28, 1701.

The children of DANIEL<sup>3</sup> and SARAH (DANE) WARNER all born at Ipswich were<sup>1,2,3</sup>

I. Child stillborn, May, 1670.

II. †Daniel<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 25, 1671, or Sept. 5, 1672; d. at Ipswich<sup>2</sup> Jan. 20, 1754, ae. 82 yr. 4 mo. 15 d.;

\*This was the house lot<sup>1</sup> of which DANIEL<sup>3</sup> by his will gave half to PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> and half to John<sup>4</sup>. PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> sold his part to Jonathan Prince in 1710 when he removed to Gloucester.<sup>1</sup>

\*\*Another significant land description recorded in 1681 required<sup>22</sup> that certain "bounds should be a straight line from the willow bush at the southeast end of the land to a stake by a knot in a log of the fence twelve paces to the southwest of the corner of the log fence." In this case DANIEL WARNER (father or son) and SIMON<sup>1</sup> STACY deposed.

†Daniel<sup>4</sup> wrote a rather extensive record<sup>24</sup> of his WARNER ancestry and of his DANE ancestry with the addition of many collateral relationships which has been very helpful to later generations. He is said to have lived at the Pine Swamp Farm and to have sold it in 1744 for £960 old tenor. The old house was still standing in November, 1865, and the initials "D. W." were cut into the chimney piece and elsewhere, but by which generation of the name is uncertain.

- m.<sup>1</sup> 1st Feb. 19 or 29, 1699-1700, Dorcas<sup>3</sup> Adams (John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>);<sup>40</sup> m. 2nd<sup>1</sup> in 1750 (—).
- III. Sarah<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 22, 1673; she received £44 from her father's estate; m. (name not given) and had eight children<sup>1</sup> — named<sup>3</sup> Joseph, Eunice, Mercy, Stephen, Joshua, Daniel, Philemon and Dane.
- IV. PHILEMON<sup>4</sup>, see following.
- V. \*John<sup>4</sup>, b. July 30, 1677; d. at Ipswich as "Sergt John" May 25, 1735, ae. 57 yr. 8 mo. 25 d.; m. there<sup>1</sup> 1st (int. July 4) 1702 Hannah Davis of Gloucester; m. 2nd Elizabeth (—).
- VI. Rebecca<sup>4</sup>, b. Mar. 16, 1678; d. June 10, 1679.
- VII. Dane<sup>4</sup>, twin, b. Apr. 14, 1680; d. yng.
- VIII. William<sup>4</sup>, twin, b. Apr. 14, 1680; d. Aug. 16, 1680.
- IX. William<sup>4</sup>, b. Mar. 24, 1681; d. June 21, 1682.
- X. Mercy<sup>4</sup>, b. Nov. 5, 1686; named in father's will; being a minor of twelve years when her father died, her uncle Philemon<sup>3</sup> Dane was named<sup>1</sup> her guardian in Feb., 1698; d. Oct. 20, 1765, ae. 79; m. at Ipswich (int. Sept. 4) 1714, Israel<sup>3</sup> How (Abraham<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>).<sup>8</sup>

PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> WARNER (*Daniel<sup>3</sup>, Daniel<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>2</sup> in Ipswich on September 1, 1675, as the son of DANIEL, Jr. and died at Gloucester on May 6, 1741, in his sixty-sixth year having married<sup>2</sup> at Ipswich on April 27, 1697, ABIGAIL<sup>3</sup> TUTTLE (see Tuttle, p. 605) who survived him. As has been stated, PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> inherited from his father one-half of a lot in Ipswich on Market Street which had been granted originally<sup>26</sup> to Robert Crane, had been owned in 1666 by DANIEL<sup>2</sup> WARNER who had willed "the most part of the lot" to DANIEL<sup>3</sup> who, in turn, passed on a half of it to PHILEMON<sup>4</sup>. We may safely infer that DANIEL<sup>3</sup> did blacksmithing for he built a shop on or adjoining the portion of the lot which came to PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> who definitely carried on a smithing business in both<sup>25,26</sup> Ipswich and later in Gloucester. Nine of the children of PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> were born in Ipswich but on September 8, 1710, he sold his half acre of land with his dwelling, blacksmith shop and barn to Jonathan Prince and removed permanently to Gloucester where he bought the Jonathan Springer estate and continued his blacksmithing.<sup>25</sup> The Springer home which PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> acquired stood<sup>25</sup> at the corner of Front and Pleasant Streets and was still there at least as late<sup>25</sup> as 1860. In this town two more children were born into this family but four of their eleven children died young — perhaps from an epidemic.

ABIGAIL who survived PHILEMON is said to have died on September 30, 1756. He also built, or more likely bought of Springer<sup>42</sup> a wharf and warehouse for in 1711 Nathaniel<sup>2</sup> Ellery (WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>) and certain others acquired a "grant of 'flatty land' on the westerly side of PHILEMON WARNER's wharf, to build a wharf on for himself."<sup>42</sup>

In 1736 Gloucester had a grant from the General Court of land in what is now Maine and among the original proprietors there were PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> WARNER, PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> and Lt. William Haskell as well as fifty-odd other Gloucester men but no evidence is seen of the WARNERS settling there. The town was named New Gloucester.

The children of PHILEMON<sup>4</sup> and ABIGAIL (TUTTLE) WARNER, the first nine born at Ipswich and the two youngest at Gloucester, were<sup>1,2,3,4</sup>

- I. PHILEMON<sup>5</sup>, see following.
- II. Daniel<sup>5</sup>, b.<sup>2</sup> May 20, 1699; m. Dec. 15, 1720, Sarah<sup>3</sup> Hill (Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, Valentine<sup>1</sup>). He was engaged in shipping and had a shipyard on Oyster River, Portsmouth, N. H.<sup>9,27</sup>

\*When his father DANIEL<sup>3</sup> died John<sup>4</sup> was a minor and on January 31, 1698, his uncle John<sup>3</sup> Dane was commissioned as his guardian.<sup>1</sup>

- III. \*William<sup>5</sup>, b.<sup>2</sup> Mar. 17, 1700-1; Capt., d. at sea, on his return<sup>4</sup> from Cape Breton, Nov. 5, 1745, ae. 45; m. 1st in Boston May 16, 1723, Mary Mountford (John, Edmund);<sup>17</sup> m. 2nd in Boston Sept. 1, 1743, Deborah Mason (also called Hall).
- IV. Abigail<sup>5</sup>, b.<sup>2</sup> Oct. 4, 1702; no further record.
- V. Sarah<sup>5</sup>, b. Mar. 8, 1704; m. at Gloucester<sup>4</sup> Jan. 4, 1721-2, Dependence<sup>2</sup> Ellery (WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>).
- VI. Nathaniel<sup>5</sup>, b.<sup>2</sup> Nov. 19, 1705; evidently d. yng.
- VII. Nathaniel<sup>5</sup>, b.<sup>2</sup> Apr. 15, 1707; d. in the Hamlet of Radcliff,<sup>4</sup> Eng. on Oct. 2, 1746; m. as of Gloucester<sup>4</sup> (int. Oct. 18) Nov. 23, 1732, at Boston Mrs. Hannah Mountforth\*\* of Boston.
- VIII. Susanna<sup>5</sup>, b.<sup>2</sup> Mar. 13, 1708; d.<sup>10</sup> after 1752; m. 1st at Gloucester in 1732 Daniel<sup>3</sup> Parsons (John<sup>2</sup>, Jeffrey<sup>1</sup>); m. 2nd at Gloucester Sept. 12, 1739, as his second wife William<sup>4</sup> Haskell (William<sup>3</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>).<sup>10</sup> After the death of William<sup>4</sup> in 1752 Susanna removed from the Second Parish to the Harbor and kept a boarding house for several years.<sup>10</sup>
- IX. Jonathan<sup>5</sup>, b. Mar. 1 or Oct. 1, 1710; no further record.
- X. Mary<sup>5</sup>, b.<sup>4</sup> Apr. 8, 1712; no further record.
- XI. Mary or Mercy<sup>5</sup>, b.<sup>4</sup> Feb. 24, bap.<sup>4</sup> 28, 1713-4; no further record seen.

PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> WARNER (*Philemon<sup>4</sup>, Daniel<sup>3</sup>, Daniel<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*) was born<sup>2</sup> at Ipswich on January 7, 1697-8, died at Gloucester<sup>4</sup> April 4 or 14, 1778, aged eighty-one years (Vital Records) having married there<sup>4</sup> on November 3, 1726, MARY<sup>4</sup> PRINCE (see Prince, p. 516) who survived him. This family throughout every generation which is recorded here, was outstanding for its devoutly religious attitude† but PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> who became a deacon and later an Elder<sup>25</sup> really outdid the earlier generations.

In or after 1730 PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> called "jr." and EZEKIEL<sup>3</sup> WOODWARD also called "jr." are recorded as having wharf privileges on the beach or neck.<sup>42</sup> In 1732 eight men formed a company<sup>29</sup> for the erection of a windmill, bought from JOHN<sup>3</sup> PRINCE a piece of land in Gloucester eighty-five feet square on which to place it and the spot was for many years called Windmill Hill. Members of this group included PHILEMON WARNER blacksmith (either PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> or his father of the same name), Samuel Stevens merchant and Samuel jr. mariner, Nathaniel Ellery, merchant and JOHN<sup>3</sup> PRINCE.

In 1751-2 PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> was on a committee of nine to consider inviting the Rev. Samuel Chandler to become a minister to them to assist the Rev. John White pastor of the First Church in Gloucester whose health was failing. When the candidate met with the committee his journal records that "they gave me a copy of the votes and informed me they voted by walking; those that were for me were desired to walk east, wh were 59 or 60; those opposed, to walk west, which were 2; and 7 or 8 sat still; . . ." <sup>29</sup>

No record is seen of the date when PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> was made a deacon though it was prior to 1751 for in that year he was many times so referred to,<sup>29</sup> but in 1756 Dea. John Parsons and Dea. PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> WARNER were elected ruling elders and at the

\*William<sup>6</sup> Warner was a distiller<sup>17</sup> of Boston and constable there in 1728. In 1733 he became a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, and was its second sergeant in 1738, and became captain of the ninth company in the first Massachusetts Regiment at Louisburg<sup>17</sup> which company he himself had raised.

\*\*In the family<sup>41</sup> of John<sup>2</sup> Mountfort (Benjamin<sup>1</sup>) of Boston (of which Mary<sup>3</sup> Mountfort wife of William<sup>3</sup> Warner above was a member) there was also a daughter Hannah born January 21, 1711, who may likely have become the wife of Nathaniel<sup>6</sup> Warner.<sup>41</sup>

†The Rev. Moses Parsons (1716-1775) who taught school for a while in Gloucester about 1741 recorded<sup>29</sup> in his notebook of that year, of Daniel Warner (one of the many Daniels but evidently then a school boy): "Daniel Warner recites Dr. Watts' Divine Songs; Dr. Watts' Hymns, 1st Book, 41 Hymns; Catechism with proofs." And he listed "Dr. Watts' Divine Songs", "Gouges' Guide to Youth" and "Colman's Sermon on Mr. Holden" as books which had been presented to this Daniel Warner and certain other children<sup>29</sup> — as reward for their memorizing no doubt. It seems likely that this youth would have been Daniel<sup>6</sup> born in 1731, son of Elder PHILEMON<sup>5</sup>.

same time<sup>29</sup> EZEKIEL<sup>5</sup> WOODWARD was chosen a deacon. The Rev. Samuel Chandler was very closely associated with our PHILEMON<sup>5</sup>, deacon and elder, as the published journal of the minister proves. This journal describes a dinner to which he and others were invited in March, 1751, at which they "had first boild beef and pork, bacon, then roast pork and turkie; then rise pudding and apple pie" showing at that time a real surfeit of food.

Two unique documents are of record relative to Elder PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> WARNER, namely (1) a precious ancestral history which came into his hands in 1741 and (2) his personal report of a vision which he had during a severe illness in 1748.

As for the ancestral document, it was written\* in 1682 by JOHN<sup>2</sup> DANE maternal great grandfather of Elder PHILEMON<sup>5</sup>. It bore<sup>30</sup> on its inside cover in a large hand: "PHILEMON WARNER, JUN<sup>r</sup>, his Book given him by his grandmother WARNER, Jan<sup>ry</sup> 20th, 1741:2 . . . p<sup>r</sup> PHILE. WARNER 1770." This book was about three and a half by six inches in size, contained a hundred and thirty-two leaves and was bound in parchment with a lappet. It undoubtedly remained in the hands of PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> until he died in 1778 and presumably passed to some child of his, but by 1850-4 J. J. Babson, historian of Gloucester, presented it to the New England Historic Genealogical Society<sup>30</sup> who published it in their Register in April, 1854.

The manuscript description by Elder PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> WARNER of a vision which he had in 1748 remained for "over an hundred years" in the possession of the writer's eldest son PHILEMON<sup>6</sup> and of that man's eldest daughter MARY (WARNER) PARKER (1753-1811). It stresses the exceedingly religious mental attitude of the writer who evidently experienced his "vision" during his excessive weakness and delirium.

Elder PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> lived to the age of about eighty-one, dying on April 4, 1778, having spent fifty-two years with his wife MARY who bore him twelve children of whom seven outlived their father and she also survived him six years, dying at Gloucester<sup>4</sup> on December 11, 1784, at the age of seventy-seven. The epitaph of Elder PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> WARNER, at Gloucester, reads:

"Here rests, in hope of a glorious resurrection, the remains of Elder PHILEMON WARNER who for many years discharged with fidelity to the public, and reputation to himself several important offices both in Church and State. Industry and fidelity in his calling, honesty and integrity in his dealings, sincerity in his profession and humility in his deportment were the ornaments of his life; and the doctrines of the Gospel which he firmly believed and on which alone his hopes were founded were his support in death.

"He was born 7th of January, 1698, and died 14th April, 1778, aged 80 years.

"In faith he died, in dust he lies  
But faith foresees that dust shall rise  
When Christ with his Almighty word  
Calls his dead saints to meet the Lord."

The children of PHILEMON<sup>5</sup> and MARY (PRINCE) WARNER all born at Gloucester were<sup>4</sup>

- I. PHILEMON<sup>6</sup>, see following.
- II. John<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 24, bap. 31, 1729; d. at Gloucester<sup>4</sup> Oct. 9, 1739 ae. 10.
- III. Daniel<sup>6</sup>, b. Sept. 14, 1731; d. at Gloucester May 8, 1810, called<sup>4</sup> 78 and 79; m. there Sept. 19, 1752, Abigail Sargent (Nathaniel, William) who survived him. He served as a captain<sup>35</sup> in the Revolution and later became a colonel of militia.

\*See Dane, p. 242 and New England Register VIII, 147 et seq.

- iv. William<sup>6</sup>, b. July 23, 1733; d. Apr. 10, 1786; removed from Gloucester to the eastward.  
 v. Isaac<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 3, 1735; d. at Gloucester<sup>4</sup> Sept. 5, 1737, ae. abt. 2.  
 vi. Mary<sup>6</sup>, b. June 27, 1737; d.<sup>9</sup> Aug. 29, 1813, ae. 76 at Danvers; m.<sup>4</sup> at Gloucester Mar. 30, 1758, Hon. Samuel Holton of Danvers.  
 vii. John<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 19, 1739-40; d. at Gloucester Feb. 13, 1764, of smallpox.<sup>4</sup>  
 viii. Abigail<sup>6</sup>, b. Apr. 19, bap. 25, 1742; d. at Gloucester Jan. 1829; m.<sup>4</sup> at Gloucester on Oct. 1, 1771, as his second wife Capt. James Collins.  
 ix. \*Nathaniel<sup>6</sup>, b. Mar. 7, 1744; d.<sup>4</sup> unm. at Gloucester Feb. 8, 1812, ae. 68. A Captain in the Revolution "in command of a Gloucester company at the battle of Bunker Hill, and continued in service till the retreat from Long Island the next year; when not advancing in rank by promotion as he expected, he left the army, and returned to Gloucester. He was a very brave officer;<sup>43</sup> and might have attained distinction, if he had not allowed his anger to overcome his patriotism."<sup>25</sup>  
 x. Susanna<sup>6</sup>, b. Mar. 20, 1746; d. in Boston<sup>9</sup> in June, 1832; m.<sup>4</sup> at Gloucester, Oct. 22, 1789, as his second wife Hon. Cotton Tufts of Weymouth, son of Simon and Abigail (Smith). The D.A.R. of Weymouth named their chapter for Susanna.<sup>31</sup>  
 xi. Son<sup>6</sup>, b. & d. June 16, 1748.  
 xii. Elias Elwell<sup>6</sup>, b. Mar. 22, bap. 25, 1749-50; as "merchant of Boston, son of Elder PHILEMON", he d. May 27, 1781, ae. 31 years; m.<sup>23</sup> at Boston on Feb. 17, 1777 to Hannah Gould.

PHILEMON<sup>6</sup> WARNER (*Philemon<sup>5</sup>, Philemon<sup>4</sup>, Daniel<sup>3</sup>, Daniel<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>*) was born at Gloucester<sup>4</sup> on October 23, 1727, died there<sup>4</sup> as PHILEMON, Jr. on<sup>4</sup> June 4, 1766, in his thirty-ninth year having married in that town<sup>4</sup> on December 27, 1748, ELIZABETH<sup>4</sup> WOODWARD (see Woodward, p. 675). In spite of the fact that he had had ten children PHILEMON<sup>6</sup> predeceased his father by twelve years and nothing really significant of his life has been found in print. The history of the town records an epidemic of smallpox in 1764 with almost all of the residents of the harbor moving out because of it.<sup>35</sup>

At least five of his children survived PHILEMON<sup>6</sup> as did also his wife ELIZABETH who married secondly<sup>32</sup> at Gloucester on (int.) February 7, 1772, as his second wife, \*\*Nathaniel<sup>4</sup> Harraden<sup>33</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, EDWARD<sup>1</sup>) of that place.

One unusual item dating back to the death of PHILEMON<sup>6</sup> is the fact that mourning rings<sup>34</sup>† were given in his memory. One of these given to his daughter MARY

\*Capt. Nathaniel<sup>6</sup> Warner exerted himself to personally enlist men for one of the two Gloucester companies which fought at Bunker Hill, filling his list in four days. He became head of this company. On firing his musket during the battle, "the barrel split in his hands, but did him no injury. He soon procured another, and, having loaded it, raised it up to fire; when it was struck by a ball, which split the stock, and glanced off the barrel without wounding him. He soon found another gun, and received another shot from the enemy. A ball struck his breeches-pocket, split the handle of his penknife, glanced off; and again he received no injury."

A tale is told which involved Lt. John Burnham and Nymphas Stacy, descendant of our SIMON<sup>1</sup>, both members of this company. As the company retreated toward Ploughed Hill, Stacy was struck in the leg by a spent ball which paralyzed him for the moment and he fell, but was caught up by Burnham who carried him some distance on his shoulders. Burnham, becoming fatigued, stopped to rest and asked Stacy how he felt. "The latter having recovered the use of his leg, replied that he was not hurt, and that, as Burnham himself must be a good deal fatigued by the heavy burden he had carried, he [Burnham] might mount on his back, and have a 'lift along'."<sup>43</sup>

\*\*The amazing scope of variants found in the early records is suggested by the record<sup>33</sup> of the first marriage of this Nathaniel Harraden which calls him Hazzardine.

†In times past, especially in the late seventeenth and the eighteenth centuries, memorial or funeral rings were given,<sup>34</sup> being sometimes provided for by the will of the deceased, and at other times by the plan of immediate heirs. Samuel Pepys willed one hundred twenty-three such rings, and Sewall recorded in his diary, between 1687 and 1725, the receipt of no less than fifty-seven such. At one funeral in Boston in 1738, more than two hundred rings were given away. In design they were sometimes plain; in later days sometimes set with a precious stone, but in earlier days often decorated with a death's head or a skeleton lying within it, or with a motto or a framed lock of the hair of the deceased, whose initials and death date were usually engraved within. Rings of different values were given to relatives of different degrees of consanguinity or to friends of different stations in life. On occasion, orders were sent by bereaved ones, to friends residing at a distance, to purchase rings in memory of the dead and to send the bills to the heirs or the principals of the mourning family.<sup>34</sup>

(WARNER) PARKER is in the possession of her great, great, grandson Gen. Charles G. Dawes. It was originally enameled and had a central setting of a purple stone (probably an amethyst) with a small diamond, set in silver, at each side. The inscription on the inside reads: "P. WARNER, obit. June 4, 1766, A.E. 39."

There is still extant a letter written by ELIZABETH (WOODWARD) WARNER Harraden to her daughter MARY (WARNER) PARKER after the migration of the Parker family to the west in the fall of 1788 (see Woodward, p. 675). It brings to mind vividly the distressing rending of family ties when travel was so difficult that a "visit back home" was quite impossible, and also shows that the strong religious tendency in the Warner family was not weakened as the years went by (see also Parker, pp. 476-9).

The children of PHILEMON<sup>6</sup> and ELIZABETH (WOODWARD) WARNER all born in Gloucester were<sup>1,4</sup>

- I. Philemon<sup>7</sup>, b. Sept. 10, 1749; said<sup>9</sup> to have d. at Syracuse, Meigs Co. O. and to have m. May 25, 1770, Mehitable Pearson.
- II. Elizabeth<sup>7</sup>, b. Apr. 17, 1751; an Elizabeth dau. of the above is said to have d. at Newburyport<sup>32</sup> Sept. 17, 1770, ae. 12 yr. 6 mo. which would suggest death of this girl and also of a younger Elizabeth.
- III. MARY<sup>7</sup>, b. Feb. 5, 1753; d. in Meigs Co. O.<sup>11</sup> Feb. 17, 1811; m. at<sup>11</sup> Hampton, N. H. Jan. 28, 1772, WILLIAM<sup>6</sup> PARKER (see Parker, p. 473) then of Newburyport. They went west in 1788.
- IV. Ezekiel<sup>7</sup>, b. Feb. 11, 1755; d.<sup>4</sup> at Gloucester Oct. 18, 1758.
- V. Abigail<sup>7</sup>, b.<sup>4</sup> Apr. 8, 1757 (V. R.); no further record.
- VI. Susanna<sup>7</sup>, b. Apr. 17, 1759; said<sup>11</sup> to have d. June 22, 1761, but by V. R. that was the death date of her sister Sarah<sup>7</sup>.
- VII. Sarah<sup>7</sup>, b. Jan. 28, 1761; d.<sup>4</sup> June 22, 1761 (V. R.).
- VIII. \*Ezekiel<sup>7</sup>, b. May 20, 1762; "was a prisoner in the Revolutionary War,<sup>36</sup> wrote and printed an account of his escape, &c. He went to Western Virginia in 1792."<sup>1</sup> He d. after July, 1797, when a letter records his presence at the home in Pittsburg of his nephew Philemon<sup>8</sup> (Philemon<sup>7</sup>, PHILEMON<sup>6</sup>). He was teaching school<sup>11</sup> in 1797-8 in Donegal Tp., Washington Co. Pa.
- IX. John<sup>7</sup>, b. Apr. 1, 1764; prob. he who went<sup>12</sup> into service in 1775 as a fifer at the age of thirteen in the Company of his uncle Capt. Nathaniel<sup>6</sup> Warner.
- X. William<sup>7</sup>, b. Mar. 8, 1766; removed<sup>11</sup> to Pennsylvania and to Ohio with the family of his sister MARY. He was non compos mentis (simple — not violent) as the result of a fall and spinal injury (see Parker, pp. 478-9).<sup>11</sup> He d. long after 1802 in Meigs Co. O.

\*Diligent effort<sup>37</sup> has been made to find a copy of the account of his escape, written by Ezekiel<sup>7</sup> Warner, but without success. He had been a member of the crew of the privateer "America" under Capt. John Somes of Gloucester. Ezekiel<sup>7</sup> was then five feet four inches in height, and nineteen years old. On June 8, 1780, Capt. Somes filed a suit of some sort in Suffolk County containing the list of names of the seventy-eight members of the crew of the privateer "America" with their ages, height and complexion but no facts as to battles or action.<sup>37</sup>

REFERENCES

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Posterity of WILLIAM WARNER, Edward Warner, c. 1866, pp. 1-9; New England Register, XX, 64-8.</li> <li>2. Vital Records of Ipswich, I, 382-6; II, 444-6, 582, 705-6.</li> <li>3. Hammatt Papers, pp. 394-400, 402-3.</li> <li>4. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 745-6, 793; II, 561-2, 596; III, 316-7.</li> <li>5. History of Hadley, S. Judd with Family Genealogies by L. M. Boltwood, 1863, p. 590.</li> <li>6. Savage, IV, 418-22; History of Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, II, 550.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>7. Boynton Family, J. F. and C. H. Boynton, 1897, p. 44; Essex Antiquarian, X, 97.</li> <li>8. Howe Genealogies, D. W. &amp; G. B. Howe, 1929, II, 165; Early Settlers of Rowley, G. B. Blodgette and A. E. Jewett, 1933, pp. 26, 168-9; Jewetts of America, F. C. Jewett, 1908, I, 10.</li> <li>9. Data furnished by Mr. James A. Warner of Simsbury, Conn.</li> <li>10. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXII, 149; History of Gloucester, J. J. Babson, 1860, p. 123; Vital Records of Gloucester, II, 413.</li> </ol> |
|--|--|

11. Family Records.
12. Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors, XVI, 587.
13. History of Ipswich, T. F. Waters, 1905, pp. 323-4, 338-9, 493.
14. Simon Stone Genealogy, J. Gardner Bartlett, 1926, pp. 50-1.
15. . . . Parker . . . Ruggles . . . Ancestors and Descendants, J. W. Linzee, 1913, pp. 143, 303-10, 430-8.
16. Some Ancestral Lines . . . Tingley . . . Meyers, R. M. Tingley, 1935, p. 205.
17. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, O. A. Roberts, 1895, I, 312, 461.
18. Ancient Records of the Town of Ipswich, 1899, pp. 20, 25, 27, 31, 38, 43-4, 57, 65, 71, 92, 115, 120, 122, 126.
19. Essex (Eng.) Parish Registers, W. P. H. Phillimore, 1901, I, 9.
20. Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony, I, 374.
21. New England Register, IV, 12.
22. Records and Files of the Essex Quarterly Court, I, 139, 197, 276, 362; II, 66, 111, 222; III, 228, 272, 358-60, 398-9; IV, 14, 16, 100, 209, 278, 337; V, 128, 358; VI, 196, 415, 441; VIII, 1, 165-6, 311.
23. Ibid., II, 41-2; III, 160-1; VIII, 377.
24. New England Register, XV, 50; Hammatt Papers, pp. 394-400.
25. Babson's Gloucester, pp. 255, 258-9.
26. Waters' Ipswich, pp. 341-2.
27. Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, C. T. Libby, 1928-39, p. 329.
28. Boston Record Commissioners Report, XXX, 404.
29. Notes and Additions to Babson's History of Gloucester, 1876, I, 56; 1891, II, 7-8, 11-4, 23, 25, 35, 54, 115; Babson's Gloucester, pp. 326-8.
30. New England Register, VIII, 147, 149-56.
31. Pioneer Mothers of America, H. C. and M. W. Green, III, 521.
32. Vital Records of Newburyport, II, 495, 824.
33. Genealogical Register, Rev. Abner Morse, 1864, IV, 81; Vital Records of Ipswich, II, 231; of Gloucester, II, 261; Babson's Notes and Additions, I, 32-3.
34. Americana; Customs and Fashions of Old New England, Alice M. Earle, 1893, pp. 376-9; Rings, C. F. Kuntz, 1917, pp. 40-8; Jewelry, H. C. Smith, 1908, pp. 294, 364-70.
35. Babson's Notes and Additions, II, 60, 143-4, 147-8.
36. Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors in the Revolution, XVI, 585.
37. Massachusetts Naval Archives, XL, 51-8; Massachusetts Privateers of the Revolution, Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, LXXII, 72; the Boston Gazette of Sept. 4, 1780, shows that John Somes of the "America" filed a libel in Boston against the ship "Everetta," the brigantine "Nancy" and the snow "Beaver."
38. Essex Probates (pub.), III, 358-60.
39. Records of Massachusetts Bay, V, 334-6.
40. Essex Antiquarian, II, 89.
41. Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1881, II, 557; Savage, III, 249-50.
42. Babson's Gloucester, pp. 85, 255, 303, 308; History of Essex County, D. H. Hurd, 1888, II, 1306-11.
43. Babson's Gloucester, p. 390.





## WHALE

**P**HILEMON<sup>1</sup> WHALE,\* weaver, came to Sudbury soon after its settlement, began<sup>1</sup> buying land<sup>2</sup> in or before 1643 and was generally accounted as a resident soon after, or perhaps even during, 1639. The earliest settled portion of "Sudbury Plantation" was on the east side of Sudbury River and now bears the name of Wayland Center (see map, p. 448). His first home was undoubtedly near the head of the Mill Pond,\*\* and a bridge or culvert over the outlet then called "Pond Brook" took the name<sup>1</sup> of "Whale's Bridge" and bore it into the twentieth century, and since PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> had no son, it was the only way in which his name continued. In his later years he built a home near Rice's Spring and eventually sold it<sup>1</sup> with nine acres of land to Edmund<sup>1</sup> Rice. He owned various tracts of land in and near Sudbury including lot number eighteen in the two-mile grant which was surveyed about 1655 and added to his possessions one hundred thirty acres in the vicinity of what is now Maynard.<sup>1</sup>

PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> became a freeman<sup>3</sup> on May 10, 1648, which shows that he had earlier become a church member. No evidence is found of his participation in public affairs or of holding office, though in 1646 he helped to take the inventory of the estate of his neighbor Thomas<sup>1</sup> Axtell.<sup>3</sup> His environment is portrayed, however, in a summary of contemporary laws and actions, as for instance:

The Colonial Court at an early date<sup>1</sup> ordered that "the town's men in every town shall order that ev'y house, or some two or more houses ioyne [join] together for the breeding of salt peetr i' some out house used for poultry or the like." Ensign Thomas<sup>1</sup> Cakebread (see Addendum, p. 663) was assigned to look after this matter and the saltpeter thus obtained was used for the manufacture of gun powder. In 1645, however, Sudbury was "freed from y<sup>e</sup> taking further care about salt peeter houses . . . in answer to their petition."<sup>1</sup>

When the town was young a ferry had been established to carry workmen to the meadows on the west side of the Sudbury river and in 1643 Thomas<sup>2</sup> Noyes (son of Peter<sup>1</sup>, see Plympton-Bent, p. 496) kept it, being allowed two pence for carrying over a single passenger and a penny a head for a greater number.<sup>19</sup> Presently a cart-bridge was planned which was to be "three feet above high-water

\*What may very likely prove to be the parentage of PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> is disclosed in certain English wills,<sup>20</sup> viz. that of John Whale of the Parish of Saint Mary the Virgin, Colchester, dated March 21, 1608, and proved May 4, 1609, by the testator's brother Philemon Whale of Chickney, Essex as well as the will of the latter man himself dated April 4, 1618, and proved May 19, 1620. The will of John Whale, first mentioned, named among other beneficiaries his brother Philemon and that man's children Jonas, Henry, Philemon a minor who was to have £66-13-4 at the age of twenty-one or day of marriage, who was very probably the emigrant PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> of Sudbury. There were also two daughters in the family of Philemon sr., Mary and Elizabeth, both minors.<sup>20</sup>

\*\*On May 8, 1643, John<sup>1</sup> Grout who had taken over operation of the mill (succeeding Thomas<sup>1</sup> Cakebread who had died see Addendum, p. 663) acquired permission<sup>21</sup> from the town to flood a swamp "lying by the now dwelling house of PHILEMON WHALE, to pen [impound] the water for the use of the mill." That suggests a damp and unwholesome habitation for PHILEMON<sup>1</sup>!

mark" and twelve feet wide. A later plan specified that it should be one foot above high water mark, fourteen feet wide and five rods long. The posts must be sixteen inches square, the braces eight inches square, "the plank must be two inches thick sawn," with five braces for the plank and a rail at each side of the bridge, braced at every post. Timothy Hawkins contracted to fell the timber, saw it and build the frame ready for placing or raising for which he received £13 in corn and cattle.<sup>1</sup> This is said to have been the first regularly framed cart-bridge in the county and was built<sup>1,19</sup> in or about 1643. Though ordinarily the stream was slow and sluggish, in spring and fall "the river in a flood is half a mile over"<sup>1</sup> and it was necessary to build a raised road or causeway (frequently spelled Casey or Carsey) half a mile long at the west end of the bridge. This was begun in 1643 but not completed for some time, since in 1645 the Colony ordered that £20 be allowed Sudbury toward the cost of the bridge "and [cause]way at y<sup>e</sup> end of it, to be paid y<sup>m</sup> [them] when they shall have made y<sup>e</sup> way passable for loaden horses, so it be done w<sup>th</sup>in a twelve month."<sup>1</sup> As time went on this causeway had to be raised repeatedly to keep it above the floods. The colony further favored Sudbury and also Concord and Lancaster by a rebate of taxes because their proximity to water courses caused them an expenditure for bridges "for the publicque use of the cuntrye" beyond that of towns differently situated.

Succeeding bridges have from time to time replaced this first one and the location is rich in memories, for at its western end began the Old Lancaster Road (see map, p. 448) which was then indeed the "Gateway to the West"; over this crossing the Indians were forced the day King Philip attacked the town (see Rutter, p. 536); at the "Bridge foot" were buried the bodies of the eleven Concord men who fell that day; later the stage coaches used this bridge and over it Gen. Washington passed when he went through the town.<sup>1</sup>

An unusual experience shared by PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> WHALE occurred in 1648 when,

"About the midst of this summer there arose a fly out of the ground, about the bigness of the top of a man's little finger, of brown color. They filled the wood from Connecticut to Sudbury with a great noise, and eat up the young sprouts of the trees but meddled not with the corn. If the Lord had not stopped them they had [would have] spoiled all our orchards, for they did some few."<sup>19</sup>

And again,

"In y<sup>e</sup> year 1667, from y<sup>e</sup> middle of November until y<sup>e</sup> middle of March was the tereblest winter for continuance of frost and snow and extremity of cold that was ever remembered by any since it was planted with English; and was attended with terebell coughs and coulds and fever which passed many out of time into eternity, and also through want and scarcity of fother [fodder] multitudes of sheep and cattle and other creatures died . . ."<sup>1</sup>

In the family affairs of PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> WHALE, the usual order or habit was reversed for he had but one known child and three wives. His first wife ELIZABETH (—) our ancestress, whom he married in England, died at Sudbury<sup>6</sup> June 20, 1647, and he married secondly there<sup>6</sup> on November 7, 1649, Sarah (—) Cakebread,\* widow<sup>12,21</sup> of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Cakebread (see Addendum, p. 663), who in 1645 had received

\*In a book at Sudbury marked "1693-1771" there is a page (131) utterly misplaced for it is dated 1645 and covers a grant by the town to Sarah, widow of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Cakebread, of land earlier granted to him. This proves that she survived Thomas<sup>1</sup> and was available to marry elderly PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> as above.<sup>21</sup>

a grant of land<sup>21</sup> in the latter man's behalf. *Sarah* died at Sudbury<sup>6</sup> on December 28, 1656, and PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> married there<sup>6</sup> on November 9, 1657, as his third wife ELIZABETH (—) UPSON Griffin (see Upson, p. 639). The oddest phase of the whole situation is that while PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> was ancestral to us through his first wife, his third wife was ancestral to us through her first husband and her daughter HANNAH UPSON, while *tradition* says that his second wife was also ancestral to us through her first husband, but of course that remains to be *proved* (see Addendum, p. 663). PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> WHALE signed his will<sup>9,21</sup> with his mark (similar to three-quarters of a large printed W) on January 19, 1675-6, exactly one month after the Great Swamp Fight (see Upham, p. 621). He died at Sudbury<sup>6</sup> on February 22 or 24 and the inventory of his estate was taken on March 28, 1676, showing a valuation of over £87. The will gave his entire estate to "beloved wife ELIZABETH . . . forever," named her his executrix, specifying that after her death the house and lands should go "unto y<sup>e</sup> foure sonnes of my loveing daughter ELIZABETH MOORES, vizt. William, Jacob, Joseph and BENJAMIN equally to be divided amongst them."<sup>9,21</sup>

PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> must have been quite aged when he died since his daughter ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> married by or before 1639. His third wife and widow ELIZABETH spent eighteen years at his side and survived him thirteen more years, until November 8, 1688.

Soon after his death Sudbury was attacked by King Philip and his Indians on April 21. Long before this the settlers had many of them built homes on the west side of the river and on both sides, certain homes had been fortified to serve as garrison houses to which the people could hasten for protection. Philip and his forces estimated at five hundred to a thousand or more had silently placed themselves during the night, and at daybreak announced their presence by setting fire to several houses. That was the beginning of a terrible day, with fierce attacks on every garrison house, and looting and burning of the homes so hastily deserted at daybreak. A company of twelve young men hastened from Concord to assist the beleaguered town, but were ambushed and eleven were slain before they reached the town. Another company hurried from Watertown (see map, p. 618) led by seventy-five year old Capt. Mason. They attacked the Indians who were plundering, burning and fighting on the east side of the river, and with the help of the residents there, drove them westward across the bridge after which the flooded river helped to confine the battle to the west side where Capt. Wadsworth and his men were presently ambushed (see Wright, p. 682). During this terrible day widow ELIZABETH whose concern for her children and grandchildren must have been an agony to bear, lost<sup>1</sup> property to the value of £24 by fire or by plunder.

The only known child of PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> and his first wife ELIZABETH (—) WHALE was<sup>4,5,9</sup>

1. ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup>, b. in England probably about 1620; d. at Sudbury<sup>6</sup> December 14, 1690; married perhaps in England about 1637-8 JOHN<sup>1</sup> MOORE (see Moore, p. 446).

## Addendum to WHALE

In order to clarify the identity of the second wife of PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> WHALE as well as to point to the probable identity of the first wife of JAMES<sup>1</sup> CUTLER and two other early wives it becomes necessary to discuss three other families, viz. those of *Thomas<sup>1</sup> Cakebread*, Ens. John<sup>1</sup> Grout and Nicholas<sup>1</sup> Busby.

A labored attempt by various writers to justify the acquirement by Ens. John<sup>1</sup> Grout of the properties earlier owned by *Thomas<sup>1</sup> Cakebread* in Watertown and also in Sudbury, accounts for a mass of oft-repeated errors. They were trying to justify the acquisition of these lands through the widow left by *Cakebread*, while in truth Ens. John<sup>1</sup> unquestionably made the claim in behalf of his eldest son John<sup>2</sup> through that son's mother Mary (*Cakebread*) Grout, a daughter of *Thomas<sup>1</sup>*.

To recapitulate chronologically, *Thomas<sup>1</sup> Cakebread* settled in Watertown with wife *Sarah* about 1630-3 where he owned at least eight pieces of land. By late 1638 he had removed to Sudbury, where he contracted on January 6, 1638-9 to build a mill fit to grind the town corn by September 29 following. For this he was granted forty acres on the Mill Brook and thirty acres for himself. He built the mill and was to have operated it but died intestate January 4, 1642-3. His widow *Sarah* in 1645 acquired forty acres of land which had earlier been granted to him,<sup>21</sup> so she was still living and unmarried in 1645 and eligible to have married<sup>6</sup> secondly on November 7, 1649, our PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> WHALE as his second wife, being reasonably near his age.

Ens. John<sup>1</sup> Grout was of Watertown by 1640-1 where he had a first wife Mary who has hitherto been unidentified and who bore him a son John<sup>2</sup> on August 8, 1641. Ens. John<sup>1</sup> is recorded as being "in possession" at Watertown in 1642 of eight different parcels of land of which seven had been owned about 1630-7 by *Thomas<sup>1</sup> Cakebread*. After the death<sup>6</sup> of *Cakebread* in Sudbury in 1642-3 Ens. John<sup>1</sup> removed to that town, acquired the mill and much if not all of the property formerly owned by *Cakebread* and obligated himself (Grout) in place of *Cakebread*, to furnish mill-service to the town, which was performed subsequently by two generations of the Grout family. Ens. John<sup>1</sup> Grout married secondly<sup>14,15</sup> about March, 1642-3, Sarah<sup>2</sup> Busby (Nicholas<sup>1</sup>)<sup>7</sup> who bore him<sup>15</sup> a daughter Sarah<sup>2</sup> Grout on December 11, 1643, as well as other children later and this wife Sarah (Busby) Grout survived her husband. She and her children were named in the wills of Nicholas<sup>1</sup> Busby and of his wife Bridget in 1657 and 1659 respectively.

The proof of the identity of Mary first wife of Ens. John<sup>1</sup> Grout who claimed the *Cakebread* property in behalf of her only son John<sup>2</sup> Grout is found<sup>15</sup> in a document<sup>5</sup> which has been carelessly quoted, but was dated in March, 1670-1, (see illustr. p. 664) wherein Ens. John<sup>1</sup> Grout brought suit against Isaac Stearns and John Eadie (Eddy) selectmen of Watertown for the detention of a farm in that town which had belonged to his "father-in-law" Ens. *Thomas<sup>1</sup> Cakebread*. Because of its late date and the omission, in the printed reproduction, of the prefix "Ens.", to Grout's name, this document has been assumed<sup>5</sup> to have pertained to John<sup>2</sup> Grout. He, however, married a Rebecca Toll. If the early claim that Mary, first wife of Ens. John<sup>1</sup> Grout and ANNE first wife of JAMES<sup>1</sup> CUTLER were sisters, can be proved, it means that ANNE was another daughter of *Thomas<sup>1</sup>* and *Sarah* (—) *Cakebread*.

To the Constable of Watertown  
or his Deputy:

You are hereby required in his Majesty's Name to  
attach the goods or in want thereof the persons of  
Isaac Stevens and John Tradis both of Watertown  
as defaulters for the town, for their shares and on  
the behalfs of the town, and the proprietors of the  
farme lands formerly granted and lately layd out  
within the bounds of the said town of Watertown  
and take bond of them to the value of Sixty pounds  
with sufficient Surety, or Sureties for their appearance  
at the next County Court holden at Cambridge  
upon the ~~4~~ <sup>10</sup> day of April next, then and there  
to answer the complaint of ~~the~~ John Grout of  
Sudbury, in an action of the Case, for his basing  
of a Luroe formerly granted unto his father in  
Law Thomas Cudworth Sapobino of Watertown and  
now deceased, as may more fully appear out of the  
Town Records, and for due Damages, and so make  
a true return hereof under your hand  
Sated this 22 of March 1670

By the Court Samuel Green

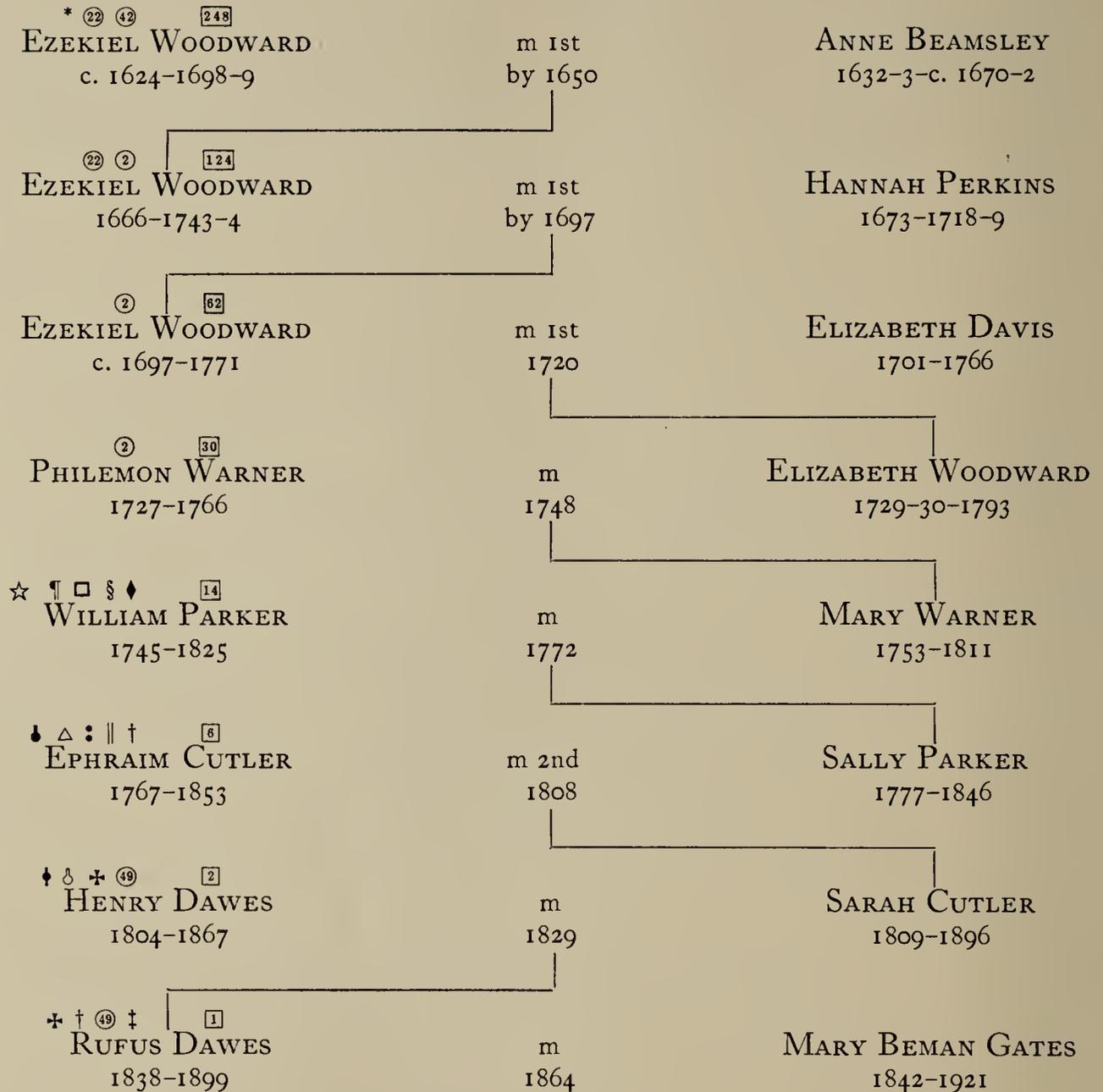
FACSIMILE FROM WATERTOWN RECORDS<sup>15</sup>

#### REFERENCES

1. History of Sudbury, A. S. Hudson, 1889, pp. 27, 41, 53-4, 93-7, 124-5, 180-1, 256-8; Annals of Sudbury, Wayland and Maynard, A. S. Hudson, 1891, pp. 2, 39, 42, 56, 113, 143, 201, 203.
2. Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 489; Savage, IV, 493.
3. New England Register, III, 81, 191.
4. Ibid., LVII, 300; LVIII, 176-7; Middlesex Co., Probates No. 24194.
5. Grout Genealogy, E. E. B. Jones, 1922, pp. 17-22, 82, 86, 89, 100.
6. Vital Records of Sudbury, pp. 282, 317, 320, 329.
7. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 68, 184.
8. Cutler Genealogy, N. S. Cutler, 1889, p. 17; History of Middlesex Co., Mass., S. A. Drake, 1880, II, 461; History of Middlesex Co., D. H. Hurd, 1890, II, 415.
9. Hubbard Thompson Memorial, L. K. Steward, 1914, pp. 302, 321-2.
10. The Fleet of 1630, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 63.
11. Genealogies of Early Settlers of Watertown, H. Bond, 1860, pp. 149, 263.
12. Pope's Pioneers, pp. 87, 488; Worcester Society of

- Antiquity, XXIV, 100.
13. Hudson's Sudbury, pp. 54, 97; Savage I, 328; II, 319; IV, 493; Grout Genealogy, pp. 17, 82; Hudson's Annals of Sudbury, pp. 203, 211; Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, I, 41.
  14. New England Register, VIII, 278-9; Grout Genealogy, pp. 17, 80-2; Suffolk County, (pub.) Deeds III, 383-4, 429-30, 518a-19.
  15. Watertown, Records, I, pt. 1, p. 106; pt. 2, pp. 5, 7, 9, 42, 96, 127; pt. 3, pp. 9, 11.
  16. Cutler Genealogy, p. 17.
  17. Early Records of Dedham, III, 1, 3, 30, 32, 42.
  18. Savage I, 328, IV, 493; Grout Genealogy, pp. 82, 100; Hudson's Sudbury, pp. 53-4; Hudson's Annals of Sudbury, p. 203; Bullard and Allied Families, E. J. Bullard, 1930, p. 95.
  19. Drake's Middlesex County, II, 360-2, 461; Hurd's Middlesex County, II, 415.
  20. New England Register, LXIII, 35-6, 280; New York Record, XLI, 4-5.
  21. Research by Miss Eva L. Moffatt, Allston, Mass.; Sudbury Town Record Book marked "1693-1771" p. 131; Middlesex Probates No. 15362; No. 24194.

# WOODWARD



- \* Boston
- ②② Ipswich
- ④② Wenham
- ② Gloucester
- † Charlestown
- Newburyport
- § Allegheny Co., Pa.

- ◆ Meigs Co., O.
- ☆ Malden
- Edgartown
- △ Killingly, Conn.
- Waterford, O.
- || Ames Twp., Athens Co., O.

- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ♣ Thomaston, Me.
- ♂ Morgan Co., O.
- ‡ Malta, O.
- ④⑨ Mauston, Wis.
- ‡ Marietta, O.

---



---

## WOODWARD

---

**E**ZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD was born about 1624, since in 1672 he deposed<sup>2</sup> that he was about fifty-eight years old. He evidently emigrated to New England by or before\* 1650 since he is said<sup>1</sup> to have acquired land in Boston in 1651, and since in November, 1668, he deposed at Salem that he had known Thomas Wells, then a defendant, for seventeen or eighteen years. His life until about 1660 was spent at Boston where he had married about 1650 as his first wife ANNE<sup>2</sup> BEAMSLEY (see Beamsley, p. 85), the mother of all of his children. On September 14, 1658, the day that WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY made his will he also signed a confirmatory deed to EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> and his wife ANNE of a portion of the BEAMSLEY home lot (see map, p. 31) on which the young couple had lived about seven years, worded as follows:<sup>3</sup>

“Whereas there was a form<sup>r</sup> graunt giuen by me WILLIAM BEAMSLAY, vnto my Daughter ANNE WOODWARD now the wife of EZEKIELL WOODWARD of a Certaine house and Orchard, as it is now fenced in wherein they haue liued, Seaven yeares, or thereabouts, I doe now againe Confirme the aforesaid graunt, vnto the aforesaid EZEKIELL WOODWARD & his wife, & to them & to heires foreuer, & also a little Coming in of his new house into my Garden, w<sup>ch</sup> is a matter of a foote, that, that also may not be altered, but he shall quietly enjoy it, so farr as the house Stands and no further, and further that he shall haue libertie to wharfe vpon the flatts, So broad as betweene my Gate post, and his outmost bounds next to m<sup>r</sup> Hollyoack w<sup>ch</sup> is a matter of twentie fowre foote or thereabouts, Provided that the said EZEKIELL WOODWARD shall not erect any building or frame neare my house, whereby to darken any lights about my house, neither in my dayes nor in my wifes nor shall he let my Brother Coop or Smith haue a shope vpon this Side the Streete, whereon my house stands, w<sup>ch</sup> may disturbe or annoy my house neither in my dayes nor my wifes Boston 14<sup>th</sup> of September 1658.

WILLIAM BEAMSLEY.”

WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY died two weeks later, on September 29 and on October 28, 1658, his will<sup>4</sup> was probated. EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> and ANNE retained the ownership of this property when they removed to Ipswich about 1660 but under date of August 14, 1662, they deeded it to Thaddeus Riddan of Lynn using, in part, the following description:<sup>3</sup>

“. . . a peice or parcell of land, conteining in the front Twenty fowe<sup>r</sup> ffoote and in the reare, twenty & Seuen foote & a halfe. foote more or lesse. & in length one hundred fourty & Eight foote more or lesse together w<sup>th</sup> the dwelling house & workhouse one part thereof Standing the wharfe before it & priuledge of Beech & flatts vnto. the lowe water according to the Towne graunt to lands so lying the sajd land. & house bounded by the lands of Martha Beamsley Widdow (of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> deceased) on the no<sup>r</sup>theast & No<sup>r</sup>thwest . . .”

\*One writer says<sup>30</sup> that EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> “witnessed Pemberton’s deed in 1648.”

EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> signed with his mark, and ANNE by her initial "A", and they acknowledged<sup>3</sup> their marks on August 15, 1662.

EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup>, whose trade was carpentry, is not recorded as having taken any part in public affairs during the ten years he lived in Boston nor as having church membership nor freemanhip but five of their nine children were born during that period so ANNE was a busy woman and EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> must have been active in his carpentry to have cared for them all. One more contact of this family with Boston is of record, namely the settlement of the estate of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY whose will<sup>4</sup> had required that after the death of his wife his property should be appraised, sold and the proceeds equally divided between his living children and Edward<sup>5</sup> Bushnell, son of his second wife.\* As a result, his six children including ANNE and her husband, with Edward<sup>5</sup> Bushnell deeded<sup>3</sup> to Key Alsop on November 16, 1668, for £200 (with the consent of the trustees named in the testator's will) the houses, orchard, yards, garden &c which had been the home of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY and them all. EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> and ANNE WOODWARD acknowledged<sup>3</sup> their signatures on November 17, 1668.

Henceforth our relationships to the WOODWARD family appear only in Essex County. EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup>, as of Ipswich, in March, 1661, paid £60 to Ralph Dix for a tract<sup>7</sup> of two and one-half acres and a house "by the smaller falls" and near the Great Bridge<sup>8,10</sup> which was built in 1672. He lived in this property, which was bounded on the northeast and southeast by Mill River, for about ten years, but in October, 1672, after the death of wife ANNE and about the time of his own removal to Wenham, EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> sold a part of the Ipswich tract<sup>8</sup> to Shoreborne Wilson and sold the house and remainder of the lot in 1679. In 1664 EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> with most of the other colonists had become greatly concerned at the arrival of the Commissioners sent over by the King to enforce his requirements on various points (see Appendix "B", p. 694). The report of the Commissioners to the King was critical, and the safety and continuance of the charter to the colony was threatened as a result. A letter from the King necessitated a careful reply which was prepared in September, 1666. It took the form of a petition from each of the several towns, the one from Ipswich<sup>8</sup> bearing seventy-three names included those of EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD, DANIEL<sup>2</sup> WARNER and JOHN<sup>2</sup> PERKINS. These petitions protested complete loyalty and were followed by a gift to the King of a shipload of masts for the royal navy, which cost the colony £1,600 sterling for the freight.<sup>11</sup> These proceedings put off, for the time being, the threat of loss of the charter.

By 1664 the town of Ipswich had come to consider the desirability of individual ownership of grazing lands instead of their use in common, so it was voted<sup>8</sup> that Plum Island, Hogg Island and Castle Neck (see map, p. 209) should be divided to the residents in proportion to the taxes they paid. Those who did not pay more than six shillings eight pence in personal and property tax were to be entitled to a single share; those whose tax did not exceed sixteen shillings were to have a share and a half; while all whose tax exceeded sixteen shillings, together with their magistrates, minister and schoolmaster were to have double shares.<sup>8</sup> EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> acquired a single share on Plum Island.<sup>7</sup> The town in 1665 voted<sup>8</sup> that oak and walnut trees were not to be cut without permission, but that same year EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> was

\*WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BEAMSLEY married secondly between 1643 and 1646 Martha (Hallor) Bushnell, widow of Edmund<sup>2</sup> Bushnell (FRANCIS<sup>1</sup> see Dawes-Gates II, 163) who had died near Boston on March 28, 1636 (see Addenda and Errata, No. 6).

given permission<sup>7</sup> to cut certain trees. In 1666 EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup>, Nathaniel Piper and Nathaniel Tredwell were given liberty to build a gallery in the church for their families' use, which was undoubtedly the one about which a frivolous\* "poem" was written several years later.

In April, 1667, EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> was taken sharply to task<sup>9</sup> "for his great offense in affronting the constables in the execution of their office." The court ruled that he should be fined or make a public acknowledgment of his fault on the next lecture day, and he is recorded<sup>9</sup> as having chosen the latter.\*\* The conditions concerned the punishment of four young men who had torn up a bridge and were sentenced each to sit for an hour in the stocks and then be returned to jail until a £3 fine was paid for each of them. While they were in the stocks the citizenry including EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> evidently crowded around, and two constables ordered them to "keep further off" and presumably pushed EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup>, for he was quoted as saying to them that "it was the King's ground, that he had a right to stand there as well as they, and if they thrust him again he would sett them further off." Another witness claimed that EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> said to one of the constables "what will you? breed a mutanye<sup>7</sup> and if you had stroake me, I would a laid you over the head!"<sup>9†</sup>

On June 1, 1667, it was "agreed with EZEKIEL WOODUARD and Freegrace Norton to gett and hew the [two hundred feet of] timber for the meeting house roof"<sup>8</sup> and in June, 1668, EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> entered into a contract with the selectmen to shingle the meeting house.<sup>7</sup>

By means of the quarrelsome episode over the so-called "poem" (vide supra) which appears to have been a tempest in a teapot, we are able to deduce that ANNE (BEAMSLEY) WOODWARD was living in late 1670 or very early 1671 but she soon died, though no recorded date is found, for by 1672 EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> removed from Ipswich to Wenham where the rest of his life was spent and he married there,<sup>12,14</sup> secondly, on December 20, 1672, the widow Elizabeth Solart. The removal of EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> to Wenham is verified by the action at a town meeting there on July 18, 1673, when he and six others were appointed<sup>13</sup> a committee to build a home for the minister and to make a rate for defraying the cost thereof. In June, 1673, EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> had started legal action<sup>16</sup> against Samuel Hunt and his wife

\*These verses<sup>9</sup> were entitled "The Galery" and were signed "J. L. and N. W." which is believed to have pertained to Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> Warner (DANIEL<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>). They were intended as a "take off" on certain persons, either named or hinted at, who occupied one of the galleries . . . presumably the one built in 1666 by EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>1</sup> Piper and Nathaniel Tredwell. On March 7, 1670-1, Nathaniel Piper gave a letter of attorney to John Brewer of Ipswich to prosecute a complaint against Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> Warner and Simon<sup>2</sup> Stacy for libel that was published by them or others and they two were fined. Simon<sup>2</sup> Stacy had found the verses in his barn but Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> Warner had possession of them, and in 1671 had been reading them to a group gathered at Goodman Bridge's house. As he read he would interpolate: "this hints to goode norton & this hints to goode sparks & this hints to goode Brewer & such a thing yt hints to goode rust & there was goode WOODWARD & her daughter Ann[s] names in it." JOHN<sup>2</sup> DANE was accused by some as being the author but he commented, "I warrant yuw the writing will not Come to light, thou [though] pyper and WOODWARD and Norton Thinks that I had a hand in it . . ." and added that the complainants "make themselues Redgcolus amongst men, for If that they koold get the Ryting, then they Think that the Ryting being found and Coms to Syhgt, that then they shall know the hand that writ it."<sup>9</sup>

The poem about the new gallery mentioned the names of several other persons who supposedly were seated therein, including Goody Kinderick and Goody Peters; while at the end of every verse Warner read "Set aside M<sup>rs</sup> such a one," naming the women, "Goode Rust, mother WOODWARD & Ann pray find me such three agayn if ye can."<sup>9</sup>

\*\*While these young men sat in the stocks another citizen, Thomas Bishop, offended the official dignity by protesting that the penalties dealt out to them were too severe. He was fined and ordered also to make a public acknowledgment<sup>9</sup> and though EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> is recorded<sup>19</sup> as having chosen the acknowledgment, he is also recorded<sup>19</sup> as having joined Bishop and one of the young men in paying a fine which totaled £10-12-10.

†Punctuation in this phrase was supplied by the compiler.

Elizabeth and against Nathaniel Browne and his wife Judith for slander against his daughter Elizabeth<sup>2</sup> Woodward. It also develops that in March, 1674, one Thomas Davis aged about twenty-six stole<sup>14</sup> a bag of nails from the bark of Nathaniel<sup>1</sup> Piper, brought them to his shop, hid them under a heap of coals and later sold most of them. He sold 8500 shingle nails to EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD the carpenter for three shillings four pence per thousand. He sold six hundred board nails and six-penny nails to Quarter Master JOHN<sup>2</sup> PERKINS and more to other men.<sup>14</sup> Davis was ordered to be whipped and to pay all charges.

The service of EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD in King Philip's War of 1675-6, though he was resident at Wenham, seems to have been accredited to Ipswich where he had lived from about 1660 until 1671-2. He served in the regiment of Capt. (later Maj.) Samuel Appleton<sup>17</sup> having £5-17 already due him by December 10, 1675. Then he, with the rest of the army of one thousand men (the largest which had been gathered in New England up to that time) marched to Dedham Plain where the men were promised a bonus of land "if they played the man, took the Fort, and Drove the Enemy out of the Narragansett Country, which was their seat . . ."<sup>18</sup>

They made their way south to Wickford (see map, p. 618) in early December, 1675, carrying on their backs such slight equipment as had been provided. They had no tents, nor even sufficient food and had to depend largely upon the beneficence of the settlers they passed (see Upham, p. 627). On December 18-9, 1675, occurred the trip through deepening snows from Wickford to the Narragansett camp, the terrific six hour battle there and the staggering task of the return to Wickford through the darkness, with the uninjured carrying the dead and wounded.<sup>17</sup> "Several weeks of partial inactivity ensued, while both the English and the Indians were seeking to recover somewhat from the severe blow each had received."<sup>18</sup> The Massachusetts men remained during this interim at Smith's garrison at Wickford awaiting reinforcements while the Indians worked their way north and west to the Nipmuck country through what is now Woodstock, Connecticut, heading for the old Quaboag Fort (Brookfield, see map, p. 618). About January 28 the colonists began a pursuit of the Indians. But presently, Gen. Winslow finding his provisions so scanty, his men so worn, and no prospect of bringing the enemy to battle, decided to abandon the pursuit and ordered a return to Boston (via Marlborough) which the infantry reached on February 5, 1676. Provisions had been so short that the army had killed and eaten many of their horses and this march was thenceforth called the "Hungry March."<sup>17</sup> As has been told, the injury sustained by Lt. PHINEAS<sup>2</sup> UPHAM at the Swamp Fight, closed the campaign for him but as far as is known, EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup> DAWES and EDWARD<sup>1</sup> HARRADEN all took part<sup>17</sup> in this "Hungry March." In the Narragansett Campaign EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> was listed as a Sergeant (acting Ensign) and on February 29, 1675-6, had £2-4-0 due him.<sup>17</sup> In 1735 when the bonus of land (which had been promised the soldiers in 1675 on Dedham Plain) was finally given out, his portion fell at what became Buxton, Maine where two lots were drawn on the right of EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD but were claimed by one John Fowle and a third lot was claimed<sup>17</sup> by Joshua Coffin, as assignees or purchasers no doubt.

EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> was chosen one of the two surveyors of highways in Wenham in 1678; in 1680 was one of four<sup>13</sup> to see to shingling the pastor's house "with all conveniencie," and he continued to serve the public needs of the town as to carpentry

in 1689 and in 1693-7, both inclusive, being paid each of those years from the town funds for "Expences about the Townes buisness" and in one case he received also "a wood Rate of thirtey Cords . . ." <sup>13</sup>

Soon after his second marriage EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> was first licensed in March, 1673, to keep the ordinary in Wenham (but one was permitted by law) for one year and to "draw liquor," which proves to have been beer and "sider," for that period but this permission was granted annually thenceforth until March, 1680, which implies heavy work for his wife Elizabeth until her death<sup>12</sup> on February 3, 1678. During his life with widow Elizabeth they occupied at least a part of the property which had belonged to her first husband, John Solart, and EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> continued to occupy it after her death, paying a rental of £3 for it during at least a part of this time, and as a consequence was involved in a series of law suits<sup>15</sup> with the executor and the heirs of Solart from April, 1679, until November, 1682. In September, 1681, EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup>, as well as Isaac<sup>2</sup> Hull (ISAAC<sup>1</sup> see Dawes-Gates II, 467), one of the heirs, agreed to abide by arbitration<sup>15</sup> and in November, 1682, the court granted a petition of the heirs for a division of the estate of John<sup>1</sup> Solart. On February 27, 1687-8 "with the consent of his [third] (vide infra) wife Sarah", EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> deeded<sup>31</sup> to the heirs of John Solart all the land of Solart's which was in his possession. He must have been thankful to be rid of the matter. As late as 1685 an exchange of land in the neck involved<sup>13</sup> an eighteen acre tract of which seven acres had belonged to Solart and eleven acres belonged to EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup>, which would probably have further complicated their business relations. In November, 1680, EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> became a surety<sup>15</sup> for Walter Fairfield (who had acted as executor of the estate of John Solart) and that year also refrained from asking for a license to run the ordinary for the coming year so that Fairfield might run one in order to earn extra money to complete his new house.<sup>16</sup> EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> petitioned on March 22, 1682, for a renewal of the licenses which he had held for seven previous years, explaining that in 1681 he passed it up to help Fairfield and because of the uncertainty of his continued use of the Solart house (on account of the heirs' legal action). Now however, he requested that he "may keepe a house of publique entertainment for the selling of beere, sider & prouvisions for horses and men" claiming that he was "disinabled by [for?] my labour, by means of much harme I got at the fire last at Boston: so that I am attended with the goute and other pains . . ." The selectmen of Wenham on March 27, 1682, granted his request because of "his inability of body (By Reason of Some Lameness) to follow his Caling" (carpentry). But Fairfield was unwilling to give up the license and pleaded that he be permitted to at least sell such liquor as he had on hand. That was granted him if he would close it out before the next term of court. Fairfield was peeved at the threatened loss of his position as inn-keeper and insolently claimed of EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> that "as to his pretenc that he is disabled by the fier at Boston from his labor of body but it is most euident that it is the fier of enuie that moueth now for he did keep the ordinary since the fier at Boston and soe he Rejected the ordenary since he Receued the hurt that he pretendeth to."<sup>14</sup> In September, 1682, a license was re-granted to EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> in spite of the quarrel that had been carried on between him and Fairfield, who were complaining against each other for illegal selling of drink, until in November, 1682, the court fined them both.<sup>19</sup>

Intermediately, however, during the spring of 1679 (having lost his second wife

Elizabeth in 1678) EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> was married thirdly\* to Sarah (Knowlton?) Piper, widow of Nathaniel<sup>1</sup> of Wenham, above mentioned, and thereby hangs a tale,<sup>14</sup> for she had been receiving attentions from one John Poland and may even have been engaged to marry him. After her marriage to EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup>, certain men taunted Poland with having "lost his widow," asked how "WOODWARD got along with his new wife" etc. In order to "save his face" Poland began to peddle lies and on June 20, 1679, EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> brought suit against Poland for defamation, for slandering him and his wife. The case came to trial in September, 1679, and witnesses testified that Poland had said the widow had a poor bargain with EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> and she repented of it; that EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> did not deserve her, and her friends wondered that she left Poland. Then Poland became intrigued with his subject and claimed that the widow's brother Knowlton "sayd to me y<sup>t</sup> shee came To him slaubering & crying & sayd y<sup>t</sup> she was undonne by maring WOODWARD: & That shee was very much Troubled That she had wronged me: y<sup>t</sup> is poland & That she was not able To see me but watterd hir plants at The meetting at the very sight of me & did grately bemone hursel That shee should offer so much wrong To poland & That I derst not goe To The meetting at wenhem for every Time she see mee she is nott able to bare it but is ready for To swound away."<sup>14</sup>

A verdict was rendered in favor of EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> and Poland was ordered to make acknowledgment of his fault so at this same court he "made open confession in court that he had done wrong to widow Piper, now the wife of EZEKIEL WOODWARD, in speaking the words to which the witnesses testified, and was sorry for it, desiring the court and them to forgive him"<sup>16</sup> — which seems an easy way out for him!

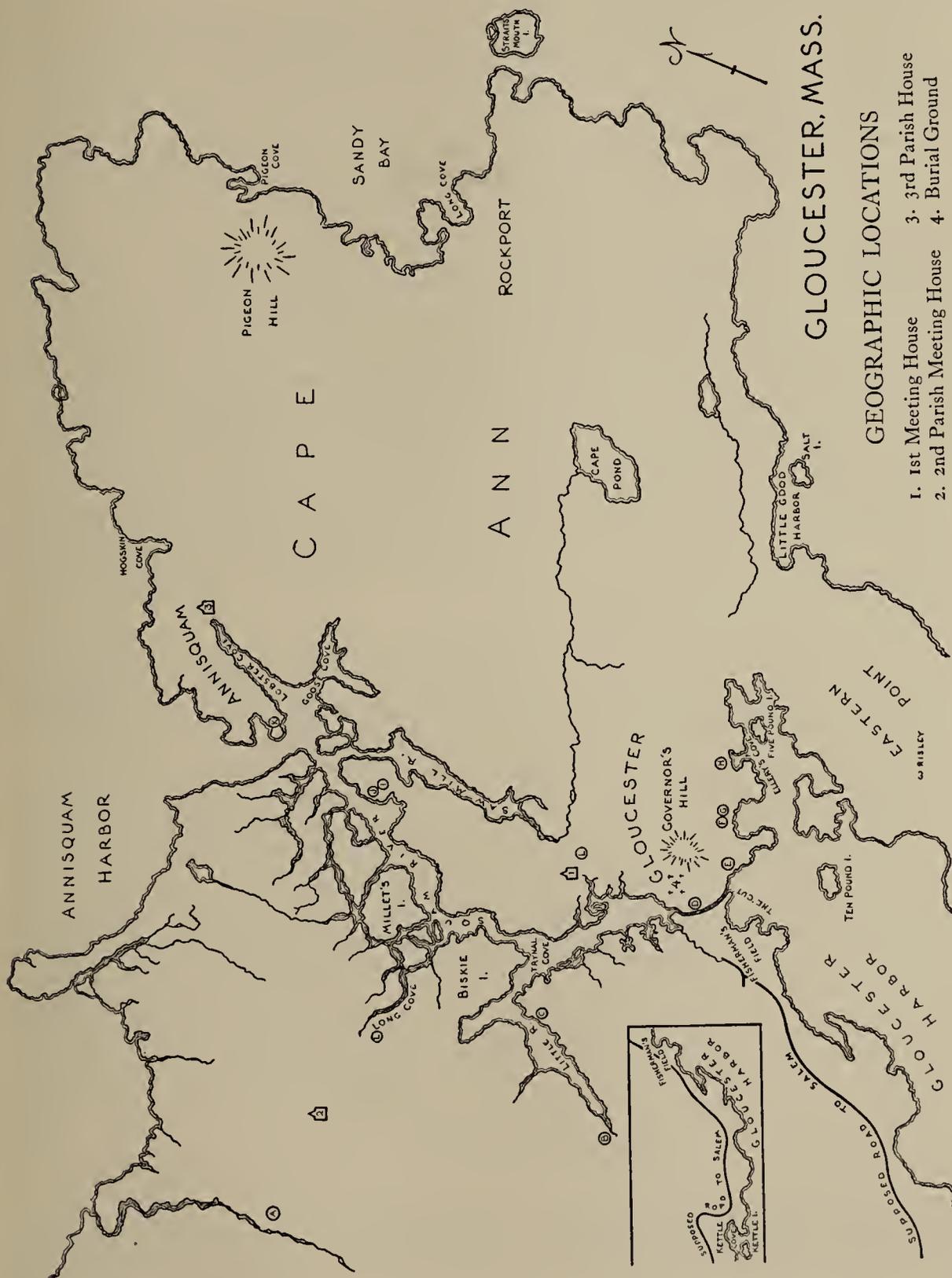
In March, 1693, liberty was granted<sup>13</sup> to EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> to cut two hundred "Rayles" and posts and sometime before 1696 he sold to Joseph Fowler some Wenham land "cald Wild mans neck & Rootses meadow."<sup>13</sup>

During the later years of EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> no record of activity on his part is seen but from at least April, 1692, until February, 1699, Goodwife (Sarah) Woodward ran an eating house, for on seven occasions during that period she "entertained" the selectmen<sup>13</sup> when they were annually "makeing the list of Assesment for the Countray Rates" and her receipts on these occasions ran from five shillings to fourteen shillings eightpence,<sup>13</sup> so she may have run the ordinary after EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> became too feeble to do so. The date of her death has not been seen but EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> died<sup>12</sup> at Wenham on January 29, 1698-9.

The children of EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> and ANNE (BEAMSLEY) WOODWARD, the first five born in Boston and the others at Ipswich, were<sup>5,6</sup>

- I. Anne<sup>2</sup>, b. Aug. 10, 1651; d. after 1686; m. at Ipswich Oct. 20, 1672, Thomas Day.
- II. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, b. (recorded as Jan. 21, and July 14, 1653); m. at Ipswich in Nov., 1671, William Row.
- III. Margaret<sup>2</sup>, b. Feb. 24, 1655; d. after Jan. 1684; m. at Ipswich Oct. 20, 1672, William Andrews.
- IV. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, b. Oct. 22, 1657; living<sup>16</sup> in June, 1673.
- V. Prudence<sup>2</sup>, b. Apr. 4, 1660; d. after July, 1686; m. at Ipswich Nov. 2, 1677, Benjamin Marshall.
- VI. Martha<sup>2</sup>, b. May 3, 1662; d. after 1700; m. at Ipswich Feb. 1, 1685, Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> Emerson (Nathaniel<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>27</sup>
- VII. Mary<sup>2</sup>, b. Dec. 8, 1664.
- VIII. EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup>, see following.
- IX. Rachel<sup>2</sup>, b. Jan. 20, 1668.

\*It is a fact worth noting that EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> was the father of nine children by his first wife, ANNE, that nine Solart children survived his second wife Elizabeth, and that EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> still had the courage to marry widow Piper who, herself, had another nine children.



GLoucester, MASS.

GEOGRAPHIC LOCATIONS

- 1. 1st Meeting House
- 2. 2nd Parish Meeting House
- 3. 3rd Parish House
- 4. Burial Ground

ANCESTRAL LOCATIONS

- G. THOMAS<sup>2</sup> PRINCE
- H. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ELLERY
- I. JOHN<sup>2</sup> COIT
- J. JOHN<sup>1</sup> COIT
- K. EDWARD<sup>1</sup> HARRADEN
- L. J. FITCH

- A. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> HASKELL
- B. EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> WOODWARD (bought of JACOB<sup>3</sup> DAVIS)
- C. EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> WOODWARD
- D. Rev. R. Blynnan
- E. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS
- F. WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> BROWNE

EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> WOODWARD (*Ezekiel*<sup>1</sup>) was born<sup>6</sup> on August 9, 1666, at Ipswich, died<sup>21</sup> at Gloucester on January 13 or 16, 1743-4, aged seventy-three or "about 75." Among all of our American ancestors he takes first place as a much married man, having acquired as the years rolled by, five different wives. He married<sup>23</sup> first, probably at Ipswich and in or before 1697 HANNAH<sup>4</sup> PERKINS (see Perkins, p. 491) mother of all of his children; married secondly at Gloucester on April 15, 1719<sup>21,24</sup> our MARY (HASKELL) DAVIS, widow of JACOB<sup>3</sup> DAVIS; married thirdly,<sup>24</sup> there, on June 22, 1722, Rachel (Elwell) Haskell, widow of Joseph<sup>3</sup> Haskell (WILLIAM<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>); married fourthly there on April 13, 1732, Mrs. Anna (—) Low called of Ipswich and finally married fifthly at Gloucester on November 24, 1740, Rebecca (—) Bennett widow of Anthony<sup>3</sup> Bennett (Anthony<sup>2</sup>, ELINOR<sup>1</sup>). Most of the childhood of EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> must have been spent in Wenham, since he would have been only about six years old when his father settled there. He testified<sup>19</sup> in November, 1682, at the age of about seventeen, in company with his father, that the wife of the erstwhile innkeeper, Walter Fairfield, had sold rum to an Indian. Since HANNAH, the first wife of EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> was a member of an Ipswich family, their marriage probably occurred in that town, though no record of it is found nor of the birth of their eldest child, our EZEKIEL<sup>3</sup>, in about 1697; but their removal to Gloucester must have occurred about 1701-2 since a child was recorded there in May, 1702. The earliest evidence of land ownership<sup>22,24</sup> in Gloucester by EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> pertains to 1707 when he purchased from our JACOB<sup>3</sup> DAVIS a home and one hundred acres of land at Little River.

When their youngest child Stephen<sup>3</sup> would have been less than two years old EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> lost his wife<sup>21</sup> HANNAH on February 2, 1718-9, aged about forty-three and the need of a housekeeper and caretaker may in some degree excuse him for marrying secondly our MARY (HASKELL) DAVIS (who had been widowed for over a year) in less than three months. In this family a rather unusual situation occurs of our claiming as forbears the first two wives of EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup>, though descended from *him* through but one, for the first wife's son and the second wife's daughter decided to try what they could do in furnishing genealogical anomalies, or unique relationships, by their own marriage. We may reasonably infer from this marriage of the younger people, that widow MARY brought some of her own flock to the WOODWARD home. If this habit continued (see note below) EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> and his father would both have needed sizable homes. MARY spent about two and a half years with EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> until the dreadful smallpox took her life<sup>21</sup> on November 1, 1721, when she was about fifty-three years old. The disease probably affected others of the family and may account for unrecorded deaths of the younger children. The death dates of the three subsequent wives of EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> have not been found.

The known children of EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> and HANNAH (PERKINS) WOODWARD\*, all but the first one recorded in Gloucester were<sup>21</sup>

I. EZEKIEL<sup>3</sup>, see following.

II. Mary<sup>3</sup>, b. May 5, 1702; doubtless she who d. at Harvard Feb. 23, 1744-5, ae. 43 yr. 9 mo.; having m. at Gloucester May 17, 1720, Joseph<sup>4</sup> Haskell "3rd" (Joseph<sup>3</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>).<sup>24</sup>

\*EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> had nine children of his own by his first wife HANNAH. He became stepfather to seven children by his second wife, to eight more by his third wife, and to thirteen more by his fifth wife, beating his father's record by one stepchild!

- III. Sarah<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 10, 1703-4; m. at Chebaca, Mar. 15, 1725-6, Benjamin Foster (perhaps son of Bartholomew of Gloucester).  
 IV. Jacob<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 13, 1705; m. at Gloucester Elizabeth Smith.  
 V. Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 17, 1707; no further record.  
 VI. Anne<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 12, 1709; m. (int. at Ipswich) Nov. 2, 1728, John<sup>5</sup> Warner (John<sup>4</sup>, DANIEL<sup>3</sup>, DANIEL<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>).<sup>28</sup>  
 VII. Beamsley<sup>3</sup>, b. Nov. 4, 1711; m. at Gloucester Feb. 20, 1733-4, Sarah Smith.  
 VIII. John<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 2, 1713-4.  
 IX. Stephen<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 9, 1716-7.

EZEKIEL<sup>3</sup> WOODWARD (*Ezekiel<sup>2</sup>, Ezekiel<sup>1</sup>*) was born about 1697, probably at Ipswich, died<sup>21</sup> at Gloucester on September 4, 1771, aged seventy-four, having married<sup>21</sup> there on November 30, 1720, as his first wife, ELIZABETH<sup>4</sup> DAVIS (see Davis, p. 283); and having married secondly at Gloucester<sup>21</sup> on March 18, 1767, Ruth (Riggs) Wellman.\* The first school house at Gloucester was built<sup>26</sup> in 1708 at a cost of £24-15. Its dimensions were twenty-four by sixteen feet and previously school sessions had been held in the meeting house. This building would have served the children of EZEKIEL<sup>3</sup> and ELIZABETH. The family removed to and "settled at the Harbor about 1738 and carried on the fishing business. He [EZEKIEL<sup>3</sup>] was a deacon of the First Church several years, and otherwise a prominent citizen."<sup>22</sup> His service as deacon began<sup>24</sup> as early as 1762 and continued through his life.<sup>21</sup>

The children of EZEKIEL<sup>3</sup> and ELIZABETH (DAVIS) WOODWARD, all born at Gloucester were<sup>21</sup>

- I. Elizabeth<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 1, 1723-4; d. Apr. 4, 1730, ae. 4 yr. 1 mo.
- II. Ezekiel<sup>4</sup>, b. May 29, 1726; d. Apr. 3, 1729 ae. 2 yr. 2 mo.
- III. ELIZABETH<sup>4</sup> bap. Feb. 1 1729-30; d.<sup>29</sup> . . . . . 1793; m. 1st at Gloucester Dec. 27 1748 PHILEMON<sup>6</sup> WARNER (see Warner p. 656); m. 2ndly there<sup>22</sup> (int. Feb. 8, 1772) Nathaniel<sup>4</sup> Harraden (Deacon John<sup>3</sup> Capt. John<sup>2</sup> EDWARD<sup>1</sup>).<sup>32</sup>
- IV. Ezekiel<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 3, 1731; d. at Gloucester Sept. 2, 1766, ae. abt. 36; m. there Dec. 18, 1754, Abigail Sanders.
- V. Nathaniel<sup>4</sup>, b. or bap. Oct. 29 or Nov. 20, 1732; d. Dec. 23, 1732.
- VI. Mary<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 10, 1734-5; d. Mar. 8, 1735, ae. 3 wk. 5 da.
- VII. Mary<sup>4</sup>, b. July 9, 1736; no further record.
- VIII. Davis<sup>4</sup>, b. Sept. 22, 1738; d. after Apr. 1767; m. at Gloucester Oct. 21, 1760, Lucretia<sup>6</sup> Haskell (William<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>2</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>). They removed to New Gloucester, Me.<sup>22</sup>
- IX. Moses<sup>4</sup>, b. Mar. 21, 1739-40; d. after 1769; m. by 1762 Eunice (probably Wallis). Removed to Portsmouth, N. H.<sup>22</sup>
- X. Nathaniel<sup>4</sup>, b. July 24, 1741; d. Aug. 9, 1741.

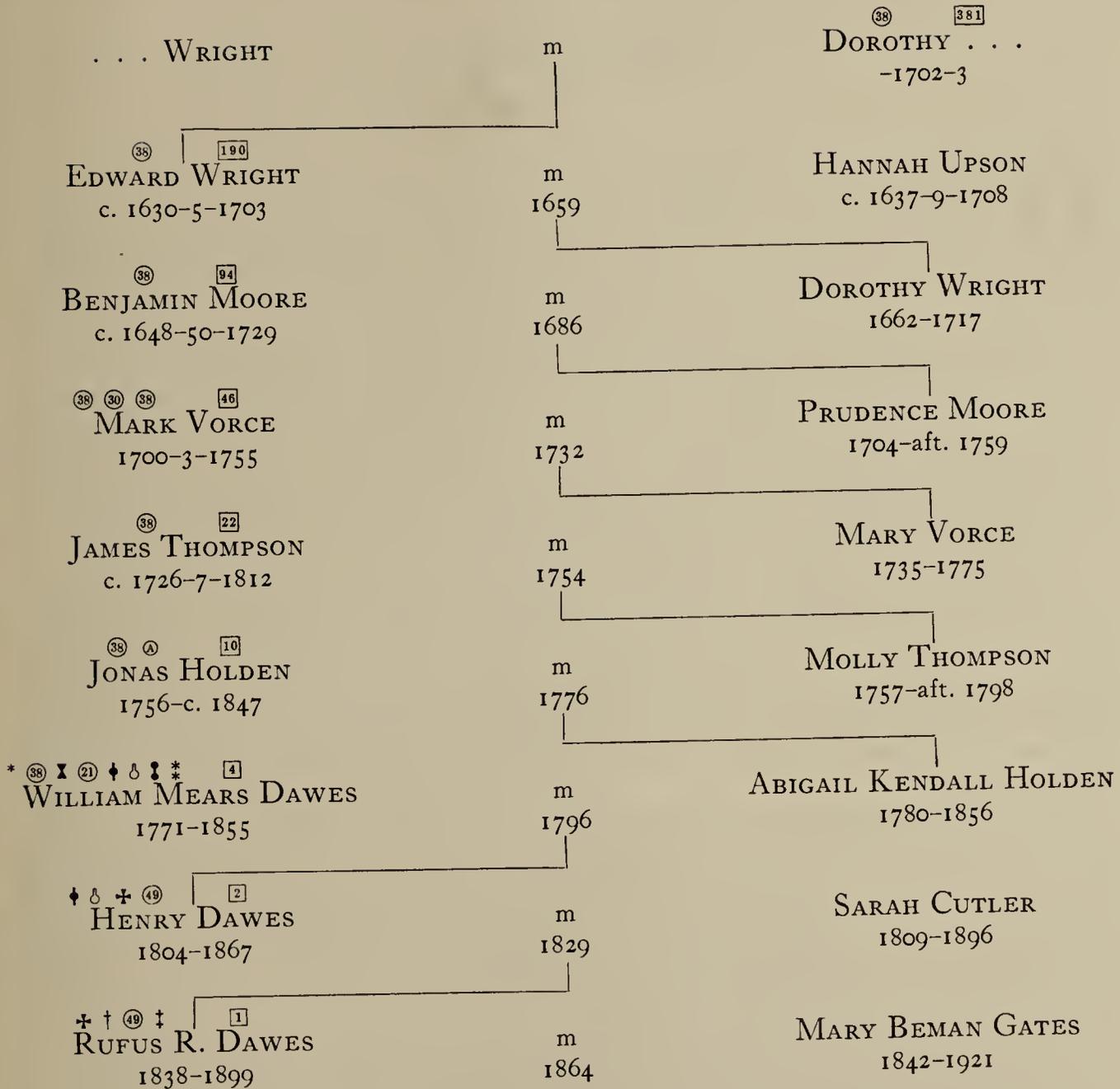
\*She was the daughter of John and Ruth (Wheeler) Riggs of Gloucester and the widow of Adam<sup>3</sup> Wellman (Isaac<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>).<sup>25</sup>

## REFERENCES

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Pope's Pioneers, 1900, p. 513.</li> <li>2. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex Co., IV, 80; VIII, 26-7.</li> <li>3. Suffolk Deeds (pub.) III, 305-6; IV, 41-2; V, 519-22.</li> <li>4. New England Register, IX, 37.</li> <li>5. Boston Record Commissioners Reports, IX, 33, 41-2, 51, 60, 75.</li> <li>6. Vital Records of Ipswich, I, 402; II, 467.</li> <li>7. Hammatt Papers, p. 420.</li> <li>8. Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, T. F.</li> </ol> | <p>Waters, 1905, pp. 69-70, 82, 138, 199, 275, 284, 424, 446, 487.</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>9. Records and Files . . . III, 412; IV, 341-3.</li> <li>10. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXIII, 210.</li> <li>11. Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880, I, 361-3; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, VIII, 103-7.</li> <li>12. Vital Records of Wenham, pp. 179, 225.</li> <li>13. Wenham Town Records, 1642-1706, 1930, pp. 38, 47, 49, 57, 76, 90, 106, 108, 112, 120, 132, 144-5, 150, 154,</li> </ol> |
|---|--|

- 161, 166.
14. Records and Files . . . V, 138, 261, 288-9; VI, 17, 137, 250, 424; VII, 180, 262, 353; VIII, 383-5, 435-6.
15. Ibid., VII, 171, 183; VIII, 25-7, 151, 162-3, 233-4, 432-3.
16. Ibid., V, 146, 220; VII, 262-3.
17. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 154, 156, 165, 182, 199-205, 416; Records of the Proprietors of Narragansett Township No. 1 now Burton, Me., W. F. Goodwin, 1871, pp. 97, 119, 229; New England Register, XXXVIII, 443; XL, 192; Plimpton Genealogy, L. B. Chase, 1884, pp. 64-7.
18. Upham Genealogy, F. K. Upham, 1892, pp. 57-71.
19. Records and Files, III, 412; VIII, 303, 381, 383-5, 435-6.
20. History of Haverhill, N. H., W. F. Witcher, 1919, pp. 683-4; Colonial Families of America, G. N. MacKenzie, 1912, III, 624-6.
21. Vital Records of Gloucester, I, 778, 784, 791-2; II, 562, 595; III, 332-3.
22. History of Gloucester, J. J. Balson, 1860, pp. 244-5.
23. Witcher's Haverhill, N. H., pp. 683-4; Perkins Family, G. A. Perkins, 1889, p. 28.
24. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXII, 137-44; Babson's Additions to History of Gloucester, 1876, I, 16, 35-6; II, 53, 59-60.
25. Descendants of Thomas Wellman . . . , J. W. Wellman, 1918, pp. 107-8.
26. History of Essex Co., D. H. Hurd, 1888, II, 1322.
27. The Ipswich Emersons, B. K. Emerson, 1900, p. 66.
28. Posterity of WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> WARNER, N. E. Register, XX, 64.
29. Family Records in the hands of Mary (Dawes) Beach, Evanston, Ill.
30. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, T. B. Wyman, 1879, II, 1049.
31. Essex Institute Historical Society Collections, LVIII, 129.
32. Genealogical Register, Rev. Abner Morse, 1864, IV, 81; Notes and Additions to Babson's Gloucester, 1876, I, 32-3.

# WRIGHT



- Ⓢ Sudbury
- Ⓣ Framingham
- \* Boston
- ✕ Marlborough
- Ⓜ Fitzwilliam, N. H.

- ♣ Thomaston, Me.
- ♠ Morgan Co., O.
- ♠ Licking Co., O.
- \* Ripon, Wis.
- Ⓜ Waitsfield, Vt.

- ♣ Malta, O.
- Ⓢ Mauston, Wis.
- † Warren Twp., Washington Co., O.
- ‡ Marietta, O.



## WRIGHT

**D**OROTHY (—) WRIGHT crossed the water, probably as a widow with a child or two, in time to become one of the earliest grantees and original settlers<sup>1</sup> of Sudbury in 1638–9. The vessel on which she sailed is unknown. She may have started with her husband and have endured his loss on the way, but in any event she was the head of her family when it reached Sudbury, and it must have demanded rare courage and considerable executive ability, as well as material means, to establish herself and small children in a new community in this new world. She was given a house lot of six acres on the south street or Mill road, east of the meeting house (see map, p. 448) between the lots of John Toll and John Bent. At the first division of meadow she received two acres, at the second division, four acres, at the third division, three, and on November 18, 1640, as “Widow RITE,” eight and one half acres more.<sup>1</sup>

On December 4, 1641, a neighbor, John<sup>1</sup> Blanford, born about 1608–11, also an original settler of Sudbury, lost his wife<sup>6</sup> Mary and on March 10, 1642, he and DOROTHY were married,<sup>6</sup> he a widower with<sup>2</sup> (as far as is known) only one<sup>2</sup> daughter, and she a widow with a son EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT and probably<sup>20</sup> a younger son Samuel<sup>2</sup>. DOROTHY was fortunate in her second husband who was an upstanding, useful citizen. It has been said<sup>3</sup> that “Walter Haynes, Peter Noyes, John Blanford and JOHN RUTTER were representative men of Sudbury and were a type of historic Puritan.”

During the period 1643–9 DOROTHY bore John five<sup>6</sup> children of whom three lived to marry. On September 15, 1667, John<sup>1</sup> Blanford and “DOROTHY, his wife (formerly the widow WRIGHT),” sold<sup>9</sup> her first division of meadow land to Edmund Goodenow. Beyond doubt EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT and his presumed brother grew to manhood under the Blanford roof and apparently the kindest feelings prevailed for the will<sup>7</sup> of John<sup>1</sup> Blanford dated on October 21, 1687, two days before his death and probated November 23 gave to

“dear wife DOROTHY, the whole of all my goods & estate for her us[e], Comfort and benefitt during her natural life, also the whole of moveables to her & only to her to be disposed of at her decease as she shall see good. Beloved son Stephen Blanford, the estate after the decease of wife, he to dwell with wife, taking care of her & improving the estate.

“My sonne Jabesh Browne 2 acres of land.

“My sonne-in-law, \* EDWARD WRIGHT, 9 acres on which he now lives.

“After decease of wife, 20 sh each to sonne-in-law, EDWARD WRIGHT, Mary James, Elizabeth (Thackson?).

“Executors, wife DOROTHY and Stephen Blanford.”<sup>7</sup>

\*An early form implying also step-son, son by marriage.

Following the death of her husband in 1687, DOROTHY evidently broke up her home at Sudbury, left part of her effects at that town with her sons EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT and Stephen<sup>2</sup> Blanford and took a part of them to Marlborough where she made her home thenceforth, with her twice married daughter Sarah (Blanford) Keyes Maynard. There she lived happily, surviving her husband for nearly sixteen years and being survived by but three of her children, and of these EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT only lived five months longer than did his mother. She made her will<sup>8</sup> on December 29, 1694, but lived nearly nine years<sup>5</sup> longer. This will referred to her as "Now being stricken in age and under infirmity of Body though, through Gods ffauor Intire in understanding." It made bequests to her granddaughters, Mary Brown and Sarah Eames, both of whom had lost their mothers, and gave to her son Stephen<sup>2</sup> Blanford many things already in his hands. It read in part,

" . . . to my Daughter Sarah Mainard where I Now am, and where I have ben well treated eur [ever] sinc I came from Sudbury, I will and giue my ffour cows . . . Also I will and giue to her . . . my Bed I now ly on with all the ffurniture belonging to it, my thre Brass cetels that ar with me and on[e] iron pot and whateuer els I haue in theire House, viz, my woolin, Lining [linen] and whatsoeuer is mine I giue it to her and her children foreuer, only my will is that they, viz, my son and daughter Mainard doe Bear my ffuneral Charges . . ." "Also I will and giue to my son EDWARD WRIGHT and his Heires foreuer my two peices of Meadow lying in the Bounds of the towne of Sudbury, in the Great meadow there one of them lying not very ffar from Bridle point the other in sedg meadow, as you will ffind in the towne Book of Records in Sudbury, these with all Rights priuilidges and appurtenancies belonging or any way apperteining to them I giue to him — to him allso I will and giue all thos other smal things that I left with him in his House when I Remoued from Sudbury to Marlborough they shal all bee his . . ." "ffinally I constitute and apoint my son EDWARD WRIGHT and my son in law John Mainard sen<sup>r</sup> my executors . . ."

Henry Kerley was one of the witnesses and DOROTHY signed with her mark<sup>8,9</sup> which was like a capital "C" reversed "Ɔ". "Old Widdow DORITHAI" Blanford died<sup>5</sup> at Marlborough on March 1, 1703, when she must have been in her nineties, and on June 21, 1703, her will was proved.<sup>8</sup>

The known\* child<sup>8</sup> of DOROTHY (—) WRIGHT by her first husband (—) WRIGHT was

I. EDWARD<sup>2</sup>, see following.

She was probably also the mother<sup>20</sup> of

II. Samuel Wright, b. perhaps 1637-8; d. at Sudbury<sup>6</sup> August 21, 1664, less than four months after he had married there on May 3, 1664, LIDIA<sup>2</sup> MOORE (JOHN<sup>1</sup>). They had a child born prematurely at the home of EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT, his presumed brother. This, with added facts that DOROTHY (—) WRIGHT Blanford was present at its birth and that EDWARD<sup>2</sup> named his eldest son "Samuel" seems to argue a close relationship between this Samuel

\*There are more mis-statements<sup>21</sup> relative to this family than almost any other of early days, for our DOROTHY is erroneously assigned a husband she never had, a castle in England and a son Edward "of Concord" who really sold that castle, but that man was not our EDWARD<sup>2</sup> who lived only at Sudbury. Through a mis-reading of the early script, EDWARD<sup>2</sup> is frequently recorded as having married Hannah<sup>2</sup> Axtell (Thomas) instead of HANNAH<sup>2</sup> UPSON. But what is really worse he is repeatedly shown in print as having three wives instead of but one and as being the composite of three contemporaneous men of that name, himself, the above-mentioned Edward of Concord and an Edward of Boston. Samuel<sup>2</sup> (EDWARD<sup>2</sup>) is erroneously called son of a Thomas; and our DOROTHY<sup>2</sup> is made to marry Noah Brooks of Concord (who really had a wife Dorothy . . .) instead of marrying our BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> MOORE, as a legal document<sup>9</sup> proves that she did. The facts that Edward Wright of Concord actually owned land at Sudbury (though he never lived there) and that he and our EDWARD<sup>2</sup> of Sudbury both used for their children, contemporaneously the five names Sarah, Elizabeth, Edward, Martha and Samuel, explains in a degree, but does not excuse, the published misinformation.<sup>21</sup>

and EDWARD<sup>2</sup> and his mother. Moreover, there was no other early Wright family in Sudbury to which Samuel could have belonged. The child referred to died the next day after its birth.<sup>20</sup> Shortly before his death, Samuel and his wife evidently stood under criticism of the court, but the matter was not closed and recorded until a couple of months after his death.<sup>20</sup>

EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT (widow Dorothy) was born<sup>10</sup> about 1630-5 and was brought to Sudbury in childhood by his widowed mother; there his entire life was spent, and, on August 7, 1703, his death<sup>6</sup> occurred. He was married there on June 18, 1659, to HANNAH<sup>2</sup> "EPSON" (see Upson, p. 640).

EDWARD<sup>2</sup> made a deposition<sup>10</sup> in April, 1669, stating that he was then about thirty-four years old. He and HANNAH had ten children of whom seven lived to maturity and married. No continuity of occupation or endeavor on the part of EDWARD<sup>2</sup> has been learned but intermittent glimpses suggest a dependable usefulness in the community, a church membership, an interest in church affairs, and a patriotic loyalty in military matters as well as a comfortable estate. On March 4, 1663-4, EDWARD<sup>2</sup> and his stepfather John<sup>1</sup> Blanford, with Thomas<sup>1</sup> Plympton (brother of our ELIZABETH (PLYMPTON) RUTTER) and Thomas Goodenow were witnesses<sup>3</sup> to the will of Walter Haynes of Sudbury. In 1674 EDWARD<sup>2</sup> was appointed one of three fence viewers<sup>12</sup> on the west side of the river. Men holding this position were empowered to enforce their requirements upon the property owners for at one time "It was ordered that those men who were deputed to look after the fences shall have power to distrain, for every rod of fence not lawful, half a bushel of corn, the one-half to him that looks to the fence the other half to the town."<sup>12</sup>

The first meeting house<sup>14</sup> in Sudbury, built in 1642-3 by JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER had dimensions of only twenty by thirty feet; a second one built in 1653 measured twenty-five by forty, while a third one, planned in 1686, was to cost £200 and to be "just like the new one in Dedham" suggesting a keen civic pride. It was probably not completed for several years, for as late as July 1, 1695, EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT and John Goodenow were appointed a committee to purchase a bell for the church and they paid £27 in silver money to Caleb Hubbard of Braintree for this crowning glory of their new church. In order to install it "the select men were ordered to procure half a hundred of good Spanish iron for bolts and keys necessary for hanging the bell, and a wheel rope"<sup>12,14</sup> One can easily picture the interest of the inhabitants as their blacksmith wrought the keys and bolts, and the even greater interest in the hanging of the bell itself when that red letter day arrived. It would make them feel quite cosmopolitan as compared with the employment in 1651 and later of a boy "to beat the drum twice every Lecture day, and twice every forenoon and twice every afternoon upon the Lord's day, to give notice what time to come to meeting"<sup>14</sup>

But it is the Indian menace which stands out most significantly in the life of EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT and his family. Being a frontier town, Sudbury was the more liable to forays by the natives, and the continued fear engendered in the minds of its residents could not fail to have deeply colored their lives. Every able bodied man performed military service in those days — scouting, watching, fighting for life itself at a moment's notice. It was not a matter of choice, but of necessity. But it is generally conceded<sup>13</sup> that EDWARD<sup>2</sup> of Sudbury served in the militia during

King Philip's War and one of that name,<sup>11</sup> probably he,\* had ten shillings due him on November 30, 1675, for service under Capt. James Parker and Maj. Simon Willard, in Middlesex, his home county. EDWARD<sup>2</sup> could not have failed of service in April, 1676, when Sudbury was attacked, and which at that time lost heavily by fire and plundering Indians. He served again<sup>15</sup> in 1690 in Gen. Phipp's futile expedition to take Quebec when he must have been close to if not quite sixty years of age.

A study of developments<sup>11,14</sup> during King Philip's War shows that after the Narragansett campaign in December, 1675, (see Upham, pp. 621-7) and the subsequent Hungry March of the survivors (see Woodward, pp. 670-1) most of the colonial troops were discharged at Boston about February 1, 1675-6, but Capt. Samuel<sup>2</sup> Wadsworth (Christopher<sup>1</sup>) and his company were stationed at Marlborough "to strengthen that frontier" and to bear the brunt of any attack the Indians might make. That strengthening was needed even more than the authorities had anticipated, for the Indians inferred that the disbanding of the major part of the army implied discouragement or inability to cope with the situation, and those tribes which had escaped the slaughter at Narragansett Swamp began assembling in large numbers in the vicinity of the western frontier towns. On February 1, 1675-6, at an outlying section of Sudbury, now Framingham, they made a raid upon the farm home of Thomas<sup>1</sup> Eames, son-in-law of John<sup>1</sup> Blanford, second husband of our DOROTHY (—) WRIGHT. Eames' home was then burned,<sup>2,14</sup> his wife Mary (Blanford) and five children were slain and four others were carried into captivity. On February 10, half of Lancaster was burned and forty-two persons were killed or taken captive; on February 21 Medfield lost fifteen or sixteen persons and fifty houses; on March 10 Sudbury lost several lives, and on March 13 Groton lost forty or fifty houses and several lives. Then Marlborough alone remained between Sudbury and the wilderness that sheltered their foes (see map, p. 448).

On March 26, the Sabbath, Marlborough was attacked and though no life was lost at that time, thirteen homes, eleven barns and their beloved meeting house were burned, fences were destroyed, fruit trees hacked and peeled and cattle killed or maimed. The town was practically wiped out later, but following this destruction of March 26 the Indians, about three hundred strong, apparently feeling secure in their mastery, encamped in the woods east of Marlborough and within a half mile of Sudbury's western boundary, with the undoubted intention of attacking that town on the following morning. But during the night a score of fearless Sudbury men made their way indirectly and cautiously to the garrisoned houses of neighboring Marlborough where they were joined by as many more determined whites under Lt. Richard Jacobs and that night of March 26-7 they accomplished the amazing feat of a surprise attack on those sleeping Indians, wounding thirty or forty, of whom nearly half (including Netus, a captain or chief) died. Sudbury men are officially<sup>14</sup> given credit by both Mather and Brocklebank for conceiving this bold plan which caused the Indians to retreat, and saved Sudbury for the time being. But the loss of their chief was a heavy blow which might be expected to bring retaliation, and the incessant harassment of the settlers continued. An-

\*Some Edward Wright who may have been ours served<sup>11</sup> under Capt. William Turner in February, 1675-6, and under the same superior had £2-14 due<sup>11</sup> him in June, 1676.

icipating further trouble, the Sudbury selectmen petitioned<sup>14</sup> the governor for twenty men to be sent in to assist in their garrisons, and that may have been granted. On April 17, 1676, Thomas<sup>1</sup> Plympton, brother of our ELIZABETH (PLYMPTON) RUTTER had left his home to bring in, to the settlement and safety, a Mr. Boon and his son, but the three of them were killed as they approached the town.<sup>14</sup> By April 17-20\* the largest band yet seen in the neighborhood appeared in the vicinity of Sudbury, under the command of Philip, himself. On April 20 Capt. Samuel<sup>2</sup> Wadsworth, who so often hastened to the relief of an attacked settlement or to any locality where threat appeared, had been on the march from Boston to Marlborough (the military post for the frontier) with about seventy men. On his arrival at Marlborough in the night, hearing of the convergence of natives toward Sudbury he determined to retrace his steps to assist that town, in spite of the fact that he had marched all day and a part of the preceding night. So after a brief rest and slight reorganization of his company, with Capt. Samuel Brocklebank and about fifty to sixty men, he intrepidly started eastward toward his last battle. In the meantime twelve men had hastened from Concord to the aid of Sudbury, but just outside of that town had been decoyed into an ambush and all but one of them killed. And early in the morning of April 21 the Indians under Philip had, as a preliminary, set fire to a number of vacated houses in the eastern part of Sudbury (now Wayland) whose occupants had removed to the garrisoned houses. The next move<sup>14</sup> was an attack "with greate force & fury" on Deacon John<sup>2</sup> Haines' garrisoned home — and undoubtedly the other garrisoned houses also. When the attack began there were about eighty fighting men in the Sudbury garrisons and "— (by y<sup>e</sup> help of God) y<sup>e</sup> garrison not onely defended y<sup>e</sup> place from betweene five or six of y<sup>e</sup> clock in y<sup>e</sup> Morning till about One in y<sup>e</sup> Afternoon but forced y<sup>e</sup> Enemy with Considerable slaughter to draw off . . . Our garrison men kept not within their garrisons, but issued forth to fight y<sup>e</sup> Enemy in their sculking approaches."

The natives attempted to set fire to the garrisons "with arrows of pitch pine, lighted at the end, but in doing this, although they more than once set fire to the thatch, they were obliged to approach so near as to be annoyed by the arms of the besieged. They then loaded a cart with unbroken flax, which they took from a barn nearby, and trundled it [burning] down the hill toward the Garrison. But the cart went but a little way before it was upset by a stump, and with its contents consumed."<sup>14</sup>

The mettle of the Sudbury men was again proved clearly by the fact that they not only defended their garrisons during that seven or eight hours of attack, but they left the protection of their garrison houses, assumed the offensive, and wrought real punishment on the enemy, causing them to retreat, without their having captured a single garrison. Toward noon the Sudbury men were strengthened by the arrival of a group of volunteers from Watertown. The Indians withdrew to the westward, toward Marlborough where they prepared an ambush for Capt. Wadsworth and his men whom they knew full well would be hurrying eastward to help Sudbury. So when these weary men were within a mile and a half of Sudbury, a few Indians were sent to cross the white men's path and then to hurry

\*Many writers have dated the Sudbury Fight on April 17, but while the Indians quite surely were assembling then the Sudbury Fight itself occurred<sup>17</sup> on April 21.

away as though in fear. This subterfuge succeeded and led Wadsworth and his men into the trap prepared on the west side of Green Hill (see map, p. 448) in what is now South Sudbury. That was the sorriest part of the sad day's work. Wadsworth's poor judgment in being led into the ambush was fully paid for by his fearless courage as, maintaining good order among his men he retreated slowly to the top of Green Hill where they held their own for nearly four hours with the loss of but five men, and they would have been able, when darkness came, to have reached safety except for the fact that the Indians set the woods on fire to the windward of the fighting English and drove them into the open, placing them utterly at the mercy of vastly superior enemy numbers — estimated at from five hundred to one thousand or more. Thirty or more\* of these brave Englishmen, including Captains Wadsworth and Brocklebank were then quickly killed, but such an end was infinitely preferable to the torture perpetrated on the half dozen or so who were taken captive. Perhaps twenty of them escaped to a mill a quarter or a half-mile away, from whence they were rescued that evening by the timely arrival of Capt. Thomas<sup>1</sup> Prentice of Cambridge with about fifty horsemen and of Capt. Edward Cowell of Boston with about thirty men. These two officers with their men had narrowly escaped a fate similar to Wadsworth's as they approached Sudbury. The next morning the bodies of five of the eleven Concord men were fished out of the water and buried at the end of the town bridge over Sudbury River, on its eastern bank and the bodies of twenty-nine of Wadsworth's men were laid to rest in a common grave on the westerly side of Green Hill near its base, which is now within South Sudbury Cemetery. At first only a mound of stones marked the spot but in 1730 a small monument was erected and in 1851-2 Sudbury with the help of the State Legislature erected a more fitting monument to those men and their courageous defense under a crushing handicap. The Indian menace decreased consistently from that day, and the death of Philip on August 12, 1676, (see Dawes-Gates, II, 250-1) spelled disintegration of any further systematic enmity, for such a victory as that west of Sudbury is a greater menace to him who wins than to the victim himself. Sudbury had no repetition of Indian trouble, and personal danger of that sort for our Sudbury forbears living then, was past.

As a result of their heavy losses, thirty-four men of Sudbury, including EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT, his step-father, John<sup>1</sup> Blanford and Joseph<sup>2</sup> Moore (JOHN<sup>1</sup>) signed a petition<sup>11,14</sup> to the General Court, on October 11, 1676, asking (1) for a share in the contribution sent to the Colonies by philanthropic persons in Ireland for distribution among the sufferers by King Philip's War; asking (2) for a remission or lessening of taxes because of their extensive losses by fire and plunder and (3) for a "Barril of Powder & sutable shott." The town was granted a rebate<sup>14</sup> of about £44 on its tax list as a result of this petition, which seems a very slight help against their appalling loss. They appended to their petition a list of thirty-three Sudbury residents who had suffered total losses of £2,707 by the Sudbury Fight of April 21, 1676, and among these were

\*One record says thirty-four were killed, six taken captive and that fourteen to twenty escaped to Hop Brook Mill (see map, p. 448) later called Parmenter's Mill. It appears<sup>14</sup> that after a fight the Indians had a habit of announcing the number of white victims by an equal number of whoops. Following the Sudbury Fight and the massacre of Capt. Wadsworth's men, they whooped seventy-four times as they approached Marlborough on their way into the forest, which was probably an exaggeration of the number slain.

EDWARD <sup>2</sup> WRIGHT	£100	
Widd. WHALE	£24	[ ELIZABETH (—) UPSON Griffin WHALE ] widow of PHILEMON <sup>1</sup> WHALE.
John <sup>1</sup> Blanford	£10	[ husband of our DOROTHY WRIGHT. ]
Thomas <sup>1</sup> Plympton	£130	[ brother of ELIZABETH (PLYMPTON) RUTTER ] and he also lost his life.
William <sup>2</sup> Moore	£180	[ son of JOHN <sup>1</sup> MOORE. ]
Jacob <sup>2</sup> Moore	£50	[ son of JOHN <sup>1</sup> MOORE. ]
Elias <sup>2</sup> Keyes (Robt. <sup>1</sup> )	£60	[ son-in-law of DOROTHY (—) WRIGHT ] Blanford.

Sudbury, in common with the other settlements, endured the long anxiety over and the final loss in 1686, of the colony's charter (see Appendix "B", p. 694); the injustices of Andros' rule and it doubtless approved the armed revolt against Andros in 1689.

King William's War, or the Ten Years War,<sup>15</sup> during which the French and Indians joined forces against the colonists continued from about 1688 through 1697, and while personal danger to the residents of Sudbury was less evident than in King Philip's War the demands for military service were heavy indeed, and were shared by EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT. In 1688 the town distributed its stock of powder to forty-three heads of families who bound themselves to account for it if it were not "spent in real service in the resistance of the enemy" and the list includes the names<sup>15</sup> of Lt. EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT, Joseph<sup>2</sup> Moore, his brother, BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> MOORE, Sergt. JOHN<sup>1</sup> RUTTER and, strangely enough, Widow Mary Rice. Most of those named were given a little over four pounds of powder, a little over thirty-three pounds of shot and thirteen flints. Some time during this Ten Year War our EDWARD<sup>2</sup> rendered active service. As has been shown he held a lieutenancy in 1688 and before his death (very possibly in 1690) he acquired a captaincy which title was consistently used until his death.<sup>6</sup> A rendezvous at Sudbury was arranged for May 27, 1690, at which the soldiers were to be "well appointed with arms and ammunition. . . . with six days provision a man." And that year Sir William Phipps conceived a most impracticable plan, carried out most ignorantly, but intended to wrest Quebec from the French as a gift to the English King. This ill fated expedition (in which EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT took some part), which bears Phipps' name, included the assembling of a fleet of forty vessels and two thousand men, mostly from Massachusetts. Some were to sail north from Boston and up the St. Lawrence river, others, foot troops, were to march by way of Montreal and the lakes. But the plan was developed so late in the year that unfavorable weather was certain to overtake them; they sailed August 8, but did not reach the Isle of Orleans until October 5; their four months' supplies, of all sorts, were sadly insufficient; they are said to have failed to take a single pilot with them and before the expedition was attempted, it was doomed to failure. Moreover, smallpox and other diseases became epidemic and many men were buried at sea without reaching Canada. Generalship was utterly lacking for Phipps delayed attack upon Quebec for two or three weeks while his vessels lay at anchor, fairly near, so that the

French had ample time to bring in recruits and strengthen their town until it was impregnable to such a commander as he. It is stated that more men died after their return, from ruined health, than did of smallpox at sea. EDWARD<sup>2</sup> was one of the fortunate ones in that respect, for he survived. One other unhappy reaction resulting from the expedition is that there was no money in the treasury to pay the men for their services and for the first time in the history of our country, paper money was issued, causing depreciation, (see Appendix "C", p. 702) so that the soldiers could realize only twelve or fourteen shillings to the pound. It was 1752, over sixty years later, before the country got out from under the financial burden created by this issuance of unbacked currency. About 1735 a considerable effort was made by heirs of the participants in this expedition, to the end that land might be granted as added remuneration for service, and in 1741 such grants were finally made. The men from Sudbury received what was called the Sudbury-Canada grant<sup>15</sup> which lay in the vicinity of present Jay and Canton, Maine, and Samuel<sup>3</sup> Wright received a portion of land because of the service of his father EDWARD<sup>2</sup> — and very possibly it was in this campaign of 1690 that EDWARD<sup>2</sup> acquired the title of captain.

An undated petition (but of this general period) which was signed by twenty Sudbury men, of whom half were contemporaries of EDWARD<sup>2</sup>, may pertain to the foot soldiers in this expedition. It reads in part:<sup>15</sup>

“. . . being impressed the last winter several of us into dreadful service, where, by reason of cold and hunger and in tedious marches many score of miles in water and snow, and laying on the snow by night, having no provision but what they could carry upon their backs, beside hard arms and ammunition, it cost many of them their lives. Your humble petitioners several of us have been at very great charges to set them out with arms, and ammunition and clothing, and money to support them, and afterwards by sending supplies to relieve them and to save their lives, notwithstanding many have lost their lives there, others came home, and which were so suffered, if not poisoned, that they died since they came from there, notwithstanding all means used, and charges out for their recovery, others so surfeited that they are thereby disabled from their calling.”<sup>15</sup>

Capt. EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT died, intestate, at Sudbury,<sup>6</sup> on August 7, 1703, at the age of about seventy. The inventory of his estate totaled almost £200 and his widow HANNAH and eldest son Samuel<sup>3</sup> were appointed administrators on September 6, 1703, and gave a bond of £370. As administrator, Samuel<sup>3</sup> filed reports on July 1 and September 9, 1704, and widow HANNAH died<sup>6</sup> May 18, 1708, after which a very useful document was signed on June 15, 1708, and acknowledged the following day whereby we are informed that

“whereas Capt. EDWARD<sup>2</sup> WRIGHT of Sudbury died intestate, leaving an estate of lands, goods and chattels and leaving several children to possess and enjoy the same namely, Samuel<sup>3</sup>, Edward<sup>3</sup>, DOROTHY<sup>3</sup>, Sarah<sup>3</sup>, Mary<sup>3</sup>, Abigail<sup>3</sup>, Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> and Martha<sup>3</sup>, and whereas our older brother Samuel<sup>3</sup> of said town having a desire to purchase all our right and title in the estate, therefore we Edward<sup>3</sup> Wright, Sergt BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> MOORE and DOROTHY his wife, Noah Clapp and Mary his wife, John Moore and Abigail his wife, Elizabeth<sup>3</sup> Wright and Martha<sup>3</sup> Wright all of Sudbury and Deacon Benoni Larnett and Sarah his wife of Sherborn . . . convey to Samuel<sup>3</sup> Wright all our right in the estate of our Honored father EDWARD WRIGHT, Captain, died seized of.”

This document was not recorded until March 22, 1713-4.

The children of EDWARD<sup>2</sup> and HANNAH (UPSON) WRIGHT, all but one recorded in Sudbury were<sup>6,9</sup>

- i. Hannah<sup>3</sup>, b. Jan. 9 1660; d. bef. 1708 and probably before her father.
- ii. DOROTHY<sup>3</sup>, b. Oct. 20, 1662; d. at Sudbury Oct. 20, 1717; m. there Nov. 11, 1686, BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup> MOORE (see Moore, p. 447).
- iii. Sarah<sup>3</sup>, b. Jan. 17, 1664; d. at Sherborn Jan. 25, 1736-7; m. 1689-90 as his second wife Benoni<sup>3</sup> Learned (Isaac<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>).<sup>16</sup>
- iv. Mary<sup>3</sup>, b. Jan. 2, 1666; d. before 1753; m. at Sudbury July 28, 1690, Noah<sup>2</sup> Clapp (Nicholas<sup>1</sup>, cousin of our ROGER<sup>1</sup> CLAPP).<sup>16</sup>
- v. Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 6, 1668; d. May 12, 1669.
- vi. Samuel<sup>3</sup>, b.\*<sup>6</sup> Apr. 9, 1670; d. Jan. 15, 1739-40, at Rutland; m. by 1705 Mary<sup>2</sup> Stevens, daughter of Cyprian<sup>1</sup> and Mary (Willard) Stevens. They had a daughter<sup>6</sup> Dorothy and lived in Rutland.<sup>17</sup> In 1724 he captured a company which numbered among its members *William Thompson* and "MARK VOICE" (VORCE).<sup>19</sup>
- vii. Abigail<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 15, 1672; d. before Dec. 1714; m. by 1702 John<sup>3</sup> Moore (Joseph<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>).
- viii. Elizabeth<sup>3</sup>, b. probably 1674-5; living, unmarried<sup>9</sup> in June, 1708.
- ix. Edward<sup>3</sup>, b. Mar. 18, 1677; d. after<sup>18</sup> 1720; m. about 1706 Hannah (—) who bore him eight or more children. Residence Framingham.<sup>18</sup>
- x. Martha<sup>3</sup>, b. Dec. 25, 1681; living unmarried<sup>9</sup> in June, 1708.

\*In certain publications<sup>6</sup> this man is erroneously assigned to a Thomas and Hannah (—) Wright though no Thomas is otherwise shown to have lived in Sudbury at that time.

#### REFERENCES

1. History of Sudbury, Mass., A. S. Hudson, 1889, pp. 26-7, 33-4, 45, 56, 74-7, 111, 115; Annals of Sudbury, Wayland and Maynard, Mass., A. S., Hudson, 1891, p. 2.
2. History of Framingham, Mass., J. H. Temple, 1887, pp. 71-5, 531, 657; History of Cambridge, Mass., L. R. Paige, 1877, pp. 5, 39, 620; Eames-Ames Genealogy, W. S. Ames, 1931, pp. 167-8.
3. Walter Haynes Genealogy, F. and F. M. Haynes, 1929, pp. 19-20, 31; Hudson's Sudbury, pp. 32-3.
4. Temple's Framingham, p. 634; Keyes Genealogy, Asa Keyes, 1880, p. 2; Howe Genealogy, D. W. & G. B. Howe, 1929, I, 7; Stephen Gates Genealogy, C. O. Gates, 1898, pp. 10-2.
5. Vital Records of Marlborough, Mass., pp. 125, 345, 375.
6. Vital Records of Sudbury, Mass., pp. 157, 290-1, 297, 316, 331; New England Register XVII, 256; LIII, 359; Pope's Pioneers, p. 54, 516; Savage, IV, 655.
7. Suffolk Co., Mass., Probates, X, 157-60, abstracted by Miss Eva Moffatt, Allston, Mass.; The American Genealogist, D. L. Jacobus, XII, 177.
8. Middlesex Co., Mass., Probate Files No. 1936 and No. 25665, abstracted by Mrs. J. T. Watts, Washington, D. C.
9. Middlesex Deeds, III, 271; XVI, 491, by Watts.
10. Pope's Pioneers, Supp., xii.
11. History of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 122, 224-5, 239, 248; New England Register, XXXVIII, 220; XL, 391-406; XLI, 78, 209-10; Hudson's Sudbury, pp. 195, et seq.
12. Ibid., pp. 56, 133, 169-71, 256-7, 266, 269-71.
13. General Society of Colonial Wars, Annual Register, 1896, p. 422; Register, District of Columbia, 1897, p. 82-3; Year Book, Massachusetts, 1897, p. 236; Illinois Chapter, 1900, p. 307; Supp. to Gen. Soc. Reg. 1906, p. 375; Index of Ancestors, Gen. Soc. 1922, p. 552; Lineage Book Daughters of American Colonists, 1929, I, 114-5; Register Massachusetts Society Colonial Dames, 1927, p. 496.
14. History of Marlborough, Mass., C. Hudson, 1862, pp. 70-83; Bodge's King Philip's War, pp. 218-31; Plympton Genealogy, L. B. Chase, 1884, pp. 58-9; Walter Haynes Genealogy, pp. 35-9; Hudson's Sudbury, pp. 213-258, 266; History of Middlesex Co., Mass., S. A. Drake, 1880, II, 299-300, 362-7, 463-8; Hudson's Annals of Sudbury, etc. pp. 12-8; History of Middlesex Co., Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1890, II, 382-97; Original Narratives of Early American History, XV, Narratives of the Indian Wars, 1913, pp. 80, 92-4; Eames-Ames Genealogy, W. S. Ames, 1931, pp. 167-8; Massachusetts Colonial Records, V, 124; New England Register XXXV, 218-21.
15. Hudson's Sudbury, pp. 269-73; New England Register, XXX, 192-3; Year Book of Society of Colonial Wars, Mass., 1898, p. 111.
16. Learned Genealogy, L. W. Learned & J. G. E. Larned, 1882, pp. 19-21; same, 1898, pp. 34-6; Clapp Family, E. Clapp, 1876, pp. 198-9; Vital Records of Sherborn Mass., p. 211.
17. Vital Records of Rutland, Mass., p. 255; History of Rutland, J. Reed, 1836, pp. 105-6; Willard Genealogy, C. H. Pope, 1915, pp. 9, 45, 51; Rice Family, A. H. Ward, 1858, p. 52.
18. Vital Records of Framingham, Mass., p. 212.
19. Hudson's Sudbury, pp. 56, 169-71, 300; Pope, p. 516; Savage, IV, 655.
20. A History of Matrimonial Institutions, G. E. Howard, 1904, II, 191; Middlesex Co. Court Files for October, 1664 No. 2533.
21. Erroneous statements will be found in Pope's Pioneers, p. 516; J. H. Temple's Framingham, 1887, pp. 754-5; Hubbard Thompson Memorial, L. K. Stewart, 1914, pp. 336-41; Vital Records of Sudbury, p. 157; New England Register XIX, 127; XXII, 143; LIII, 227 (and see 359); W. Barry's Framingham, 1847, p. 449; Hudson's Sudbury, p. 56, etc.

---

---

## APPENDIX "A"

---

### CAUSES OF EMIGRATION OF THE PURITANS

**I**N ANY genealogical work the controlling causes of a family removal are of primary interest; and of all removals, that of emigration from an age-long English home to the privations and unspeakable hardships of an early American Colony, is most significant. And, indeed, no portion of English History is more exciting or interesting than that which led to the settlement of the American Colonies.

In this connection, it is interesting to note that among more than eighty families recorded in Volume II of *DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES*, there is found a great variety of backgrounds and tendencies, namely: Pilgrims, disciples of theocracy in New Haven, puritans who remained in the Bay, and other Puritans of probably greater tolerance who removed to the Connecticut River, as well as a sprinkling of ancestors resident in Virginia, Delaware, New Jersey, and Long Island. But in this Volume I, every one of the upwards of eighty families migrated to what is now Massachusetts and remained there for from three to six generations, or with the exception of the Cutlers, until the Revolutionary period or later.

It will be remembered that of the three earliest American colonies of that vicinity, Plymouth was settled in 1620 by the Mayflower contingent called "Pilgrims"; [*DAWES-GATES*, II, 853]; Massachusetts Bay settlement was begun in 1622-3 and was enormously increased in 1630 by a wealthier group called "Puritans"; [*ibid*, II, 855]; and the settlement along the Connecticut River, which was the nucleus of Connecticut Colony [*ibid*, II, 857] began in 1635 and was made mainly by people who had first come to Massachusetts Bay but appear to have found themselves out of accord with certain restrictions there.

Of these, the "Pilgrims", while in their English homes, were wholly dissatisfied with the State Church<sup>11</sup> and insisted upon a complete separation from it, thus acquiring the name also of "Separatists". They crossed the ocean, primarily that they might worship as they saw fit, and, at the same time, retain their national identity.

The "Puritans" who settled Massachusetts Bay were most of them content<sup>2</sup> [see the "Puritans' Farewell to England" signed at Yarmouth aboard the "Arabella" April 17, 1630, (see pp. 709-711)], with the faith and doctrine of the Church of England but resented, as popish, many forms which had crept into usage. As far as their religious life in England was concerned, they desired not to *leave* the church but rather to purify it of those forms, which explains the name applied to

them. In America it has been consistently applied to the entire group who left England to settle Massachusetts Bay Colony. Of the "Puritan" emigrants, probably only a small minority came solely for religious freedom and a large majority for economic reasons and advantages. Individual motives for participation in the adventure of emigration would have varied considerably, but the deciding factors for the majority were doubtless, first, the desire to become actual and extensive owners of land, instead of remaining copy-holders at the mercy of manorial landlords;<sup>1</sup> and, second, the over-powering desire to be free from the excessive taxation levied by King James I and especially by his son, King Charles, the rulers under whom the emigrating Puritans had actually lived.

This summary is prepared as a brief for the common people to suggest the cumulative annoyances and injustices which preceded and led to the emigration of the Puritans to the new world.<sup>4, 6-7, 10-19, 22-8, 30, 34-8, 40</sup>

The reign of James I (1603-1625), and the régime of his son, Charles I (1625-1649) show a summary of the harassments which were endured in England by the early emigrants to Massachusetts Bay, and which they became so eager to leave behind them. The Puritans had by this time increased greatly in numbers, resentment, and determination, and had become a formidable party.<sup>3</sup> James was equally intolerant of them and of the Romanists and even invited further trouble by attempting to force Scotland<sup>6, 9</sup> to adopt Episcopacy. He once wrote of himself that he was "not a monsieur who can shift his religion as easily as he can shift his shirt when he cometh from tennis".<sup>9</sup> Yet James, himself, as well as his predecessors and his son Charles after him, required that very shifting by their people. Neither the personal choice of the subjects nor their religious faith carried any weight. James said,<sup>9</sup> prophetically, of the Puritans in 1604, "I shall make them conform themselves, or I will harry them out of the Land".

During the period, 1622-40, literally thousands of Puritans emigrated. In the twelve years of Laud's administration<sup>13</sup> "there went over about four thousand planters . . . carrying over with them in materials, money, and cattle, etc., not less than to the value of one hundred ninety-two thousand pounds besides the merchandize intended for traffick with the Indians. Upon the whole, it has been computed, that the four settlements of New England, viz. Plymouth, the Massachusetts Bay, Connecticut and Newhaven, all which were accomplished before the beginning of the civil wars, drained England of four or five hundred thousand pounds in money (a very great sum in those days) and if the persecution of the puritans had continued twelve years longer, it is thought that a fourth part of the riches of the kingdom would have passed out of it through this channel. The chief leaders of the people into these parts were the puritan ministers, who being hunted from one diocese to another, at last chose this wilderness for their retreat, which has proved . . . a great accession to the strength and commerce of these kingdoms. I have before me a list of seventy-seven divines, who became pastors of sundry little churches and congregations in that country before the year 1640, all of whom were [earlier] in orders in the church of England."<sup>13</sup> Indeed, one outstanding result of the Laudian decade was "the practical extinction of the Puritan clergy . . ."<sup>6</sup> in England. But by April, 1637, another reversal of policy took place in England for Charles, "aroused at the large number of departures to America,

made a proclamation which forbade any except such as would conform, from leaving the Kingdom. [But] Whereas they earlier departed openly, they now departed by stealth."<sup>10</sup> For though the clergy were forbidden to emigrate unless they would conform, they were also forbidden to preach in England unless they would conform, which means they were to be starved into submission to the will of King Charles and of Laud. Especially was stealth a necessary procedure for the ministers who sought to emigrate, for the vessels were often searched and it became necessary for them to resort to subterfuge, either using an assumed name, embarking at sea after the vessel had cleared port, going first to the continent and re-embarking, or failing to list their names as passengers.

But much more intolerable than the religious situation were the economic conditions. The reign of James had been extravagant and he had been merciless in his demands. If Parliament did not vote him subsidies furnishing as much income as he desired, he would imprison members of the House of Commons and then raise money illegally (on his own initiative) by laying impositions, by selling monopolies, and by demanding a series of voluntary gifts ("benevolences") from his people.<sup>9</sup>

When Charles succeeded<sup>15</sup> (1625), he inherited not only division and conflict in the Church as well as his father's debts, but also that father's belief that the king could do no wrong and that his wish and will were equivalent to law. He had the heritage of extravagant tastes, and needing a large income asked his first Parliament to vote funds "for a war" but named no specific amount nor specified what war.

The House of Commons, already dominated by *thinking* subjects and permeated with a growing spirit of Liberty and a considerable Puritan tendency, distrusted the judgment and influence of Charles' prime minister, Buckingham, demanded his resignation and, pending that removal, voted the king only two subsidies,<sup>5</sup> or about £140,000 which was admittedly quite inadequate to meet the needs of government. Charles raised some money by Privy Seal loans and during the Second Parliament, in June, 1626, warned the House of Commons that if they would not vote him a satisfactory income he would "use other resolutions". Their reply was a second demand that Buckingham should first be dismissed, and as the Lords by now showed signs of sympathy with this course Charles, obstinately loyal to his favorite, dissolved Parliament before it had voted into legality a discussed resolution of supply. Of actual necessity, he then raised moneys in various ways (which, in time of peace, were all illegal without sanction of Parliament) such as a continuation<sup>5</sup> of the levy of tonnage and poundage (a customs charge, or "duty of five in the hundred, for the guarding of the seas");<sup>20</sup> a levy of [money to build] ships from the port towns; impositions of arbitrary assessments; request for free will gifts ("benevolences"); enforced billeting of troops (undisciplined, unpaid, and unruly) upon common householders; forced loans, and punishment of those who refused to participate. He demanded an income equal to five subsidies, about £350,000, by means of these loans, and for refusal to pay he imprisoned gentlemen (including members of the House of Commons) without filing any charges or permitting bail,<sup>15,21</sup> and among the lower classes he pressed common men into the army which was forming for service on the continent.<sup>18</sup> Though he collected about £236,000, he also created a general and bitter

discontent.<sup>5,18</sup> He considered extending, in 1627, the ancient impost of ship-money [vide infra] to the land shires as well as the marine counties but protest was so vehement that for the time being he desisted. In March, 1628, Charles' third Parliament assembled and promptly showed itself even more intolerant of the King's arbitrary acts than its predecessors and was, consequently, less tractable. Sensing this, Charles made a virtue of necessity and<sup>4</sup> "after much altercation and many evasions, agreed to a compromise, commonly known as the "Petition of Right", which, if he had faithfully adhered to it, would have averted a long series of calamities". Parliament responded promptly to his promise by granting the ample supply of five subsidies. By ratifying the "Petition of Right", "which is the second Great Charter of the liberties of England", Charles "bound himself never again to raise money without the consent of the Houses, never again to imprison any person, except in due course of law, and never to subject his people to the Jurisdiction of courts-martial", nor to billet soldiers on individuals.<sup>18</sup> This was a notable victory for Parliament, and national rejoicing, deep joy and hope attended the announcement of Charles' solemn sanction of this great act. But disillusionment soon followed for, the supply granted by Parliament being quickly collected, within three weeks it became evident that Charles had no intention of observing the conditions of the compact into which he had entered.<sup>4</sup> The Lords as well as Commons were deeply alarmed and antagonized,<sup>5</sup> and conflict between the ruler and Parliament continued until he prorogued that body on June 26, 1628. During the recess Charles showed himself determined to ignore the wishes of Commons (now overwhelmingly Puritan) in all that related to the Church and even attempted to silence all religious discussion<sup>8,15</sup> by royal command which was merely another way of saying that the Puritans would be punished for even expressing their opinions. After this recess; Parliament met on January 20, 1629, in an irritable humor. The conflict between the King and Commons was continuous. Twice when Sir John Eliot, patriot and staunch supporter of a limited monarchy, attempted to discuss Commons' displeasure with the king's failure to conform to the "Petition of Right", Sir John Finch, Speaker, at the king's behest required their adjournment, merely to avoid consideration of the subject.<sup>5,15,16</sup> On the second of these occasions, March 2, 1629, Eliot asserted the right of Commons to adjourn itself and he also tendered to the speaker, to be put to a vote, three resolutions of remonstrance bearing upon the King's conduct in respect to religion and taxation. Finch, the Speaker, reluctantly (under previous command of the king) refused to put the question and rose to signify adjournment, but he was forcibly held in his chair by members Holles and Valentine, while other members locked the doors of the chamber and Eliot's resolutions were read to the body (probably by Eliot himself) and carried by acclamation after which the house voted its own adjournment. In the meanwhile, the king had sent two messengers who futilely demanded obedient adjournment and he was on the point of sending his guard to break in and enforce the demand.<sup>15,16</sup> Two days later, on March 4, he had Eliot, Holles, Valentine, and six others thrown in the Tower and fined from £500 to £2,000 apiece. There the first named, during this, his second imprisonment, died in November, 1632, and some of the others were incarcerated until the Long Parliament in 1640. Then, on March 10, 1629, Charles dissolved this, his third, Parliament, after which he refused to call another for eleven years

during which time his rule was absolute. "Only once in history had there been an interval of even half that length."<sup>4</sup> By nullifying Parliament, Charles practically made himself a despot. He became his own prime minister; tolerated as Judges of the infamous political court, the "Star Chamber", and of the "High Commission", a religious inquisition, only those who were subservient to his will.<sup>4</sup> Ecclesiastically, he deferred to the bigoted Laud and sponsored his policies. He was bent upon absolutism in both religion and government.<sup>6</sup>

During this period of Charles' personal rule, the unrest of the nation increased alarmingly, not only among the middle classes, the Puritans, the reformers, but also among the titled classes and the king's erstwhile friends. For in all points but one, that of a standing army, "the government of England was as despotic as that of France."<sup>4</sup> And Charles dared not impose taxes to provide a standing army lest there might be "an immediate and irresistible explosion". If, however, he could have found means to provide an army, he felt that it would be possible for him to do away permanently with Parliament and the constitutional restraints resting in that body.<sup>18</sup>

The methods of arbitrary taxation employed by him during the eleven year Parliamentary interim (for other than army needs) included:<sup>5,7,15,16</sup>

1. Distrain of knighthood, whereby every freeholder having an annual income of £40 from his land was required<sup>15,18</sup> to become a knight or to pay a fine, compounded in size, for his refusal.

2. Fines for defective titles to estates.<sup>7</sup>

3. Fines for building cottages on plots of less than four acres of land.<sup>7</sup>

4. Fines for non-compliance with the King's proclamation that all gentry should leave London and reside upon their estates.<sup>7</sup>

5. Selling of patents for a monopoly of trade in soap, starch, beer, and other commodities.<sup>5,7,8,15,18</sup>

6. Arbitrary demands for loans from wealthy individuals.<sup>7</sup>

7. Extensive enlargements<sup>5,15,18</sup> of the "royal forests" (wooded or otherwise!) whereby large tracts hitherto privately owned were incorporated within the "forests" over which the crown could enforce a special foresting law and then require heavy fines from those whose lands were thus included, for their disforestation. Rockingham Forest which had been six miles in compass, was enlarged to sixty, and Waltham Forest was made to include more than half of co. Essex.<sup>5,7</sup>

8. Exemptions were sold;<sup>15,18</sup> goods were seized for nonpayment of duties;<sup>15</sup> tonnage and poundage was extended<sup>18</sup> by the adding of further impositions in 1635, and moreover was not legal in its normal extent of "five in the hundred" except when sanctioned by parliament."<sup>5</sup>

9. The Act of Revocation in Scotland which arbitrarily annulled all grants made by the crown, and all alienations to the prejudice of the crown since the time of Queen Mary's accession.

10. "Most famous and most disastrous of all his financial experiments"<sup>5</sup> were the three levies in 1634-6 of ship-money. By early precedent<sup>25</sup> the inland counties of England were, in time of war, required to furnish the necessary land soldiers, with their equipment, for national protection; and the coastal counties, because of their marine interests, investments and experience, were to furnish ships, crews and their equipments (or money in lieu thereof) for national protection on the

sea. This provision of ships and their crews pertained to a specified period of service, as three or six months.<sup>20,25</sup> In 1628, this requirement amounted to a tax of 5%. In addition to this established custom,<sup>20</sup> in 1634, though the nation was at peace,<sup>20,25</sup> Charles levied on the five port towns an excessive demand for twenty-seven extra ships with equipment, or a money equivalent of £104,000, payable at once.<sup>20</sup> This amounted in most towns to "fifteen subsidies per man",<sup>20</sup> yet it was not definitely apportioned and as a consequence, ordinary citizens and merchants were taxed from £10 to £25 and upward while the King's officers, Earls, Lords, etc., who had great estates and large incomes, paid, perhaps, 40 shillings or but £3 to £5 at most.<sup>20</sup> In 1635, Charles dared fate by issuing a second writ for ship-money, and more especially by broadening the scope of this tax, making it apply to inland counties as well as coastal, and requiring of the forty-five counties of England<sup>20</sup> a total of 47 ships or £208,000. The public could hardly help noting that of the 47 ships they paid for, only 27 were actually outfitted.<sup>20</sup> And, when in 1636, Charles required again a total of 45 ships, which amounted to "three or four subsidies" per man the country over,<sup>20</sup> he had unwittingly sowed the germ of a great revolution".<sup>25</sup> This tax was made to apply to personal as well as real property and became cumulative in its offensiveness, for, though vessels could be rented privately for 4 or 5 shillings per ton per month (and indeed that is what the king paid to owners) the charge made for them, when inland counties must pay the king his price, was 16 to 18 shillings and upward, making a cost of about £7,000 for a 700 ton vessel to each county.<sup>20</sup> Moreover,<sup>20</sup> though, during the Spanish war, each vessel would have been equipped with 15, 20 or 25 rounds of ammunition, Charles required the counties in this peace-time to purchase of him for each vessel's equipment 40, 45, or 50 rounds of powder and bullets, most of which was unused, returned to his stores at the end of the period of training and resold to the counties at full price the following year. Other equipment, such as anchors, cables, rigging, etc., which did not need replacing was also resold to each county, annually, at its full price.<sup>5</sup>

During this time Charles convinced, himself, of his "Divine Right", sought to quiet the resentment of all classes (for even the nobles felt it) by getting a (directed) opinion as to the legality of the ship-money tax. An amenable official readily furnished such an opinion. As the clamor against it rose, a test case was taken before the twelve judges of the Exchequer chamber. This case was against John Hampden, a squire of Bucks who had been assessed on one of his properties the nominal sum of twenty shillings, and during its trial he was aided by Lord Saye, "the stoutest puritan among the peers".<sup>5,26</sup>

The king's face was saved temporarily by a nominal decision in his favor, but "the burden of ship-money rate was intolerable to rich and poor, to the clergy as well as the laity."<sup>25</sup> The second levy was paid in 1636, with reluctance which had not yet refined into defiance. The third writ was issued October 9, 1636, when legality was denied even by leaders of the nobility for in December, 1640, the Long Parliament officially pronounced it illegal.<sup>25</sup>

These, then, were some of the underlying causes which brought about the Great Emigration of 1630, wherein eight hundred or more English men and women "had the courage to break away from the land of their fathers, cross an uncharted ocean" in pitiably small vessels to encounter unknown perils from a savage race and from the wild beasts of the trackless forests.

## REFERENCES

1. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 5, 12, 20-42; The Founding of New England, J. T. Adams, 1921, pp. 120 et seq.
2. Facsimile of first (1630) edition of the Puritans' Farewell to England, pub. by N. E. Society in the City of New York, Preface and pp. 1-10.
3. History of the Church of Scotland, W. M. Hetherington, 1844, pp. 84-91; Dictionary of National Biography, IX, 390-1.
4. History of England from the Accession of James the Second, Lord Macaulay, I, 74, 78, 87-99.
5. Political History of England (From James I to the Restoration), F. C. Montague, 1907, VII, 132-4, 138-43, 145-55, 158-63, 164-88, 201-23, 242.
6. History of English Nonconformity, H. W. Clark, 1911, I, 235, 249-69, 287-94, 308, 310.
7. Life of Charles the First, C. W. Coit, 1926, pp. 118, 121-124, 174.
8. History of England, J. Lingard, 1859, VII, 360-6, 380-7, especially 391-6.
9. Dictionary of National Biography, X, 605-6, 608-11, 614-7.
10. New American Cyclopaedia, XIII, 666-7; Britannica, 11th Ed., XXII, 665; Americana (1928) XXIII, 29; New International Encyclopaedia, XIX, 383.
11. History of English Nonconformity, H. W. Clark, 1911, I, 175-92, 295-7, 293, 328.
12. History of the Christian Church, 1517-1648, W. Moeller, 1900, pp. 334-6, 346.
13. History of the Puritans, D. Neal, 1754, I, 91, 154, 172, 216, 546-8, 576-7, 595-6, 658.
14. Dictionary of National Biography, XX, 332-6.
15. Ibid., IV, 68-74.
16. Ibid., VI, pp. 604-7, VII, 14-5; IX, 1056; XX, 81-2, 1184-90.
17. Lippincott's Dictionary of Biography, J. H. Thomas, 1886, pp. 614-5, 895, 1262, 1498; Webster's New International Dictionary, 1927, pp. 738, 1722, 1793; Dictionary of National Biography, VI, 504-5; IX, 535-45; XI, 628-32.
18. Constitutional History of England, G. B. Adams, 1921, pp. 283-305.
19. Webster's New International Dictionary, pp. 812, 2070, 2129.
20. "An Humble Remonstrance Against the Tax of Ship-Money Lately Imposed", by Wm. Prynne, 1636; printed 1643 by John White for Michael Sparke, Sr., "at the signe of the Blew-Bible in Greene-Arbour", pp. 3, 5-16.
21. Dictionary of National Biography, V, 515.
22. New American Cyclopaedia, XIII, 666-7.
23. Murray's Dictionary.
24. Dictionary of National Biography, XVI, 432-7; XI, 880-1; Oxoniensis, III, 844, 876.
25. Suffolk Institute of Archaeology, 1904, Ship-Money Returns for co. Suffolk, 1639-40, pp. IV, VI-XV, 43-4, 55, 57, 75, 93, 96, 176, 179.
26. Dictionary of National Biography, VI, 1297-9; VIII 606-7, 1138-41; XI, 633.
27. The Winthrop Fleet of 1630, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 10-4; Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 23-34.
28. History of Massachusetts Bay, Thomas Hutchinson, 1764, I, 490-8.
29. Calamy Revised, A. G. Matthews, 1934, pp. XII-XIII.
30. Suffolk Institute of Archaeology and National History, 1904, being "The Ship-Money Returns for the County of Suffolk 1639-40". Transcribed and edited by Vincent B. Redstone, especially pp. 111-XVI.

---

## APPENDIX "B"

---

### THE ACQUIREMENT, VALUATION AND LOSS OF THE NEW ENGLAND CHARTER

THE personal attitude or reaction of the average early colonist, to many facts or conditions which they faced daily, is so remote from our modern-day minds that occasional recapitulation seems justified, and in that connection nothing was more vital to them than the charters under which they removed from the old world and lived in the new. The charter experience of each colony differed, but since every family recorded in this volume became resident in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, the original charter of it alone will be discussed here.

During the fifty-four years of the continuance of its charter as the cornerstone of the colony, the anxiety for its retention and fear of its loss was necessarily an inherent part of the life of every colonist.

Following the loss of the charter in 1686 and the subsequent rule of the royal governor Andros, which was ended by the English Revolution of November, 1688, (whereby King James had been succeeded by the Prince of Orange and Andros and his officials overthrown and imprisoned in Boston) a committee of seven colonists, including Thomas<sup>2</sup> Danforth (NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>) was directed to assemble all possible evidence of misrule during Andros' incumbency for presentation in England in extenuation of the conduct of the colonists as well as in condemnation of various acts and requirements of Andros and his underlings. This mass of evidence was sent to England in the care of Thomas<sup>2</sup> Oakes (Edward<sup>1</sup>) and of Elisha<sup>2</sup> Cook (Richard<sup>1</sup>). It covered many phases of complaint, some more or less trivial and some undoubtedly exaggerated. Much of the evidence commands credence for it was given on the sworn word of patriarchs of the colony, ministers of the gospel, the solid men of the communities, who *knew* the Indian menace as Andros could not even dream it; who knew what burden of toil would be required to pay the taxes so calmly required by the wealthy Andros and the salaries of him and his minions; who would be mice rather than men if they did not resent the requirement that they should re-acquire from Andros on his own terms the farms and homes that they had many years earlier carved out of the wilderness.

But, to start at the beginning, in about 1620-2, the Rev. John White of Dorchester, England, called<sup>18</sup> "a conforming Puritan of Liberal views" and also called<sup>16</sup> "The Founder of Massachusetts", was chiefly instrumental in the forming in England of the investing "Dorchester Company", made up at first<sup>16</sup> of one hundred

and twenty-one men, of whom twenty-one were ministers<sup>16</sup> and the others mostly Puritan laymen. This company financed the establishment of a settlement of fishermen and farmers at Cape Ann (see map, p. 673) in 1622-3.<sup>16</sup> There our THOMAS<sup>1</sup> GARDNER was at first in charge of the land operations followed by our ROGER<sup>1</sup> CONANT who, in 1624, removed the remnants of the unsuccessful settlement to Salem, but by 1626 this "Dorchester Company" found itself financially unable to carry on.<sup>14</sup> The Rev. Mr. White then enlisted the interest of a group of London merchants and some wealthy gentleman<sup>16</sup> with Puritan leanings who formed themselves into "The New England Company", which took over what remained of the Dorchester experiment and sent John Endicott to Salem as governor. The religious interests of the first group dominated their action in promoting colonization,<sup>15</sup> even as the business interests of the merchants of the second group were presently injected into the general plan, altering it, at least, until some stronger urge should develop.

By this reorganized sponsoring English group, there was acquired in March, 1627-8, a patent, deed or indenture for the tract of land in New England lying between the Merrimac and Charles Rivers, as well as three miles beyond each river and running "from sea to sea", although there existed a prior claim by Sir Ferdinando Gorges to that territory which later made trouble for all concerned (vide infra). Their acquirement of this right to the land itself, was promptly followed by a petition from the said "New England Company" to Charles I for a charter<sup>26</sup> of incorporation which should confirm the patent and also vest the company with civil powers. This petition was granted, and the charter passed the seals on March 4, 1628-9, and ordained that all who should be made free [men] of the company should be forever a body corporate and politic . . .", and the name of the group was again changed<sup>16</sup> to the "Company of Massachusetts Bay in New England" with "power to make laws and orders for the general good, not repugnant to the laws of England, and to punish all violators of such laws, even against the subjects of England who might visit there for trade . . .".<sup>21</sup> The project had thus become a "joint-stock company of the usual commercial type . . . invested with the full powers of a trading and colonizing corporation, with rights of government and full title to the soil."

During 1629, a considerable change of personnel occurred in the company, by the withdrawal of certain men and the acquirement of their interests by others, including John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop, Thomas<sup>1</sup> Dudley, Richard<sup>1</sup> Saltonstall, who are by some writers called "of the extreme and most unyielding type of Puritan", and who were already weighing the advisability of personal removal as colonists, so, while the interest of the merchants investing in the venture would still have leaned toward trade, the interests of some of this incoming group would have been consonant with those of the original "Dorchester Company", leaning definitely toward the establishment of a colony where a religious organization<sup>13</sup> pleasing to them could be established. And, to anticipate, the rank and file who were presently to be interested and included in the project, as participants, were undoubtedly primarily concerned with escaping from the intolerably heavy taxes and restrictions of the English government, though some were undoubtedly moved also secondly, or perhaps equally, by a desire for religious freedom.

The Puritans were not Separatists as the Pilgrims had been, nor were most

of them intolerant of the Church of England itself, but only of the many forms and rituals which had become embodied within it.

As is evident then, this project involved three classes: Men of means who helped to finance the plan for business reasons; other men of means who helped to finance and planned to also participate, and the greater number who emigrated but could invest little or nothing in the company. Of these, the second group had most to gain or lose, and it seems perfectly natural that they who were venturing their own lives and fortunes as well as those of their families in the dangers of the new world in so uncertain an undertaking, should desire security and permanence on as many points as possible.

With the possibility of a change of governmental policy, especially in case of a change of rulers; or a change of personnel in the sponsoring English joint-stock company and a consequent change of internal policy; with a recognition of unavoidable inconvenience and delay in many governmental matters if their seat of government remained three thousand miles away and with the certainty of a lack of understanding by a remote government of developing and changing colonial conditions and needs, it is but natural that the intending emigrants, some of them gentlemen, men of means and hitherto of official position, should try to assure themselves and their associates of as great safety of civic and other rights' and as great permanence of plan as was possible. It was undoubtedly with these things in mind that in July, 1628, John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop with his brother-in-law, Emanuel<sup>1</sup> Downing\* journeyed north to Lincolnshire<sup>14,16,18</sup> at the invitation of Isaac<sup>1</sup> Johnson,\*\* one of the intending emigrants, to confer with Johnson's brother-in-law, Theophilus, the fourth Earl of Lincoln who was definitely sympathetic with the views of the intending colonists. Apparently, as a result of this conference, a matter of great moment was brought<sup>22</sup> before the "New England Company" on July 28, namely, that the actual government of the plantation in the new world should be transferred "to those that shall inhabite there, and not to continue the same in subordinacion to the company heer [in England], as now is."<sup>14,22</sup> This move was followed by a meeting at Cambridge on August 26, 1628, of a dozen or more of the substantial men who were considering emigration and the signing there of an agreement by twelve of them<sup>14,17,18</sup> that they would emigrate in person, with their families in the following spring, "provided always that before the last of September next the whole government, together with the patent for the said plantation, be first, by an order of court, legally transferred and established to remain with us and others which shall inhabit upon the said plantation . . .".<sup>17</sup> This ultimatum was submitted to the General Court on August 28, which at an adjourned meeting on August 29, 1629, strangely enough approved the transfer of both government and charter to New England.<sup>22</sup> To the colonists, this was a priceless boon but to the English government an absolutely unprecedented, and eventually a very disturbing, concession.

With this objective attained, the company, on October 20, elected John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop as governor of the "Massachusetts Bay Colony", and plans went ahead rapidly in preparation for the Great Adventure. Vessels were bought, supplies assembled,

\*Uncle of our ABIGAIL (GOADE) MOULTON.

\*\*Isaac<sup>1</sup> Johnson had married Arabella, daughter of Thomas, third Earl of Lincoln. These two people, accustomed to luxury and ease, both died in 1630, the very year of their arrival in New England.

prospective emigrants signed up, homes disposed of and finally the time arrived for final farewells to dear ones who in most cases would not be seen again in this world.

In March, 1630, the fleet of eleven vessels was ready,<sup>18</sup> but a calm and other unavoidable incidents delayed the departure until April. The flagship, named the "Arabella" in honor of Isaac<sup>1</sup> Johnson's wife, carried John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop, constituted head of the new government, and the precious charter. The eleven vessels of the fleet carried at least seven hundred passengers and their possessions<sup>18</sup> some writers estimate the number at nearer one thousand or even fifteen hundred. They carried also not only the hopes for a new and fuller life for these people — or the alternative of utter loss, wreck and death for them all — but they carried as well the germinated seed for a new nation, men and women of vision who had the courage to endure greatly, that great things might eventuate, and we are here to profit from the results of their vision and courage.

That fleet has been called "the greatest that ever assembled to carry Englishmen overseas to a new homeland." The first four vessels of the fleet set sail on April 8, and the entire eleven arrived at the New England coast between June 12 to July 6, 1630.

But to revert to the charter, as early as 1633, its validity was attacked<sup>29</sup> by Gorges and Mason to whom the Bay territory really had been previously granted; from 1635-7 its life was further threatened.<sup>20,29</sup> But on the whole from 1630 to 1660 turmoil and disturbance in England were so dominant as to practically eliminate serious consideration<sup>14</sup> of colonial conditions or conduct. The arbitrary rule by Charles I, financial bankruptcy, the revolt of the Short and Long Parliaments, civil wars, execution of the king followed by the eleven-year rule of the Puritan minority under Cromwell, were all-absorbing. "This entire breaking down of the customary administrative and executive powers in England and the dominance of a party (Cromwell's) favorable to Massachusetts explains why the Puritans were enabled to set up in Massachusetts a form of government that was an anomaly in the history of American Colonization."<sup>14</sup> For during these twenty odd years of comparative freedom from interference or oversight, the Bay Colony had developed, probably beyond their own wildest dreams. The colonists must have, from the first, been surprised themselves at their unique good fortune in the literal possession of their charter for that was a basic point which differentiated them from all other colonies. It automatically engendered a sense of independence which grew by leaps and bounds as the years of release from restraint passed by, until it symbolized — indeed *became* — the very soul and life of their civic being. And even as the mother company in England had ignored the letter of its own law to elect John<sup>1</sup> Winthrop as governor at a meeting of October, 1629, so the authorities in the colony occasionally varied from a strictly legal conformity<sup>17,28</sup> to the letter of their charter. They may have believed that the (quoted) earlier precedent as well as the unanticipated developments in their civic life justified this over-stepping by the arbitrary adoption of such powers as were necessary for the orderly governing of the colony, but it eventually became strongly instrumental in losing them their precious charter. For gradually Massachusetts had become almost "an independent commonwealth exercising all the prerogatives of sovereignty"<sup>14</sup> The privilege that their taxes might be voted by those who were

to pay them, must have been a prerogative precious to possess and bitter to lose.

They would have been less than human had they failed to value beyond our personal understanding, the independence and freedom from interference which had gradually become theirs. But after the death of Cromwell in 1658 and the restoration of the monarchy under Charles II, in 1660, conditions began to change.<sup>26</sup> A greater quiet in home affairs, in addition to a need for increased income, caused the king and especially his councilors to plan new and tighter trade restrictions<sup>19</sup> upon all their colonies, but especially upon Massachusetts Bay because of its disturbing independence. They theorized that the only use or excuse for the existence of colonies was for the aggrandizement of the English government and the increase of its revenues,<sup>28</sup> but colonists who really faced the dangers and hardships of early New England would very naturally feel that such endurance might justly bring a certain personal recompense and profit. The views were too diverse to admit of a common understanding.

With the voiding of all the New England charters in mind, but especially of Massachusetts Bay's charter and the substitution of a much more stringent one already under discussion, the king in July, 1664, sent over to Boston two vessels carrying three or four hundred troops<sup>20</sup> and four commissioners to demand subjection or submission of the colony to the king's wishes, including a return to him of their charter, the raising of a colonial army to assist his regulars in subjugating the Dutch of New Netherlands, the requirement that henceforth church membership should not be a requisite for freemanship and the franchise, and with the significant reminder that the king was sole owner of all lands — implying a direful threat to their earlier independence. The Massachusetts colonists, following a line of delay and evasion, appointed a committee to draw up a petition to the king for the continuance of the privileges enjoyed under the charter and after more than two months of care in preparing it, the General Court adopted it on October 19, and it was sent to England but failed to satisfy the king. In the meanwhile, these commissioners had come to terms with the colonies of Plymouth, Connecticut, New Haven, Rhode Island and New Amsterdam, and by May, 1665, returned to Boston to accept their submission! In that they were disappointed for their every move and requirement was courteously but firmly checked and evaded and their ultimate report to the king on the Bay Colony's conduct was anything but favorable. "The colony had [temporarily] saved its rights of government at the expense of its reputation in England and the impression gained ground that Massachusetts was on the eve of rebellion." "Though for the moment Massachusetts escaped an attack upon her prerogative, the slight she had inflicted upon the king's representatives was not easily or soon forgotten." Prime Minister Clarendon demanded that Massachusetts Bay should send agents to England with authority to settle the various questions in dispute but compliance was so delayed as to cause criticism, and when these agents did arrive their being only partially empowered, increased the aggravation. A second group of agents was demanded and sent — and who can say whether the delays which occurred repeatedly were intentional or unavoidable? Many protestations of utter loyalty were made and a gift from the colony to the king of twenty-six "great masts" for use in his navy served temporarily to fend off eventualities, but by 1671, reports were abroad that Massachusetts was ignoring or deliberately breaking

the trade laws of the Navigation Act, i.e., buying from and selling to other countries than England and from then until 1676-7 the colony faced an ever increasing threat of loss of its charter. During this time a commissioner was appointed to strictly enforce the trade laws and in 1675-6 New England also passed through the awful experience of King Philip's War with its appalling loss of life, burning of homes and whole towns, in addition to the actual cost of unexpected military operations. They certainly needed the greatest profits obtainable from unrestricted trade, but official England was quite undisturbed and unconcerned about this expense and injury endured by her colonies — the major part of which, both as to life and property, pertained to Massachusetts. So the king's insistence upon his royal prerogative (of complete land-ownership, and power to invalidate royal charters) abetted by "the sordidness of the commercial interest of the parent country, overruled considerations of justice and honor, and placed itself in resolute antagonism to the freedom of Englishmen in America."<sup>20</sup> Moreover, certain arch enemies of the colonies, some of long residence therein, as well as others in England, began conniving to force the submission, especially of Massachusetts, and sent to England such biased reports that though the colony in 1677 passed a more drastic law enforcing the Navigation Act and in 1678 eliminated one cause of criticism by buying the rights of the Gorges heirs for £1,250, criticism, displeasure and intolerance toward the colony increased and in 1683 a writ of quo warranto was brought against the officials of Massachusetts Bay but lapsed before Randolph, could arrive from England to serve it. However, he and his associates in October, 1684, succeeded in getting a scire facias signed whereby Massachusetts finally stood deprived of the charter she had striven so hard to retain. A temporary government under Edward<sup>1</sup> Randolph and Joseph<sup>2</sup> Dudley was set up to carry on until a Royal Governor should be chosen. In May-June, 1686, that choice fell upon Edmund Andros and in December, 1686, he reached Boston and took charge as governor-general of the Dominion of New England.<sup>28</sup>

But the friction and conflict which had marked the two-year regime of Dudley and Randolph was not eradicated but intensified under Andros. How could these colonists be expected to welcome or even feel tolerant of a change whereby they had no slightest word in making or administering the laws they lived under; whereby the titles to their very homes and farms were nullified and they were forced to acquire new patents from this new government, on its own terms?

Admittedly these officials, holding office under the king were in duty bound to attempt to govern in the way and to the end that the king desired and required. No man could have pleased both king and colonists and when that is said, no further excuse for the conduct of these men nor explanation of their inevitable conflict with the colonists seems possible.

As for Andros, who thus came upon the colony as an unhappy climax of their years of anxiety and uncertainty, which had been capped by the final loss of their charter, the claim has been made by an eminent authority<sup>28</sup> that "he did not go beyond his orders. Bluff, impatient and hot-tempered he often was, but he was neither brutal nor oppressive nor beyond the law".<sup>28</sup> And by another authority we are told<sup>32</sup> that he seems to have "received less than justice from the historians of Massachusetts," while a third feels that "a hasty temper was the most palpable fault to be imputed to him." Other writers however, have held very different opin-

ions and any number of authentic instances prove their claims.<sup>2-6,8,10-3,15,17,21-8,34-7</sup>

Aside from the legal phase and from the point of view of the humanities it is hard to justify the foregoing opinions because of many actual cases of oppression such as the following;

(a) The commission of 1686, definitely gave Andros the power<sup>25</sup> (with a majority of his council of seven) to arbitrarily levy taxes without consent of the colonists. In August of 1687 a group of six men of Ipswich, including their minister, Rev. John Wise, protested against the taxes laid upon them. They were thrown in jail "as guilty of high misdemeanors". After a trial and a sojourn in jail of over twenty-one days they were found guilty and given heavy fines, the minister was forbidden to preach for a year and the others denied the right to hold office. Rowley, Salisbury, Andover and other towns suffered in like manner.<sup>21,23,25,33,34,35</sup>

(b) Andros held the power to establish and enforce the right of royal prerogative and of eminent domain. "Wherever an Englishman sets his foot all that he hath is the King's," was the stand taken by Andros and his officials. Many colonists were deprived of property they had acquired from the Indians, by grant from the Massachusetts General Court and by purchase.<sup>23,27,35,37</sup>

(c) Andros ruled that town meetings might be held only once a year. The centralizing of all government for New England, New Jersey and New York in Boston necessitated travel to Boston to record deeds, prove wills and to serve on juries. This often required horseback journeys of over two hundred miles.<sup>23,28,35</sup>

Andros' treatment of the Indians caused fear and apprehension among the colonists who felt that Andros did not understand the difficulties involved. There are many cases recorded of trouble caused by Andros which resulted in danger and loss and even death to the colonists.

Andros' active service as royal governor began on December 19, 1686, when he landed at Boston and was greeted with courtesy and escorted to the Town House. On April 4, 1689, word reached Boston of the Revolution in England whereby King James was succeeded by William of Orange and whereby Andros' own position became precarious. It has been said<sup>23</sup> that "No man does really approve of the revolution in England but must justify that in New-England also; for the latter was effected in compliance with the former. . . ." <sup>23</sup> In the early morning of April 18, 1689, the people of Boston rose against Andros and his government,<sup>39</sup> demanded their surrender which was presently accomplished, and he, his officials and close friends, to the number of twenty-five, were arrested. He was lodged under guard in the home of a friend of his and later at the fort on Castle Island. The others were held at the fort and at Boston jail until in February, 1690, word came from England to free them and send them to England, which was done.<sup>39</sup>

Can one read a summary such as this without an increased understanding of and a very definite sympathy for our American ancestors of the late seventeenth century?

## REFERENCES

13. Memorial History of Boston, J. Winsor, 1880, I, 114, 566.
14. Our Earliest Colonial Settlements, C. M. Andrews, 1933, pp. 59-86.
15. *Ibid.*, pp. 59-60.
16. John White, the Founder of Massachusetts, Frances Rose-Troup, 1930, pp. 52, 64-7, 91-3, 107-15, 122-6, 160-9, 176-81, 195-6, 203-4, 211-2, 227.
17. History of the Judiciary of Massachusetts, W. T. Davis, 1900, pp. 21-31.
18. The Winthrop Fleet of 1630, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 16-22, 33-7, 46, 59, 67, 81, 93, 100-5.
19. Chronicles of America, VI, being "The Fathers of New England", C. M. Andrews, 1919, pp. 147.
20. History of New England, J. G. Palfrey, I, 222, 285-8, 397; II, 578-90, 597-602, 606-18, 623-627; III, 278-9, 296-302, 308, 312-7.
21. General History of the United States of America, B. Trumbull, 1800, pp. 88-9; History of Massachusetts, Allen Bradford, 1835, pp. 25.
22. Massachusetts Colony Records, I, 49-59.
23. Force's Tracts, IV, No. 9, No. 10.
24. Palfrey, III, 551-76; Publications of the Prince Society, V, 1868, being the Andros Tracts I, "The Revolution in New England Justified", 118-22, 203-5.
25. Force's Tracts, IV, No. 8.
26. Essays in Colonial History Presented to C. M. Andrews by his Students, 1931, Land Tenure in English Colonial Charters, of the Seventeenth Century, V. F. Barnes, pp. 4-40.
27. Prince Society, V, xxvi, 71-169, and see index on the various names.
28. The American Nation, V, being Colonial Self-Government, 1652-1689, C. M. Andrews, 1904, pp. 4-70, 68-72, 255-79.
29. *Ibid.*, 38-40; John White, p. 227.
30. Palfrey, III, 563, 567-74.
31. The Colonial Period of American History, C. M. Andrews, 1934, I, 344-495; 1936.
32. Prince Society, V, xxiii-xxviii.
33. The Massachusetts Bay Company and its Predecessors, Frances Rose-Troup, 1930, pp. 112-3.
34. Documents Relative to the Colonial History of New York, 1854, IV, 263.
35. Prince Society, V, 80-7, 91-8, 100-6, 150-7, and see index on the various names.
36. Savage, I, 60-1; III, 507; IV, 215, 363, 614.
37. Prince Society V, 110-1, 119-22, 146-7, 150-1, 203-5.
38. Cutler Genealogy, N. S. Cutler, 1889, pp. 17, 20.
39. Prince Society, V, xxx-xxxii, 174-5.
40. History of Woburn, S. Sewall, 1868, pp. 44-5.

---

---

## APPENDIX "C"

---

### THE CURRENCY OF MASSACHUSETTS BAY COLONY AND ITS DEPRECIATION

**S**INCE the history of any individual or family is inextricably interwoven with the prevailing financial condition of the community, it will be of interest to consider some of the makeshifts, mistakes and trials endured by our early New England ancestors.

When the earliest emigrants came from England they carried but little money, for most of them were in modest circumstances and supplies were so necessary to them that in many cases much of their surplus, beyond cost of passage, would have been expended, before sailing, for necessities. On arrival they found the Indians using wampum as currency, consisting of beads of two kinds, black and white, the former made from the dark part of the clam shell, and the latter from the stem or stock end of the periwinkle shell. These were rubbed down, polished, pierced and strung for use either as decoration or as money. A "fathom" or "belt" of these contained 360 beads, of which the black were worth twice as much as the white. The Colonists used this first in trades with the Indians, later among themselves and it finally became legal tender in Massachusetts, but ordinarily, only, up to twelvence, although by custom it was for long the prevailing currency.

A "belt" of 360 white beads would buy furs to the value of five shillings sterling or one of black beads furs worth ten shillings. Therefore

360 white beads = five shillings = sixty pence  
6 white beads = five shillings = one penny  
360 black beads = ten shillings = one hundred twenty pence  
3 black beads = ten shillings = one penny

The Colonists soon came to use also a barter currency, that is, corn, various grains, peas, furs, and later even fish passed hands as cash. It was customary in 1628 to compensate a surveyor, who ran the lines of a tract of land, with a peck of corn. In 1630 it was ordered that one who had kept certain cattle for a time should be paid by nine bushels of meal or of Indian corn, or nine pounds of beaver. The beaver had earlier been officially priced at six shillings per pound, but, as that restraint was removed about this time, it rose to ten shillings and even twenty shillings per pound.

The term "specie" in Massachusetts was applied to articles of provision until as late as 1775 and that of "hard money" was frequently applied to coin. In

October, 1631, it was ordered that "corne shall passe for payment of all debts at the vsuall rate it is solde for, except money or beaver be expressly named." Finding that there was a tendency among the traders to clear the colony of all coin, and also of pelts, by buying English goods with the former and trading for such with the latter, a law was made in 1632 that no one returning to England should carry either money or beaver with him, except by permission of the Governor, under pain of forfeiture of the same. Also a "trucking howse" was established in every plantation where the Indians might take their skins for trade, to avoid their going from house to house. In, 1633, Noddles Island was granted to Samuel Maverick if he would pay "yearely att the General Court to the Gouenor for the time being, either a fatt weather, a fatt hogg, or x ls in money . . ." That same year it was ordered that master carpenters, sawyers, masons, etc. "shall not take aboue 2s a day, findeing them selues dyett, and not aboue 14d a day; if they haue diett found them, vnder the penalty of 5s both to giuer and receaver, for every day that there is more giuen and received."

Another ruling of 1633 to control the accumulation of profits was that no one might sell any commodity, other than a certain designated few, for more of an advance than four pence on the shilling, above what the same cost them, on pain of forfeiting the value. Those who served meals were limited to a six pence charge for the same in 1634 and allowed to charge but one penny for a quart of ale or beer.

In 1635, musket balls were legal tender at a farthing apiece up to twelve pence. As early as 1636 a luxury tax was passed requiring the payment to the Treasurer of the colony of one-sixth of the value of either gift or purchase, for personal use of imported spice, "shugar, wine, strongwater or tobacco" and of one-third of the value of the same if bought to retail. That year the taxes were paid in corn and a debt to their deputy was paid in money or beaver.

In spite of these precautions, the merchants of England and Ireland sent over so many cargoes, draining the colony of cash and obtaining claims on so many properties that in 1640 the situation called forth action by the General Court, for the prices of land and cattle fell to one-half, one-third and even one-fourth part of their fair value. The English merchants would sell no wares but for money, and even the valuation of wampum increased to four white beads or two black ones for a penny.

It is interesting to note that in spite of the trials through which the early New Englanders were then passing it was voted in October, 1644, that each family should contribute a peck of corn or twelve pence in money "to help forward the maintenance of poor scholars in the colledge," meaning Harvard. As an evidence of the straits to which the inhabitants were put for "hard money," or indeed any species of exchange, we have the following statement by Gov. Winthrop: "I may report a passage between one of Rowley and his servant. The master being forced to sell a pair of his oxen to pay his servant his wages, told his servant he could keep him no longer, not knowing how to pay him the next year. The servant answered him, he could serve him for more of his cattle. But what shall I do (saith the master) when all my cattle are gone? The servant replied, 'You shall then serve me, and so you may have your cattle again'."

In 1647 a tax of two pence for each skin handled was laid upon the fur-trading

establishments and the following year an order was made that all wampum must be "without deforminge spotts, sutably strunge in eight knowne parcells, 1d, 3d, 12d, 5s in white; 2d, 6d, 2/6d and 10s in blacke." A year later it was declared legal tender up to forty shillings in payment of debts except for taxes. England passed an Act during 1649, incorporating the Society to Promote the Gospel in New England, and thus patronize the labors of Eliot and others. Collections were to be made in the churches of England and from house to house "provided the Act extend not to the enabling or allowing of transportation of any gold, silver, plate, bullion or other commodities, prohibited by the laws and statutes of this nation." Under these inhibitions the query naturally arises as to what comprised these collections and how much help they would have been!

Prior to 1650, the Constables had brought to the Treasurer for appraisal live stock and grain which had been paid in as Colonial taxes, but that inconvenience was then done away with and local appraisal arranged for. Perceiving that, though the English government prevented exportation of specie to New England, yet the European merchants still drew from this country the specie derived from the Dutch, West Indies, etc., the General Court this year decided to establish a mint of their own, for so great a variety of coins, as well as bullion, were taken in their trades with other peoples, that some unification was quite necessary. Also the threatening prospect of an exchange of the then existing patent or charter for another, probably more stringent, influenced them, as well as an inclination to imitate the independence of Cromwell, in asserting a certain freedom from the yoke of royalty.

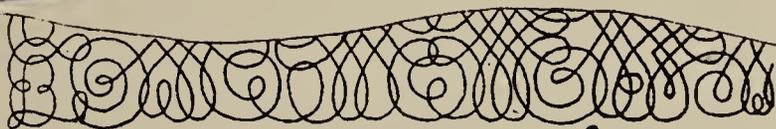
In 1652, any individual might bring to the mint bullion, plate or coin to be melted, brought to the alloy of sterling silver and "coyned into twelve penny, six penny, three penny pieces, which shall be for forme flatt and square on the sides, and stamped on the one side with New England, and on the other side, with the figure XIIId, VIId and IIIId, according to the valew of each piece . . ." for which service the master of the mint was to receive one shilling's worth of the metal out of every twenty shillings handled. These coins were required to contain two pence in a shilling less of intrinsic value than the English shillings, and as early as 1653-4 it is shown that this latter fact coupled with others (including a prejudice in England against our coin) caused it to be rated on the London market at twenty-five percent lower than theirs.

The first mint-house was situated in Boston and was made of wood, being sixteen feet square and ten feet high. Almost immediately the authorities found that by mutilation the coins were "diminished by washing, clipping, rounding, filing or sealing." This caused them to change the design so that it "shall have a double ring on either side, with this inscription — Massachusetts, and a tree in the center on the one side — and New England and the yeere of our Lord on the other side," and ruled that they should pass at face value only if not mutilated.

In spite of the discount demanded abroad on our coin, it became necessary, in order to retain it on our own shores, to limit to twenty shillings for expenses the amount which a person leaving the colony might carry, and to appoint a "searcher for money" in every port of entry. As late as 1655, wampum was paid the Treasurer by the Indians as evidence of their fealty. A sorry commentary on human nature is embodied in a law passed in 1658 that no man should attempt



Early coins minted without England's permission in or about 1652 in the Massachusetts Bay Colony.



N<sup>o</sup> (419) 20<sup>s</sup>

Earliest currency printed in New England to pay the soldiers for their services in the 1690 expedition against Canada.

THIS Indented Bill of Twenty  
 Shillings due from the Massachusetts  
 Colony to the Possessor shall be in value  
 equal to money & shall be accordingly  
 accepted by the Treasurer and Receivers  
 subordinate to him in all Publick paym<sup>ts</sup>  
 and for any Stock at any time in the  
 Treasury. Boston in New-England  
 February the thirde 1690 By Order of  
 the General Court



*Richard Hutchinson*  
*John Hull*  
*Samuel Sherrington*  
 Committee

to discharge his rates (taxes) with "lank" cattle. Evidence is found that the cost of transporting grain, which was paid in as colonial taxes in 1662, was somewhat over five percent, while it averaged not less than ten percent in 1668. So pressing was the need of specie experienced by the Government in 1675, in consequence of Philip's War, that it offered twenty-five percent abatement, and later even fifty percent, on taxes which were payable in grain, to all who would pay such in cash; and that year saw an approximation to paper currency introduced, in the order to the Treasurer of the Colony to accept, in payment of taxes, bills for wages, horses, provisions, etc., which he might in turn pass to the constables of the same communities, in payment of accounts owed by the colony.

In 1677, a duty on imported liquors was ordered, that they might build up a fund which would justify the maintenance of a free mint, toward the accomplishment of a greater bulk of coinage.

That there was continued displeasure in England at the assumption of what was considered a royal prerogative, namely — coinage of money, was evident, and to allay the King's displeasure they ordered in 1666, two very large masts prepared and shipped to London for the royal navy, and later a shipload more of smaller spars. The agents of the colonies were empowered to borrow £1,000 in London to cover the transportation of these gifts.

In 1677, another peace-offering was ordered sent to the King by the General Court, consisting of "tenn barrels of cranburyes, two hogshead of speciall good sampe, and three thousand of cod fish," and in 1681 an offer of "twenty or thirty Beaver skinns annually." All coins struck were dated 1652, and some were to be found in circulation up to the Revolution.

Opposition in England to our mint continued and finally caused its abandonment. In 1688–90, after William and Mary ascended the throne, they were petitioned to allow the continuance of the mint, but without success. The 1690 expedition against Canada which cost the colony about £50,000 was to have been financed by the loot obtained, but when utter failure was the only result the colonists were distressed indeed. Lacking a mint, their only recourse to pay their needy soldiers was to issue paper money, Treasury notes or bills of credit "not to exceed £40,000" which was the first emission of Paper Money in Massachusetts and probably in New England. The emission of paper currency continued intermittently\* from this time to 1750. This first issue, by careful management, remained at par for some time but subsequent issues proved to be on a sliding scale of depreciation. And though large quantities of the Bills of Credit were accepted for public dues — and burned — there are said to have been in 1725 Bills in circulation to the nominal value of £200,000 but passing at the enormous discount of sixty percent — and still the issuance of Bills continued.

The extreme inconvenience, too, of official disposal of produce accumulated by the payment of colonial taxes in the products of the farm was shown in 1693 when a constable received one hundred thirty bushels of peas which it was his duty to deliver to the colonial Treasurer. The water route was preferable, but it required seven or eight journeys to Hartford, and two to Boston before he succeeded in arranging for their handling, and finally, in passing the Falls of the

\*In 1702 to the amount of £10,000; in 1709 to the amount of £30,000; in 1711, £10,000 were issued; in 1714, £50,000; in 1716, £100,000; in 1721, £50,000; in 1724, £30,000.

Connecticut, a mishap befell the cargo and the peas were rendered unsaleable by water. It required action by the General Court to relieve him of the necessity of paying for them, but the following year saw the last of the general practice of produce payments for taxes and of grain as a currency, and thereafter its paper equivalent took its place.

During the foregoing period, merchants necessarily inquired the form of intended payment before mentioning the price of an article, for prices were classed under the following heads, viz; "pay" meaning grain, pork, beef, etc.; "money" meaning actual cash or wampum; "pay as money" meaning provisions as aforesaid, but one-third cheaper than the price the Assembly set; and "trusting" which implied an enhanced price according to time. For instance, a sixpenny knife, in "pay" would have been twelve pence, in "pay as money," eight pence, or in "hard money," six pence. Surely mental arithmetic and speed therewith was a requisite for the merchants of those days.

From 1711-2 onward the issues of provincial and colonial paper\* were not accompanied by adequate provision for redemption, and an ultimate and continued depreciation, sometimes as great as fifty percent in two years and still downward, was the result. This was in part because the series of wars with the French and the Indians created obligations faster than taxes could be endured to wipe them out. England had *said* her Treasury should meet the costs of any expedition against Canada, but in truth debts incurred for such expeditions drew off the specie from the colony and necessitated the issuance of added notes. Consequently one issue would be intended to take up at a great discount the bills of a previous issue, but it, in its turn, would be similarly discounted by its successor, to the utter undoing of the people. The word "bank" then meant, not an organization or corporation, as now, but an issue of notes. The greater the amount of these notes issued, the greater was the inability to redeem and consequently the greater the demand for another issue. The paper became a political issue, and Douglas said the parties were no longer Whig and Tory, but creditors and debtors, the latter in the majority.

In 1720 produce was reinstated as legal tender, for colonial taxes. Counterfeiting, which in 1692 had carried various penalties including that of standing in the pillory and having an ear cropped, had become so common as to require special proclamation and in 1714 a law was enacted that any who were found guilty of such a crime more than once, should suffer death.

An issue of notes in 1737 differing from former ones as to certain conditions, was valued at one to three of the old, and was called "new tenor" while the earlier bills were "old tenor." In 1740-1 an additional emission became "new tenor" and the 1737 one automatically became "middle tenor," while subsequent ones made necessary the use of the terms "new tenor first," "new tenor second," "Connecticut new tenor," "Rhode Island new tenor" and perhaps even other terms which must have required absolute genius to have readily and correctly calculated debits and credits.

The expedition against Louisbourg in 1745 which, most fortunately for the

\*Early in the 18th century Virginia had adopted tobacco as a currency, the product being deposited in a warehouse, and the receipts for it passing as money. The ministers of Virginia were paid wholly by a percentage of the tobacco crop and many a good wife was obtained in that state in exchange for a payment of tobacco.

colonies, as well as the Mother Country, was successful, actually brought from England to the colony a refund to apply on their expense in the conflict, as some of the earlier expeditions had failed to do. By the untiring effort in London of Mr. William Bollan, agent for the colony, and other loyal friends, there was voted by Parliament and approved by the King a refund of over £183,000 sterling, from the Royal exchequer on condition that it should be used to redeem the depreciated paper money of the Massachusetts Bay Colony with this specie sent from England.

This money, which arrived in Boston under the care of Mr. Bollan in September, 1749, consisted of 653,000 ounces of silver, filling two hundred fifteen chests in addition to ten tons of copper coins. The law required that the colonial bills of credit should be presented for exchange by March 31, 1750, and any which were withheld for a year after that date were to be irredeemable. The rate of exchange was variously stated as "six shilling eight pence for an ounce in silver coin," "45 sh in bills of the old tenor for one 'piece-of-eight' or a dollar", "11 sh & 3 pence of the middle and new tenor for a dollar," "and so in proportion for greater or less sums."

It was stated that the sum sent by England at the rate of £10 in bills for £1 sterling would draw in all their paper money except £50,000 of their last emission.

To recapitulate, the depreciation of the Bills of Credit put out by the Massachusetts Bay Colony has been summarized as follows:

- In 1710-11 bills worth eight shillings would pass for one ounce of silver
- In 1724-27 bills worth seventeen shillings would pass for one ounce of silver
- In 1738-40 bills worth twenty-eight or twenty-nine shillings would pass for one ounce of silver
- In 1746-48 bills worth thirty-seven shillings would pass for one ounce of silver
- In 1749-50 bills worth sixty shillings would pass for one ounce of silver

So after sixty long years, the financial situation in the colony of Massachusetts was clarified. But during the Revolution New England had no choice but to repeat her unfortunate experience of the emission of Bills of Credit. Our Rev. MANASSEH<sup>5</sup> CUTLER wrote that money had depreciated as much at least as five for one, but in 1779 was nearer twenty for one.

#### REFERENCES

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <p>An Historical Account of Massachusetts Currency, J. B. Felt, 1839, pp. 48-9, 83, 116-128, 135.<br/>         The Vinton Memorial, J. A. Vinton, 1858, pp. 458-9.<br/>         Financial History of Massachusetts, C. H. J. Douglas, 1897, p. 125.<br/>         Principles of Money, Credit and Banking, R. L. Garis, 1934, pp. 154-6.<br/>         History of Coinage and Currency in the United States, A. B. Hepburn, 1903, pp. 1, 11-2, 53-9.<br/>         History of American Currency, W. G. Sumner, 1884, pp. 43-8, 53.<br/>         American Antiquarian Society Proceedings, New Series,</p> | <p>1898, XII, 410-24.<br/>         Life Journals and Correspondence of MANASSEH CUTLER, William P. and J. P. Cutler, I, 73.<br/>         American Antiquarian Society Transactions and Collections, 1857, III, plate opposite p. [109], 274.<br/>         The History of the Colony and Province of Massachusetts Bay, Thomas Hutchinson, ed. by L. S. Mayo, 1936, II, 154, 174, 184, 248, 286-9, 298, 333-7.<br/>         Boston Notions, N. Dearborn, 1848, pp. 180-3.<br/>         Society of Colonial Wars in Massachusetts, 1898, pp. 222-4.<br/>         Records of Massachusetts Bay, V, 29-30, 43-4, 351, 373.<br/>         History of Chelmsford, W. Allen, 1820, pp. 28-31.</p> |
|--|---|

THE  
H V M B L E  
R E Q V E S T O F  
H I S M A I E S T I E S  
loyall Subjects, the Governour  
and the Company late gone for  
N E W - E N G L A N D ;

To the rest of their Brethren, in and of the  
Church of *ENGLAND*.

For the obtaining of their Prayers,  
and the removall of suspitions, and mis-  
constructions of their Intentions.



*LONDON,*  
Printed for I O H N B E L L A M I E. 1630

Facsimile of the first (1630) edition of the “PURITANS’ FAREWELL TO ENGLAND” signed at Yarmouth “aboord the Arabella April 7, 1630.” Of this original edition, printed in the spring of 1630, only five copies are known to be extant. Of these two are at Oxford, one in Boston, one in Providence and one is in private hands. (Courtesy of the New England Society, New York).

TEXT OF THE "HUMBLE REQUEST,"  
ACCREDITED TO REV. JOHN WHITE,  
(*"Founder" of Massachusetts*)

**THE HUMBLE  
REQUEST OF HIS  
Majesties loyall Subjects, the  
Governour and the Company late  
gone for *New England*; to the rest  
of their Brethren in and of the  
*Church of ENGLAND.***

*Reverend FATHERS and BRETHREN:*



THE generall rumour of this solemne Enterprise, wherein ourselves with others, through the providence of the Almighty, are ingaged, as it may spare us the labour of imparting our occasion unto you, so it gives us the more incouragement to strengthen ourselves by the procurement of the prayers & blessings of the Lords faithfull Servants: For which end wee are bold to have recourse unto you, as those whom *God* hath placed nearest his throne of Mercy; which as it affords you the more opportunitie, so it imposeth the greater bond upon you to intercede for his people in all their straights, we beseech you therefore by the mercies of the LORD IESVS to consider us as your Brethren, standing in very great need of your helpe, and earnestly imploring it. And howsoever your charitie may have met with some occasion of discouragement through the misreport of our intentions,

or through the disaffection, or indiscretion, of some of us, or rather, amongst us: for wee are not of those that dreame of perfection in this world; yet we desire you would be pleased to take notice of the principals, and body of our company, as those who esteeme it our honour, to call the *Church of England*, from whence wee rise, our deare Mother, and cannot part from our native Country, where the specially resideth, without much sadnes of heart, and many teares in our eyes, ever acknowledging that such hope and part as wee have obtained in the common salvation, we have received in her bosome, and suckt it from her breasts: wee leave it not therefore, as loathing that milk wherewith we were nourished there, but blessing God for the parentage and education, as members of the same body shall alwayes rejoyce in her good, and unfainedly grieve for any sorrow that shall ever betide her, and while we have breath, syncerely desire and indeavour the continuance & abundance of her welfare, with the inlargement of her bounds in the kingdome of CHRIST IESVS.

Be pleased therefore *Reverend FATHERS & BRETHREN* to helpe forward this worke now in hand; which if it prosper, you shall bee the more glorious, howsoever your judgment is with the LORD, and your reward with your GOD. It is an usuall and laudable exercise of your charity to commend to the prayers of your Congregations the necessities and straights of your private neighbours; Doe the like for a Church springing cut of your owne

bowels. We conceive much hope that this remembrance of us, if it be frequent and fervent, will bee a most prosperous gale in our sailes, and prouide such a passage and welcome for us, from the GOD of the whole earth, as both we which shall finde it, and your selves, with the rest of our friends, who shal heare of it, shall be much enlarged to bring in such daily returnes of Thanks-givings, as the specialties of his Providence and Goodnes may justly challenge at all our hands. You are not ignorant, that the Spirit of GOD stirred up the Apostle *Paul* to make continuall mention of the Church of *Philippi* (which was a Colonie from *Rome*) let the same Spirit, we beseech you, put you in mind, that are the Lords remembrancers, to pray for us without ceasing (who are a weake Colony from yourselves) making continuall request for us to GOD in all your prayers.

What we intreat of you that are the Ministers of GOD, that we also crave at the hands of all the rest of our Brethren, that they would at no time forget us in their private solicitations at the throne of Grace.

If any there be, who through want of cleare intelligence of our course, or tendernesse of affection towards us, cannot conceive so well of our way as we could desire, we would intreat such not to despise us, nor to desert

us in their prayers & affections, but to consider rather, that they are so much the more bound to expresse the bowels of their compassion towards us, remembring alwaies that both Nature and Grace, doth ever binde us to relieve and rescue with our utmost & speediest power, such as are deare unto us, when wee conceive them to be running uncomfortable hazards.

What goodnes you shall extend to us in this or any other Christian kindnesse, wee your Brethren in CHRIST IESVS shall labour to repay in what dutie wee are or shall be able to performe, promising so farre as God shall enable us to give him no rest on your behalves, wishing our heads and hearts may be as fountaines of teares for your everlasting welfare, when wee shall be in our poore Cottages in the wilderness, over-shadowed with the spirit of supplication, through the manifold necessities and tribulations which may not altogether unexpectedly, nor, we hope, unprofitably befall us. And so commending you to the grace of GOD in CHRIST, wee shall ever rest

Your assured Friends  
and Brethren,

From *Yarmouth*  
aboord the *Arbella*  
*April 7, 1630.*  
*Io: Winthrope Gov.*  
*Charles Fines.*

*George Philipps.*  
*Etc.*

*Rich: Saltonstall.*  
*Isaac Iohnson.*  
*Tho: Dudley.*  
*William Coddington.*  
*Etc.*



Definite\* English Origins of Emigrants to  
Massachusetts Bay Colony

- co. Beds  
SPENCER, GERRARD<sup>1</sup>, Stotfold, II, 769.
- co. Bucks  
KIRTLAND, NATHANIEL<sup>2</sup>, Sherington, II, 517-8.  
PUTNAM, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, Aston Abbots, I, 521.
- co. Cambridge  
KILBOURN, THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, Wood Ditton, II, 509.
- co. Derby  
HAWLEY, JOSEPH<sup>1</sup>, Parwich, II, 411.
- co. Devon  
CLAPP, ROGER<sup>1</sup>, Salcombe Regis, I, 155.  
CONANT, ROGER<sup>1</sup>, East Budleigh, II, 221.  
HULL, ISAAC<sup>1</sup>, Topsham, II, 467.  
SLADE, ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup>, Bicton, I, 611.  
UPHAM, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, Bicton, I, 611.
- co. Dorset  
BARTLETT, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, Frampton, II, 71.  
FORD, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> Bridport and Dorchester, I, 294.  
OBER, RICHARD<sup>1</sup>, Abbotsbury, II, 605.
- co. Essex  
BAKER, ABIGAIL<sup>1</sup>, Boxted, I, 67.  
BANGS, EDWARD<sup>1</sup>, Panfield, II, 61.  
COE, ROBERT<sup>1</sup>, Boxford, II, 211.  
KNIGHT, ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup>, Chelmsford, I, 397.  
LOOMIS, JOSEPH<sup>1</sup>, Braintree, II, 567.  
MARVIN, MATTHEW<sup>1</sup>, Great Bentley, II, 515.  
OLMSTEAD, JAMES<sup>1</sup>, Great Leighs, II, 611.  
POULTER, JOHN, Billerica or Rayleigh, I, 499.  
WARNER, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, Boxted, I, 649.
- co. Gloucester  
PRENCE, THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, Lechlade, II, 683.
- co. Hants  
GORE, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, Southampton, I, 319.  
PLYMPTON AND BENT, Penton Grafton, I, 493.  
RUTTER, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, Penton Grafton, I, 534.
- co. Herts  
ANTROBUS, JOAN (ARNOLD), St. Albans, I, 64.  
DANE, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, Berkhamstead and Bishop's Stortford, I, 239.
- LAWRENCE, JOANE (ANTROBUS), St. Albans, I, 401.  
RUSCOE, MERCY, Sawbridgeworth, II, 727.  
SEYMOUR, RICHARD<sup>1</sup>, Sawbridgeworth, II, 727.  
TUTTLE, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, St. Albans, I, 600.
- co. Kent  
BATCHELDER, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, "of Canterbury, Taylor", II, 97.  
CALL, THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, Faversham, I, 132.
- co. Middlesex  
GOADE, ABIGAIL<sup>1</sup>, London, I, 315.  
HOPKINS, STEPHEN<sup>1</sup>, "of London," II, 443.  
TUTTY, ANNE<sup>1</sup>, London, I, 397.
- co. Norfolk  
LEEDS, RICHARD<sup>1</sup>, Great Yarmouth, I, 403.  
PALGRAVE, JOAN (HARRIS), Great Yarmouth, II, 621.  
TRACY, STEPHEN<sup>1</sup>, Great Yarmouth, II, 799.
- co. Northampton  
BLISS, THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, Daventry and Preston Capes, II, 123.  
SHEPARD, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, Towcester, I, 541.
- co. Notts  
BREWSTER, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, Scrooby, II, 143.
- co. Oxford  
SUMNER, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, Bicester, I, 572.
- co. Salop  
BEAMON, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, "from Bridgenorth," II, 117.
- co. Somerset  
BALCH, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, Bridgewater, I, 70.  
DODGE, RICHARD<sup>1</sup>, Middlechinnock and Coker, II, 315.  
DODGE, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, Middlechinnock and East Coker, II, 319.  
ELIOTT, ANDREW<sup>1</sup>, East Coker, Yeovil, II, 331.  
HASKELL, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, Parish of Charlton-Musgrove, I, 351.  
HULL, GEORGE<sup>1</sup>, Crewkerne, II, 453.  
PATCH, ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup>, South Petherton, II, 833.  
PINNEY, HUMPHREY<sup>1</sup>, Broadway, II, 659.

\*By "definite" is implied legal evidence of family presence there, such as baptism of the emigrant; will of the emigrant's father, naming his son as of New England; ownership of land in England as shown by the eventual will of an emigrant to New England, etc.

- RAYMOND, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, Glastonbury, II, 697.  
 RAYMOND, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, Glastonbury, II, 703.  
 WOODBURY, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, II, 823.  
 WOODBURY, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, South Petherton,  
 II, 829.
- co. Suffolk  
 DANFORTH, NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>, Framlingham, I,  
 250, II, 279.  
 Downing, Emanuel<sup>1</sup>, Beccles, I, 315.  
 HOLDEN, JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup>, Lindsey, I, 360.  
 MOODY, FRANCES<sup>1</sup>, (later KILBOURN), Moul-  
 ton, II, 509.
- co. Sussex  
 BUSHNELL, FRANCIS<sup>1</sup>, Horsham, I, in Add.  
 & Corr. II, 163.  
 FREEMAN, EDMOND<sup>1</sup>, Pulborough, II, 349.  
 HODSOLL, BENNETT, Cowfold, II, 349.  
 QUENNEL and CARTER, Horsham, I, in Add.  
 & Corr.
- co. Warwick  
 GRISWOLD, EDWARD<sup>1</sup>, "from Kenilworth  
 Parish," II, 399.  
 PERKINS, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, Hillmorton, I, 483.
- co. Wilts  
 COGSWELL, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, Westbury Leigh, I, 188.  
 THOMPSON, ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup>, Westbury Leigh,  
 I, 188.

### TENTATIVE English Origins or *Clues* Relative to Emigrant Ancestors

- co. Devon  
 PARSONS, JOSEPH<sup>1</sup> (Torrington or Twerton),  
 II, 625; a letter by the third generation  
 in America.  
 SNOW, RICHARD<sup>1</sup>, probably Barnstaple, I,  
 552.
- co. Dorset  
 HUMPHREY, MICHAEL<sup>1</sup>, Lyme Regis, II, 471;  
 a letter 1648 from his supposed parents.
- co. Essex  
 FOOTE, NATHANIEL<sup>1</sup>, Shalford, II, 337, 342;  
 claimed parentage.  
 Jennison, William<sup>1</sup>, I, 369; brother of our  
 ROBERT<sup>1</sup> removed from New England  
 to Colchester, England.  
 Parker, Jacob<sup>1</sup>, Wethersfield vicinity, I, 464.  
 Stacy, Simon<sup>1</sup>, probably Bocking, I, 558.  
 WHALE, PHILEMON<sup>1</sup>, probably Colchester,  
 I, 660; this unusual name was repeatedly  
 found in Colchester and Chickney.
- co. Herts  
 PRATT, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, perhaps Stevenage, II,  
 675; claimed parentage.
- co. Middlesex  
 GRAVES, GEORGE<sup>1</sup>, probably London vi-  
 cinity, II, 381; will of a widow Ann Grave.
- co. Lancaster  
 WOODWARD, HENRY<sup>1</sup>, Much Woolton, II,  
 841; baptism claimed.
- co. Lincoln  
 Bosworth, Hanniel<sup>1</sup>, Boston, I, 105; brother  
 of our DEBORAH<sup>1</sup>.
- co. Monmouth  
 TYBBOT, WALTER<sup>1</sup>, probably of Chepstow  
 or vicinity, I, 607.
- co. Norfolk  
 Kendall, Francis<sup>1</sup>, Great Yarmouth, I, 375.  
 PRINCE, REBECCA<sup>1</sup>, probably Norwich, I,  
 519; as was her stepfather John<sup>1</sup> Gedney.
- co. Suffolk  
 BUMSTEAD, THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, perhaps from vicinity  
 of Rattlesden, I, 123.
- co. York  
 CHAPMAN, ROBERT<sup>1</sup>, perhaps from Hull, II,  
 185; statement.

# INDEX OF NAMES

Names which are ancestral to the Dawes family are in capitals. Generation numbers are used in case of ancestral males, and of females before their marriage. Females are listed under their maiden and married names. Ancestral names are listed *individually* (as are frequently the names of near relatives), but in all other cases identical names are grouped into a single listing. On pages listed but once, a name frequently appears several times.

- Abbott, George, 241  
 Hannah (Chandler), 241  
 Acie, Hannah (Green), 542  
   John, 542  
   William, 542  
 Adams, (—), 43  
 —, (Torrey), 230  
   Dr. Daniel, 46  
   Dorcas, 653  
   Elizabeth (Stacy), 430, 558, 560  
   Henry, 530  
   Jacob, 53  
   John, 565, 653  
   Mary, 567  
   Rebecca, 578  
   Richard, 142, 339, 356, 613, 617  
   Ruth, 338  
   Samuel, 100  
   Sarah (Goldthwaite), 46  
   Tiffany, 230  
   Ursula, 530  
   William, 430, 558, 560, 653  
 Addington, Dr. Isaac, 631  
 Alcock, Mr. John, 117  
 Allen, Abigail, 292  
   Benjamin, 418  
   Elizabeth, 306  
   Rev. James, 162  
   Jeremiah, 102  
   John, 138  
   Joseph, 292, 418  
   Mercy (Call), 138  
   Rebecca, 471  
   Sarah (May), 418  
   William, 418  
 Allerton, Isaac, 384  
 Allis, Lt. William, 621  
 Alsop, Key, 668  
 Ames, see also Eames, Emes  
   Elizabeth, 55  
   John, 55  
   Sylvanus, 55, 228  
   Thomas, 55, 681  
   William, 55  
 Amsden, Abraham, 538  
   Elizabeth, 538  
   Isaac, 538  
   Jacob, 538  
   Jane (Rutter), 538  
   John, 538  
   Thomas, 538  
 Andrews, Dorcas, 274  
   James, 274  
   Margaret (Woodward), 672  
   William, 672  
   Capt. William, 403  
 Andros, Gov. Edmond, 15, 21, 22, 23,  
   25, 93, 94, 99, 148, 160, 163, 165,  
   326, 352, 377, 378, 428, 537, 555,  
   577, 684  
 Angier, Benjamin, 382  
   Edmund, 253  
   Joseph, 382  
   Sarah (—), 382  
 ANTROBUS, JOAN<sup>2</sup>, 12, 64, 129, 349,  
   401  
   JOAN (ARNOLD), 12, 64, 129, 401  
   WALTER, 64, 501  
 Appleton, Hannah, 221  
   Col. John, 283  
   Capt. Samuel, 21, 621-2, 670  
 Archbold, Azor G., 423  
 Archbold, Francis, 423  
   Lucretia (May), 423  
 Archer, Henry, 558, 650  
   William, 558  
 —, 4  
 Armitage, Goody Jane, 67  
   Joseph, 120  
   Mary (Cogswell), 189  
   Godfrey, 189  
 Armstrong, Elizabeth J., 234  
 Ashley, Thomas, 120  
 Aspinwall, Peter, 202, 203  
   William, 600, 601  
 Atherton, Maj., 168  
   Widow, 161  
   Rev. Hope, 68  
   Humphrey, 159, 163, 531  
   Humphrey, jr., 170  
   Isabel, 531  
   Mary, 531  
   Mary (Wales), 531  
 Atkins, Rev. Elisha, 206, 222  
 Atwood, Ebenezer, 221  
   ELIZABETH (—), 337, 338, 339  
   John, 221  
   Leah, 221  
   Nathaniel, 221  
   Philip, 337, 339, 619-20  
   Rachell (Batchelder), 337  
 Avery, James, 193  
   Parson Joseph, 188  
 Axtell, Thomas, 447, 640, 660, 679  
   Hannah, 640, 679  
 Ayer, Elizabeth (Tuttle), 605  
   Hannah, 543  
   Samuel, 608

- B**abcock, see also Badcock  
 Babson, Elinor (—), 608  
   James, 608  
   John J., 241, 565, 655  
 Bacon, Frances, 406-7  
   George, 203  
   Joseph, 203  
   Mary (Cutler), 203  
   Michael, 145  
   Thomas, 203  
 Badcock, Sergt., 276  
   Elizabeth, 203, 583  
   Hannah (Emes), 583  
   Samuel, 583  
 Badger, Hepzibah (Prentice), 507  
   John, 507  
   Stephen, 507  
   William, 507  
 Bailey, Eleanor (Emery), 525  
   George W., 231  
   John, 525  
   Joseph, 525  
   Mary Annette, 234  
   Priscilla (Putnam), 525  
   Seth, 231, 232  
 Baker, Mr., 603  
   ABIGAIL<sup>1</sup>, 649  
   Abigail (Fisher), 68  
   EDWARD<sup>1</sup>, 67, 68, 587  
   Faith (Withington), 531  
   Grace (Marsh), 68  
   JANE OR JOAN (—), 67, 68  
   John, 68  
   Jonathan, 68  
   Joseph, 67, 68  
   MARY<sup>2</sup>, 68, 579  
   Mary, 352, 531  
   Mary (Lewis), 68  
   Mary (Marshall), 68  
   Richard, 271, 531  
   Ruth (Holton), 68  
   Sarah, 649, 650  
   Sarah (Hollister), 68  
   Thomas, 68, 587  
   Timothy, 67, 68, 587  
 Balbach, John, 564  
   Nicholas, 564  
 Balch, Abigail, 75  
   Abigail (Maverick), 72  
   Annis (Patch?), 71, 72, 74  
   BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup>, 72, 74, 75, 306, 620  
   BENJAMIN<sup>4</sup>, 76, 77, 506, 508  
   Rev. Benjamin, 77, 78  
   Benjamin, 74, 75, 82, 114  
   David, 75  
   Deborah, 75  
   Elizabeth, 82  
   Elizabeth (Fairfield), 75  
   Elizabeth (Woodbury), 75  
   FREEBORN<sup>3</sup>, 74, 75, 76, 77, 456  
   Freeborn, 72, 74, 76, 77  
   Grace (Mallet), 72  
   Hannah, 81  
   Hannah (Veren), 75  
   Irene, 82  
   Joanna (O'Brien), 82  
   JOHN<sup>1</sup>, 70, 71, 72, 74, 75, 295, 304,  
     453, 484, 600, 620  
   John, 72, 74, 75  
   Jonathan, 75  
 Balch, Joseph, 74, 75, 620  
   Lucy, 82  
   Lydia, 75  
   Mallis (—), 75  
   MARGARET (—), 70, 71, 72  
   Martha or Sarah (Newmarch), 75  
   MARY<sup>2</sup>, 82, 210  
   MARY (SUMNER), 77, 81-2, 586, 588  
   Mary, 75, 77  
   MARY (PRENTICE), 76, 77, 506, 508  
   Mary (Hubbard), 76  
   MIRIAM (MOULTON), 75, 76, 456  
   Miriam, 76  
   Ruth, 75  
   Samuel, 74, 75  
   Sarah, 75, 76  
   SARAH (GARDNER), 72, 74, 76, 306  
   Sarah (Patch), 75  
   Skipper, 76  
   Susanna (Woliston), 76  
   Rev. THOMAS<sup>2</sup>, 76-82, 114, 211-2,  
     506, 587-8  
   Thomas, 78, 82  
   William, 76  
 Baldwin, Elizabeth (Grover), 340-1,  
   634  
   Henry, 341  
   Timothy, 341, 634  
   William, 592  
 Bancroft, Capt., 26  
 BANGS, EDWARD<sup>1</sup>, 108  
 Banks, Col. C. E., 300, 351  
 Bant, Capt. Gilbert, 28  
 Barker, Joanna, 543  
 Barnard, Catharine (Mears), 435  
   James, 373  
   John, 373  
   Judith (Jennison), 373  
   Samuel, 435  
 Barnes, Agnes (Bent), 495  
   Edward, 45  
   James, 26  
   Richard, 494, 495, 536  
 Barns, Mary, 96, 102  
 Barnsdale, Mr., 100  
 Barret, Col. James, 34, 365  
 Barrett, Elizabeth (Mellowes), 264  
 Barrington, Sir Francis, 244  
   Lady Joan (Cromwell), 244, 246  
   Robert, 244  
   Sir Thomas, 244  
 Barron, Ellis, 373  
   Rachel (Jennison), 373  
   Timothy, 373  
 Barry, Catharine C. (Humphreys),  
   172, 431, 550  
   Edmund D., 172, 431, 550  
 Bartlett, Capt., 392  
   Hannah, 379  
   Mr. J. G., 300  
   Sarah, 274  
   Thomas, 379  
 Barton, mariner, 322  
 Batchelder, Abigail, 456  
   Elizabeth, 281  
   Hannah, 651  
   JOHN<sup>1</sup>, 132  
   Mark, 625  
   MIRIAM (MOULTON), 456  
 Batchelor, Joseph, 132, 456, 625, 651  
 Bateman, Deacon Eleazer, 205, 556  
   John, 151, 335  
   Sarah, 335  
 Bates, Mr., 506  
   Benjamin, 169  
   Clement, 170  
   James, 531  
   Jane (Weeks), 169-70  
 Batson, Mary, 508  
 Bayford, Annis, 241  
 Bayley, Rev. James, 522  
 Beach, Alice Mary, 60  
   Rev. Arthur Granville, 59  
   Betsey Elda, 60  
   Betsey Mills, 60  
   David, 59  
   Rev. David Edwards, 59  
   David Edwards, 60  
   Edmund, 59  
   Edward Abbott, 59  
   John, 59  
   Mary F. (Dawes), 59  
   Nathaniel, 59  
   Robert, Granville, 60  
   Rufus Dawes, 60  
 Beamon, Lydia, 254  
   LYDIA (DANFORTH), 254  
   Rebecca, 254  
   WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, 254, 309  
 Beamsley, Abigail, 86  
   ANNE (—), 84, 85, 490, 667  
   ANNE<sup>2</sup>, 85, 667  
   Grace, 85  
   Habbakuk, 85  
   Hannah, 86, 490  
   Martha (Hallor), 85, 86, 667-8  
   Mercy, 85  
   Samuel, 85  
   WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, 29, 84, 85, 124, 283, 321,  
     490, 667, 668  
 Beecher, Mr., 453  
 Belcher, Capt. Andrew, 199, 254, 627  
   Elizabeth (Danforth), 254  
   Gov. Jonathan, 254  
 Bell, Thomas, 113, 114, 309, 326, 413  
 BELLAMY, —, 315  
 Bellflower, Abigail (Moulton), 455,  
   456  
   Benjamin, 455, 456  
 Bellingham, Richard, 126  
 Bemis, John, 370  
   Joseph, 373  
   Judith (Jennison), 373  
 Bennett, Abigail (—), 89  
   Andrew, 89  
   Anthony, 88, 89, 282, 674  
   ELINOR (—), 88, 351, 510, 674  
   ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup>, 88, 281, 510  
   Elizabeth, 285  
   Henry, 484  
   John, 89  
   Lydia (Perkins), 484  
   Peter, 89  
   Rebecca (—), 674  
   Richard, 88  
 Bent, Agnes, 494  
   AGNES (GOSLING), 493, 494, 495  
   EDITH (—), 493, 494  
   JANE<sup>2</sup>, 493  
   JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 493, 494

- Bent, John, 277-8, 493-4, 496-7, 534,  
535, 537, 678  
Joseph, 277-8  
Mary, 277-8  
ROBERT<sup>2</sup>, 493, 494  
Thankful, 278  
Berry, Capt. Jacob, 221  
Lavinia (Cutler), 221  
Bibble, Ann, 337  
John, 142, 337  
Bicknell, Joseph, 13, 22  
Bigelow, Jacob, 592  
Bill, Dorothy, 426  
James, 426  
Billing, Roger, 576  
Bingham, Alvin, 481  
Birdsale, Judith, 456  
Bishop, Edward, 525  
Hannah (Putnam), 525  
Joanna (Tuttle), 605  
Job, 605  
Thomas, 605, 669  
Bissel, Esther, 166  
Blake, Deacon, 169  
George, 280  
Elder James, 166, 168  
John, 576  
William, 166, 168, 271-2, 405  
Blanchard, Agnes (Bent), 495  
Thomas, 494, 495, 496  
Blanford, DOROTHY (—), 537, 678  
John, 537, 678, 680-1, 683-4  
Mary (—), 678  
Sarah, 679  
Stephen, 678, 679  
Blesdate, Elizabeth, 85  
Blinman, Rev. Richard, 192, 194, 289,  
511, 607, 608  
Blodgett, Daniel, 91, 92  
Hulda (Simonds), 94  
Martha, 94  
Mary, 94  
Mary (Butterfield), 92  
Rebecca (Tidd), 94  
RUTH<sup>2</sup>, 94, 147, 380  
RUTH (EGGLETON), 92, 94, 285  
SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, 91, 92, 93, 94, 285, 381  
Samuel, 94, 381  
Sarah, 94  
SUSAN (—), 91, 92  
Susanna, 91, 92  
THOMAS<sup>4</sup>, 91, 92, 639  
Thomas, 92, 94  
Bloise, Ann (Cutler), 201  
Edmund, 371  
Michael (Jennison), 201, 371  
Richard, 201, 369, 371  
Blowar, John, 123  
Blymyer, Benjamin, 58  
Caro Dana, 58  
William Henry, 58  
Boardman, Daniel, 523  
Hannah, 525  
Hannah (Hutchinson), 525  
Bolton, Nicholas, 168  
Bond, William, 370, 372  
Bonner, Jane, 292  
Capt. John, 292  
Boogby [Bugby?], John, 414  
Boon, Mr., 682  
Boone, Abigail, 103  
ELIZABETH (LINSFORD), 96, 410-1  
Elizabeth, 96  
Elizabeth ["Betty"], 36, 102, 103  
HANNAH (*Flood?*), 96, 99, 101, 102  
Hannah, 102  
James, 96, 102, 103  
John, 103  
LYDIA<sup>3</sup>, 29, 33, 100, 102  
Mary, 96  
Mary ["Molly"], 36, 102, 103  
Mary (Barns), 96, 102  
Mary (Todd), 102  
NICHOLAS<sup>1</sup>, 96, 410  
NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup>, 29, 33, 34, 96, 97, 98,  
99, 100, 101, 126, 431  
Nicholas, 102  
S., 96  
Samuel, 96  
Booth, Elizabeth, 513  
Bostock, Capt. Edward, 250  
Bosworth, Abigail (Scott), 106  
Alice, 521, 525  
DORCAS<sup>1</sup>, 105, 106, 177, 180  
Edward, 58  
Hanniel, 105, 106, 179  
Ichabod, 58  
Jonathan, 58  
Joseph, 58  
M. Francis, 58  
Mary (Bumstead), 126  
Sala, Jr., 58, 232  
Salah, 58  
Samuel, 125, 126  
Susannah, 105, 106, 179  
Zaccheus, 126  
Bourne, Nehemiah, 443  
Bowen, Griffith, 183, 415, 418  
Henry, 183, 415, 418, 625  
Isaac, 183  
John, 418  
Mehitable (May), 418  
Penuel, 183  
Bowman, Lydia, 201  
Boyes, Antipas, 384  
Boyles, David, 228  
Boylston, Benjamin, 587  
Elizabeth (Sumner), 587  
Peter, 587  
Thomas, 587  
Boynton, Ellen (Pell), 649  
Hannah, 651  
John, 649, 651  
Bowyer, Margaret (—), 239  
Thomas, 239  
Brackett, Anthony, 24  
Bradbury, Mary (Perkins), 486  
Thomas, 486  
Bradford, Maj. William, 622  
Bradhurst, Hannah (Gore), 325  
Ralph, 325  
Bradley, mariner, 322  
Daniel, 601  
Bradstreet, 344  
Ann (Downing), 306  
Gov. Simon, 306  
Simon, 522  
Brainard, H. W., 183  
BRAINERD, DANIEL<sup>1</sup>, 506  
David, 506  
Brainerd, Hezekiah, 506  
Brand, George, 116  
Brattle, Thomas, 384  
Braybrooke, Widow, 198  
Brenton, William, 628  
Brewer family, 311  
BREWER, WIDOW, 413  
Anne, 110  
DANIEL<sup>1</sup>, 108, 109, 110, 113, 115,  
322, 413, 586  
Daniel, 108, 109, 110, 115  
Elizabeth (Kingsbury), 110  
Elizabeth (Rand), 110  
George, 110  
Goode, 669  
Hannah (Morrill), 110  
JOANNA (—), 108, 110, 114  
Joanna, 110  
John, 651, 669  
Nathaniel, 110  
SARAH<sup>2</sup>, 110, 414, 415  
Susanna (Warner), 651  
BREWSTER, PATIENCE<sup>2</sup>, 108  
William, 499  
Brian, JOAN (FRANKLIN), 572  
Marcus, 572  
Bridge family, 311  
Bridge, Anna (Danforth), 254  
EDWARD<sup>1</sup>, 108, 109, 110, 113, 114,  
115, 116, 117, 118, 123, 311, 322,  
413, 414, 586  
Edward, 115, 118  
Francis, 592  
Goodman, 669  
JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 115, 116, 117, 311, 414, 417,  
531, 532  
John, 118, 254  
Margaret, 118, 531  
MARY (—), 113, 115, 116  
Mary, 116, 117  
Mary (Brooks), 118  
Matthew, 254  
PRUDENCE<sup>2</sup>, 116, 117, 118, 415, 417,  
418  
PRUDENCE (ROBINSON), 116, 531-2  
Prudence, 118  
Thomas, 116  
Bridges, Edmond, 652  
Brigden, Thomas, 555  
Brigham, Asa, 593  
Jotham, 593  
Samuel, 593  
Thomas, 593  
Bright, Deacon, 370  
Brinsmade, Mary, 407  
William, 407  
Brinsmeade, John, 144, 145  
Mary (Carter), 145  
Britton, James, 285  
JANE (—), 285  
Brocklebank, Samuel, 681, 682, 683  
Bromfield, Col. Henry, 39, 41, 170  
Brooks, Capt. Caleb, 635  
Dorothy (Wright), 679  
Eunice, 379  
Jerome E., 310  
John, 379  
Noah, 679  
Broughton, Abigail (Raynor), 380  
Capt. George, 380

- Broughton, Capt. John, 380  
 Brown, A. G., 226  
   Rev. Aaron, 205, 206, 210, 212, 222  
   Abigail (—), 525  
   Abraham, 542  
   Capt. Benjamin, 225, 226  
   Benjamin L., 228  
   Damaris (Cady), 205, 206  
   Edward, 649  
   Elizabeth, 542  
   Elizabeth (Shepard), 542  
   Faith (—), 649  
   HANNAH (CARTER), 145, 334  
   Hannah (Putnam), 525  
   Henry, 525, 542  
   Isaac, 77  
   Jane, 507  
   Gen. John, 230  
   John, 564, 649  
   Joseph, 226  
   Mary, 507, 631-2, 679  
   Mary (Balch), 77  
   Richard, 360, 370  
   Samuel, 226, 227, 228  
   Sarah, 593  
   Sophia, 221  
   Thomas, 145, 334  
 Browne, Rev. Edmund, 316, 535  
   Jabesh, 678  
   James, 121  
   Judith, 670  
   MARY<sup>s</sup>, 121, 194  
     called Walker, 351, 352  
   MARY (—), 120, 121, 194, 195,  
     288, 651  
   Mary (—), 120  
   Nathaniel, 670  
   WILLIAM<sup>t</sup>, 120, 121, 194, 195, 510,  
     511, 565, 600  
 Brugher [Burgar], Andrew, 33  
   Sarah (Dawes), 33  
 Bryant, Elizabeth, 449  
 Buckmaster, Abigail, 345  
 Bucknam, Benjamin, 471  
   Deborah (Mellin), 471  
   Rebecca (Parker), 471  
   Samuel, 471  
 Buets, Hugh, 109  
 Bugby, Edward, 116  
 Bullard, Hannah, 588  
 Bullfinch, Dr. Thomas, 102  
 Bumstead, Edward, 123  
   Gerard, 126  
   Hannah, 123, 125, 126  
   Jeremiah, 29, 123, 125-6  
   Joseph, 126  
   MARY<sup>s</sup>, 18, 26, 27, 28, 123, 125, 126  
   Mercy, 123, 125, 126  
   Sarah (—), 126  
   SUSANNA (—), 123, 125  
   THOMAS<sup>t</sup>, 26, 29, 85, 123, 124, 125,  
     126, 413, 650  
   Thomas, 123, 126  
 Burgoyne, Gen., 214  
 Burnal, Sarah, 634  
 Burnham, Abigail, 130  
   Elizabeth (Wells), 130  
   Esther, 130  
   Esther (Cogswell), 129  
   James, 130, 605  
 Burnham, Johanna, 130  
   John, 130, 189, 656  
   Joseph, 130  
   Lydia (Pingrie), 129  
   MARY (LAWRENCE), 12, 64, 129,  
     401  
   Mary, 130  
   Mary (—), 130  
   Nathaniel, 130  
   RUTH<sup>s</sup>, 130  
   Sarah, 129, 130  
   THOMAS<sup>t</sup>, 12, 64, 129, 351, 401, 601,  
     603, 605, 651.  
 Burr, Atwell, 59  
   Benjamin, 59  
   Benjamin F., 59  
   Carlos Calvin, 59  
   Gideon, 59  
   John, 59  
   Ozias, 59  
   Samuel, 59  
 Burroughs, Mr., 250, 251  
   Rev. George, 522, 523, 524  
   Hannah (—), 523  
   Mary, 523  
 Busby, Bridget (—), 663  
   Nicholas, 663  
 Bush, Hannah (Pendleton), 535, 538  
   John, 538  
 Bushnell, Edmund, 85, 668  
   Edward, 85, 668  
   Elizabeth, 85  
   FRANCIS<sup>t</sup>, 12, 85, 459, 600  
   Francis<sup>s</sup>, 12, 459, 600  
   Martha (Hallor), 85, 667-8  
   Mary, 85  
 Buswell, Isaac, 560  
   Sarah (Stacy), 560  
   William, 560  
 Butler, Dr., 581  
   Susannah (Perkins), 491  
   Thankful, 391  
   William, 491  
 Butterfield, Benjamin, 92  
   Mary, 92  
 Butman, Mrs. Martha, 75  
 Byles, Rev. Mather, 421  
**C**abot, Capt., 214  
   George, 205  
   Rev. Marston, 205, 208  
 Cadwell, Thomas, 299  
 Cady, Damaris, 205  
 Cakebread, Mary<sup>s</sup>, 198  
   Mary, 198  
   Sarah (—), 661, 663  
   Thomas<sup>t</sup>, 321, 534, 660-1, 663  
 Cato, Indian, 534  
 Caldwell, Nancy E. (Hoyt), 60  
   Thomas Palmer, 60  
 Calef, Robert, 436  
**CALL**, BENNET (—), 132, 137, 138  
   Elizabeth, 138, 546  
   Hannah (Kettle), 138  
   JOANNA<sup>s</sup>, 139, 140, 466  
   JOANNA (—), 136  
   JOANNA (SHEPARDSON), 614  
   John, 132, 138, 139  
   LYDIA (—), 132  
 Call, LYDIA (SHEPARDSON), 134, 136,  
   138, 139, 462, 469, 546  
   Lydia, 139  
   Margaret, 132, 138  
   Mary, 132, 138  
   Mercy, 138  
   THOMAS<sup>t</sup>, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136,  
     137, 138, 139, 333, 465-6, 468-9,  
     545, 546, 613, 614  
   THOMAS<sup>s</sup>, 132, 133, 134, 136, 138,  
     139, 466, 468-9, 546  
 Calley, Robert, 467  
 Calloway, Judith, 13  
   Oliver, 13  
 Callum [Kilham]  
   ELIZABETH (—), 344-5  
   Joanna, 344  
   John, 344  
 Campbell, Duncan, 97  
   Susanna, 97  
 Campfield, Rachel, 204  
 Capen, Bernard, 572  
   Lt. John, 163, 572, 576  
 Card, Hannah (Ellery), 196, 290-1  
   William, 196, 291  
 Cargill, Benjamin, 221  
   Philadelphia, 221  
 Carner, Mr., 344  
 Carr, Ann, 525  
   Robert, 628  
 Carrier, Martha (Allen), 263  
   Thomas, 263  
**CARTER**, ABIGAIL<sup>t</sup>, 382  
   Abigail (Manning), 152  
   Anna (—), 145  
   Anna (Cooper), 152  
   Benjamin, 152  
   Caleb, 144  
   ELIZABETH (—), 145, 149, 150  
   Elizabeth, 150  
   Elizabeth (—), 145, 149  
   Elizabeth (Grose), 145  
   Esther, 152  
   Eunice (Brooks), 379  
   Eunice (Kendall), 392  
   HANNAH<sup>s</sup>, 142, 144, 145, 147, 333,  
     334, 335  
   Jabez, 151, 152  
   Capt. JOHN<sup>s</sup>, 92, 93, 144, 145, 146,  
     147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 331, 333,  
     334, 335, 376, 377, 553, 554, 596  
   JOHN<sup>s</sup>, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 335  
   John, 151, 152  
   Jonathan, 392  
   Joseph, 144, 145, 147, 152, 334, 552  
   Josiah, 152  
   Joshua, 574  
   Margery (Dickson), 152  
   MARY (—), 142, 144, 145, 334  
   Mary, 142, 144, 145  
   Nancy (Cutler), 228, 230, 231, 233  
   Nathaniel, 152  
   Phebe, 152  
   Rufus Gregory, 233  
   RUTH (BURNHAM), 130, 150, 152  
   Ruth (Dodge), 152  
   Samuel, 142, 144, 145, 147, 152,  
     334, 379  
   Susanna, 392  
   Susanna (—), 145

- Carter, Susanna (Winship), 152  
 THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, 142, 143, 144, 145, 331,  
 333, 334, 337, 545, 552  
 Thomas, 142, 144, 145, 147, 152,  
 334, 335, 375-6, 379, 382  
 Rev. Thomas, 552  
 Winifred (Harrod or Harwood), 145
- Castine, 25
- Chadwick, Edmund, 182  
 John, 338  
 Sarah, 338
- Chamberlain, MARIE (*Pope?*), 500  
 Thomas, 500
- Champernoone, Capt. Francis, 443
- Champney, Esther, 254
- Chandler, Annis (Bayford), 239-40  
 Mrs. Elizabeth S. (Frazier), 221  
 Hannah or Joanna (Brewer?), 110  
 Ens. John, 34  
 Mary, 28, 247  
 Mary (Dane), 248  
 Rev. Samuel, 654, 655  
 Thomas, 110  
 William, 110, 239-41
- Channing, William Ellery, 291
- Chapin, Ruth, 33
- CHARDE, ELIZABETH, 294, 296
- Charles, King I, 250
- Charles, King II, 257, 565
- Chase, Gov. Salmon P., 57
- Checkley, Mr., 581
- Checkley, Rev. Samuel, 101, 102
- Cheever, Deacon, 41  
 Rev., 340, 467  
 Elizabeth, 470  
 Ezekiel, 382  
 Sarah, 382
- Cheney, Elias, 387  
 Elizabeth, 489  
 Hester, 390  
 John, 386, 387, 388, 389, 392, 489,  
 592  
 Keziah (Kendall), 390, 391  
 Lydia, 489  
 Mary, 418  
 Nathaniel Carter, 391  
 Peter, 390  
 Ralph, 390  
 Sybil (Marson), 391
- Chickering, Hannah (Balch), 81  
 Henry, 82, 631  
 Rev. Jabez, 81, 82  
 Dr. John, 631  
 Joseph, 82  
 Nathaniel, 82  
 Simon, 82  
 Stephen, 82
- Child, Benjamin, 418  
 Elizabeth, 418  
 Joshua, 418
- Choate, Rufus, 204
- Church, Maj. Benjamin, 21, 23, 24, 25,  
 623, 626  
 Richard, 626
- Churchill, Leah, 221
- Chute, James, 399
- Clapp, Abner, 171, 172  
 Catherine, 172, 431, 548-50  
 Deborah (—), 168  
 Desire, 168
- Clapp, Ebenezer, 172, 584  
 Edward, 164, 172  
 ELIZABETH<sup>3</sup>, 171, 172, 584-7  
 Elizabeth, 167  
 Experience, 167, 172  
 Ezra, 164  
 Frank L., 172  
 Frederick, 172  
 Hannah, 171, 172, 584  
 HANNAH (LEEDS), 168, 170, 171,  
 407  
 Hannah (Clapp), 172  
 Hopestill, 160, 166, 167, 170  
 Jane, 169, 615  
 JOANE (FORD), 157, 166, 167, 301,  
 615  
 John, 172, 574  
 Jonathan, 584  
 Lemuel<sup>6</sup>, 172, 435, 549-50  
 Mary, 171, 172  
 Mary (Paul), 172  
 Mary (Wright), 686  
 Nathaniel, 172, 584  
 Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, 172, 550, 584, 615, 686  
 Noah, 686  
 Preserved<sup>2</sup>, 67, 161, 166, 167, 300,  
 585, 621  
 Rebecca, 172, 431, 548-50  
 Rebecca (Dexter), 431, 549  
 Return, 172  
 Richard, 172, 431  
 Capt. ROGER<sup>1</sup>, 15, 16, 18, 45, 155-  
 172, 276, 295, 297, 301, 311, 321,  
 403-5, 529, 550, 573-6, 578, 584,  
 615, 621, 686  
 SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, 160, 161, 162, 165, 167,  
 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 273, 274,  
 405-7, 529, 573, 576, 578, 584-5  
 Samuel, 168, 171, 172, 485, 584  
 Sarah (Newberry), 167  
 Sarah (Pond), 168  
 Supply, 168  
 Susanna (Swift), 167, 170  
 Thanks, 168  
 Thomas, 168, 171  
 Unite, 168, 172  
 Wait, 167  
 Waitstill, 167  
 William, 167, 172
- Clarey, Mr. Edward C., 389
- Clark, see also Clarke, Clerke  
 Capt., 24  
 Abigail, 608  
 Abigail (Cogswell), 189  
 Abigail (Gutterson), 182  
 Agnes (—), 182  
 Agnes (Tybbot), 608  
 Ann, 181  
 Danforth, 254  
 DORCAS (BOSWORTH), 105, 106, 177,  
 180  
 EDWARD<sup>1</sup>, 105, 177, 178, 179, 180,  
 181, 182, 651  
 Edward, 177, 181, 182, 608  
 ELEANOR<sup>1</sup>, 241, 247  
 Elizabeth, 181, 182  
 Elizabeth (Heath), 182  
 Ephraim, 182  
 Gift (Stevens), 182  
 HANNAH (SHEPARD), 182, 184, 543
- Clark, Hannah, 184, 185  
 Hannah (Davis), 609  
 HANNIEL<sup>2</sup>, 179, 180, 181, 345  
 HANNIEL<sup>3</sup>, 181, 182, 183, 184, 201,  
 206, 543  
 John, 181, 182, 254, 608  
 Jonathan, 182  
 Joseph, 179, 180, 181, 182, 608-9  
 Josiah, 179, 180, 181, 183, 184,  
 185, 206, 651  
 Joyce (—), 181  
 Martha (Ela), 182  
 MARY (GUTTERSON), 180, 181, 345  
 Mary, 181  
 Mary (Davis), 180  
 Mary (Dow), 180  
 Mary (Johnson), 177  
 Matthew, 180, 181  
 Mehitable, 185  
 Nathaniel, 184, 185  
 Nehemiah, 184, 185  
 Priscilla (Whittaker), 182  
 Rebecca (Beamon), 254  
 Rebecca (Wakefield), 185, 206  
 Samuel, 181, 182, 183  
 Sarah, 181, 182  
 Sarah (Stevens), 181  
 SUSANNA<sup>4</sup>, 184, 204, 206  
 Tabitha (Hartshorn?), 182, 183,  
 184, 185  
 Capt. Thomas, 102  
 Timothy, 181, 182, 183  
 William, 181, 579, 621  
 Zebediah, 183, 184, 185, 210, 211
- Clarke, Alice (Hallett), 18  
 Mary (Burnham), 130  
 Thomas, 18, 180, 189, 559, 603
- Cleveland, Capt., 214
- Clement, Augustine, 578  
 Elizabeth, 578  
 Robert, Sr., 179
- Clerke, Stephen, 558
- Cobbet, Rev. Thomas, 486, 559, 603
- Coddington, Gov. William, 316
- COE, ROBERT<sup>1</sup>, 360
- Coffin, Joshua, 670  
 Rebecca (Parker), 468
- Coggan, Caleb, 123  
 John, 123
- Cogswell, Abigail, 189  
 Abigail (Dawes), 36, 37, 38, 44, 189  
 ALICE (—), 188  
 ALICIA (—), 188  
 EDWARD<sup>3</sup>, 188  
 Edward, 189  
 ELIZABETH (THOMPSON), 188, 189  
 Elizabeth, 189  
 Esther, 129  
 Francis, 38, 189  
 Hannah, 189  
 JOHN<sup>1</sup>, 38, 129, 188, 189, 398, 488,  
 490, 603, 650  
 John, 189, 490, 491  
 Jonathan, 38, 189, 490, 491  
 Mary, 189, 491  
 ROBERT<sup>2</sup>, 188  
 SARAH<sup>2</sup>, 129, 189, 602  
 Susanna (Hawkes), 189  
 Susannah, 491  
 William, 36, 38, 129, 189, 490, 491

- Coit [Coyte, Goyt]  
 "Abbygale", 195  
 Abigail (Sargent), 195  
 Elizabeth (Davis), 195, 282  
 Hannah (Ellery), 196, 291  
 Hannah (Howard), 195  
 Job, 196, 291  
 JOHN<sup>1</sup>, 121, 191-5, 280, 282, 289, 291, 296, 347, 510, 511, 565, 572  
 JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 121, 193-5, 282, 289, 291, 564, 567  
 John, 195  
 Joseph, 193  
 Martha, 193  
 Martha (Harris), 193  
 MARY<sup>3</sup>, 195, 288, 291  
 MARY (*Jenners?*), 191, 192, 193  
 MARY (STEVENS), 194, 512, 564, 567  
 Mary, 193, 196  
 Matthew, 195  
 Nathaniel, 121, 195, 282, 289  
 Solomon, 191  
 Coldam, Clement, 281  
 Cole, see also Coles  
 Widow, 628  
 Isaac, 93, 285  
 JANE (—), 93, 285  
 Samuel, 98  
 Coles, Rice, 545  
 Collar, see also Coller  
 John, 199, 200  
 Mary (Cutler), 199, 200  
 Coller, Hannah, 410  
 Collings, see also Collins  
 Robert, 397, 398  
 Collins, see also Collings  
 Abigail (Warner), 656  
 Capt. James, 656  
 John, 281, 288  
 Mary, 281  
 Comey, David, 379  
 Elizabeth, 379  
 Comrin, John, 102  
 Conant, John, 76, 77  
 Joshua, 305, 306  
 Lot, 625  
 MARY<sup>2</sup>, 72, 74  
 Robert, 611  
 ROGER<sup>1</sup>, 18, 70, 71, 74, 295, 304, 403, 453-4, 484, 485, 600, 625  
 Roger, 72  
 Seeth (Gardner), 306  
 Connwall, Mary, 643  
 Converse, Allen, 554  
 Edward, 146, 147, 150, 248, 254, 331, 465  
 Esther (Champney), 254  
 Hannah (Carter), 150  
 James, 93, 148-51, 248, 465  
 Dea. Josiah, 148, 254, 465  
 Ruth, 248  
 Samuel, 147  
 Zachariah, 554  
 Cook, see also Cooke  
 Rev. Mr., 364, 591, 645  
 Henry, 456  
 John, 281  
 Judith (Birdsale), 456  
 Mary, 456  
 Cook, Mary (Collins), 281  
 Cooke, Aaron, 294, 299, 407, 621  
 Dr. Elisha, 631  
 ELIZABETH (CHARDE), 294  
 Elizabeth, 294  
 Mary Josephine, 59  
 Miriam, 407  
 Richard, 631  
 Coolidge, John, 33, 36, 37, 38, 40  
 Jonathan, 37  
 Joseph, 37  
 Lydia (Dawes), 36, 37  
 Cooper, Brother, 667  
 Anna, 152  
 John, 152  
 Rebecca, 317  
 Rev. William, 33, 570  
 Corbin, Benjamin, 204  
 Clement, 204, 312  
 Jabez, 204  
 James, 202  
 Jemimah (Cutler), 204  
 Mary, 312  
 Corey, Elizabeth, 456  
 Giles, 456  
 Corwin, Mr., 564  
 Capt. George, 522  
 Cotton, Rev. John<sup>1</sup>, 17, 427, 441  
 Lucy, 481  
 Cousens, Isaac, 178  
 Cowell, Capt. Edward, 683  
 Cox, Mary, 341  
 Coy, Matthew, 105  
 Richard, 105  
 Cradock, Matthew, 452, 453  
 Craft, Abigail, 275  
 Ursula (Adams), 530  
 Crafts, Griffin, 312, 530  
 Moses, 312  
 Rebecca (Gardner), 312  
 Cragbone, Joseph, 505  
 Cragg, Caro Blymyer, 59  
 Richard, 59  
 Virginia (Dawes), 59  
 Crane, Goodman, 581  
 Robert, 652-3  
 Samuel, 277  
 Cravath [Carveth]  
 Catharine (May), 420, 423  
 Elizabeth, 420  
 Elizabeth (Hooks), 420  
 Ezekiel, 420, 423, 428-30  
 John, 420, 423  
 Lemuel, 48, 420, 423  
 Mary, 420  
 Mercy (Sandys), 420, 430  
 Thomas, 42  
 Zibiah, 420  
 Zibiah (Trott), 420  
 Creese, Thomas, 98, 102  
 Croad, John, 288  
 Crofts, William, 627  
 Cromwell, Sir Henry, 239, 244  
 Oliver, 244  
 R., 274  
 Crooke, Christopher, 309  
 John, 309  
 Mary, 309  
 REBECCA<sup>1</sup>, 309, 310  
 ROGER, 309, 310  
 Crooke, Ruth, 309  
 Samuel, 309  
 Walter, 309  
 Crosby, Hannah, 264  
 Simon, 264  
 Cross, Robert, 489  
 Stephen, 489  
 Crosswell, Priscilla (Upham), 615, 616, 630  
 Thomas, 616, 630  
 Cunliffe, Henry, 579  
 Curtis, Augustus Stephen, 60  
 Deodatus, 60  
 Eleazer, 60  
 Hannah (Gore), 328  
 Harry Norvell, 60  
 Helen Moore, 60  
 Isaac, 328  
 John, 116  
 Samuel, 328  
 Solomon, 60  
 Walter, 60  
 William, 328  
 Cushing, Charles, 386  
 Elizabeth, 481  
 Elizabeth (Sumner), 386  
 John, 386  
 Matthew, 386  
 Cutler, Abigail, 203, 204  
 Abigail (—), 200  
 Abigail (—), 204  
 Ann, 201  
 ANNE OR ANNA (—), 198, 663  
 ANNE (*Cakebread?*), 198  
 Asher, 363, 365, 592  
 Benoni, 184, 202  
 Betsey (Larkin), 233  
 Charles, 114, 214, 221, 227-8, 230  
 Clarissa Warner, 230, 234  
 Daniel Converse, 229-31, 233  
 Dinah, 203  
 Elizabeth, 200, 201, 219, 221  
 Elizabeth (Babcock), 203  
 Elizabeth (Leavens), 203  
 Mrs. Elizabeth S. (Frazier), 221  
 Elizabeth W. (Voris), 234  
 EPHRAIM<sup>2</sup>, 52, 53, 56, 204, 206, 207, 208, 211, 220, 221, 222, 223, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 478, 480-1, 525  
 Ephraim, 204, 206, 208, 210  
 HANNAH (SNOW), 201, 203, 556  
 Hannah, 199, 200, 203, 208  
 Hannah (—), 201  
 Hannah (Appleton), 221  
 HEZEKIAH<sup>1</sup>, 183, 184, 185, 201, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 211, 212, 221, 222  
 Hezekiah, 223, 233  
 Isaac, 200, 201, 202  
 JAMES<sup>1</sup>, 198, 199, 201, 202, 363, 365, 504, 556, 592, 663  
 JAMES<sup>2</sup>, 198, 199, 200, 201, 446-7, 505  
 James, 200, 201  
 Jemima, 199, 200, 203, 204, 556  
 Jervis, 218, 220, 229, 230, 231  
 Joanna, 199, 200  
 JOHN<sup>3</sup>, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 556  
 John, 199, 200, 201

- Cutler, Dr. John, 628  
Jonathan, 202  
Joseph, 200, 201  
Julia Perkins, 230, 232, 233, 234  
Keziah, 203, 204  
Lavinia, 221  
Leah (Atwood), 221, 223, 226, 229, 233  
Lois, 363, 365  
Lurana (Leavens), 202  
LYDIA (MOORE), 200, 201, 446  
Lydia (Bowman), 201  
Rev. MANASSEH<sup>6</sup>, 80, 81, 82, 114, 201, 205, 206, 208, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 222, 228, 229, 230, 234, 248, 570  
Manasseh, 231, 234  
Maria (Walker), 233  
MARY (BALCH), 81, 82, 204, 208, 211, 214, 220, 230  
Mary, 199, 200, 203, 221, 223, 228, 233  
Mary (—), 198, 199  
Mary (Stearns), 200  
Mary Ann, 231  
Mehitable, 208  
Nancy, 228, 230, 231, 233  
Patience, 203, 204  
Phebe (Page), 198  
Philadelphia (Cargill), 221  
Rachel (Campfield), 204  
Robert, 545, 632  
Ruth, 632  
Samuel, 199, 200, 201, 203, 204  
SARAH<sup>7</sup>, 56, 58, 231, 233  
Sarah, 199  
Sarah (—), 201  
Sarah (—), 204  
Sarah (Stone), 201  
Sarah Julia, 228, 234  
Seth, 203  
Sophia (Brown), 221  
SUSANNA (CLARK), 184, 204, 206-8, 210, 212, 221  
Temple, 221, 229  
Thomas, 199, 200, 201, 202, 363, 365, 592, 632  
Timothy, 202, 203  
Uriah, 203  
William Parker, 228, 231, 232, 233, 234
- Cutter, Joseph, 593  
Mary, 470  
Nathaniel, 470, 593  
Prudence (Thompson), 593  
Richard, 593
- Cutting, Capt. John, 360  
Richard, 363, 460  
Susanna, 460  
Thankful, 363  
Thankful (—), 363
- Dakin, Beulah, 362  
Dana, Benjamin, 56  
Caroline, 56  
Isaac, 56  
John Winchester, 56  
Richard, 56  
Dane, Abigail (Warner), 248, 651
- Dane, Alice (Dutch), 241, 247  
Annis (Bayford), 239, 240  
ELEANOR (CLARK), 241, 247  
Elizabeth, 239, 240, 242, 247-8  
Elizabeth (Ingalls), 241  
FRANCES (*Bowyer?*), 239, 242, 244, 246  
Rev. Francis, 16, 239-41  
Hannah (Chandler), 241  
JOHN<sup>1</sup>, 651  
JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 16, 239-42, 246-8, 280, 311, 443, 650, 651, 655, 669  
John, 239, 246, 247, 248, 651-3  
Mary, 241, 248  
Mrs. Mary (—), 241  
Mary (Thompson), 248  
Philemon, 247, 248, 652  
Rebecca, 248  
Ruth (Converse), 248  
SARAH<sup>3</sup>, 241, 247, 652
- DANFORTH, DAMPFORDE, NICHOLAS<sup>c-1</sup>  
15, 16, 20, 23, 77, 189, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 271, 274, 311, 378, 413, 503, 537, 577, 622, 626
- Danforth, see also Dernford  
Rev., 172  
Anna, 254, 264  
Dorothy (Shedd), 268  
Elijah, 267  
ELIZABETH (—), 250, 253  
ELIZABETH (POULTER), 254, 256, 264, 499, 500  
Elizabeth, 253-4, 264, 267-8  
Elizabeth (Manning), 268  
Esther (Champney), 254, 263  
Hannah (Crosby), 264  
Jacob, 267-8  
JANE (SUDBURY), 250  
John, 77, 264, 267-8, 577  
JONATHAN<sup>2</sup>, 137, 147, 251, 254, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 499-500  
JONATHAN<sup>3</sup>, 257, 259, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 466-7, 469  
Jonathan, 267, 268  
LYDIA<sup>2</sup>, 254  
Lydia, 264  
Martha, 253, 254  
Mary, 254, 264  
Mary (Wilson), 254  
Mary (Withington), 254  
Nicholas, 257, 264, 267-8  
Priscilla, 248  
REBECCA<sup>4</sup>, 267, 468-70  
REBECCA (PARKER), 265, 266, 267, 466, 469  
Rebecca (Patten), 268  
Rebecca (Simonds), 267  
Samuel, 16, 46, 77, 251, 253-4, 256-7, 259, 263-8, 311, 413, 577  
Sarah, 264, 267-8  
Tabitha (Johnson), 268  
THOMAS, 250  
Thomas, 15-16, 20, 23, 253-4, 256, 264, 266-8, 271, 274, 378, 503, 537, 622, 626, 628-9
- Daniel, John, 563  
Robert, 91  
Daniels, —, 581  
Darby, Mrs., 524
- Davenport, Capt., 553  
Abigail, 274  
Anna, 274  
Benjamin, 278  
Charles, 272, 273, 274  
Dorcas (Andrews), 274  
Ebenezer, 273, 274, 276  
Ephraim, 277-8  
Hannah (Maynard), 274  
Isaac, 277, 423  
JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 273, 274, 276, 277, 278, 415, 423  
John, 276, 277  
Rev. John, 15-16, 162, 252  
Jonathan, 273, 274  
Joseph, 277-8  
MARY (—), 271, 273, 276  
Mary, 273, 274  
Mary (Bent), 277-8  
Mary (May), 277, 423  
MEHITABLE<sup>3</sup>, 274, 277-8, 436  
NAOMI (*May?*), 276-7  
Nathaniel, 622, 623, 624, 625  
Capt. Nathaniel, 149  
Patience (—), 274  
Rebecca (Holbrook), 278  
Capt. Richard, 163  
Samuel, 277, 423  
Sarah, 273, 274  
Sarah (Bartlett), 274  
Sarah (Ware), 278  
Stephen, 277-8  
Thankful (Bent), 277-8  
THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, 161, 271-4, 406, 423, 528-9, 576, 622  
Thomas<sup>2</sup>, 272-3, 274, 622  
Waitstill (Smith), 274  
David, Betsey, 363
- Davis, —, 97  
Aaron, 282, 283  
Abigail (Andress or Andrews), 283  
Abigail (Sargent), 283  
ALICE (—), 281  
Capt. Daniel, 225  
Dorothy, 418  
Ebenezer, 264, 515  
ELIZABETH<sup>4</sup>, 283, 675  
ELIZABETH (BENNETT), 88, 281, 282  
Elizabeth, 195, 282  
Elizabeth (Batchelder), 281  
Ephraim, 177, 180  
Frances (—), 281  
Hannah, 609, 653  
Hannah (Haskell), 282  
JACOB<sup>6</sup>, 88, 195, 281, 282, 288  
JACOB<sup>5</sup>, 282, 283, 352, 674  
Jacob, 283  
James, 177, 180, 281, 288, 347, 349, 352, 515, 516  
Jemima (Haskell), 283  
JOHN<sup>1</sup>, 194, 195, 246, 280, 281, 288, 347, 349, 352, 510-2, 515-6, 565  
John, 281, 282, 349, 516  
Gen. Joseph R., 4  
Margaret, 494  
MARY (HASKELL), 282, 283, 352, 674  
Mary, 282, 283, 511  
Mary (Collins), 281  
Mary (Doliver), 283

- Davis, Mary (Johnson), 177  
 Mary (Wharf), 515  
 Mehitable (—), 281  
 Moses, 282, 283  
 Phebe (Day), 283  
 Robert, 494  
 Sarah, 282  
 Sarah (Danforth), 264  
 Thomas, 670  
 William, 283, 418
- Dawes, Abigail, 29, 32, 33, 36, 38, 189  
 ABIGAIL K. (HOLDEN), 47, 50, 54, 55, 366  
 AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>, 12, 13, 14, 15, 17, 18, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 32, 46, 125, 126, 321, 386, 570, 623, 670  
 Ambrose, 27, 28  
 Ann (Keys), 33  
 Anna, 28  
 Beman Gates, 59  
 Bertie Burr, 59  
 Bertie O. (Burr), 59  
 Betsey Gates, 60  
 Carlos Burr, 59  
 Caro D. (Blymyer), 58  
 Caroline, 58  
 Caroline (Dana), 56  
 Carolyn, 58  
 Catharine, 57  
 Catherine, 58  
 Charles, 37, 39, 46, 47, 48, 52, 54, 59  
 Charles Cutler, 59  
 Charles Gates, 59  
 Gen. Charles Gates, 58, 218, 435, 657  
 Charles May, 46, 55  
 Dana (daughter), 59  
 Dana McCutcheon, 58  
 Deborah Burr, 59  
 Diana Cooke, 59  
 Dorothy, 59  
 Dorothy (Potter), 60  
 Ebenezer, 28  
 Edward, 56, 57  
 Eleanor (Dillingham), 58  
 Elisha, 38  
 Elizabeth, 29, 32, 33, 37  
 Elizabeth (Ames), 55  
 Elizabeth Dillingham, 59  
 Elizabeth (Underwood), 33  
 Emily (McCormick), 59  
 Ephraim Cutler, 3, 5, 57, 58, 59  
 Esther Pinney (Johnson), 59  
 George, 47, 54, 55  
 Gideon, 28  
 Grace B. (Fredericks), 59  
 Hannah, 18, 33, 37, 38, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48  
 Hannah (Goldthwait), 47, 48  
 Hannah (Jackson), 33, 36, 37  
 Harriet McCormick, 59  
 Harry Curtis, 60  
 Helen Buckner, 59  
 Helen M. (Curtis), 60  
 HENRY<sup>7</sup>, 48, 53, 55, 56, 57, 58, 233  
 Henry, 59  
 Henry Manasseh, 56, 58  
 Henry May, 60
- Dawes, Israel Putnam, 46  
 James Thompson, 54, 56  
 Gov. James William, 56  
 Jane, 55  
 Janet Eaton, 59  
 Janet (Newton), 59  
 Jean Palmer, 59  
 Joanna, 18  
 John, 54, 55  
 Jonathan, 17, 18, 28  
 Joseph, 28  
 Lucretia, 37, 44, 46, 47, 48  
 Lucretia Catha[e?]rine, 58  
 Lucy, 58  
 Lucy Ann (Birchard), 55  
 LYDIA (BOONE), 29, 33, 34, 37, 100-2  
 Lydia, 36, 37, 44, 45, 46, 48  
 Margaret Gates, 59  
 MARY (BUMSTEAD), 26, 27, 28, 125, 126, 570  
 Mary, 32, 33, 37, 46  
 Mary Burr, 59  
 Mary (Chandler), 28  
 Mary Frances, 59  
 Mary Gates, 60  
 Mary (Green), 46  
 Mary Holden, 55, 56  
 Mary Jane, 59  
 Mary J. (Cooke), 59  
 Mary J. (Wiggenton), 60  
 Mary Josephine, 59  
 Mary M. (Van Dorn), 56  
 MEHITABLE (MAY), 37, 38, 40, 44, 46, 48, 277, 423, 438  
 Mehitable, 46  
 Mehitable (Gardner), 28  
 Mehitable May<sup>2</sup>, 37, 46  
 Mildred (Roberts), 59  
 Palmer, 59  
 Priscilla, 28  
 Rebecca, 29, 32, 33, 38  
 Robert Rufus, 59  
 Rufus, 3  
 Rufus Cutler, 59  
 Rufus Fearing, 58  
 RUFUS R.<sup>8</sup>, 3, 4, 6, 7, 9, 57, 58  
 Ruth, 36, 37, 38, 45  
 Sally (Rice), 55  
 Samuel May, 46  
 SARAH (CUTLER), 56, 58, 233  
 SARAH (STORY), 27, 28, 29, 32, 33, 570  
 Sarah, 32, 33, 36, 37  
 Sarah Jane, 58  
 Sarah (McFarland), 46, 48  
 Sarah (Paine), 33  
 Sarah Pinney, 59  
 Story, 29, 32, 46  
 Sue Potter, 60  
 Susan, 18, 28  
 SUSANNA (MILLS), 12, 15, 17-8, 444  
 Susanna, 28, 33  
 Thankful, 28  
 THOMAS<sup>3</sup>, 12, 20, 22, 27, 28, 29, 32, 33, 44, 46, 47, 386, 570  
 Thomas, 20, 32, 33  
 Col. Thomas, 28, 386  
 Judge Thomas, 3, 28, 34, 41, 386  
 Virginia, 59
- Dawes, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, 11-18, 20-2, 27-8, 32-3, 36, 38, 46, 162, 163, 321, 386, 401, 442, 444, 459, 600  
 WILLIAM<sup>4</sup>, 20, 29, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 47, 102, 103, 189, 321  
 WILLIAM<sup>6</sup> "who rode", 20, 28, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 56, 321, 364, 421, 423  
 [or Daues], William, 13, 18, 20, 27, 28, 33, 46, 53, 55  
 William Jason, 55  
 WILLIAM MEARS<sup>6</sup>, 37, 41, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 57, 366  
 William Mills, 59  
 Day, Anne (Woodward), 672  
 Anthony, 348  
 Ezekiel, 76  
 Robert, 246  
 Thomas, 672  
 Deacon[?], Priscilla, 521  
 Deakin, Esther, 328  
 Deale, Mary (Shatswell), 179  
 William, 179  
 Dean, Ebenezer, 77  
 Elizabeth (Balch), 82  
 Gulliver, 233  
 Mary (Cutler), 233  
 Deering, Henry, 324, 325  
 Mary (Newcomb), 460  
 Samuel, 460  
 Dempsey, Betsey M. (Beach), 60  
 Charles Gates, 60  
 Edward Wheeler, 60  
 Denison, Maj., 129, 246, 280, 344, 488, 650  
 Daniel, 522  
 Edward, 308  
 William, 308  
 DENNE, ELIZABETH, 649, 651  
 Dennis, Mary (Bushnell), 85  
 Thomas, 85  
 Denny, Sir Edward, 239  
 Lady Margaret, 239, 244  
 Samuel, 388  
 Denslow, Elizabeth (—), 300  
 Nicholas, 300  
 DERNFORD, see also Danforth  
 ALICE (—), 250  
 ISABELLA (—), 250  
 KATHERINE (—), 250  
 NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup>, 250  
 PAUL<sup>b</sup>, 250  
 WILLIAM<sup>a</sup>, 250  
 DEVEREAUX, JOHN<sup>t</sup>, 84, 192  
 Devilbiss, Alexander, 54  
 Dewey, Constant (Hawes), 166  
 Dexter, Catharine (Mears), 431, 434, 435, 548-50  
 Ebenezer, 549  
 Francis, 11  
 Jason Haven, 549  
 Joanna (Parker), 435, 470  
 John, 172, 435-6, 470, 548  
 John Haven, 548, 549  
 Rebecca, 172  
 Richard, 172, 435, 470  
 Rev. Samuel, 77, 81, 172, 431, 434-5, 470, 549

- Dicke, Elizabeth, 608  
 Dickson, Elizabeth, 361  
   John, 152  
   Margery, 152  
   William, 152  
 Dike, Agnes (Tybbot), 608  
   Rebecca (Dolliver), 195, 608  
   Richard, 195, 608  
 Dillingham, Eleanor, 58  
 Dinely, Fathergone, 428  
   William, 428  
 Dinsdale, Thomas, 428  
 Disborough, Isaac, 192  
 Dix, Ralph, 668  
 Dodge, Abigail, 491  
   Addie F., 74  
   Edward, 352  
   Joseph, 491  
   Josiah, 620  
   MARY (CONANT), 72, 74  
   Mary (Haskell), 352  
   RICHARD<sup>1</sup>, 352, 491  
   Ruth, 152  
   Mrs. Sarah, 76  
   WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, 71, 351, 452, 620, 651  
   WILLIAM<sup>2</sup>, 72, 74  
   William, 214  
 Dolliver, Rebecca, 195, 608  
   Samuel, 195, 608  
 Dorr, Ebenezer, 35  
 Doubleday, Gen. Abner, 4  
 Douglas, Ann (Mattly or Mattle), 426  
   William, 426  
 Dow, John, 542  
   Mary (Page), 542  
   Phebe (—), 180  
   Thomas, 180  
 DOWNING, — (BELLAMY), 315  
   ABIGAIL, 315, 317  
   Ann, 306, 316  
   Anne (Ware), 315  
   CICELY (—), 315  
   Emanuel, 305, 306, 315, 316, 317,  
     454, 563, 625  
   GEORGE, 315  
   George, 315, 316  
   James, 316, 317  
   John, 315  
   Joseph, 315  
   Lucy, 317  
   Lucy (Winthrop), 315, 316  
   Mary, 316  
   Nahomie, 315  
   Nathaniel, 315, 317  
   Susan, 316  
   Susanna, 315, 317  
 Drinker, Joseph, 75  
   Philip, 75  
   Ruth (Balch), 75  
 Dudley, Gov., 100  
   Chief Justice Paul, 43  
 Duncan, Peter, 511  
 Dunkin, John, 259  
 Dunster, Mr., 326  
   Henry, 137  
 Dutch, Esther, 195  
   Osman, 195, 241  
   Robert, 194, 347  
 Dutton, Thomas, 146
- E**ames, see also Ames, Emes  
 Mr., 644  
 Mary (Blanford), 681  
 Sarah, 679  
 Eastman, Philip, 587  
   Roger, 542, 587  
   Sarah, 587  
   Sarah (—), 542  
 Eaton, Benoni, 468  
   Jonas, 379, 472  
   Joshua, 379  
   Mary, 472  
   Nathaniel, 468  
   Rebecca (Kendall), 379  
   Ursula, 468  
 Eddy, Benjamin, 361  
   Grace (Holden), 361  
   John, 361, 663  
   Samuel, 361  
 Edgerly, Eleanor (Ellery), 292  
   James, 292  
   Samuel, 292  
   Thomas, 292  
 Edwards, Dorothy (Moulton), 454,  
   455  
   Esther, 455  
   Hannah, 455  
   John, 455  
   Rev. Jonathan, 506  
   Joseph, 455  
   Lydia, 455  
   Ruth, 455  
 Eeles, Richard, 505  
 EGGLETON, —, 285  
   JANE (—), 285  
   RUTH<sup>2</sup>, 92, 94, 285  
   Sarah, 92, 285  
 Ela, Daniel, 181, 182  
   Israel, 182  
   Martha, 182  
   Samuel, 182, 183  
 Eliot, see also Elliot  
 ELIOT, ANDREW<sup>1</sup>, 125, 248  
   John, 114  
   Rev. John, 114, 115, 116, 308, 311,  
     325, 326, 327, 413, 414, 437, 500,  
     505, 626  
   Philip, 116, 414, 500  
 Elizabeth, Queen, 239, 244, 611  
 ELLERY, ABIGAIL<sup>2</sup>, 290, 292, 514  
   Abigail, 290  
   Abigail (Allen), 292  
   Abigail (Norwood), 292  
   Abigail (Wilkins), 291  
   Ann (Sargent), 292  
   Benjamin, 289, 290, 291  
   Dependence, 290, 292, 654  
   Dorcas (Ellwell), 292  
   Eleanor, 290, 292  
   Hannah, 196, 290, 291  
   Hannah (Vinson), 288  
   Isaac, 288  
   Jane (Bonner), 292  
   Jemima, 290, 292  
   John, 291, 292  
   John Stevens, 292  
   MARY (COIT), 195, 288, 290-2  
   Nathaniel, 290, 291, 292, 653-4  
   Sarah (Ellery), 292
- Ellery, Sarah (Warner), 654  
 Susannah, 291  
 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, 195, 196, 288-91, 513,  
   653  
   William, 290, 291, 292  
 Elliot, Rev. Andrew, 33  
 Ellis, Dr. Edward, 631  
 Ellsworth, Betsey (Oviatt), 56  
   Edgar Birge, 55, 56  
   Elisha, 56  
   Mary Holden (Dawes), 55, 56  
 Ellwell, see also Elwell  
 Dorcas, 292  
 Josiah, 281, 292, 516  
 Mary (Collins), 281  
 Robert, 292, 513, 516  
 Elmore, Edward, 300  
 Elms, Joy K., 234  
 Elwell, see also Ellwell  
 Abigail (Prince), 516  
 Elias, 292, 516  
 Esther (Dutch), 195  
 Isaac, 513  
 Mary (Prince), 513  
 Rachel, 352, 674  
 Samuel, 195  
 Emerson, Edward, 470  
   Rev. Edward, 34  
   Rev. John, 194, 288, 290  
   Joseph, 470  
   Rev. Joseph, 471, 635-6  
   Joshua, 181  
   Martha (Woodward), 672  
   Mary (Clark), 181  
   Michael, 181  
   Nathaniel, 672  
   Rebecca, 470  
   Thomas, 470, 672  
 Emery, Eleanor, 525  
 "Emes", Hannah, 583  
 Endicot, John, 11, 294, 427, 432, 452,  
   521  
 English, William, 399  
 Ericson, Caroline, 58  
   Carolyn (Dawes), 58  
   Charles, 58  
   Melvin, 58  
 Estabrook, Rev. Benjamin, 199  
 Eveleth, Abigail (Coit), 195  
   Abigail (Haskell), 352  
   Hannah (—), 644  
   Isaac, 195, 281, 352  
   John, 644  
   Susanna, 567  
   Sylvester, 195, 567  
 Everett, Lucy (Balch), 82  
   Moses, 82, 227  
 Everts, Susanna or "Sukey" (Parker),  
   481  
   Sylvanus, 481  
 Ewing, Lt. George, 225  
   Hon. Thomas, 225, 227
- F**airbanks, Ephraim, 34  
 Faircloth, Mr., 244  
 Fairfield, Elizabeth, 75  
   Mrs. Sarah, 76  
   Walter, 75, 671, 674  
 Fairweather, John, 576

- Farley, Lt. Benjamin, 468  
   Caleb, 468  
   George, 468, 553  
   Mesech, 129  
   Michael, 129, 651  
   Sarah (Burnham), 129, 130  
 Farmer, Mr., 263  
   Hannah (Boone), 102  
   Paul, 102  
 Farnsworth, Abigail, 591  
   Joseph, 158  
   Matthias, 591  
   Samuel, 591  
 Fassett, Elizabeth (Manning), 268  
   Peter, 268  
 Faulkner, Abigail (Dane), 241  
 Faxon, Ben, 443  
 Felch, Henry, 335, 355  
   Mary, 335  
 Felton, Nathaniel, 438  
 Fenno, John, 160, 170  
 Ferris, Doritha L., 234  
   Elizabeth J. (Armstrong), 234  
   Esther A., 234  
   Frank P., 234  
   Frank W., 234  
   James W., 234  
   Jean M., 234  
   John P., 234  
   Joy K. (Elms), 234  
   Mary E. (Walton), 234  
   Mary J., 234  
   Walton C., 234  
   Walton C., Jr., 234  
 Ferry, George Sumner, 580  
   Rhoda (Kingsbury), 580  
   Simon, 580  
 Fessenden, Hannah (Prentice), 507  
   John, 91  
   Nicholas, 507  
   Thomas, 507  
 Finch, Abraham, 455  
   Dorothy (Moulton), 455  
 Fisher, Abigail, 68  
   Joshua, 159  
 Fisk, Rev. John, 203, 205, 464, 466  
 Fiske, Mr. 581  
 Fitch, John, 195, 290, 512, 567  
   MARY (STACY), 429, 558, 560  
   MARY (STEVENS), 195, 567  
   Nancy, 56  
   Thomas, 558  
   Gov. Thomas, 56  
   Timothy, 56  
   William, 56  
 Flagg, Ebenezer, 152  
   Elizabeth (Carter), 152  
   Gershom, 152  
   Thomas, 152  
 Flanders, John, 514  
   Sarah (Prince), 514  
   Stephen, 514  
 Fletcher, Mary, 466  
   Robert, 466  
   William, 466  
 Flint, Hannah (Moulton), 456  
   Thomas, 456  
 Flood, Hannah, 96  
   James, 96  
   John, 96  
 Flood, Susanna (Inglesby), 96  
 Floyd, John, 466  
   Rachel (Parker), 466  
   Sarah, 631  
 Force, see also Vorce  
 Force, Abigail (Ware), 643  
   Benjamin, 643, 647  
   Dorothy, 643  
   Ebenezer, 643  
   Elizabeth (Palmer), 647  
   Elizabeth (Ruggles), 643  
   Ezekiel, 643  
   Hannah (Hyde), 643  
   Isaac, 647  
   Mark, Sr., 643  
   Mark, Jr., 643  
   Mary (Connwall), 643  
   Matthew, 647  
   Obadiah, 647  
   Rhoda (West), 643  
   Richard, 643  
   Sarah (Hills), 643  
   Sarah (Morris), 647  
   Thomas, 647  
   William, 643, 647  
 Ford, Abigail, 301  
   Ann, 300  
   Ann (—), 299, 300  
   ELIZABETH (CHARDE), 294, 299,  
     300, 407  
   Hannah, 301  
   Hepzibah, 300-1  
   JOANE<sup>s</sup>, 157, 165, 301  
   Joane (Way), 294  
   THOMAS<sup>t</sup>, 155, 156, 157, 166, 294-  
     300, 484, 574, 621  
   Thomas, 301  
   William, 288  
 Fordyce, Fanny (Parker), 481  
   Rhoda (—), 481  
   Samuel, 481  
 Foster, Capt., 163  
   Ensign, 159  
   Bartholomew, 675  
   Benjamin, 675  
   Elizabeth (Dane), 248  
   Hopestill, 407, 411  
   James, 407  
   John, 411  
   Joseph, 267  
   Naomi, 276  
   Rebecca (Parker), 267  
   Reginald, 248  
   Ruth (Tileston), 276  
   Sarah (Woodward), 675  
   Thomas, 267  
   Timothy, 276  
 Fowle, Abigail (Carter), 149, 150  
   Deliverance, 634  
   George, 150  
   James, 150, 379  
   John, 670  
   Mary (Carter), 150  
   Peter, 149, 150  
 Fowler, Joseph, 76, 672  
   Miriam (Balch), 76  
   Philip, 76  
   Richard, 76  
 Fox, David, 357  
   Jabez, 384  
 Fox, Mr. John, 151  
 Francis, Col. Ebenezer, 213  
 Franklin, Benjamin, 33, 217, 220  
   Henry, 572  
   JOAN, 572  
   Mary, 33  
 Fredericks, Grace Baxter, 59  
 FREEMAN, EDMOND<sup>t</sup>, 426  
 French, Edward, 560  
   Jacob, 264  
   John, 253  
   Joseph, 253, 542, 560  
   Martha (Danforth), 253  
   Richard, 253, 254  
   Samuel, 253  
   Sarah (Danforth), 263-4  
   Sarah (Eastman), 542  
   Susanna (Stacy), 560  
   William, 263-4  
 Frissell, James, 585  
 Frost, Edmund, 91, 508  
   Faith, 508  
   Joseph, 508  
 Frothingham, Judge John, 423  
   Martha (May), 45, 423  
   Samuel, 423  
   William, 423  
 Fuller, Dr., 296  
   Benjamin, 79  
   Elizabeth (Tidd), 597-8  
   John, 525, 651  
   REBECCA (PUTNAM), 525, 542  
   Thomas, 542, 597-8  
 Fyler, Experience (Strong), 300  
   Walter, 300  
   Zerubbabel, 300  
**G**affield, John, 54  
 Gage, Gov., 40  
 Gair, Hannah (Jackson), 33, 36, 37  
 Gamage, Nicholas, 310  
 Gardiner, see also Gardner  
   Samuel, 214, 305-6, 312, 456  
 Gardner family (of Roxbury), 311  
 GARDNER, "Widow", (of Roxbury),  
   309  
   — (White), 304  
   Abigail, 34, 99, 309  
   Ann (Downing), 316, 625  
   Benjamin, 312  
   Damaris (—), 304, 306  
   Ebenezer, 312  
   Elizabeth (Allen), 306  
   Elizabeth (Horne), 306  
   Elizabeth (—), 306  
   George, 305, 306, 455-6  
   Hannah (—), 306  
   John, 28, 305-6, 312  
   Jonathan, 312  
   Joseph, 305, 306, 311-2, 316, 348,  
     622  
   Lucy (Smith), 309  
   MARGARET (*Fryer?*) (of Cape Ann),  
     304, 305, 306  
   Margaret (—), 312  
   Mary (Corbin), 312  
   Mary (White), 306  
   Miriam, 306

- Gardner, PETER<sup>s</sup>, (of Roxbury), 109, 113-6, 202, 240, 308-11, 322, 413, 417, 586  
 Peter, 312  
 Priscilla (Grafton), 306  
 REBECCA (CROOKE) (of Roxbury), 309, 310, 311  
 Rebecca, 312  
 Richard, 305, 306  
 Ruth (—), 306  
 SARAH<sup>s</sup> (of Cape Ann), 72, 74, 306  
 SARAH<sup>s</sup>, 311-2, 325  
 Sarah, 312  
 Seeth, 306  
 THOMAS<sup>t</sup> (of Cape Ann), 28, 70-1, 295, 304-6, 348, 453-6, 513, 622, 625  
 THOMAS<sup>t</sup> (of Roxbury), 99, 308-9  
 Thomas, 304, 306, 308-9, 312  
 Capt. Thomas, 513, 622-5  
 Garfield, Benjamin, 372  
 Gary, William, 116  
 Gatchell, Joseph, 512  
 Gater, Elizabeth, 484  
 GATES, Miss MARY BEMAN<sup>s</sup>, 7, 58  
 Stephen, 274  
 GATOR, ELIZABETH (—), 484  
 JUDITH, 484  
 MICHAEL, 484  
 Gay, John, 116  
 Mary (Bridge), 115, 116  
 Samuel, 116  
 Gedney, John, 519, 521, 523, 524  
 Lydia, 519  
 Gee, Joshua, 33  
 Gendell, Lydia, 38, 48  
 Geofer, Thomas, 356  
 George, Widow, 574  
 George, King II, 80  
 Gibbs, Rev. Henry, 362, 373  
 John, 432  
 Gibbs, Benjamin, 20  
 Gibson, Christopher, 271, 405, 574  
 JOANE (—), 503  
 John, 503  
 Giddings, Elizabeth, 352  
 George, 64, 348, 401, 602  
 Jane (Lawrence), 64, 349, 401  
 John, 349  
 Sarah, 349  
 Giles, Elizabeth (Tidd), 598  
 Gillam, Lt. Benjamin, 429  
 Glover, Habackuk, 550  
 John, 529, 550  
 Mary, 271  
 Rebecca, 550  
 Ruth (Stevens), 567  
 Stephen, 567  
 GOADE, ABIGAIL<sup>t</sup>, 315, 317, 455  
 ABIGAIL (DOWNING), 315, 317  
 JOHN, 315  
 John, 317  
 Thomas, 317  
 Goddard, Benjamin, 423  
 John, 46, 423  
 Joseph, 46, 423  
 Louisa (May), 423  
 Mary, 423  
 Mehitable M. (Dawes), 46  
 Samuel, 46  
 Goddard, William, 46, 423  
 Goddin, Elizabeth (Holden), 361-2  
 Henry, 361, 362  
 William, 361-2  
 Godfrey, Elizabeth (Haskell), 353  
 James, 353  
 John, 178  
 Goer, Mrs., 574  
 Goffe, 300  
 Gold, Thomas, 143  
 Golding, Elizabeth, 373  
 Peter, 373  
 Goldthwaite, Benjamin, 34, 46  
 Hannah (Dawes), 46  
 John, 46  
 Joseph, 46  
 Samuel, 46  
 Sarah, 46  
 Thomas, 46  
 Goltz, Rev. Richard, 250, 251  
 Goodenow families, 534  
 Goodenow, Edmund, 450, 645, 678  
 Jane, 643  
 John, 503, 593, 680  
 Martha (—), 593  
 Mary, 450, 593  
 Sarah, 450, 645  
 Thomas, 680  
 Goodhews [Goodhue]  
 Deacon, 245, 559  
 Goodin [Gooding], see also Goodwin  
 Mr., 243, 384  
 GOODSPEED, MARGARET, 521  
 Goodwin, John, 384  
 Nathaniel, 101, 102  
 Samuel, 384, 386  
 Gookin, Gen. Daniel, 505, 626  
 Gording, Hannah, 411  
 Gordon, Rev. William, 46  
 Gore family, 311  
 GORE, ABIGAIL<sup>s</sup>, 328, 418  
 Abigail, 325  
 Abigail (Parker), 418  
 Benjamin, 325  
 Gov. Christopher, 40, 325  
 Ebenezer, 326, 418  
 Elizabeth (Weld), 325  
 Hannah, 325, 328  
 JOHN<sup>t</sup>, 40, 109, 113, 115, 272, 308, 320-5, 413, 418, 528, 586, 601  
 JOHN<sup>t</sup>, 311, 312, 320-2, 324-8, 414, 417-8, 585  
 John, 321, 325, 328, 418  
 Martha, 75  
 Mary, 323, 325  
 Mary (Stedman), 328  
 Mary (Williams), 329  
 Obadiah, 40, 325  
 Phebe, 486  
 Priscilla, 521  
 RHODA (—), 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 585, 596  
 RICHARD, 320, 322, 601  
 Samuel, 40, 323, 325, 327, 329  
 SARAH (GARDNER), 311, 325, 327  
 Sarah, 328  
 Susanna (Paul), 328  
 Zaccheus, 486, 521  
 Gorges family, 612  
 Gorges, Capt. Robert, 70  
 Gorham, Capt. 620, 621  
 Gornell, John, 169, 405  
 GOSLING, AGNES, 493, 494  
 Gould, Hannah, 656  
 Gove, John, 504  
 Mary, 504  
 Grafton, Joseph or Joshua, 306  
 Seeth (Gardner), 306  
 Grant, Capt. 214, 308  
 Gen., 4  
 Mr., 316  
 MATTHEW<sup>t</sup>, 155, 295, 296, 453, 484, 572  
 Thomas, 273  
 Graves, Grace (Beamsley), 85  
 Mark, 352  
 Mary, 352  
 Samuel, 85  
 Thomas, 331  
 Gray, Milenda Mary B., 59  
 Greaton, Anna, 438  
 Green, see also Greene  
 Elizabeth (Upham), 631  
 Ephraim, 132, 139  
 Henry, 184, 542  
 Margaret (Call), 132, 138  
 Mary, 46, 542  
 Peter, 383  
 Phebe, 470  
 Thomas, 132, 138, 139, 335, 631  
 Greene, Ebenezer, 147, 185, 335  
 Esther (Carter), 152  
 HANNAH (CARTER), 142, 144, 145, 147, 334  
 Hannah, 335, 542  
 Hannah (Kendall), 335, 379  
 John, 109, 132, 139, 144, 147, 334-5, 434  
 MARY<sup>s</sup>, 334, 335, 554  
 Mary (Felch), 335  
 Richard, 126  
 Samuel, 152, 382-3, 631  
 Sarah (Bateman), 335  
 WILLIAM<sup>t</sup>, 92, 144, 145, 147, 148, 151, 152, 331, 333-4, 376, 379, 383, 552, 596-7  
 William, 152, 335, 379, 552  
 Greenfield, Samuel, 596, 598  
 Greenland, John, 139, 468  
 Greenlaw, Mrs. Lucy Hall, 391  
 Greenwood, Alice, 110  
 Gridley, Samuel, 438  
 Griffin, Mr. 563  
 Abigail, 639  
 ELIZABETH (—), 639  
 Henry, 446  
 Hugh, 639  
 Humphrey, 347  
 John, 178, 179, 180, 181  
 Jonathan, 639  
 Joseph, 417  
 Lydia (Shatswell), 179  
 Mary (Long), 639  
 Sarah, 639  
 Shemuel, 639  
 Griggs, Elinor (Haskell), 352  
 Jacob, 352  
 Joseph, 324  
 Grocer, Thomas, 325  
 Gross, Clement, 14, 431, 550

- Gross, Isaac, 431, 550  
 MARIA KATHARINA (SMITH), 431, 550  
 William, 431, 550  
 Grosvenor, John, 585  
 Grover, "*Ould Goodwife*" (—), 337  
 Andrew, 338, 340, 341, 342, 634  
 Anne (Wilson), 342  
 Ebenezer, 338, 340, 341, 342, 634  
 Edmund, 352  
 Elder Edmund, 292  
 ELIZABETH (—), 136, 337, 338, 614, 619, 620  
 Elizabeth, 337, 338, 339, 341, 634  
 Elizabeth (—), 342  
 Elizabeth (—), 338  
 Ephraim, 340, 341, 634  
 Grace, 337, 338  
 Hannah (Hills), 338  
 John, 337, 339  
 LAZARUS<sup>2</sup>, 136, 337, 338, 339, 340, 469, 619, 632, 634  
 Lazarus, 338, 340, 341  
 MARY<sup>3</sup>, 634, 635, 636  
 Mary, 338, 340, 341  
 Mary (—), 342  
 Mary (Cox), 341  
 Mary (Ellery), 292  
 Mary (Pratt), 342  
 Matthew, 338  
 MERCY (*Mudge?*), 338, 340, 341, 342  
 Nehemiah, 352  
 Rebecca, 342, 634  
 Ruth, 341  
 Ruth (Adams), 338, 339  
 Ruth (Haskell), 352  
 Samuel, 338, 341, 633  
 Sarah, 338  
 Sarah (Chadwick), 338  
 Sarah (Upham), 633  
 Simon, 338, 339, 340  
 Stephen, 338, 339  
 THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, 337, 338, 341  
 Thomas, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 619, 634  
 Grout, Ens. John<sup>1</sup>, 198, 447, 534, 536, 660, 663  
 John, 663  
 Mary (Cakebread), 198, 663  
 Sarah, 663  
 Sarah (Busby), 663  
 Gulliver, Jonathan, 581  
 Güttersen, Abigail, 182  
 Abigail (Buckmaster), 345  
 ELIZABETH (—), 344  
 Elizabeth, 345  
 John, 181, 182, 345  
 MARY<sup>2</sup>, 180, 181, 345  
 Sarah, 345  
 Susanna, 345  
 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, 182, 344  
 William, 345  
**H**ackwell, Capt. Richard, 426  
 Hadlock, Nathaniel, 596  
 Hageborne, Samuel, 113, 436  
 Haines, see Haynes  
 Hale, Ensign, 271  
 Apphia, 525  
 Hale, Rev. John, 370  
 Richard, 530  
 Hall, Capt. Nathaniel, 20-1, 23, 24, 25  
 Hallett, Richard, 18  
 Hallor, Martha, 85, 86, 668  
 Hamilton, Andrew, 97  
 Hammond, Asa, 37, 38  
 John, 38  
 Samuel, 38  
 Sarah (Dawes), 36, 37, 38  
 Thomas, 38  
 Hanbury, Daniel, 11  
 Hancock, —, 43  
 Gov. and Signer, 468, 503  
 Anthony, 575  
 Mary, 468  
 Mary (Prentice), 503  
 Nathaniel, 468, 503  
 Harding, John, 608  
 MARY (—), 608  
 Hardy, Elizabeth, 351  
 Hamden, Ebenezer, 471  
 John, 471  
 Rebecca (Allen), 471  
 Harraden, Abigail, 348, 349  
 Andrew, 283, 292, 348-9  
 Ann, 348, 349  
 Benjamin, 348, 349  
 Deborah (Norwood), 349  
 EDWARD<sup>1</sup>, 194, 288, 347-8, 513, 625, 656, 670, 675  
 Edward, 283, 348  
 ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup>, 348, 349, 513  
 ELIZABETH (WOODWARD), 349, 656, 675  
 Hannah (Stevens), 349  
 Hannah (York), 348  
 Jean or Jane (Giddings), 349  
 John, 348, 656, 675  
 Joseph, 348, 349  
 Mary, 348  
 Mary (Davis), 283  
 Nathaniel, 349, 656, 675  
 SARAH (—), 347, 348  
 Sarah (Giddings), 349  
 Sarah (Haskell), 348, 352  
 Thomas, 348, 349  
 Harris(?), 244  
 Harris, Benjamin, 97, 98  
 John, 291  
 Martha, 193  
 Richard, 13  
 Susanna (Ellery), 291  
 Rev. Thaddeus, 228  
 William, 193, 291  
 Hartshorn, John, 182  
 Stewart, 647  
 Tabitha, 182  
 Thomas, 182  
 Hartwell, John, 266  
 Hasham, Samuel, 33  
 Sarah (Dawes), 33  
 Haskell, Abigail, 352  
 Abigail (Davis), 352  
 Abigail (Marcy or Maxey), 353  
 Andrew, 333  
 Benjamin, 352  
 Cecilie, 351  
 Daniel, 353  
 Dorothy, 351  
 Haskell, ELINOR (—), 351  
 Elinor, 352  
 Elizabeth, 351, 353  
 Elizabeth (Giddings), 352  
 Elizabeth (Hardy), 351  
 Hannah, 282, 353  
 Henry, 353  
 Jacob, 353  
 Jemima, 283  
 Joan, 351  
 John, 352  
 Joseph, 282, 283, 352-3, 674  
 Lydia, 353  
 Mark, 351-2  
 MARY<sup>3</sup>, 282, 352  
 MARY (BROWNE), 121, 195, 351, 352  
 MARY (TYBBOT), 351, 352, 608-9  
 Mary, 352  
 Mary (Baker), 352  
 Mary (Graves), 352  
 Mary (Riggs), 352  
 Mary (Woodward), 674  
 Rachell (Elwell), 352, 674  
 Roger, 351  
 Ruth, 352  
 Ruth (York?), 353  
 Samuel, 351  
 Sarah, 348-9, 352-3  
 Sarah (Davis), 282  
 Sarah (Haskell), 353  
 Susanna (Warner), 654  
 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, 88, 189, 194, 282, 283, 348, 351, 352, 353, 510, 565, 608-9, 651, 654, 674  
 WILLIAM<sup>2</sup>, 121, 283, 347, 351, 352, 512, 653, 654, 674  
 William, 283, 654  
 Hasletine, see also Hazeltine  
 John, 602, 603  
 Hassell, Joseph, 380  
 Richard, 262  
 Hathaway, John, 541  
 Nicholas, 541  
 Hathorne, John, 136, 521, 613  
 Haven, Rev. Jason, 80, 81  
 Samuel Foster, 548  
 Sarah, 472  
 Hawes, Constant, 166  
 Richard, 166  
 Hawkes, Adam, 189  
 Anne (Hutchinson), 189  
 Susanna, 189  
 Hawkins, James, 15, 20, 26, 444  
 Mary (Mills), 444  
 Thomas, 528  
 Timothy, 661  
 William, 628, 629  
 Haynes, Capt. Aaron, 364, 365  
 Abigail, 450  
 David, 450  
 John, 450, 536, 537, 645, 682  
 Deacon Josiah, 365, 592, 645  
 Walter, 450, 534, 537, 645, 678, 680  
 Hayward [Haywood]  
 Mrs., 581  
 ABIGAIL<sup>2</sup>, 356, 357, 632-4  
 Ann, 358, 499  
 Caleb, 438  
 Deborah, 356-7

- Hayward, ELIZABETH (—), 333, 355  
   -7, 633  
   Elizabeth, 356-7  
   Elizabeth (Danforth), 263-4  
   Elizabeth (Lee), 358  
   Elizabeth (Waite), 357, 635  
   Hannah, 356, 357  
   Isabel (—), 355  
   John, 94  
   Jonathan, 356, 358  
   Lydia, 447  
   Martha, 355-7  
   Mary, 356-7  
   Nathaniel, 340, 356-7, 632-3  
   Persis, 380  
   Richard, 357  
   Robert, 576  
   SAMUEL<sup>1</sup>, 340, 355, 356, 367, 633  
   Samuel, 355-7, 635  
   Sarah, 356, 357  
   Sarah (Blodgett), 94  
   Sarah (Stower), 355  
   Simon or Simeon, 263-4  
   Susanna (Wilkinson), 357  
 Hazeltine, Richard, 182  
   Robert, 180  
 Heard, Edmund, 650, 651, 652  
   Elizabeth (Warner), 650, 651  
 Heath, Gen., 41  
   Elizabeth, 182  
   Nehemiah, 182  
 Henschman [Hinchman]  
   Capt. Daniel, 200  
   Thomas, 465, 466, 467  
 Hendrick, see also Hendricks  
   Israel, 345  
   Sarah (Gutterson), 345  
 Hendricks, Daniel, 180, 345  
   Hannah (Foster), 180  
   Jotham, 180  
 Hepburn, George, 545  
 Herbert, Mary (—), 472  
 Herrick, Mrs. Charles H., 74  
   HENRY<sup>1</sup>, 70, 74, 452-3, 484  
   HENRY<sup>2</sup>, 125, 248  
 Hertzberg, Ernst, 218, 219  
 Hewins, Dr. Elijah, 82  
   Irene (Balch), 82  
 Hibbins, William, 427  
 Higginson, Rev. Francis, 452  
 Hildreth, Dr., 231  
 Hill, see also Hills  
   Abraham, 357, 467  
   Elizabeth (Dike), 608  
   Hannah (Hayward), 357  
   Isaac, 357, 472  
   Jacob, 467  
   John, 306  
   Joseph, 137, 338, 355, 614  
   Lydia, 472  
   Miriam (Gardner), 306  
   Nahomie (Downing), 315, 317  
   Nathaniel, 653  
   Richard, 315, 317  
   Sarah (Haven), 472  
   Valentine, 653  
   Zebulon, 608  
 Hilliard, Edmund B., 548  
 Hills, Hannah, 338  
   Sarah, 643, 647, 653  
 Hims, Widow, 574  
 Hoar, Hon. George F., 220  
 Holbrook, Abigail (Craft), 278  
   Daniel, 272, 278  
   John, 418  
   Mary (Cheney), 418  
   Mehitable, 418  
   Rebecca, 278  
 Holden, Abel, 363, 364, 365, 592  
   ABIGAIL OF "NABBY" KENDALL<sup>1</sup>, 47, 366  
   ABIGAIL (KENDALL), 363, 391  
   Abigail, 362  
   Abigail (Jones), 362  
   Abigail (Shattuck), 361  
   Anne (Jones), 362  
   Asa, 363, 497  
   Betsey, 366, 496-7  
   Betsey (David), 363  
   Beulah (Dakin), 362  
   Daniel, 362  
   Elizabeth, 361  
   Elizabeth (—), 360  
   Elizabeth (Dickson), 361  
   Eunice, 362  
   Fanny, 366  
   GRACE (JENNISON), 362, 373  
   Grace, 361, 362, 538  
   Hannah (Parker), 362  
   Hannah (Plympton), 496  
   Isaac, 361  
   Joanna (Shattuck), 361  
   Joel, 363  
   JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 361, 362, 364, 373, 496, 497, 505  
   John, 362, 366, 373  
   JONAS<sup>3</sup>, 362, 363, 391, 496, 497, 592-3  
   JONAS<sup>4</sup>, 363, 364, 365, 366, 497, 592-3  
   Joseph, 361, 538  
   Josiah, 362  
   Judah (Judith?), 362  
   JUSTINIAN<sup>1</sup>, 198, 360, 361, 496, 497, 507, 538, 579, 623  
   Levi, 363, 364, 593  
   Lewis, 366  
   Lois (Cutler), 363  
   MARY (RUTTER), 360, 361, 538  
   Mary, 361, 362  
   Mary (—), 363  
   Mary (Wheeler), 362  
   Nancy, 366  
   Nancy (Kidder), 366  
   Peter, 362  
   Phebe (Sawin), 366  
   Polly, 366  
   Richard<sup>1</sup>, 360  
   Ruel, 366  
   Sally, 366  
   Samuel, 361, 537  
   Susanna (Shattuck), 361  
   Thankful (Cutting), 363  
   WILLIAM, 360  
   William, 366  
 Holland, John, 529  
   Capt. John, 423  
   Judith (—), 531  
   Sarah (May), 423  
 Hollard, Angel, 612, 616  
 Hollard, Katherine (—), 612, 616  
 Holley, Samuel, 370  
 Hollingsworth, —, 564  
 Hollister, John, 68  
 Hollyoack, see also Holyoke  
   Mr., 667  
 Holman, Mr., 581  
   John, 529  
   Thomas, 406  
 Holmes, see also Homes  
   Elizabeth (Clapp), 167  
   George, 113, 167  
   Hannah (Cutler), 203  
   Joseph, 167  
   Oliver Wendell, 109  
 Holton, Mary (Warner), 656  
   Ruth, 68  
   Rev. Samuel, 656  
   William, 68  
 Holyoke, Ann, 521  
   Edward, 521  
   Prudence (Stockton), 521  
 Homes, Mary (Franklin), 33  
   Rebecca (Dawes), 32, 33, 47  
   Capt. Robert, 33  
   Rev. William, 33  
   William, 32, 33, 34, 47  
 Hooker, Matthew, 488  
   Rev. Thomas, 251  
 Hooks, Elizabeth, 420  
   William, 420  
 Hooper, Chrispin, 320, 602  
 Hopkins or Hoppin, Stephen, 160  
 Horne, Elizabeth, 306  
 Hosier, Samuel, 530  
   Ursula (Adams), 530  
 Hosmer, John, 382  
   Mehitable (Parker), 382  
 Hough, Atherton, 649  
 Houlton, Benjamin, 525  
 Hovey, Abigail, 632  
   Daniel, 247, 248, 631  
   Elizabeth, 631  
   John, 631  
   Rebecca (Dane), 248  
 How, see also Howe  
   Abraham, 653  
   Israel, 653  
   Mercy (Warner), 653  
 Howard, Hannah, 195  
   Nathaniel, 466  
   Nehemiah, 195  
   Nicholas, 195  
   Sarah, 466  
   Sarah (Parker), 466  
 Howe, Benjamin, 449  
   Cyprian, 47  
   Damaris (Cady), 205  
   Elisha, 362  
   Elizabeth (Dane), 239, 240, 242  
   Goodman, 414  
   James, 240, 242, 244, 245, 653  
   John, 362  
   Joseph, 205, 210  
   Mary (Holden), 362  
   Rev. Perley, 205  
   Robert, 240, 244  
   Samson, 222  
   Samuel, 362  
 Hoyt, Barzillia Hosmer, 60

- Hoyt, Betsey G. (Dawes), 60  
 Betsey Sibyl, 60  
 Harry Barzillia, 60  
 Henry Dawes, 60  
 John, 60  
 Joseph, 60  
 Mary Dawes, 60  
 Mary J. (Wigginton), 60  
 Nancy Elizabeth, 60  
 Hubbard, Caleb, 680  
 Mary, 76  
 Richard, 247  
 William, 105, 189  
 Hudson, Rev. Alfred S., 537  
 HULL, GEORGE<sup>t</sup>, 155, 295, 296, 298, 572  
 Isaac, 671  
 Capt. John, 13, 627  
 Rev. Joseph, 611, 612  
 Humphrey, see also Humphreys, Humphries  
 Elder, 163  
 Jonas, 460  
 Mary (Phillips), 460  
 Catharine (Clapp), 172, 550  
 Rev. Charles Alfred, 172, 550  
 Henry, 172, 550  
 Humphreys, John, 191  
 Humphries, Miss Ann, 435  
 Catharine C., 550  
 Walter, 435  
 Huniborn, Elizabeth (—), 410  
 Hunt, Elizabeth (—), 670  
 Samuel, 669  
 Hunter, Lt. Col. James, 53  
 Hurlstone, Capt. Nicholas, 11  
 Hutchinson, —, 133  
 Widow, 298  
 Alice (Bosworth), 521, 525  
 Anne, 189, 454  
 Elizabeth, 521  
 John, 525  
 Joseph, 519  
 Richard, 521, 525  
 Sarah (Putnam), 525  
 Thomas, 274  
 Hyde, Hannah, 543  
 Iggleden, Elizabeth (Bennett), 285  
 Ruth, 285  
 Stephen, 285  
 Ingalls, Edmund, 241  
 Elizabeth, 241  
 Ingersoll, Nathaniel, 524  
 Richard, 454  
 Ingolson, Capt., 214  
 Jackson, Col., 215  
 John, 194, 280, 564  
 Ruth (Chapin), 33  
 Samuel, 33  
 Jacobs, Lt. Richard, 681  
 Susanna, 27  
 James, King, 378, 504, 537  
 Mr., 100  
 Hannah, 554  
 Mary, 678  
 Janeway, James, 97  
 Jaques, Elizabeth, 490  
 Jarvis, John, 443  
 Jayne, Peter, 34  
 Jefferson, President, 48, 99  
 Beverly, 59  
 Jean, 59  
 Margaret G. (Dawes), 59  
 Jenkins, Lemuel, 139  
 Obadiah, 338  
 Jennison, Dorothy (Thomas), 373  
 Elizabeth, 369, 371, 373  
 Elizabeth (—), 369, 371  
 Elizabeth (Golding), 373  
 GRACE<sup>s</sup>, 362, 373  
 GRACE (—), 369, 370  
 Jane (—), 373  
 JUDITH (NEWCOMB), 460  
 Judith, 362, 373  
 Lydia, 362, 373  
 Mary (Stearns), 373  
 Mercy, 373  
 Michael, 201, 370  
 Peter, 373  
 Rachel, 362, 373  
 JENNISON (GENINGS), ROBERT<sup>t</sup>, 198, 252, 256, 321, 369, 370, 373  
 Jennison, Robert, 370, 373  
 SAMUEL<sup>s</sup>, 362, 370, 371, 372, 460  
 Samuel, 362, 372-3  
 William, 370, 373  
 Ens. William, 252, 256, 321, 369, 370  
 Jesse, gardner, 219  
 Jewett, Ellen (Pell), 649  
 Joseph, 602, 603  
 Maximilian, 649  
 Johnson [Johnston], Caleb, 449, 450  
 Dorothy (Moore?), 449  
 Col. Edmund, 525  
 Edward, 93, 145, 146, 147, 148, 334, 377, 378, 507  
 Elizabeth, 145  
 Elizabeth (Bryant), 449  
 Elizabeth (Dane), 241  
 Elizabeth (Prentice), 507  
 Esther (Pinney), 59  
 Humphrey, 622  
 Capt. Isaac, 273, 274  
 Isaac, 117, 622, 624, 625, 628  
 James, 328, 426-9  
 John, 117, 308, 381  
 Judith (Walker), 382  
 Marmaduke, 411  
 Mary (King), 199  
 Matthew, 507  
 Nancy (Kidder), 366  
 Ruth, 543  
 Samuel, 382  
 Solomon, 449  
 Tabitha, 268  
 Thomas, 177  
 William, 93, 145, 507  
 Lt. William, 147, 149  
 Maj. William, 381  
 Jones, Capt., 45  
 Abigail, 362  
 Abraham, 276  
 Anne, 362  
 Edward, 143  
 Erastus, 130  
 Hatherly, 276  
 Hugh, 305  
 Jones, Isaac, 271, 576  
 Johanna (Burnham), 130  
 John, 386  
 Mr. M. B., 96  
 Margaret, 144, 377  
 Mary (Redditt), 362  
 Naomi (Foster), 276  
 Nathaniel, 362  
 Samuel, 274  
 Sarah (Davenport), 274  
 Thomas, 276, 541  
 Timothy, 276, 529  
 Joslin, see also Josselyn  
 Mary, 578  
 Thomas, 578  
 Josselyn, —, 555  
 Keane, John, 13  
 Keayne, Robert<sup>t</sup>, 85, 123-4, 126, 405  
 Keen, Deborah, 410  
 Keays, Ann, 33  
 Kemble, see also Kimball  
 Henry, 84  
 Kendall, Abiathar, 383, 386, 389, 390, 391, 392  
 ABIGAIL<sup>t</sup>, 363, 383, 389, 391  
 ABIGAIL (CARTER), 152, 382, 383, 386, 389, 390  
 Abigail, 375, 380, 390  
 Abigail (Rayner), 380  
 Alice (Hassell), 380  
 Benjamin, 386, 387, 388, 389, 391-2  
 Bezaleel, 383, 390  
 Eleazer, 382  
 Elizabeth, 379  
 Elizabeth (Comey), 379  
 Elizabeth (Pierce [Pearcel]), 382, 391  
 Ephraim, 382, 390  
 Esther, 390  
 Eunice, 383, 389, 392  
 Eunice (Brooks), 379  
 FRANCIS<sup>t</sup>, 92, 93, 145, 146, 147, 148, 331, 335, 370, 371, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 382, 392, 552, 596, 597  
 Goody, 370, 371, 377  
 Hannah, 335, 378  
 Hannah (Rowe), 382  
 Hepzibah (Ruck), 390  
 Huldah, 390  
 Jabez, 382  
 Jacob, 378, 380  
 Jane, 382  
 Jenny (Rogers), 391  
 John, 370-1, 375, 377, 379, 380, 381, 597  
 Jonathan, 383, 388, 389, 390  
 Judith, 382  
 Keziah, 383, 386, 389, 390  
 Levi, 390  
 Mabel, 93, 371, 392-3  
 MARY (TIDD), 597-8  
 Mary, 147, 375, 378-9, 382, 393  
 Mary (Locke), 380  
 Mehitabel (Parker), 382  
 Persis, 393  
 Persis (Haywood), 380  
 Peter, 390  
 RALPH<sup>t</sup>, 152, 382, 383, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392  
 Rebecca, 379

- Kendall, Rebecca (—), 390  
 Rebecca (Mixer), 380  
 RUTH (BLODGETT), 94, 147, 380  
 Ruth, 381  
 Ruth, 386, 388, 389, 390, 391  
 Samuel, 380-2  
 Sarah (—), 382  
 Sarah (Kendall), 382  
 Sybil (Marson), 391  
 Thankful (Butler), 391  
 THOMAS<sup>2</sup>, 94, 147, 379, 380, 381, 382  
 Thomas, 370, 375-6, 381  
 Uzziah, 386, 388, 389, 391, 392  
 William, 392  
 William Converse, 392  
 Kendrick, John, 489  
 Lydia (Cheney), 489  
 Kennicut, Joanna (Shepardson), 546  
 Roger, 546  
 Kent, Mary (—), 428  
 William, 428  
 Kerley, Henry, 679  
 Kettell, see also Kettle  
 James, 383  
 Kettle, Esther (Ward), 138  
 Hannah, 138  
 Richard, 138  
 Keyes, Elias, 684  
 Robert, 684  
 Sarah (Blanford), 679  
 Sarah (Danforth), 268  
 Solomon, 268  
 Kidder, Sergt., 259  
 Nancy, 366  
 Kilbourn, Elizabeth, 369  
 KILBOURNE, FRANCES (MOODY), 369  
 George, 620  
 Jacob, 620  
 THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, 91, 369, 620, 639  
 Kimball, Caleb, 603  
 Rev. David T., 217  
 Hannah (Bartlett), 379  
 Henry, 379  
 John, 379  
 Richard, 106, 490  
 Kinderick, Goody, 669  
 King, John, 373  
 Mary, 199  
 Mary (—), 198  
 Rachel (Jennison), 373  
 Sarah, 199  
 Thomas, 198, 199, 535  
 Kingsbury, Rev. A., 231  
 Elizabeth, 110  
 Joseph, 110  
 Rhoda, 580  
 KINGSTON, WILLIAM, 541  
 Kinsman, Mary (—), 490  
 Robert, 490  
 Sarah, 490, 491  
 Kirby, Francis, 315, 317  
 Susanna (Downing), 315, 317  
 Kirwan, Richard, 215  
 Knap, "Ould", 369  
 Kneeland, Samuel, 633  
 KNIGHT, ALEXANDER<sup>1</sup>, 397, 398, 399, 490  
 ANNE (TUTTY), 397, 399  
 HANNAH<sup>2</sup>, 399, 490  
 Knight, Mary, 399  
 Nathaniel, 398, 399  
 Richard, 14  
 Sarah, 399  
 Knowlton, Abigail (Batchelder), 456  
 Hannah (Greene), 148, 335  
 John, 456  
 Thomas, 148, 335, 347  
 William, 335, 347  
 Knox, Gen. Henry, 41, 44  
**L**  
 Ladbroke, Thomas, 276  
 Lanctot, Barbara Shirley, 234  
 Clarence Holt, 234  
 Doritha L. (Ferris), 234  
 Mariel R., 234  
 Lane, Job, 257, 613  
 Lanman, John, 34  
 Larabee, William, 467  
 Larcum, see also Larkin  
 Abigail (Balch), 75  
 Cornelius, 75  
 Larkin, Judge Abel, 233  
 Betsey, 233  
 LASKIN, HUGH<sup>1</sup>, 72  
 Lathrop, Capt. Thomas, 602, 619  
 Lattimer, Christopher, 192  
 Laurence, Lt. Gov. Charles, 80  
 Lawrence, Hannah, 538  
 Hannah (Rutter), 538  
 Jane, 64, 401  
 JOAN (ANTROBUS), 64, 129, 401  
 John, 64, 401  
 Jonathan, 538  
 MARY<sup>2</sup>, 12, 64, 129, 401  
 Nathaniel, 538  
 Rebecca (Rutter), 538  
 THOMAS, 64, 129, 401  
 Thomas, 64, 401  
 William, 64, 401  
 Lea, Capt. Robert, 91  
 Learned, Benoni, 686  
 Isaac, 686  
 Sarah (Woodward), 686  
 William, 686  
 Leavens, James, 201, 202, 203  
 John, 184, 202  
 Joseph, 184, 202  
 Lurana, 202  
 Lee, Gen., 4  
 Elizabeth, 358  
 Esther, 380  
 John, 247  
 Mehitable (Cutler), 208  
 Mercy (Call), 138, 358  
 Samuel, 138, 358  
 Simeon, 208  
 Leeds, Benjamin, 405, 407  
 HANNAH<sup>2</sup>, 168, 407  
 JOANE (—), 403, 407  
 Joseph, 67, 406, 407, 621  
 Mary (Brinsmade), 407  
 Mercy (—), 407  
 Miriam (Cooke), 407  
 RICHARD<sup>1</sup>, 158, 161, 169, 271, 273, 369, 403-7, 529, 573, 576, 621  
 Le Gay, Peter, 322, 600-2  
 Legg, Samuel, 428  
 Leonard, Ann (Ford), 300  
 Joseph, 300  
 Lewis, Ezekiel, 434  
 Mary, 68  
 Lightfoot, Capt., 23, 24  
 Lincoln, President, 3  
 Rev. Perez, 217  
 William, 347, 348  
 Ling, John, 397  
 LINSFORD, ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup>, 96, 410-1  
 ELIZABETH (—), 410-1  
 John, 411  
 THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, 410-1  
 "Lippingwell" [Leffingwell], Micheale, 382  
 Little, Rev. Jacob, 231  
 Littlefield, Mr. G. E., 96  
 Littlehall, John, 180  
 Locke, Mary, 380  
 William, 93, 380  
 Loker, Elizabeth, 447  
 Henry, 447  
 Long, Elizabeth (—), 600  
 Lord, John, 558  
 Mary (Moulton), 456  
 Mary (Waite), 464  
 Robert, 464, 558, 649-50  
 William, 456  
 Loring, Elizabeth (Dawes), 33  
 Rev. Israel, 388, 450, 644-5  
 John, 33  
 Joseph, 33  
 Joshua, 33  
 Keziah (Woodward), 450, 644, 645  
 Nathan, 450, 593, 645  
 Nehemiah, 33  
 Susanna, 645  
 Thomas, 33  
 Lovell, Thomas, 486, 650  
 Lovett, Abigail, 583  
 Daniel, 583  
 James, 583  
 Sarah, 583  
 Low, Anna (—), 674  
 Lowe, Capt. John, 11  
 Lucas, Hannah (Dawes), 37  
 John, 34  
 Luddington, Ellen (—), 542  
 William, 542  
 Ludlow, Mr., 294  
 Roger, 528  
 Lumpkin, Richard, 649  
 Sarah (Baker), 649, 650, 651  
 Lurvey, Ebenezer, 291  
 Lutz, Samuel, 227  
 Lyman, Hepzibah (Ford), 301  
 Richard, 300-1  
 Lynde, Jabez, 471  
 Joanna (Parker), 470  
 John, 470  
 Col. Joseph, 260, 471  
 Mary (Sprague), 471  
 Rachel (Parker), 471  
 Thomas, 136, 339, 470  
 Lyon [Lyons], Joseph, 117  
 Mary (Batson), 508  
 Mary (Bridge), 117  
 Peter, 276  
 Samuel, 508  
 William, 116, 117

- Maccane, Deborah**, 643, 647  
*Ruth* (—), 643  
*William*, 643
- Macy, Thomas, 321
- Mallet, Grace, 72
- Mann, William, 597
- Manning, Dr., 213  
 Abigail, 152  
 Elizabeth, 268  
 Samuel, 152, 259  
 William, 152
- March, Capt., 26, 100
- Marcy or Maxey, Abigail, 353
- Mare, Ann, 429
- Marion, Dea. John, 27
- Marrit, Amos, 505
- Marsh, Grace, 68
- Hezibah (Ford), 300-1  
 John, 68, 301  
 Mary, 542
- Marshall, Benjamin, 28, 672  
 John, 68, 491  
 Mary, 68, 588  
 Prudence (Woodward), 672  
 Sarah (Perkins), 491  
 Thomas, 68
- Marson, Sybil, 391
- Martin, see also Martyn  
 Grace, 615  
 John, 615  
 Richard, 602  
 Sarah, 593  
 Sarah (Tuttle), 602
- Martyn, Edward, 611  
 Joane (Upham), 611, 615  
 Judith (Upham), 611  
 Robert, 611, 615
- MARVIN, MATTHEW<sup>1</sup>, 91, 639
- Mason, Capt., 108, 662  
 Deborah, 654  
 John, 169  
 Robert, 351, 489, 650  
 Thaddeus, 384
- Massey, John, 72
- Masterson, Elizabeth (Cogswell), 189  
 Nathaniel, 189
- Mather, —, 681  
 Mr., 163  
 Abigail, 587  
 Cotton, 17, 115, 124, 250, 431, 437, 550, 587  
 Rev. Eleazer<sup>2</sup>, 579  
 Rev. Increase<sup>2</sup>, 14, 17, 430, 436, 587  
 Rev. Richard, 188, 437, 572, 576, 579, 587
- Mathews, John, 309
- Matthews, Rev. Marmaduke, 135, 136, 137, 337, 465, 613
- Mattle, Ann, 426  
 Robert, 426  
 Thomas, 426
- Maverick, Rev., 294  
 Abigail, 72  
 Rev. John, 155  
 Matthew, 72
- Maxfield, Clement, 272, 274  
 Mary (Davenport), 274  
 Samuel, 274
- MAY family, 109, 311
- May, Aaron, 421, 422  
 ABIGAIL (GORE), 328, 418, 420  
 Abigail, 423  
 Abigail (May), 423  
 Abigail (Parker), 418  
 Abigail (Stansfall), 414  
 Abigail (Sumner), 418, 583  
 Abigail (Williams), 421, 422, 423  
 Anne (Stillman), 418  
 Benjamin, 417, 418, 437  
 CATHARINE (MEARS), 438  
 Catharine, 423  
 Deliverance (Peck), 415  
 Dorothy (Davis), 418  
 Dorothy (Sewall), 423  
 EBENEZER<sup>4</sup>, 338, 417-8, 420  
 Ebenezer, 420, 437  
 Eleazer, 415, 417, 418, 420, 423, 583  
 Elisha, 414, 415, 417  
 Elizabeth (Child), 418  
 Elizabeth (Cravath), 421  
 Ephraim, 41, 276, 414-5, 420  
 Hezekiah, 417, 418  
 Howell, 423  
 JOHN<sup>1</sup>, 41, 109, 113, 114, 115, 116, 123, 311, 322, 327, 413-4, 417, 423, 583, 586  
 JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 41, 116, 118, 414-5, 417, 423, 583  
 JOHN<sup>3</sup>, 41, 415, 417-8, 420, 423, 437, 583  
 John, 417, 418, 420, 422, 423  
 Col. John, 423  
 Joseph, 44, 423  
 Louisa, 423  
 Lucretia, 423  
 Martha, 423  
 Mary or Mariah, 277, 414-5, 423  
 Mary (Blake), 420  
 Mary (Goddard), 423  
 Mary (Williams), 418  
 MEHITABLE<sup>6</sup>, 37, 38, 40, 44, 46, 423  
 Mehitable, 276, 415, 418  
 Mehitable (Holbrook), 418  
 Moses, 420, 422  
 Nehemiah, 417, 418  
 PRUDENCE (BRIDGE), 118  
 Prudence, 418  
 Rebecca (—), 415  
 SAMUEL<sup>5</sup>, 277, 420, 421, 422, 423, 438, 507  
 Samuel, 276, 327, 413-4, 418, 423  
 SARAH (BREWER), 110, 116  
 Sarah, 415, 418, 420, 423  
 Sarah (—), 413, 414  
 Susannah (—), 420  
 Zibiah (Cravath), 420
- MAYES, "SISTER", 413, 414
- Mayhew, —, 453  
 Mr., 563  
 Thomas, 403
- Maynard, Mr., 644  
 Hannah, 274  
 John, 274, 447, 679  
 Lydia, 447  
 Mary (—), 447  
 Mary (Gates), 274  
 Sarah (Blanford), 679
- Mayo, John, 413
- McArthur, Col., 221
- McKinley, President, 6
- McKinnon, Kitty, 234
- McLean, John, 277  
 Lucretia Catha[e]rine (Dawes), 58  
 Rev. Samuel Agnew, 58
- Meacham, Jeremiah, 241
- Means, Elizabeth W., 234
- Mears, Abigail (Minot), 438  
 Anna Greaton, 438  
 CATHARINE<sup>6</sup>, 438  
 ELIZABETH (—), 426, 427, 428  
 Elizabeth, 430-2, 560  
 Elizabeth (Mellows), 428  
 Hannah (Pope), 436, 438  
 Hannah (Whale), 431, 433  
 JAMES<sup>4</sup>, 240, 278, 311, 420, 431, 434-8, 586  
 James, 240, 311, 427-34, 437-8, 623  
 Joanna (Parker), 435  
 John, 420, 427-8, 429, 438  
 MARIA CATHARINA (SMITH), 172, 421, 431, 435, 470, 548-50  
 MARY (STACY), 560  
 Mary, 431, 435  
 Mary (—), 428  
 MEHITABLE (DAVENPORT), 277-8, 436-7  
 Mercy (Sandys), 420, 428  
 ROBERT<sup>1</sup>, 420, 426, 427, 429, 431, 432, 436, 623  
 SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, 427, 428, 429, 430  
 SAMUEL<sup>3</sup>, 77, 172, 431-6, 438, 470, 548, 586  
 Samuel, 435  
 Stephen, 428, 431  
 Mellin, Deborah, 471
- Mellins, James, 631  
 Mary, 631
- Mellows, Elizabeth, 264
- Mellows, Abraham, 428  
 Edward, 428  
 Elizabeth, 428
- Melven, Capt. Eleazer, 363
- Mercer, Abial, 106, 179  
 Hannah (Shotswell), 179  
 Richard, 106, 179
- Merrifield, —, 406
- Metcalf, Goodman, 245  
 Hannah (Sumner), 210, 211  
 Jonathan, 210  
 Thomas, 283
- Micklethwait, Anne (—), 397
- Mighell, Mr., 581
- Milam, Humphrey, 325  
 Mary (Gore), 325
- Mildmay, Walter, 315
- Miles, Ralph, 376
- Miller, Rev. John, 124  
 Lydia, 124  
 Thomas, 563
- Millet, Thomas, 194, 565
- Mills, Mrs., 77  
 Edward, 444  
 James, 444  
 JOHN<sup>1</sup>, 12, 64, 84, 240, 321, 441-4, 461  
 John, 442, 443, 444  
 Jonathan, 444  
 Joy, 441, 444

- Mills, Mary, 444  
 Mary (Shove), 444  
 Recompence, 441, 444  
 SUSAN (—), 441, 444  
 SUSANNA<sup>s</sup>, 12, 441, 444
- Minot, Abigail, 438  
 George, 18  
 John, 18  
 Stephen, 18, 432
- Mixer, Isaac, 380  
 Rebecca, 380
- Moffatt, Miss E. L., 60, 89, 94, 111, 118, 127, 153, 174-5, 196, 237, 248, 269, 278, 292, 313, 329, 335, 342, 358, 367, 373, 384, 394-5, 408, 411, 424, 438, 444, 450, 517, 539, 550, 561, 589, 594, 641, 665
- Monroe, President James, 49, 50
- Moore, see also Moors  
 Abigail, 449  
 Abigail (Haynes), 450  
 Abigail (Wright), 686  
 Ann (Smith), 447  
 Augustus, 496  
 BENJAMIN<sup>s</sup>, 200, 446-7, 449, 496, 537, 662, 684-6  
 Benjamin, 449  
 Comfort, 450  
 Daniel, 645  
 DOROTHY (WRIGHT), 447, 449, 685-6  
 Dorothy, 449  
 Edward, 450  
 ELIZABETH (WHALE), 446, 662  
 Elizabeth, 446, 447  
 Elizabeth (Loker), 447  
 Hezekiah, 450  
 Israel, 450, 645  
 Jacob, 200, 446-7, 449, 537, 538, 592, 645, 662, 684  
 JOHN<sup>s</sup>, 446, 447, 449, 496, 534, 537, 538, 645, 662, 683, 686  
 John, 446, 447, 686  
 Joseph, 446, 447, 449, 662, 683, 684, 686  
 Judith (—), 447  
 Keziah (Goodenow), 450  
 LYDIA<sup>s</sup>, 200, 201, 446, 679  
 Lydia (Maynard), 447  
 Mary, 446, 447  
 Mary (Dawes), 32, 33  
 Mary (Goodenow), 450  
 Peter, 450, 538  
 PRUDENCE<sup>s</sup>, 450, 644-5  
 Prudence, 449  
 Ruth (Plympton), 496  
 Ruth (—), 447  
 Susanna (Loring), 645  
 Susanna (Woodward), 450, 645  
 Thomas, 32  
 Uriah, 450  
 William, 32, 33, 34, 446-7, 449-50, 496, 536, 537, 662, 684  
 Zerviah or Zebiah, 449
- Moors, tailor, 430  
 Morly, Widow, 143  
 Morran, Patrick, 541  
 Morrill, Hannah, 110  
 Isaac, 108, 110, 143, 181
- Morris, Goodman, 414  
 Edward, 413
- Morrow, Capt. Ebenezer, 471
- Morse, Hannah, 18  
 James, 50  
 John, 18  
 Joseph, 344  
 Samuel, 18
- Morton, Eliezer, 28  
 Ephraim, 28  
 George, 28  
 (erroneously called Moulton),  
 Rebecca (Dawes), 27, 28
- Moseley, Samuel, 622, 624, 626
- Mould, Hugh, 193-4  
 Martha (Coit), 193-4
- Moulton family, 306  
 ABIGAIL (GOADE), 306, 315, 317, 455, 625  
 Abigail, 456  
 Dorothy, 454, 455  
 Elizabeth (Corey), 456  
 Hannah, 456  
 James, 452  
 John, 456  
 Joseph, 456  
 Mary, 452  
 Mary (Cook), 456  
 MIRIAM<sup>s</sup>, 75, 76, 306, 456  
 ROBERT<sup>s</sup>, 70, 71, 306, 317, 452-4, 484, 521, 563  
 ROBERT<sup>s</sup>, 306, 317, 452, 455, 521  
 Robert, 454, 455, 456  
 Samuel, 455, 456  
 Thomas, 596
- Mountford, see also Mountfort,  
 Mountforth  
 Edmund, 654  
 John, 654  
 Mary, 654
- Mountfort, Benjamin, 654
- Mountforth, "Mrs. Hannah", 654
- Mousall, Elizabeth, 615  
 John, 615
- Muchmore, Capt., 214
- Mudge, Jonathan<sup>s</sup>, 338, 341  
 Thomas<sup>s</sup>, 338, 341
- Mulloy, Priscilla, 481
- Murray, Alice Mary (Beach), 60  
 Arthur Beach, 60  
 David Cowan, 60  
 Rev. John, 474  
 Marshall W., 60
- Muzzy, Robert, 239
- N**ASON, Rev. Elias, 437  
 Neale, Thomas, 97  
 Nevill, William, 344
- Newberry, Ann (Ford), 300  
 Benjamin, 167, 300  
 Sarah, 167  
 Thomas, 167, 300
- Newcomb, Abigail, 460  
 Judge Daniel, 46  
 Elizabeth, 460  
 Elizabeth (—), 460  
 FRANCIS<sup>s</sup>, 12, 46, 64, 67, 401, 459-60, 600  
 Hannah, 460  
 Hannah (Dawes), 37, 46
- Newcomb, John, 460  
 Jonathan, 46  
 JUDITH<sup>s</sup>, 371, 372, 373, 460  
 Leah, 460  
 Mary, 460  
 Mary (Phillips), 460  
 Peter, 46, 460  
 RACHEL, (—), 12, 64, 459-60, 600  
 Rachel, 460  
 Ruth (—), 460  
 Sarah, 460  
 Susanna (Cutting), 460
- Newman, Alice (Dutch), 241  
 Hannah (Sumner), 78, 210, 586, 588  
 John, 78, 114, 178, 210, 241, 247, 587-8  
 Mary (Marshall), 588  
 Thomas, 282
- Newmarch, Johanna (Burnham), 130  
 John, 75, 130  
 Martha, 75  
 Martha (Gould), 75
- Newton, Elias, 229  
 Janet, 59  
 Oren, 231
- Nichols, Alice (Hallett), 18  
 Genevieve (—), 472  
 John, 13, 14, 18, 27, 163  
 Mary (Parker), 472  
 Mordecai, 18, 163  
 Randall, 18  
 Samuel, 471, 472  
 Susanna, 13
- Nixon, Capt. John, 364, 365
- Noble, Jedediah, 645  
 Prudence (Vorce), 645
- North, John, 384, 386
- Norton, Mr., 652  
 Francis, 144  
 Freegrace, 669  
 Goode, 669  
 Rev. John, 15, 17, 162, 239, 244-5  
 Mrs. Mary, 17
- Norwood, Abigail, 292  
 Deborah, 349  
 Francis, 292, 349
- Nowell, George, 410  
 Increase, 254, 545-6
- Noyes, Abigail, 496  
 Elizabeth, 494  
 Peter, 493, 494, 495, 496, 534, 537, 660, 678  
 Thomas, 339, 494, 660
- Noyoes, Joseph, 536
- Nurse, Francis, 524  
 Rebecca, 524, 525, 542
- Nutting, John, 92, 93, 285  
 Sarah (Eggleton), 92, 285
- O**akes, ELIZABETH (—), 355  
 Elizabeth, 356  
 Hannah, 356  
 Thomas, 139, 355-6, 633
- Oliver, Andrew, 102  
 James, 600, 622  
 Capt. James, 429  
 John, 428  
 Peter, 429, 582  
 Thomas<sup>s</sup>, 426

- OLMSTEAD, JAMES<sup>1</sup>, 108  
 Ong, Tameson, 632  
 Orange, Prince of, 15  
 Orchard, Robert, 96  
 Ormsby, Grace (Martin), 615  
   Jacob, 615  
   John, 615  
   Richard, 615  
   Thomas, 615  
 Osgood, Christopher, 268  
   Elizabeth (Danforth), 268  
 Otis, Christine or Marguerite, 68  
   Richard, 68
- P**addock, Maj., 40  
 Page, Christopher, 468  
   Edward, 85  
   Elizabeth (Bushnell), 85  
   Joanna, 468  
   Joanna (Stearns), 468  
   John, 198, 542  
   Mary (Marsh), 542  
   Nathaniel, 468  
   Phebe, 198  
 Paine, see also Payne  
   Robert, 397  
   Ruth (Grover), 340, 341, 634  
   Sarah, 33  
   Stephen, 341  
   William, 341, 634  
 Painter, Thomas, 576  
 Palfreys, Peter, 70, 304  
 Palmer, Charles Anthony, 59  
   *Elizabeth*, 647  
   Helen Virginia, 59  
   *Col. John*, 647  
   Martin, 59  
   William, 59  
 Palsgrave, Mrs., 144  
   Dr. Richard, 144  
 Paris, Rev. Samuel, 524  
 Parish, John, 272  
   Mary, 254  
   Mary (Danforth), 254  
   Thomas, 254  
   Dr. Thomas, 254  
 Parke, William, 413  
 Parker, Abraham, 264, 379, 464-6,  
   552, 597  
   Benjamin, 465, 466, 467, 468  
   Betsey (Wyatt), 481  
   Clarissa, 481  
   Daniel, 469, 474, 476, 477, 479,  
   480, 481  
   DAVID<sup>4</sup>, 136, 469-72, 635, 636  
   David, 472  
   Ebenezer, 471, 472, 473, 481  
   Elizabeth, 379, 470  
   Elizabeth Warner, 481  
   Elizabeth (Cheever), 470  
   Esther, 471, 473  
   Eunice (Brooks), 379  
   Fanny, 481  
   Hannah, 362  
   Huldah, 471, 472, 473  
   JACOB<sup>1</sup>, 254, 264, 331, 464-8, 499,  
   552, 597  
   JACOB<sup>2</sup>, 136, 340, 465-9  
   Jacob, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473  
   Parker, James, 331, 379, 464, 465, 466,  
   552, 597, 681  
   JOANNA (CALL), 134, 136, 139, 140,  
   466-7  
   Joanna, 435, 470  
   Joanna (—), 554  
   John, 254, 256, 258, 263, 264, 331,  
   464-5, 468-70, 479-81, 499-50,  
   552, 554, 597  
   Joseph, 464, 466  
   Joshua, 470  
   Lucy (Cotton), 481  
   MARIE (*Pope?*), 499  
   MARY (UPHAM), 470, 471, 472, 635,  
   636  
   MARY (WARNER), 230, 473-4,  
   376-80, 655-7  
   Mary, 465, 466, 471, 472  
   Mary (Cutter), 470  
   Mary (Danforth), 263-4  
   Mary (Eaton), 472  
   Mary (Fletcher), 466  
   Mary (Hancock), 468  
   Mary (Swett), 481  
   Mary (Willis), 468  
   Mary (Upham), 470  
   Nancy, 481  
   Nathan, 471, 472, 473  
   Parnel, 450  
   Phebe, 471, 472  
   Phebe (Green), 470  
   Polly, 481  
   Priscilla (Mulloy), 481  
   Rachel, 465, 471  
   REBECCA<sup>2</sup>, 265, 465-6  
   REBECCA (DANFORTH), 136, 267,  
   435  
   Rebecca, 470-2  
   Rebecca (Emerson), 470  
   SALLY<sup>2</sup>, 221, 229, 230, 231, 232,  
   233, 474-8, 480-1  
   SARAH (—), 136, 337, 339, 464-5,  
   469, 614, 621  
   Sarah, 464, 465, 466  
   Sarah (Howard), 466  
   Silas, 471, 472, 474  
   Susanna ("*Sukey?*"), 481  
   Tabitha, 465  
   Tabitha (Wilson), 470  
   THOMAS<sup>2</sup>, 134, 136, 138, 139, 140,  
   267, 340, 435, 466-72  
   Thomas, 465, 466, 470, 636  
   Ursula (Eaton), 468  
   WILLIAM<sup>2</sup>, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473,  
   474, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 657  
   William, 474, 478, 479, 480, 481  
 Parmenter, Elizabeth (Cutler), 199,  
   200  
   John, 199-200  
 Parsons, Abigail (Haskell), 352  
   Daniel, 654  
   Rev. David, 634  
   Ebenezer, 353  
   Jeffrey, 352-3, 654  
   John, 654  
   Rev. Jonathan, 474  
   JOSEPH<sup>1</sup>, 67, 579, 621, 634  
   Lydia (Haskell), 353  
   Rev. Moses, 654  
   Nathaniel, 352  
 Parsons, Samuel, 621  
   Susanna (Warner), 654  
 Patch, Abraham, 510  
   Edmund, 510  
   James, 75  
   Mary, 510  
   Richard, 510  
 Pattee, Elizabeth (Prince), 514  
   Peter, 514  
   Samuel, 514  
 Patten, Rebecca, 268  
   Thomas, 268  
   William, 268  
 Patterson, James, 259  
 Paul, Mary, 172  
   Samuel, 172, 328  
   Susanna, 328  
 Pason [Payson], Edward, 271, 308  
   Giles, 308  
 Payne, Robert, 513  
 Peacock, Richard, 308  
 Pearce, see also Peirce, Pierce  
   John, 529  
 Pearson, Mehitable, 657  
 Peasley, Joseph, 179  
 Peck, Deliverance, 415  
   Elizabeth, 410  
   Israel, 415  
   Joseph, 415  
 Peirce, Capt., 11, 296  
   Capt. William, 108, 157, 441, 453,  
   484  
 Peke, Prudence (—), 582  
   Simon, 582  
 Pell, Ellen, 649  
 Pelton, John, 328  
 Pemberton, Rev. Ebenezer, 96, 100  
   John, 617  
 Pen, Hannah, 28  
 Pendleton, Brian, 538  
   Hannah, 535, 538  
   James, 538  
 Penhallow, John, 388  
 Penn, —, 243  
 Penniman, James, 426, 532  
   Joseph, 531-2  
   Sarah, 532  
   Waiting (Robinson), 531-2  
 Pepper, Joseph, 415  
   Mary (May), 415  
   Robert, 415  
 Pepperell, Col. William, 78  
 Pepys, Samuel, 656  
 Percy, Lord, 43  
 Perkins, Abraham, 86, 283, 488-91  
   Abigail (Dodge), 491  
   Capt. Beamsley, 283  
   Damaris (—), 486  
   ELIZABETH (—), 484, 486, 489  
   Elizabeth, 484, 485, 486, 491  
   Elizabeth (Lovell?), 486  
   Elizabeth (Jaques), 490  
   HANNAH<sup>4</sup>, 491, 674  
   HANNAH (KNIGHT), 399, 490  
   Hannah (Beamsley), 86, 490  
   Hannah (West), 490  
   HENRY, 484  
   ISAAC<sup>2</sup>, 399, 489, 490  
   Isaac, 490-1  
   Jacob, 484, 485, 486, 488, 490, 491

- Perkins, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, 86, 108, 157, 283, 296, 441, 453, 484, 485, 486, 625  
 JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 86, 189, 248, 283, 351, 484, 485, 486, 488, 489, 490, 651, 668, 670  
 John, 489, 491  
 JUDITH (GATOR), 157, 296, 441, 484, 485  
 Judith (—), 490  
 Luke, 488, 490  
 Lydia, 484, 485, 486  
 Lydia (—), 489  
 Lydia (Vifian), 491  
 Mary, 484, 485, 486, 491  
 Mary (—), 490-1  
 Mary (Cogswell), 491  
 Nathaniel, 488, 490  
 Phebe (Gould), 486  
 Samuel, 488, 490  
 Sarah, 490, 491  
 Sarah (—), 490  
 Sarah (Kinsman), 490  
 Sarah (Wainwright), 490  
 Susannah (Cogswell), 491  
 Thomas, 484, 486, 488, 490, 625  
 William, 194  
 Zacheus, 625  
 Perrin, Mary, 420  
 Mary (—), 420  
 Noah, 420  
 Perry, Arthur, 123  
 Bridget, 588  
 Peters, Andrew, 85  
 Goody, 669  
 Mercy (Beamsley), 85  
 Phillips, John, 405, 528-9  
 Capt. John [Pirate], 292, 349  
 Joseph, 384  
 Mary, 460  
 Nicholas, 460  
 Richard, 460  
 Thomas, 433  
 William, 84  
 Phipps, Gov. William, 25, 26, 260, 681, 684  
 Pickard, Joanna (Tuttle), 605  
 John, 605  
 Pickering, Capt. Timothy  
 Pidge, Elizabeth (Newcomb), 460  
 John, 460  
 Pierpont, —, 585  
 James, 328  
 Robert, 328  
 Sarah (Gore), 328  
 Pierce, see also Pearse, Peirce  
 Mrs., 615  
 Abijah, 364  
 Anthony, 379, 393  
 Ebenezer, 163  
 Elizabeth, 382, 391  
 Elizabeth (Kendall), 379  
 Esther, 163, 615, 631  
 President Franklin, 466  
 James, 379, 381-2  
 John, 379, 393  
 Capt. Joseph, 34, 379  
 Lydia, 556  
 Moses, 163, 615  
 Mary, 393  
 Nathaniel, 631  
 Pierce, Samuel, 556  
 Stephen, 466  
 Tabitha (Parker), 466  
 Thomas, 379, 382, 466, 556  
 William, 163, 615, 631  
 Pigrom, William, 271  
 Pike or Pickett, Mary (—), 490-1  
 Pingree [Pengry, Pingriel], Aaron, 398  
 Lydia, 129  
 Moses, 129  
 PINNEY, HUMPHREY<sup>1</sup>, 155, 156, 295, 572  
 Piper, Nathaniel, 669-70, 672  
 Pitcher, Andrew, 529  
 Pitt, William, 192  
 Plumer family, 476  
 Plympton, Mr., 644  
 Abigail (Noyes), 496  
 Betsey (Holden), 496-7  
 ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup>, 493, 494, 495, 496, 534-5, 537-8  
 Hannah, 496  
 JANE (BENT), 493, 496  
 Jane, 493  
 Peter, 496  
 ROBERT, 493, 496  
 Robert, 493  
 Thomas, 364, 493, 496-7, 534, 536, 537, 593, 680, 682, 684  
 Thomas Ruggles, 496-7  
 William, 493  
 Poland, John, 672  
 Pollard, George, 192  
 Pomeroy, Rev. Augustus, 231  
 Bruce D., 234  
 Curtis Hall, 234  
 Esther A. (Ferris), 234  
 Marjorie A., 234  
 Robert F., 234  
 Pond, Sarah, 168  
 Poole, Elizabeth (Cutler), 219, 221  
 Fitch, 221  
 John, 221, 621  
 Jonathan, 221, 621  
 William, 221  
 Zechariah, 221  
 Porteous [Portise], Alice (Greenwood), 110  
 Hannah, 110  
 Robert, 110  
 Porter, Edward, 324  
 RHODA (—), 324  
 Potter, Anthony, 525  
 Edmund, 605  
 Elizabeth (—), 525  
 Joanna (Tuttle), 605  
 Lydia, 525  
 WILLIAM<sup>2</sup>, 426  
 POULTER, ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup>, 499, 500  
 JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 499  
 John, 499, 500  
 MARIE (Pope?), 499  
 Mary, 499, 500  
 Rachel (Eliot), 500  
 Powell, Mary, 264  
 Michael, 310  
 Pratt, Mary, 342  
 Preble, Ebenezer, 388  
 Prentice, Abiah, 502, 504  
 Elizabeth, 508  
 Prentice, Elizabeth (—), 502, 504  
 Elizabeth (Haley), 508  
 Elizabeth (Rand), 508  
 Faith (Frost), 508  
 Hannah, 507  
 Hannah (Wyeth), 508  
 HENRY<sup>1</sup>, 352, 502, 503, 505, 507, 508, 534  
 Henry, 352, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507-8  
 HEPZIBAH (Dunn or Dunton), 504, 506, 507, 508  
 Hepzibah, 507  
 JOANE (—), 502, 503, 506  
 Jonas, 507  
 Rev. Joshua, 506  
 Lydia, 508  
 Lydia (—), 507  
 Lydia (Prentice), 508  
 Maria (Russell), 508  
 MARY<sup>2</sup>, 76, 506, 508  
 Mary, 502-4  
 Mary (Batson), 507-8  
 Mary (Gore), 504  
 Nathaniel, 506-8  
 Samuel, 502, 503, 504, 508  
 Sarah, 502-4  
 SOLOMON<sup>2</sup>, 199, 362, 502-7  
 Solomon, 506-8  
 Stephen, 506-8  
 Tabitha, 507  
 Thomas, 504, 506, 507, 508  
 Capt. Thomas, 447  
 William, 507  
 Prentiss, Dr. Nathaniel Shepard, 45  
 Prescott, Ephraim, 45  
 Dr. Samuel, 43  
 Preston, Daniel, 271  
 Edward, 541  
 Roger, 345  
 Samuel, 345  
 Susanna (Gutterson), 345  
 William, 405  
 Price, Mr., 564  
 Leah (Newcomb), 460  
 William, 460  
 Prince, Widow, 519  
 ABIGAIL [ELLERY], 290, 292, 514, 516  
 Abigail, 514, 516  
 Bethia, 519  
 Edward, 514  
 ELIZABETH (HARRADEN), 349, 513-4  
 Elizabeth, 514, 516  
 Honor (Tarr), 514  
 Isaac, 511, 513, 514, 517  
 "Jeho", 513  
 JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 290, 292, 513, 514, 515, 516, 654  
 John, 513, 516, 625  
 Jonathan, 652, 653  
 MARGARET (—), 88, 120, 510, 511, 512, 513  
 Margaret, 514  
 Martha, 513  
 Mary, 195, 513, 514  
 Mary (—), 651  
 Mary (Patch), 510  
 Mary (Wharf), 515  
 REBECCA, 519

- Prince, Robert, 519, 522  
 Sarah, 513, 514  
 Susanna, 516, 517  
 THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, 120, 194, 280, 281, 288,  
 510, 511, 512, 513, 515, 625  
 THOMAS<sup>2</sup>, 288, 349, 512-4  
 Thomas, 510, 514  
 Rev. Thomas, 33, 102  
 Pritchard, Hugh, 114, 413, 585  
 Proctor, Jacob, 491  
 John, 490  
 Mary (Perkins), 491  
 Proutt, Timothy, 311  
 Prudden, John, 110, 114, 413  
 Pudney, John, 305  
 Putnam, Ann, 525  
 Ann (Carr), 524-5, 542  
 Ann (Holyoke), 521  
 Daniel, 644  
 David, 592  
 Edward, 223  
 Eleazer, 525  
 Elisha, 223  
 Elizabeth, 223, 521  
 Elizabeth (Hutchinson), 521  
 Elizabeth (Rolfe), 525  
 Elizabeth (Whipple), 525  
 George W., 223  
 Hannah, 522, 525  
 Hannah (—), 525  
 Hannah (Boardman), 525  
 Israel, Jr., 223  
 Col. Israel, 223, 525  
 Gen. Israel, 525, 570  
 Maj. Gen. Israel, 207, 223  
 James, 522, 525  
 Jethro, 525  
 JOHN<sup>1</sup>, 223, 521, 525  
 Capt. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 182, 519, 521-2, 542  
 John, 522, 525  
 Jonathan, 522, 525  
 Joseph, 223, 525  
 Lydia (Potter), 525  
 MARGARET (GOODSPEED), 521  
 Mary, 223  
 Mary (—), 521  
 Mary (Read), 525  
 Nathaniel, 521, 522  
 NICHOLAS<sup>a</sup>, 521  
 Phebe, 521  
 PRISCILLA (—), 521  
 Priscilla, 522, 525  
 REBECCA<sup>s</sup>, 522, 542  
 REBECCA (PRINCE), 521, 523, 524,  
 525  
 Col. Rufus, 44, 216, 223, 225, 228  
 Ruth, 525  
 Sarah, 223, 521-2, 525  
 Sarah (—), 525  
 Susanna, 525  
 Thomas, 223, 521-5, 542  
 William P., 223  
 William R., 232  
 Putt, Anne (Wilson), 342  
 Pygan, Alexander, 254  
 Lydia (Beamon), 254  
 Pynchon, Maj. John, 621
- Q**uelch, John, 515  
 Quilter, Mark, 247, 397
- Rand, Elizabeth, 110, 508  
 Robert, 110, 508  
 Thomas, 508  
 William, 508  
 Rankin, Dinah, 391  
 RAYMOND, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, 74, 625  
 John, 625  
 Rayner, Abigail, 380  
 Rev. John, 380  
 Rea, Mary (Read), 525  
 Read, see also Reade, Reed  
 Elizabeth (Jennison), 371, 375, 393  
 George, 370-1, 375, 380, 392, 393  
 Ralph, 392, 393  
 Ruth (Crooke), 309  
 William, 309, 371, 375, 379-80,  
 382, 392-3  
 Reade, Mabel (Kendall), 93, 371, 375,  
 392, 393  
 Reddish, Elinor, 324  
 Redditt, Mary, 362  
 Redington, Susan (Waite), 464  
 Reed, Abigail, 392, 393  
 Abigail (Kendall), 380, 393  
 Elizabeth A., 234  
 Israel, 375, 379, 381, 392, 393  
 Justice, 393  
 Mary (Kendall), 375, 393  
 Mary (Pierce), 393  
 Persis (Kendall), 393  
 Rebecca, 392-3  
 Sarah, 392-3  
 Timothy, 393  
 Reeves, Hannah (Rowe), 321  
 Thomas, 321  
 Remington, John, 320, 323  
 RHODA (—), 323-4  
 Renick, George, 227  
 Renouf, Clement, 570  
 Sarah (Cooper), 570  
 Revere, Paul, 20, 28, 34, 42-3, 207,  
 213, 364, 421  
 Reynolds, Capt., 22  
 Rice, Capt, 366, 592, 645  
 Edmund, 446, 447, 644, 660  
 Elizabeth (Moore), 447  
 Henry, 446, 447  
 Jason, 228  
 John, 449  
 Jonathan, 644  
 Joseph, 644  
 Mary, 645  
 Widow Mary, 684  
 Nicholas, 310  
 Sally, 55  
 William, 644, 645  
 Richards, Edward, 191  
 Richardson, Capt., 363  
 Experience (Wight), 643, 644  
 Ezekiel, 357  
 Hannah (Greene), 335  
 James, 357  
 Joseph, 94, 335  
 Capt. Josiah, 591, 643-4  
 Mary (Blodgett), 94  
 Samuel, 94, 357  
 Sarah (Hayward), 357  
 Riddan, Thaddeus, 667  
 Rider, Widow, 406  
 Riggs, John, 675
- Riggs, Mary, 352  
 Ruth, 675  
 Ruth (Wheeler), 675  
 Thomas, 352  
 Rindge, Daniel, 280  
 Ring, Benjamin, 481  
 Moses, 37, 38  
 Priscilla (Mulloy), 481  
 Rebecca (Dawes), 37, 38  
 Robbins, Abigail (—), 204  
 Hannah, 651  
 John, 651  
 Mary (Batson), 508  
 Mary (—), 651  
 Nathaniel, 508  
 Rev. Samuel, 231  
 Roberts, Mildred, 59  
 Robinson, Abraham, 120, 121, 195,  
 348  
 Capt. Andrew, 515  
 Damaris (—), 486  
 Mr. G. Frederick, 371  
 George, 85  
 Increase, 531, 532  
 MARGARET (—), 528, 529, 530,  
 532  
 Mary (Baker), 531  
 Mary (Bushnell), 85  
 Mary (Harraden), 348  
 PRUDENCE<sup>2</sup>, 116  
 Samuel, 530, 531  
 Sarah (Penniman), 532  
 Ursula (Adams), 530, 531  
 Waiting, 531-2  
 WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, 116, 158, 161, 321, 403,  
 406, 417, 528-31, 573, 576  
 William, 528  
 Rock, Joseph, 17, 20  
 Rockwell, Hannah, 393  
 Roe, see also Row, Rowe  
 Abigail, 195  
 Mary (Prince), 195, 513  
 Rogers, Mr., 92  
 Dinah (Rankin), 391  
 Jenny, 391  
 Mary, 605  
 Rev. Nathaniel, 605  
 Samuel, 605  
 William, 391  
 Rolfe, Apphia (Hale), 525  
 Benjamin, 525  
 Elizabeth, 525  
 Ezra, 605  
 Ruth (Tuttle), 605  
 Rose, Ellen (—), 542  
 Helon, 56  
 James, 182, 542  
 Jane (Dawes), 55, 56  
 John, 541  
 Jonathan, 56  
 Justus, 56  
 Lemuel, 56  
 Lyman Wolcott, 56  
 Rosen, David, 549  
 Rossiter, Mr., 294  
 Row, Jacob, 516  
 Sarah (Woodward), 672  
 William, 672  
 Rowe, Hannah, 321, 382  
 Hugh, 195, 513

- Rowe, John, 513  
Rowell, Philip, 178  
Thomas, 397, 398  
Rowlstone, John, 126  
Mercy (Bumstead), 126  
Royall, Zibiah, 420  
Ruck, Hepzibah, 390  
Ruggles, Edmund, 588  
Elizabeth, 643  
John, 116, 415, 417  
Mary, 588  
Samuel, 117  
Thomas, 116, 117, 417, 588  
Rusk, Humphrey, 53  
James, 50, 51  
Russell, Eleazer, 507  
Elizabeth (Dickson), 361  
Jane, 382  
Joanna, 199, 200  
John, 382  
Jonathan, 507  
Joseph, 382  
Maria, 508  
Philip, 200  
Rev. Richard, 616  
Tabitha (Prentice), 507  
William, 200  
Rust, Mr., 559  
Goode, 669  
RUTTER, ELIZABETH (PLYMPTON), 682  
Elizabeth, 538  
Hannah, 538  
Hannah (Pendleton), 535, 538  
Jane, 538  
Jemima (Stanhope), 538  
Sergt. JOHN<sup>1</sup>, 449, 494, 496, 534-8,  
678, 680, 684  
John, 537, 538  
Joseph, 538  
MARY<sup>2</sup>, 360, 538  
Rebecca, 538  
Thomas, 538  
Sabin, Judge Timothy, 184  
Saffery, Solomon, 328  
St. Clair, Gov., 225  
Salmon, Daniel, 67  
Saltonstall, Mr., 558  
Sanders, Abigail, 675  
Martin, 443  
Sanderson, Dr. Robert, 428  
Sanford, John, 628  
Maj. Peleg, 628, 629  
Sandys, Henry, 428  
Mary, 420, 428  
Sibella (—), 428  
Sargent, Abigail, 195, 283, 655  
Abigail (Clark), 608  
Ann, 292  
Elizabeth (Haskell), 353  
Elizabeth (Perkins), 486  
Hannah (Howard), 195  
John, 195  
Nathaniel, 655  
Thomas, 353  
William, 195, 290, 292, 486, 608,  
655  
Maj. Winthrop, 218  
Savage, Maj., 429  
Ephraim, 430  
Savage, Maj. Thomas, 13, 20  
Savell, Hannah (Tidd), 597-8  
William, 598  
Sawin, Phebe, 366  
Sawyer, Eleanor (Ellery), 292  
James, 292  
Joshua, 152, 381  
Mary (Carter), 152  
Thomas, 292  
Sayward, Elder James, 515  
Mary (Wharf), 515  
Scarborough, John, 311  
Mary (Smith), 311  
Schulz, Mary G. (Dawes), 60  
George Henry, 60  
Helen Dawes, 60  
Rosemary, 60  
Scofield (?), 243  
Scolloy, John, 34  
Scott, Ann (—), 299  
Elizabeth (—), 106  
Thomas, 106, 246, 299  
SCRUGGS, THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, 71, 75, 453-4  
Seaver, Joshua, 415  
Mary (May), 415  
Nathaniel, 324  
Robert, 415  
Sewall, Judge, 18  
Henry, 423  
Rev. Joseph, 33, 170, 423  
Samuel, 96, 170, 306, 317, 326,  
417, 423, 656  
Sharp, Robert, 588  
Sarah, 588  
Susannah (White), 588  
Shatswell [Satchell, Shotswell]  
Hannah, 179  
Lidia, 179  
Mary, 179  
Richard, 178, 397, 600, 602-4  
Susannah (Bosworth), 179, 180  
Theophilus, 105, 106, 179, 180  
Shattuck, Abigail, 361  
Damaris (—), 304, 305, 306  
Hannah, 305  
Joanna, 361  
Sarah, 305, 306  
Susanna, 361  
William, 361, 372  
Shaw, Anna, 126  
Benjamin, 481  
Clarissa (Parker), 481  
Judge Cushing, 481  
Elizabeth (Cushing), 481  
Peter, 481  
Polly, (Parker), 481  
Shearer [Sherwood], see also Sherrar  
Hannah (Bumstead), 125, 126  
Thomas, 125, 126  
Sheath family, 14  
Shedd, Abel, 58  
Daniel, 268  
Dorothy, 268  
Rev. Henry, 58  
John, 268  
Rev. John Haskell, 58  
Sarah Jane (Dawes), 58  
Rev. William Ambrose, 58  
Shepard, —, 52  
Eleazer, 542, 543  
Shepard, Elizabeth, 542, 543  
Elizabeth (Brown), 542  
FRANCES (—), 541  
HANNAH<sup>2</sup>, 182, 541, 543  
Hannah (Ayer), 543  
Hannah (Green), 542  
Israel, 542  
Joanna (Barker), 543  
JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 182, 525, 542-3  
John, 542, 543  
Jonathan, 543  
Mary (Page), 542  
Mehitable, 542  
Mehitable (Tenney), 543  
REBECCA<sup>2</sup>, 525  
REBECCA (PUTNAM), 182, 525, 542  
Rebecca (Bradner?), 542  
Ruth (Johnson), 543  
Samuel, 250, 252, 541  
Sarah (Eastman), 542  
Solomon, 542  
Rev. Thomas, 250, 251, 252, 254,  
541  
WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, 541, 542  
William, 542, 543, 572  
SHEPARDSON, DANIEL<sup>1</sup>, 136, 137, 138,  
143, 333, 545-6  
Daniel, 138, 333, 546  
Elizabeth (Call), 138, 546  
JOANNA (—), 136, 137, 337, 545-6  
Joanna, 546  
John, 545  
LYDIA<sup>2</sup>, 134, 546  
Sherborn, Abigail (Prince), 516  
Thomas, 516  
Sherman, Mrs. (—), 126  
Alida White, 59  
Helen Dawes, 59  
Mr. James, 537  
Jean P. (Dawes), 59  
Richard, 126  
Robert Trowbridge, 59  
Sherrar, Alexander, 126  
SHIPMAN, JOSHUA<sup>2</sup>, 231  
Shirley, John, 47, 593  
William, Gov., 78, 80  
Shurtleff, Benoni, 47  
Nancy, 47  
Shove, Rev. George, 444  
Mary, 444  
Sibley, Samuel, 524  
Sidwell, Nathan, 50  
Sill, Capt., 22  
Silsbee, Hon. Mr., 214  
Simonds, Hulda, 94  
James, 94  
Lydia (Bowman), 201  
Rebecca, 267  
Susanna (Blodgett), 94  
William, 94  
Simpson, John, 168  
Jonathan, 168  
Wait, 168  
Wait (Clapp), 167  
Singletery, Benjamin, 181  
Skelling, see also Skilling  
Thomas, 510  
Skelton, Rev. Samuel, 452  
Skerry, Henry, 523  
Skilling, Jeffrey, 248

- Skinner, Abraham, 134, 138, 139  
   LYDIA (SHEPARDSON), 134, 139, 546  
   Thomas<sup>1</sup>, 134, 138, 139  
   Thomas, 468, 546, 614  
 SLADE, ELIZABETH<sup>1</sup>, 611, 613  
   Sarah, 611  
 Slocum, Silas, 231  
 Smith, Brother, 667  
   Sister, 615  
   Abigail, 656  
   Alice (—), 447  
   Ann, 447  
   Benjamin, 587  
   Deborah (—), 168  
   Elizabeth, 675  
   Hannah (Appleton), 221  
   Hannah (Pendleton), 538  
   Jedidah, 587  
   James, 538  
   John, 184, 193, 274, 447, 529, 587  
   Capt. Joseph, 364  
   Katherine (—), 274  
   Lucy, 309  
   MARIA CATHARINA, 431, 548-50  
   Rev. Ralph, 452  
   Rebecca (Glover), 550  
   Richard, 623, 628, 629  
   Ruth (Cutler), 632  
   Sarah, 675  
   Capt. THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, 172, 548-50  
   Thomas, 550  
   Timothy, 586  
   Waitstill, 274  
   William, 613  
   Zerviah, 636  
 Snow, Annis (—), 552  
   AVIS (—), 552, 554  
   Daniel, 554  
   Ebenezer, 555, 556  
   HANNAH<sup>2</sup>, 201, 555-6  
   James, 552-4  
   Jemima (Cutler), 199, 200, 556  
   JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 148, 200, 335, 552, 554, 555  
   John, 555, 556  
   Lydia (Pierce), 556  
   MARY (GREENE), 148, 334, 335,  
   554, 556  
   Mary, 555, 556  
   Nathaniel, 555, 556  
   RICHARD<sup>1</sup>, 92, 149, 200, 381, 552-4,  
   597  
   Richard, 552  
   Samuel, 554, 556  
   Sarah (Parker), 554  
   Sarah (Stevens), 556  
   Sarah (Wilson), 554  
   Timothy, 555, 556  
   Zachariah, 149, 381, 553, 554, 556  
   Zerubbabel, 200, 555-6  
 Solart, Elizabeth (—), 669  
   John, 671  
 Somers, see also Sommers [Summers]  
   Mabel (Kendall), 93, 371, 375,  
   392-3  
   Susanna (Carter), 392  
 Some, Capt. John, 657  
 Sommers, Henry<sup>1</sup>, 371, 375, 392  
 Southwick, John, 597  
   Lawrence, 597  
   Sarah (—), 597  
 Spalding, Edward, 465  
 Sparhawk, Nathaniel, 360, 507  
 Sparks, Goode, 669  
 Spencer, Elizabeth, 369  
   GERRARD<sup>1</sup>, 252, 256  
   William, 251, 252, 321  
 Sprague, Rev. Mr., 506  
   Mary (Prentice), 507  
   Samuel, 507  
 Springer, Jonathan, 653  
 Squeb, Capt., 295  
 Stagg, Capt. William, 308  
 Stage, see also Stacy  
   Nymphas, 429, 558, 656  
 Stacy, Ann, 430, 431, 558-60  
   ELIZABETH (Clerke?), 558, 559, 560  
   Elizabeth, 558, 560  
   Elizabeth (Lord), 558  
   John, 558, 560  
   Joseph, 558, 560  
   MARY<sup>2</sup>, 428-30, 560  
   Mary, 558, 560  
   Sarah, 559, 560  
   Sarah (Wallis), 560  
   SIMON<sup>1</sup>, 351, 558, 649, 650, 651,  
   652, 656  
   Simon, 351, 430, 432, 559-60, 669  
   Stephen, 558  
   Susanna, 558, 559, 560  
   Susanna (Worcester), 560  
   Thomas, 559, 560  
   William, 558, 560  
 Stainford, John, 432  
 Stanhope, Jemima, 538  
   Jonathan, 538, 639  
   Sarah (Griffin), 639  
 Stanley, William, 322, 323, 600-2  
 Stansfall, Abigail, 414  
 Staples, Abigail (Prince), 514  
   John, 578  
   Rebecca, 578  
   Samuel, 514  
   Sarah, 578  
 Stearns, Rev. David, 391  
   Hannah, 634  
   Isaac, 140, 200, 373, 663  
   JOANNA (CALL), 139, 140, 467-8  
   Joanna, 467, 468  
   John, 139, 467-8  
   Mary, 200, 373  
   Samuel, 373  
   Dr. Thomas, 591  
 Stebbin, John, 309  
 Stebbins, Edward, 251  
 Stedman, Elizabeth, 616  
   John, 616  
   Joshua, 118  
   Margaret (Bridge), 115  
   Mary, 328  
   Thomas, 118  
 Stevens, Abigail (Sargent), 195  
   Cyprian, 686  
   Edward, 567  
   Elizabeth (Hildreth), 556  
   Gift, 182  
   Hannah, 349, 567  
   Henry, 99  
   Isaac, 565, 567  
   James, 88, 195, 290, 292, 347, 563-4,  
   567, 651  
 Stevens, John, 556  
   Joseph, 391  
   MARY<sup>2</sup>, 194, 195, 567  
   Mary, 686  
   Mary (Adams), 567  
   Mary (Coit), 193  
   Mary (Ellery), 290, 292  
   Mary (Willard), 686  
   PHILIPPA (—), 563, 565, 566, 567  
   Capt. Phineas, 363  
   Samuel, 290, 292, 514, 564, 587,  
   654  
   Sarah, 556  
   Susanna, 587  
   Susanna (Eveleth), 567  
   Thomas, 567  
   WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, 88, 192, 194-5, 280, 289,  
   290, 292, 453, 510, 511, 563-7,  
   607, 651  
   William, 195, 564, 567  
 Stil, Robert, 576  
 Stiles, Robert, 271  
 Stillman, Anne, 418  
   George, 418  
 Stock's child, 406, 576  
 Stockton, Prudence, 521  
 Stoddard, Mr., 170  
 Stone, Daniel, 447  
   ELINOR or ELLEN (—), 351  
   Elizabeth (Allen), 306  
   Gregory, 201, 446  
   John, 351, 446, 608  
   Mary (Balch), 75  
   Mary (Moore), 447  
   Capt. Moses, 364  
   Nathaniel, 75  
   Samuel, 201  
   Sarah, 201  
   Sarah (Baker), 649, 650  
   Simon, 649, 650  
 Storer, John, 384  
 Story, Rev. Daniel, 217, 570  
   Elisha, 27, 29, 570  
   George, 126  
   Rev. Isaac, 570  
   SARAH<sup>1</sup>, 27, 28, 570  
   Sarah (Cooper), 570  
   William, 246, 570  
 Stoughton, Widow, 161  
   Elizabeth (—), 405  
   Israel, 405  
 Stowe, Benjamin, 442  
 Stower, Nicholas, 355  
   Sarah, 355, 636  
 Stracy (Stacy?), Henry, 558  
 Streeter, Mary, 531  
   Stephen, 530  
   Ursula (Adams), 530  
 Strong, Abigail (Ford), 301  
   Experience, 299, 300  
   Horatio, 481  
   John, 300, 481  
   Joseph, 481  
   Nancy (Parker), 481  
   Ozia, 481  
   Phineas, 481  
   Stephen, 481  
   Thomas, 481  
 SUDBURY, THOMAS<sup>d</sup>, 250  
 Sullivan, Gen., 214

- Sumner, Abigail, 418, 583  
 Abigail (Lovett), 583  
 Abigail (Mather), 587  
 Ann (Tucker), 583  
 Benjamin, 582, 583, 587-8  
 Bridge (Perry), 588  
 Ebenezer, 582, 583, 584, 588  
 EDWARD<sup>s</sup>, 44, 68, 114, 161, 171,  
 210, 211, 386, 582-7  
 Edward, 583, 586-7  
 ELIZABETH (CLAPP), 171, 172  
 Elizabeth, 386, 587  
 Elizabeth (Badcock), 583  
 Elizabeth (Clement), 578  
 GEORGE<sup>s</sup>, 67, 68, 273, 386, 574,  
 577-82  
 George, 418, 582-3  
 Hannah, 78, 210, 586, 588  
 Hannah (Bullard), 588  
 Increase, 114, 386, 574, 578, 585-  
 587-8  
 Jazaniah, 582  
 Jedidah (Smith), 587  
 JOAN (FRANKLIN), 572  
 Joan, 577, 578  
 John, 586, 587, 588  
 Joseph, 582, 583  
 MARY<sup>t</sup>, 77  
 MARY (BAKER), 68, 579-83  
 MARY (WEST), 572, 577, 578  
 Mary, 583  
 Mary (Joslin), 578  
 Mary (Ruggles), 588  
 Nathaniel, 114, 586-8  
 ROGER<sup>a</sup>, 572  
 Roger, 574, 577, 578, 579, 580  
 Samuel, 574, 578, 582-3, 586, 587  
 Sarah (Lovett), 583  
 Sarah (Sharp), 588  
 Sarah (Staples), 578  
 Susanna (Stevens), 587  
 WILLIAM<sup>t</sup>, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162,  
 165, 169, 170, 271, 272, 273, 297,  
 386, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 529,  
 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578,  
 579, 580  
 William, 572, 577-8, 582-3  
 Swaine, Maj. Jeremiah, 23, 379  
 Sweetser, ELIZABETH (—), 356  
 Seth, 356, 545  
 Sweet, Benjamin, 481  
 Mary, 481  
 Swift, Mr., 581  
 Elizabeth (Capen), 572  
 Sarah (Clapp), 166  
 Susanna, 167  
 Thomas, 166, 167, 572, 577, 581  
 William, 572  
 Swinerton, Job, 583  
 Joseph, 583  
 Mary (Sumner), 583  
 Ruth, 583  
 Symmes, William, 148, 250  
 Rev. Zachariah, 250, 554  
 Symonds, Mark, 649  
 Priscilla, 649
- T**alcott, John, 251  
 Tarp, John, 390  
 Keziah (Kendall), 390
- Tarr, Honor, 514  
 Tarrant, Richard, 493  
 Tart, Thomas, 310  
 Taylor, Lt. Gov., 432  
 JOHN<sup>s</sup>, 67, 621  
 Mrs. Mary (Rusk), 50  
 President Zachary, 232  
 Tead, see also Tidd, 243  
 Temple, Abraham, 380  
 Alice (Hassell), 380  
 Christopher, 380  
 Richard, 380  
 Tenney, Martha, 636  
 Mehitable, 543  
 Thomas, 543  
 Thacher, Rev. Peter, 38, 125, 164,  
 276, 278, 581, 583  
 Theodora, 581  
 Rev. Thomas, 16  
 Thackson, Elizabeth, 678  
 Thathson, Thomas, 442  
 Thayer, Hannah (Dawes), 33  
 Jacob, 32, 33  
 Mary, 33  
 Richard, 160  
 Thomas, Mr., 607  
 Dorothy, 373  
 Hashai, 582  
 Mrs. Mary (—), 241  
 Thompson, Abel<sup>c</sup>, 365, 592-3  
 Abigail, 591  
 Abigail (Farnsworth), 591  
 Ann, 593  
 Benjamin, 591  
 David, 403-4  
 ELIZABETH, 188, 189  
 Elizabeth, 591, 593  
 JAMES<sup>b</sup>, 365, 591-3, 643, 645  
 James, 91, 92, 93  
 Jedediah, 593, 645  
 John, 403, 404, 591  
 Jonathan, 92, 152  
 Lucy, 593  
 MARY (VORCE), 365, 591-2, 645  
 Mary, 248  
 Mary (Goodenow), 593  
 MOLLY<sup>c</sup>, 364, 365, 366, 593  
 Nahum, 593  
 Phebe (Carter), 152  
 PHILLIS (—), 188  
 Prudence, 593  
 Ruth, 152  
 Sarah, 593  
 Sarah (Brown), 593  
 Sarah (Martin), 593  
 Susan (—), 91, 92  
 Susanna, 591  
 Rev. WILLIAM, 188  
 William<sup>a</sup>, 591  
 William, 686  
 William, 591  
 Thornton, Thomas, 298  
 Thorp, Hannah (Newcomb), 460  
 James, 460  
 Tidd [Tead, Tedd]  
 Alice (—), 597  
 Elizabeth, 597, 598  
 Hannah, 598  
 Jacob, 38, 44, 45
- Tidd, JOHN<sup>t</sup>, 92, 94, 145, 324, 331,  
 375, 376, 545, 552, 596, 597  
 John, 94, 596-8  
 Joshua, 324, 596-7  
 MARGARET (—), 596, 597  
 MARY<sup>s</sup>, 375, 378, 379, 597, 598  
 Rebecca, 94  
 Rebecca (Wood), 598  
 RHODA (—), 324, 325  
 Ruth (Dawes), 36, 37, 38, 45  
 Samuel, 597, 598  
 Sarah (—), 596-7  
 Tileston, Ruth, 276  
 Timothy, 529, 530  
 Tilestone, Thomas, 577  
 Tilly, John, 304  
 Tingley, Elizabeth (Call), 138  
 Palmer, 138  
 Samuel, 138  
 Titcomb, Gen., 214  
 Todd, Mary, 102  
 Toll, John, 678  
 Tolman, Brother, 271  
 Tompson, Joseph, 256, 260, 262, 263,  
 266  
 Torrey, Col. Joseph, 221  
 Ens. Joseph, 221  
 Mr. Joseph, 212  
 Rev. Dr. Joseph, 220-1, 230  
 Mary (Cutler), 219, 221, 230  
 Mary (Smith), 311  
 William, 221, 567  
 Tottingham [Totman]  
 Elias or Elish, 342, 634  
 Rebecca (Grover), 341, 342, 634  
 Tousley, Dorothy (*Moulton?*), 455  
 Richard, 455  
 Tower, Mr., 644  
 Ambrose, 645  
 Ann (Vorce), 645  
 Benjamin, 645  
 John, 645  
 TRACY, STEPHEN<sup>t</sup>, 108  
 Traine, John, 373  
 Lydia (Jennison), 373  
 Trask, Capt., 521  
 Rebecca (Clapp), 172  
 William, 305  
 William Blake, 172  
 Treadway, Nathaniel, 447, 449  
 Treat, Maj., 621, 622  
 Tredwell, Nathaniel, 669  
 Trerice, Master Nicholas, 11, 64, 459,  
 600  
 Trescott, Zachariah, 98  
 Trevour, William, 403  
 Trobo [Treby], Mehitable (Shepard),  
 542  
 Peter, 542  
 Trot, Brother, 271  
 Trott, Thomas, 420, 529  
 Zibiah, 420  
 Zibiah (Royall), 420  
 True, Josiah, 227  
 Tucker, Ann, 583  
 Benjamin, 583  
 Goodman, 581  
 Martha, 636  
 Robert, 583  
 Tufts, Abigail (Smith), 656

- Tufts, Asa, 470  
 Hon. Cotton, 656  
 Elizabeth (Parker), 470  
 Peter, 139  
 Simon, 656  
 Susanna (Warner), 656
- Tuncks, Henry, 493
- Turner, Ephraim, 622  
 Jeffery, 405  
 Ruth (—), 306  
 Capt. William, 681
- TUTTLE, ABIGAIL<sup>s</sup>, 292, 605, 653, 654  
 Abigail, 64, 602  
 Ann, 84  
 Charles, 605  
 Elizabeth, 605  
 Hannah, 601, 602  
 JOAN (ANTROBUS), 12, 64, 129, 322,  
 323, 600, 601, 602, 603  
 Joanna, 605  
 JOHN<sup>t</sup>, 12, 64, 71, 129, 189, 321-3,  
 401, 459, 485, 600-3, 607  
 John, 601, 602, 603, 605  
 Jonathan, 605  
 Martha (Ward), 605  
 Mary, 605  
 Mary (Burnham), 605  
 Mary (Rogers), 605  
 Richard, 601, 603  
 Ruth, 605  
 SARAH (COGSWELL), 129, 189, 602,  
 603, 604, 605  
 Sarah, 64, 602, 605  
 SIMON<sup>s</sup>, 12, 64, 129, 189, 321, 600,  
 602, 603, 604, 605  
 Simon, 605  
 Susanna, 605  
 William, 605
- TUTTY, ANNE<sup>t</sup>, 397  
 Anne (—), 397  
 John, 397  
 WILLIAM, 397  
 William, 397
- Tybbot, Agnes, 608  
 MARIE or MARY<sup>s</sup>, 351, 352, 608-9  
 MARY (—), 608-9  
 WALTER<sup>t</sup>, 192, 600, 607, 608, 609
- Tyler, Foster, 54  
 Reuben, 54
- Tyng, Edward, 384, 622, 625
- U**  
 Underwood, Anthony, 33  
 Elizabeth, 33  
 Jane (Plaice), 33
- Upham, — (Corbin), 636  
 ABIGAIL (HAYWARD), 136, 357  
 Abigail, 342, 633-6  
 Abigail (Hovey), 632  
 Charles Wentworth, 631  
 David, 633-4  
 Deliverance (Fowle), 634  
 Ebenezer, 342, 635-6  
 ELIZABETH (SLADE), 611, 612, 613,  
 614, 616  
 Elizabeth, 611, 615, 631  
 Elizabeth, (Hovey), 631  
 Elizabeth (Stedman), 616  
 Ezekiel, 633, 634  
 Frances, 611  
 Hannah, 633
- Upham, Hannah (Stearns), 634  
 Jacob, 342, 634-6  
 James, 470  
 Jane, 611  
 Joane, 611  
 JOHN<sup>s</sup>, 611  
 JOHN<sup>d or t</sup>, 133, 134, 136, 137, 163,  
 465, 470, 611, 612, 613, 614,  
 615, 616, 617  
 JOHN<sup>s</sup>, 136, 340, 357, 469, 631-5  
 John, 613, 616, 633-4, 636  
 Jonathan, 635, 636  
 Joshua, 631  
 Judith, 611  
 Katherine (—), 616  
 Lois (Waite), 636  
 MARIA (—), 611  
 Martha (Tenney), 636  
 Martha (Tucker), 636  
 MARY<sup>s</sup>, 471, 635-6  
 MARY (GROVER), 338, 342, 357,  
 634-6  
 Mary, 470, 616  
 Mary (Brown), 631-2  
 Mary (Mellins), 631  
 Mercy, 342, 636  
 Nathaniel, 342, 611, 614, 616,  
 631-2  
 Phebe, 342, 636  
 PHINEAS<sup>s</sup>, 163, 273, 337, 338, 339,  
 340, 348, 429, 470, 612, 615-7,  
 619-23, 625, 627-9, 631-3, 670  
 Phineas, 338, 340, 470, 611, 629,  
 631-3  
 Priscilla, 615, 616, 617  
 RICHARD<sup>s</sup>, 611  
 RICHARD<sup>s</sup>, 611  
 Richard, 632, 633  
 RUTH (WOOD), 136, 338, 617, 619-  
 22, 631  
 Ruth, 631  
 Ruth (Cutler), 632  
 SAMUEL<sup>t</sup>, 342, 357, 633-6  
 Samuel, 342, 635-6  
 Sarah, 611, 612, 616, 633  
 Sarah (—), 634  
 Sarah (Burnal), 634  
 Sarah (Floyd), 631  
 Sarah (Slade), 611  
 Sarah (Stower), 636  
 Susanna, 611  
 Tameson (Ong), 632, 633  
 Thomas, 611, 631  
 Timothy, 633  
 William, 342, 636  
 Zerviah (Putnam or Hubbard?), 636
- UPSON, —, 639  
 ELIZABETH<sup>t</sup> (—), 639, 640  
 Elizabeth (—), 639  
 HANNAH<sup>s</sup>, 639-40, 662, 679, 680,  
 685  
 Hannah, 639  
 Stephen, 91, 639  
 Thomas, 639
- V**  
 Van Dorn, Mary M., 56  
 Vane, —, 133  
 Varney, Mrs. Bridget, 288  
 Venables, 243  
 Veren, Hannah, 75
- Veren, Mary (—), 521  
 Nathaniel, 521  
 Philip, 75  
 Verry, Thomas, 511  
 Vetch, Col., 515  
 Vifian, Lydia, 491  
 Vincent, Philip, 397  
 Vinson, Hannah, 288  
 William, 288
- Vorce, see also Force, Voris, Vose  
 Vorce, Ann, 645  
 Jedediah, 593, 645  
 John, 645  
 MARK<sup>a</sup>, 450, 643, 644, 645, 647, 686  
 MARY<sup>b</sup>, 591, 592, 645  
 Mary, 365  
 Peter, 592, 645  
 PRUDENCE (MOORE), 450, 644, 645  
 Prudence, 645  
 Reuben, 592, 645
- Voris, Elizabeth W. (Means), 234  
 Elizabeth Williamson, 234  
 Dr. William, 234
- Vosburgh, R. W., 647
- Vose, Goodman, 581  
 Jane, 276  
 Sergt. Thomas, 276
- W**  
 Wadsworth, Dr. Benjamin, 220, 431  
 Christopher, 681  
 Capt. Samuel, 312, 536, 681-3  
 Wainwright, Francis, 397, 398  
 Sarah, 490  
 Capt. Simon, 180
- Waite, Benjamin, 471  
 Elizabeth, 357  
 Capt. John, 137, 337, 339, 340, 464-  
 6, 469, 471, 613, 614, 621  
 Lois, 636  
 Mary, 464  
 Mary (Hills), 337  
 Mary (Parker), 465, 466  
 Mary (Ward), 464  
 Phebe (Parker), 472  
 Richard, 199, 200  
 Samuel, 464  
 SARAH (—), 137, 337, 464  
 Sarah (Cutler), 199, 200  
 Susan, 464  
 Thomas, 199, 200, 465-6, 472, 559
- Wakefield, —, 430  
 Jonathan, 185  
 Rebecca, 185
- Waldo, Cornelius, 189  
 Hannah (Cogswell), 189
- Wales, Isabel (Atherton), 531  
 Mary, 530-1  
 Nathaniel, 531
- Walford, F. W., 320
- Walker, Abigail (Carter), 150  
 Hon. George, 233  
 Henry, 121, 194, 195, 288, 351, 651  
 John, 381  
 Judith, 382  
 Maria, 233  
 MARY (—), 121, 194, 195  
 Richard, 381, 382  
 Robert, 18  
 Ruth (Kendall), 381  
 Samuel, 150, 381-2, 392-3

- Walker, Sarah, 18  
Sarah (Reed), 392
- Wallis, Robert, 560  
Sarah, 560
- Walter, Rev. Nehemiah, 437
- Waltham, George, 443
- Walton, Clarissa W. (Cutler), 234  
Donald J., 234  
Elizabeth A. (Reed), 234  
James Pennock, 234  
Rev. James S., 231, 234  
Kitty (McKinnon), 234  
Mary A. (Bailey), 234  
Mary E., 234  
William C., 234
- Ward, Hon. Artemas, 34  
John, 171, 172  
Martha, 605  
Mary, 464  
Mary (Clapp), 171, 172  
Mary (Holden), 361  
Mary (Moore), 447  
Rev. Nathaniel, 245  
Richard, 447  
Sarah (Tuttle), 605  
Samuel, 361, 605  
William, 361
- Wardell, Hannah (Pope), 346
- Wardwell, Susannah (Ellery), 291
- Ware, Abigail, 643  
Anne, 315  
Ebenezer, 278  
Sir James, 315  
Robert, 278  
Sarah, 278
- Warham, Rev. John, 155, 294, 300
- WARNER, ABIGAIL (BAKER), 649  
ABIGAIL (TUTTLE), 292, 605, 653  
Abigail, 248, 649-51, 654, 656, 657  
Abigail (Sargent), 655  
Anne (Woodward), 675  
Dane, 653  
DANIEL<sup>2</sup>, 246-8, 351, 605, 649-53,  
668-9, 675  
DANIEL<sup>3</sup>, 651, 652, 653, 675  
Daniel, 650, 652, 653, 654, 655  
Deborah (Mason), 654  
Dorcas (Adams), 653  
Elias Elwell, 656  
ELIZABETH (DENNE), 649, 651  
ELIZABETH (WOODWARD), 349, 656-  
7, 675  
Elizabeth, 650, 651, 657  
Ellen (Pell), 649  
Ezekiel, 657  
Faith, 649  
Faith (—), 649  
Hannah (Batchelder), 651  
Hannah (Boynton), 651  
Hannah (Robbins), 651  
Hannah (Davis), 653  
Hannah (Gould), 656  
Isaac, 656  
John, 516, 605, 649-52, 655-7,  
675  
Jonathan, 654  
MARY<sup>7</sup>, 473, 474, 655-6  
MARY (PRINCE), 516, 654-5  
Mary, 656  
Mary (—), 651, 652
- Warner, Mary (Mountford), 654  
Mary (Tuttle), 605  
Mehitable (Pearson), 657  
Mercy, 652, 654  
Nathaniel, 605, 650-1, 654, 656-7,  
669  
PHILEMON<sup>4</sup>, 292, 516, 652-4  
PHILEMON<sup>5</sup>, 241, 292, 516, 653-5  
PHILEMON<sup>6</sup>, 655-7, 675  
Philemon, 657  
Priscilla (Symonds), 649  
Rebecca, 653  
Samuel, 650  
SARAH (DANE), 241, 248, 652  
Sarah, 292, 652-4, 657  
Sarah (Hill), 653  
Simon, 651  
Susanna, 650, 651, 654, 656-7  
WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, 248, 558, 605, 649, 669,  
675  
William, 474, 650-1, 653-4, 656-7
- Warren, Dr., 41, 43  
John, 371  
Michell (Jennison), 370, 371
- Warrick, John, 259
- Washington, Gen., 213, 216, 435-6,  
661
- Watermulder, Helen B. (Dawes), 59  
Louis F., 59
- Waters, Abigail (Dawes), 33, 37, 79  
Josiah, 33, 34, 43, 44, 79  
Lawrence, 33  
Samuel, 33
- Watson, Caleb, 322  
John, 108, 116, 240, 311, 320, 415,  
504-5
- Watts, Dr., 654  
Mrs. James T., 140, 371, 393, 462,  
506, 646  
John, 388  
Thomas, 324
- Way, Aaron, 578  
Henry, 484  
Joan (Sumner), 294, 578  
William, 578
- Webb, Joseph, 163, 615, 631  
Richard, 612, 615, 631
- Webster, James, 28  
Mary (Dawes), 27, 28  
William, 101, 102
- Weeden, William B., 485
- Weeks, George, 169, 531  
Jane, 169  
Jane (Clapp), 169  
Joseph, 531  
Mary (Atherton), 531  
Sarah, 169  
Submit, 169  
William, 169
- Welch, Elizabeth (Upham), 616, 629  
Thomas, 616
- Weld, Daniel, 114  
Elizabeth, 325  
Hannah (Porteous), 110  
John, 110, 325, 327  
Joseph, 109, 110, 325, 413, 588  
Mary (Ruggles), 588  
Thomas, 437
- Welles, see also Wells  
Philip, 160
- Wellman, Adam, 675  
Isaac, 675  
Ruth (Riggs), 675  
Thomas, 675
- Wells, Abigail (Warner), 649  
Elizabeth, 130  
Thomas, 649, 651, 667
- Wentworth, "Long John", 68
- West, Hannah, 490  
Hannah (—), 490  
MARY<sup>1</sup> or MARIE, 572  
Rhoda, 643  
Twifford, 490
- WHALE, WIDOW (UPSON), 537, 662,  
684  
ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup>, 446, 447, 662  
ELIZABETH (—), 661  
Elizabeth, 660  
Hannah, 431  
John, 660  
Jonas, 660  
Mary, 660  
PHILEMON<sup>1</sup>, 446, 534, 639, 660-3  
Philemon, 660  
Sarah (—), 661, 662
- Whalley, —, 300
- Wharf, Mary, 515  
Nathaniel, 515
- Wheeler, Abel, 185  
John, 185  
Jonathan, 185  
Mary, 362  
Rebecca (Wakefield), 185  
Ruth, 675  
Thomas, 185, 362
- Wheelwright, Rev. John, 454
- Whipple, Elizabeth, 525  
Elizabeth (—), 525  
Joanna (Tuttle), 605  
John, 558, 559, 605  
Matthew, 558  
Thomas, 525
- Whiston's, 41
- Whitcomb, John, 405
- White, Charity, 142  
Elizabeth (—), 306  
James, 282  
John, 194, 251, 306  
Rev. John, 70, 155, 156, 294-5,  
304, 575, 654  
Martha (Coit), 194  
Mary, 306  
Nathaniel, 194  
Nicholas, 529  
Susannah, 588
- Whitehead, Sarah (—), 204
- Whiting, Anna (Danforth), 263-4  
Oliver, 263-4, 266  
Rev. Samuel, 259, 261, 262, 264,  
499  
William, 299
- Whitman, HANNAH (TUTTY), 399  
Robert, 399
- Whitmore, see also Whittemore  
Francis, 185, 382, 468  
Hannah (Clark), 184  
Isaac, 185  
Mary (Kendall), 382  
Thomas, 185, 373, 616
- Whitney, Dr. Elisha, 214

- Whittaker, Abraham, 182  
Priscilla, 182  
William, 182
- Whittemore, Dorothy (Thomas), 373  
John, 616  
Joseph, 139, 382  
Mary (Upham), 616
- Whittier, Poet, 188, 525
- Whittingham, John, 105
- Wicks, Mercy (Call), 138  
Richard, 138
- Wigginton, Mary Judith, 60
- Wigglesworth, Rev. Samuel, 211
- Wight, Benjamin, 643, 644  
Experience, 643  
Henry, 643  
Jane (Goodenow), 643  
Jonathan, 643  
Thomas, 643
- Wilborne, Mercy (Beamsley), 85  
Michael, 85
- Wilford, Gilbert, 180  
Mary (Dow), 180
- Wilkins, Abigail, 291  
John, 291
- Wilkinson, Susanna, 357
- Willard, Rev. Joseph, 215  
Mary, 686  
Rev. Samuel, 16, 28  
Simon, 23, 681
- Willet, Abigail (Coit), 195  
Thomas, 195
- William, King, 21, 22, 23, 327, 378, 684
- Williams, Abigail, 421, 422, 423  
Abigail (May), 420  
Arthur, 299  
Jonathan, 53  
Joseph, 329, 421  
Mary, 329, 418  
Matthew, 145  
Mr. Robert, 211, 308, 329, 414-5, 418, 420-1  
Samuel, 415, 420  
Sarah (May), 415  
Stephen, 329, 418  
William, 357
- Willis, Mr., 644  
Mary, 468  
Michael, 405  
Stephen, 468
- Willoughby, Francis, 565
- Wilson, Hannah (James?), 554  
John, 554  
Rev. John, 15, 16, 124, 125, 133, 162, 254, 441, 442, 607  
Rev. John<sup>2</sup>, 158, 427  
Mary, 254  
Paul, 615  
Sarah, 554  
Shoreborn, 282, 668  
Tabitha, 470  
Theophilus, 397
- Winchester, Benjamin, 418  
John, 418  
Prudence (May), 418
- Window, "Ane", 88  
ELINOR (—), 88  
Richard, 88, 280, 281, 282, 351
- Wing, Capt., 26
- Wing, Cord, 96, 101, 102  
John, 291  
Robert, 96
- Winn, Edward, 94, 393  
Joanna (—), 393  
Joseph, 94, 392-3  
Martha (Blodgett), 94  
Rebecca (Reed), 392-3
- Winship, Edward, 91, 152, 379  
Elizabeth (Kendall), 379  
Ephraim, 379  
Joseph, 152  
Susanna, 152
- Winslow, John, 384  
Gov. John, 607, 626, 627  
Gov. Josiah, 622, 623, 624, 670
- Winter, Hannah (Cutler), 199, 200  
John, 200
- Winthrop family, 85  
Adam, 84, 600  
Elizabeth (—), 600  
John, 67, 108, 125, 133, 134, 157, 294, 295, 296, 299, 300, 301, 315, 316, 317, 427, 441, 459, 484, 486, 530, 563, 607  
Capt. John, 11, 17  
Lucy, 315  
Margaret (—), 258
- Wise, Abigail (Gardner), 34, 309  
Honor (Tarr), 514  
John, 514  
Rev. John, 34, 40, 99, 309, 490  
Joseph, 34
- Witherlay, Capt. John, 132
- Withington, Faith, 531  
Henry, 254  
Mary, 254
- Wittred, William, 490
- Wolliston, Susanna, 76
- Wonson, Honor (Tarr), 514  
John, 514
- Wood, see also Woods
- Widow, 143  
Cornelius, 592  
Edward, 617  
Josiah, 381  
Moses, 45  
Rebecca, 598  
RUTH, 617  
Ruth (Kendall), 381
- WOODBURY, ELIZABETH (PATCH), 510  
Elizabeth, 75  
JOHN<sup>1</sup>, 70, 71, 75, 295, 304, 453, 484  
Peter, 620  
WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, 72
- Woodcock, William, 322
- Woodcock's Garrison, 623, 627-8
- Woodford, Miles, 56
- Woods, Obadiah, 247
- Woodward, Abigail (Sanders), 675  
ANNE (BEAMSLEY), 667, 668, 669, 672  
Anne, 669, 672, 675  
Beamsley, 675  
Daniel, 450, 592, 645  
Davis, 675  
ELIZABETH<sup>4</sup>, 656, 675  
ELIZABETH (DAVIS), 283, 675  
ELIZABETH (—), 575
- Woodward, Elizabeth, 670, 672, 675  
Elizabeth (Smith), 675  
Elizabeth (—), 671-2  
Elizabeth (—), 669  
EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup>, 85, 348, 513, 623, 625, 627, 667-72  
EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup>, 352, 491, 672, 674  
EZEKIEL<sup>3</sup>, 283, 654-5, 674-5  
Ezekiel, 675  
Goode, 669  
HANNAH (PERKINS), 491, 674  
HENRY<sup>1</sup>, 67, 404, 572, 579, 621  
Jacob, 675  
John, 450, 504, 601, 675  
Keziah, 450, 644  
Margaret, 672  
Martha, 672  
MARY (HASKELL), 282, 352, 674  
Mary, 672, 674-5  
Nathaniel, 328, 675  
PRUDENCE (MOORE), 450, 592, 645  
Prudence, 672  
Rachel, 672  
Rachel (Elwell), 352  
Richard, 450  
Ruth (Riggs), 675  
Sarah, 672, 675  
Sarah (Knowlton), 672  
Sarah (Prentice), 504  
Sarah (Smith), 675  
Stephen, 674-5  
Susanna, 450
- Worcester, Susanna, 560  
Rev. William, 560
- Wright, Abigail, 685-6  
DOROTHY<sup>2</sup>, 447, 449, 686  
DOROTHY (—), 264, 447, 534, 591, 678-81, 684  
Dorothy, 686  
EDWARD<sup>2</sup>, 21, 264, 449, 534, 537, 591, 640, 644, 678-80, 683-5  
Edward, 263-4, 679, 681, 685-6  
Elizabeth, 679, 686  
Elizabeth (Mellowes), 264  
HANNAH (UPSON), 91, 640, 662, 679-80, 685  
Hannah, 686  
Hannah (—), 686  
James, 433  
John, 152  
Joseph, 147  
Josiah, 152<sup>1</sup>  
LYDIA (MOORE), 446, 679  
Lydia (Danforth), 263-4  
Martha, 679, 685-6  
Mary, 686  
Mary (Powell), 264  
Mary (Stevens), 685-6  
Ruth (Carter), 152  
Samuel, 200, 446-7, 449, 591, 644, 678, 679, 685-6  
Sarah, 679, 686  
Thomas, 686
- Wyatt, Betsey, 481  
George, 481  
Joshua, 481
- Wyeth, Hannah, 508  
John, 508  
Nicholas, 508
- Wylls, Secretary, 183

Wyman, Abigail (Reed), 392  
Francis, 392-3, 554  
John, 392

Yates, Mr., 218  
York, Hannah, 348

York, Ruth, 353  
Samuel, 348  
Yorke, Richard, 515-6  
Young, Beman, 59  
David, 59  
David Harold, 59

Young, Dorothy, 59  
Dorothy (Dawes), 59  
Capt. Joseph, 120  
Younglove, Samuel, 246  
Youngs, Richard, 375, 597  
Youngs [Yonges], William, 375

# INDEX OF SUBJECTS

This index makes no pretense of being exhaustive on any item, nor complete as to subject. Its purpose is, rather, to suggest the type of material and incident to be found in the text. Many of the items pertain to ancestors of the family for whom this volume has been compiled.

**ACCIDENTS**, Sickness, Suffering; see Smallpox: In 1677-9 about 800 deaths in colony from smallpox, 148; Four of ten children in 1735 died within a month, 634; Bit by rattlesnake, chopped off thumb and then killed the snake, 202; Brookfield's Suffering, 619; Ulcer in lungs pierced into bowels, 110; Holes in stomach and bowels, one of earliest autopsies, 116-7; An unfair case of the "itch", 335; Massacre, 1675, at Bloody Brook, 619-20; Early obstetrical care, 511; WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> ROBINSON's accidental death, 530; Josiah Haynes at 80 marched to Concord, and was 1 of 3 to stop a British bullet, 365; Serious deformity of a child blamed on Baptist leanings of some of the family, 147; The Pestilence, 230-1; Cholera caused over 1000 deaths a week in both St. Louis and Cincinnati, 232. Ancestors: Ancestors who suffered for principle's sake, 614; Ancestors disfranchised and disarmed in 1637 for principle's sake, ROBERT<sup>t</sup> MOULTON and THOMAS<sup>t</sup> SCRUGGS, 454; in 1667 WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> STEVENS, 566-7. Acadians, Contribution for, 80. Alewives, for fertilizer, 189, 199, 488. Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, 20, 34, 39, 79, 85, 124, 158, 320-1, 369, 528, 600, 602. Angle Tree Stone, 162.

**BALLS** of paste with copperas, 272. Businesses of various ancestors: Iron works about 1645, 299, 459, 522; Export of Tobacco, 1649-50, 310; Capable, business-like wives, JOAN (ANTROBUS) LAWRENCE TUTTLE, 322-3, 601-2, RHODA (—) GORE Remington Porter Tidd, 322-5, ELIZABETH (—) Oakes Sweetser HAYWARD, 355-7, MARY (UPHAM) PARKER, 470-2; JOHN<sup>t</sup> TUTTLE importer and exporter, 600-1; Mariners, JOHN<sup>s</sup> PRINCE, 515, THOMAS<sup>s</sup>

PRINCE, 513; JOHN<sup>s</sup> PUTNAM trained in agriculture on Endicott's farm, 521-2; Carpenter SAMUEL<sup>s</sup> MEARS, 420.

**CIVIC** and Legal Development: Plum Island the first terrain in the colony to be held in private, personal ownership, 344, 668; Political comment, 35, 79, 480, 504; First postal route for Colony 1693 from Portsmouth, N. H. to James City, Va., 97; Lack of Freedom of Speech in 1675, 512; "Suit about a sow" — origin of bicameral form of legislature, 126; Swamp fight, 624-6; Dogs' feet tied up to protect fish-fertilizer, 177-8. Conduit, 14, 36-7, 97.

**DANE**, JOHN<sup>s</sup>, "Declaration" of, 242. Droving of cattle from Ohio to the east as early as 1800, 227.

**EARLY** Newspapers: Boston "News Letter", 98-9, Newspapers bought by CUTLERS New London Gazette (1776-), 208, United States Gazette (1799-), 227.

**Elections**: Election held in a field and some voters came 40 miles on foot, 133; Corn and beans for balloting, corn for election, beans contrary, with £10 penalty for casting more than one, 132-3, 143; Election 1751-2 by walking — affirmative, walked east but negative walked west, 654.

**GOVERNMENTAL**. First American Mint House about 1652-4 was 16 feet square and 10 feet high, 704; Wives' petition the Court, In 1651 thirty-six *re* minister, 337, 546, In 1667 twenty-six *re* release from First Church to Third, 17, 136, 613-4.

**HISTORICAL** Items. Announcement that British had

left Boston, 206-7. Boston Fires, 14, 29, 98, 125, 427, 430-2. Castle Island, 163-5, 170, 453. Castle burned, 165; Castle rebuilt, 574; Castle demolished, 213. Church, Third or Old South, 16-7, 101, 163, 401, 577. Clock in use before 1651, 608. Colonists: Who came at own expense, got 50 acres; Who invested £60, got 200 acres; Who brought a servant, got 50 acres for that, 144. Drum or horn call to church, 178. Fare from Old England to New, 495. Half-Way Covenant, 15, 163, 363, 577. Peirce, William, Master, 108, 157. Slaves, 32, 98, 259, 434. Whipped and both ears cut off for disloyalty, 167. "Woburn Memorial for Christian Liberty", signed by 29 "bold petitioners", 552-3, 597. Hour-glass, Use in 1697 of, 258. Housemaid, 1848, get 1s per week from May 1 to Sept. 1 and 75c per week the rest of the year, 232.

**LEAH** Cutler suggests her own successor, 229. Long hair criticized, 115.

**MEETING**-house in 1702 cut in two near middle, spread halves 24 feet apart and built in new middle section, 340.

**Military**. Cockades were Marigolds, 39, 391. Hungry March, 1676, 670. Indians in French clothing in 1713 use white flag for parley but take prisoners, 515. "News of Peace" April 1, 1783, after 8 years 10 days of war, 215. Purloined cannon, 40. Revere and WILLIAM<sup>s</sup> ride, 42-3.

Scotch prisoners of Battle of Dunbar 1650 shipped to America to work out their freedom, 459-60.  
Threat of the Tarratines, 486-8.  
Pequot War, 1636-7.

BURNHAM, THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, 129.  
King Phillip's War, 1675-7.  
CARTER, Lt. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 148-9.  
CUTLER, JAMES<sup>2</sup>, 200.  
DANFORTH, JONATHAN<sup>2</sup>, 259-60.  
DANFORTH, JONATHAN<sup>3</sup>, 265.

DAWES, WILLIAM<sup>1</sup>, 13.  
DAWES, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>, 22.  
DAVIS, JACOB<sup>2</sup>, 282.  
MEARS, SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, 429.  
PARKER, JACOB<sup>2</sup>, 466.  
PERKINS, ISAAC<sup>3</sup>, 490.  
PRENTICE SOLOMON<sup>2</sup>, 404-5.  
PUTNAM, Lt. JOHN<sup>2</sup>, 522.  
UPHAM, PHINEAS<sup>2</sup>, 630, 619-27.  
WOODWARD, EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup>, 670.  
WRIGHT, EDWARD<sup>2</sup>, 681.

King William's or Ten Years War, 1688-1698.

DAWES, AMBROSE<sup>2</sup>, 22.  
MOORE, BENJAMIN<sup>2</sup>, 684.  
RUTTER, JOHN<sup>1</sup>, 684.  
WRIGHT, EDWARD<sup>2</sup>, 681.

Other Ancestral Military Services included:

BALCH, Rev. THOMAS<sup>5</sup>, 1744-6, 78.  
BOONE, NICHOLAS<sup>2</sup>, 1707, 100.  
CARTER, Capt. JOHN<sup>3</sup>, 1700-27, 151.  
CLAPP, SAMUEL<sup>2</sup>, 1666, 169 et seq.  
VORCE, MARK<sup>b</sup>, 1725, 644.  
UPHAM, SAMUEL<sup>4</sup>, 1746, 635.  
Revolutionary War, 1775-1782.  
CUTLER, HEZEKIAH<sup>4</sup>, 206-7.  
CUTLER, Rev. MANASSEH<sup>6</sup>, 212.  
DAWES, WILLIAM<sup>4</sup>, 35-6.  
DAWES, WILLIAM<sup>6</sup>, 38.  
HOLDEN, JONAS<sup>4</sup>, 364.  
MAY, SAMUEL<sup>b</sup>, 421.  
THOMPSON, JAMES<sup>b</sup>, 592.

**OCCUPATIONS** of ancestors:

Blacksmiths, DANIEL<sup>1</sup> SHEPARDSON, CARTER.  
First Powder Mill, 580.  
Glover THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BLODGETT, 90.  
Merchant, Import, Export, JOHN<sup>1</sup> MILLS, 443.  
Pewterer-Brazier, THOMAS<sup>1</sup> BUMSTEAD, 122.  
Potter, JACOB<sup>3</sup> DAVIS, 283.  
Rolling and Slitting Mill 1710 for nails, 582.  
Sawmills: CUTLER, 201-3, JACOB<sup>2</sup> and JACOB<sup>3</sup> DAVIS, 282, KENDALL, 376, 378, 380-1; Grist and Sawmill: WILLIAM<sup>2</sup> HASKELL, 352.  
Shipwrights, ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MOULTON, 452; WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> STEVENS, 563, JOHN<sup>1</sup> COIT, 191.  
Surveyors: JOHN<sup>2</sup> DANFORTH, "Artiste", 258; JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE, 326-8.  
Tailor, ROBERT<sup>1</sup> MEARS, 426.

Tanner, JAMES<sup>4</sup> MEARS, 436.  
Weaver, SAMUEL<sup>4</sup> UPHAM, 634.  
Wheelwright, JAMES THOMPSON, 593.  
Orchards, Apple Trees  
Apples, Apple Trees, 455, 512.  
Five hundred apple trees of 3 years' growth in 1648, 521.  
Orchard trees of EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER cut, 44, 586.

**PERSONAL** Items:

Bear carried in canoe, 226.  
CLAPP Home, 157, 171-2.  
MANASSEH<sup>2</sup> CUTLER et al explore White Mountains, 1784 and 1804, 216.  
Rev. MANASSEH's hair cut off, 211.  
The five wives of EZEKIEL<sup>2</sup> WOODWARD and their 28 children, 674.  
Harraden variant is Hazzardine, 347, 656.  
Hegira before the Siege, 36.  
Hidden purses of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> DAWES; Currency nets 13 per cent of face value, 32.  
Pioneer hardships in Pennsylvania, 480.  
". . . plain living and high thinking . . .", 479.  
Poland's predicament, 672.  
Proof of 4 and probably 5 Parker brothers who emigrated, 464.  
Removal of 200 pioneer families to Ohio made possible by EPHRAIM<sup>2</sup> CUTLER and consequent droving of cattle (1800-) to the east, 227.  
Shabby conduct, but manly admission of JOHN<sup>2</sup> PUTNAM, 523-4.  
Stepmother problem settled, 356.  
Edward<sup>5</sup> Sumner and his silver dollars, 586.  
Theft of gold in "Wayside Inn" cleared up 3 years later by patient waiting, 363.  
The three wives of EZEKIEL<sup>1</sup> WOODWARD and their 27 children, 669, 671-2.  
Trouble sobers SIMON<sup>2</sup> TUTTLE, 603-4.  
PHILEMON<sup>1</sup> WHALE was our ancestor by his first wife; his third wife was our ancestress by her first husband and probability is that his second wife was our ancestress by her first husband, 639, 662-3.  
Poem by Julia P. Cutler, 235.  
Pudding-stone or Conglomerate, 109.

**QUAKERS** in New England, 12-3, 124-5, 144, 305, 512.

**ROXBURY** church pews: Pew 9, EDWARD<sup>3</sup> SUMNER, 586; Pew 32, EBENEZER<sup>4</sup> MAY, 418-9; Pew 39, JAMES<sup>4</sup> MEARS, 437.

**SMALLPOX** and WILLIAM<sup>1</sup> ROBINSON, 529; Smallpox and JOHN<sup>3</sup> PRINCE, 516; Inoculation in 1776

for smallpox, 310.  
Schools. Dorchester (first) Free School in New England, 158, 405, 573; Thompson's Island for Dorchester School, 158, 403-4, 573; Roxbury (second) Free School in New England, 109, 113-5, 308, 310, 322, 326, 413, 417, 438, 586-7; Early School teachers at Roxbury, 114; Dedham school taught by Rev. MANASSEH in 1766 had 90-100 pupils, 210; Rev. MANASSEH taught a private school in his home for 25 years, 214; "Censure of Harvard", 110, 115; Harvard College items, 125, 144, 151, 158, 252, 257, 316, 322, 325-6, 376, 411, 464, 579; Yale College items, 206, 210, 212.  
Schooner, Naming of, 515.

**TALE** of 1660, Exaggerated, 554.  
Telegraphed report of President Zachary Taylor's inaugural address March 5, 1849, peddled on Marietta streets 3 hours later, 232-3.

**UNUSUAL** items:

Coinage in 1652, 704.  
"Hard Money", 702-3.  
Loss of charter threatened, 698 et seq.  
Massachusetts Charter, return demanded in 1664, 698.  
Musket balls were legal tender, 703.  
"New Tenor", 707.  
Paper Currency, 706.  
"Pay" or "Pay as Money", 707.  
Prophecy by King James, 688.  
Ten tons of copper coin, 708.  
Tennis under King James, 688.  
Tobacco as currency, 707.  
Wampum, value of, 702-4.

**WAR** prices, 1812-14. Tea at 3 per pound, Flour at 10 per barrel, Calico at 1 per yard, 230.  
Washington, General, 213, 363, 435-6; Washington in 1775 replaced a stone and taught a lesson, 435-6 note.  
"Wheat, Sick", 476-7.  
Wise, John, as wrestler, 35; Wise, John, 40, 99, 309, 490.  
Witchcraft, 14, 125, 144, 195, 241 note, 263, 370, 377, 436-7, 486, 490, 513, 524-5, 542, 579, 583.  
Writings, Libraries. Bay Psalm Book, 41, 80, 418, 437; First book on military science 1701 by an American, 100; ". . . To learn children . . . to Reed and wright and to Refmetick . . .", 469; Will of 51,000 words, handwritten — disposing about £4000 covered 150 folio pages, 126; Coonskin Library, 227-8; 100 scientific volumes which became the nucleus of Essex Institute captured in the Irish Channel about 1781 by a privateer, 215.

# INDEX OF PLACES

*Shown With Symbols Used on Charts*

SYMBOLS	PLACE	SYMBOLS	PLACE
Ⓐ	Waitsfield, Vt.	④③	Weston
Ⓑ	Beverly		Weymouth
⑦	Braintree	④④	Athens, Ohio
⑧	Cape Ann	*	Boston
⑨	Concord	②	Gloucester
⑥①	Danvers	③	Roxbury
⑥⑧	Sudbury	④	Northampton
⑥②	East Haddam, Conn.	⑤	Dorchester
②①	Fitzwilliam, N. H.	⑥	Castle Is.
②⑥	Kennebec River, Me.	†	Warren Tp. Washington Co., Ohio
②⑨	Lexington	‡	Marietta, Ohio
②⑧	Lancaster		Ames. Tp. Athens Co., Ohio
②②	Gravesend, L. I.	¶	Charlestown
②①	Lynn	§	Allegheny Co., Pa.
②②	Montague & Amherst	◆	Meigs Co., Ohio
②③	Marshfield	♣	Edgartown
②④	New Haven, Conn.	①⑦	Milton
②⑤	New York City.	⋮	Waterford, Ohio
③⑥	Rowley	①⑨	Woburn
③⑦	Salem	②⑩	Chemsford
④⑩	Saybrook, Conn.	②②	Ipswich
③⑨	Salem, Ohio	⌘	Marlboro
④①	Taunton	②⑦	Leicester
④⑥	Worcester	③⑩	Framingham
⑤③	Wrentham	♠	Thomaston, Me.
④②	Wenham	♢	Morgan Co., Ohio
⊕	Billerica	♣	Licking Co., Ohio
*	Cambridge	⑥⑦	Yarmouth
■	Dedham	⑥⑦	Marblehead
●	Hamilton	*	Ripon, Wis.
②⑤	Haverhill	④⑦	Windsor, Conn.
△	Killingly, Conn.	④⑧	New London, Conn.
☆	Malden	④⑨	Mauston, Wis.
□	Newburyport	⑤⑩	Hartford, Conn.
⑤④	Watertown	⊕	Malta, Ohio

---

---

## ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS FOR DAWES-GATES, VOLUME II.

---

1. p. 43, par. 3. EXPERIENCE may have been dau. of Jacob<sup>s</sup> Griswold (Thos.<sup>s</sup>, Michael<sup>t</sup>) b. Mar. 11, 1709-10 at Wethersfield, Griswold Gene., G. E. Griswold, 1935, p. 178. Miss E. L. Moffatt.
2. p. 82. Another vessel owned by WILLIAM BARTLETT with Francis Boardman, master, was the schooner "Benjamin" of 64 tons, five men and two swivels which sailed out of Beverly for the Mole St. Nicolas on October 21, 1776, with a cargo of boards, hoops, staves, shingles, spermaceti, wax and tallow candles and some fish, all from Beverly. And thereby hangs an odd tale about one Archibald Duthie, an Englishman who had been master of the "Princess Royal" on its way from Jamaica to London. His vessel had been taken as a prize in June, 1776, by an American privateer bearing the name of "Sturdy Beggar" and was sailed to Salem for condemnation. "After much difficulty Duthie secured a passage on the 'Benjamin' for Hispaniola" and on the voyage, while a passenger, with the help of an old man and a boy who were English members of the ship's crew, seized the "Benjamin" in revenge for the loss of his own ship and turned it over to Thomas Lloyd, commander of H.M.S. Atlanta, off Cape Francois. (Essex Inst. Hist. Soc. Coll. LXXVI, 46-7.)
3. p. 108. I. Simon<sup>s</sup> Beaman (SIMON<sup>t</sup>) and his wife Hannah Barnard, daughter of Francis, were captives in 1694 but were redeemed. (New England Captives Carried to Canada, E. L. Coleman, 1925, II, 34, 66).
4. p. 145, paragraph 1, last three lines, change reference 18 to 22.
5. p. 155. IV. Fear<sup>s</sup> Brewster, read d. Dec. 12. Mr. A. L. Holman.  
VI. Love<sup>s</sup> Brewster, between "2nd" and "Sept." insert "after." A. L. Holman.
6. pp. 163-7. The following addenda for Bushnell furnished to us by Mr. C. A. Hanna in 1936 have been amplified by articles prepared by Mr. H. F. Seversmith and published in Mr. Jacobus' "American Genealogist" in 1939-40:  
FRANCIS<sup>t</sup> BUSHNELL b. abt. 1580; d. bef. Oct. 13, 1646, in Conn.; m. 1st, at Horsham, co. Sussex, Eng., July 13, 1605, FERRIS QUENELL, bap. Apr. 17, 1587, dau. of HENRY (HENRY, HENRY) and BEATRIX (CARTER) QUENELL. FERRIS was buried Mar. 10, 1627-8. FRANCIS<sup>t</sup> came to New England abt. 1639 and was one of the founders of Guilford, Conn., having m. 2nd in Eng. June 2, 1629, Joanne Kinward who died in 1631. The children of FRANCIS<sup>t</sup> and FERRIS (QUENELL) BUSHNELL, all born in England were:
  - I. Edmund<sup>s</sup>, bap. Apr. 27, 1606; d. near Boston Mar. 28, 1636; having m. Aug. 2, 1627, Martha Hallor who bore him five children and who m. 2nd WILLIAM<sup>t</sup> BEAMSLEY (see Dawes-Gates, I, p. 85, and p. 668.)
  - II. Francis<sup>s</sup>, bap. Jan. 8, 1608-9; d. Dec. 9, 1681, at Saybrook, having m. in Eng. June 27, 1631, Mary Grombridge, bap. Jan. 7, 1605-6. They sailed on the "Planter" in April, 1635. Had eight children.
  - III. WILLIAM<sup>s</sup>, bap. Feb. 3, 1610-11; d. Nov. 12, 1683, at Saybrook, m. abt. 1643, REBECCA CHAPMAN, perhaps sister of ROBERT<sup>t</sup> CHAPMAN. They had ten (or eleven) children, JOSHUA<sup>s</sup>, Samuel<sup>s</sup>, Rebecca<sup>s</sup>, William<sup>s</sup>, Francis<sup>s</sup>, Stephen<sup>s</sup>, Thomas<sup>s</sup>, Judith<sup>s</sup>, Abigail<sup>s</sup>, Lydia<sup>s</sup>.

- iv. Stephen<sup>2</sup>, b. 1612-3; d. 1625.
- v. John<sup>2</sup>, bap. Apr. 23, 1615; d. Aug. 5, 1667; of Salem and Boston; m. abt. 1650 Jane (—) who m. 2nd Apr. 14, 1670, John Hill of Saybrook. Six Bushnell children of whom John<sup>2</sup>, b. 1664, d. at Boston abt. 1699 having m. abt. 1685, Sarah (Lovering) Place. This couple were ancestors of Daniel Bushnell (1808-1891) of Pittsburgh and of his grandson Harry Davis Bushnell of Montclair, N. J.
- vi. Thomas<sup>2</sup>, bap. Aug. 31, 1617; bur. Sept. 16, 1617.
- vii. Mary<sup>2</sup>, bap. Dec. 25, 1618; bur. Mar. 2, 1628-9.
- viii. Rebecca<sup>2</sup>, b. prob. Apr. 15, 1621; m. 1646, John Lord of Hartford.
- ix. Richard<sup>2</sup>, bap. Apr. 20, 1623; d. 1658-9; m. in Hartford Oct. 11, 1648, Mary<sup>2</sup> Marvin (MATTHEW<sup>1</sup>). She bore him four children, m. 2nd Thomas Adgate, and d. Mar. 29, 1713.
- x. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, bap. Nov. 26, 1625; m. July 14, 1642, Rev. John Hoadley; five children.
- xi. Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, bap. Mar. 5, 1627-8; bur. Mar. 10, 1627-8, with her mother.
- 7. p. 195. Caption under map, for "Massachusetts" read "Connecticut."
- 8. pp. 201-3. JOHN<sup>1</sup> CLARKE was not a brother of George<sup>1</sup> of Milford. D. L. Jacobus.
- 9. p. 204. III. Sarah<sup>2</sup>, line 2, for "(William<sup>1</sup>)" read "(Simon<sup>1</sup>)". Mrs. Rowland Haynes.
- 10. p. 363. x. Hannah<sup>4</sup> change 1628 to 1698.
- 11. p. 411. JOSEPH<sup>1</sup> HAWLEY prob. had no earlier wife than KATHERINE. D. L. Jacobus.
- 12. p. 424. III. Ephraim<sup>2</sup> Herrick m. Mary Cross (Robert<sup>1</sup>) for she and her sister Anna (Cross) Fellows quit claimed to their brother-in-law William Butler on Dec. 4, 1710, their rights in father's estate.
  - iv. John<sup>2</sup> Herrick, for Remington read Redington dau. of John and Mary (Gould). Jacobus' American Genealogist, 1938, pp. 150-5.
- 13. p. 465. ref. 8. in Schlenck omit the "1". D. L. Jacobus.
- 14. p. 485. A most intriguing possibility in regard to the origin of JAMES<sup>1</sup> JOHNSON has come to light during the research on the Gore family (Dawes-Gates I, 328) when the emigration from England of four servants bound out to JOHN<sup>2</sup> GORE is recorded. They sailed from Liverpool in April, 1703, (N.E.H.G.R., LXV, 50) and one of the four was a *James Johnson* aged eighteen, with seven years to serve. These facts would fit our JAMES<sup>1</sup> JOHNSON, (II, 485) perfectly and though GORE lived in Roxbury he owned land in Connecticut which some of his children used and there our JOHNSON settled after his marriage, (Dawes-Gates II, 255, 485).
- 15. p. 509. FRANCES, wife of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> KILBOURNE was dau. of GEORGE MOODY (RICHARD) of Moulton, co. Suffolk, Eng. (N. E. Reg. LXXX, 313-27.)
- 16. pp. 513-4. Their daughter Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, said to have remained in Eng. was, in all probability, first wife of our ROBERT<sup>1</sup> JENNISON for the will of FRANCES is erroneously reported (Conn. Probates, I, 133) to have mentioned granddaughter Elizabeth *Spencer* which should read Elizabeth "Generson" (see Jennison, p. 369).
- 17. p. 578. MATTHEW<sup>1</sup> MARVIN prob. had no dau. Lydia<sup>2</sup>. D. L. Jacobus.  
Corrected English ancestry for MATTHEW<sup>1</sup> MARVIN is given in Jacobus' American Genealogist of July, 1941.
- 18. pp. 588-9. MATTHEW<sup>1</sup> MITCHELL was the father of HANNAH (MITCHELL) COE by notes of Col. C. E. Banks, in the Library of Congress, made by him from the manuscript Journal of Dr. John Winthrop.
- 19. pp. 643-6. Addenda for Pettyjohn have been kindly furnished to us by Mr. Martin W. Jones, a descendant.

JAMES<sup>1</sup> PETTYJOHN and his wife ISABEL died about the same time in the spring of 1665 in Northampton County, Virginia. She apparently died last for among the records against

the estate is a bill for the surgeon for "administrations in her sickness, abode in his home and burial." Four small children were left. After the death of JAMES<sup>1</sup> the court made Capt. John Custis administrator of the estate and ordered it sold at public outcry. This brought in 27,308 pounds of tobacco and casks; after debts were paid there remained 12,324 pounds of tobacco and casks, one-quarter being turned over to each guardian for the tuition and upbringing of the child. James<sup>2</sup> jr., the eldest, was placed under the guardianship of James Bruce. No further record of him is seen. William<sup>2</sup> was placed under the guardianship of William Satchell to whom William<sup>2</sup> signed a release on October 28, 1678, as to his "late guardian." He was probably twenty-one then, and appears in various Accomac records and lists during the 1680's; bought land from his brother-in-law John Oakham in 1702 in Princess Anne County and died in 1712 probably without issue.

Isabel<sup>2</sup> was placed under the guardianship of Abraham Heath (whom Mr. Jones believes may have been father or brother of ISABEL wife of JAMES<sup>1</sup>) who bought the family Bible at the estate sale. He later turned over the guardianship of Isabel<sup>2</sup> to Nicholas Powell who had bought in the plantation for 9000 pounds of tobacco and casks. On December 11, 1678, being then eighteen Isabel<sup>2</sup> signed a release to Mrs. Agnes Powell "her former guardian" (Nicholas having previously died). In 1678 she signed as Isabel Lester, wife of Richard who died in 1694. She then married John Oakham before 1702 and he died in 1706. There were children by both marriages.

JOHN<sup>2</sup> was placed under the guardianship of Capt. William Jones who later turned the task over to one John Cole, an innkeeper. JOHN<sup>2</sup> appears in the lists of tithables of Accomac County in the 1680's; in 1690 was about twenty-eight years old; in 1691 with his wife SARA made a deed of gift to SARA's godchild, Frances Long; and in 1692 removed to Sussex County with his family.

20. p. 748. Note. Line 4 delete ref. 30 following "Sussex Co."
21. p. 809. First footnote. The oath of allegiance was often administered at the age of sixteen and in some colonies at certain periods freemanship was granted at sixteen. D. L. Jacobus.
22. p. 825. Note. John Darby of Marblehead was taken by a pirate. Probably killed Oct. 4, 1689; left four children. His estate was inventoried June 17, 1691, and his widow Alice m. 2nd July 2, 1690, John<sup>2</sup> Woodbury (Humphrey<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>). (Pirates of the New England Coast, G. F. Dow, p. 57.)
23. Index, pp. 887-906. As Vol. II was being compiled, certain names were capitalized as ancestral which eventually proved to be otherwise. Accuracy demands that they be relegated to lower case. This applies to Edward Foster, II, 445, 887; Eglin Hatherly, II, 151, 689, 890; Thomas Mitchell, II, 500-1, 897; Thomas Tileston, II, 845, 906; and probably to Stephen Upson, II, 372, 613, 906.  
Ancestral Chart, glued on the back cover of Vol. II, Number 913 at the upper right corner should have the name "Elizabeth Fisher" deleted. She was his second wife.

---

---

# INDEX OF ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS

---

Barnard, Francis, 745  
BARTLETT, WILLIAM<sup>t</sup>, 745  
Beaman, Simon<sup>s</sup>, 745  
    Hannah (Barnard), 745  
Boardman, Francis, 745  
Brewster, Fear, 745  
    Love, 745  
BUSHNELL Family, 745  
CLARKE, JOHN<sup>t</sup>, 746  
COE, HANNAH (MITCHELL), 746

Duthie, Archibald, 745  
Griswold, Experience, 745  
HAWLEY, JOSEPH<sup>t</sup> note, 746  
Herrick, Ephraim<sup>s</sup> and Mary Cross,  
    746  
    John<sup>s</sup> and Mary Remington, 746  
Huntington Correction, 746  
JOHNSON, JOHN<sup>t</sup>, 746  
Kilbourne, Elizabeth, probably as first  
    wife of ROBERT<sup>t</sup> JENNISON, 746

KILBOURNE, FRANCES (MOODY), 746  
    Thomas<sup>t</sup>, 746  
Lloyd, Thomas, 745  
MARVIN Family, 746  
MARVIN MATTHEW<sup>t</sup> (three items), 746  
MITCHELL, MATTHEW<sup>t</sup>, 746  
PETTYJOHN FAMILY, 746-7  
Woodbury Family, note 747

---

---

PERSONAL RECORDS

---

---



# PERSONAL RECORDS

*It is suggested that indelible pencil be used. Ink will blot*

NAME	BORN When and Where	MARRIED When and Where	DIED When and Where

NAME	BORN When and Where	MARRIED When and Where	DIED When and Where

NAME	BORN When and Where	MARRIED When and Where	DIED When and Where

NAME	BORN When and Where	MARRIED When and Where	DIED When and Where

NAME	BORN When and Where	MARRIED When and Where	DIED When and Where

NAME	BORN When and Where	MARRIED When and Where	DIED When and Where

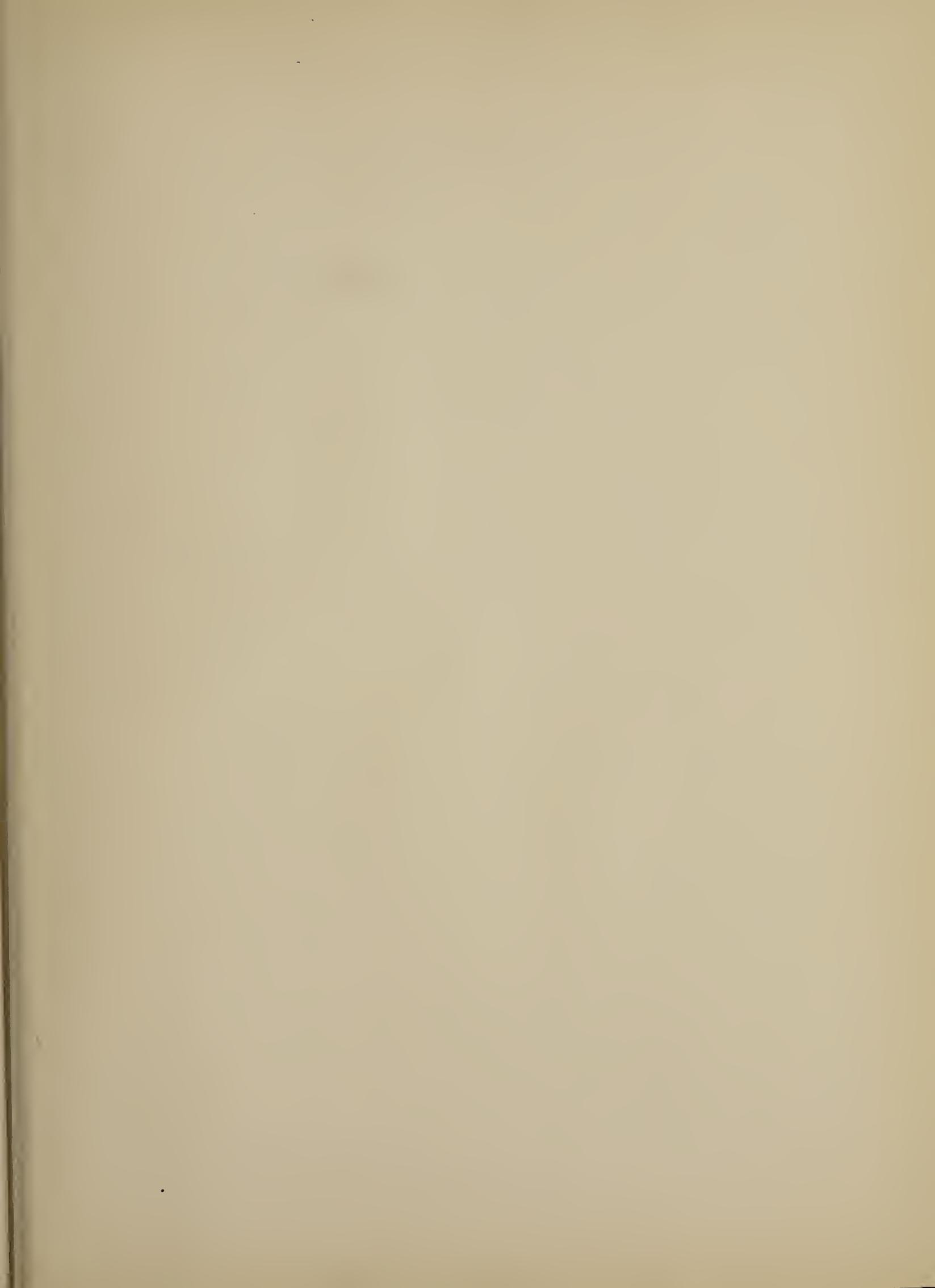
NAME	BORN When and Where	MARRIED When and Where	DIED When and Where

NAME	BORN When and Where	MARRIED When and Where	DIED When and Where

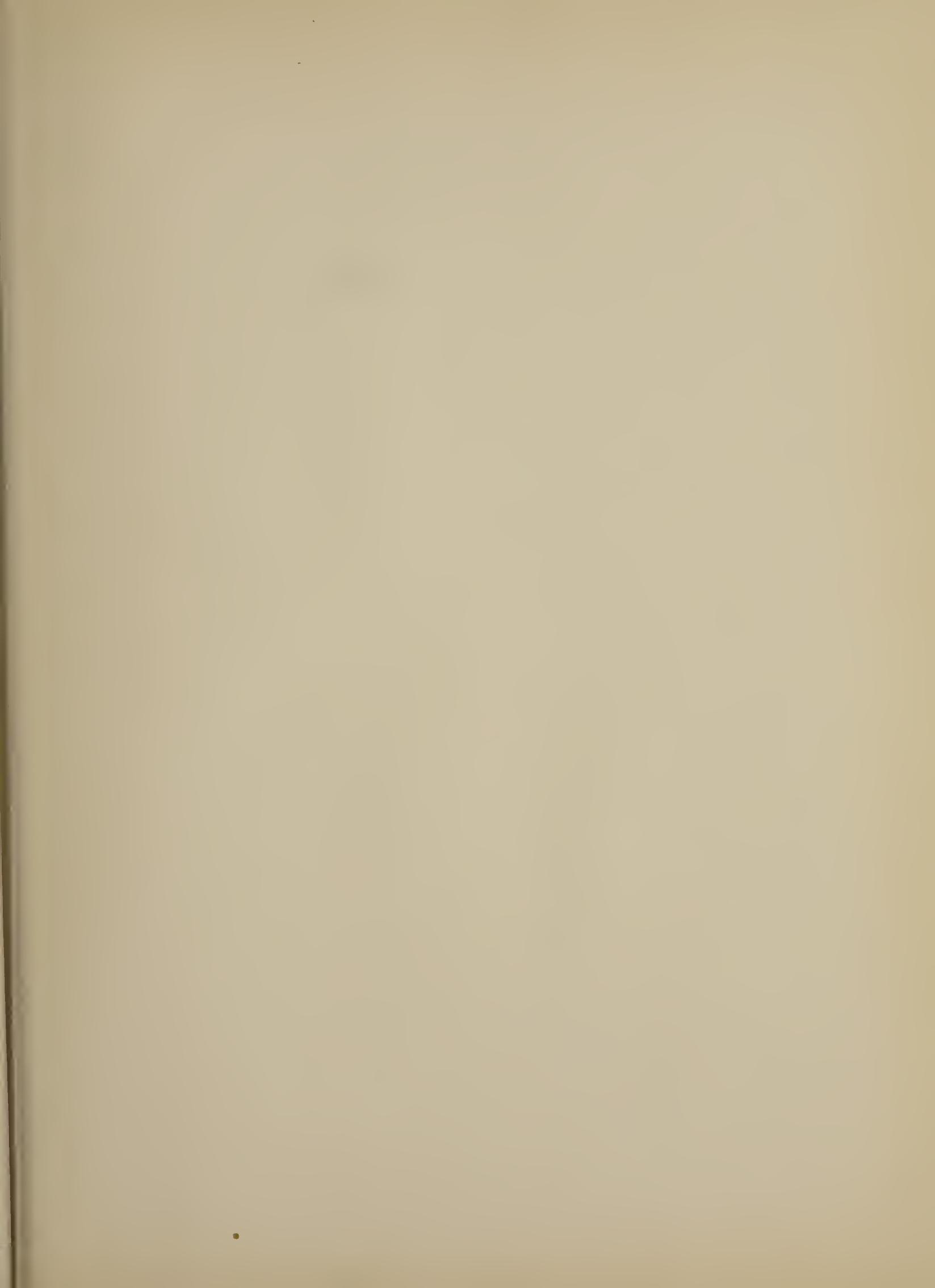
THE WISCONSIN CUNEO PRESS, INC.

MILWAUKEE, WISCONSIN

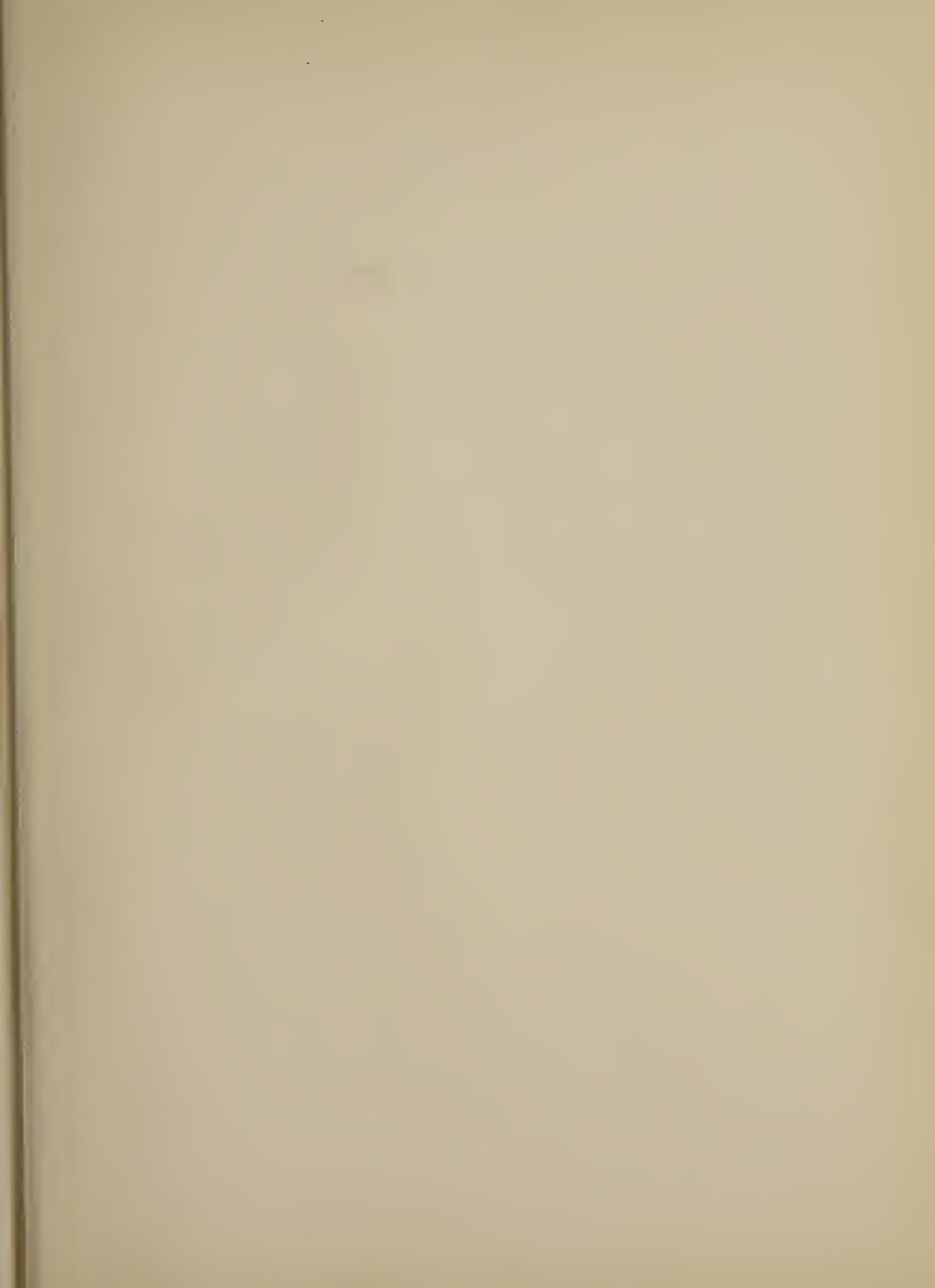














**HECKMAN**  
BINDERY, INC.  
Bound-To-Pleas®  
**FEB 03**  
N. MANCHESTER, INDIANA 46962

